The original of this book is in the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in the United States on the use of the text.

http://www.archive.org/details/cu31924013118207
BURTON'S

ANATOMY OF MELANCYOLY.
forgotten quite
All former scenes of dear delight,
Connubial love — parental joy —
No sympathies like these his soul employ:
But all is dark within. —

Penrose.

LONDON: WILLIAM TEGG & CO CHEAPSIDE
THE
ANATOMY OF
MELANCHOLY

What it is, with all the lands, causes, symptoms, prognostics & several cures of it
In three partitions with their several sections, numbers & subsections.
Philosophically, Medically.
Historically opened & cut up.

BY
Democritus Junior.

With a Satyrical Preface conducing to the following Discourse:
The Sixth Edition, corrected and augmented by the Author.

Omne tuit punctum, qui miscuit utile dulci.

London
Printed are to be sold by
Hen. Cops & Lod. Lloyd at
their shop in Foyers-head-alley.
1673.

REPRINTED FOR WILLIAM TRIGO & C. CHEAPSIDE, LONDON.
THE

ANATOMY OF MELANCHOLY,

WHAT IT IS,

WITH

ALL THE KINDS, CAUSES, SYMPTOMS, PROGNOSTICS, AND SEVERAL CURES OF IT.

IN THREE PARTITIONS.

WITH THEIR SEVERAL

SECTIONS, MEMBERS, AND SUBSECTIONS, PHILOSOPHICALLY, MEDICALLY, HISTORICALLY OPENED AND CUT UP.

BY DEMOCRITUS JUNIOR.

WITH

A SATIRICAL PREFACE, CONDUCING TO THE FOLLOWING DISCOURSE.

A New Edition.
CORRECTED, AND ENRICHED BY TRANSLATIONS OF THE NUMEROUS CLASSICAL EXTRACTS.

BY DEMOCRITUS MINOR.

LONDON:
WILLIAM TEGG AND CO., 85, QUEEN STREET, CHEAPSIDE.
1854.
HONOBATISSIMO DOMINO,
NON MINVS VIRTUTE SUÁ, QUAM GENERIS SPLENDORI,
ILLVSTRISSIMO,
GEORGIO BERKLEIO,
MILITI DE BALNEO, BARONI DE EERKLEY, MOUBREY, SEGRAVE,
D. DE BRUE,
DOMINO SUO MULTIS NOMINIBUS OBSERVANDO,
HANC SUAM
MELANCHOLIAE ANATOMEN,
JAM SEXTO REVISAM, D.D.

DEMOCRITUS JUNIOR.
The work now restored to public notice has had an extraordinary fate. At the time of its original publication it obtained a great celebrity, which continued more than half a century. During that period few books were more read, or more deservedly applauded. It was the delight of the learned, the solace of the indolent, and the refuge of the uninformed. It passed through at least eight editions, by which the bookseller, as Wood records, got an estate; and, notwithstanding the objection sometimes opposed against it, of a quaint style, and too great an accumulation of authorities, the fascination of its wit, fancy, and sterling sense, have borne down all censures, and extorted praise from the first writers in the English language. The grave Johnson has praised it in the warmest terms, and the ludicrous Sterne has interwoven many parts of it into his own popular performance. Milton did not disdain to build two of his finest poems on it; and a host of inferior writers have embellished their works with beauties not their own, culled from a performance which they had not the justice even to mention. Change of times, and the frivolity of fashion, suspended, in some degree, that fame which had lasted near a century; and the succeeding generation affected indifference towards an author, who at length was only looked into by the plunderers of literature, the poachers in obscure volumes. The plagiarisms of Tristram Shandy, so successfully brought to light by Dr. Ferriar, at length drew the attention of the public towards a writer, who, though then little known, might, without impeach-
ment of modesty, lay claim to every mark of respect; and inquiry proved, beyond a doubt, that the calls of justice had been little attended to by others, as well as the facetious Yorick. Wood observed, more than a century ago, that several authors had unmercifully stolen matter from Burton without any acknowledgment. The time, however, at length arrived, when the merits of the Anatomy of Melancholy were to receive their due praise. The book was again sought for and read, and again it became an applauded performance. Its excellencies once more stood confessed, in the increased price which every copy offered for sale produced; and the increased demand pointed out the necessity of a new edition. This is now presented to the public in a manner not disgraceful to the memory of the author; and the publisher relies with confidence, that so valuable a repository of amusement and information, will continue to hold the rank to which it has been restored, firmly supported by its own merit, and safe from the influence and blight of any future caprices of fashion. To open its valuable mysteries to those who have not had the advantage of a classical education, translations of the countless quotations from ancient writers which occur in the work, are now for the first time given, and obsolete orthography is in all instances modernised.
ACCOUNT OF THE AUTHOR.

ROBERT BURTON was the son of Ralph Burton, of an ancient and genteel family at Lindley, in Leicestershire, and was born there on the 8th of February, 1576.* He received the first rudiments of learning at the free school of Sutton Coldfield, in Warwickshire,† from whence he was, at the age of seventeen, in the long vacation, 1593, sent to Brazen Nose College, in the condition of a commoner, where he made a considerable progress in logic and philosophy. In 1599 he was elected student of Christ Church, and, for form sake, was put under the tuition of Dr. John Bancroft, afterwards Bishop of Oxford. In 1614 he was admitted to the reading of the Sentences, and on the 29th of November, 1616, had the vicarage of St. Thomas, in the west suburb of Oxford, conferred on him by the dean and canons of Christ Church, which, with the rectory of Segrave, in Leicestershire, given to him in the year 1636, by George, Lord Berkeley, he kept, to use the words of the Oxford antiquary, with much ado to his dying day. He seems to have been first beneficed at Walshby, in Lincolnshire, through the munificence of his noble patroness, Frances, Countess Dowager of Exeter, but resigned the same, as he tells us, for some special reasons. At his vicarage he is remarked to have always given the sacrament in wafers. Wood’s character of him is, that “he was an exact mathematician, a curious calculator of nativities, a general read scholar, a thorough-paced philologist, and one that understood the surveying of lands well. As he was by many accounted a severe student, a devourer of authors, a melancholy and humorous person; so by others, who knew him well, a person of great honesty, plain dealing and charity. I have heard some of the ancients of Christ Church often say, that his company was very merry, facetie, and

* His elder brother was William Burton, the Leicestershire antiquary, born 24th August, 1575, educated at Sutton Coldfield, admitted commoner, or gentleman commoner, of Brazen Nose College, 1591; at the Inner Temple, 20th May, 1593; B.A. 22nd June, 1594; and afterwards a barrister and reporter in the Court of Common Pleas. "For his natural genius," says Wood, "leading him to the studies of heraldry, genealogies, and antiquities, he became excellent in those obscure and intricate matters; and, look upon him as a gentleman, was accounted, by all that know him, to be the best of his time for these studies, as may appear by his 'Description of Leicestershire.'" His weak constitution not permitting him to follow business, he retired into the country, and his greatest work, "The Description of Leicestershire," was published in folio, 1622. He died at Faldo, after suffering much in the civil war, 6th April, 1643, and was buried in the parish church belonging thereto, called Hanbury.

† This is Wood’s account. His will says, Nuneaton; but a passage in this work [vol. i. p. 295] mentions Sutton Coldfield; probably he may have been at both schools.
juvenile; and no man in his time did surpass him for his ready and dexterous interlarding his common discourses among them with verses from the poets, or sentences from classic authors; which being then all the fashion in the University, made his company the more acceptable.” He appears to have been a universal reader of all kinds of books, and availed himself of his multifarious studies in a very extraordinary manner. From the information of Hearne, we learn that John Rouse, the Bodleian librarian, furnished him with choice books for the prosecution of his work. (The subject of his labour and amusement, seems to have been adopted from the infirmities of his own habit and constitution. Mr. Granger says, “He composed this book with a view of relieving his own melancholy, but increased it to such a degree, that nothing could make him laugh, but going to the bridge-foot and hearing the ribaldry of the bargemen, which rarely failed to throw him into a violent fit of laughter. Before he was overcome with this horrid disorder, he, in the intervals of his vapours, was esteemed one of the most facetious companions in the University.”

His residence was chiefly at Oxford; where, in his chamber in Christ Church College, he departed this life, at or very near the time which he had some years before foretold, from the calculation of his own nativity, and which, says Wood, “being exact, several of the students did not forbear to whisper among themselves, that rather than there should be a mistake in the calculation, he sent up his soul to heaven through a slip about his neck.” Whether this suggestion is founded in truth, we have no other evidence than an obscure hint in the epitaph hereafter inserted, which was written by the author himself, a short time before his death. His body, with due solemnity, was buried near that of Dr. Robert Weston, in the north aisle which joins next to the choir of the Cathedral of Christ Church, on the 27th of January, 1639-40. Over his grave was soon after erected a comely monument, on the upper pillar of the said aisle, with his bust, painted to the life. On the right hand is the following calculation of his nativity:

![Natal chart image]
and under the bust, this inscription of his own composition:—

Paucis notus, pauciortibus ignotus,
Hie jacet Domacritus junior
Cui vitam dedit et mortem
Melancholia.

Ob. 8 Id. Jan. A. C. mdcxxxix.

Arms:—Azure on a bend O. between three dogs’ heads O. a crescent G.

A few months before his death, he made his will, of which the following is a copy:

**Extracted from the Registry of the Pregressive Court of Canterbury.**

**In Nomine Dei Amen.** August 15th One thousand six hundred thirty nine because there be so many casualties to which our life is subject besides quarrelling and contention which happen to our Successors after our Death by reason of unsettled Estates I Robert Burton Student of Christchurch Oxon. though my means he but small have thought good by this my last Will and Testament to dispose of that little which I have and being at this present I thank God in perfect health of Bodie and Mind and if this Testament be not so formal according to the nice and strict terms of Law and other Circumstances peradventure required of which I am ignorant I desire howeversoever this my Will may be accepted and stand good according to my true Intent and meaning First I bequeath Animam Deo Corpus Terrae whencesoever it shall please God to call me I give my Land in Higham which my good Father Ralph Burton of Lindly in the County of Leicester Esquire gave me by Deed of Gift and that which I have annexed to that Farm by purchase since, now leased for thirty eight pounds per Ann. to mine Elder Brother William Burton of Lindly Esquire during his life and after him to his Heirs I make my said Brother William likewise mine Executor as well as paying such Annuities and Legacies out of my Lands and Goods as are hereafter specified I give to my nephew Cassibilur Burton twenty pounds Annuity per Ann. out of my Land in Higham during his life to be paid at two equal payments at our Lady Day in Lent and Michaelmas or if he be not paid within fourteen Days after the said Feasts to distrain on any part of the Ground on or any of my Lands of Inheritance Item I give to my sister Katherine Jackson during her life eight pounds per Ann. Annuity to be paid at the two Feasts equally as above said or else to distrain on the Ground if she be not paid after fourteen days at Lindly as the other Item is out of the said Land Item I give to my Servant John Upton the Annuity of Forty Shillings out of my said Farme during his life (if till then my Servant) to be paid on Michaelmas day in Lindley each year or else after fourteen days to distrain Now for my goods I thus dispose them First I give an £20 pounds to Christ Church in Oxford where I have so long lived to buy five pounds Lands per Ann. to be Yearly bestowed on Books for the Library Item I give an hundredth pound to the University Library of Oxford to be bestowed to purchase five pound Land per Ann. to be paid out Yearly on Books as Mrs. Brooks formerly gave an hundred pounds to buy Land to the same purpose and the Rent to the same use I give to my Brother George Burton twenty pounds and my watch I give to my Brother Ralph Burton five pounds Item I give to the Parish of Seagrave in Leicestershire where I am now Rector ten pounds to be given to certain Feoffees to the perpetual good of the said Parish Oxon* Item I give to my Niece Eugenia Burton one hundredth pounds Item I give to my Nephew Richard Burton now Prisoner in London an hundredth pound to redeem him Item I give to the Poor of Higham Forty Shillings where my Land is to the Poor of Nuneaton where I was once a Grammar Scholar three pound to my Cousin Purfrey of Wadlake [Wadley] my Cousin Purfrey of Calcutt my Cousin Hales of Coventry my Nephew Bradshaw of Orton twenty shillings a piece for a small remembrance to Mr. Whitehall Rector of Chekby myne own Chamber Fellow twenty shillings I desire my Brother George and my Cosen Purfrey of Calcutt to be the Overseers of this part of my Will I give moreover five pounds to make a small Monument for my Mother where she is buried in London to my Brother Jackson forty shillings to my Servant John Upton forty shillings besides his former Annuity if he be my Servant till I die if he be till then my Servant†—ROBERT BURTON—Charles Russell Witness—John Pepper Witness.

* So in the Register.
† So in the Register.
An Appendix to this my Will if I die in Oxford or whilst I am of Christ Church and with good Mr. Payne August the Fifteenth 1639.

I give to Mr. Doctor Fell Dean of Christ Church Forty Shillings to the Eight Canons twenty Shillings a piece as a small remembrance to the poor of St. Thomas parish Twenty Shillings to Brasenose Library five pounds to Mr. Rowe of Oriell Collage twenty Shillings to Mr. Heywood xxs. to Dr. Metcullf xxs. to Mr. Sherley xxs. If I have any Books the University Library hath not, let them take them If I have any Books our own Library hath not, let them take them I give to Mrs. Fell all my English Books of husbandry one excepted to her Daughter Mrs. Katherine Fell my Six pieces of Silver Plate and six Silver Spoons to Mrs Iles my Gerards Herball to Mrs. Morris my Country Farme Translated out of French 4, and all my English Physick Books to Mr. Whistler the Recorder of Oxford I give twenty shillings to all my fellow Students M's of Arts a Book in fol. or two a piece as Master Morris Treasurer or Mr. Dean shall appoint whom I request to be the Overseer of this Appendix and give him for his pains Atlas Geografer and Ortellius Theatrum Mond I give to John Fell the Dean's Son Student my Mathematical Instruments except my two Crosse Staves which I give to my Lord of Donnal if he he then of the House To Thomas Iles Doctor Iles his Son Student Sluetch on Panathella and Lucian's Works in 4 Tomes If any books he left let my Executors dispose of them with all such Books as are written with my own hands and half my Melaney's Copy for Crips hath the other half To Mr. Jones Chaplin and Chanter my Surveying Books and Instruments To the Servants of the House Forty Shillings ROB. BURTON—Charles Russell Witness—John Pepper Witness—This Will was shewed to me by the Testator and acknowledged by him some few days before his death to be his last Will Ita Testor John Morris S' Th D. Prelendari Eccl Chri' Oxton Feb. 3, 1639.


The only work our author executed was that now reprinted, which probably was the principal employment of his life. Dr. Ferriar says, it was originally published in the year 1617; but this is evidently a mistake; the first edition was that printed in 4to, 1621, a copy of which is at present in the collection of John Nichols, Esq., the indefatigable illustrator of the History of Leicestershire; to whom, and to Isaac Reed, Esq., of Staple Inn, this account is greatly indebted for its accuracy. The other impressions of it were in 1624, 1628, 1632, 1638, 1651-2, 1660, and 1676, which last, in the title-page, is called the eighth edition.

The copy from which the present is re-printed, is that of 1651-2: at the conclusion of which is the following address:

"To THE READER.

"Be pleased to know (Courteous Reader) that since the last Impression of this Book, the ingenious Author of it is deceased, leaving a Copy of it exactly corrected, with several considerable Additions by his own hand; this Copy he committed to my care and custody, with directions to have those Additions inserted in the next Edition; which in order to his command, and the Publicke Good, is faithfully performed in this last Impression."

H. C. (i. e. HEN. CRIPPS.)

* Originating, perhaps, in a note, p. 448, 6th edit. (p. 594 of the present), in which a book is quoted as having been "printed at Paris 1624, seven years after Burton's first edition." As, however, the editions after that of 1621, are regularly marked in succession to the eighth, printed in 1676, there seems very little reason to doubt that, in the note above alluded to, either 1624 has been a misprint for 1628, or seven years for three years. The numerous typographical errors in other parts of the work strongly aid this latter supposition.
The following testimonies of various authors will serve to show the estimation in which this work has been held:

"The Anatomy of Melancholy, wherein the author hath piled up variety of much excellent learning. Scarce any book of philology in our land hath, in so short a time, passed so many editions." — Fuller's Worthies, fol. 16.

"'Tis a book so full of variety of reading, that gentlemen who have lost their time, and are put to a press for invention, may furnish themselves with matter for common or scholastical discourse and writing." — Wood's Athenae Oxonienses, vol. i. p. 628. 2d edit.

"If you never saw Burton upon Melancholy, printed 1676, I pray look into it, and read the ninth page of his Preface, 'Democritus to the Reader.' There is something there which touches the point which we are upon; but I mention the author to you, as the pleasantest, the most learned, and the most full of sterling sense. The wits of Queen Anne's reign, and the beginning of George the First, were not a little beholding to him." — Archbishop Herring's Letters, 12mo, 1717. p. 149.

"Burton's Anatomy of Melancholy, he (Dr. Johnson) said, was the only book that ever took him out of bed two hours sooner than he wished to rise." — Boswell's Life of Johnson, vol. i. p. 550. 8vo. edit.

"Burton's Anatomy of Melancholy is a valuable book," said Dr. Johnson. "It is, perhaps, overloaded with quotation. But there is great spirit and great power in what Burton says when he writes from his own mind." — Ibid. vol. ii. p. 325.

"It will be no detriment from the powers of Milton's original genius and invention, to remark, that he seems to have borrowed the subject of L'Allegro and II Penseroso together with some particular thoughts, expressions, and rhymes, more especially the idea of a contrast between these two dispositions, from a forgotten poem prefixed to the first edition of Burton's Anatomy of Melancholy, entitled, 'The Author's Abstract of Melancholy; or A Dialogue between Pleasure and Pain.' Here pain is melancholy. It was written, as I conjecture, about the year 1600. I will make no apology for abstracting and citing as much of this poem as will be sufficient to prove, to a discerning reader, how far it had taken possession of Milton's mind. The measure will appear to be the same; and that our author was at least an attentive reader of Burton's book, may be already concluded from the traces of resemblance which I have incidentally noticed in passing through the L'Allegro and II Penseroso." — After extracting the lines, Mr. Warton adds, "as to the very elaborate work to which these visionary verses are no unsuitable introduction, the writer's variety of learning, his quotations from scarce and curious books, his pedantry sparkling with rude wit and shapeless elegance, miscellaneous matter, intermixture of agreeable tales and illustrations, and, perhaps, above all, the singularities of his feelings, clothed in an uncommon quaintness of style, have contributed to render it, even to modern readers, a valuable repository of amusement and information." — Warton's Milton. 2d. edit. p. 94.

"The Anatomy of Melancholy is a book which has been universally read and admired. This work is, for the most part, what the author himself styles it, 'a cento;' but it is a very ingenious one. His quotations, which abound in every page, are pertinent; but if he had made more use of his invention and less of his commonplace-book, his work would perhaps have been more valuable than it is. He is generally free from the affected language and ridiculous metaphors which disgrace most of the books of his time." — Granger's Biographical History.

"Burton's Anatomy of Melancholy, a book once the favourite of the learned and the witty, and a source of surreptitious learning, though written on a regular plan, consists chiefly of quotations: the author has honestly termed it a cento. He collects, under every division, the opinions of a multitude of writers, without regard to chronological order, and has too often the modesty to decline the interposition of his own sentiments. Indeed the bulk of his materials generally overwhelms him. In the course of his folio he has contrived to treat a great variety of topics, that seem very loosely connected with the general subject; and, like Bayle, when he grants a favourite train of quotations, he does not scruple to let the digression outrun the principal question. Thus, from the doctrines of religion to military discipline, from inland navigation to the morality of dancing-schools, every thing is discussed and determined." — Ferriar's Illustrations of Sirne, p. 58.
"The archness which Burton displays occasionally, and his indulgence of playful digressions from the most serious discussions, often give his style an air of familiar conversation, notwithstanding the laborious collections which supply his text. He was capable of writing excellent poetry, but he seems to have cultivated this talent too little. The English verses prefixed to his book, which possess beautiful imagery, and great sweetness of versification, have been frequently published. His Latin elegiac verses addressed to his book, shew a very agreeable turn for raillery."—Ibid. p. 58.

"When the force of the subject opens his own vein of prose, we discover valuable sense and brilliant expression. Such is his account of the first feelings of melancholy persons, written, probably, from his own experience." [See p. 161, of the present edition.]—Ibid. p. 60.

"During a pedantic age, like that in which Burton's production appeared, it must have been eminently serviceable to writers of many descriptions. Hence the unlearned might furnish themselves with appropriate scraps of Greek and Latin, whilst men of letters would find their inquiries shortened, by knowing where they might look for what both ancients and moderns have advanced on the subject of human passions. I confess my inability to point out any other English author who has so largely dealt in apt and original quotation."—Manuscript note of the late George Steevens, Esq., in his copy of The Anatomy of Melancholy.
Vade liber, Qualis, non assim dicere, felix,
Te nisi felicem fecerit Alma dies,
Vade tamen quacunque lubet, quasquacunque per oras,
Et Genium Domini fac imitare tui.
1 blandas inter Charites, mystamque saluta
Musarum quemvis, si tibi lector erit.
Vabe liber, qualis, non ausim dicere felix,
Te nisi foelicem fecerit Alma dies,
Vade tamen quacunque lubet, quasquacunque per oras,
Et Genium Domini fac imitare tui.

Democritus Junior ad Librum Suum.
Si quis cordatus, facilis, lectorque benignus
Huc oculos vertat, que velit ipsa legat;
Candidus ignoscat, metus nil, pande liberter,
Offensus mendis non erit ille tuis,
Landabit nonnulla. Venit si Rhetor ineptus,
Limata et tersa, et qui bené cocta petit,
Claude citus librum; nulla hic nisi ferrea verba,
Offendunt stomachum quæ minus apta suum.
At si quis non eximus de plebe poeta,
Annue; namque istic plurima fieta leget.
Nos sumus et numero, nullus mihi spirat Apollo,
Grandiloquus Vates quilibet esse nequit.
Si Criticus Lector, tumidus Censorque molestus,
Zoilus et Momus, si rabiosa cohors:
Ringe, freme, et noli tum pandere, turba malignis
Si occurrat sannis invidiosa suis:
Iae fugias; si nulla tibi sit copia eundi,
Contemnes, taciti seomnifata queque feres.
Frendeat, allatret, vacuae gannibus auras
Impleat, hand cures; bis placuisse nefas.
Verum age si forsan divertat prior hospes,
Cuique sales, indi, displicantique joci,
Objicatque tibi sordes, lascivâque: dices,
Lasciva est Domino et Musa jocosa tuo,
Nec lasciva tamen, si pensitet omne; sed esto;
Sit lasciva licet pagina, vita proba est.
Barbarus, indectusque rudis spectator in istam
Si messem intrudat, fuste fugabis eum,
Fungum pelle procul (jubeo) nam quid mihi fungo?
Convenient stomacho non minus ista suo.
Sed nec pelle tamen; iato omnes accipe vultu,
Quos, quas, vel quales, inde vel unde viros.
Gratias erit quienuque venit, gratissimas hospes
Quiquis erit, faciliis difficileaque mihi.
Nam si culpaerit, quodam culpasse juvabit,
Culpando faciet me meliora sequi.
Sed si laudari, neque laudibus efferar ullis,
Sit satis hisce malis opposuisse bonum.
Hae sunt quæ nostro placuit mandare libello,
Et quæ damitieus dixerit Jussit Herus.
Go forth my book into the open day;  
Happy, if made so by its garish eye.
O'er earth's wide surface take thy vagrant way,  
To imitate thy master's genius try.
The graces three, the Muses nine salute,  
Should those who love them try to con thy lore, 
The country, city seek, grand thrones to boot,  
With gentle courtesy humbly bow before. 
Should nobles gallant, soldiers frank and brave  
Seek thy acquaintance, hail their first advance: 
From twitch of care thy pleasant vein may save,  
May laughter cause or wisdom give perchance.
Some surly Cato, Senator austere,  
Haply may wish to peep into thy book: 
Seem very nothing—tremble and revere: 
No forceful eagles, butterflies e'er look. 
They love not thee: of them then little seek,  
And wish for readers triflers like thyself, 
Of ludeful matron watchful catch the beck,  
Or gorgeous countess full of pride and pelf.
They may say "pish!" and frown, and yet read on:  
Cry odd, and silly, coarse, and yet amusing. 
Should dainty damsels seek thy page to con,  
Spread thy best stores: to them be never refusing: 
Say, fair one, master loves thee dear as life;  
Would be were here to gaze on thy sweet look. 
Should known or unknown student, free'd from strife  
Of logic and the schools, explore my book: 
Cry mercy critic, and thy book withhold:  
Be some few errors pardon'd though observ'd:
An humble author to implore makes bold. 
Thy kind indulgence, even undeserv'd,  
Should melancholy wight or pensive lover, 
Courtier, snug cit, or carpet knight so trim  
Our blossoms pull, he'll find himself in clover,  
Gain sense from precept, laughter from our whim. 
Should learned leech with solemn air unfold  
Thy leaves, beware, be civil, and be wise:  
Thy volume many precepts sage may hold,  
His well fraught head may find no trifling prize. 
Should crafty lawyer trespass on our ground, 
Caitiffs avault! disturbing tribe away!  
Unless (white crow) an honest one be found;  
He'll better, wiser go for what we say.  
Should some ripe scholar, gentle and benign,  
With candour, care, and judgment thee peruse: 
Thy faults to kind oblivion he'll consign;  
Nor to thy merit will his praise refuse.
Thou may'st be searched for polish'd words and verse;
By flippant spouter, emptiest of praters:
Tell him to seek them in some mawkish verse;
My periods all are rough as nutmeg graters.
The doggrel poet, wishing thee to read,
Reject not; let him glean thy jests and stories.
His brother 1, of lowly resembling breed:
Apollo grants to few Parnassian glories.
Menac'd by critic with sour furrowed brow,
Momus or Troilus or Scotch reviewer:
Ruffle your heckle, grin and growl and vow:
Ill-natured foes you thus will find the fewer.
When foul-mouth'd senseless railers cry thee down,
Reply not; fly, and show the rogues thy stern:
They are not worthy even of a frown:
Good taste or breeding they can never learn;
Or let them clamour, turn a callous ear,
As though in dread of some harsh donkey's bray
If chid by censor, friendly though severe,
To such explain and turn thee not away.
Thy vein, says he perchance, is all too free;
Thy smutty language suits not learned pen:
Reply, Good Sir, throughout, the context see;
Thought chastens thought; so prithee judge again.
Besides, although my master's pen may wander
Through devious paths, by which it ought not stray
His life is pure, beyond the breath of slander:
So pardon grant; 'tis merely but his way.
Some rugged ruffian makes a hideous rout—
Brandish thy cudgel, threaten him to baste;
The filthy fungus far from thee cast out;
Such noxious banquets never suit my taste.
Yet, calm and cautious moderate thy ire,
Be ever courteous should the case allow—
Sweet malt is ever made by gentle fire:
Warm to thy friends, give all a civil bow.
Even censure sometimes teaches to improve,
Slight frosts have often cured too rank a crop,
So, candid blame my spleen shall never move,
For skilful gard'ners wayward branches lop.
Go then, my book, and bear my words in mind;
Guides safe at once, and pleasant them you'll find.
THE ARGUMENT OF THE FRONTISPIECE.*

Ten distinct Squares here seen apart,
Are joined in one by Cutter's art.

I.
Old Democritus under a tree,
Sits on a stone with book on knee;
About him hang there many features,
Of Cats, Dogs and such like creatures,
Of which he makes anatomy,
The seat of black choler to see.
Over his head appears the sky,
And Saturn Lord of melancholy.

II.
To the left a landscape of Jealousy,
Presents itself unto thine eye.
A Kingfisher, a Swan, an Herm,
Two fighting-cocks you may discern,
Two roaring Bulls each other hie,
To assault concerning venery.
Symbols are these; I say no more,
Conceive the rest by that's afore.

III.
The next of solitariness,
A Portraiture doth well express,
By sleeping dog, cat: Buck aod Doe,
Hares, Conies in the desert go:
Bats, Owls the shady bowers over,
In melancholy darkness hover.
Mark well: It be not as't should be,
Blame the bad Cutter, and not me.

IV.
I th' under column there doth stand
Inamorato with folded hand;
Down hangs his head, terse and polite,
Some ditty sure he doth indite.
His lute and books about him lie,
As symptoms of his vanity.
If this do not enough disclose,
To paint him, take thyself by th' nose.

V.
_Hypochondriacus_ leans on his arm,
Wind in his side doth him much harm,
And troubles him full sore, God knows,
Much pain he hath and many woes.
About him pots and glasses lie,
Newly brought from _s Apothecary.
This Saturn's aspects signify,
You see them portray'd in the sky.

VI.
Beneath them kneeling on his knee,
A superstitious man you see:
He fasts, prays, on his Idol fixt,
Tortured hope and fear betwixt:
For hell perhaps he takes more pain,
Than thou dost heaven itself to gain.
Alas poor soul, I pity thee,
What stars incline thee so to be?

VII.
But see the madman rage downright
With furious looks, a ghastly sight,
Naked in chains bound doth he lie,
And roars amain he knows not why!
Observe him; for as in a glass,
Thine angry portraiture it was.
His picture keeps still in thy presence;
'Twixt him and thee, there's no difference.

VIII, IX.
_Borage_ and _Hellebor_ fill two scenes,
Sovereign plants to purge the veins
Of melancholy, and cheer the heart,
Of those black flames which make it smart;
To clear the brain of misty fogs,
Which dull our senses, and Soul clogs.
The best medicine that e'er God made
For this malady, if well assayed.

X.
Now last of all to fill a place,
Presented is the Author's face;
And in that habit which he wears,
His image to the world appears.
His mind no art can well express,
That by his writings you may guess.
It was not pride, nor yet vain glory,
(Though others do it commonly,)
Made him do this; if you must know,
The Printer would needs have it so.
Then do not frown or scoff at it,
Derride not, or detract a whit.
For surely as thou dost by him,
He will do the same again.
Then look upon't, behold and see,
As thou like'lt it, so it likes thee.
And I for it will stand in view,
Thine to command, Reader, adieu.

* These verses refer to the Frontispiece, which is divided into ten compartments that are here severally explained. The author's portrait, mentioned in the tenth stanza, is copied in page ix.
THE AUTHOR'S ABSTRACT OF MELANCHOLY, Διαλογύς.

When I go musing all alone,
Thinking of divers things fore-known,
When I build castles in the air,
Void of sorrow and void of fear,
Pleasing myself with phantasms sweet,
Methinks the time runs very fleet.
All my joys to this are folly,
Naught so sweet as melancholy.

When I lie waking all alone,
Recounting what I have ill done,
My thoughts on me then tyrannise,
Fear and sorrow me surprise,
Whether I tarry still or go,
Methinks the time moves very slow.
All my griefs to this are jolly,
Naught so sad as melancholy.

When to myself I act and smile,
With pleasing thoughts the time beguile,
By a brook side or wood so green,
Unheard, unsought for, or unseen,
A thousand pleasures do me bless,
And crown my soul with happiness.
All my joys besides are folly,
None so sweet as melancholy.

When I lie, sit, or walk alone,
I sigh, I grieve, making great none,
In a dark grove, or irksome den,
With discontentments and Furies then,
A thousand miseries at once.
Mine heavy heart and soul ensoule,
All my griefs to this are jolly,
None so sour as melancholy.

Methinks I hear, methinks I see,
Sweet music, wondrous melody,
Towns, palaces, and cities fine;
Here now, then there; the world is mine,
Rare beauties, gallant ladies shine,
What'er is lovely or divine.
All other joys to this are folly,
None so sweet as melancholy.

Methinks I hear, methinks I see,
Ghosts, goblins, fiends; my fantasy
Presents a thousand ugly shapes,
Headless bears, black men, and apes,
Doleful outcries, and fearful sights,
My sad and dismal soul affrights.
All my griefs to this are jolly,
None so damn'd as melancholy.

Methinks I court, methinks I kiss,
Methinks I now embrace my mistress.
O blessed days, O sweet content,
In Paradise my time is spent.
Such thoughts may still my fancy move,
So may I ever be in love.
All my joys to this are folly,
Naught so sweet as melancholy.

When I recount love's many frights,
My sighs and tears, my waking nights,
My jealous fits; O mine hard fate
I now repent, but 'tis too late.
No torment is so bad as love,
So bitter to my soul can prove.
All my griefs to this are jolly,
Naught so harsh as melancholy.

Friends and companions get you gone,
'Tis my desire to be alone;
Ne'er well but when my thoughts and I
Do dominer in privacy.
No Gem, no treasure like to this,
'Tis my delight, my crown, my bliss.
All my joys to this are folly,
Naught so sweet as melancholy.

'Tis my sole plague to be alone,
I am a beast, a monster grown,
I will no light nor company,
I find it now my misery.
The scene is turn'd, my joys are gone,
Fear, discontent, and sorrows come.
All my griefs to this are jolly,
Naught so fierce as melancholy.
I'll not change life with any King,
I ravish am: can the world bring
More joy, than still to laugh and smile,
In pleasant toys time to beguile?
Do not, O do not trouble me,
So sweet content I feel and see.
All my joys to this are folly,
None so divine as melancholy.
I'll change my state with any wretch,
Thou canst from gael or dunghill fetch;
My pain's past care, another hell,
I may not in this torment dwell!
Now desperate I hate my life,
Lend me a halter or a knife;
All my griefs to this are jolly,
Naught so damn'd as melancholy.
GENTLE Reader, I presume thou wilt be very inquisitive to know what
antie or personate actor this is, that so insolently intrudes upon this
common theatre, to the world's view, arrogating another man's name; whence
he is, why he doth it, and what he hath to say; although, as "he said,
Primum si volueris, non respondebo, quis coacturus est? I am a free man born,
and may choose whether I will tell; who can compel me? If I be urged, I will
as readily reply as that Egyptian in Plutarch, when a curious fellow would
needs know what he had in his basket, Quum vides velatam, quid inquiris in
rem absconditam? It was therefore covered, because he should not know what
was in it. Seek not after that which is hid; if the contents please thee,
"and be for thy use, suppose the Man in the Moon, or whom thou wilt to be
the Author;" I would not willingly be known. Yet in some sort to give thee
satisfaction, which is more than I need, I will show a reason, both of this
usurped name, title, and subject. And first of the name of Democritus; lest
any man, by reason of it, should be deceived, expecting a pasquil, a satire, some
ridiculous treatise (as I myself should have done), some prodigious tenet, or
paradox of the earth's motion, of infinite worlds, in infinito vacuo, ex fortuita
atomorum collisione, in an infinite waste, so caused by an accidental collision
of motes in the sun, all which Democritus held, Epicurus and their master
Lucippus of old maintained, and are lately revived by Copernicus, Bruno, and
some others. Besides, it hath been always an ordinary custom, as "Gellius
observes, "for later writers and impostors, to broach many absurd and insolent
fictions, under the name of so noble a philosopher as Democritus, to get
themselves credit, and by that means the more to be respected," as artificers
usually do, Novo qui marmori ascribunt Praxatilum suo. "Tis not so with me.

Thou thyself art the subject of my discourse.

Quiquid agunt homines, votum, timor, ira, voluptas, Joys, wand'ring, are the sum of my report.
Gaulia, discursas, nostri harrago libell.

My intent is no otherwise to use his name, than Mercurius Gallobelgicus,
Mercurius Britannicus, use the name of Mercury, "Democritus Christianus, &c.;
although there be some other circumstances for which I have masked myself
under this vizard, and some peculiar respect which I cannot so well express,
until I have set down a brief character of this our Democritus, what he was,
with an Epitome of his life.

Democritus, as he is described by "Hippocrates and "Laertius, was a little
wearish old man, very melancholy by nature, averse from company in his latter
days, and much given to solitariness, a famous philosopher in his age, "ceceus

*A Seneca in Iuno in mortem Clandii Caesaris. b Lib. de Curiosisate. e Modò hæc tibi usui sint, quævís
suctorem fingito. Wccker. d Lib. 10, c. 12. Multa à malè foriat in Democriti nomine commenta data,
religion, ubiæ sequeam includens, visit solitarius. \* Fioruit Olympiade 857, 700 annis post Trojan.
with Socrates, wholly addicted to his studies at the last, and to a private life: wrote many excellent works, a great divine, according to the divinity of those times, an expert physician, a politician, an excellent mathematician, as "Diocamus and the rest of his works do witness. He was much delighted with the studies of husbandry, saith "Columella, and often I find him cited by "Constantius and others treating of that subject. He knew the natures, differences of all beasts, plants, fishes, birds; and, as some say, could understand the tunes and voices of them. In a word, he was omnifariam doctus, a general scholar, a great student; and to the intent he might better contemplate, "I find it related by some, that he put out his eyes, and was in his old age voluntarily blind, yet saw more than all Greece besides, and "writ of every subject, Nihil in toto opificio naturae, de quo non scripsit." A man of an excellent wit, profound conceit; and to attain knowledge the better in his younger years he travelled to Egypt and Athens, to confer with learned men, "admired of some, despised of others." After a wandering life, he settled at Abdera, a town in Thrace, and was sent for thither to be their law-maker, Recorder, or town-clerk as some will; or as others, he was there bred and born. Howsoever it was, there he lived at last in a garden in the suburbs, wholly betaking himself to his studies and a private life, "saving that sometimes he would walk down to the haven, "and laugh heartily at such variety of ridiculous objects, which there he saw." Such a one was Democritus.

But in the mean time, how doth this concern me, or upon what reference do I usurp this habit? I confess, indeed, that to compare myself unto him for anight I have yet said, were both impudence and arrogance. I do not presume to make any parallel, Antistatini nihil millibus trecentis,"parvus sum, nullus sum, altum nec spiro, nec sporo. Yet thus much I will say of myself, and that I hope without all suspicion of pride, or self-conceit, I have lived asilent, sedentary, solitary, private life, "mutilis et musis in the University, as long almost as Xenocrates in Athens, ad senectam ferè to learn wisdom as he did, penned up most part in my study. For I have been brought up a student in the most flourishing college of Europe, "augustissimo collegio, and can brag with "Jovins, almost, in ed luce domicilii Vaticani, totius orbis celeberrimi, per 37 annos multa opportunaque didicit;" for thirty years I have continued (having the use of as good "libraries as ever he had) a scholar, and would be therefore loth, either by living as a drone, to be an unprofitable or unworthy member of so learned and noble a society, or to write that which should be any way dishonourable to such a royal and ample foundation. Something I have done, though by my profession a divine, yet "turbae raetus ingenti, as he said, out of a running wit, an unconstant, unsettled mind, I had a great desire (not able to attain to a superificial skill in any) to have some smatterings in all, to be aliquid in omnibus, nullus in singulis," which Plato commends, out of him "Lipsius approves and furthers, "as fit to be imprint in all curious wits, not to be a slave of one science, or dwell together in one subject, as most do, but to rove abroad, centum pur aratum, to have an ear in every man's boat, to 'taste of every dish, and sip of every cup," which, saith "Montaigne, was well performed by Aristotle, and his learned countryman Adrian Turnebus. This roving humour

1 Diacoc. quod eunetis operibus facilis excellent. Laëret. Col. lib. 1. e. 1. Const. lib. de agric. passim.
Democritus to the Reader.

(though not with like success) I have ever had, and like a ranging spaniel, that barks at every bird he sees, leaving his game, I have followed all, saving that which I should, and may justly complain, and truly, qui ubique est, nusquam est, which Gesner did in modesty, that I have read many books, but to little purpose, for want of good method; I have confusedly tumbled over divers authors in our libraries, with small profit for want of art, order, memory, judgment. I never travelled but in map or card, in which my unconfined thoughts have freely expatiated, as having ever been especially delighted with the study of Cosmography. Saturn was lord of my geniture, culminating, &c., and Mars principal significator of manners, in partile conjunction with my ascendant; both fortunate in their houses, &c. I am not poor, I am not rich; nihil est, nihil deest, I have little, I want nothing: all my treasure is in Minerva's tower. Greater preferment as I could never get, so am I not in debt for it, I have a competence (laus Deo) from my noble and munificent patrons, though I live still a collegiate student, as Democritus in his garden, and lead a monastical life, ipse mihi theatrum, sequestered from those tumults and troubles of the world, Et tanquam in specula positus, (as he said) in some high place above you all, like Stoicus Sapiens, omnium secula, praeteria presenta tiaque videns, uno velut intuitu, I hear and see what is done abroad, how others run, ride, turmoil, and maceater themselves in court and country, far from those wrangling lawsuits, aulae vanitatem, fori ambitiwn, videre necum soleo: I laugh at all, only secure lest my suit go amiss, my ships perish, corn and cattle miscarry, trade decay, I have no wife nor children good or bad to provide for. A mere spectator of other men's fortunes and adventures, and how they act their parts, which methinks are diversely presented unto me as from a common theatre or scene. I hear new news every day, and those ordinary rumours of war, plagues, fires, inundations, thefts, murders, massacres, meteors, comets, spectrums, prodigies, apparitions, of towns taken, cities besieged in France, Germany, Turkey, Persia, Poland, &c., daily musters and preparations, and such like, which these tempestuous times afford, battles fought so many men slain, monomachies, shipwrecks, piracies, and sea-fights; peace, leagues, stratagems, and fresh alarms. A vast confusion of vows, wishes, actions, edicts, petitions, lawsuits, pleas, laws, proclamations, complaints, grievances, are daily brought to our ears. New books every day, pamphlets, currantoes, stories, whole catalogues of volumes of all sorts, new paradoxes, opinions, schisms, heresies, controversies in philosophy, religion, &c. Now come tidings of weddings, maskings, mummeries, entertainments, jubilees, embassies, tilts and tournaments, trophies, triumphs, revels, sports, plays: then again, as in a new shifted scene, treasons, cheating tricks, robberies, enormous villanies in all kinds, funerals, burials, deaths of princes, new discoveries, expeditions, now comical, then tragical matters. To-day we hear of new lords and officers created, to-morrow of some great men deposed, and then again of fresh honours conferred; one is let loose, another imprisoned; one purchases, another beaketh: he thrives, his neighbour turns bankrupt: now plenty, then again dearth and famine; one runs, another rides, wrangles, laughs, weeps, &c. Thus I daily hear, and such like, both private and public news, amidst the gallantry and misery of the world; jollity, pride, perplexities and cares, simplicity and villany; subtlety, knavery, candour and integrity, mutually mixed and offering themselves; I rub on privus privatus; as I have still lived, so I now continue, statu quo prius, left to a solitary life, and mine own domestic discontents; saving that sometimes, ne quid menihar, as Diogenes

* He that is everywhere is nowhere.
* Prefat. biblothec.
* Ambo fortes et fortunati, Mars idem magisteri dominus justa primam Lovclittii remunat.
* Hensins.
* Colite ambientes, solite litigantes, aut miscr evidentis, voces, strenuum cnotinues, &c.
* Cypr. ad Donat. Unicie secundus, ne exclam in foro, aut in maris Indicius bonis chii, de dotis filiae, matrimonio in l. non sum sollicitus.
Democritus to the Reader.

went into the city, and Democritus to the haven to see fashions, I did for my recreation now and then walk abroad, look into the world, and could not choose but make some little observation, non tam sagax observator, ac simplex recti-
tator, not as they did, to scoff or laugh at all, but with a mixed passion.

"Bilem seque, jecum vestri movère tumultus."
Ye wretched minites, whose fond hearts have been,
How oft! the objects of my mirth and spleen.

I did sometime laugh and scoff with Lucian, and satirically tax with Menippus, lament with Heraclitus, sometimes again I was petulantii splen\ porcelain, and then again, urere bilis jacor, I was much moved to see that abuse which I could not mend. In which passion howsoever I may sympathize with him or them, 'tis for no such respect I shroud myself under his name; but either in an unknown habit to assume a little more liberty and freedom of speech, or if you will needs know, for that reason and only respect which Hippocrates relates at large in his Epistle to Damegetus, wherein he doth express, how coming to visit him one day, he found Democritus in his garden at Abdera, in the suburbs, under a shady bower, with a book on his knees, busy at his study, sometimes writing, sometimes walking. The subject of his book was melancholy and madness; about him lay the carcasses of many several beasts, newly by him cut up and anatomised; not that he did contend God's creatures, as he told Hippocrates, but to find out the seat of this atra bilis, or melancholy, whence it proceeds, and how it was engendered in men's bodies, to the intent he might better cure it in himself, and by his writings and observa-
tions teach others how to prevent and avoid it. Which good intent of his, Hippocrates highly commended: Democritus Junior is therefore bold to imitate, and because he left it imperfect, and it is now lost, quasi succentu-
rator Democriti, to revive again, prosecute, and finish in this treatise.

You have had a reason of the name. If the title and inscription offend your gravity, were it a sufficient justification to accuse others, I could produce many sober treatises, even sermons themselves, which in their fronts carry more fantastical names. Howsoever, it is a kind of policy in these days, to prefix a fantastical title to a book which is to be sold; for, as larks come down to a day-net, many vain readers will tarry and stand gazing like silly passengers at an antic picture in a painter's shop, that will not look at a judicious piece. And, indeed, as Scaliger observes, "nothing more invites a reader than an argument unlooked for, unthought of, and sells better than a scrullie pamphlet," tum manieae cum novitas exicit palatum. "Many men," saith Gellius, "are very conceited in their inscriptions," and able (as Flin quotes out of Seneca) to make him loiter by the way that went in haste to fetch a midwife for his daughter, now ready to lie down. For my part, I have honourable precedents for this which I have done: I will cite one for all, Anthony Zara, Pap. Episc., his Anatomy of Wit, in four sections, mem-
bers, subsections, &c., to be read in our libraries.

If any man except against the matter or manner of treating of this my subject, and will demand a reason of it, I can allege more than one; I write of melancholy, by being busy to avoid melancholy. There is no greater cause of melancholy than idleness, "no better cure than business," as Rhasis

*a* Not so sagacious an observer as simple a narrator. *Hor. Ep. lib. 1. xxix., 20.*

*a* Per. A laugher with a pertulant spleen. *Hor. lib. 1. sat. 9.*

*a* Scaliger observes, "nothing more invites a reader than an argument unlooked for, unthought of, and sells better than a scrullie pamphlet," tum manieae cum novitas exicit palatum. "Many men," saith Gellius, "are very conceited in their inscriptions," and able (as Flin quotes out of Seneca) to make him loiter by the way that went in haste to fetch a midwife for his daughter, now ready to lie down. For my part, I have honourable precedents for this which I have done: I will cite one for all, Anthony Zara, Pap. Episc., his Anatomy of Wit, in four sections, members, subsections, &c., to be read in our libraries.
holds: and howbeit, stultus labor est ineptiarum, to be busy in toys is to small purpose, yet hear that divine Seneca, atid agere quam nihil, better do to no end, than nothing. I wrote therefore, and busied myself in this playing labour, otiosag. diligentia ut vitarem torporem feriandi with Vectius in Macrobius, atq. otium in utile verterem negotium.

7 Simul et jejuna et idonea dieara vitae, Lectorem delictando simul etqua modendo. Poets would profit or delight mankind, And with the pleasing have th' instructive join'd. Profit and pleasure, then, to mix with art, To inform the judgement, nor offend the heart, Shall gain all votes.

To this end I write, like them, saith Lucian, that "recite to trees, and declaim to pillars for want of auditors:" as "Paulus Aegineta ingeniously confessed, "not that anything was unknown or omitted, but to exercise myself," which course if some took, I think it would be good for their bodies, and much better for their souls; or peradventure as others do, for fame, to show myself (Scire tuum nihil est, nisi te scire hoc scias alter). I might be of Thucydides opinion, "as to know a thing and not to express it, is all one as if he knew it not." When I first took this task in hand, et quod ait bille, impellente genio negotium susepi, this I aimed at; vel ut lenirem animum scribendo, to ease my mind by writing; for I had gravidum cor, fotum caput, a kind of imposthume in my head, which I was very desirous to be unladen of, and could imagine no fitter evacuation than this. Besides, I might not well refrain, for ubi dolor, ubi digitus, one must needs scratch where it itches. I was not a little offended with this malady, shall I say my Mistress "melancholy," my Ægeria, or my malus genius? and for that cause, as he that is stung with a scorpion, I would expel clavum clavo, "comfort one sorrow with another, idleness with idleness, ut ex viperâ Theriacum, make an antidote out of that which was the prime cause of my disease. Or as he did, of whom Felix Plater speaks, that thought he had some of Aristophanes' frogs in his belly, still crying Brecc, cokex, coax, coax, oop, oop, and for that cause studied physic seven years, and travelled over most part of Europe to ease himself. To do myself good I turned over such physicians as our libraries would afford, or my "private friends impart, and have taken this pains. And why not? Carden professeth he wrote his book, "De Consolatione" after his son's death, to comfort himself; so did Tully write of the same subject with like intent after his daughter's departure, if it be his at least, or some impostor's put out in his name, which Lipsius probably suspects. Concerning myself, I can peradventure affirm with Marius in Sallust, "that which others hear or read of, I felt and practised myself; they get their knowledge by books, I mine by melancholising." Experto crede Roberto. Something I can speak out of experience, erumnobibilis experientia me docuit; and with her in the poet, 'Haud ignara malis miseriis succurrere disco; I would help others out of a fellow-feeling; and, as that virtuous lady did of old, "being a leper herself, bestow all her portion to build an hospital for lepers," I will spend my time and knowledge, which are my greatest fortunes, for the common good of all.

Yea, but you will infer that this is 'actum agere, an unnecessary work, oramen bis ap opponere, the same again and again in other words. To

what purpose? "Nothing is omitted that may well be said," so thought
Lucian in the like theme. How many excellent physicians have written just
volumes and elaborate tracts of this subject? No news here; that which
I have is stolen from others, * Dicitque mihi mea pagina, fur es. If that
severe doom of Synesius be true, "it is a greater offence to steal dead men's
labours, than their clothes," what shall become of most writers? I hold up
my hand at the bar among others, and am guilty of felony in this kind, habes
confidentem reum, I am content to be pressed with the rest. 'Tis most true,
tenet insanabile multis scribendi cacochyda, and "there is no end of writing of
books," as the Wise-man found of old, in this "scribbling age, especially
wherein "the number of books is without number, (as a worthy man saith,) presse be oppressed," and out of an itching humour that every man hath to
show himself, "desirous of fame and honour (scribinus indicet doctique—),
he will write no matter what, and scrape together it boots not whence.
"Bewitched with this desire of fame, etiam medii in morbis, to the dis-
paragement of their health, and scarce able to hold a pen, they must say
something, "and get themselves a name," saith Scaliger, "though it be to
the downfall and ruin of many others." To be counted writers, scriptores ut
salutentur, to be thought and held Polumathes and Polyhistors, apud imperitum
evagus ob ventosae nomen artis, to get a paper-kingdom: nulla spe quiescit sed
amplia fame, in this precipitate, ambitious age, nunc ut est seculum, inter immo-
turam eruditionem, ambitiosum & praecepta (tis Scaliger's censure); and they
that are scarce auditors, vic auditores, must be masters and teachers, before they
be capable and fit hearers. They will rush into all learning, togatam armatam,
divine, human authors, rake over all indexes and pamphlets for notes, as our
merchants do strange havens for traffic, write great tomes, Cunm non sit re
vera doctores, sed loguciores, whereas they are not thereby better scholars,
but greater praters. They commonly pretend public good, but as "Gesner
observes, 'tis pride and vanity that eggs them on; no news or ought worthy
of note, but the same in other terms. Ne feriarentur fortasse typographi, vel
ideo scribendum est aliquid ut se vivisse testentur. As apothecaries we make
new mixtures every day, pour out of one vessel into another; and as those old
Romans robbed all the cities of the world, to set out their bad-sited Rome,
we skim off the cream of other men's wits, pick the choice flowers of their
tilled gardens to set out our own sterile plots. Caustrum alios ut libros suos per se
gracies alieno adipe suffuscant (so Jovius inveighs). They lard their lean
books with the fat of others' works. Ineundi fures, &c., A fault that every
writer finds, as I do now, and yet faulty themselves, Trierum literarum homines,
al-"thieves; they pilfer out of old writers to stuff up their new comments,
scrape Ennius dung-hills, and out of "Democritus" pit, as I have done. By
which means it comes to pass, "that not only libraries and shops are full of
our putid papers, but every close-stool and jakes, Scribunt carmina quae legunt
cacantes; they serve to put under ples, to lap spice in, and keep roast-meat
from burning. "With us in France," saith Scaliger, "every man hath
liberty to write, but few ability. "Heretofore learning was graced by judicious
scholars, but now noble sciences are vilified by base and illiterate scribblers,"
that either write for vain-glory, need, to get money, or as parasites to flatter
and colleague with some great men, they put out "burras, quies-quad" inp-
Democritus to the Reader.

What a company of poets hath this year brought out," as Pliny complains to Sossius Sinesius. "This April every day some or other have recited."

What a catalogue of new books all this year, all this age (I say), have our Frankfort Marts, our domestic Marts brought out? Twice a year, "Proferunt se nova ingenia et ostentant, we stretch our wits out, and set them to sale, magno conatus nihil agimus."

So that which Gesner much desires, if a speedy reformation be not had, by some Prince's Edicts and grave Supervisors, to restrain this liberty, it will run on in infinitum. "Quis tam aridus librorum hellicio, who can read them? As already, we shall have a vast Chaos and confusion of books, we are oppressed with them, our eyes ache with reading, our fingers with turning. For my part I am one of the number nostumus numeros sumus, (we are mere ciphers): I do not deny it, I have only this of Macrobius to say for myself, Onine meum, nihil meum, 'tis all mine, and none mine.

As a good housewife out of divers fleeces weaves one piece of cloth, a bee gathers wax and honey out of many flowers, and makes a new bundle of all, Floriferis ut apes in saltibus omnia libant, I have laboriously "collected this Cento out of divers writers, and that sine injuriis, I have wronged no authors, but given every man his own; which Hierom so much commends in Nepotian; he stole not whole verses, pages, tracts, as some do now-a-days, concealing their author's names, but still said this was Cyprian's, that Lactantius, that Hillarius, so said Minutius Felix, so Victorinus, thus far Arnobius: I cite and quote mine authors (which, howsoever some illiterate scribblers account pedantic, as a cloak of ignorance, and opposite to their affected fine style, I must and will use) sumpsi, non surrumpi; and what Varro, lib. 6. de re rust. speaks of bees, minimæ malefica nullius opus volentes facientes deturum, I can say of myself, Whom have I injured? The matter is theirs most part, and yet mine, apparat unde sumptum sit (which Seneca approves), aliud tamen quidem unde sumptum sit appetit, which nature doth with the aliment of our bodies incorporate, digest,
assimilate, I do conoquire quod hausi, dispose of what I take. I make them pay tribute, to set out this my Maceronicon, the method only is mine own, I must usurp that of a Wocker & Ter. nihil dictum quod non dictum prius, methodus sola artificem ostendit, we can say nothing but what hath been said, the composition and method is ours only, and shows a scholar. Oribasis, A€sius, Avicenna, have all out of Galen, but to their own method, diverso stilo, non diversa fide. Our poets steal from Homer; he spews, saith A€lian, they lick it up. Divine uses Austin's words verbatim still, and our story-dressers, do as much; he that comes last is commonly best.

Though there were many giants of old in Physic and Philosophy, yet I say with b Didacus Stella, "A dwarf standing on the shoulders of a giant may see farther than a giant himself;" I may likely add, alter, and see farther than my predecessors; and it is no greater prejudice for me to indite after others, than for A€lianus Montaltus, that famous physician, to write de morbis capitis after Jason Pratensis, Henrius, Hildesheim, &c., many horses to run in a race, one logician, one rhetorician, after another. Oppose then what thou wilt,

Allatres cineat usque nos et usque, Et Gamitibus improbis accessas.

I solve it thus. And for those other faults of barbarism, Doric dialect, extemporaneous style, tautologies, apish imitation, a rhapsody of rags gathered together from several dung-hills, excrements of authors, toys and fopperies confusedly tumbled out, without art, invention, judgment, wit, learning, harsh, raw, rude, fantastical, absurd, insolent, indiscreet, ill-composed, indigested, vain, scurrile, idle, dull, and dry; I confess all (tis partly affected), thou canst not think worse of me than I do of myself. 'Tis not worth the reading, I yield it, I desire thee not to lose time in perusing so vain a subject, I should be peradventure loth myself to read him or thee so writing; 'tis not opera pretium. All I say is this, that I haveprecedents for it, which Isocrates calls, perfugium is qui pecunam, others as absurd, vain, idle, illiterate, &c. Nonnulli ali idem fecerunt; others have done as much, it may be more, and perhaps thou thyself, Novimus et qui te, &c. We have all our faults; acinus, et hanc veriam, &c.; 'thou censurseth me, so have I done others, and may do thee, Cadinus in qua vivem, &c., tis lex talimia, quid pro quo. Go now, censure, criticise, scoff, and rail.

a Naetus sis usque licet, sis denique nasus; Non potes in nigas dicere plur'm mes, Ipsa ego quam dixi, &c.  

Thus, as in women scold, have I cried whose first, and in some men's censures I am afraid I have overshot myself, Laudare se vani, vituperare stulti, as I do not arrogate, I will not derogate. Primus vestrorum non sum, nec inus, I am none of the best, I am none of the meanest of you. As I am an inch, or so many feet, so many parasangs, after him or him, I may be peradventure an ace before thee. Be it therefore as it is, well or ill, I have essayed, put myself upon the stage; I must abide the censure, I may not escape it. It is most true, stylos virum arguit, our style bewrays us, and as hunters find their game by the trace, so is a man's genius descried by his works, Multo melius ex sermone quain lineamentis, de moribus hominum judicamus; it was old Cato's rule. I have laid myself open (I know it) in this treatise, turned mine inside

--- done quid grandis atbas  
Reader, sorsque forat meiler.

---

\[\text{\textit{Democritus to the Reader.}}\]

---

\[\text{\textit{a}}\] Pref. ad Syntax. med. \[\text{\textit{b}}\] Until a later age and a happier lot produce something more truly grand.

1 In Luc. 10. tom. 2. Pigmet Gigantum numeris impositi plasqam ipsi Gigantes vident. \n
2 Nec araneorum textus lice melior quia ex se sfa sigmuntar, nec noster vado volior, quia ex alienis libamus ut apes. Lipsius adversus dialogist. \n
3 Uno absurdo dato milie sequuntur. \n
4 Non dubito multos lectores hic fore stultos. \n
5 Martialis, 13. 2. \n
6 Ut venatores feram & vestiglo impresso, virum scripti.
outward: I shall be censured, I doubt not; for, to say truth, with Erasmus, "quid morosius hominum judiciis, there is naught so peevish as men’s judgments; yet this is some comfort, ut palata, sic judicia, our censures are as various as our palates.

Tres mihi convenire prope dissentire visuntur, Poscentes vario multum diversa palato, &c. Three guests I have, dissenting at my feast, Requiring each to gratify his taste With different food.

Our writings are as so many dishes, our readers guests, our books like beauty, that which one admires another rejects; so are we approved as men’s fancies are inclined. Pro captu lectoris habent sua fata libelli. That which is most pleasing to one is amaracum sui, most harsh to another. Quot homines, tot sententiae, so many men, so many minds: that which thou condemnest he commends. "Quod petis, id sane est inuisum acidumque duobus. He respects matter, thou art wholly for words; he loves a loose and free style, thou art all for neat composition, strong lines, hyperboles, allegories; he desires a fine frontispiece, enticing pictures, such as Hieron. Natali the Jesuit hath cut to the Dominicals, to draw on the reader’s attention, which thou rejectest; that which one admires, another explodes as most absurd and ridiculous. If it be not pointblank to his humour, his method, his conceit, "quid forsan omnium, quod is animo conceperit, si quae dictio, &c. If not omitted, or added, which he likes, or dislikes, thou art mancipium paucis lectionibus, an idiot, an ass, nullus es, or plagiarium, a trifler, a trivant, thou art an idle fellow; or else it is a thing of mere industry, a collection without wit or invention, a very toy.

Facilia sic putant omnes quae jam facta, nec de salebris cogitant ubi via strata; so men are valued, their labours vilified by fellows of no worth themselves, as things of nought, who could not have done so much. Unusquisque abundant sensu suo, every man abounds in his own sense; and whilst each particular party is so affected, how should one please all?

What course must I chuse? What both would order you refuse.

How shall I hope to express myself to each man’s humour and conceit, or to give satisfaction to all? Some understand too little, some too much, qui similiter in legendos libros, atque in salutandos homines irruunt, non cogitantes quales, sed quibus vestibus induit sint, as Austin observes, not regarding what, but who write, "orexin habet auctoris celebritas, not valuing the metal, but stamp that is upon it, Cantharum aspirivent, non quid in eo. If he be not rich, in great place, polite and brave, a great doctor, or full fraught with grand titles, though never so well qualified, he is a dunce; but, as Baronius hath it of Cardinal Caraffa’s works, he is a mere hog that rejects any man for his poverty.

Some are too partial, as friends to overween, others come with a prejudice to carp, vilify, detract, and scoff; (qui de me forsan, qui erunt est, omni contemptu contemptissimo judicant) some as bees for honey, some as spiders to gather poison. What shall I do in this case? As a Dutch host, if you come to an inn in Germany, and dislike your fare, diet, lodging, &c., replies in a surly tone, "aliud tibi quaeras diversorum," if you like not this, get you to another inn: I resolve, if you like not my writing, go read something else. I do not much esteem thy censure, take thy course, it is not as thou wilt, nor as I will, but when we have both done, that of Plinius Secundus to Trajan will prove true, "Every man’s witty labour takes not, except the matter, subject, occasion, and some commending favours happen to it.

If I be taxed, exploded...
by thee and some such, I shall haply be approved and commended by others, and so have been (Experius lupor), and may truly say with Jovius in like case, (absit verbo jactantia) herowm quorumdam, pontificum, et virorum nobilium familiaritatem et amicitiam, gratasque gratias, et multorum bene laudatorum laudes sum inde praeferimus, as I have been honoured by some worthy men, so have I been vilified by others, and shall be. At the first publishing of this book, (which Probis of Persius satires), editum librum continuo mirari homines, atque adiere coperint, I may in some sort apply to this my work. The first, second, and third editions were suddenly gone, eagerly read, and, as I have said, not so much approved by some, as scornfully rejected by others. But it was Democritus his fortune, Idem admirati et irritioni habitus. Twas Seneca's fate, that superintendent of wit, learning, judgment, ad stuporem doctus, the best of Greek and Latin writers, in Plutarch's opinion; "that renowned corrector of vice," as "Fabius terms him, "and painful omniscious philosopher, that writ so excellently and admirably well," could not please all parties, or escape censure. How is he vilified by Caligula, Agellius, Fabius, and Lipsius himself, his chief propugner? In co plerique permitto, saith the same Fabius, many childish tracts and sentences he hath, sermo elaboratus, too negligent often and remiss, as Agellius observes, oratio vulgaris et protrita, divaces et ineptae sententiae, eruditio plebia, an homely shallow writer as he is. In partibus spinas et fastidio habit, saith + Lipsius; and, as in all his other works, so especially in his epistles, axia in argutis et ineptis occupatur, intricatus aliqui, et partum compositus, sine copia rerum hoc fecit, he jumbles up many things together immethodically, after the Stoics' fashion, parum ordinavit, multa accumulavit, &c. If Seneca be thus lashed, and many famous men that I could name, what shall I expect? How shall that am vix umbra tanti philosophi, hope to please? "No man so absolute (Erasmus holds) to satisfy all, except antiquity, prescription, &c., set a bar." But as I have proved in Seneca, this will not always take place, how shall I evade? Tis the common doom of all writers, I must (I say) abide it; I seek not applause; Non ego ventosae venor suffixagie plebi; again, non sum adeo informis, I would not be vilified.

I fear good men's consures, and to their favourable acceptance I submit my labours,

et linguas mancipiorum Contemne.

At the barking of a dog, I securely contemn those malicious and scurrile obloquies, flouts, calumnies of railers and detractors; I scorn the rest. What therefore I have said, pro tenuitate melib, I have said.

One or two things yet I was desirous to have amended if I could, concerning the manner of handling this my subject, for which I must apologise, deprecari, and upon better advice give the friendly reader notice: it was not mine intent to prostitute my muse in English, or to divulge secreta Minerva, but to have exposed this more contract in Latin, if I could have got it printed. Any scurrile pamphlet is welcome to our mercenary stationers in English; they print all,

culuntique libelles

In quorum foliis vix simia nuda cacaret;

But in Latin they will not deal; which is one of the reasons *Nicholas Car, in his oration of the paucity of English writers, gives, that so many flourishing wits are smothered in oblivion, lie dead and buried in this our nation. Another main fault is, that I have not revised the copy, and amended the style, which now flows remissly, as it was first conceived; but my leisure would not permit; Feci nec quod potui, nec quod volui, I confess it is neither as I would, nor as it should be.

*Carm elege scripsisse pudet, quia plurima cerno
Me quoque fuerant judices digna hist.

When I purge this tract which I have writ,
I am abash’d, and much I hold unfit.

Et quod gravissimum, in the matter itself, many things I disallow at this present, which when I writ, *Non eadem est aestas, non mens; I would willingly retract much, &c., but ’tis too late, I can only crave pardon now for what is amiss.

I might indeed, (had I wisely done) observed that precept of the poet,—

nonumque prematur in annum, and have taken more care: or, as Alexander the physician would have done by lapis lazuli, fifty times washed before it be used I should have revised, corrected and amended this tract; but I had not (as I said) that happy leisure, no amanuenses or assistants. Pancrates in

*Lucian, wanting a servant as he went from Memphis to Coptus in Egypt, took a door bar, and after some superstitious words pronounced (Eurocrates the relation was then present) made it stand up like a serving-man, fetch him water, turn the spit, serve in supper, and what work he would besides; and when he had done that service he desired, turned his man to a stick again. I have no such skill to make new men at my pleasure, or means to hire them; no whistle to call like the master of a ship, and bid them run, &c. I have no such authority, no such benefactors, as that noble *Ambrosius was to Origen, allowing him six or seven amanuenses to write out his dictates; I must for that cause do my business myself, and was therefore enforced, as a bear doth her whelps, to bring forth this confused lump; I had not time to lick it into form, as she doth her young ones, but even so to publish it, as it was first written quicquid in buccam venit, in an extemporean style, as *I do commonly all other exercises, effaudi quicquid dictavit genus meas; out of a confused company of notes, and wit with as small deliberation as I do ordinarily speak, without all affectation of big words, fustian phrases, jingling terms, tropes, strong lines, that like *Acesta’s arrows caught fire as they flew, strains of wit, brave beats, elegies, hyperbolical exhortations, elegancies, &c., which many so much affect. I am *aqua potor, drink no wine at all, which so much improves our modern wits, a loose, plain, rude writer, *fucam voco fucam, et tigonom tigonom, and as free, as loose, *idem calam quid in mente, *I call a spade a spade, animis hae scribo, non auribus, I respect matter not words; remembering that of Cardan, verba propter res, non res propter verba: and seeking with Seneca, quid scribam, non quenmadmodum, rather what than how to write: for as Philo thinks, *He that is conversant about matter, neglects words, and those that excel in this art of speaking, have no profound learning.

*Verba nitent phaleris, at nullas verba medullas
Litur habent—

Besides, it was the observation of that wise Seneca, *when you see a fellow careful about his words, and neat in his speech, know this for a certainty that


*nulam disciplinam habet reognatam.  *Palagonius. Words may be resplendent with ornament, but they contain no marrow within.

man's mind is busied about toys, there's no solidity in him. Non est ornam-
mentum virile consciencia: as he said of a nightingale, vox es, proterea nihil,
&c. I am therefore in this point a professed disciple of *Apollonius a scholar
of Socrates, I neglect phrases, and labour wholly to inform my reader's un-
derstanding, not to please his ear; 'tis not my study or intent to compose neatly,
which an orator requires, but to express myself readily and plainly as it
happens. So that as a river runs sometimes precipitate and swift, then dull and
slow; now direct, then per ambages; now deep, then shallow; now muddy,
then clear; now broad, then narrow; doth my style flow: now serious, then
light; now comical, then satirical; now more elaborate, then remiss, as the
present subject required, or as at that time I was affected. And if thou
vouchsafe to read this treatise, it shall seem no otherwise to thee, than the
way to an ordinary traveller, sometimes fair, sometimes foul; here champaign,
there inclosed; barren in one place, better soil in another: by woods, groves,
hills, dales, plains, &c. I shall lead thee per ardua montium, et lubrica
cellum, et posse cespitum, et galeosa camporum, through variety of objects
that which thou shalt like and surely dislike.

For the matter itself or method, if it be faulty, consider I pray you that of
Columella, Nihil perfectum, aut a singulare consummatum industria, no man
can observe all, much is defective no doubt, may be justly taxed, alterted, and
avoided in Galen, Aristotle, those great masters. Boni venatoris (one holds)
plures ferus capere, non omnes; he is a good huntsman, can catch some, not
all; I have done my endeavour. Besides, I dwell not in this study, Non hic
suulos ducimus, non hic pulvere desudamus, I am but a smatterer, I confess, a
stranger, *here and there I pull a flower; I do easily grant, if a rigid censor
should criticise on this which I have writ, he should not find three sole faults, as
Scaliger in Terence, but three hundred. So many as he hath done in Cardan's
subtleties, as many notable errors as *Gul. Laurentbergius, a late professor of
Rostocke, discovers in that anatomy of Laurentius, or Barocius the Venetian in
Sacro bosco. And although this be a sixth edition, in which I should have been
more accurate, corrected all those former escapes, yet it was magni laboris
opus, so difficult and tedious, that as carpenters do find out of experience,'tis
much better build a new sometimes, than repair an old house; I could as soon
write as much more, as alter that which is written. If aught therefore be
amiss (as I grant there is), I require a friendly admonition, no bitter invective,
*Sint munis socii Charides, Furiis omnis abesto, otherwise, as in ordinary
controversies, funem contentiosis rectamus, sed cui bono? We may contend,
and likely misuse each other, but to what purpose? We are both scholars, say,

Arcades ambo,
Et cantare parus, et respondere parati.

Both young Arcadians, both alike inspir'd
To sing and answer as the song requir'd.

If we do wrangle, what shall we get by it? Trouble and wrong ourselves,
make sport to others. If I be convict of an error, I will yield, I will amend.
Si quis Bonus moritus, si quis veritati dissentusement, in sacris vel humannis
literis a me dictum sit, id nec dictum est. In the mean time I require a favour-
able censure of all faults omitted, harsh compositions, pleonasms of words,
tautological repetitions (though Seneca bear me out, munquam nimis dicitur,
quod munquam sat is dictur) perturbations of tenses, numbers, printers' faults,
&c. My translations are sometimes rather paraphrases than interpretations,
non ad verbum, but as an author, I use more liberty, and that's only taken
which was to my purpose. Quotations are often inserted in the text, which

* Philostratus, lib. 8, vit. Apol. Negligebat oratoriam facultatem, et penitus asperramatur ejus profes-
sores, quod linguaem duxerat, non autem mentem redderent eruditorem.
* Hos enim, quod Seneca de Ponto, hos herbam, ciconia larism, canis isoporum, virgo florem legat. p Pet. Naunium not. in
Hor. q Non hic colorum dominicum habeo, sed topisini in mora, hinc inde florem vellico, ut canis Nilium
lambens. r Supra bis mille notabilis errores Laurentii demonstravi, &c. s Filo de Con. t Virg.
makes the style more harsh, or in the margin as it happened. Greek authors, Plato, Plutarch, Athenæus, &c., I have cited out of their interpreters, because the original was not so ready. I have mingled sacra prophanis, but I hope not prophaned, and in repetition of authors' names, ranked them per accidens, not according to chronology; sometimes Neotericks before Ancients, as my memory suggested. Some things are here altered, expunged in this sixth edition, others amended, much added, because many good *authors in all kinds are come to my hands since, and 'tis no prejudice, no such indicorum, or oversight.

* Nunquam ita quietum bene subducta ratione ad vitam fact, Quin res, atax, usus, semper aliquid appetent not, Aliquid moenante, ut lilia que scire to credas, nescias, Et que tibi patris prís, in exercendo ut repulias. Ne'er was aught yet at first contrived so fit, But use, age, or something would alter it; Advise thee better, and, upon peruse, Make thee not say, and what thou takest refuse.

But I am now resolved never to put this treatise out again, Ne quid nimis, I will not hereafter add, alter, or retract; I have done. The last and greatest exception is, that I, being a divine, have meddled with physic,

>—Tantumne est ab re tuæ otii tibi, Allens ut cure, eaque nihil que ad te attingat?

Which Menedemus objected to Chromes; have I so much leisure, or little business of mine own, as to look after other men's matters which concern me not? What have I to do with physic? Quod medicorum est promittant medici. The *Lacedemonians were once in counsel about state matters, a debauched fellow spoke excellent well, and to the purpose, his speech was generally approved: a grave senator steps up, and by all means would have it repealed, though good, because dishonestabatur pessimó auctores, it had no better an author; let some good man relate the same, and then it should pass. This counsel was embraced, factum est, and it was registered forthwith. Et sic bona sententia mansit, malus auctor mutatus est. Thou sayest as much of me, stomachous as thou art, and gravest, peradventure, this which I have written in physic, not to be amiss, had another done it, a professed physician, or so; but why should I meddle with this tract? Hear me speak. There be many other subjects, I do easily grant, both in humanity and divinity, fit to be treated of, of which had I written ad ostentationem only, to show myself, I should have rather chosen, and in which I have been more conversant, I could have more willingly luxuriated, and better satisfied myself and others; but that at this time I was fatally driven upon this rock of melancholy, and carried away by this by-stream, which, as a rillet, is deducted from the main channel of my studies, in which I have pleased and busied myself at idle hours, as a subject most necessary and commodious. Not that I prefer it before divinity, which I do acknowledge to be the queen of professions, and to which all the rest are as handmaids, but that in divinity I saw no such great need. For had I written positively, there be so many books in that kind, so many commentators, treatises, pamphlets, expositions, sermons, that whole teams of oxen cannot draw them; and had I been as forward and ambitious as some others, I might have haply printed a sermon at Paul's Cross, a sermon in St. Marie's Oxon, a sermon in Christ-Church, or a sermon before the right honourable, right reverend, a sermon before the right worshipful, a sermon in Latin, in English, a sermon with a name, a sermon without, a sermon, a sermon, &c. But I have been ever as desirous to suppress my labours in this kind, as others have been to press and publish theirs. To have written in controversy had been to cut off an hydra's head, *lis item generat, one beget another, so

many duplications, triplications, and swarms of questions. In sacro bello hoc quod still muorum agitur, that having once begun, I should never make an end. One had much better, as Alexander, the sixth pope, long since observed, provoke a great prince than a begging friar, a Jesuit, or a seminary priest, I will add, for inexpugnable genus hoc hominum, they are an irrefragable society, they must and will have the last word; and that with such eagerness, impunity, abominable lying, falsifying, and bitterness in their questions they proceed, that as he said, *fiorone coccus, an raptiv vis acrior, an culpa, responsum date?* Blind fury, or error, or rashness, or what it is that eggs them, I know not, I am sure many times, which Austin perceived long since, tempestate contentionis serenitas charitatis omnubilater, with this tempest of contention, the serenity of charity is overloaded, and there he too many spirits conjured up already in this kind in all sciences, and more than we can tell how to lay, which do so furiously rage, and keep such a racket, that as Fabius said, "It had been much better for some of them to have been born dumb, and altogether illiterate, than so far to dote to their own destruction."

At melius therat non scribere, namque tacere *
Tutum semper erit,

'Tis a general fault, so Severinus the Dane complains in physic, "unhappy men as we are, we spend our days in unprofitable questions and disputations," intricate subtleties, de terra caprina, about moonshine in the water, "leaving in the meantime those chiefest treasures of nature untouched, wherein the best medicines for all manner of diseases are to be found, and do not only neglect them ourselves, but hinder, condemn, forbid, and scoff at others, that are willing to inquire after them." These motives at this present have induced me to make choice of this medicinal subject.

If any physician in the mean time shall infer, Ne sutor ultra crepida, and find himself grieved that I have intruded into his profession, I will tell him in brief, I do not otherwise by them, than they do by us. If it be for their advantage, I know many of their sect which have taken orders, in hope of a benefit, 'tis a common transition, and why may not a melancholy divine, that can get nothing but by simony, profess physic? Drusianus an Italian (Crusianus, but corruptly, Trithemius calls him) "because he was not fortunate in his practice, forsook his profession, and writ afterwards in divinity." Marcilius Ficinus was semel et simul; a priest and a physician at once, and T. Linacer in his old age took orders. The Jesuits profess both at this time, divers of them permissum superiorum, chirurgeons, panders, bawds, and midwives, &c. Many poor country-vicars, for want of other means, are driven to their shifts; to turn mountebanks, quacksalvers, empirics, and if our greedy patrons hold us to such hard conditions, as commonly they do, they will make most of us work at some trade, as Paul did, at last turn taskers, maltsters, costermongers, graziers, sell ale as some have done, or worse. Howsoever in undertaking this task, I hope I shall commit no great error or indecorum, if all be considered aright, I can vindicate myself with Georgius, Braanus, and Hieronymus Hemingius, those two learned divines; who (to borrow a line or two of mine 'elder brother') drawn by a "natural love, the one of pictures and maps, prospectives and corographical delights, writ that ample theatre of cities; the other to the study of genealogies, penned theatrum

* Malle se bellum cum magno principi gere, quam cum uno ex fratrum mendicantium condine.
* Her. epod. lib. od. 7. * Epist. 56, ad Cassianum presb. * Lib. 12. cap. 1. Mutus nasci, et omni scientia egere satiis fuset, quam sic in proprium pernicem insinuer. * But it would be better not to write, for silence is the safer course.
* Inclux mortalitates inutilibus questionibus se deceptationibus vitam traducimus, natura principes thesareos, in quibus gravissime morborum medicinae collocata sunt, interim intactos relinquimus. Nec ipsis sodum relinquimus, sed et asis probheemus, impediemus, condemnamus, indigie anathemam.
Democritus to the Reader.

15
genealogicum." Or else I can excuse my studies with "Lessius the Jesuit in like case. It is a disease of the soul on which I am to treat, and as much appertaining to a divine as to a physician, and who knows not what an agreement there is betwixt these two professions? A good divine either is or ought to be a good physician, a spiritual physician at least, as our Saviour calls himself, and was indeed, Mat. iv. 23; Luke, v. 18; Luke, vii. 8. They differ but in object, the one of the body, the other of the soul, and use divers medicines to cure: one amends animam per corpus, the other corpus per animam, as "our Regius Professor of physic well informed us in a learned lecture of his not long since. One helps the vices and passions of the soul, anger, lust, desperation, pride, presumption, &c., by applying that spiritual physic; as the other uses proper remedies in bodily diseases. Now this being a common infirmity of body and soul, and such a one that hath as much need of spiritual as a corporal cure, I could not find a fitter task to busy myself about, a more opposite theme, so necessary, so commodious, and generally concerning all sorts of men, that should so equally participate of both, and require a whole physician. A divine in this compound mixed malady can do little alone, a physician in some kinds of melancholy much less, both make an absolute cure.

\[ Alterius sic altera pocel open. \]

*. when in friendship join'd

A mutual succour in each other find.

And 'tis proper to them both, and I hope not unbecoming me, who am by my profession a divine, and by mine inclination a physician. I had Jupiter in my sixth house; I say with "Beroaldus, non sum medicus, nec medicinae pro reper, in the theory of physic I have taken some pains, not with an intent to practice, but to satisfy myself, which was a cause likewise of the first undertaking of this subject.

If these reasons do not satisfy thee, good reader, as Alexander Munificus that bountiful prelate, sometimes bishop of Lincoln, when he had built six castles, ad invidiam operis et tendam, saith "Mr. Cambden, to take away the envy of his work (which very words Babriensis hath of Roger the rich bishop of Salisbury, who in king Stephen's time built Shahrburn castle, and that of Devizes), to divert the scandal or imputation, which might be thence inferred, built so many religious houses. If this my discourse be overmedicinal, or savour too much of humanity, I promise thee that I will hereafter make thee amends in some treatise of divinity. But this I hope shall suffice, when you have more fully considered of the matter of this my subject, rem substratum, melancholy, madness, and of the reasons following, which were my chief motives: the generality of the disease, the necessity of the cure, and the commodity or common good that will arise to all men by the knowledge of it, as shall at large appear in the ensuing preface. And I doubt not but that in the end you will say with me, that to anatomise this humour aright, through all the members of this our Microcosmus, is as great a task, as to reconcile those chronological errors in the Assyrian monarchy, find out the quadrature of a circle, the creeks and sounds of the north-east, or north-west passages, and all but as good a discovery as that hungry "Spaniard's of Terra Australis Incognita, as great trouble as to perfect the motion of Mars and Mercury, which so crucifies our astronomers, or to rectify the Gregorian Kalender. I am so affected for my part, and hope as "Theophrastus did by

\[ In Hypostatico, neque enim hanc tractatio aliena sideri debet a thecologo, &c., agitur de morbo animae. \]

\[ D. Clayton in comitia, anno 1621. = Hor. \]

\[ Lib. de pestil. \]

\[ In Newark in Nottinghamshire. Cum duo edificiis castella, ad tollendam strictionis invidiam, et expiandam maciun, duo instituit canobia, et colle que religiosis impelit. \]

\[ Faderno de Quir. anno 1812. Amsterdam impress. \]

\[ Primo, ad Characters: Spero enim (0 Poelcis) libros nostros meliores inae futuros, quod istissimodi memoriae magiata reliquianmus, ex prooepis et exemplis nostris ad vitam accommodatis, ut se inde corrigan. \]
Democritus to the Reader.

his characters, "That our posterity, O friend Policles, shall be the better for this which we have written, by correcting and rectifying what is amiss in themselves by our examples, and applying our precepts and cautions to their own use." And as that great captain Zisca would have a drum made of his skin when he was dead, because he thought the very noise of it would put his enemies to flight, I doubt not but that these following lines, when they shall be recited, or hereafter read, will drive away melancholy, (though I be gone) as much as Zisca's drum could terrify his foes. Yet one caution let me give by the way to my present, or my future reader, who is actually melancholy, that he read not the 'symptoms or prognostics in this following tract, lest by applying that which he reads to himself, aggravating, appropriating things generally spoken, to his own person (as melancholy men for the most part do), he trouble or hurt himself, and get in conclusion more harm than good. I advise them therefore warily to peruse that tract, LAPIDES LOGIUR (so said "Agrippa de occ. Phil.) et caveant lectores ne cerebrum its exctiat. The rest I doubt not they may securely read, and to their benefit. But I am overheated, I proceed.

Of the necessity and generality of this which I have said, if any man doubt, I shall desire him to make a brief survey of the world, as 'Cyprian adviseth Donat, "supposing himself to be transported to the top of some high mountain, and thence to behold the tumults and chances of this wavering world, he cannot chuse but either laugh at, or pity it." S. Hierom out of a strong imagination, being in the wilderness, conceived of himself, that he then saw them dancing in Rome; and if thou shalt either conceive, or climb to see, thou shalt soon perceive that all the world is mad, that it is melancholy, dothes; that it is (which Epichthonius Cosmopolites expressed not many years since in a map) made like a fool's head (with that motto, CAPUT HELLERIBO DIGNUM) a crazed head, CAVEA STULTORUM, a fool's paradise, or as Apollonius, a common prison of gulls, cheaters, flatterers, &c., and needs to be reformed. Strabo in the ninth book of his geography, compares Greece to the picture of a man, which comparison of his, Nic. Gerbelius in his exposition of Sophianus' map, approves; the breast lies open from those Acroeurannian hills in Epirus, to the Sunian promontory in Attica; Page and Magera are the two shoulders; that Isthmus of Corinth the neck; and Peloponnesus the head. If this allusion holds 'tis sure a mad head; Morea may be Moria, and to speak what I think, the inhabitants of modern Greece swerve as much from reason and true religion at this day, as that Morea doth from the picture of a man. Examine the rest in like sort, and you shall find that kingdoms and provinces are melancholy; cities and families, all creatures, vegetal, sensible, and rational, that all sorts, sects, ages, conditions, are out of tune, as in Cebes' table, OMNES ERROREM BIBUNT, before they come into the world, they are intoxicated by error's cup, from the highest to the lowest have need of physic, and those particular actions in "Seneca, where father and son prove one another mad, may be general; Porcius Latro shall plead against us all. For indeed who is not a fool, melancholy, mad?—Quis non multar inepte, who is not brain-sick? Folly, melancholy, madness, are but one disease, DELIRIUM is a common name to all. Alexander, Gordonius, Jason Pratensis, Savanarola, Guianerius, Montaltus, confound them as differing secundum magis et minus; so doth David, Psal. xxxvii. 5. "I said unto the fools, deal not so madly," and 'twas an old Stoical paradox, OMNES STULTOS INSANIRE, all fools are mad, though some madder than others. And who is not a fool, who is free from melancholy?
Who is not touched more or less in habit or disposition? If in disposition, "ill dispositions beget habits, if they perseverew," saith *Plutarch, habits either are, or turn to diseases. 'Tis the same which Tully maintains in the second of his Tusculana, omnium insipientium animi in morbo sunt, et perturbatorum, fools are sick, and all that are troubled in mind: for what is sickness, but as Gregory Tholosanus defines it, "A dissolution or perturbation of the bodily league, which health combines:" and who is not sick, or ill-disposed? in whom doth not passion, anger, envy, discontent, fear and sorrow reign? Who labours not of this disease? Give me but a little leave, and you shall see by what testimonies, confessions, arguments, I will evince it, that most men are mad, that they had as much need to go a pilgrimage to the Anticyre (as in *Strabo's time they did) as in our days they run to Compostella, our Lady of Sichem, or Lauretta, to seek for help; that it is like to be as prosperous a voyage as that of Guiana, and that there is much more need of hellebore than of tobacco.

That men are so misaffected, melancholy, mad, giddy-headed, hear the testimony of Solomon, Eccl. ii. 12. "And I turned to behold wisdom, madness and folly," &c. And ver. 23: "All his days are sorrow, his travel grief, and his heart taketh no rest in the night." So that take melancholy in what sense you will, properly or improperly, in disposition or habit, for pleasure or for pain, dotage, discontent, fear, sorrow, madness, or part, or all, truly, or metaphorically, 'tis all one. Laughter itself is madness according to Solomon, and as St. Paul bath it, "Worldly sorrow brings death." "The hearts of the sons of men are evil, and madness is in their hearts while they live," Eccl. ix. 3. "Wise men themselves are no better," Eccl. i. 18. "In the multitude of wisdom is much grief, and he that increaseth wisdom increaseth sorrow," chap. ii. 17. He hated life itself, nothing pleased him: he hated his labour, all, as 'he concludes, is "sorrow, grief, vanity, vexation of spirit." And though he were the wisest man in the world, sanctuarium sapientiae, and had wisdom in abundance, he will not vindicate himself, or justify his own actions. "Surely I am more foolish than any man, and have not the understanding of a man in me," Prov. xxx. 2. Be they Solomon's words, or the words of Agur, the son of Jakeh, they are canonical. David, a man after God's own heart, confesseth as much of himself, Psal. xxxvii. 21, 22. "So foolish was I and ignorant, I was even as a beast before thee." And condemns all for fools, Psal. liii. ; xxxii. 9; xliv. 20. He compares them to "beasts, horses, and mules, in which there is no understanding." The Apostle Paul accuses himself in like sort, 2 Cor. xi. 21. "I would you would suffer a little my foolishness, I speak foolishly." "The whole head is sick," saith *Esai, "and the heart is heavy," cap. i. 5. And makes lighter of them than of oxen and asses, "the ox knows his owner," &c.: read Deut. xxxii. 6; Jer. iv. ; Amos. iii. 1; Ephes. v. 6. "Be not mad, be not deceived, foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you?" How often are they branded with this epithet of madness and folly? No word so frequent amongst the fathers of the Church and divines; you may see what an opinion they had of the world, and how they valued men's action.

I know that we think far otherwise, and hold them most part wise men that are in authority, princes, magistrates, rich men, they are wise men born, all politicians and statesmen must needs be so, for who dare speak against them? And on the other, so corrupt is our judgment, we esteem wise and honest

---

men fools. Which Democritus well signified in an epistle of his to Hippocrates; "the "Ablerites account virtue madness," and so do most men living. Shall I tell you the reason of it? "Fortune and Virtue, Wisdom and Folly, their seconds, upon a time contendred in the Olympics; every man thought that Fortune and Folly would have the worst, and pitied their cases; but it fell out otherwise. Fortune was blind and cared not where she stroke, nor whom, without laws, AndLabatarum instar, &c. Folly, rash and inconsiderate, esteemed as little what she said or did. Virtue and Wisdom gave place, were hissed out, and exploded by the common people; Folly and Fortune admired, and so are all their followers ever since: knives and fools commonly fare and deserve best in worldlings' eyes and opinions. Many good men have no better fate in their ages: Achish, 1 Sam. xxi. 14, held David for a madman. 1 Elisha and the rest were no otherwise esteemed. David was derided of the common people, Ps. ix. 7, "I am become a monster to many." And generally we are accounted fools for Christ, 1 Cor. xiv. "We fools thought his life madness, and his end without honour," Wisd. v. 4. Christ and his Apostles were censured in like sort, John x.; Mark iii.; Acts xxvi. And so were all Christians in Pliny's time, fierunt et aliis simulis dementiae, &c. And called not long after, 1 Tertulian sectatores, eversores hominum, pollutri novatores, fanatici, canes, malefici, venefici, Galilci homuncules, &c. "Tis an ordinary thing with us, to account honest, devout, orthodox, divine, religious, plain-dealing men, idiots, asses, that cannot, or will not lie and disseme, shift, flatter, accommodare se ad eum locum ubi nati sunt, make good bargains, supplant, thrive, patronis inservire; solemnies ascendendis modos apprehendere, loges, mores, consuetudines recte observare, candidi laudare, furtiter defendere, sententias ampliæ, dubitare de nullis, credere omnium, accipere omnia, nihil reprehendere, ceteraque quæ promotionem ferunt et securitatem, quæ sine ambagio felicem redunt hominem, et vere sapientem apud nos; that cannot temporise as other men do, "hand and take bribes, &c. but fear God, and make a conscience of their doings. But the Holy Ghost that knows better how to judge, he calls them fools. "The fool hath said in his heart," Psal. liii. 1. "And their ways utter their folly," Psal. xlix. 14. "For what can be more mad, than for a little worldly pleasure to procure unto themselves eternal punishment?" As Gregory and others inculcate unto us.

Yea even all those great philosophers the world hath ever had in admiration, whose works we do so much esteem, that gave precepts of wisdom to others, inventors of Arts and Sciences, Socrates the wisest man of his time by the Oracle of Apollo, whom his two scholars, "Plato and Xenophon, so much extol and magnify with those honourable titles, "best and wisest of all mortal men, the happiest, and most just;" and as 1 Alcibiades incomparably commands him; Achilles was a worthy man, but Dracides and others were as worthy as himself; Antenor and Nestor were as good as Pericles, and so of the rest; but none present, before, or after Socrates, nemo veterum negque eorum qui nunc sunt, were ever such, will match, or come near him. Those seven wise men of Greece, those Britain Druids, Indian Brahman, Æthiopian Gymnosophists, Magi of the Persians, Apollonius, of whom Philostratus, Non doctus, sed natus sapiens, wise from his cradle, Epicurus so much admired by his scholar Lucretius:

<br />

1 Apud quos virtus, insanias & furor esse diecur. 1 Tertulianum Apol. omnes mirabantur, putantes illum ibi sin tidam. Sed praeter expectationem res event, Andras stultitia in eum iucrii, &c. illa casus ivris, & places hinc habet sectatores stultitia. 1 Non est respondentum stulto secundum stultitiam. 1 2 Reg. 7. 1 Lib. 16. ep. 57. 1 Aug. ep. 178. 1 Quis nihil mentita lapus; &c. 1 Quid insanias quam pro momentanea felicitate sterner ad mancipare supellicia? 1 In fine Phaedonis. Hic finis eae nostris, &c. Eucretes, nostro quicem judicem omnium quæ experti sunt omnium optimis & speme sapientissimis, & fatisâlis. 1 Nenop. 1. 4. de dietis Sociatis ad nesem, tollis fuit Socrates quem omnium optimum & felicissimum statum. 1 Lib. 22. Platonis Convivio.
Democritus to the Reader.

Qui genas humannas in genio superavit, et omnes
Perachusis dulcis exercit ut adierit sol.

Whose wit excelled the wits of men as far,
As the sun rising doth obscure a star.
Or that so much renowned Empedocles.

* Ut vix humana videatur stipe creatus.

All those of whom we read such *hyperbolical eloquios, as of Aristotle,
that he was wisdom itself in the abstract, *a miracle of nature, breathing
libraries, as Eumapius of Longinus, lights of nature, giants for wit, quint-
essence of wit, divine spirits, eagles in the clouds, fallen from heaven, gods,
spirits, lamps of the world, dictators, Nulla ferant tales seda futura vivum:
monarchs, miracles, superintendents of wit and learning, oceanus, phœnix,
atlas, monstrum, potentium hominis, orbis universi museun, ultimus humanae
nature conatus, nature maritus.

De meritis et doctrin arbit.
Submission defor habebimus imperium.

As *Aelian writ of Protagoras and Gorgias, we may say of them all, tantum à
sapientibus abfuerunt, quantum à viris pueri, they were children in respect,
infants, not eagles, but kites; novices, illiterate, Luniuchi sapiencie. And
although they were the wisest, and most admired in their age, as he censured
Alexander, I do them, there were 10,000 in his army as worthy captains (had
they been in place of command), as valiant as himself; there were myriads of
men wiser in those days, and yet all short of what they ought to be. * Lact-
tantius, in his book of wisdom, proves them to be dizzards, fools, asses, mad-
men, so full of absurd and ridiculous tenets, and brain-sick positions, that
to his thinking never any old woman or sick person dotted worse. * Democritus
took all from Leucippus, and left saith he, "the inheritance of his folly to
Epicurus," *insanienti dum sapiens, &c. The like he holds of Plato,
Aristippus, and the rest, making no difference, "betwixt them and beasts,
saving that they could speak." *Theodoret in his tract, De car. grec. affect.
manifestly evinces as much of Socrates, whom though that Oracle of Apollo
confirmed to be the wisest man then living, and saved him from plague,
whom 2000 years have admired, of whom some will as soon speak evil as of
Christ, yet recens, he was an illiterate idiot, as *Aristophanes calls him,
irrisor et ambiciosus, as his master Aristotle terms him, suavice Atticus, as
Zeno, an *enemy to all arts and sciences, as Atheneus, to philosophers and
travellers, an opinionative ass, a caviller, a kind of pedant; for his manners, as
Theod. Cyrensis describes him, a *sodomite, an atheist, (so convict by Anytus)
iracundus et ebrius, dixit, &c. a pot-companion, by Plato's own confession, a
sturdy drinker; and that of all others he was most sottish, a very madman
in his actions and opinions. Pythagoras was part philosopher, part magician,
or part witch. If you desire to hear more of Apollonius, a great wise man,
sometime paralleled by Julian the apostate to Christ, I refer you to that
learned tract of Eusebius against Hierocles, and for them all to Lucian's
Pisicet, Icaromenippus, Necymantia: their actions, opinions in general
were so prodigious, absurd, ridiculous, which they broached and maintained,
their books and elaborate treatises were full of dotage, which Tully ad Atticin
long since observed, detraunt plebup; scriptores in libros suis, their lives being
opposite to their words, they commended poverty to others, and were most
covetous themselves, etiolled love and peace, and yet persecuted one another
with virulent hate and malice. They could give precepts for verse and prose;

* Lucretius. * Anaxagoras olim mens dictus ab antiquis. * Regula naturae, naturae miraculum, ipsa
credulio, ducemum hominis, sol scientiarum, mare, sophia, antistis literarum & sapientie, ut Schopins
olim de Scal. & Heinsius. Aquila in nubibus, Imperator literarum, columna literarum, abyssus eruditions,
oculis Europee, Scaliger. * Lib. 3. de sap. c. 17. & 29. omnes Philosphi, ait splabi, ait insanii; nulla aut
nullus aeger inepth delirat. * Democritus a Leucippo docet, hereditatem stupeitiae reliquit Epic.
* 1. Ior. car. Lib. 1. ed. 34. 1. epis. * Nil est interest inter hos & bestias nisi quod inquantur. de sa. 1. 26. 8.
causa frequentar gymnasium obiit, &c.
but not a man of them (as *Seneca tells them home) could moderate his affections. Their music did show us, *flebiles modos, &c. how to rise and fall, but they could not so contain themselves as in adversity not to make a lamentable tone. They will measure ground by geometry, set down limits, divide and subdivide, but cannot yet prescribe *quantum homini satis, or keep within compass of reason and discretion. They can square circles, but understand not the state of their own souls, describe right lines and crooked, &c. but know not what is right in this life, *quid in vita rectum sit, ignorant; so that as he said, *Nescio an Anticyram ratio illis destinat omnem. I think all the Anticyra will not restore them to their wits, *if these men now, that held *Xenodotus heart, Crates liver, Epicetetus lanthorn, were so sottish, and had no more brains than so many beetles, what shall we think of thecommonalty? *what of the rest?

Yea, but will you infer, that is true of heathens, if they be conferred with christians, 1 Cor. iii. 19. "The wisdom of this world is foolishness with God, earthly and devilish," as James calls it, iii. 15. "They were vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was full of darkness," Rom. i. 21, 22. "When they professed themselves wise, became fools." Their witty works are admired here on earth, whilst their souls are tormented in hell fire. In some sense, *Christiani Crassiani, Christians are Crassians, and if compared to that wisdom, no better than fools. *Quis est supiens? *Solus Deus, †Pythagoras replies, "God is only wise," Rom. xvi. Paul determines "only good," as Austin well contends, "and no man living can be justified in his sight." "God looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if any did understand," Psalm lili. 2, 3. but all are corrupt, err. Rom. iii. 12, "None doth good, no not one." Job aggravates this, iv. 18, "Behold he found no steadfastness in his servants, and laid folly upon his angels," 19. "How much more on them that dwell in houses of clay?" In this sense we are all fools, and the *Scripture alone is arx *Minervae, we and our writings are shallow and imperfect. But I do not so mean; even in our ordinary dealings we are no better than fools. "All our actions," as *Pliny told Trajan, "upbraid us of folly," our whole course of life is but matter of laughter: we are not soberly wise; and the world itself, which ought at least to be wise by reason of his antiquity, as *Hugo de Prato Florido will have it, *semper stultizat, is every day more foolish than other; the more it is whipped, the worse it is, and as a child will still be crowned with roses and flowers." We are apish in it, *asini bipedes, and every place is full *inversorum *Apuleiorum, of metamorphosed and two-legged asses, *inversorum *Silvorum, childish, *pueri instar bimult, tremula *patris dormientis in utr. *Jovianus Pontanus, Antonio Dial, brings in some laughing at an old man, that by reason of his age was a little fond, but as he admonished there, *Ne mireris mi hospes de hoc sene, marvel not at him only, for *tota hae civitas delirat, all our town dotes in like sort, *we are a company of fools. Ask not with him in the poet, *Larvae hunc intemperie insaniaque agitans secular? *What madness ghosts this old man, but what madness ghosts us all? For we are ad unam omnes, all mad, *semel insanivirns omnes, not once, but always so, *et semel, *et simul, *et semper, ever and altogether as bad as he; and not *semex bis *puer, *delira annus, but say it of us all, *semper *pueri, young and old, all dote, as Lactantius proves out of Seneca; and no difference betwixt us and children, saving that, *majora ludimns, et grandioribus pupis, they play with babies of clouts and such toys, we sport with greater baubles. *We cannot

accuse or condemn one another, being faulty ourselves, deliramenta loqueris, you talk idly, or as Mitio upbraided Demes, insanis, auferte, for we are as mad our own selves, and it is hard to say which is the worst. Nay, 'tis universally so, Philomregit fortuna, non sapien tia.

When Socrates had taken great pains to find out a wise man, and to that purpose had consulted with philosophers, poets, artificers, he concludes all men were fools; and though it procured him both anger and much envy, yet in all companies he would openly profess it. When Supputius in Pontanus had travelled all over Europe to confer with a wise man, he returned at last without his errand, and could find none. “Cardan concurs with him, “Few there are (for aught I can perceive) well in their wits.” So doth Tully, “I see everything to be done foolishly and unadvisedly.”

Ille silentiorum, hic dexterrum, unus uestri Error, sed varii illudit partibus omnes. | One recoils to this, another to that wall; Tie the same error that deludes them all.

*They do all, but not alike, Maria yap παρεξ ἡπαμε, not in the same kind,*

“One is coticous, a second lascivious, a third ambitious, a fourth envious,” &c. As Damasippus the Stoic hath well illustrated in the poet,

*Desipunt omnes aque ac tu. | And they who call you fool, with equal claim May plead an ample title to the name.*

*Tis an inbred malady in every one of us, there is seminarium stultitiae, a seminary of folly, “which if it be stirred up, or get ahead, will run in infinitum, and infinitely varies, as we ourselves are severely addicted,” saith Balthazar Castilio: and cannot so easily be rooted out, it takes such fast hold, as Tully holds, alic8 radices stultitie, so we are bred, and so we continue. Some say there be two main defects of wit, error, and ignorance, to which all others are reduced; by ignorance we know not things necessary, by error we know them falsely. Ignorance is a privation, error a positive act. From ignorance comes vice, from error, heresy, &c. But make how many kinds you will, divide and subdivide, few men are free, or that do not impinge on some one kind or other. *Sic pluramque agilat stultos inscitia, as he that examines his own and other men’s actions shall find.

*Charon in Lucian, as he wittily feigus, was conducted by Mercury to such a place, where he might see all the world at once; after he had sufficiently viewed, and looked about, Mercury would needs know of him what he had observed: He told him that he saw a vast multitude and a promiscuous, their habitations like melchills, the men as emmets, “he could discern cities like so many hives of bees, wherein every bee had a sting, and they did nought else but sting one another, some domineering like hornets bigger than the rest, some like flitching wasps, others as drones.” Over their heads were hovering a confused company of perturbations, hope, fear, anger, avarice, ignorance, &c. and a multitude of diseases hanging, which they still pulled on their pates. Some were brawling, some fighting, riding, running, sollicitate ambientes, callit de sequentes, for toys and trife, and such momentary things. Their towns and provinces mere factions, rich against poor, poor against rich, nobles against artificers, they against nobles, and so the rest. In conclusion, he condemned them all for madmen, fools, idiots, asses, O stulti, quanum hac est ammutia? O fools, O madmen, he exclaims, insanum studio, insani labores, &c. Mad endeavours, mad actions, mad, mad, mad, O seculum insipiens & infatuum, a giddy-headed age. Heraclitus the philosopher, out of a serious meditation
of men’s lives, fell a weeping, and with continual tears bewailed their misery, madness, and folly. Democritus on the other side, burst out a laughing, their whole life seemed to him so ridiculous, and he was so far carried with this ironical passion, that the citizens of Abdera took him to be mad, and sent therefore ambassadors to Hippocrates, the physician, that he would exercise his skill upon him. But the story is set down at large by Hippocrates, in his epistle to Damogetus, which because it is not impertinent to this discourse, I will insert verbatim almost as it is delivered by Hippocrates himself, with all the circumstances belonging unto it.

When Hippocrates was now come to Abdera, the people of the city came flocking about him, some weeping, some entreating of him, that he would do his best. After some little repast, he went to see Democritus, the people following him, whom he found (as before) in his garden in the suburbs all alone, “sitting upon a stone under a plane tree, without hose or shoes, with a book on his knees, cutting up several beasts, and busy at his study.” The multitude stood gazing round about to see the congress. Hippocrates, after a little pause, saluted him by his name, whom he resaluted, ashamed almost that he could not call him likewise by his, or that he had forgot it. Hippocrates demanded of him what he was doing: he told him that he was “busy in cutting up several beasts, to find out the cause of madness and melancholy.” Hippocrates commended his work, admiring his happiness and leisure. And why, quoth Democritus, have not you that leisure? Because, replied Hippocrates, domestic affairs hinder, necessary to be done for ourselves, neighbours, friends; expenses, diseases, frailties and mortalities which happen; wife, children, servants, and such businesses which deprive us of our time. At this speech Democritus profusely laughed (his friends and the people standing by, weeping in the meantime, and lamenting his madness). Hippocrates asked the reason why he laughed. He told him, at the vanities and the fopperies of the time, to see men so empty of all virtuous actions, to hunt so far after gold, having no end of ambition; to take such infinite pains for a little glory, and to be favoured of men; to make such deep mines into the earth for gold, and many times to find nothing, with loss of their lives and fortunes. Some to love dogs, others horses, some to desire to be obeyed in many provinces, and yet themselves will know no obedience. Some to love their wives dearly at first, and after a while to forsake and hate them; begetting children, with much care and cost for their education, yet when they grow to man’s estate, to despise, neglect, and leave them naked to the world’s mercy. Do not these behaviours express their intolerable folly? When men live in peace, they covet war, detesting quietness, deposing kings, and advancing others in their stead, murdering some men to beget children of their wives. How many strange humours are in men! When they are poor and needy, they seek riches, and when they have them, they do not enjoy them, but hide them under ground, or else wastefully spend them. 

O wise Hippocrates, I laugh at such things being done, but much more when no good comes of them, and when they are done to so ill purpose. There is no truth or justice found amongst them, for they daily plead one against another, the son against the father and the mother, brother against brother, kindred and friends of the same quality; and all this for riches, whereof after death they cannot be possessors. And yet notwithstanding they will defame and kill one another,
commit all unlawful actions, contaminating God and men, friends and country. They make great account of many senseless things, esteeming them as a great part of their treasure, statues, pictures, and such like movables, dear bought, and so cunningly wrought, as nothing but speech wanteth in them," and yet they hate living persons speaking to them. 6 Others affect difficult things; if they dwell on firm land they will remove to an island, and thence to land again, being no way constant to their desires. They commend courage and strength in wars, and let themselves be conquered by lust and avarice; they are, in brief, as disordered in their minds, as Thersites was in his body. And now, methinks, O most worthy Hippocrates, you should not reprehend my laughing, perceiving so many fooleries in men; 7 for no man will mock his own folly, but that which he seeth in a second, and so they justly mock one another. The drunkard calls him a glutton whom he knows to be sober. Many men love the sea, others husbandry; briefly, they cannot agree in their own trades and professions, much less in their lives and actions.

When Hippocrates heard these words so readily uttered, without premeditation, to declare the world's vanity, full of ridiculous contrariety, he made answer, that necessity compelled men to many such actions, and divers wills ensuing from divine permission, that we might not be idle, being nothing is so odious to them as sloth and negligence. Besides, men cannot foresee future events, in this uncertainty of human affairs; they would not so marry, if they could foretell the causes of their dislike and separation; or parents, if they knew the hour of their children's death, so tenderly provide for them; or an husbandman sow, if he thought there would be no increase; or a merchant adventure to sea, if he foresaw shipwreck; or be a magistrate, if presently to be deposed. Alas, worthy Democritus, every man hopes the best, and to that end he doth it, and therefore no such cause, or ridiculous occasion of laughter.

Democritus hearing this poor excuse, laughed again aloud, perceiving he wholly mistook him, and did not well understand what he had said concerning perturbations and tranquillity of the mind. Insomuch, that if men would govern their actions by discretion and providence, they would not declare themselves fools as now they do, and he should have no cause of laughter; but (quoth he) they swell in this life as if they were immortal, and demigods, for want of understanding. It were enough to make them wise, if they would but consider the mutability of this world, and how it wheels about, nothing being firm and sure. He that is now above, to-morrow is beneath; he that sate on this side to-day, to-morrow is hurled on the other: and not considering these matters, they fall into many inconveniences and troubles, coveting things of no profit, and thirsting after them, tumbling headlong into many calamities. So that if men would attempt no more than what they can bear, they should lead contented lives, and learning to know themselves, would limit their ambition, 8 they would perceive then that nature hath enough without seeking such superfluities, and unprofitable things, which bring nothing with them but grief and molestation. As a fat body is more subject to diseases, so are rich men to absurdities and fooleries, to many casualties and cross inconveniences. There are many that take no heed what happeneth to others by bad conversation, and therefore overthrow themselves in the same manner through their own fault, not foreseeing dangers manifest. These are things (O more than mad, quoth he) that give me matter of laughter, by suffering the pains of your impieties, as your avarice, envy, malice, enormous villanies, mutinies, unsatisfiable desires, conspiracies, and other

---

* Idola inanimata amant, animata odio labent, sic pontifex. * Crede equidem vivos ducent à marmore vulnere.  
* Sannat multitudin aperepit nemo, sed alter alterum deriderit. * Denique sit huius quaece, cunque habeas plus, paupericum minus minus, & finire laborum incipias, partis quod arebas, uere.  

---

* Idola inanimata amant, animata odio labent, sic pontifex. * Crede equidem vivos ducent à marmore vulnere.  
* Sannat multitudin aperepit nemo, sed alter alterum deriderit. * Denique sit huius quaece, cunque habeas plus, paupericum minus minus, & finire laborum incipias, partis quod arebas, uere.  

---

 savoir, sauvage, mais qui est le plus sage : un homme qui sait se contenter ou un chevalier qui se met dans des échauffadouilles Redoutables en se donnant la peine d'aller à pied dans la tourmente ?
The document is too fragmented and contains a mix of Latin and English words. It appears to discuss the nature of vices and hypocrisies, and the effects they have on individuals and society. The text is challenging to read due to the mix of languages and the lack of context.

The first few lines in Latin begin with "Democritus, laugh Horrenda Udem child: " The English translation by John Selden follows: "Princes command a private life; private men itch after honour: a magistrate commends a quiet life; a quiet man would be in his office, and obeyed as he is: and what is the cause of all this, but that they know not themselves? Some delight to destroy, one to build, another to spoil one country to enrich another and himself. In all these things they are like children, in which is no judgment or counsel, and resemble beasts, saving that beasts are better than they, as being contented with nature. When shall you see a lion hide gold in the ground, or a bull contend for better pasture? When a hoar is thirsty, he drinks what will serve him, and no more; and when his belly is full, ceaseth to eat: but men are immoderate in both, as in lust—they covet carnal copulation at set times; men always, ruining thereby the health of their bodies. And doth it not deserve laughter to see an amorous fool torment himself for a wench; weep, howl for a mis-shapen slut, a dowdy sometimes, that might have his choice of the finest beauties? Is there any remedy for this in physie? I do anatomise and cut up these poor beasts, to see these distempers, vanities, and follies, yet such proof were better made on man's body, if my kind nature would endure it: who from the hour of his birth is most miserable, weak, and sickly; when he sucks he is guided by others, when he is grown great practiseth unhappiness and is sturdy, and when old, a child again, and repenteth of his life past. And here being interrupted by one that brought books, he fell to it again, that all were mad, careless, stupid. To prove my former speeches, look into courts, or private houses. Judges give judgment according to their own advantage, doing manifest wrong to poor innocents to please others. Notaries alter sentences, and for money lose their deeds. Some make false monies; others counterfeit false weights. Some abuse their parents, yea corrupt their own sisters; others make long libels and pasquils, defaming men of good life, and extol such as are lewd and vicious. Some rob one, some another: magistrates make laws against thieves, and are the veriest thieves themselves. Some kill themselves, others despair, not obtaining their desires. Some dance, sing, laugh, feast and banquet, whilst others sigh, languish, mourn and lament, having neither meat, drink, nor clothes. Some prank up their bodies, and have their minds full of execrable vices. Some trot about to bear false witness, and say anything for money; and though judges know of it, yet for a bribe they wink at it, and suffer false contracts to prevail against equity. Women are all day a dressing, to pleasure other men abroad, and go like sluts at home, not caring to please their own husbands whom they should. Seeing men are so fickle, so softish, so intertemperate, why should not I laugh at those to whom folly seems wisdom, will not be cured, and perceive it not?

It grew late: Hippocrates left him; and no sooner was he come away, but

---

all the citizens came about flocking, to know how he liked him. He told them in brief, that notwithstanding those small neglects of his attire, body, diet, "the world had not a wiser, a more learned, a more honest man, and they were much deceived to say that he was mad.

Thus Democritus esteemed of the world in his time, and this was the cause of his laughter: and good cause he had.

Never so much cause of laughter as now, never so many fools and madmen. 'Tis not one "Democritus will serve to laugh in these days;" we have now need of a "Democritus to laugh at Democritus;" one jester to flout at another, one fool to flatter at another: a great stentorian Democritus, as big as that Rhodian Colossus. For now, as Salisburiensis said in his time, totus mundus histrionem agit, the whole world plays the fool; we have a new theatre, a new scene, a new comedy of errors, a new company of personate actors, volupcia sacra (as Calcagninus willingly feigns in his Apologies) are celebrated all the world over, where all the actors were madmen and fools, and every hour changed habits, or took that which came next. He that was a mariner to-day, is an apothecary to-morrow; a smith one while, a philosopher another, in his volupta ludis; a king now with his crown, robes, sceptre, attendants, and by and by drove a loaded ass before him like a carter, &c. If Democritus were alive now, he should see strange alterations, a new company of counterfeit vizards, whifflers, Cumane asasses, maskers, mummers, painted puppets, outside, fantastic shadows, gulls, monsters, giddy-heads, butterflies. And so many of them are indeed (if all be true that I have read). For when Jupiter and Juno's wedding was solemnized of old, the gods were all invited to the feast, and many noble men besides: Amongst the rest came Crysalus, a Persian prince, bravely attended, rich in golden attires, in gay robes, with a majestical presence, but otherwise an ass. The gods seeing him come in such pomp and state, rose up to give him place, ex habitu hominem metientes; but Jupiter perceiving what he was, a light, fantastic, idle fellow, turned him and his proud followers into butterflies: and so they continue still (for aught I know to the contrary) roving about in pied coats, and are called chrysalides by the wiser sort of men: that is, golden outsides, drones, flies, and things of no worth. Multitudes of such, &c.

" Vide ubique invenias
Stultos avatos, sycophantes prodigos."†

Many additions, much increase of madness, folly, vanity, should Democritus observe, were he now to travel, or could get leave of Pluto to come see fashions, as Charon did in Lucian to visit our cities of Moronia Pia, and Moronia Felix: sure I think he would break the rim of his belly with laughing. "Si foret in terris rideret Democritus, seu, &c.

A satirical Roman in his time, thought all vice, folly, and madness were all at full sea, Omne in praeipti vitium stet.

† Squidem sapientiae sub admiratane me complavit, offendit sapientissimum virum, qui salus potest ommes homines reddere. † E Græc. epigr. † Plures Democriti noni nonn sufficient, opus Democriti qui Democritum rideat. Eræ. Moria. † Polycrat. lib. 3. cap. & Petron. † Ut omnia delubratum, ommes insani, &c. hodie nauta, cras philosophus; hodie faber, cras pharmacopæa; hic modo regem agat multa satellitio, tiara, & sceptro ornatus, nunc illæ amicitia centiuo, asmitt citellarium impellit. † Calcagninus Apoll. Crysalus e easteri suæ dures, maniato pepli & tiara conspicuus, levis aliquot & nullus consili, &c. magno fastu ingredienti assurament divi, &c. † Sed hominis levitatem Jupiter percipientes, at tu (inquit) esto hominibus, &c. protinusque; vestis illæ manibata in alas versa est, & mortales inde Chrysalides vacant hujusmodi homines. † You will meet cecavos fools and prodigal sycophants everywhere.

* Juven. * Juven.
*Josephus the historian taxeth his countrymen Jews for bragging of their vices, publishing their follies, and that they did contend amongst themselves who should be most notorious in villanies; but we flow higher in madness, far beyond them,

"* Max daturi progenem vitiosiorum."
And yet with crimes to us unknown,
Our sons shall mark the coming age their own,
and the latter end (you know whose oracle it is) is like to be worse. 'Tis not to be denied, the world alters every day, Ruunt urbes, regna transferuntur, &c. variantur habitus, leges innovantur, as Petrarck observes, we change language, habits, laws, customs, manners, but not vices, not diseases, not the symptoms of folly and madness, they are still the same. And as a river, we see, keeps the like name and place, but not water, and yet ever runs, † Labitur et labetur in omne volubilis aevum; our times and persons alter, vices are the same, and ever will be; look how nightingales sang of old, coeks crowed, kine lowed, sheep bleated, sparrows chirped, dogs barked, so they do still: we keep our madness still, play the fools still, nec dum funtus Orestes; we are of the same humours and inclinations as our predecessors were; you shall find us all alike, much at one, we and our sons, et nati natorum, et qui nascuntur ab illis. And so shall our posterity continue to the last. But to speak of times present.

If Democritus were alive now, and should see but the superstition of our age, our religious madness, as * Meteran calls it, Religiosum insaniem, so many professed Christians, yet so few imitators of Christ; so much talk of religion, so much science, so little conscience; so much knowledge, so many preachers, so little practice; such variety of sects, such have and hold of all sides,‡ —obvia signis Sigma, &c., such absurd and ridiculous traditions and ceremonies: If he should meet a *Capuchin, a Franciscan, a Pharisical Jesuit, a man-serpent, a shave-crowned Monk in his robes, a begging Friar, or see their three-crowned Sovereign Lord the Pope, poor Peter's successor, servus servorum Dei, to depose kings with his foot, to tread on emperors' necks, make them stand barefoot and bare-legged at his gates, hold his bridle and stirrup, &c. (O that Peter and Paul were alive to see this!) If he should observe a *Prince creep so devoutly to kiss his toe, and those Red-cap Cardinals, poor parish priests of old, now Princes' companions; what would he say?

Colum ipsum petitur stultitia. Had he met some of our devout pilgrims going barefoot to Jerusalem, our lady of Laurent, Rome, S. Iago, S. Thomas' Shrine, to creep to those counterfeit and maggot-eaten reliques; had he been present at a mass, and seen such kissing of Paxes, crucifixes, cringes, dreggings, their several attires and ceremonies, pictures of saints, indulgences, pardons, vigils, fasting, feasts, crossing, knocking, kneeling at Ave-Marias, bells, with many such; —uscando radii spectacula plebis, *praying in gibberish, and mumbling of beads. Had he heard an old woman say her prayers in Latin, their sprinkling of holy water, and going a procession,

"§—incendit monachorum agrina mille;
Quid memorem vexilla, cruces, idololque alta, &c."

Their breviaries, bulls, hallowed beans, exorcisms, pictures, curious crosses, fables, and baubles. Had he read the Golden Legend, the Turks' Alcoran, or Jews' Talmud, the Rabbins' Comments, what would he have thought? How

* De bello Jud. I. 8. c. 11. Iniquitates vestrae nominem latent, inique dies singulos ecclesiis habebitis quis pelor sit. a Hor.  b Lib. 8. Epist. a.  c Hor.  d Supersici est insanius error. e Lib. 8. hist.  f Eo enim intuiti v�ce quæ patiuntur, suppositoriis, inventis tam incedora honestis, tam indigna liberae, tam dissimulis saepe, ut nemo fuerit habitarum furere eos, si cura paeconomus fuerant. Senec.  g Quid decam decem de curum indulgentias, oblацияibus, votis, solutioibus, jejunis, conobolis, somnus libri, oris, organis, candidationibus, candebus, calicibus, crustibus, mappis, cerchis, thalibus, incantationibus, exorcismis, spatibus, legendis, &c.  h Bulae de acta Rom. Pont.  i Pleasing spectacles to the ignorant poor.  j Th. Noegor.
dost thou think he might have been affected? Had he more particularly examined a Jesuit's life amongst the rest, he should have seen an hypocrite profess poverty, 'and yet possess more goods and lands than many princes, to have infinite treasures and revenues; teach others to fast, and play the gluttons themselves; like the watermen that row one way and look another. *Vow virginity, talk of holiness, and yet indeed a notorious bawd, and famous fornicator, lascivum pecus, a very goat. Monks by profession, * such as give over the world and the vanities of it, and yet a Machiavelian rout *interested in all manner of state: holy men, peace makers, and yet composed of envy, lust ambition, hatred, and malice; fire-brands, adulta patrice pestis, traitors, assassins, hae turdit ad astra, and this is to supererogate, and merit heaven for themselves and others. Had he seen on the adverse side, some of our nice and curious schismatics in another extreme, abhor all ceremonies, and rather lose their lives and livings, than do or admit anything Papists have formerly used, though in things indifferent, (they alone are the true Church, sal terra, cum sint omnium insolusissimi). Formalists, out of fear and base flattery, like so many weather-cocks turn round, a rout of temporisers, ready to embrace and maintain all that is or shall be proposed in hope of preterment; another Epicurean company, lying at lurch like so many vultures, watching for a prey of Church goods, and ready to rise by the downfall of any: as *Lucian said in like case, what dost thou think Democritus would have done, had he been spectator of these things?

Or had he but observed the common people follow like so many sheep one of their fellows drawn by the horns over the gap, some for zeal, some for fear, qui se cunque rapid tempestos, to credit all, examine nothing, and yet ready to die before they will adjure any of those ceremonies to which they have been accustomed? others out of hypocrisy frequent sermons, knock their breasts, turn up their eyes, pretend zeal, desire reformation, and yet professed usurers, grippers, monsters of men, harpies, devils in their lives, to express nothing less.

What would he have said to see, hear, and read so many bloody battles, so many thousands slain at once, such streams of blood able to turn mills: unius ob nocem jurisque, or to make sport for princes, without any just cause, " *for vain titles (saith Austin), precedence, some wench, or such like toy, or out of desire of domineering, vain glory, malice, revenge, folly, madness," (goodly causes all, ob quas universus orbis bellis et cedibus miscuetur,) whilst statesmen themselves in the mean time are secure at home, pampered with all delights and pleasures, take their ease, and follow their lusts, not considering what intolerable misery poor soldiers endure, their often wounds, hunger, thirst, &c., the lamentable cares, torments, calamities, and oppressions that accompany such proceedings, they feel not, take no notice of it. So wars are begun, by the persuasion of a few debauched, hair-brain, poor, dissolute, hungry captains, parasitical fawners, unquiet Hotspurs, restless innovators, green heads, to satisfy one man's private spleen, lust, ambition, avarice, &c.; tales rapiunt scelerata in preilia causa. *Flos hominum, proper men, well proportioned, carefully brought up, able both in body and mind, sound, led like so many "beasts to the slaughter in the flower of their years, pride, and full strength, without all remorse and pity, sacrificed to Pluto, killed up as so many sheep, for devils' food, 40,000 at once. At once, said I, that were tolerable, but these wars last always, and for many ages; nothing so familiar

1 Dum simulant spernent, acquisiverunt sibi 30 annorum spatio bis centena millia librarum annuos. Arnoldi.

*Et quum interdii de virtute loqui sunt, sero in lustibus clunes agitant labore nocturno, Agrippa.

1 Tim. III. 13. But they shall prevail no longer, their madness shall be known to all men. *Benignitatis sinus solet at esse, nunc litium officina curia Romana. Balsius. *Quid titi videtur facturus Democritus, si horum spectactor contingat?

*Ob inanes dititiones titulos, ob preceptum locum, ob intersectam mulierculam, vel quod e studiitia natur, vel e malitia, quod cupido dominandi, libid nocedit, &c. *Bellum rem plane bellum nam vocat Morus. Utop. Lib. 2.
as this hacking and hewing, massacres, murders, desolations—ignoto celum clangore remugit, they care not what mischief they procure, so that they may enrich themselves for the present; they will so long blow the coals of contention, till all the world be consumed with fire. The siege of Troy lasted ten years, eight months, there died 870,000 Grecians, 670,000 Trojans, at the taking of the city, and after were slain 276,000 men, women, and children of all sorts. Cesar killed a million, *Mahomet the second Turk, 300,000 persons; *Scipio defeated in a hundred battles, eight times in single combat he overcame, had forty wounds before, was rewarded with 140 crowns, triumphed nine times for his good service. M. Sergius had 32 wounds; Scoev, the Centurion, I know not how many; every nation had their Hectors, Scipios, Caesars, and Alexanders! Our Edward the Fourth was in 26 battles afoot: and as they do all, he glories in it, *tis related to his honour. At the siege of Hierusalem, 1,100,000 died with sword and famine. At the battle of Canna, 70,000 men were slain, as *Polybius records, and as many at Battle Abbey with us; and *tis no news to fight from sun to sun, as they did, as Constantine and Licinius, &c. At the siege of Ostend (the devil's academy) a poor town in respect, a small fort, but a great grave, 120,000 men lost their lives, besides whole towns, dorpes, and hospitals full of maimed soldiers; there were engines, fire-works, and whatsoever the devil could invent to do mischief with 2,500,000 iron bullets shot of 40 pounds weight, three or four millions of gold consumed. *'Who (saith mine author) can be sufficiently amazed at their flinty hearts, obstinacy, fury, blindness, who without any likelihood of good success, hazard poor soldiers, and lead them without pity to the slaughter, which may justly be called the rage of furious beasts, that run without reason upon their own deaths: *quod malus genus, quae furia, qua pestis, &c.; what plague, what fury brought so devilish, so brutish a thing as war first into men's minds? Who made so soft and peacable a creature, born to love, mercy, meekness, so to rave, rage like beasts, and run on to their own destruction? how may nature expostulate with man-kind, *Ego te divinum animal facxi, &c.? I made thee an harmless, quiet, a divine creature, how may God expostulate, and all good men? yet, *horam facta (as *tine condolels) tantum admiratur, et heron numero habent: these are the brave spirits, the gallants of the world, these admired alone, triumph alone, have statues, crowns, pyramids, obelisks to their eternal fame, that immortal genius attends on them, hodie itur ad astra. When Rhodes was besieged, * Jobsce urbis cadaveribus repleta sunt, the ditches were full of dead carasses: and as when the said Solymans, great Turk, beleaguered Vienna, they lay level with the top of the walls. This they make a sport of, and will do it to their friends and confederates, against oaths, vows, promises, by treachery or otherwise; *dolum an virtus? quis in hoste requirat? leagues and laws of arms, *silent leges inter arma,) for their advantage, omnia jura, divina, humana, procucula plenunque sunt; God's and men's laws are trampled under foot, the sword alone determines all; to satisfy their lust and spleen, they care not what they attempt, say, or do, *Rara fides, probitasque viris qui castra sequuntur. Nothing so common as to have *"father fight against the son, brother against brother, kinsman against kinsman, kingdom against kingdom, province against province, christians against christians:" a quibus nee unquam cogitatione fuerunt losi, of whom they never had offence in thought.

---

word or deed. Infinite treasures consumed, towns burned, flourishing cities sacked and ruined, quodque animus meminisse horret, goodly countries depopulated and left desolate, old inhabitants expelled, trade and traffic decayed, maids deflowered, Virgines nondum thalamis jugatae, et comis nondum positis ephebi; chaste matrons cry out with Andromache, *Concubitum mox cogar pati ejus, qui interemit Hectorum, they shall be compelled peradventure to lie with them that erst killed their husbands: to see rich, poor, sick, sound, lords, servants, edem omnes incommodo maeti, consumed all or mained, &c. Et quicquid gaudens scelere animus audet, et perversa mens, saith Cyprian, and whatsoever torment, misery, mischief, hell itself, the devil, "fury and rage can invent to their own ruin and destruction; so abominable a thing is war, as Gerbelius concludes, adeo feda et abominanda res est bellum, et quo hominum cades, vastationes, &c., the scourge of God, cause, effect, fruit and punishment of sin, and not tonsura humani generis, as Tertullian calls it, but ruina. Had Democritus been present at the late civil wars in France, those abominable wars—bellagiae matristus detestata, *where, in less than ten years, ten thousand men were consumed, saith Collignius, 20 thousand churches overthrown; nay, the whole kingdom subverted (as *Richard Dinoth adds). So many myriads of the commons were butchered up, with sword, famine, war, tanto odio utricque ut barvari ad abhorrendam laniennam obstupescerant, with such feral hatred, the world was amazed at it: or at our late Pharsalian fields in the time of Henry the Sixth, betwixt the houses of Lancaster and Yorke, a hundred thousand men slain, *one writes; *another, ten thousand families were rooted out, "That no man can but marvel, saith Comines, at that barbarous immanity, feral madness, committed betwixt men of the same nation, language, and religion." *Quis furor, O cives? "Why do the Gentiles so furiously rage," saith the Prophet David, Psal. ii. 1. But we may ask, why do the Christians so furiously rage? *Arma volunt, quare poscunt, rapiunt-que juvenius?" Unfit for Gentiles, much less for us so to tyrannize, as the Spaniard in the West Indies, that killed up in 42 years (if we may believe b Bartholomeus à Casa, their own bishop) 12 millions of men, with stupend and exquisite torments; neither should I lie (said he) if I said 50 millions. I omit those French massacres, Sicilian evensongs, the Duke of Alva's tyrannies, our gunpowder machinations, and that fourth fury, as *one calls it, the Spanish inquisition, which quite obserces those ten persecutions,1—sevst toti Mars impius orbe. Is not this *mundus furiosus, a mad world, as he terms it, insanum bellum? are not these mad men, as *Scaliger concludes, qui in praetio acerbae morte, insania sue memoriam pro perpetuo teste reliquit, posteritati; which leave so frequent battles, as perpetual memorials of their madness to all succeeding ages? Would this, think you, have enforced our Democritus to laughter, or rather made him turn his tune, alter his tone, and weep with *Heraclitus, or rather howl, *roar, and tear his hair in commiseration, stand amazed; or as the poets feign, that Niobe was for grief quite stupefied, and turned to a stone? I have not yet said the worst, that which is more absurd and *mad, in their tumults, seditions, civil and unjust wars, *quod stultit suscipitur, improi geritur, missit finitur. Such wars I mean; for

all are not to be condemned, as those fantastical analabaptists vainly conceive. Our Christian tactics are all out as necessary as the Roman acies, or Grecian phalanx; to be a soldier is a most noble and honourable profession (as the world is), not to be spared, they are our best walls and bulwarks, and I do therefore acknowledge that of *Tully to be most true, "All our civil affairs, all our studies, all our pleading, industry, and commendation lies under the protection of warlike virtues, and whencesoever there is any suspicion of tumult, all our arts cease;" wars are most behooved, et bellatores agricultis civitatit sunt utiliores, as *Tyrius defends: and valour is much to be commended in a wise man; but they mistake most part, auferre, trucidare, rapere, falsis nominibus virtutem vocant, &c. (Twas Galgacus' observation in Tacitus) they term theft, murder, and rapine, virtue, by a wrong name, rapes, slaughters, massacres, &c. jocus et ludus, are pretty pastimes, as Ludovicius Vices notes. "They commonly call the most hair-brain blood-suckers, strongest thieves, the most desperate villains, treacherous rogues, inhuman murderers, rash, cruel and dissolve caiffits, courageous and generous spirits, heroic and worthy captains, "brave men at arms, valiant and renowned soldiers, possessed with a brute persuasion of false honour," as Pontus Huter in his Burgundian history complains. By means of which it comes to pass that daily so many voluntaries offer themselves, leaving their sweet wives, children, friends, for sixpence (if they can get it) a day, prostitute their lives and limbs, desire to enter upon breaches, lie sentinel, perdue, give the first onset, stand in the fore front of the battle, marching bravely on, with a cheerful noise of drums and trumpets, such vigour and alacrity, so many banners streaming in the air, glittering armours, motions of plumes, woods of pikes, and swords, variety of colours, cost and magnificence, as if they went in triumph, now victors to the Capitol, and with such pomp, as when Darius' army marched to meet Alexander at Issus. Void of all fear they run into imminent dangers, cannon's mouth, &c., ut vulgarius suis territum habet, saith *Barletius, to get a name of valour, honour and applause, which lasts not neither, for it is but a mere flash this fame, and like a rose, intra diem unum extinguitur, 'tis gone in an instant. Of 15,000 proletaries slain in a battle, scarce fifteen are recorded in history, or one alone, the General perhaps, and after a while his and their names are likewise blotted out, the whole battle itself is forgotten. Those Grecian orators, summa vi ingenii et eloquentiae, set out the renowned overthrows at Theremopylae, Salamin, Marathon, Mycale, Montineca, Cheronaea, Platea. The Romans record their battle at Cannas, and Pharsalian fields, but they do but record, and we scarce hear of them. And yet this supposed honour, popular applause, desire of immortality by this means, pride and vain-glory spur them on many times rashly and unadvisedly, to make away themselves and multitudes of others. Alexander was sorry, because there were no more worlds for him to conquer, he is admired by some for it, animosa vox videtur, et regia, 'twas spoken like a Prince; but as wise *Seneca censures him, 'twas vox iniquissima et stultissima, 'twas spoken like a Bedlam fool; and that sentence which the same *Seneca appropriates to his father Philip and him, I apply to them all, Non minores fiure pestes mortaliunt quam minimanto, quam conflagratio, quibus, &c. they did as much mischief to mortal men as fire and water, those merciless elements when they rage. 'Which is yet more to be lamented, they persuade them this
hellish course of life is holy, they promise heaven to such as venture their lives bello sacro, and that by these bloody wars, as Persians, Greeks, and Romans of old, as modern Turks do now their commons, to encourage them to fight, ut cadant infidelici. "If they die in the field, they go directly to heaven, and shall be canonized for saints." (O diabolical invention!) put in the Chronicles, in perpetua rei memoriam, to their eternal memory: when as in truth, as some hold, it were much better (since wars are the scourge of God for sin, by which he punisheth mortal men's peevishness and folly) such brutish stories were suppressed, because ad morum institutio nem nihil habent, they conduct not at all to manners, or good life. But they will have it thus nevertheless, and so they put note of "a divinity upon the most cruel and pernicious plague of human kind," adore such men with grand titles, degrees, statues, images, honour, applause, and highly reward them for their good service, no greater glory than to die in the field. So Africanus is extolled by Ennius: Mars, and Heracles, and I know not how many besides of old, were deified; went this way to heaven, that were indeed bloody butchers, wicked destroyers, and troubler of the world, prodigious monsters, hell-hounds, feral plagues, devourers, common executioners of human kind, as Lactantius truly proves, and Cyprian to Do nat, such as were desperate in wars, and precipitately made away themselves, (like those Celts in Damascus, with ridiculous valour, ut dulcore sum putarent nume ruenti se subducer, a disgrace to run away for a rotten wall, now ready to fall on their heads,) such as will not rush on a sword's point, or seek to shun a cannon's shot, are base cowards, and no valiant men. By which means, Madet orbis matuo sanguine, the earth wallows in her own blood, Sevii amor ferri et selerati insanii bella; and for that, which if it be done in private, a man shall be rigorously executed, "and which is no less than murder itself; if the same fact be done in public in wars, it is called manhood, and the party is honoured for it." —Prosperum et felix seclus, virtus vocabur.

We measure all as Turks do, by the event, and most part, as Cyprian notes, in all ages, countries, places, seviti magnitudo impunilatem seleris acquirit, the foulness of the fact vindicates the offender. "One is crowned for that for which another is tormented: Ille cruacem seleris pretium habuit, hic diadema; made a knight, a lord, an earl, a great duke, (as Agrippa notes) for which another should have hung in gibbets, as a terror to the rest, —et elemen alter, Si feeris et elem, cadet sub justicce morum."

A poor sheep-stealer is hanged for stealing of victuals, compelled peradventure by necessity of that intolerable cold, hunger, and thirst, to save himself from starving: but a great man in office may securely rob whole provinces, undo thousands, pill and poll, oppress ad libitum, flect, grind, tyrannise, enrich himself by spoils of the commons, be uncontrollable in his actions, and after all, be recompensed with turgent titles, honoured for his good service, and no man dare find fault, or mutter at it.

How would our Democritus have been affected to see a wicked caitiff, or a fool, a very idiot, a fange, a golden ass, a monster of men, to have many good men, wise men, learned men to attend upon him with all submission, as

---

1. Democritus to the Reader.
an appendix to his riches, for that respect alone, because he hath more wealth and money, "and to honour him with divine titles, and bombast epithets," to another him with fumes and enlogies, whom they know to be a dizzard, a fool, a covetous wretch, a beast, &c., "because he is rich!" To see sub exuvia loonis onagrum, a filthy loathsome carcasse, a Gorgon's head puffed up by parasites, assume this unto himself; glorious titles, in worth an infant, a Cuman ass, a painted sepulchre, an Egyptian temple? To see a withered face, a diseased, deformed, caukered complexion, a rotten carcass, a vipers mind, and Epicurean soul set out with orient pearls, jewels, diadems, perfumes, curious elaborate works, as proud of his clothes as a child of his new coats; and a goodly person, of an angel-like divine countenance, a saint, an humble mind, a mock spirit clothed in rags, beg, and now ready to be starred! To see a silly contemptible sloven in apparel, ragged in his coat, polite in speech, of a divine spirit, wise? another neat in clothes, spruce, full of courtesy, empty of grace, wit, talk nonsense?

To see so many lawyers, advocates, so many tribunals, so little justice; so many magistrates, so little care of common good; so many laws, yet never more disorders; Tribunal Iitum segetem, the Tribunal a labyrinth, so many thousand suits in one court sometimes, so violently followed? To see injustissimum sepe juri prasidentem, impium religioni, imperississimum eruditioni, obtiosissimum labori, monstruosum humanitati? to see a lamb 'executed, a wolf pronounce sentence, latro arraigned, and fur sit on the bench, the judge severely punish others, and do worse himself, "and m furtum facere et punire, rapinam plectere, quem sit ipse raptor! Laws altered, misconstrued, interpreted pro and con and. as the Judge is made by friends, bribed, or otherwise affected as a nose of wax, good to-day, none to-morrow; or firm in his opinion, cast in his? Sentence prolonged, changed, ad arbitrium judicia, still the same case, "one thrust out of his inheritance, another falsely put in by favour, false forged deeds or wills." Inciae leges negligentur, laws are made and not kept; or if put in execution, they be some silly ones that are punished. As put case it be fornication, the father will disinherit or abdicate his child, quite cashier him (out, villain, begone, come no more in my sight); a poor man is miserably tormented with loss of his estate perhaps, goods, fortunes, good name, for ever disgraced, forsaken, and must do penance to the utmost; a mortal sin, and yet make the worst of it, nunquid aliqui fecit, saith Tranio in the poet, nisi quod fuit tarnis nati generibus? he hath done no more than what gentlemen usually do. *Neque novum, neque mirum, neque seus quam alti solent. For in a great person, right worshipful Sir, a right honourable Grandy, 'tis not a venial sin, no, not a peccadillo, 'tis no offence at all, a common and ordinary thing, no man takes notice of it; he justifies it in public, and peradventure brags of it,

"*Nam quod turpe bonis, Tituli, Seloque, decebat
Crispinam—*

For what would be base in good men, Titulus, and Seius, became Crispinus.

*Many poor men, younger brothers, &c., by reason of bad policy and idle education (for they are likely brought up in no calling), are compelled to beg or steal, and then hanged for theft; than which, what can be more ignominious, non minus enim turpe principi multa supplicia, quam medico multa funera, "tis

---

*Erumq; detestatnr Utopians inaniam, qui divinos honores tis impartent, quos sordidos et avaros agrones; non alio respecto honorantes quam quod dixit fin. Idem. lib. 2. 1 Cyp. 2. ad Donat. ep. Ut reus innocens pereat, et nocens. Judex damnum forsas, quod iustus operator. 2 Sidonius Apo. 3 Salvianus lib. 3. pr. provid. 4 Erro judicium nihil est nisi publica merces. Petronius. Quod faciant leges ubi sola pecunia regnat? Idem. 5 Hic accendit hereditatibus liberi, hic donatur bonis alienis, falsus consulat, alter testamentum corrumpit, &c. Idem. 6 Vexai censuram columnas. Plant, moest. 7 Idem. 8 Javen. Sat. 4. 9 Quod tot sit fures et mendici, magistraturn subirbit, qui males imitantur praecesores, qui discipulos libentius verberant quam docent. Morus, Utop. lib. 1.
the governor's fault. *Libentiús verberant quām doceunt*, as schoolmasters do rather correct their pupils, than teach them when they do amiss. "*They had more need provide there should be no more thieves and beggars, as they ought with good policy, and take away the occasions, than let them run on, as they do to their own destruction: root out likewise those causes of wrangling, a multitude of lawyers, and compose controversies, *litēs lustrales et seculares*, by some more compendious means."* Whereas now for every toy and trifle they go to law, *ruptīs litibus insanam forum, et seriat invinum discordantium rubes*, they are ready to pull out one another's throats; and for commodity "*to squeeze blood," saith Hierom, "out of their brother's heart," defame, lie, disgrace, backbite, rail, bear false witness, swear, forswear, fight and wrangle, spend their goods, lives, fortunes, friends, undo one another, to enrich an harpy advocate, that preys upon them both, and cries Eia Socrates, Eia Xantippe; or some corrupt Judge, that like the *Kite in Æsop*, while the mouse and frog fought, carried both away. Generally they prey one upon another as so many ravenous birds, brute beasts, devouring fishes, no medium, *omnes hic aut captantan aut captant; aut caudaverque lacerantur, aut corvi qui lacerant, either deceive or be deceived; tear others or be torn in pieces themselves; like so many buckets in a well, as one riseth another falleth, one's empty, another's full; his ruin is a ladder to the third; such are our ordinary proceedings. *What's the market?* A place, according to *Anacharsis*, wherein they ozen one another, a trap; *what's the world itself?* 4 A vast chaos, a confusion of manners, as fickle as the air, *domiciūm insanorum*, a turbulent troop full of impurities, a mart of walking spirits, goats, the theatre of hypocrisy, a shop of knavery, flattery, a nursery of villany, the scene of babbling, the school of giddiness, the academy of vice; a warfare, *ubi velis velis pugnam-dum, aut vinces aut succumbas*, in which kill or be killed; wherein every man is for himself, his private ends, and stands upon his own guard. No charity, *love, friendship, fear of God, alliance, affinity, consanguinity, Christianity, can contain them, but if they be any ways offended, or that string of commodity be touched, they fall foul. Old friends become bitter enemies on a sudden for toys and small offences, and they that erst were willing to do all mutual offices of love and kindness, now revile and persecute one another to death, with more than Vatinian hatred, and will not be reconciled. So long as they are behoveful, they love, or may bestead each other, but when there is no more good to be expected, as they do by an old dog, hang him up or cashier him: which *Cato* counts a great indecorum, to use men like old shoes or broken glasses, which are flung to the dunghill; he could not find in his heart to sell an old ox, much less to turn away an old servant: but they instead of recompense, revile him, and when they have made him an instrument of their villany, as *Bajazet the second Emperor of the Turks did by Acomethes Bassa, make him away, or instead of reward, hate him to death, as Silius was served by Tiberius*. In a word every man for his own ends. Our *summa bonum* is commodity, and the goddess we adore *Dea moneta*, Queen money, to whom we daily offer sacrifice, which steers our hearts, hands, *affections, all: that most powerful goddess, by whom we are reared, depressed, elevated, esteemed the sole commandress of our actions, for which we pray, run, ride, go, come, labour,
and contend as fishes do for a crumb that falleth into the water. It's not worth, virtue, (that's bonum theatralis,) wisdom, valour, learning, honesty, religion, or any sufficiency for which we are respected, but "money, greatness, office, honour, authority; honesty is accounted folly; knavery, policy; " men admired out of opinion, not as they are, but as they seem to be: such shifting, lying, cogging, plotting, counterplotting, temporizing, flattering, cozening, dissembling, "that of necessity one must highly offend God if he be conformable to the world," Cretizare cum Crete, "or else live in contempt, disgrace and misery." One takes upon him temperance, holiness, another austerity, a third an affected kind of simplicity, when as indeed he, and he, and he, and the rest are "hypocrites, ambidexters," out-sides, so many turning pictures, a lion on the one side, a lamb on the other. How would Democritus have been affected to see these things!

To see a man turn himself into all shapes like a camelion, or as Proteus, omnia transformans sese in miracula rerum, to act twenty parts and persons at once, for his advantage, to temporize and vary like Mercury the Planet, good with good; bad with bad; having a several face, garb, and character for every one he meets; of all religions, humours, inclinations; to fawn like a spaniel, mentitis et mimicis obsequius, rage like a lion, bark like a cur, fight like a dragon, sting like a serpent, as meek as a lamb, and yet again grin like a tiger, weep like a crocodile, insult over some, and yet others dominate over him, here command, there crouch, tyrannize in one place, be baffled in another, a wise man at home, a fool abroad to make others merry.

To see so much difference betwixt words and deeds, so many parasangs betwixt tongue and heart, men like stage-players act variety of parts, give good precepts to others, soar aloft, whilst they themselves grovel on the ground.

To see a man protest friendship, kiss his hand, *queen mallet truncatum videre,* smile with an intent to do mischief, or cozen him whom he salutes, magnify his friend unworthy with hyperbolical eulogiums; his enemy albeit a good man, to vilify and disgrace him, yea all his actions, with the utmost that livor and malice can invent.

To see a 'servant able to buy out his master, him that carries the mace more worth than the magistrate, which Plato, lib. 11, de leg.; absolutely forbids, Epicetetus abhors. A horse that tills the "land fed with chaff, an idle jade have provender in abundance; him that makes shoes go barefoot himself, him that sells meat almost pinned; a toiling drudge starve, a drone flourish.

To see men buy smoke for wares, castles built with fools' heads, men like apes follow the fashions in tires, gestures, actions: if the king laugh, all laugh;

"*Hides? majore chachinno*  
Conceitus, fict i lachrymas conspicus amici.*

"Alexander stooped, so did his courtiers; Alphonsus turned his head, and so did his parasites. "Sabina Poppee, Nero's wife, wore amber-coloured hair, so did all the Roman ladies in an instant, her fashion was theirs.

To see men wholly led by affection, admired and censured out of opinion without judgment: an inconsiderate multitude, like so many dogs in a village,

---

1 Et genus et formam regina pecunia donat. Quantum quisque sua namorum servat in arca, tantum habet et ilicit.  
2 Non a perita sed ab oratui et vulgi vocibus habemur excellentes. Cardian. 1. 2. de cons.  
3 Perjurata sua postea numina lucra, Mercator. Ut necessarium sit vel Deo displicere, vel ab hominibus exscontenti, vexari, negligi.  
4 Quo balute similis vel centaurius, homines, deorsum equi.  
5 Tragelapho similis vel centaurius, homines, deorsum equi.  
6 Preceptius suis caelum promittunt, ipsi interius pulvers terrae villa mancipia.  
7 Alum Silv.  
8 Arride homines ut satiavit, habilium ut fallant.  
9 Cytop. ad Donatum.  
10 Love and hate are like the two ends of a perspective glass, the one multiplies, the other makes less.  
11 Ministri locupletiores iis quibus ministerat, servas majores opes habens quam patrones.  
12 Qui terram colunt equi paleis pascuntur, qui otantur caballi avena stagnantur, discalceatus other makes less.  
13 Ministri locupletiores iis quibus ministerat, servas majores opes habens quam patrones.  
14 Qui terram colunt equi paleis pascuntur, qui otantur caballi avena stagnantur, discalceatus other makes less.  
15 Juven. Do you laugh? he is shaken by still greater laughter: he weeps also when he has beheld the tears of his friend.  
16 Bolsa, lib. 4. de repub. cap. 6.  
17 Pilon. 1. 37. cap. 3.  
18 Capitolia habuit succendit, extinde faciunt ut omnem puerum Romanum colorem illum affectarent.
Democritus to the Reader.

35

if one bark all bark without a cause: as fortune's fan turns, if a man be in favour, or commanded by some great one, all the world applauds him; * if in disgrace, in an instant all hate him, and as at the sun when he is eclipsed, that erst took no notice, now gaze and stare upon him.

To see a man * wear his brains in his belly, his guts in his head, an hundred oaks on his back, to devour a hundred oxen at a meal, nay more, to devour houses and towns, or as those anthropophagi, * to eat one another.

To see a man roll himself up like a snowball, from base beggary to right worshipful and right honourable titles, unjustly to screw himself into honours and offices; another to starve his genius, damn his soul to gather wealth, which he shall not enjoy, which his prodigal son melts and consumes in an instant. 3

To see the * of our times, a man bend all his forces, means, time, fortunes, to be a favourite's favourite's favourite, &c., a parasite's parasite's parasite, that may scorn the servile world as having enough already.

To see an hirsute beggar's brat, that lately fed on scraps, crept and whined, crying to all, and for an old jerkin ran of errands, now ruffle in silk and satin, bravely mounted, jovial and polite, now scorn his old friends and familiars, neglect his kindred, insult over his betters, domineer over all.

To see a scholar crouch and creep to an illiterate peasant for a meal's meat; a scriven better paid for an obligation; a falconer receive greater wages than a student; a lawyer get more in a day than a philosopher in a year, better reward for an hour, than a scholar for a twelvemonth's study; him that can * paint Thais, play on a fiddle, curl hair, &c., sooner get preferment than a philologer or a poet.

To see a fond mother, like *'s ape, hug her child to death, a "wittol wank at his wife's honesty, and too perspicuous in all other affairs; one stumble at a straw, and leap over a block; rob Peter, and pay Paul; scrape unjust sums with one hand, purchase great mansions by corruption, fraud and coaxage, and liberally to distribute to the poor with the other, give a remnant to pious uses, &c. Penny wise, pound foolish; blind men judge of colours; wise men silent, fools talk; * find fault with others, and do worse themselves; * denounce that in public which he doth in secret; and which Aurelius Victor gives out of Augustus, severely censure that in a third, of which he is most guilty himself.

To see a poor fellow, or an hired servant venture his life for his new master that will scarce give him his wages at year's end; A country colonel toil and moil, till and drudge for a prodigal idle drone, that devours all the gain, or lasciviously consumes with phantastic expenses; A noble man in a bravado to encounter death, and for a small flash of honor to cast away himself; A worldling tremble at an executor, and yet not fear hell-fire; To wish and hope for immortality, desire to be happy, and yet by all means avoid death, a necessary passage to bring him to it.

To see a fool-hardy fellow like those old Danes, * decollari multum quam verberari, die rather than be punished, in a sottish humour embrace death with alacrity, yet * scorn to lament his own sins and miseries, or his dearest friends' departures.

* Oddi damnatus. Juv.  9 Agrippa ep. 28. 1. 7. Quorum cerebrum est in ventre, ingenium in patina.  4 Psal. They eat up my people as bread.  9 Abanuit helis eccentricus digitorum sovata sunt clam divitis, et mercis distincta pavimentis superbo, pontificum poriori cans. Hor.  4 Qui Thaidem pingere, inflare tibiam, crimine crimine.  9 Doctus spectare lacunae.  4 Tullius. Est enim proprium statuisse aliorum cernere vitis, oblivisci suorum. Idem Aristippus Choridem apud Lucianum. Semine statitis culiisdem e se puto, &c.  4 Excecuti publiche quod occulte agat. Salviano lib. de pro. acres uilecendis vitis quibus ipsi velamentum indicat.  9 Adamus eccles. hist. cap. 312. Sineis damnatus fuerit, laus esse gloria est; nunc lachrymas et planctum ceteraque componuntur genera quae nos salubria censemus, ibi abominantur Dani, at nec pro peccatis nec pro delictis amitis ulli fieri loco.
Democritus to the Reader.

To see wise men degraded, fools preferred, one govern towns and cities, and yet a silly woman overrules him at home; *Command a province, and yet his own servants or children prescribe laws to him, as THEMISTOCLES' son did in Greece;" "What I will (said he) my mother will, and what my mother will, my father doth." To see horses ride in a coach, men draw it; dogs devour their masters; towers build mastmen; children rule; old men go to school; women wear the breeches; $sheep demolish towns, devour men, &c. And in a word, the world turned upside downward. O vivet Democritus!

*a* To insist in every particular were one of Hercules' labours, there's so many ridiculous instances, as motes in the sun. Quantum est in rebus inania! (How much vanity there is in things!) And who can speak of all? Crimine ab uno disce omnes, take this for a taste.

But these are obvious to sense, trivial and well known, easy to be discerned. How would Democritus have been moved, had he seen the secrets of their hearts? If every man had a window in his breast, which MOMUS would have had in Vulcan's man, or that which Tully so much wished it were written in every man's forehead, *Quid quisque de republica sentiret,* what he thought; or that it could be effected in an instant, which Mercury did by Charon in Lucian, by touching of his eyes, to make him discern *semel et simul rumores et suasuras.*

"Spec hominum aequas, morbos, votumque labores, Et passum toti volitantis soler curas." | "Blind hopes and wishes, their thoughts and affairs, Whispers and rumours, and those flying cares."

That he could *cubiculum obductas foras recludere et secreta cordium penetrare,* which 1 Cyprian desired, open doors and locks, shoot bolts, as Lucian's Gallus did with a feather of his tail: or GYGES' invisible ring, or some rare perspective glass, or *Otacousticon,* which would so multiply species, that a man might hear and see all at once (as 2 Martianus Capella's Jupiter did in a spear which he held in his hand, which did present unto him all that was daily done upon the face of the earth), observe cuckold's horns, forgeries of alchemists, the philosopher's stone, new projectors, &c., and all those works of darkness, foolish vows, hopes, fears and wishes, what a deal of laughter would it afford? He should have seen windmills in one man's head, an hornet's nest in another. Or had he been present with Icaromenippus in Lucian at Jupiter's whispering place, and heard one pray for rain, another for fair weather; one for his wife's, another for his father's death, &c.; "to ask that at God's hand which they are absolved any man should hear:" How would he have been confounded? Would he, think you, or any man else, say that these men were well in their wits? *Hoc sanvi esse hominis quis sanvis paret Orestes? Can all the hellebore in the Anticyre cure these men? No sure, "an acre of hellebore will not do it."

That which is more to be lamented, they are mad like Seneca's blind woman, and will not acknowledge, or "seek for any cure of it, for pauci vident morbum stum, iones amat. If our leg or arm offend us, we covet by all means possible to redress it;" and if we labour of a bodily disease, we send for a physician; but for the diseases of the mind we take no notice of them: *Lust harrows us on the one side; envy, anger, ambition on the other. We are torn in pieces by

our passions, as so many wild horses, one in disposition, another in habit; one is melancholy, another mad; and which of us all seeks for help, doth acknowledge his error, or knows he is sick? As that stupid fellow put out the candle because the bitten fleas should not find him; he shrouts himself in an unknown habit, borrowed titles, because nobody should discern him. Every man thinks with himself, Egomet videor mihi sanus, I am well, I am wise, and laughs at others. And 'tis a general fault amongst them all, that which our forefathers have approved, diet, apparel, opinions, humours, customs, manners, we deride and reject in our time as absurd. Old men account juniors all fools, when they are mere dizzards; and as to sailors, —terrerque vesperque recehunt —they move, the land stands still, the world hath much more wit, they dote themselves. Turks deride us, we them; Italians, Frenchmen, accounting them light headed fellows; the French scoff again at Italians, and at their several customs; Greeks have condemned all the world but themselves of barbarism, the world as much vilifies them now; we account Germans heavy, dull fellows, explode many of their fashions; they as contemptibly think of us; Spaniards laugh at all, and all again at them. So are we fools and ridiculous, absurd in our actions, carriages, diet, apparel, customs, and consultations; we 'scuff and point one at another, when as in conclusion all are fools, etc. and they the veriest asses that hide their ears most." A private man if he be resolved with himself, or set on an opinion, accounts all idiots and asses that are not affected as he is. — nihil rectum, nisi quod placuit sibi, duxit, that are not so minded, (quodque volunt homines se bene velle putant,) all fools that think not as he doth: he will not say with Atticus, Suum quisque sponsam, mihi meam, let every man enjoy his own spouse; but his alone is fair, suus amor, etc., and scorns all in respect of himself, will imitate none, hear none 'but himself, as Pliny said, a law and example to himself. And that which Hippocrates, in his epistle to Dionysius, reprehended of old, is verified in our times, Quisque in dio superfatum esse censet, ipse quod non habet nec curat, that which he hath not himself, or doth not esteem, he accounts superfluity, an idle quality, a mere folly: in another: like Esop's fox, when he had lost his tail, would have all his fellow foxes cut off theirs. The Chinese say, that we Europeans have one eye, they themselves two, all the world else is blind: (though Scaliger accounts them brutes too, merum pecus,) so thou and thy sectaries are only wise, others indifferent, the rest beside themselves, mere idiots and asses. Thus not acknowledging our own errors and imperfections, we securely deride others, as if we alone were free, and spectators of the rest, accounting it an excellent thing, as indeed it is, Atien optimum frustra insaniam, to make ourselves merry with other men's obliquities, when as he himself is more faulty than the rest, mutato nomine, de te fabula narrator, he may take himself by the nose for a fool; and which one calls maximum statutias specimen, to be ridiculous to others, and not to perceive or take notice of it, as Marsyas was when he contended with Apollo, non intelligens se deridiculo haberi, saith Apuleius; 'tis his own cause, he is a convicted madman, as "Austin well infers "in the eyes of wise men and angels he seems like one, that to our thinking walks with his heels upwards." So thou laughest at me, and I at thee, both at a third; and he returns that of the poet upon us again, Ili mihi, insanire me aiunt, quam ipsi utrò insaniant. We accuse others of madness,
of folly, and are the veriest dizzards ourselves. For it is a great sign and property of a fool (which Eccl. x. 3, points at) out of pride and self-conceit to insult, vilify, condemn, censure, and call other men fools (Non videmus
manitice quod à terno est) to tax that in others of which we are most faulty; teach that which we follow not ourselves: For an inconstant man to write of constancy; a profane liver prescribe rules of sanctity and piety; a dizzard himself make a treatise of wisdom; or with Sellust to rail downright at spoilers of countries, and yet in * office to be a more grievous poler himself. This argues weakness, and is an evident sign of such parties' indiscretion. * Pecat uter nostrinm cruce dignitus? "Who is the fool now?" Or else peradventure in some places we are all mad for company, and so 'tis not seen, Satietas erroris et dementine, pariter absurditatem et admirationem tollit. "Tis with us, as it was of old (in * Tully's censure at least) with C. Pimbria in Rome, a bold, hair-brain, mad fellow, and so esteemed of all, such only excepted, that were as mad as himself: now in such a case there is * no notice taken of it.

"Nimium insanus paecis videteor; èo quod Maxima pars hominum morbo jactatur eodem.* "When all are mad, where all are like oppress
Who can discern one mad man from the rest?"

But put case they do perceive it, and some one be manifestly convicted of madness, he now takes notice of his folly, be it in action, gesture, speech, a vain humour he hath in building, bragging, jangling, spending, gaming, courteus, scribbling, prating, for which he is ridiculous to others, "on which he dotes, he doth acknowledge as much; yet with all the rhetoric thou hast, thou canst not so recall him, but to the contrary notwithstanding, he will persevere in his dotage. "Tis amabilis insanius, et mentis gratissimus error, so pleasing, so delicious, that he cannot leave it. He knows his error, but will not seek to decline it, tell him what the event will be, beggary, sorrow, sickness, disgrace, shame, loss, madness, yet * "an angry man will prefer vengeance, a lascivious his whore, a thief his booty, a glutton his belly, before his welfare." Tell an epicure, a covetous man, an ambitious man, of his irregular course, wean him from it a little, * pol me occidistis amici, he cries anon, you have undone him, and as 'a "dog to his vomit," he returns to it again; no persuasion will take place, no counsel, say what thou canst,

"Clames licet et mare cedo
— Confundas, surdo narras,"

* demonstrate as Ulysses did to * Elpenor and Gryllus, and the rest of his companions, "those swinish men," he is irreparable in his humour, he will be a hog still; bray him in a mortar, he will be the same. If he be in an heresy, or some perverse opinion, settled as some of our ignorant Papists are, convince his understanding, show him the several follies and absurd fopperies of that sect, force him to say, veris vincor, make it as clear as the sun, he will err still, peevish and obstinate as he is; and as he said * si in hoc erro, libenter erro, nec hunc errorem auferri meli volo; I will do as I have done, as my predecessors have done, * and as my friends now do: I will dote for company. Say now, are these men * mad or no, * Heus age responde? are they ridiculous? cedo quevis arbitrum, are they sane mentis, sober, wise, and discreet? have they common sense?

"uter est insanior horum? I am of Democritus'
opinion for my part, I hold them worthy to be laughed at; a company of brain-sick dizzards, as mad as "Orestes and Athamas, that they may go "ride the ass," and all sail along to the Anticyrre, in the "ship of fools" for company together. I need not much labour to prove this which I say otherwise than thus, make any solemn protestation, or swear, I think you will believe me without an oath; say at a word, are they fools? I refer it to you, though you be likewise fools and madmen yourselves, and I as mad to ask the question; for what said our comical Mercury?

"q. Justum ab injustis petere inspicientia est. I'll stand to your censure yet, what think you?"

But forasmuch as I undertook at first, that kingdoms, provinces, families, were melancholy as well as private men, I will examine them in particular, and that which I have hitherto dilated at random, in more general terms, I will particularly insist in, prove with more special and evident arguments, testimonies, illustrations, and that in brief. "Nunc accipe quare desipiant omnes aegue ac tu.

My first argument is borrowed from Solomon, an arrow drawn out of his sententious quiver, Pro. iii. 7, "Be not wise in thine own eyes." And xxvi. 12, "Seest thou a man wise in his own conceit? more hope is of a fool than of him." Isaiah pronounceth a woe against such men, chap. v. 21, "that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight." For hence we may gather, that it is a great offence, and men are much deceived that think too well of themselves, an especial argument to convince them of folly. Many men (saith Seneca) "had been without question wise, had they not had an opinion that they had attained to perfection of knowledge already, even before they had gone half way," too forward, too ripe, præpropéri, too quick and ready, citio prudentes, citio piti, citio mariâ, citio patres, citio sacerdotes, citio omnes officii capaces et curiosi, they had too good a conceit of themselves, and that marred all; of their worth, valour, skill, art, learning, judgment, eloquence, their good parts; all their geese are swans, and that manifestly proves them to be no better than fools. In former times they had but seven wise men, now you can scarce find so many fools. Thales sent the golden Tripos, which the fishermen found, and the oracle commanded to be "given to the wisest, to Bias, Bias to Solon," &c. If such a thing were now found, we should all fight for it, as the three goddesses did for the golden apple, we are so wise: we have women politicians, children metaphysicians; every silly fellow can square a circle, make perpetual motions, find the philosopher's stone, interpret Apocalypses, make new Theories, a new system of the world, new logic, new Philosophy, &c. Nostra utique regio, saith Petronius, "our country is so full of deified spirits, divine souls, that you may sooner find a god than a man amongst us," we think so well of ourselves, and that is an ample testimony of much folly.

My second argument is grounded upon the like place of Scripture, which though before mentioned in effect, yet for some reasons is to be repeated (and by Plato's good leave, I may do it, "in tau καθ' ἐνθάδε εἰς ἐνθάδε χάσωνγι."

"Fools (saith David) by reason of their transgressions," &c. Psal. cvii. 17. Hence Musculus infers all transgressors must needs be fools. So we read Rom. ii. "Tribulation and anguish on the soul of every man that doeth evil," but all do evil. And Isaiah, lxv. 14, "My servants shall sing for joy, and ye shall cry for sorrow of heart, and vexation of mind." "Tis ratified by the common consent of all philosophers. "Dishonesty (saith Cardan) is nothing else but
folly and madness. \* Probus quis nobiscum vivit? Show me an honest man, Nemo malus qui non stultus, 'tis Fabius' aphorism to the same end. If none honest, none wise, then all fools. And well may they be so accounted: for who will account him otherwise, Qui iter adorat in occidentem, quem prosperous in orientem? that goes backward all his life, westward, when he is bound to the east? or hold him a wise man (saith *Musoulus* "that prefers momentary pleasures to eternity, that spends his master's goods in his absence, forthwith to be condemned for it?" Nequiquaum sapit qui sibi non sapit, who will say that a sick man is wise, that eats and drinks to overthrow the temperature of his body? Can you account him wise or discreet that would willingly have his health, and yet will do nothing that should procure or continue it? "Theodoret, out of Plotinus the Platonist, "holds it a ridiculous thing for a man to live after his own laws, to do that which is offensive to God, and yet to hope that he should save him: and when he voluntarily neglects his own safety, and contents the means, to think to be delivered by another:" who will say these men are wise?

A third argument may be derived from the precedent, \* all men are carried away with passion, discontent, lust, pleasures, &c.; they generally hate those virtues they should love, and love such vices they should hate. Therefore more than melancholy, quite mad, brute beasts, and void of reason, so Chrysostom contends; "or rather dead and buried alive," as \* Philo Judaeus concludes it for a certainty, "of all such that are carried away with passions, or labour of any disease of the mind." "Where is fear and sorrow," there \* Lactantius stiffly maintains, "wisdom cannot dwell.

Seneca and the rest of the stoics are of opinion, that where is any the least perturbation, wisdom may not be found. "What more ridiculous," as \* Lactantius urges, "than to hear how Xerxes whipped the Hollespoint, threatened the Mountain Athos, and the like? To speak ad rem, who is free from passion? \* Mortalis nemo est quem non uttingat dolor, morbusve, as 'Tully determines out of an old poem, no mortal man can avoid sorrow and sickness, and sorrow is an inseparable companion from melancholy. \* Chrysostom pleads farther yet, that they are more than mad, very beasts, stupidly, and void of common sense: "For how (saith he) shall I know thee to be a man, when thou kickest like an ass, neighest like a horse after women, ravest in lust like a bull, ravenest like a bear, stingest like a scorpion, rackest like a wolf, as subtle as a fox, as impudent as a dog? Shall I say thou art a man, that hast all the symptoms of a beast? How shall I know thee to be a man? by thy shape! That affrights me more, when I see a beast in likeness of a man."

\* Seneca calls that of Epicurus, magnificam vocem, an heroic equal speech, "A fool still begins to live," and accounts it a filthy lightness in men, every day to lay new foundations of their life, but who doth otherwise? One travels, another builds; one for this, another for that business, and old folks are as far out as

\* Who can find a faithful man? Prov. xx. 6. \* In Psal. xlix. Qui momentanea sempiternis, qui dilapidat huri abitatis bona, nox in jus vocandos et damnuos. \* Per quam ridiculum est homines ex animi sententia vivere, et quasi suis ingrata sunt exequi, et tamen a solis soli valle saevis facit, quam proprius salutis curam abjecitern. Theod. c. 6. de provid. lib. de curat. aequ. affect. \* Sapientisibi qui impious, &c. Hor. 2. ser. 7. Conclus. lib. de vie. offer. certum est animi morbis laboratens pro mortuis censendos. \* Lib. de sap. Ubi timor adest, sapientia adese nequit. \* He who is despicable, is also fearful, and he who lives in fear never can be free. \* Quod insanians Xerxes Hollespotum vorberante? &c. \* Eloc. xxi. 12. Where is bitterness, there is no understanding. Prov. xii. 16. An angry man is a fool. \* 2 Tusc. Iujaria in sapientem non excidit. \* Hom. 6. in 2 Epist. ad Cor. Heimilem te agnoscere nequeo, cum tangam annus recultures, laces in aer cupiditas, ut naves venti indulges, quae rapias ut lupus, &c., at liuises, formam hominis habeo, Id magis torquet, quem quem humanum specie videor me putum. \* 2 Epist. lib. 2. 13. Stultus semper incipit vivere, fuit hominum levitas, nova quodque fundamenta vives pponere, novas spec. &c.
the rest; O dementem senectutem, Tully exclaims. Therefore young, old, middle age, all are stupid, and dote.

* Eneas Sylvius, amongst many other, sets down three special ways to find a fool by. He is a fool that seeks that he cannot find: he is a fool that seeks that, which being found will do him more harm than good: he is a fool, that having variety of ways to bring him to his journey’s end, takes that which is worst. If so, methinks most men are fools; examine their courses, and you shall soon perceive what dizzards and mad men the major part are.

Beroaldus will have drunkards, afternoon men, and such as more than ordinarily delight in drink, to be mad. The first pot quencheth thirst, so Panyasis the poet determines in Athenæus, secunda gratius, horis et Dyonisio: the second makes merry, the third for pleasure, quarta ad insaniam, the fourth makes them mad. If this position be true, what a catalogue of mad men shall we have? what shall they be that drink four times four? * Nonum supra omnen furorem, supra omnen insaniam reddunt insanissimos? I am of his opinion, they are more than mad, much worse than mad.

The *Abderites condemned Democritus for a mad man, because he was sometimes sad, and sometimes again profusely merry. *Hic Patria (saith Hippocrates) ob risum furere et insaniire dicit, his countrymen hold him mad because he laughs; *‘and therefore *he desires him to advise all his friends at Rhodes, that they do not laugh too much, or be over sad.” Had those Abderites been conversant with us, and but seen what *fleering and grinning there is in this age, they would certainly have concluded, we had been all out of our wits.

Aristotle in his ethics holds *folix idemque sapiens, to be wise and happy, are reciprocal terms, *bonus idemque sapiens honestus. *Tis *Tully’s paradox, “wise men are free, but fools are slaves,” liberty is a power to live according to his own laws, as we will ourselves: who hath this liberty? who is free?

But where shall such a man be found? If no where, then *è diametro, we are all slaves, senseless, or worse. *Nemo malus folix. But no man is happy in this life, none good, therefore no man wise. *†Rari quippe boni——For one virtue you shall find ten vices in the same party; *paucri Promethei, multi Epimethei. We may peradventure usurp the name, or attribute it to others for favour, as Carolus Sapiens, Philippus Bonus, Lodovicus Pius, &c., and describe the properties of a wise man, as Tully doth an orator, Xenophon Cyrus, Castilio a courtier, Galen temperament, an aristocracy is described by politicians. But where shall such a man be found?

“Vir bonus et sapiens, qualam vix repererit unum
Millibus & multis hominum consultus Apollo.”

| “A wise, a good man in a million,
Apollo consulted could scarce find one.”

A man is a miracle of himself, but Trismegistus adds, *Maximum miraculum homo sapiens, a wise man is a wonder: *multi Thirstigeri, *paucli Bacchi.

Alexander when he was presented with that rich and costly casket of king Darius, and every man advised him what to put in it, he reserved it to keep


† Per molum Rism poteris cognoascere stultum. *Offic. 3. c. 9. * Sapientes liberti, multi servi, libertas est potestates, &c.

* Hor. 2. ser. 7. * Juv. “Good people are scarce.”
Democritus to the Reader.

Homer's works, as the most precious jewel of human wit, and yet *Scaliger upbraids Homer's muse, Nutricia insana sapientiae, a nursery of madness, impudent as a court lady, that blushes at nothing.* Jacobus Myecillus, Gilbertus Cognatus, Erasmus, and almost all posterity admire Lucian's luxuriant wit, yet Scaliger rejects him in his censure, and calls him the Cerberus of the muses. Socrates, whom all the world so much magnified, is by Lactantius and Theodoret condemned for a fool. Plutarch extols Seneca's wit beyond all the Greeks, nulli secundus, yet *Seneca saith of himself, "when I would solace myself with a fool, I reflect upon myself, and there I have him." Cardan, in his Sixteenth Book of Subtilties, reckons up twelve super-eminent, acute philosophers, for worth, subtlety, and wisdom: Archimedes, Galen, Vitruvius, Archias Tarentinus, Euclid, Geber, that first inventor of Algebra, Allkindus the Mathematician, both Arabsians, with others. But his triumvir torrærum far beyond the rest, are Ptolomaæus, Plotinus, Hippocrates. Scaliger exerxit. 224, scoffs at this censure of his, calls some of them carpenters and mechanicians, he makes Galen fimbriam Hippocratis, a skirt of Hippocrates: and the said *Cardan himself elsewhere condemns both Galen and Hippocrates for tediousness, obscurity, confusion. Paracelsus will have them both mere idiots, infants in physic and philosophy. Scaliger and Cardan admire Suisset the Calculator, qui pene modum excessit humani ingenii, and yet *Lod. Vives calls them nugas Suisseticas: and Cardan, opposite to himself in another place, contends those ancients in respect of times present, *Majorum nostras ad presentes collatos justé pueros appellari.* In conclusion, the said *Cardan and Saint Bernard will admit none into this catalogue of wise men, but only prophets and apostles: how they esteem themselves, you have heard before. We are worldly-wise, admire ourselves, and seek for applause: but hear Saint Bernard, quanto magis foras es sapientis, tanto magis inus stultus officieris, &c. in omnibus es prudens, circa te ipsum insipientis: the more wise thou art to others, the more fool to thyself. I may not deny but that there is some folly approved, a divine fury, a holy madness, even a spiritual drunkenness in the saints of God themselves; sanctum insaniæm Bernard calls it (though not as blaspheming Vorstius, would infer it as a passion incident to God himself, but), familiar to good men, as that of Paul, 2 Cor. *he was a fool," &c. and Rom. ix. he wisheth himself to be anathematized for them. Such is that drunkenness which Pcinus speaks of, when the soul is elevated and ravished with a divine taste of that heavenly nectar, which poets deciphered by the sacrifice of Dionysius, and in this sense with the poet, *insaniæ bubet, as Austin exhorts us, ad ebrietatem se quique paret, let's be all mad and drunk. But we commonly mistake, and go beyond our commission, we reed to the opposite part, we are not capable of it, *and as he said of the Greeks, vos Græci semper queiri, vos Britanni, Galli, Germani, Itali, &c. you are a company of fools. Proceed now à partibus ad totum, or from the whole to parts, and you shall find no other issue, the parts shall be sufficiently dilated in this following Preface. The whole must needs follow by a sortes or induction. Every multitude is mad, *bellus multorum capitum, (a many-headed beast,) precipitate and rash without judgment, stultum animal, a roaring rout. *Roger Bacon proves it out of Aristotele, Vulgus dividit in oppositum contra sapientes,*
Democritus to the Reader.

quod vulgo videtur verum, falsum est; that which the commonalty accounts true, is most part false, they are still opposite to wise men, but all the world is of this humour (vulgar), and thou thyself art de vulgo, one of the commonalty; and he, and he, and so are all the rest; and therefore, as Phocion concludes, to be approved in nought you say or do, mere idiots and asses. Begin then where you will, go backward or forward, choose out of the whole pack, wink and choose, you shall find them all alike, "never a barrel better herring."

Copernicus, Atlas his successor, is of opinion, the earth is a planet, moves and shines to others, as the moon doth to us. Digges, Gilbert, Keplerus, Origanus, and others, defend this hypothesis of his in sober sadness, and that the moon is inhabited: if it be so that the earth is a moon, then are we also giddy, vertiginous and lunatic within this sublunar maze.

I could produce such arguments till dark night: if you should hear the rest,

"Ante diem clauso component vesper Olympe:"  |  "Through such a train of words if I should run, The day would sooner than the tale be done:

but according to my promise, I will descend to particulars. This melancholy extends itself not to men only, but even to vegetals and sensibles. I speak not of those creatures which are saturnine, melancholy by nature, as lead, and such like minerals, or those plants, rue, cypress, &c. and hellebore itself, of which Agrippa treats, fishes, birds, and beasts, hares, conies, dormice, &c., owls, bats, nightbirds, but that artificial, which is perceived in them all. Remove a plant, it will pine away, which is especially perceived in date trees, as you may read at large in Constantine's husbandry, that antipathy betwixt the vine and the cabbage, vine and oil. Put a bird in a cage, he will die for sullenness, or a beast in a pen, or take his young ones or companions from him, and see what effect it will cause. But who perceives not these common passions of sensible creatures, fear, sorrow, &c. Of all other, dogs are most subject to this malady, insomuch some hold they dream as men do, and through violence of melancholy run mad; I could relate many stories of dogs that have died for grief, and pined away for loss of their masters, but they are common in every author.

Kingdoms, provinces, and politic bodies are likewise sensible and subject to this disease, as Boterus in his politics hath proved at large. "As in human bodies (saith he) there be divers alterations proceeding from humours, so there be many diseases in a commonwealth, which do as diversely happen from several distempers," as you may easily perceive by their particular symptoms. For where you shall see the people civil, obedient to God and princes, judicious, peaceable and quiet, rich, fortunate, and flourish, to live in peace, in unity and concord, a country well tilled, many fair built and populous cities, ubi incolae nitent, as old Cato said, the people are neat, polite and terse, ubi bene, beatique vivunt, which our politicians make the chief end of a commonwealth; and which Aristote Politi. lib. 3, cap. 4, calls Commune bonum, Polybius lib. 6, optabilem et selectum statum, that country is free from melancholy; as it was in Italy in the time of Augustus, now in China, now in many other flourishing kingdoms of Europe. But whereas you shall see many discontent, common grievances, complaints, poverty, barbarism, beggary, plagues, wars, rebellions, seditions, mutinies, contentions, idleness, riot, epicurism, the land lie untilled, waste, full of bogs, fans, deserts, &c., cities decayed, base

* De polita illustr. lib. 1. cap. 4. ut in humanae accuratissimae affectus mutationes corporis, animumque, sic in republica, &c.
* Ubi notus philosophatur. Plato. Lib. de re rust. & Vel publicam utilitatem; sed publica superius lex est. Basta civilis non ubi pauci beat, sed tota civilitas beata. Plato quarto de republica.
and poor towns, villages depopulated, the people squalid, ugly, uncivil; that kingdom, that country, must needs be discontent, melancholy, hath a sick body, and had need to be reformed.

Now that cannot well be effected, till the causes of these maladies be first removed, which commonly proceed from their own default, or some accidental inconvenience: as to be situated in a bad clime, too far north, sterile, in a barren place, as the desert of Lybia, deserts of Arabia, places void of waters, as those of Lop and Belgian in Asia, or in a bad air, as at Alexandretta, Bantam, Pisa, Durazzo, S. John de Ulloa, &c., or in danger of the sea's continual inundations, as in many places of the Low Countries and elsewhere, or near some bad neighbours, as Hungarians to Turks, Podolians to Tartars, or almost any bordering countries, they live in fear still, and by reason of hostile incursions are oftentimes left desolate. So are cities, by reason of wars, fires, plagues, inundations, "wild beasts, decay of trades, barren havens, the sea's violence, as Antwerp may witness of late, Syracuse of old, Brundusium in Italy, Rye and Dover with us, and many that at this day suspect the sea's fury and rage, and labour against it as the Venetians to their inestimable charge.

But the most frequent maladies are such as proceed from themselves, as first when religion and God's service is neglected, innovated or altered, where they do not fear God, obey their prince, where atheism, epicurism, sacrilege, simony, &c., and all such impieties are freely committed, that country cannot prosper. When Abraham came to Gerar, and saw a bad land, he said, sure the fear of God was not in that place. * Cyprian Echovius, a Spanish chorographer, above all other cities of Spain, commends "Borcino, in which there was no beggar, no man poor, &c., but all rich, and in good estate, and he gives the reason, because they were more religious than their neighbours:" why was Israel so often spoiled by their enemies, led into captivity, &c., but for their idolatry, neglect of God's word, for sacrilege, even for one Achan's fault? And what shall we expect that have such multitudes of Achans, church robbers, simoniacl patrons, &c., how can they hope to flourish, that neglect divine duties, that live most part like Epicures?

Other common grievances are generally noxious to a body politic; alteration of laws and customs, breaking privileges, general oppressions, seditions, &c., observed by * Aristotle, Bodin, Boterus, Junius, Arniscus, &c. I will only point at some of the chiefest. * Impotentia gubernandi, ataxia, confusion, ill-government, which proceeds from unskilful, slothful, griping, covetous, unjust, rash, or tyrannizing magistrates, when they are fools, idiots, children, proud, wilful, partial, indiscreet, oppressors, giddy heads, tyrants, not able or unfit to manage such offices: * many noble cities and flourishing kingdoms by that means are desolate, the whole body groans under such heads, and all the members must needs be disaffected, as at this day those goodly provinces in Asia Minor, &c., groan under the burden of a Turkish government; and those vast kingdoms of Muscovia, Russia, * under a tyrannizing duke. Who ever heard of more civil and rich populous countries than those of "Greece, Asia Minor, abounding with all wealth, multitudes of inhabitants, force, power, splendour and magnificence?" and that miracle of countries, the Holy Land, that in so small a compass of ground could maintain so many towns, cities, produce so many fighting men? Egypt another paradise, now barbarous and desert, and

1 Mantua vs misera nimium vicina Cremona. 2 Interdum à feria, ut olim Mauritania, &c. 3 Delidis Hispaniae anno 1604. Nemo mams, nemo pauper, optimus quisque atque dixitimus. Pie sancteque vivebant, summaque cum veneratione et timore, divino cultui, sacratissi, rebus incumbebant. 4 Boterus Polit. lib. 1 c. 1. Cum nempe principis rerum gerendarum imperius, segnis, oscuri, subieque munere immemor, aut fasibus est. 5 Non viscer republca cujus caput infirma. Salisburiensiis, c. 22. 6 See Dr. Fletcher's relation, and Alexander Gagninus' history. 7 Abundans ovans divitiarum affluens incolarum multitudine splendore ac potentia. 8 Not above 200 miles in length, 60 in breadth, according to Adricomus.
almost waste, by the despotical government of an imperious Turk, intolerabili servitutis jugo premitur (one saith) not only fire and water, goods or lands, sed ipse spiritus ab insolentissimi victoris pendet autu, such is their slavery, their lives and souls depend upon his insolent will and command. A tyrant that spoils all wheresoever he comes, insomuch that an 

historian complains, "if an old inhabitant should now see them, he would not know them, if a traveller, or stranger, it would grieve his heart to behold them." Whereas Aristotle notes, Novae exactiones, nova onera imposita, new burdens and exactions daily come upon them, like those of which Zosimus, lib. 2, so grievous, ut viri uxores, patres filios prostituirent ut exactioribus est quibus, &c., they must needs be discontent, his civitatum genitus et ploratus, as Tully holds, hence some complaints and tears of cities, "poor, miserable, rebellions, and desperate subjects, as Hippolitus adds; and as a judicious countryman of ours observed not long since, in a survey of that great Duchy of Tuscany, the people lived much grieved and discontent, as appeared by their manifold and manifest complaints in that kind. "That the state was like a sick body which had lately taken physic, whose humours are not yet well settled, and weakened so much by purging, that nothing was left but melancholy.

Whereas the princes and potentates are immediate in lust, hypocrites, epicures, of no religion, but in shew: Quid hypocrii fragilis? what so brittle and unsure? what sooner subverts their estates than wandering and raging lusts, on their subjects' wives, daughters? to say no worse. That they should facem preferre, lead the way to all virtuous actions, are the ringleaders oftentimes of all mischief and dissolute courses, and by that means their countries are plagued, "and they themselves often ruined, banished, or murdered by conspiracy of their subjects, as Sardanapalus was, Dionysius, junior, Heligabalus, Periander, Pisistratus, Tarquinii, Timocrates, Childericus, Appius Claudius, Andronicus, Galeacus Sforsia, Alexander Medices," &c.

Whereas the princes or great men are malicious, envious, factions, ambitious, emulators, they tear a commonwealth asunder, as so many Guelfs and Gibe-lines disturb the quietness of it, and with mutual murders let it bleed to death; our histories are too full of such barbarous inhumanities, and the miseries that issue from them.

Whereas they be like so many horse-leeches, hungry, griping, corrupt, covetous, avaritia mancipia, ravenous as wolves, for as Tully writes: qui praest prodest, et qui pecudibus praest, debet eorum utilitati insinuare: or such as prefer their private before the public good. For as he said long since, res private publicis semper officere. Or whereas they be illiterate, ignorant, empirics in policy, ubi deest facultas virtus (Aristot. pol. 5, cap. 8.) et scientia, wise only by inheritance, and in authority by birth-right, favour, or for their wealth and titles; there must needs be a fault, a great defect: because as an old philosopher affirms, such men are not always fit. "Of an infinite number, few noble are senators, and of those few, fewer good, and of that small number of honest, good, and noble men, few that are learned, wise, discreet, and sufficient, able to discharge such places, it must needs turn to the confusion of a state."

Romulus Amaseus.  
Sabellicus.  
Sic quis inea vetus, non a meosceret, sic quis parceriis, ingensia 
Pelt. 1. 5. 7. 8. Crudeitas principiorum, impius sedum, violento legem, pecuniai pecuniae publicae, etc.  
Epist.  
De incern. urb. cap. 20. subtilis miseri, roboles, desperati, &c.  
R. Darlington. 1566. conclusio libri.  
Boterss 1. 9. 3. 4. Polit. Quo sit ut aut rebus desperatis excitari, aut conjurationes subditori crucem assimine.  
Lucra ex malis, sedertasiae causa.  
Lucas ex malis, sedertasiae causa.  
Sallust.  
For most part we mistake the name of Politicians, accounting such as read Machiavel and Tacitus, great statesmen, that can dispute of political precepts, supplant and overthrow their adversaries, enrich themselves, get honours, dispense; but what is this to the bene esse, or preservation of a Commonwealth?  
Imperium suapte sponte corruit.  
Aplu.  
Prim. Flor. Ex innumerabilibus, pauci senatorae generi nobilis, & consularibus pauci sunt, & bonis adiutio pauci eruditi.
Democritus to the Reader.

For as the Princes are, so are the people; Qua\lum Rex, talis rex: and which Antagonus right well said of old, qui Macedonia regem erudit, omnes etiam subditos erudit, he that teaches the king of Macedonia, teaches all his subjects, is a true saying still.

"For Princes are the glass, the school, the book; Where subjects' eyes do learn, do read, do look." — Veloxus et citius nos corrupunt vitium eximium domesticum, magnis otium subiectum animos auctoribus.*

Their examples are soonest followed, vices entertained, if they be profane, irreligious, lascivious, riotous, epicures, factious, covetous, ambitious, illiterate, so will the commons most part be, idle, untruths, prone to lust, drunkards, and therefore poor and needy (Quis stans flumina kai kanagias, for poverty begets sedition and villany) upon all occasions ready to mutiny and rebel, discontent still, complaining, murmuring, grudging, apt to all outrages, thefts, treasons, murders, innovations, in debt, shifters, cozeners, outlaws, Profligata famae ac vitce. It was an old politician's aphorism, "They that are poor and bad envy rich, hate good men, abhor the present government, wish for a new, and would have all turned topsy turvy." When Catiline rebelled in Rome, he got a company of such debauched rogues together, they were his familiars and coadjutors, and such have been your rebels most part in all ages, Jack Cade, Tom Straw, Kette, and his companions.

Where they be generally riotous and contentious, where there be many discords, many laws, many lawsuits, many lawyers and many physicians, it is a manifest sign of a distempered, melancholy state, as "Plato long since maintained: for where such kind of men swarm, they will make more work for themselves, and that body politic diseased, which was otherwise sound. A general mischief in these our times, an insensible plague, and never so many of them: "which are now multiplied (saith Mat. Geraldus, a lawyer himself) as so many locusts, not the parents, but the plagues of the country, and for the most part a supercilious, bad, covetous, litigious generation of men. 

Cruentumulga ratio, &c. A purse-milking nation, a clamorous company, gowned vultures, qui ex injuria vivent et sanguine vivum, thieves and seminaries of discord; worse than any polers by the highway side, auri accipitres, auri externae, pecuniarum hamioles, quadruplatores, curiae harpagones, fori tinta nabula, monstra hominum, mangones, &c., that take upon them to make peace, but are indeed the very disturbers of our peace, a company of irreligious harpies, scraping, griping catchpoles, (I mean our common hungry petitioners, rabulus forenses, love and honour in the meantime all good laws, and worthy lawyers, that are so many oracles and pilots of a well-governed commonwealth.) Without art, without judgment, that do more harm, as Livy said, quam bella externa, fames, morbitum, than sickness, wars, hunger, diseases; and cause the most incredible destruction of a commonwealth," saith "Sessellius, a famous civilian sometimes in Paris, as ivy doth by an oak, embrace it so long, until it hath got the heart out of it, so do they by such places they inhabit; no counsel at all, no justice, no speech to be had, nisi eum premulseris, he must be fed still, or else he is as mute as a fish, better open an oyster without a knife. Experto crede (saith Salisburiensis) in manus eorum nullus incidi, et

* Non solum vitia conceilunt ipsi principes, sed etiam infundunt in civitatem, plures exemplo quam peccato nocent. Cic. 1. de legibus. 1 Epist. ad Zen. 2. b. 4. Pauperus seditionem gignit ex maleficium, Arist. Pol. 2. c. 7. 2 Viciosi domestici examples operate more quickly upon us when suggested to our minds by high authorities. 3 Sallust. Semper in civitate quibus opes nullae sunt, bonus invidens, vetera odore, nova exspectant, odio suam rerum mutari omnia petunt. 4 De legibus, prodigat in repub. disciplinae est indicium jurisprudentiarum numerorum, et medicorum copia. 5 In pref. stud. juris. Multiplicantur nunc in terris ut locutae non patriae parentes, sed pestes, pes simi homines, majore parte superierunt, contentos, &c., licet latrocinium exercent. 6 De usu epid. lequeulia turb, vultures togati. 7 Barc. Aren. 8 Jurisdiction Iouis oracul. civitatis. Tully. 9 Lib. 3. 10 Lib. 5. 11 Lib. 1. de rep. Gallorum, incrudelitatem reipub. persicum affrunt. 12 Polyerat. lib.
Democritus to the Reader.

Charron immitis, qui nulli pepercit unquam, hist longe clementior est; "I speak out of experience, I have been a thousand times amongst them, and Charron himself is more gentle than they; *he is contented with his single pay, but they multiply still, they are never satisfied," besides they have damnificas lingus, as he terms it, nisi juxitus argenteis vincias, they must be fed to say nothing, and *get more to hold their peace than we can to say our best. They will speak their clients fair, and invite them to their tables, but as he follows it, "of all injustice there is none so pernicious as that of theirs, when they deceive most, will seem to be honest men." They take upon them to be peacemakers, et fovere causas humilium, to help them to their right, patrocinantur afflicitis, *but all is for their own good, ut loculos plenorum exsquiarint, they plead for poor men gratis, but they are but as a stale to catch others. If there be no jar, *they can make a jar, out of the law itself find still some quirk or other, to set them at odds, and continue causes so long, lustra aliquot, I know not how many years before the cause is heard, and when 'tis judged and determined by reason of some tricks and errors, it is as fresh to begin, after twice seven years some times, as it was at first; and so they prolong time, delay suits till they have enriched themselves, and beggared their clients. And, as Cato inveighed against Isocrates' scholars, we may justly tax our wrangling lawyers, they do consensuere in litibus, are so litigious and busy here on earth, that I think they will plead their client's causes hereafter, some of them in hell. *Simlerus complains amongst the Suissers of the advocates in his time, that when they should make an end, they began controversies, and "protract their causes many years, persuading them their title is good, till their patrimonies be consumed, and that they have spent more in seeking than the thing is worth, or they shall get by the recovery." So that he go to law, as the proverb is, *holds a wolf by the ears, or as a sheep in a storm runs for shelter to a brier, if he prosecute his cause he is consumed, if he successe his suit he loseth all; *what difference? They had wont heretofore, saith Austin, to end matters, per communes arbitros; and so in Switzerland (we are informed by Simlerus), "they had some common arbitrators or daysmen in every town, that made a friendly composition betwixt man and man, and he much wonders at their honest simplicity, that could keep peace so well, and end such great causes by that means. At Fez in Africa, they have neither lawyers nor advocates; but if there be any controversies amongst them, both parties plaintif and defendant come to their Alfskins or chief judge, "and at once without any farther appeals or pitiful delays, the cause is heard and ended." Our forefathers, as a worthy chorographer of ours observs, had wont paucis cruscis auereis, with a few golden crosses, and lines in verse, make all conveyances, assurances. And such was the candour and integrity of succeeding ages, that a deed (as I have often seen) to convey a whole manor, was implicitit contained in some twenty lines or thereabouts; like that secede or Sytala Lononica, so much renowned of old in all contracts, which Tully so earnestly commends to Atticcs, Plutarch in his Lysander, Aristole polit.: Thucydides, lib. 1. Diidorus and Suidas approve and magnify, for that laconic brevity in this kind; and well they might, for, according to Tertullian,
certa sunt paucae, there is much more certainty in fewer words. And so was it of old throughout: but now many skins of parchment will scarce serve turn; he that buys and sells a house, must have a house full of writings, there be so many circumstances, so many words, such tautological repetitions of all particulars, (to avoid cavillation they say;) but we find by our woful experience, that to subtile wits it is a cause of much more contention and variance, and scarce any conveyance so accurately penned by one, which another will not find a crack in, or cavil at; if any one word be misplaced, any little error, all is disannulled. That which is a law to-day, is none to-morrow; that which is sound in one man's opinion, is most faulty to another; that in conclusion, here is nothing amongst us but contention and confusion, we bandy one against another. And that which long since Plutarch complained of them in Asia, may be verified in our times. "These men here assembled, come not to sacrifice to their gods, to offer Jupiter their first-fruits, or merriments to Bacchus; but an yearly disease, exasperating Asia, hath brought them hither, to make an end of their controversies and lawsuits." Tis multitudo perdientium et pereuntium, a destructive rout that seek one another's ruin. Such most part are our ordinary suitors, termers, clients, new stirs every day, mistakes, errors, cavils, and at this present, as I have heard in some one court, I know not how many thousand causes: no person free, no title almost good, with such bitterness in following, so many slights, procrastinations, delays, forgery, such cost (for infinite sums are inconsiderately spent), violence and malice, I know not by whose fault, lawyers, clients, laws, both or all: but as Paul reprehended the Corinthians long since, I may more positively infer now: "There is a fault amongst you, and I speak it to your shame, Is there not a wise man amongst you, to judge between his brethren? but that a brother goes to law with a brother." And Christ's counsel concerning lawsuits, was never so fit to be inculcated as in this age: "Agree with thine adversary quickly," &c. Matth. v. 25.

I could repeat many such particular grievances, which must disturb a body politic. To shut up all in brief, where good government is, prudent and wise princes, there all things thrive and prosper, peace and happiness is in that land: where it is otherwise, all things are ugly to behold, incult, barbarous, uncivil, a paradise is turned to a wilderness. This island amongst the rest, our next neighbours the French and Germans, may be a sufficient witness, that in a short time by that prudent policy of the Romans, was brought from barbarism; see but what Cesar reports of us, and Tacitus of those old Germans, they were once as uncivil as they in Virginia, yet by planting of colonies and good laws, they became from barbarous outlaws, to be full of rich and populous cities, as now they are, and most flourishing kingdoms. Even so might Virginia, and those wild Irish have been civilized long since, if that order had been heretofore taken, which now begins, of planting colonies, &c. I have read a discourse, printed anno 1612. "Discovering the true causes why Ireland was never entirely subdued, or brought under obedience to the crown of England, until the beginning of his Majesty's happy reign." Yet if his reasons were thoroughly scanned by a judicious politician, I am afraid he would not altogether be approved, but that it would turn to the dishonour of our nation, to suffer it to lie so long waste. Yea, and if some travellers should see (to come nearer home) those rich, united provinces of Holland, Zealand &c,

over against us; those neat cities and populous towns, full of most industrious artificers, 'so much land recovered from the sea, and so painfully preserved by those artificial inventions, so wonderfully approved, as that of Bestor in Holland, ut nihil huic per aut simile inventas in toto orbe, saith Bertius the geographer, all the world cannot match it,' so many navigable channels from place to place, made by men's hands, &c. and on the other side so many thousand acres of our fen's lie drowned, our cities thin, and those vile, poor, and ugly to behold in respect of theirs, our trades decayed, our still running rivers stopped, and that beneficial use of transportation, wholly neglected, so many havens void of ships and towns, so many parks and forests for pleasure, barren heaths, so many villages depopulated, &c. I think sure he would find some fault.

I may not deny but that this nation of ours, both bene audire apud exterors, is a most noble, a most flourishing kingdom, by common consent of all 'geographers, historians, politicians, 'tis unia velut arx,' and which Quintius in Livy said of the inhabitants of Peloponnesus, may be well applied to us, we are testudines testa sub inclusi, like so many tortoises in our shells, safely defended by an angry sea, as a wall on all sides. Our island hath many such honourable eulogiums; and as a learned countryman of ours right well hath it, "Ever since the Normans first coming into England, this country both for military matters, and all other of civility, hath been paralleled with the most flourishing kingdoms of Europe and our Christian world," a blessed, a rich country, and one of the fortunate isles: and for some things 'preferred before other countries, for expert seamen, our laborious discoveries, art of navigation, true merchants, they carry the bell away from all other nations, even the Portugals and Hollanders themselves; "without all fear," saith Boterus, "furrowing the ocean winter and summer, and two of their captains, with no less valour than fortune, have sailed round about the world." * We have besides many particular blessings, which our neighbours want, the Gospel truly preached, church discipline established, long peace and quietness free from exactions, foreign fears, invasions, domestical seditions, well manured, fortified by art, and nature, and now most happy in that fortunate union of England and Scotland, which our forefathers have laboured to effect, and desired to see. But in which we excel all others, a wise, learned, religious king, another Numa, a second Augustus, a true Josiah; most worthy senators, a learned clergy, an obedient commonalty, &c. Yet amongst many roses, some thistles grow, some bad weeds and enormities, which much disturb the peace of this body politic, eclipse the honour and glory of it, fit to be rooted out, and with all speed to be reformed.

The first is idleness, by reason of which we have many swarms of rogues, and beggars, thieves, drunkards, and discontented persons (whom Lycurgy in Plutarch calls morbos reipublicae, the boils of the commonwealth), many poor people in all our towns. *Civitates ignobles* "Polydore calls them, base built cities, inglorious, poor, small, rare in sight, ruinous, and thin of inhabitants. Our land is fertile we may not deny, full of all good things, and why doth it not then abound with cities, as well as Italy, France, Germany, the Low-countries because their policy hath been otherwise, and we are not so lively, circum- spect, industrious. Idleness is the malus genus of our nation. For as Boterus justly argues, fertility of a country is not enough, except art and

---

1 As Zelpland, Bestor in Holland, &c.
2 Ordeian, Boterus, Mercator, Merianus, &c.
3 "The italic par excellence." * Jam unde non minus bellior gloria, quam humanitatis eulogior inter florentissimas orbis Christiani gentes inprimis floruit. Camden Brit. de Normannis.
4 Geog. Keeler.
industry be joined unto it, according to Aristotle, riches are either natural or artificial; natural, are good land, fair mines, &c. artificial, are manufactures, coins, &c. Many kingdoms are fertile, but thin of inhabitants, as that Duchi of Piedmont in Italy, which Leander Albertus so much magnifies for corn, wine, fruits, &c., yet nothing near so populous as those which are more barren. "England," saith he, "London only excepted, hath never a populous city, and yet a fruitful country." I find 46 cities and walled towns in Alsatia, a small province in Germany, 50 castles, an infinite number of villages, no ground idle, no not rocky places, or tops of hills are untillled, as Munster informeth us. In 'Greicgea, a small territory on the Necker, 24 Italian miles over, I read of 20 walled towns, innumerable villages, each one containing 150 houses most part, besides castles and noblemen's palaces. I observe in 'Turinge, in Dutchland (twelve miles over by their scale) 12 counties, and in them 144 cities, 2000 villages, 144 towns, 250 castles. In Bavaria, 34 cities, 46 towns, &c. *Portugallia interamnis, a small plot of ground, hath 1460 parishes, 130 monasteries, 200 bridges. Malta, a barren island, yields 20,000 inhabitants. But of all the rest, I admire Lues Guicciardine's relations of the Low-countries. Holland hath 26 cities, 400 great villages. Zeland, 10 cities, 102 parishes. Brabant, 26 cities, 102 parishes. Flanders, 28 cities, 90 towns, 1154 villages, besides abbeys, castles, &c. The Low-countries generally have three cities at least for one of ours, and those far more populous and rich: and what is the cause, but their industry and excellency in all manner of trades? Their commerce, which is maintained by a multitude of tradesmen, so many excellent channels made by art and opportunity havens, to which they build their cities; all which we have in like measure, at at least may have. But their chiefest loadstone which draws all manner of commerce and merchandise, which maintains their present estate, is not fertility of soil, but industry that enricheth them, the gold mines of Peru, or Nova Hispania may not compare with them. They have neither gold nor silver of their own, wine nor oil, or scarce any corn growing in those united provinces, little or no wood, tin, lead, iron, silk, wool, any stuff almost, or metal; and yet Hungary, Transylvania, that brag of their mines, fertile England cannot compare with them. I dare boldly say, that neither France, Tarentum, Apulia, Lombardy, or any part of Italy, Valenti in Spain, or that pleasant Andalusia, with their excellent fruits, wine and oil, two harvests, no not any part of Europe is so flourishing, so rich, so populous, so full of good ships, of well-built cities, so abounding with all things necessary for the use of man. 'Tis our Indies, an epitome of China, and all by reason of their industry, good policy, and commerce. Industry is a loadstone to draw all good things; that alone makes countries flourish, cities populous, 1 and will enforce by reason of much manure, which necessarily follows, a barren soil to be fertile and good, as sheep, saith Dion, mend a bad pasture.

Tell me, politicians, why is that fruitful Palestine, noble Greece, Egypt, Asia Minor, so much decayed, and (mere carcasses now) fallen from that they were? The ground is the same, but the government is altered, the people are grown slothful, idle, their good husbandry, policy, and industry is decayed. *Non fatigata aut effata humus, as Columella well informs Sylvinus, sed nostræ fit inertis, &c. May a man believe that which Aristotle in his politics, Pausanias, Stephanus, Sophianus, Gerbelini relate of old Greece? I find hereto-

---

1. _Anglia_, excepto Londine, nulla est civitas memorabilia, licet ea nation rerum omnia copiá abandet. 2. _Cosmog. Lib. 3. cap. 119._ Villarum non est numerus,nullus locus oculos aut ineminitus. 3. _Chytreus_ ortat. edit. Francfort. 1583. 4. _Magnus Geog._ 5. _Orcellus à Vaseo et Pet. de Medina._ 6. An hundred families in each. 7. Pecuit multitudine diligentia culturâ facundiusolum. _Beter. 1. 8. c. 3._ 8. Ortat. 35. Terra ubi oves stabiluntur optima agiliciis ob sterces. 9. De re rust. 1. 2. cap. 1. The soil is not tired or exhausted, but has become barren through our sloth.
fore 70 cities in Epirus overthrown by Paulus Æmilius, a goodly province in times past, now left desolate of good towns and almost inhabitants. 62 cities in Macedonia in Strabo's time. I find 30 in Laconia, but now scarce so many villages, saith Gerbelius. If any man from Mount Taurus should view the country round about, and see tot delicias, tot turbes per Peloponnesum dispersas, so many delicate and brave built cities with such cost and exquisite cunning, so neatly set out in Peloponnese, he should perceive them now ruinous and overthrown, burnt, waste, desolate, and laid level with the ground. Incredibile dictu, &c. And as he laments, Quis talia fando Temperet a lochrymis? Quis tam durus aut ferreus? (so he prosecutes it.)* Who is he that can sufficiently condole and commiserate these ruins? Where are those 4000 cities of Egypt, those 100 cities in Crete? Are they now come to two? What saith Pliny and Ælian of old Italy? There were in former ages 1166 cities: Blondus and Machiavel, both grant them now nothing near so populous, and full of good towns as in the time of Augustus (for now Leander Albertus can find but 300 at most), and if we may give credit to Livy, not then so strong and puissant as of old: They mustered 70 Legions in former times, which now the known world will scarce yield. Alexander built 70 cities in a short space for his part, our Sultans and Turks demolish twice as many, and leave all desolate. Many will not believe but that our island of Great Britain is now more populous than ever it was; yet let them read Bede, Leland and others, they shall find it most flourished in the Saxton Heptarchy, and in the Conqueror's time was far better inhabited than at this present. See that Domesday Book, and show me those thousands of parishes, which are now decayed, cities ruined, villages depopulated, &c. The lesser the territory is, commonly, the richer it is. Parvus sed bene cultus ager. As those Athenian, Lacedæmonian, Arcadian, Æolian, Sicyonian, Messenian, &c., commonwealths of Greece make ample proof, as those imperial cities and free states of Germany may witness, those Cantons of Switzers, Rheti, Grisons, Walloons, Territories of Tuscany, Luke and Senes of old, Piedmont, Mantua, Venice in Italy, Ragusa, &c.

That prince therefore, as Boterus adviseth, that will have a rich country, and fair cities, let him get him good trades, privileges, painful inhabitants, artificers, and suffer no rude matter unwrought, as tin, iron, wool, lead, &c., to be transported out of his country,—a thing in part seriously attempted amongst us, but not effected. And because industry of men, and multitude of trade so much avails to the ornament and enriching of a kingdom; those ancient Mas-silians would admit no man into their city that had not some trade. Selym the first Turkish emperor procured a thousand good artificers to be brought from Taurus to Constantinople. The Polanders indented with Henry Duke of Anjou, their new chosen king, to bring with him an hundred families of artificers into Poland. James the First, in Scotland (as Buchanan writes), sent for the best artificers he could get in Europe, and gave them great rewards to teach his subjects their several trades. Edward the Third, our most renowned king, to his eternal memory, brought clothing first into this island, transporting some families of artificers from Gaunt hither. How many goodly cities could I reckon up, that thrive wholly by trade, where thousands of inhabitants live singular well by their fingers' ends! As Florence in Italy by making cloth of gold; great Milan by silk, and all curious works; Arras in Artois by those fair hangings; many cities in Spain, many in France, Germany, have none

* Not even the hardest of our foes could bear, Nor stern Ulysses tell without a tear.
other maintenance, especially those within the land. 1 Mecca in Arabia Petraea, stands in a most unfruitful country, that wants water, amongst the rocks (as Vortomannus describes it), and yet it is a most elegant and pleasant city, by reason of the traffic of the east and west. Ormus in Persia is a most famous mart-town, lath nought else but the opportunity of the haven to make it flourish. Corinth, a noble city (Lumen Greciae, Tully calls it) the Eye of Greece, by reason of Conchreas and Lecheus those excellent ports, drew all that traffic of the Ionian and Ægean seas to it; and yet the country about it was curva et superciliosa, as "Strabo terms it, rugged and harsh. We may say the same of Athens, Actium, Thebes, Sparta, and most of those towns in Greece. Nuremberg in Germany is sited in a most barren soil, yet a noble imperial city, by the sole industry of artificers, and cunning trades, they draw the riches of most countries to them, so expert in manufactures, that as Sallust long since gave out of the like, Sedem animae in extremis digitis habent, their soul, or intellectus agens, was placed in their fingers' end; and so we may say of Basil, Spire, Cambray, Frankfort, &c. It is almost incredible to speak what some write of Mexico and the cities adjoining to it, no place in the world at their first discovery more populous, 2 Mat. Riccius, the Jesuit, and some others, relate of the industry of the Chinese most populous countries, not a beggar or an idle person to be seen, and how by that means they prosper and flourish. We have the same means, able bodies, pliant wits, matter of all sorts, wool, flax, iron, tin, lead, wood, &c., many excellent subjects to work upon, only industry is wanting. We send our best commodities beyond the seas, which they make good use of to their necessities, set themselves a work about, and severally improve, sending the same to us back at dear rates, or else make toys and baubles of the tails of them, which they sell to us again, at as great a reckoning as the whole. In most of our cities, some few excepted, like Spanish loiterers, we live wholly by tippling-rooms and ale-houses. Malt- ing are their best ploughs, their greatest traffic to sell ale. 3 Meteran and some others object to us, that we are no whit so industrious as the Hollanders: "Manual trades (saith he) which are more curious or troublesome, are wholly exercised by strangers: they dwell in a sea full of fish, but they are so idle, that they will not catch so much as shall serve their own turns, but buy it of their neighbours." Tush 4 Mare liberum, they fish under our noses, and sell it to us when they have done, at their own prices.

1 Manst. cosn. 1. 5. c. 74. Agro omnium rerum incohendissimo, aqua indigente, inter saxeta, urbs lamen elegantissima, ob Orientis negotiationes et Occidentis.
2 Lib. 5. Geogr. ob asperum situm.
4 Lib. 12. Belg. Hist. non tam laboriosi ut Belga, sed ut Hispani obtinentes vitam ut plurimum citassum agentes; artes manuariae que plurimum habent in se laborios et diligentiores, majorem: requirunt industriae, a pergaminis et exteras exerceantur; habitant in piscissimino mari, inter ea nationem non piscamus quantum inclusa suffecerit, sed a vicinis emere coguntur.
5 Uris ambulis numeroque potus, et robore gentis. Scaliger.
6 Camden.
7 York, Bristow.
8 Norwich, Worcester, &c.
9 M. Gainsford's Argument: Because gentlemen dwell with us in the country
ing buildings, hath been of old in those Norman castles and religious houses,) so rich, thick sited, populous, as in some other countries; besides the reasons Cardan gives, Subtil. Lib. 11. we want wine and oil, their two harvests, we dwell in a colder air, and for that cause must a little more liberally feed of flesh, as all northern countries do: our provisions will not therefore extend to the maintenance of so many; yet notwithstanding we have matter of all sorts, an open sea for traffic, as well as the rest, goodly havens. And how can we excuse our negligence, our riot, drunkennes, &c., and such enormities that follow it? We have excellent laws enacted, you will say, severe statutes, houses of correction, &c., to small purpose it seems; it is not houses will serve, but cities of correction; *our trades generally ought to be reformed, wants supplied. In other countries they have the same grievances, I confess, but that do not excuse us, +want, defects, enormities, idle drones, tumults, discords, contention, law-suits, many laws made against them to repress those immeasurable brawls and law-suits, excess in apparel, diet, decay of tillage, depopulations,* especially against rogues, beggars, Egyptian vagabonds (so termed at least) which have swarmed all over Germany, France, Italy, Poland, as you may read in *Munster, Cranzius, and Aventinus; as those Tartars and Arabsians at this day do in the eastern countries: yet such has been the iniquity of all ages, as it seems to small purpose. Nemo in nostris civitatibus mendicis esto; +saith Plato; he will have them purged from a 1 commouwealth, "as a bad humour from the body," that are like so many ulcers and boils, and must be cured before the melancholy body can be eas'd.

What Carolus Magnus, the Chinese, the Spaniards, the Duke of Saxony, and many other states have decreed in this case, read Arnisseus, cap. 19; Boterus, libro 8, cap. 2; Osorius de Rebus gest. Eman. lib. 11. When a country is overstocked with people, as a pasture is oft overlaid with cattle, they had wont in former times to disburden themselves, by sending out colonies, or by wars, as those old Romans; or by employing them at home about some public buildings, as bridges, road-ways, for which those Romans were famous in this island; as Augustus Cesar did in Rome, the Spaniards in their Indian mines, as at Potosi in Peru, where some 30,000 men are still at work, 6000 furnaces ever boiling, &c. +aqueducts, bridges, havens, those stupend works of Trajan, Claudius, at +Ostium, Diosclesi, Fucinus Lacus, that Piraeum in Athens, made by Themistocles, amphitheatrams of curious marble, as at Verona, Civitas Philipp, and Heraclea in Thrace, those Appian and Flaminian ways, prodigious works all may witness; and rather than they should be +idle, as those +Egyptian Pharaohs, Maris, and Sesostris did, to task their subjects to build unnecessary pyramids, obelisks, labyrinths, channels, lakes, gigantic works all, to divert them from rebellion, riot, drunkenness, +Quo scilicet alantur, et ne vagando laborare desescent.

Another eye sore is that want of conduct and navigable rivers, a great blemish as +Boterus, +Hippolitus a Collibus, and other politicians hold, if it be villages our cities are less, is nothing to the purpose; put three hundred or four hundred villages in a shire, and every village yield a gentleman, what is four hundred families to increase one of our cities, or to contend with theirs, which stand thicker? And whereas ours usually consist of seven thousand, theirs consist of forty thousand inhabitants. +Maxima pars victis in carne consistit. Polyd. Lib. 1. Hist. § Retinens monopoli licentiam, frangere alantur ote, redintegratur agricultiae, laniificium instauratur, ut sit honestum negatum quo se exercet otiosa illa turba. Nisi his maleficiantur, frustra exercit justitiam. Mor. Utop. Lib. 1. +Mancipiis locupletes eget aereis Cappadoceam rex. Hor. +Regia dignatissimae non est exercere imperium in mendicis sed in opulentis. Non est regii desus, sed carceris esse custos. Tamen, +Colliarum hominum miscibles exercit soli, immundi vestes habiti vanit, horti impressa ari. +Cos. mag. lib. 3. cap. 5. +45 "Let no one in our city be a beggar." +Seneca. Haud minus turpia principi multa supplicia, quam medici multa funera. +AEpitumam et talem un corpore (11 de legg.) omnes vult exterminari. +See Lipan in Abr. Eximia. +De quo seict. +Curaque et phil. +Put script. simul et ignorantiam exercerunt, opificia condiscantur, tenuas subverterunt. Bodin. 1. 6. 2. num. 6. 7. +Amasis. +Egypt rex legem promulgavit, ut omnes subditis quotannis rationem reddenter unde vivent. +Busckius discurs. polit. cap. 2. "whereby they are supported, and do not become vagabonds by being less accustomed to labour." +Lib. 1. de incens. URB. cap. 6. +Cap. 5. de incen. urb. Quas damnum, lacus aut mare aliqui.
neglected in a commonwealth. Admirable cost and charge is bestowed in the Low-countries on this behalf, in the duchy of Milan, territory of Padua, in France, Italy, China, and so likewise about corrivations of water to moisten and refresh barren grounds, to drain fens, bogs, and moors. Massinissa made many inward parts of Barbary and Numidia in Africa, before his time ineult and horrid, fruitful and bartable by this means. Great industry is generally used all over the eastern countries in this kind, especially in Egypt, about Babylon and Damascos, as Vertomannus and *Gotarius Arthus relate; about Barcelona, Segovia, Murcia, and many other places of Spain, Milan in Italy; by reason of which their soil is much impoverished, and infinite commodities arise to the inhabitants.

The Turks of late attempted to cut that Isthmus betwixt Africa and Asia, which *Sesostris and Darius, and some Pharaohs of Egypt had formerly undertaken, but with ill success, as *Diodorus Siculus records, and Pliny, for that Red-sea being three 3 cubits higher than Egypt, would have drowned all the country, 

"cepto destiterant," they left off; yet as the same *Diodorus writes, Ptolemy renewed the work many years after, and absolved it in a more opportune place.

That Isthmus of Corinth was likewise undertaken to be made navigable by Demetrius, by Julius Caesar, Nero, Domitian, Herodes Atticus, to make a speedy 6 passage, and less dangerous, from the Ionian and Egean seas; but because it could not be so well affected, the Peloponnesians built a wall like our Picts' wall about Schenute, where Neptune's temple stood, and in the shortest cut out over the Isthmus, of which Diodorus, lib. 11. Herodotus, lib. 8. Vran. Our latter writers call it Hexamilium, which Amurath the Turk demolished, the Venetians, anno 1453, repaired in 15 days with 30,000 men. Some, saith Acosta, would have a passage cut from Panama to Nombre de Dios in America; but Thuanus and Serres the French historians speak of a famous aqueduct in France, intended in Henry the Fourth's time, from the Loire to the Seine, and from Rhodanus to the Loire. The like to which was formerly assayed by Domitian the emperor, 4 from Aru to Moselle, which Cornelius Tacitus speaks of in the 13th of his Annals, after by Charles the Great and others. Much cost hath in former times been bestowed in either new making or mending channels of rivers, and their passages, (as Aurelianus did by Tiber to make it navigable to Rome, to convey corn from Egypt to the city, vadum alvei tumentis effodit saith Vopiscns, et Tiberis ripas extruxit, he cut fords, made banks, &c.) decayed havens, which Claudius the emperor, with infinite pains and charges, attempted at Ostia, as I have said, the Venetians at this day to preserve their city; many excellent means to enrich their territories, have been fostered, invented in most provinces of Europe, as planting some Indian plants amongst us, silk-worms, 9 the very mulberry leaves in the plains of Granada yield 30,000 crowns per annum to the king of Spain's coffers, besides those many trades and artificers that are busied about them in the kingdom of Granada, Murcia, and all over Spain. In France a great benefit is raised by salt, &c., whether these things might not be as happily attempted with us, and with like success, it may be controverted, silk-worms (I mean), vines, fir trees, &c. Cardan exhorts Edward the Sixth to plant olives, and is

---

8 Incredibilem commoditatem, vesteri mercium tres fluvii navigabiles, &c. Boetius de Gallia. 6 Herodotus. 7 Ind. Orient. cap. 2. Rotan in medio tiumne constituit, cum ex pollibus salinarum cunes uterque appendit, hi dam rota movetur, aquam per canales, &c. 9 Centum pedes lata fossa, 30. alta. 4 Contrary to that of Archimedes, who holds the superficies of all waters even. 9 Lib. 1. cap. 3. 6 Dion. Pausanias, et Nic. Gerbulina. Munster. Coms. Lib. 4. cap. 59. Ut brevior foret navigatio et minus pericloso. 6 Charles the Great went about to make a channel from the Rhine to the Danube. Eil. Pir. kimeras descript. Ger. the rains are yet seen about Wesenbourg from Rednich to Altilm. Ut navigabilia inter se Occidentis et Septentrionalis litora gerunt. 9 Maginus Geogr. Similares de rep. Helvet.
fully persuaded they would prosper in this island. With us, navigable rivers are most part neglected; our streams are not great, I confess, by reason of the narrowness of the island, yet they run smoothly and even, not headlong, swift, or amongst rocks and shelves, as foaming Rhodanus and Loire in France, Tigris in Mesopotamia, violent Durus in Spain, with cataracts and whirlpools, as the Rhine, and Danubius, about Shaflhausen, Lauenburgh, Linz, and Cremes, to endanger navigators; or broad shallow, as Neckar in the Palatinate, Tibris in Italy; but calm and fair as Arar in France, Hebrus in Macedonia, Eurotas in Lacedaemon, they gently glide along, and might as well be repaired many of them (I mean Wye, Trent, Ouse, Thamesis at Oxford, the defect of which we feel in the mean time) as the River of Lee fromWare to London. B. Atwater of old, or as some will Henry L., made a channel from Trent to Lincoln, navigable; which now, saith Mr. Camden, is decayed, and much mention is made of anchors, and such like monuments found about old *Verulamium, good ships have formerly come to Exeter, and many such places, whose channels, havens, ports, are now barred and rejected. We contain this benefit of carriage by waters, and are therefore compelled in the inner parts of this island, because portage is so dear, to eat up our commodities ourselves, and live like so many boars in a sty, for want of vent and utterance.

We have many excellent havens, royal havens, Falmouth, Portsmouth, Milford, &c. equivalent if not to be preferred to that Indian Havanna, old Brundusium in Italy, Aulis in Greece, Ambracia in Acarnia, Suda in Crete, which have few ships in them, little or no traffic or trade, which have scarce a village on them, able to bear great cities, sed viderint politician. I could here justly tax many other neglects, abuses, errors, defects among us, and in other countries, depopulations, riot, drunkenness, &c. and many such, quae nunae in aurem susurrare non libet. But I must take heed, ne quid gravius dieam, that I do not overlook myself, Sus Minervam, I am forth of my element, as you peradventure suppose; and sometimes veritas odium porit, as he said, "ver juice and oatmeal is good for a parrot." For as Lucian said of an historian, I say of a politician. He that will freely speak and write, must be for ever no subject, under no prince or law, but lay out the matter truly as it is, not caring what any can, will, like or dislike.

We have good laws, I deny not, to rectify such enormities, and so in all other countries, but it seems not always to good purpose. We had need of some general visitor in our age, that should reform what is amiss; a just army of Rosie-crosse men, for they will amend all matters (they say), religion, policy, manners, with arts, sciences, &c. Another Attila, Tamerlane, Hercules, to strive with Achelous, Augus stabulum purgare, to subdue tyrants, as he did Diomedes and Busiris: to expel thieves, as he did Cacus and Lacinious: to vindicate poor captives, as he did Hesione: to pass the torrid zone, the deserts of Lybia, and purge the world of monsters and Centaurs: or another Theban Crates to reform our manners, to compose quarrels and controversies, as in his time he did, and was therefore adored for a god in Athens. "As Hercules purged the world of monsters, and subdued them, so did he fight against envy, lust, anger, avarice, &c. and all those feral vices and monsters of the mind." It were to be wished we had some such visitor, or if wishing would serve, one had such a ring or rings, as Timolaus desired in Lucian, by virtue of which he should be as strong as 10,000 men, or an army of giants, go invisible, open gates and castle doors, have what treasure he would, trans-
Democritus to the Reader.

port himself in an instant to what place he desired, alter affections, cure all manner of diseases, that he might range over the world, and reform all distressed states and persons, as he would himself. He might reduce those wandering Tartars in order, that infest China on the one side, Muscovy, Poland, on the other; and tame the vagabond Arabians that rob and spoil those eastern countries, that they should never use more caravans, or janizaries to conduct them. He might root out barbarism out of America, and fully discover Terra Australia Incognita, find out the north-east and north-west passages, drain those mighty Meotian fens, cut down those vast Hircinian woods, irrigate those barren Arabian deserts, &c. cure us of our epidemical diseases, scorbustum, plica, morbus Neapolitanus, &c. end all our idle controversies, cut off our tumultuous desires, inordinate lusts, root out atheism, impiety, heresy, schism, and superstition, which now so crucify the world, catechise gross ignorance, purge Italy of luxury and riot, Spain of superstition and jealonsy, Germany of drunkenness, all our northern country of gluttony and intemperance, castigate our hard-hearted parents, masters, tutors; lash disobedient children, negligent servants, correct these spendthrifts and prodigal sons, enforce idle persons to work, drive drunkards off the alehouse, repress thieves, visit corrupt and tyrannizing magistrates, &c. But as L. Licinius taxed Timolus, you may us. These are vain, absurd and ridiculous wishes not to be hoped: all must be as it is, Bocchalinus may cite commonwealths to come before Apollo, and seek to reform the world itself by commissioners, but there is no remedy, it may not be redressed, desinent homines tum demum stultescere quando esse desinent, so long as they can wag their beards, they will play the knaves and fools.

Because, therefore, it is a thing so difficult, impossible, and far beyond Hercules' labours to be performed; let them be rude, stupid, ignorant, insultr, lapsus lapsidem sedet, and as the apostoler will, resp. tussi, et gravedentia laboret, mundus et victa, let them be barbarous as they are, let them "tyrannize, epicurize, oppress, luxuriate, consume themselves with factions, superstitions, lawsuits, wars and contentions, live in riot, poverty, want, misery; rebel, wallow as so many swine in their own dung, with Ulysses’ companions, stultos jubeo esse libenter. I will yet, to satisfy and please myself, make an Utopia of mine own, a new Atlantis, a poetical commonwealth of mine own, in which I will freely domineer, build cities, make laws, statutes, as I list myself. And why may I not— Pictoribus atque poetis, &c. You know what liberty poets ever had, and besides, my predecessor Democritus was a polititian, a recorder of Abdera, a law maker as some say; and why may not I presume so much as he did? Howsoever I will adventure. For the site, if you will needs urge me to it, I am not fully resolved, it may be in Terra Australis Incognita, there is room enough (for of my knowledge neither that hungry Spaniard, nor Mercurius Britannicus, have yet discovered half of it) or else one of those floating islands in Mare del Zur, which like the Cynian isles in the Euxine sea, alter their place, and are accessible only at set times, and to some few persons; or one of the Fortunate isles, for who knows yet where, or which they are? there is room enough in the inner parts of America, and northern coasts of Asia. But I will choose a site, whose latitude shall be 45 degrees (I respect not minutes) in the midst of the temperate zone, or perhaps under the equator, that paradise of the world, ubi semper vinres laurus, &c. where is a perpetual spring; the longitude for some reasons I will conceal. Yet "be it known to all men by these presents," that if any honest gentleman will send in so much money, as Cardan allows an astrologer for casting a nativity, he shall be a sharer, I will acquaint him with my project, or if any
worthy man will stand for any temporal or spiritual office or dignity, (for as he said of his archbishopric of Utopia, 'tis sanctus ambitus, and not amiss to be sought after,) it shall be freely given without all intercessions, bribes, letters, &c. his own worth shall be the best spokesman; and because we shall admit of no deputies or advowsons, if he be sufficiently qualified, and as able as willing to execute the place himself, he shall have present possession. It shall be divided into 12 or 13 provinces, and those by hills, rivers, road-ways, or some more eminent limits exactly bounded. Each province shall have a metropolis, which shall be so placed as a centre almost in a circumference, and the rest at equal distances, some 12 Italian miles asunder, or thereabout, and in them shall be sold all things necessary for the use of man; statis levis et dictus, no market towns, markets or fairs, for they do but beggar cities (no village shall stand above 6, 7, or 8 miles from a city) except those emporiums which are by the sea side, general staples, marts, as Antwerp, Venice, Bergen of old, London, &c. cities most part shall be situated upon navigable rivers or lakes, creeks, havens; and for their form, regular, round, square, or long square, with fair, broad, and straight streets, houses uniform, built of brick and stone, like Bruges, Brussels, Rhegnum Lepidi, Berne in Switzerland, Milan, Mantua, Crema, Cambalu in Tartary, described by M. Polus, or that Venetian palma. I will admit very few or no suburbs, and those of baser building, walls only to keep out man and horse, except it be in some frontier towns, or by the sea side, and those to be fortified after the latest manner of fortification, and situated upon convenient havens, or opportune places. In every so built city, I will have convenient churches, and separate places to bury the dead in, not in churchyards; a citadella (in some, not all) to command it, prisons for offenders, opportune market places of all sorts, for corn, meat, cattle, fuel, fish, commodious courts of justice, public halls for all societies, bourses, meeting places, armories, in which shall be kept engines for quenching of fire, artillery gardens, public walks, theatres, and spacious fields allotted for all gymnastic sports, and honest recreations, hospitals of all kinds, for children, orphans, old folks, sick men, mad men, soldiers, pest houses, &c. not built precariò, or by gouty benefactors, who, when by fraud and rapine they have extorted all their lives, oppressed whole provinces, societies, &c. give something to pious uses, build a satisfactory alms-house, school or bridge, &c. at their last end or before perhaps, which is no otherwise than to steal a goose, and stick down a feather, rob a thousand to relieve ten; and those hospitals so built and maintained, not by collections, benevolences, donaries, for a set number, (as in ours,) just so many and no more at such a rate, but for all those who stand in need, be they more or less, and that ex publico aerario, and so still maintained, non nobis solòm nati sumus, &c. I will have conduits of sweet and good water, aptly disposed in each town, common granaries, as at Dresden in Misnia, Stetein in Pomerland, Norembeg, &c. Colleges of mathematicians, musicians, and actors, as of old at Labedum in Ionia, alchemists, physicians, artists, and philosophers; that all arts and sciences may sooner be perfected and better learned; and public historiographers, as amongst those ancient Persians, qui in commentariis referebant quae memoratur digna geregabantur, informed and appointed by the state to register all famous acts, and not by each insufficient scribbler, partial or parasitical pedant, as in our times. I will provide public schools of all kinds, singing, dancing, fencing, &c. especially of grammar and languages, not to be taught by those tedious precepts ordinarily used, but by use, example,
conversation,¹ as travellers learn abroad, and nurses teach their children: as I will have all such places, so will I ordain "public governors, fit officers to each place, treasurers, ediles, questors, overseers of pupils, widows' goods, and all public houses, &c. and those once a year to make strict accounts of all receipts, expenses, to avoid confusion, et sic fiat ut non absuant (as Pliny to Trajan,) "good praise dicere. They shall be subordinate to those higher officers and governors of each city, which shall not be poor tradesmen, and mean artificers, but noblemen and gentlemen, which shall be tied to residence in those towns they dwell next, at such set times and seasons: for I see no reason (which *Hippolitus complains of) "that it should be more dishonourable for noblemen to govern the city than the country, or unseemly to dwell there now, than of old." ⁷ I will have no bogs, fens, marshes, vast woods, deserts, heaths, commons, but all inclosed; (yet not depopulated, and therefore take heed you mistake me not) for that which is common, and every man's, is no man's; the richest countries are still inclosed, as Essex, Kent, with us, &c. Spain, Italy; and where inclosures are least in quantity, they are best *husbanded, as about Florence in Italy, Damascus in Syria, &c. which are liker gardens than fields. I will not have a barren acre in all my territories, not so much as the tops of mountains: where nature fails, it shall be supplied by art: "lakes and rivers shall not be left desolate. All common highways, bridges, banks, corrivations of waters, aqueducts, channels, public works, building, &c. out of a *common stock, curiously maintained and kept in repair; no depopulations, engrossings, alternations of wood, arable, but by the consent of some supervisors that shall be appointed for that purpose, to see what reformation ought to be had in all places, what is amiss, how to help it, et quid queque ferat regio, et quid quaque recuset, what ground is aptest for wood, what for corn, what for cattle, gardens, orchards, fishponds, &c. with a charitable division in every village, (not one domineering house greedily to swallow up all, which is too common with us) what for lords, *what for tenants; and because they shall be better encouraged to improve such lands they hold, manure, plant trees, drain, fence, &c., they shall have long leases, a known rent, and known fine to free them from those intolerable exactions of tyrannizing landlords. These supervisors shall likewise appoint what quantity of land in each manor is fit for the lord's demesnes,*what for holding of tenants, how it ought to be husbanded, ut *magnis est eqvis, Minyce gens cognitum remis, how to be manured, tilled, rectified, *his segetes veniam, illic fieicidum uve, arborei fetus albi, atque injussa virescant Gramina, and what proportion is fit for all callings, because private professors are many times idiots, ill husbands, oppressors, covetous, and know not how to improve their own, or else wholly respect their own, and not public good. Utopian parity is a kind of government, to be wished for, ¹ rather than effected, Rospub. Christianopolitana, Campanella's city of the Sun, and that new Atlantis, witty fictions, but mere chimeras and Plato's community in many

¹So Lod. Vives thinks best, Comminus, and others. * Plato 3. de legg. Ediles creari vult, qui fora, fontes, vías, portus, plateas, et il querus alla procurant. Vide Isocratum Fontaneum de civ. Amstel. hee omnia, &c. Gotardum et alios. ² De Isocr. utr. cap. 15. Isocrat fatores me non intelligere cur ignobilis sit urbes bene minus coire non quam olim, ant case rusticæ proresse quoniam quod. Idem Ubertus Foliot, de Neapoli. ³ Ne tantulum quidem solet neculum relinquatur, ut veniam in populum quiem gebe in regiusrubus serviam in incolumitate requirat. Marcus Haeminius Augustanus de regno Chinae, 1. 1. e. 3. ⁴ M. Cicero, in his survey of Cornwall, saith: that before that country was inclosed, the husbandmen drank water, did cart-lades or no bread, fol. 66. ib. 1. their apparel was coarse, they went bare-legged, their dwelling was correspondent; but since inclosure, they live decently, and have money to spend (fol. 23); when their fields were common, their wool was coarse, Cornish hair; but since inclosure, it is almost as good as Cotswol, and their soil much mended. Tassor, cap. 52. of his husbandry, is of his opinion, one acre inclosed, is worth three common. The country inclosed 1 prize; the other delightful not me, for nothing of wealth it doth relate, &c. *Marcus Eusebius expedit. in Sinus, 1. l. c. 2. *To this purpose, Arist. polit. 2. c. 6. allows a third part of their revenues, Hippomedon half. ⁷ *Ita lex Agraria olim Romae. ² He segetes, illic veniam felicis, Arcorei fetus albi, atq; injussa virescant Gramina, Virg. 1. Georg. ³ Lucanus, 1. 6. ⁴Virg. ⁵ Joh. Valunt. Andreas, Lord Verulam.
things is impious, absurd and ridiculous, it takes away all splendour and magnificence. I will have several orders, degrees of nobility, and those hereditary, not rejecting younger brothers in the mean time, for they shall be sufficiently provided for by pensions, or so qualified, brought up in some honest calling, they shall be able to live of themselves. I will have such a proportion of ground belonging to every barony, he that buys the land shall buy the barony, he that by riot consumes his patrimony, and ancient deemes, shall forfeit his honours. As some dignities shall be hereditary, so some again by election, or by gift (besides free offices, pensions, annuities,) like our bishoprics, prebends, the Bosso's palaces in Turkey, the procurator's houses and offices in Venice, which, like the golden apple, shall be given to the worthiest, and best deserving both in war and peace, as a reward of their worth and good service, as so many goals for all to aim at, (honos alit artes) and encouragements to others. For I hate these severe, unnatural, harsh, German, French, and Venetian decrees, which exclude plebeians from honours, be they never so wise, rich, virtuous, valiant, and well qualified, they must not be patricians, but keep their own rank, this is nature bellum inferre, odious to God and men, I abhor it. My form of government shall be monarchical.

* * *

"Quam libertas gratior extat,
Quam sub Rege pio," &c.

Few laws, but those severely kept, plainly put down, and in the mother tongue, that every man may understand. Every city shall have a peculiar trade or privilege, by which it shall be chiefly maintained: and parents shall teach their children one of three at least, bring up and instruct them in the mysteries of their own trade. In each town these several tradesmen shall be so aptly disposed, as they shall free the rest from danger or offence: fire-trades, as smiths, forge-men, brewers, bakers, metal-men, &c., shall dwell apart by themselves: dyers, tanners, felmongers, and such as use water in convenient places by themselves: noisome or fulsive for bad smells, as butchers' slaughter-houses, chandlers, curriers, in remote places, and some back lanes. Fraternities and companies, I approve of, as merchants' houses, colleges of druggists, physicians, musicians, &c., but all trades to be rated in the sale of wares, as our clerks of the market do bakers and brewers; corn itself, what scarcity soever shall come, not to exceed such a price. Of such wares as are transported or brought in, if they be necessary, commodious, and such as nearly concern man's life, as corn, wood, coal, &c., and such provision we cannot want, I will have little or no custom paid, no taxes; but for such things as are for pleasure, delight, or ornament, as wine, spice, tobacco, silk, velvet, cloth of gold, lace, jewels, &c., a greater impost. I will have certain ships sent out for new discoveries every year, and some discreet men appointed to travel into all neighbouring kingdoms by land, which shall observe what artificial inventions and good laws are in other countries, customs, alterations, or aught else, concerning war or peace, which may tend to the common good. Ecclesiastical discipline, penes Episcopos, subordinate as the other. No impoverishments, no lay patrons of church livings, or one private man, but common societies, corporations, &c., and those rector of benefices to be chosen out of the Universities, examined and approved, as the litterati in China. No parish to contain above a thousand auditors. If it were possible, I would have such priests as should

* See Contarens and Osorins de rebus gestis Emannuelis. * See Contarens and Osorins de rebus gestis Emannuelis.

---

"So is it in the kingdom of Naples and France."

---

"Clandian 1. 7. " Liberty never is more gratifying than under a pious king."

---


---

"Hippol. 3 collibus de increm. urb. c. 20. Plato idem 7. de legibus, quae ad vitam necessaria, et quibus carere non possimus, nihil dependit vestigial, &c. "

---

"Plato 12 de legibus, 10 annos natos vult, ut si quis memorabile videre tam exterior, hoc ipsum in requip. receptatur. "

---
imitate Christ, charitable lawyers should love their neighbours as themselves, temperate and modest physicians, politicians contemn the world, philosophers should know themselves, noblemen live honestly, tradesmen leave lying and cozening, magistrates, corruption, &c., but this is impossible, I must get such as I may. I will therefore have of lawyers, judges, advocates, physicians, chirurgeons, &c., a set number, "and every man, if it be possible, to plead his own cause, to tell that tale to the judge which he doth to his advocate, as at Fez in Africa, Bantam, Aleppo, Ragusa, suam quisque causam dicere tenetur. Those advocates, chirurgeons, and physicians, which are allowed to be maintained out of the common treasury, no fees to be given or taken upon pain of losing their places; or if they do, very small fees, and when the cause is fully ended. He that sues any man shall put in a pledge, which if it be proved he hath wrongfully sued his adversary, rashly or maliciously, he shall forfeit, and lose. Or else before any suit begin, the plaintiff shall have his complaint approved by a set delegation to that purpose; if it be of moment he shall be suffered as before, to proceed, if otherwise, they shall determine it. All causes shall be pleaded supresso nomine, the parties' names concealed, if some circumstances do not otherwise require. Judges and other officers shall be aptly disposed in each province, villages, cities, as common arbitrators to hear causes, and end all controversies, and those not single, but three at least on the bench at once, to determine or give sentence, and those again to sit by turns or lots, and not to continue still in the same office. No controversy to depend above a year, but without all delays and further appeals to be speedily dispatched, and finally concluded in that time allotted. These and all other inferior magistrates to be chosen as the literati in China, or by those exact suffrages of the Venetians, and such again not to be eligible, or capable of magistracies, honours, offices, except they be sufficiently qualified for learning, manners, and that by the strict approbation of reputed examiners: first scholars to take place, then soldiers; for I am of Vigeius his opinion, a scholar deserves better than a soldier, because Unitis aetatis sunt que fortiter fiunt, quo vero pro utilitate Reipub. scribuntur, cetera: a soldier's work lasts for an age, a scholar's for ever. If they misbehave themselves, they shall be deposed, and accordingly punished, and whether their offices be annual or otherwise, once a year they shall be called in question, and give an account; for men are partial and passionate, merciless, covetous, corrupt, subject to love, hate, fear, favour, &c., omne sub regno graviore regnum: like Solon's Areopagites, or those Roman Censors, some shall visit others, and be visited inveniems themselves, they shall oversee that no prowling officer, under colour of authority, shall insult over his inferiors, as so many wild beasts, oppress, domineer, flee, grim, or trample on, be partial or corrupt, but that there be aequabili jus, justice equally done, live as friends and brethren together; and which Seselius would have and so much desires in his kingdom of France, "a diapason and sweet harmony of kings,

---

60 Democritus to the Reader.

---

6 Similaris in Helvetia.

6 Utopienses cascadissse excludunt, qui causas calloa et vade tractant et disputant. Iniquissimos censeant hominem ullis obiur legibus, qui aut numerosos sunt, quin ut perlegatur, aut obscurorum quin ut a quo quis possit intelligi. Vident ut suam quiasque causam agat, quam; referat Judicem quia narraturus fuerit patrem; sic minus erit amagium, et velitas faciatis eticiar. Mor. Utop. 1. 2.

6 Medici ex publico victum sumunt. Boter. 1. c. 5. de Egyptis. 6 De his legis Patrit. 1. 3. tit. 8. de roip. Instit. 6 Nihil ad clientibus patroni accipiant, prorsum ista finita est. Bard. Argen. lib. 3.

6 It is so in most free cities in Germany. 6 Mat. Ricius expedit. in Simus, 1. c. 5. de examinacione eletorum copioso agit, &c.

6 Contar. de regip. Venet. 1. 1.

6 Om. in literis maximis progressus fecerint maximis honoribus affictitur, secundum honoris gratus militibus assignatur, postremi ordinis mechanici, doctorum hominum judicis in altore locum quisque praferunt, et qui a plurimos approbarint, ampliores in reg. dignitas consequitur. Qui in hoc examino primas habet, insigni per totam vitam dignitatem insignitur, marchesio similis, suae apudBoeotiae sedis, sedis sedem habet. 6 Cedant arma togae. 6 As in Berne, Lucerne, Friburgo in Switzerland, a vicious liver is uncapable of any office; if a Senator, instantly deposed. Similaris. Not above three years, Arist. polit. 3. c. 8.

6 Nam quis custodiet ipsos custodes? 6 Cyprianus in Creesia. Quo non ex sublatis despectant inferioribus, ut bestias concubent silis subditos, auctoritatis nomini confici, &c.

princes, nobles, and plebeians so mutually tied and involved in love, as well as laws and authority, as that they never disagree, insult or encroach one upon another." If any man deserve well in his office he shall be rewarded.

" quis eum virtutem amplectit uram,
Proemii si tollas?" —

He that invents anything for public good in any art or science, writes a treatise, or performs any noble exploit, at home or abroad, shall be accordingly enriched, honoured, and preferred. I say with Hannibal in Ennius, Hostem qui foriat erit mibi Carthaginensis, let him be of what condition he will, in all offices, actions, he that deserves best shall have best.

Tilianus in Philonius, out of a charitable mind no doubt, wished all his books were gold and silver, jewels and precious stones, to redeem captives, set free prisoners, and relieve all poor distressed souls that wanted means; religiously done, I deny not, but to what purpose? Suppose this were so well done, within a little after, though a man had Cresus' wealth to bestow, there would be as many more. Wherefore I will suffer no beggars, rogues, vagabonds, or idle persons at all, that cannot give an account of their lives how they maintain themselves. If they be impotent, lame, blind, and single, they shall be sufficiently maintained in several hospitals, built for that purpose; if married and in firm, past work, or by inevitable loss, or some such like misfortune cast behind, by distribution of corn, house-rent free, annual pensions or money, they shall be relieved, and highly rewarded for their good service they have formerly done; if able, they shall be enforced to work. "For I see no reason (as he said) why an epicure or idle drone, a rich glutton, a usurer, should live at ease and do nothing, live in honour, in all manner of pleasures, and oppress others, when as in the meantime a poor labourer, a smith, a carpenter, an husbandman that hath spent his time in continual labour, as an ass to carry burdens to do the common wealth good, and without whom we cannot live, shall be left in his old age to beg or starve, and lead a miserable life worse than a jument." As all conditions shall be tied to their task, so none shall be over-tired, but have their set times of recreations and holidays, indulgere genio, feasts and merry meetings, even to the meanest artificer, or basest servant, once a week to sing or dance, (though not all at once) or do whatsoever he shall please; like that Saccarum festum amongst the Persians, those Saturdays in Rome, as well as his master. If any be drunk, he shall drink no more wine or strong drink in a twelvemonth after. A bankrupt shall be Cato in Amphitheatro, publicly shamed, and he that cannot pay his debts, if by riot or negligence, he have been impoverished, shall be for a twelvemonth imprisoned, if in that space his creditors be not satisfied, he shall be hanged. He that...
commits sacrilege shall lose his hands; he that bears false witness, or is of perjury convicted, shall have his tongue cut out, except he redeem it with his head. Murder, adultery, shall be punished by death, but not theft, except it be some more grievous offence, or notorious offenders; otherwise they shall be condemned to the galleys, mines, be his slaves whom they have offended, during their lives. I hate all hereditary slaves, and that duram Persarum legem as Brisonius calls it; or as Ammianus, impendio formidatibus et abominandis leges, per quas ob noxam unius, omnis propinquitas perit, hard law that wife and children, friends and allies, should suffer for the father's offence.

No man shall marry until he be 25, no woman till she be 20, nisi aliter dispensatam fuerit. If one die, the other party shall not marry till six months after; and because many families are compelled to live niggardly, exhaust and undone by great dowers, none shall be given at all, or very little, and that by supervisors rated, they that are foul shall have a greater portion; if fair, none at all, or very little: howsoever not to exceed such a rate as those supervisors shall think fit. And when once they come to those years, poverty shall hinder no man from marriage, or any other respect, but all shall be rather enforced than hindered, except they be dismembered, or grievously deformed, infirm, or visited with some enormous hereditary disease, in body or mind; in such cases upon a great pain, or mulct, man or woman shall not marry, other order shall be taken for them to their content. If people overabound, they shall be eased by colonies.

1. No man shall wear weapons in any city. The same subsidy shall be kept, and that proper to several callings, by which they shall be distinguished. Luxus funerum shall be taken away, that intempestive expense moderated, and many others. Brokers, takers of pawns, biting usurers, I will not admit; yet because hic cum hominibus non cum diis agitur, we converse here with men, not with gods, and for the hardiness of men's hearts, I will tolerate some kind of usury. If we were honest, I confess, si probi essens, we should have no use of it, but being as it is, we must necessarily admit it. Howsoever most divines contradict it, dicimus inficias, sed vox ea sola reperta est, it must be winked at by politicians. And yet some great doctors approve of it, Calvin, Bucer, ZANCHIUS, P. MARTYR, because by so many grand lawyers, decrees of emperors, princes' statutes, customs of commonwealths, churches' appropriations, it is permitted, et c. I will therefore allow it. But to no private persons, nor to every man that will, to orphans only, maids, widows, or such as by reason of their age, sex, education, ignorance of trading, know not otherwise how to employ it; and those so approved, not to let it out apart, but to bring their money to a commum bank which shall be allowed in every city, as in Genoa, Geneva, Nuremberg, Venice, at 5, 6, 7, not above 8 per centum, as the

---

1. Si quis nuptam stupravit, virga virillis eae precidatur; si mulier, nasus et auricula precandidatur. Alfredi lex. Ea leges iusti Veneri Mutrig. timendias.
3. Leg. 2. de reg. Persarum.
7. Poet. 1. c. 3. Lege cantum non ipsa pridem apud Venetos, ne quis Partibus domos esset.
10. Speciosissimae juvenis liberis dabunt operam. Plato 5. de legibus.
15. Malines exp. sine dato nubent.
supervisors, or aerarii prefecti shall think fit. And as it shall not be lawful for each man to be an usurer that will, so shall it not be lawful for all to take up money at use, not to prodigals and spendthrifts, but to merchants, young tradesmen, such as stand in need, or know honestly how to employ it, whose necessity, cause and condition the said supervisors shall approve of.

I will have no private monopolies, to enrich one man, and beggar a multitude, multiplication of offices, of supplying by deputies, weights and measures, the same throughout, and those rectified by the Primum mobile, and sun's motion, threescore miles to a degree according to observation, 1000 geometrical paces to a mile, five foot to a pace, twelve inches to a foot, &c. and from measures known it is an easy matter to rectify weights, &c. to cast up all, and resolve bodies by algebra, stereometry. I hate wars if they be not ad populii salutem, upon urgent occasion, "odinmus occupitem, quius semper vivit in armis," offensive wars, except the cause be very just, I will not allow of. For I do highly magnify that saying of Hannibal to Scipio, in "Livy, It had been a blessed thing for you and us, if God had given that mind to our predecessors, that you had been content with Italy, we with Africa. For neither Sicily nor Sardinia are worth such cost and pains, so many fleets and armies, or so many famous Captains' lives." Omnia prius tendanda, fair means shall first be tried. "Peregit tranquilla potestas, Quod violenta nequit. I will have them proceed with all moderation: but hear you, Fabius my general, not Minutius, nam qui Consilio nitidum plus hostibus nocet, quam qui sine animi ratione, viribus: And in such wars to abstain as much as is possible from depopulations, burning of towns, massacring of infants, &c. For defensive wars, I will have forces still ready at a small warning, by land and sea, a prepared navy, soldiers in præcinctu, et quam Bonifius apud Hungaros suos vult, virgam foremam, and money, which is nervus bellii, still in a readiness, and a sufficient revenue, a third part as in old "Rome and Egypt, reserved for the commonwealth; to avoid those heavy taxes and impositions, as well to defray this charge of wars, as also all other public defalcations, expenses, fees, pensions, reparations, chaste sports, feasts, donaries, rewards, and entertainments. All things in this nature especially I will have maturely done, and with great deliberation: ne quid temerè, ne quid remissè ac timide, fiat; Sed quò firor hospes? To prosecute the rest would require a volume. Manus de tabella, I have been over tedious in this subject; I could have here willingly ranged, but these straits wherein I am included will not permit.

From commonwealths and cities, I will descend to families, which have as many corsives and molestationes, as frequent discontentes as the rest. Great affinity there is betwixt a political and economical body: they differ only in magnitude and proportion of business (so Scaliger writes) as they have both likely the same period, as a Bodin and b Pencier hold, out of Plato, six or seven hundred years, so many times they have the same means of their vexation and overthrows; as namely, riot, a common ruin of both, riot in building, riot in profuse spending, riot in apparel, &c. be it in what kind soever, it produceth the same effects. A *corographier of ours speaking obier of ancient families,
why they are so frequent in the north, continue so long; are so soon extinguished in the south, and so few, gives no other reason but this, *lucus omnis dissipavit*, riot hath consumed all, fine clothes and curious buildings came into this island, as he notes in his annals, not so many years since; *non sine dispersio hospitabilis*, to the decay of hospitality. Howbeit many times that word is mistaken, and under the name of bounty and hospitality, is shrouded riot and prodigality, and that which is commendable in itself well used, hath been mistaken herefore, is become by his abuse, the bare and utter ruin of many a noble family. For some men live like the rich glutton, consuming themselves and their substance by continual feastings and invitations, with Axilon in Homer, keep open house for all comers, giving entertainment to such as visit them, *keeping a table beyond their means*, and a company of idle servants (though not so frequent as of old) are blown up on a sudden; and as Acteen was by his hounds, devoured by their kinsmen, friends, and multitude of followers. It is a wonder that Paulus Jovius relates of our northern countries, what an infinite deal of meat we consume on our tables; that I may truly say, 'tis not bounty, not hospitality, as it is often abused, but riot and excess, gluttony and prodigality; a mere vice; it brings in debt, want, and beggary, hereditary diseases, consumes their fortunes, and overthrows the good temperature of their bodies. To this I might here well add their inordinate expense in building, those fantastical houses, turrets, walls, parks, &c. gaming, excess of pleasure, and that prodigious riot in apparel, by which means they are compelled to break up house, and creep into holes. Sesellius in his commonwealth of France, gives three reasons why the French nobility were so frequently bankrupts: "First, because they had so many law-suits and contentions one upon another, which were tedious and costly; by which means it came to pass, that commonly lawyers bought them out of their possessions. A second cause was their riot, they lived beyond their means, and were therefore swallowed up by merchants." (La Nove, a French writer, yields five reasons of his countrymen's poverty, to the same effect almost, and thinks verily if the gentry of France were divided into ten parts, eight of them would be found much impaired, by sales, mortgages, and debts, or wholly sunk in their estates.) "The last was inordinate excess in apparel, which consumed their revenues." How this concerns and agrees with our present state, look you. But of this elsewhere. As it is in a man's body, if either head, heart, stomach, liver, spleen, or any one part be misaffected, all the rest suffer with it: so is it with this economical body. If the head be naught, a spendthrift, a drunkard, a whoremaster, a gamester, how shall the family live at ease? "*Ipsa si cupidat salus servare prorsus, non potest, hanc familiam*, as Deanes said in the comedy, Safety herself cannot save it. A good, honest, painful man many times hath a shrew to his wife, a sickly, dishonest, slothful, foolish, careless woman to his mate, a proud, peevish flirt, a liquorish, prodigal queen, and by that means all goes to ruin: or if they differ in nature, he is thirsty, she spends all, he wise, she sottish and soft; what agreement can there be? what friendship? Like that of the thrush and swallow in Æsop, instead of mutual love, kind compellations, whore and thief is heard, they fling stools at one another's heads. *Quae intemperios vexat hanc familiam?* All enforced marriages commonly produce such effects, or if on their behalves it be well, as to live and agree lovingly together, they may have disobedient and unruly children, that

4 Illad. 6. Lib. i.
5 Vide Puteani Comum, Goecenium de portentosis consis nostrorum temporum.
8 Ter. 9 Amphit. Plaut.
Democritus to the Reader.

65

take ill courses to disquiet them; * their son is a thief, a spendthrift, their daughter a whore;" a step mother, or a daughter-in-law, distempers all; * or else for want of means, many torturers arise, debts, dues, fees, dowries, jointures, legacies to be paid, annuities issuing out, by means of which, they have not wherewithal to maintain themselves in that pomp as their predecessors have done, bring up or bestow their children to their callings, to their birth and quality, * and will not descend to their present fortunes. Oftentimes, too, to aggravate the rest, concur many other inconveniences, unthankful friends, decayed friends, neglectful servants, * servi juracès, versipelles, callidi, occusus sibi mille clamibus reserant, furtimque; raptant, consumunt, ligivrant; casualties, taxes, mules, chargeable offices, vain expenses, entertainments, loss of stock, emmities, emulations, frequent invitations, losses, suretyship, sickness, death of friends, and that which is the gulf of all, improvise, ill husbandry, disorder and confusion, by which means they are drenched on a sudden in their estates, and at unawares precipitated insensibly into an inextricable labyrinth of debts, cares, woes, want, grief, discontent and melancholy itself.

I have done with families, and will now briefly run over some few sorts and conditions of men. The most secure, happy, jovial, and merry in the world's esteem are princes and great men, free from melancholy: but for their cares, miseries, suspicions, jealousies, discontenters, folly and madness, I refer you to Xénophon's Tyrannus, where king Hieron discourseth at large with Simonides the poet, of this subject. Of all others they are most troubled with perpetual fears, anxieties, insomuch that, as he said in 7 Valerius, if thou knewest with what cares and miseries this robe were stuffed, thou wouldst not stoop to take it up. Or put case they be secure and free from fears and discontenters, yet they are void * of reason too oft, and precipitate in their actions, read all our histories, quos de studis prodidere stulti, Ilissae, Æneides, Annales, and what is the subject?

" Statavorum regem, et popolorum consilium aequum."  
The giddy tumults and the foolish rage  
Of kings and people.

How mad they are, how furious, and upon small occasions, rash and inconsiderate in their proceedings, how they doit, every page almost will witness,  

"Delirant reges, plebuntur Achivi."  
When doating monarchs urge  
Unsound resolves, their subjects feel the scourge.

Next in place, next in miseries and discontenters, in all manner of hair-brain actions, are great men, procul à jove, procul à fulmine, the nearer the worse. If they live in court, they are up and down, ebb and flow with their princes' favours, Ingenium vulgo statque caditque suo, now aloft, to-morrow down, as * Polybius describes them, "like so many casting counters, now of gold, to-morrow of silver, that vary in worth as the computant will; now they stand for units, to-morrow for thousands; now before all, and anon behind." Beside, they torment one another with mutual factions, emulations: one is ambitious, another enamoured, a third in debt, a prodigal, overruns his fortunes, a fourth solicitous with cares, gets nothing, &c. But for these men's discontenters, anxieties, I refer you to Lucian's Tract, de mercede conductis, *Æneas Sylvius (huidinis et stultiqve servos, he calls them), Agrippa, and many others.

*Paling. Filius aut fur. 1Catius cum mare, due galli simul in sede, Et glades hinc nunquam vumit sine lute.  
*Res angusta domini.  
*When pride and beggary meet in a family, they roar and howl, and cause as many flashes of discontenters, as fire and water, when they concur, make thunders-claps in the skies.  
*Plantus Aulular.  
*Lib. 7. cap. 6.  
*Pellitur in billes sapientia, vi geritur res.  
*Vetus proverbiurn, not regem aut fatum maestam operunt.  
*Arminianus Solones in Sa. 3. De missar curatorium.
Of philosophers and scholars praece sapientie dictatores, I have already spoken in general terms, those superintendents of wit and learning, men above men, those refined men, minions of the muses,

Democritus

These acute and subtle sophisters, so much honoured, have as much need of hellebore as others.

O medici medium pertunditve venam. Read Lucian's Pisicatar, and tell how he esteemed them; Agrippa's Tract of the vanity of Sciences; nay, read their own works, their absurd tenets, prodigious paradoxes, et risum tenecris amici? You shall find that of Aristotle true, nullum magnum ingenium sine mixtura dementiae, they have a worm as well as others; you shall find a fantastical strain, a fustian, a bombast, a vain-glorious humour, an affected style, &c., like a prominent thread in an uneven woven cloth, run parallel throughout their works. And they that teach wisdom, patience, meekness, are the veriest dizzards, hairbrains, and most discontent.

The multitude of wisdom is grieved, and he that increaseth wisdom, increaseth sorrow." I need not quote mine author; they that laugh and contemn others, condemn the world of folly, deserve to be mocked, as are giddily-headed, and lie as open as any other. Democritus, that common flouter of folly, was ridiculous himself, barking Menippus, scoffing Lucian, satirical Lucilius, Petronius, Varro, Persius, &c., may be censured with the rest, Lori pedem rectus derideat, Eithiopian albus. Bale, Erasmus, Hospinian, Vives, Kemnissius, explode as a vast ocean of obs and sols, school divinity. A laboratory of intricable questions, unprofitable contentions, incredibili demerationem, one calls it. If school divinity be so censured, subtilis Scotus lima veritas, Ocean irrefragabilis, cujus ingenium vetera omnia ingenia subvertit, &c. Baconthope, Dr. Resolutus, and Curcolum Theologie, Thomas himself, Doctor Schropiscus, cui dictavit Angelus, &c. What shall become of humanity? Ars stulta, what can she plead? What can her followers say for themselves? Much learning, cere-diminuit-brum, hath cracked their sconce, and taken such root, that tribus Anterioris caput insanabile, hellebore itself can do no good, nor that renowned lanthorn of Epicetetus, by which if any man studied, he should be as wise as he was.

All will not serve; rhetoricians, in ostentationem logiacatis multa agitant, out of their volatility of tongue, will talk much to no purpose, orators can persuade other men what they will, quo volunt, unde volunt, move, pacify, &c., but cannot settle their own brains, what saith Tully? Malo indesertam prudentiam, quam loquacem stultitiam; and as Seneca seconds him, a wise man's oration should not be polite or solicitous. Fabius esteems no better of most of them, either in speech, action, gesture, than as men beside themselves, insanos declaratos; so doth Gregory, Non mihi sapit qui sermon, sed qui factis sapit. Make the best of him, a good orator is a turncoat, an evil man, bonus orator pessimus vir, his tongue is set to sale, he is a mere voice, as he said of a nightingale, dat sine mentis sonum, an hyperbolical liar, a flatterer, a parasite, and as Ammianus Marcellinus will, a corrupting cozenor, one that doth more mischief by his fair speeches, than he that bribes by money; for a man may with more facility avoid him that circumvents by money, than him that deceives with glozing terms; which made

---

1 P. Dousse Epil. lib. 1. c. 13.  2 Lucian. Ter mille dracmah omin empti; etudes inde sapientiam adipsceur.

---

1 Lucian. Ter mille dracmah omin empti; etudes inde sapientiam adipsceur.

---

1 Lucian. Ter mille dracmah omin empti; etudes inde sapientiam adipsceur.
Budaenus, in an epistle of his to Lupsetus, will have civil law to be the tower of wisdom; another honours physic, the quintessence of nature; a third tumbles them both down, and sets up the flag of his own peculiar science. Your supercilious critics, grammatical trifiers, note-makers, curious antiquaries, find out all the ruins of wit, ineptiarum delicias, amongst the rubbish of old writers; 3 Pro stultis habent nisi aliquid sufficient invenire, quod in alicrum scriptis vertant vitio, all fools with them that cannot find fault; they correct others, and are hot in a cold cause, puzzle themselves to find out how many streets in Rome, houses, gates, towers, Homer's country, Æneas's mother, Niobe's daughters, an Sappho publica fuerit? ovum 4 prius extiterit un gallina! &c. et alia quae dediscenda essent scire, si scires, as Seneca holds. What clothes the senators did wear in Rome, what shoes, how they sat, where they went to the closestool, how many dishes in a mess, what sauce, which for the present for an historian to relate, 5 according to Lodovic. Vives, is very ridiculous, is to them most precious elaborate stuff; they admired for it, and as proud, as triumphant in the meantime for this discovery, as if they had won a city, or conquered a province; as rich as if they had found a mine of gold ore. Quovis auctores absurdus commentis suis peracuunt et stercoranet, one saith, they bewray and daub a company of books and good authors, with their absurd comments, correctorum sterculianæ Scaliger calls them, and show their wit in ensnaring others, a company of foolish note-makers, humble-bees, dros, or beetles, inter stercora at plurinaum versantur, they rake over all those rubbish and dunghills, and prefer a manuscript many times before the Gospel itself, 6 thesaurum criticum, before any treasure, and with their deletures, alii legunt sic, meus codes sic habet, with their postrema editions, annotations, castigations, &c., make books dear, themselves ridiculous, and do nobody good, yet if any man dare oppose or contradict, they are mad, up in arms on a sudden, how many sheets are written in defence, how bitter invectives, what apologies? 7 Epiphileles hæ sunt ut merea nuga. But I dare say no more of, for, with, or against them, because I am liable to their lash as well as others. Of these and the rest of our artists and philosophers, I will generally conclude they are a kind of madmen, as Seneca esteems of them, to make doubts and scruples, how to read them truly, to mend old authors, but will not mend their own lives, or teach us ingénia sanare, memoriam officiorum inerere, ac fidein in rebus humanis retinere, to keep our wits in order, or rectify our manners. Namquid tili demens videtur, si istis operam impenderit? Is not he mad that draws lines with Archimedes, whilst his house is ransacked, and his city besieged, when the whole world is in combustion, or we whilst our souls are in danger, mortem sequitur, vita fugit) to spend our time in toys, idle questions, and things of no worth?

1 In Gorg. Platonis. 2 In naungerio. 3 Si fuior sit Lyceus, &e. quodies furri, furri, furrit, amans, ibens, est Oeta, &c. 4 They are borne in the back of folly, and dwell in the grove of madness. 5 Epurus Utop. lib. 11. 6 Lib. de causis corrup. artium. 7 Lib. 2. In Aesopinum, cap. 19 et 32. 8 Lib. de causis. 9 Lib. de beneficis.
Democritus to the Reader.

That *lovers are mad,* I think no man will deny, *Amare simul et sapere, ipsi Jovi non datur,* Jupiter himself cannot intend both at once.

"*Non bene convenit, nec in una sede morantur Majestas et amor.*"

Tully, when he was invited to a second marriage, replied, he could not *simul amare et sapere,* be wise and love both together. *E*st *orcu* *i*lle, *vis est imm*medicabilis, est *rabies insan*ana, love is madness, a hell, an incurable disease; *impotentem et insanam libidinem* "Seneca calls it, an impotent and raging lust. I shall dilate this subject apart; in the meantime let lovers sigh out the rest.

"Nevisannus the lawyer holds it for an axiom, "*most women are fools,*" *constitutum feminis invalidum;* Seneca, men, be they young or old; who doubts it, yonth is mad as Elitus in Tully, *Stulti adolescenti*ti, old age little better, *deliri sens*es, *&c.* Theophrastus, in the 107th year of his age, "said he then began to be wise, *tum sapere cessit,* and therefore lamented his departure. If wisdom come so late, where shall we find a wise man? Our old ones doat at threescore-and-ten. I would cite more proofs, and a better author, but for the present, let one fool point at another. *Nevisannus hath as hard an opinion of rich men, "wealth and common dwell not together,*" statutim *patruunt opes,* and they do commonly *infatuare cor hominis,* besot men; and as we see it, "fools have fortune." *Sapientia non inventur in terra suavitatum visenstitum.* For beside a natural contemplation of learning, which accompanies such kind of men, innate idleness (for they will take no pains), and which *Aristotle observes, ubi mens plurima, ubi minimas fortuna, ubi plurimum fortuna, ubi mens perecigua,* great wealth and little wit go commonly together: they have as much brains some of them in their heads as in their heels; besides this inbred neglect of liberal sciences, and all arts, which should *excolere mentem,* polish the mind, they have most part some gullish humour or other, by which they are led; one is an Epicure, an Atheist, a second a gamester, a third a whoremaster (fit subjects all for a satirist to work upon);

"*His nuptarum insaniit amoribus, his pueros.*"

One burns to madness for the wedded dame; unnatural lusts another's heart inflame.

One is mad of hawking, hunting, cocking; another of carousing, horse-riding, spending; a fourth of building, fighting, &c., *Insanit veteres statusus Dama*simppus enendo, Dama simppus hath an humour of his own, to be talked of: *Heliodorus the Carthaginian, another.* In a word, as Scaliger concludes of them all, they are *Statue erecte stultitia,* the very statues or pillars of folly. Choose out all of stories him that hath been most admired, you shall still find, *multa ad laudem, multa ad vituperationem magnifica,* as *Berosus of Semiramis; omnes mortales militiâ, triumphi, divitiis, &c., tum et luxu, cede, ceterisque vititi antecessit,* as she had some good, so had she many bad parts.

Alexander, a worthy man, but furious in his anger, overtaken in drink: Cæsar and Scipio valiant and wise, but vain-glorious, ambitious: Vespasian a worthy prince, but covetous: *Hannibal, as he had mighty virtues, so had he many vices; unus virtutem mille vitia comitavit,* as Machiavel of Coseno.
de Medici, he had two distinct persons in him. I will determine of them all, they are like these double or turning pictures; stand before which you see a fair maid, on the one side an ape, on the other an owl; look upon them at the first sight, all is well, but further examine, you shall find them wise on the one side, and fools on the other; in some few things praiseworthy, in the rest incomparably faulty. I will say nothing of their diseases, emulations, discontents, wants, and such miseries: let poverty plead the rest in Aristophanes' Plutus.

Covetous men, amongst others, are most mad, *They have all the symptoms of melancholy, fear, sadness, suspicion, &c., as shall be proved in its proper place.

*Danda est Hellebori multo pars maxima avaris."

Misers make Anticyra their own; Its hellebore reserv'd for them alone.

And yet methinks prodigals are much madder than they, be of what condition they will, that bear a public or private purse; as *Dutch writer censured Richard the rich duke of Cornwall, suing to be emperor, for his profuse spending, qui effudit pecuniun ante pedes principium Electorum sicut aquam, that scattered money like water; I do censure them, Stulta Anglia (saith he) quae tot denariis sponte est privata, stulti principes Alemaniae, qui nobis jux suum pro pecuniu vendiderunt; spendthrifts, bribers, and bribe-takers are fools, and are "all they that cannot keep, disburse, or spend their moneys well.

I might say the like of angry, peevish, envious, ambitious; *Anticyras melior sorbere meracous; Epicures, Atheists, Schismatics, Heretics; hi omnes habent imaginationem lexam (saith Nymannus) "and their madness shall be evident." 2 Tim. iii. 9. *Fabatus, an Italian, holds sea-faring men all mad; "the ship is mad, for it never stands still; the mariniers are mad, to expose themselves to such imminent dangers: the waters are raging mad, in perpetual motion: the winds are as mad as the rest, they know not whence they come, whither they go: and those men are maddest of all that go to sea; for one fool at home, they find forty abroad." He was a madman that said it, and thou peradventure as mad to read it. *Felix Platerus is of opinion all alchemists are mad, out of their wits; *Athenaeus saith as much of fiddlers, et musarum lascivias, *Musicians, omnes tibicines insaniunt; ubi semel effluat, avolat illico mens, in comes music at one ear, out goes wit at another. Proud and vain-glorious persons are certainly mad; and so are *lascivious; I can feel their pulses beat hither; horn-mad some of them, to let others lie with their wives, and wink at it.

To insist 4 in all particulars, were an Herculean task, to *reckon up *insanas subtructiones, insanos labores, insanum luxum, mad labours, mad books, endeavours, carriages, gross ignorance, ridiculous actions, absurd gestures; insanum gudum, insaniam villarum, insana jurgia, as Tully terms them, madness of villages, stupend structures; as those Egyptian Pyramids, Labyrinths and Sphinxes, which a company of crowned asses, ad ostentationem opum, vainly built, when neither the architect nor king that made them, or to what use and purpose, are yet known: to insist in their hypocrisy, inconstancy, blindness, rashness, dementem temperatatem, fraud, cozenage, malice, anger, impudence, 

* Hor. Quisquis ambitione malo aut argenti pallet amore, Quisquis luxurii, tristique superstitione. Per. 
* Cronica Slavonica ad annum 1257. de cujus pecunia jam incedibilis dixerunt. 
* A fool and his money are soon parted. 
* Ovat. de imag. ambitiouis et audax negotii Anticyras. 
* Navis stulta, que continuo movetur; navis stulta qui se periculos exponunt; aqua insana que se fremit &c.; eae jactatur, &c.; qui mari se committit; stolidum anima terram fugiens, 40 mari invenit. Gaspar Ens. Moror. 
* Cap. de alien. mentis. 
* Dipososophat. Lib. 8. 
* Prov. St. Insana libido, hic regu non furor est, non est habe mentula demens. Mart. ep. 74. 1. 4. 
* Mille puellarum et puororum mille iuiores. 
* Pin. lib. 36.
Democritus to the Reader.

ingratitude, ambition, gross superstitition, as in Tiberius' times, such base flattery, stupend, parasitical fawning and colloquing, etc., brawls, conflicts, desires, contentions, it would ask an expert Vesalius to anatomise every member. Shall I say? Jupiter himself, Apollo, Mars, etc., doated; and monster-conquering Hercules that subdued the world, and helped others, could not relieve himself in this, but mad he was at last. And where shall a man walk, converse with whom, in what province, city, and not meet with Signior Deliro, or Hercules Furesis, Menades, and Corybantes? Their speeches say no less. E. fungis nati homines, or else they fetched their pedigree from those that were struck by Samson with the jaw-bone of an ass. Or from Deucalion and Pyrrha's stones, for durum genus sumus, marmorei sumus, we are stony-hearted, and savour too much of the stock, as if they had all heard that enchanted horn of Astolpho, that English duke in Ariosto, which never sounded but all his auditors were mad, and for fear ready to make away with themselves; or landed in the mad haven in the Euxine sea of Daphnis insana, which had a secret quality to dementate; they are a company of giddy-heads, afternoon men, it is Midsummer moon still, and the dog-days last all the year long, they are all mad. Whom shall I then except? Ulricus Huttemus nemo, nam nemo omnibus horis sapit, Nemo nescivit sine viribus, Crimine Nemo carct, Nemo sorte sua vivit contentus, Nemo in amore sapit, Nemo bonus, Nemo sapiens, Nemo est ex omni parte beatus, etc. and therefore Nicholas Nemo, or Monsieur No-body, shall go free, Quid valed nemo, Nemo referre potest? But whom shall I except in the second place? such as are silent, vir sapit qui pauca loquitur; no better way to avoid folly and madness, than by taciturnity. Whom in a third? all senators, magistrate; for all fortunate men are wise, and conquerors valiant, and so are all great men, non est bonum ludere cum dies; they are wise by authority, good by their office and place, his iust impune pessimos esse (some say) we must not speak of them, neither is it fit; per me sunt omnia protinus alba, I will not think amiss of them. Whom next! Stoics? Sapiens Stoicus, and he alone is subject to no perturbations, as "Plutarch scoffs at him, "he is not vexed with torments, or burnt with fire, foiled by his adversary, sold of his enemy: though he be wrinkled, sand-blind, toothless, and deformed; yet he is most beautiful, and like a god, a king in conceit, though not worth a groat." He never doats, never mad, never sad, drunk, because virtue cannot be taken away," as Zeno holds, "by reason of strong apprehension," but he was mad to say so. Anticyrae calo haec est opus aut dolabrâ, he had need to be bored, and so had all his fellows, as wise as they would seem to be. Chrysippus himself liberally grants them to be fools as well as others, at certain times, upon some occasions, amitti virtutem ait per ebrietatem, aut atribiliarium morbum, it may he lost by drunkenness or melancholy, he may be sometimes crazed as well as the rest: ad sumnum sapiens nisi quam putrita molesta. I should here except some Cynics, Menippus, Diogenes, that Theban Crates; or to descend to these times, that omniscious, only wise fraternity of the Rosicrucians, those great theologues, politicians, philosophers, physicians, philologers, artists, etc. of whom S. Bridget,
Alcas Joacchimus, Leicenbergerius, and such divine spirits have prophesied, and made promise to the world, if at least there be any such (Hen. * Neuhusius makes a doubt of it, * Valentinus Andreas and others) or an Elias artifex their Theophrastian master; whom though Libavius and many deride and carp at, yet some will have to be "the renewer of all arts and sciences," reformer of the world, and now living, for so Johannes Montanus Strigoniensis, that great patron of Paracelsus, contends, and certainly avers "a most divine man," and the quintessence of wisdom whereasover he is; for he, his fraternity, friends, &c. are all "betrothed to wisdom," if we may believe their disciples and followers. I must needs except Lipsius and the Pope, and expunge their name out of the catalog of fools. For besides that parasitical testimony of Dousa,

"A Solo exorientis Maecenas usque palandas,
Nemo est qui justo se equiparare quest."**

Lipsius saith of himself, that he was * humani generis quidem prodagogus voce et stylo, a grand signor, a master, a tutor of us all, and for thirteen years he brags how he sowed wisdom in the Low Countries, as Ammonius the philosopher sometimes did in Alexandria, * cum humanitate literas et sapientiam cum prudentia: antistes sapientia, he shall be Sepiumterium Octavus. The Pope is more than a man, as his parats often make him, a demi-god, and besides his holiness cannot err, * in Cathedra belike: and yet some of them have been magicians, Heretics, Atheists, children, and as Platins saith of John 22. * Elsi vir literatus, multa solitidinem et levitatem prae se ferentia egi, solitii et socordis vir ingenii, a scholar sufficient, yet many things he did foolishly, lightly. I can say no more than in particular, but in general terms to the rest, they are all mad, their wits are evaporated, and as Arioeto feigns l. 34. kept in jars above the moon.

"Some lose their wits with love, some with ambition,
Some following "Lords and men of high condition.
Some in fair jewels rich and costly set,
Others in Poetry their wits forget,
Another thinks to be an Alchemist,
Till all be spent, and that his number's mist."

Convicted fools they are, madmen upon record; and I am afraid past cure many of them, * crepunt inquina, the symptoms are manifest, they are all of Gotam parish:

"Quam furor hand dubius, quum sit manifesta phrenesis,"
(Since madness is indisputable, since frenzy is obvious.)

what remains then * but to send for Lorarios, those officers to carry them all together for company to Bedlam, and set Rabelais to be their physician.

If any man shall ask in the meantime, who I am that so boldly censure others, * tu nullane habes vitae? have I no faults? * Yes, more than thou hast, whatsoever thou art. * Nos numerus sumus, I confess it again, I am as foolish, as mad as any one.

"Insanus vosis video, non deprecor ipse,
Quo minus insanis,"---

I do not deny it, * demens de populo dematur. My comfort is, I have more fellows, and those of excellent note. And though I be not so right or so discreet as I should be, yet not so mad, so bad neither, as thou perhaps takest me to be.

* An sint, quales sint, unde nomen illud ascervint.

** Turri Babel.

* Omnium artium et scientiarum instaurator.

* Divinus ille vir ancer notarium in epist. Rog. Exeom, ed. Hambur. 1608.

* Sapientia desponsatii.

* From the Rising Sun to the Mason Lake, there was not one that could fairly be put in comparison with them."

* Solus hic est supinus ait voluntari vel flatus unum. * In ep. ad Balnus, Morometum.


* Plaut. Menece.

* Or to send for a sheck to the Anticype to make hellechore pottage, sethio-brain pottage.

* Alliquan-tulum tamen in modo solabor, quod una cum multis et sapientibus et celeberrimis viris ipsae insipientem sim, quod se Menippus Luciani in Nceymantia.

* Petronius in Caractact.
To conclude, this being granted, that all the world is melancholy, or mad, 
doats, and every member of it, I have ended my task, and sufficiently illus-
trated that which I took upon me to demonstrate at first. At this present I 
have no more to say; *His sanam mentem Democritus, I can but wish myself 
and them a good physician, and all of us a better mind.

And although for the abovementioned reasons, I had a just cause to undertake 
this subject, to point at these particular species of dotage, that so men might 
acknowledge their imperfections, and seek to reform what is amiss; yet I have 
a more serious intent at this time; and to omit all impertinent digressions, to 
say no more of such as are improperly melancholy, or metaphorically mad, 
lightly mad, or in disposition, as stupid, angry, drunken, silly, sottish, sullen, 
proud, vain-glorious, ridiculous, beastly, peevish, obstinate, impudent, extrava-
gant, dry, doting, dull, desperate, harebrain, &c., mad, frantic, foolish, hetero-
clites, which no new hospital can hold, no physic help; my purpose and 
eavour is, in the following discourse to anatome this humour of melan-
choly, through all its parts and species, as it is an habit, or an ordinary dis-
 ease, and that philosophically, medicinally, to show the causes, symptoms, and 
several cures of it, that it may be the better avoided. Moved thenceunto for 
the generality of it, and to do good, it being a disease so frequent, as *Mercur-
ialis observes, "in these our days; so often happening," saith *Laurentius, 
"in our miserable times," as few there are that feel not the smart of it. Of 
the same mind is *Eliaii Montalvius, *Melanchton, and others; *Julius Cesar 
Clandimus calls it the "fountain of all other diseases, and so common in this 
crazed age of ours, that scarce one of a thousand is free from it;" and that 
splenic hypochondriacal wind especially, which proceeds from the spleen 
and short ribs. Being then a disease so grievous, so common, I know not 
wherein to do a more general service, and spend my time better, than to pre-
scribe means how to prevent and cure so universal a malady, an epidemical 
disease, that so often, so much crucifies the body and mind.

If I have overshot myself in this which hath been hitherto said, or that it is, 
which I am sure some will object, too fantastical, "too light and comical for a 
Divine, too satirical for one of my profession," I will presume to answer with 
Erasmus, in like case, 'tis not I, but Democritus, *Democritus dixit: you 
must consider it is what it speaks in one's own or another's person, an assumed 
habit and name; a difference betwixt him that affects or acts a prince's, a 
philosopher's, a magistrate's, a fool's part, and him that is so indeed; and what 
liberty those old satirists have had; it is a cento collected from others; 
not I, but they that say it.

" * Dixero should forte Jocosiis, hoc mihi juris 
Cum vuisti dubis."------
Yet some indulgence I may justly claim, 
If too familiar with another's fame.

Take heed, you mistake me not. If I do a little forget myself, I hope you 
will pardon it. And to say truth, why should any man be offended, or take 
extceptions at it?

" I licuit, semperque licebit, 
Parcere personis, dicere de vitis." 
It lawful was of old, and still will be, 
To speak of vice, but let the name go free.

I hate their vices, not their persons. If any be displeased, or take aught unto

---

A Cap. 15. de Mel. 1 De animo nostro hoc vaculo moribus frequentissimis.
B Consult. 98. aede nostris temporibus frequenter ingruit ut munus fore ab illos labo immunitur et omnium fore morborum occasio existat.
C Mor. Encom. si quis calumniatur levius esse quam deest Theologum, aut mordax cuanm deceat Christianam.
D Hor. Sat. 4. 1. 1.
himself, let him not expostulate or cavil with him that said it (so did Erasmus excuse himself to Dorpius, si parva licet componere magnis) and so do I; "but let him be angry with himself, that so betrayed and opened his own faults in applying it to himself:’ ’ if he be guilty and deserve it, let him amend, whoever he is and not be angry. ‘He that hateth correction is a fool,’ Prov. xii. 1. If he be not guilty, it concerns him not; it is not my freeness of speech, but a guilty conscience, a galled back of his own that makes him wince.

"Suspiciione si quis erabit suum, Et rapiet ad se, quod crit commune omnium, Stulti nudabit animi conscientiam." *

I deny not this which I have said savours a little of Democritus; 'Quamvis ridentem dicere verum quid vetat; one may speak in jest, and yet speak truth. It is somewhat tart, I grant it; acerius orixim excitant emolumma, as he said, sharp sauces increase appetite, nec cibus ipse juvat morsu fraudatus aceti. Object then and cavil what thou wilt, I ward all with Democritus's buckler, his medicine shall salve it; strike where thou wilt, and when: Democritus dixit, Democritus will answer it. It was written by an idle fellow, at idle times, about our Saturnalian or Dyousian feasts, when as he said, nullum libertati periculum est, servants in old Rome had liberty to say and do what they list. When our countrymen sacrificed to their goddess Vacuna, and sat tippling by their Vacunal fires, I write this, and published this stribi, it is reminis nihil. The time, place, persons, and all circumstances apologise for me, and why may I not then be idle with others? speak my mind freely? If you deny me this liberty, upon these presumptions I will take it: I say again, I will take it.

"* Si quis est qui dictam in se incubemus Existimat esse, sic existimem." 

If any man take exceptions, let him turn the buckle of his girdle, I care not, I owe thee nothing (Reader), I look for no favour at thy hands, I am independent, I fear not. 

No, I recant, I will not, I care, I fear, I confess my fault, acknowledge a great offence,

"—motus praestat componere fluitus."  
("—let's first assauce the troubled waves.")

I have overshot myself, I have spoken foolishly, rashly, unadvisedly, absurdly, I have anatomized mine own folly. And now methinks upon a sudden I am awakened as it were out of a dream; I have had a raving fit, a fantastical rage, ranged up and down, in and out, I have insulted over the most kind of men, abused some, offended others, wronged myself; and now being recovered, and perceiving mine error, cry with Orlando, Solvite me, pardon (o boni) that which is past, and I will make you amends in that which is to come; I promise you a more sober discourse in my following treatise.

If through weakness, folly, passion, dissentient, ignorance, I have said amiss, let it be forgotten and forgiven. I acknowledge that of Tacitus to be true, Aspera faciebas ubi nimis eo vero traxere, acerum suu memoriam relinquat, a bitter jest a leaving a sting behind it: and as an honourable man observes, "They fear a satirist's wit, he their memories." I may justly suspect the

* Ep. ad Dorphum de Merli, si quispiam offendatur et sibi vindictet, non habet quod expostulet eum eo quj scripsit, 7ps e si volet, secum ait injuriam, utgote sui prodirior, qui declaravit hoc ad se proprire pertinere.  
* If any one shall err through his own suspicion, and shall apply to himself what is common to all, he will foolishly betray a consciousness of guilt.  
* Hor.  
* Mart. 1. 7. 22.  
* Ut habet seriat, abstanger hos leius Democriti pharmacos.  
* Ter. prod. Eunuch.  
* Qu cune ex studiis gaudium, sic studia ex hilaritate proveniunt. Plutus Maximus suo, ep. lib. 8. *Annal. 15.  
* Sir Francis Bacon in his Essays, now Viscount St. Albans.
worst; and though I hope I have wronged no man, yet in Medea's words I will crave pardon.

"—Hud jam voce extrema pote,
Ne si qua noster dubius effudit dolor,
Maneat in amno verba, sed melior tibi
Memoria nostri subeat, haec irre data
Obliterentur——"

And in my last words this I do desire,
That what in passion I have said, or err,
May be forgotten, and a better mind
Be had of us, hereafter as you find.

I earnestly request every private man, as Scaliger did Cardan not to take
offence. I will conclude in his lines, Si me cognitum haberes, non solum
donares nobis has fucetis nostras, sed etiam indignum duceres, tam humanum
animum, leue ingenium, vel minimam suspicionem deprecari oportere. If thou
knewest my * modesty and simplicity, thou wouldst easily pardon and for-
give what is here amiss, or by thee misconceived. If hereafter anatomizing
this surly humour, my hand slip, as an unskilful 'prentice I lance too deep,
and cut through skin and all at unawares, make it smart, or cut awry, * pardon
a rude hand, an unskilful knife, 'tis a most difficult thing to keep an even tone,
a perpetual tenor, and not sometimes to lash out; difficile est Satyram non
scribere, there be so many objects to divert, inward perturbations to molest,
and the very best may sometimes err; aliquando bonus dormitatur Homerus
(sometimes that excellent Homer takes a nap), it is impossible not in so much
to overshoot; —oper in longo fas est obrepere somnum. But what needs
all this? I hope there will no such cause of offence be given; if there be,
"d Nemo aliquid recognoscat, nos mentimur omnia. I'll deny all (my last
refuge), recant all, renounce all I have said, if any man except, and with as
much facility excuse, as he can accuse; but I presume of thy good favour,
and gracious acceptance (gentle reader). Out of an assured hope and confi-
dence thereof, I will begin.

* Quod Prob. Persii flori yapos virginali verecundia Persium faise dicit, ego, &c. * Qas aut
Incuria fudit, aut humana parum curit natura. Hor.
* Pra. quer. Plaut. "Let not any one take
these things to himself, they are all but fictions."
LECTORI MALÈ FERIATO.

Tu vero cavesi edico quisquis es, ne temere sugilles Auctorem hujusce operis, aut cavillator irrides. Imo ne vel ex aliorum censura tacite obloquaris (vis dicam verbo) ne quid nasutulus inepte improbes, aut falso fingas. Nam si talis reverà sit, qualem præ se fert Junior Democritus, seniori Democrito saltem affinis, aut ejus Geninum vel tantillum sapiat; actum de te, censorem æque ac delatorem aget e contra (petulantì splenci cum sit), suffabit te in jocos, commii-nuet in sales, addo etiam, et deo risui te sacificabit.

Iterum moneo, ne quid cavilere, nedum Democritum Juniorem convicis infames, aut ignominiose vitupere, de te non male sentientem: tu idem audias ab amico cordate, quod olim vulgus Abderitanum ab Hippocrate, concivem bene meritum et popularem suum Democritum, pro insano habens. Ne tu Democide sapis, studii autem et insani Abderitas.

"Abderitani pectora plebis habes."

Hæc te paucis admonitum vole (malè feriate Lector), abi.

TO THE READER AT LEISURE.

Whoever you may be, I caution you against rashly defaming the author of this work, or cavilling in jest against him. Nay, do not silently reproach him in consequence of others' censure, nor employ your wit in foolish disapproval, or false accusation. For, should Democritus Junior prove to be what he professes, even a kinsman of his elder namesake, or be ever so little of the same kidney, it is all over with you: he will become both accuser and judge of you in your spleen, will dissipate you in jests, pulverise you into salt, and sacrifice you, I can promise you, to the god of Mirth.

I further advise you, not to asperse, or calumniate, or slander, Democritus Junior, who possibly does not think ill of you, lest you may hear from some discreet friend, the same remark the people of Abdera did from Hippocrates, of their meritorious and popular fellow-citizen, whom they had looked on as a madman; "It is not that you, Democritus, that art wise, but that the people of Abdera are fools and madmen." "You have yourself an Abderitian soul;" and having just given you, gentle reader, these few words of admonition, farewell,

Si me commorit, melius non tangere clamo. Hor. Hippoc. epist. Damageito. Accersitus sam ut Democritum tanquam insanum cararem, sed postquam conveni, non per Jovem desipientiae negotium, sed rerum omnium receptaculum deprehendi, ijsque ingenium demutatus sam. Abderitanos vero tanquam non sanus accusavi, veratì potione epsos potius eguisse dicens. Mart.
Heraclite fleas, misero sic convenit avo,
    Nil nisi turpe vides, nil nisi triste vides.
Ride etiam, quantumque lubet, Democrite ride,
    Non nisi vana vides, non nisi stulta vides.
Is fletu, hic risu modò gaudeat, unus utrique
    Sit licet usque labor, sit licet usque dolor.
Nunc opus est (nam totus eheu jam desipit orbis)
    Mille Heraclitis, milleque Democritis.
Nunc opus est (tanta est insania) transeat omnis
    Mundus in Anticyras, gramen in Helleborum.

Weep, O Heraclitus, it suits the age,
    Unless you see nothing base, nothing sad.
Laugh, O Democritus, as much as you please,
    Unless you see nothing either vain or foolish.
Let one rejoice in smiles, the other in tears;
    Let the same labour or pain be the office of both.
Now (for alas! how foolish the world has become),
    A thousand Heraclitus', a thousand Democritus' are required.
Now (so much does madness prevail), all the world must be
    Sent to Anticyra, to graze on Hellebore.
THE
SYNOPSIS OF THE FIRST PARTITION.

In diseases, consider Sect. 1. Memb. 1. Or

Their Causes, Subs. 1. Impulsive; Sin, concupiscence, &c.
Or Instrumental; Intemperance, all second causes, &c.
Or Of the body 300, which are Epidemical, as Plague, Plica, &c. or
Or Particular, as Gout, Dropsy, &c. In disposition; as all perturbations, evil affection, &c.

Definition, Member, Division. Of the body (Epidemical, as Plague, Plica, &c. 300, which are 1r>°^-)
Or Of the head or mind. (Particular, as Gout, Dipsy, &c. In disposition; as all perturbations, evil affection, &c.
Or Of the head or mind. (Particular, as Gout, Dipsy, &c. In disposition; as all perturbations, evil affection, &c.

Or Melancholy. See φ.

Its Equivocations, in Disposition, Improper, &c. Subsect. 5.
Memb. 2. To its explication, a digression of anatomy, in which observe parts of Subs. 1. Body parts (or contained as) Humours, 4. Blood, Phlegm, &c. or Spirits; vital, natural, animal. Similar; spermatical, or flesh, bones, nerves, &c. Subs. 3. Dissimilar; brain, heart, liver, &c. Subs. 4. Vegetal. Subs. 5. Sensible. Subs. 6, 7, 8. Rational. Subsect. 9, 10, 11.

Memb. 3. Its definition, name, difference, Subs. 1. The part and parties affected, affectionation, &c. Subs. 2. The matter of melancholy, natural, unnatural, &c. Subs. 4.
Species, or kinds, which are Properto Of the head alone, Hypochondriacal, or windy melancholy. Of the whole body. with their several causes, symptoms, prognostics, cures, or
Or Indefinite; as Love-melancholy, the subject of the third Partition.

Its Causes in general. Sect. 2. A. Its Symptoms or signs. Sect. 3. B. Its Prognostics or indications. Sect. 4. 4. Its cures; the subject of the second Partition.
Synopsis of the First Partition.

A. Sect. 2. Causes of Melancholy are either

1. Supernatural.
   - As from God immediately, or by second causes. Subs. 1.
   - Or from the devil immediately, with a digression of the nature of spirits and devils. Subs. 2.
   - Or mediately, by magicians, witches. Subs. 3.

Primary, as stars, proved by aphorisms, signs from physiognomy, metoposcopy, chiromancy. Subs. 4.

Congenitae, or
   - Old age, temperament, Subs. 5.
   - Parents, it being an hereditary disease, from Subs. 6.

Necessary, see §.
   - Nurses, Subs. 1.
   - Education, Subs. 2.
   - Terrors, affrights, Subs. 3.
   - Scroffs, calumnies, bitterjests, Subs. 4.
   - Loss of liberty, servitude, imprisonment, Subs. 5.
   - Poverty and want, Subs. 6.
   - A heap of other accidents, death of friends, loss, &c. Subs. 7.

In which the body works on the mind, and this malady is caused by precedent diseases; as agues, pox, &c., or temperature innate, Subs. 1.
   - Or by particular parts distempered, as brain, heart, spleen, liver, mesentery, pylorus, stomach, &c. Subs. 2.

Particular to the three species. See §.

Inward
   - Innate humour, or from distemperate adult.
   - A hot brain, corrupted blood in the brain.
   - Excess of venery, or defect.
   - Agues, or some precedent disease.
   - Fumes arising from the stomach, &c.

Or

Of head Melancholy are, Subs. 3.
   - Of hypochondriacal, or windy Melancholy are,

   - Inward
     - Default of spleen, belly, bowels, stomach, mesentery, miseraic veins, liver, &c.
     - Months or hemorrhoids stopped, or any other ordinary evacuation.
     - Those six non-natural things abused.

   - Outward
     - Liver distempered, stopped, over-hot, apt to engender melancholy, temperature innate.
     - Bad diet, suppression of hemorrhoids, &c., and such evacuations, passions, cares, &c., those six non-natural things abused.

   - Outward
     - Heat of the sun immoderate.
     - A blow on the head.
     - Overmuch use of hot wines, spices, garlic, onions, hot baths, overmuch waking, &c.
     - Idleness, solitariness, or overmuch study, vehement labour, &c.
     - Passions, perturbations, &c.

   - Outward

   - Over all the body are, Subs. 5.

   - Inward

   - Outward.
Synopsis of the First Partition

79

Bread; coarse and black, &c.

Drink; thick, thin, sour, &c.

Water unclean, milk, oil, vinegar, wine, spices, &c.

Flesh

(Parts; heads, feet, entrails, fat, bacon, blood, &c.

Kinds; Beef, pork, venison, hares, goats, pigeons, peacocks, fowl, &c.

Herbs; Of fish; all shell-fish, hard and slimy fish, &c.

Fish; Of herds; pulse, cabbage, melons, garlic, onions, &c.

(All roots, raw fruits, hard and windy meats.

Preparing; dressing, sharp sauces, salt meats, indurate, soured, fried, broiled, or made dishes, &c.

Disorder in eating, immediate eating, or at unseasonable times, &c., Subs. 2.

Costiveness, hot baths, sweating, issues stopped, Venus in excess, or in defect, phlebotomy, purging, &c.


8 Necessary cau ses, as those six non-natural things, which are,

Memor. 3. Sect. 2. Passions and perturbations of the mind. Subs. 2. With a digression of the force of imagination. Subs. 2, and division of passions into, Subs. 3.

Irrascible

Enrages.

or

Concupis
cible.

Sanguine are merry still, laughing, pleasant, meditating on plays, women, music, &c.

Phlegmatic, slothful, dull, heavy, &c.

Choleric, furious, impatient, subject to hear and see strange apparitions, &c.

Black, solitary, sad; they think they are bewitched, dead, &c.

Ambitions, thinks himself a king, a lord; covetous, runs on his money; lascivious, on his mistress; religious, hath revelations, visions, is a prophet, or troubled in mind; a scholar, on his book, &c.

Pleasant at first, hardly disconcerted; afterwards harsh and intolerable, if inveigle.

Hence some make

1. Falsa cogitatio.

2. Cogitatia loquii.

3. Excessus loquemtum.

By fits, or continue, as the object varies, pleasing, or displeasing.

Table

Diet offending in Subs. 3.

Qualities in Subs. 4.

Quantity in Subs. 4.

Retention and evacuation in Subs. 7.

Sleep and waking, unseasonable, inordinate, overmuch, overlittle, &c., Subs. 7.

Body, as ill digestion, crudity, wind, dry brains, hard belly, thick blood, much waking, heaviness and palpitation of heart, leaping in many places, &c., Subs. 1.

Fear and sorrow without a just cause, suspicion, jealousy, discontent, solitariness, ickiness, continual cogitations, restless thoughts, vain imaginations, &c., Subs. 2.

Celestial influences, as & 4, &c., parts of the body, heart, brain, liver, spleen, stomach, &c.

Sanguine are merry still, laughing, pleasant, meditating on plays, women, music, &c.

Phlegmatic, slothful, dull, heavy, &c.

Choleric, furious, impatient, subject to hear and see strange apparitions, &c.

Black, solitary, sad; they think they are bewitched, dead, &c.

Or mixed of these four humours adust, or not adust, infinitely varied, &c.

Their several customs, conditions, inclinations, discipline, &c.

Ambitions, thinks himself a king, a lord; covetous, runs on his money; lascivious, on his mistress; religious, hath revelations, visions, is a prophet, or troubled in mind; a scholar, on his book, &c.

Pleasant at first, hardly disconcerted; afterwards harsh and intolerable, if inveigle.

Hence some make

1. Falsa cogitatio.

2. Cogitatia loquii.

3. Excessus loquemtum.

By fits, or continue, as the object varies, pleasing, or displeasing.

Simple, or as it is mixed with other diseases, apoplexy, gout, caninus appetitus, &c., so the symptoms are various.
Particular symptoms to the three distinct species. Sect. 3. Memb. 2.

Head melancholy. Subs. 1.

In body

Head, binding and heaviness, vertigo, lightness, singing of the ears, much waking, fixed eyes, high colour, red eyes, hard belly, dry body; no great sign of melancholy in the other parts.

In mind.

Continual fear, sorrow, suspicion, discontent, superfluous cares, solicitude, anxiety, perpetual cogitation of such toys they are possessed with, thoughts like dreams, &c.

Hypochondriacal, or windy melancholy. Subs. 2.

In body

Wind, rumbling in the guts, belly-ach, heat in the bowels, convulsions, crudities, short wind, sour and sharp belchings, cold sweat, pain in the left side, suffocation, palpitation, heaviness of the heart, singing in the ears, much spittle, and moist, &c.

In mind.

Fearful, sad, suspicions, discontent, anxiety, &c. Lascivious by reason of much wind, troublesome dreams, affected by fits, &c.

Over all the body. Subs. 3.

In body

Black, most part lean, broad veins, gross, thick blood, their hemorrhoids commonly stopped, &c.

In mind.

Fearful, sad, solitary, hate light, averse from company, fearful dreams, &c.

Symptoms of nuns', maids', and widows' melancholy, in body and mind, &c.

A reason of these symptoms. Memb. 3.

Why they are so fearful, sad, suspicious without a cause, why solitary, why melancholy men are witty, why they suppose they hear and see strange voices, visions, apparitions.

Why they prophesy, and speak strange languages; whence comes their crudity, rumbling, convulsions, cold sweat, heaviness of heart, palpitation, cardiaca, fearful dreams, much waking, prodigious fantasies.

C. Prognostics of melancholy. Sect. 4.

Tending to good, as

Morphew, scabs, itch, breaking out, &c.

Black jaundice.

If the hemorrhoids voluntarily open.

If varices appear.

Tending to evil, as

Leanness, dryness, hollow-eyed, &c.

Inveretate melancholy is incurable.

If cold, it degenerates often into epilepsy, apoplexy, dotage, or into blindness.

If hot, into madness, despair, and violent death.

The grievousness of this above all other diseases.

The diseases of the mind are more grievous than those of the body.

Whether it be lawful, in this case of melancholy, for a man to offer violence to himself. Neg.

How a melancholy or mad man offering violence to himself, is to be censured.
THE FIRST SECTION, MEMBER, SUBSECTION.

Man’s Excellency, Fall, Miseries, Infirmities; The causes of them.

Man’s Excellency.] Man, the most excellent and noble creature of the world, “the principal and mighty work of God, wonder of nature,” as Zoroaster calls him; audacis nature miraculum, “the marvel of marvels,” as Plato; the abridgment and epitome of the world, as Pliny; Microcosmus, a little world, a model of the world, sovereign lord of the earth, viceroy of the world, sole commander and governor of all the creatures in it; to whose empire they are subject in particular, and yield obedience; far surpassing all the rest, not in body only, but in soul; Imagines Imago, created to God’s own Image, to that immortal and incorporeal substance, with all the faculties and powers belonging unto it; was at first pure, divine, perfect, happy, created after God in true holiness and righteousness; Deo congruens, free from all manner of infirmities, and put in Paradise to know God, to praise and glorify him, to do his will, Ut dis consimiles parturiat deos (as an old poet saith) to propagate the church.

Man’s Fall and Misery.] But this most noble creature, Hic tristis, et lachrymosa commutatio (one exclaims) O pitiful change! is fallen from that he was, and forfeited his estate, become miserabilis homuncio, a cast-away, a caiffit, one of the most miserable creatures of the world, if he be considered in his own nature, an unregenerate man, and so much obscured by his fall that (some few relics excepted) he is inferior to a beast, Man in honour that understandeth not, is like unto beasts that perish,” so David esteemeth him: a monster by stupend metamorphosis, a fox, a dog, a hog, what not? Quantum mutatus ab illo? How much altered from that he was; before blessed and happy, now miserable and accursed; “He must eat his meat in sorrow,” subject to death and all manner of infirmities, all kind of calamities.

A Description of Melancholy.] “Great travail is created for all men, and an heavy yoke on the sons of Adam, from the day that they go out of their mother’s womb, unto that day they return to the mother of all things. Namely, their thoughts, and fear of their hearts, and their imagination of things they wait for, and the day of death. From him that sitteth in the glorious throne,
Diseases in General.

[Part 1. Sect. 1,

**to him that sitteth beneath in the earth and ashes; from him that is clothed in blue silk and weareth a crown, to him that is clothed in simple linen. Wrath, envy, trouble, and unquietness, and fear of death, and rigour, and strife, and such things come to both man and beast, but sevenfold to the ungodly." All this befalls him in this life, and peradventure eternal misery in the life to come.

**Impulsive Cause of Man's Misery and Infirmities.**] The impulsive cause of these miseries in Man, this privation of destruction of God's image, the cause of death and diseases, of all temporal and eternal punishments, was the sin of our first parent Adam, "in eating of the forbidden fruit, by the devil's instigation and allurement. His disobedience, pride, ambition, intemperance, incredulity, curiosity; from whence proceeded original sin, and that general corruption of mankind, as from a fountain flowed all bad inclinations and actual transgressions which cause our several calamities inflicted upon us for our sins. And this belike is that which our fabulous poets have shadowed unto us in the tale of "Pandora's box, which being opened through her curiosity, filled the world full of all manner of diseases. It is not curiosity alone, but those other crying sins of ours, which pull these several plagues and miseries upon our heads. For *Ubi pecatum, ibi procella,* as *Chrysostom well observes. "*Fools by reason of their transgression, and because of their iniquities, are afflicted. "*Fear cometh like sudden desolation, and destruction like a whirlwind, affliction and anguish," because they did not fear God, "*Are you shaken with wars?" as Cyprian well urgeth to Demetrius, "*are you molested with death and famine? is your health crushed with raging diseases? is mankind generally tormented with epidemic maladies? 'tis all for your sins," Hag. i. 9, 10; Amos i.; Jer. vii. "*God is angry, punisheth and threateneth, because of their obstinacy and stubbornness, they will not turn unto him. "*If the earth be barren then for want of rain, if dry and squalid, it yield no fruit, if your fountains be dried up, your wine, corn, and oil blasted, if the air be corrupted, and men troubled with diseases, 'tis by reason of their sins:" which like the blood of Abel cry loud to heaven for vengeance, Lam. v. 15. "*That we have sinned, therefore our hearts are heavy," Isa. lix. 11, 12. "*We roar like bears, and mourn like doves, and want health, &c. for our sins and trespasses." But this we cannot endure to hear or to take notice of, Jer. ii. 30. "*We are smitten in vain and receive no correction," and cap. v. 3. "*Thou hast stricken them, but they have not sorrowed; they have refused to receive correction; they have not returned. Pestilence he hath sent, but they have not turned to him," Amos iv. "*Herod could not abide John Baptist, nor *Domitian endure Apollonius to tell the causes of the plague at Ephesus, his injustice, incest, adultery, and the like.

To punish therefore this blindness and obstinacy of ours as a concomitant cause and principal agent, is God's just judgment in bringing these calamities upon us, to chastise us, I say, for our sins, and to satisfy God's wrath. For the law requires obedience or punishment, as you may read at large, Deut. xxviii. 15. "*If they will not obey the Lord, and keep his commandments and ordinances, then all these curses shall come upon them. *Cursed in the town and in the field, &c. *Cursed in the fruit of the body, &c. "*The Lord shall send thee trouble and shame, because of thy wickedness." And a little after, "*The Lord shall smite thee with the botch of Egypt, and with emrods, and

---

*a* Gen. iii. 17.  
*b* II. vi. 10.  
*c* I-II. ix. 10.  
*d* Ps. civ. 17.  
*e* Ex. ii. 27.  
*f* Quod autem ebrietatis bella consequunt, quod stultitiae et fames sollicitudinem cumulant, quod saevitiae merebatur frangitur, quod humanum genus longe populacione vastatur; ob pecatum omnia. Cypr. *g* Si rare despersa pluvia descendit, si terra sua pulviscuit, si vix jejunum et palliabas herbis sterilis glabra producta, si tenebris inecubit. &c. Cypr. *h* Matt. xiv. 3.  
*i* Philostratus, lib. ii. 8. v. Apollod.  
*j* Insaniam ejus, et sedecratus nativitas, et concarn quae prater rationem fecerat, morborum causis dict.  
*k* 16.  
*l* 18.  
*m* 20.  
*n* Verse 27.
scab, and itch, and thou canst not be healed. "With madness, blindness, and astonishing of heart." This Paul seconds, Rom. ii. 9, "Tribulation and anguish on the soul of every man that doth evil." Or else these chastisements are inflicted upon us for our humiliation, to exercise and try our patience here in this life, to bring us home, to make us to know God ourselves, to inform and teach us wisdom. "Therefore is my people gone into captivity, because they had no knowledge; therefore is the wrath of the Lord kindled against his people, and he hath stretched out his hand upon them." He is desirous of our salvation. "Nostrae salutis avidus, saith Lemnius, and for that cause pulls us by the ear many times, to put us in mind of our duties: "That they which erred might have understanding, (as Isaiah speaks xxxix. 24) and so to be reformed. I am afflicted, and at the point of death," so David confesseth of himself, Psalm lixxxvii. v. 15, v. 9. "Mine eyes are sorrowful through mine affliction:" and that made him turn unto God. Great Alexander in the midst of all his prosperity, by a company of parasites defied, and now made a god, when he saw one of his wounds bleed, remembered that he was but a man, and remitted of his pride. In morbo recolliget se animus," as Pliny well perceived; "In sickness the mind reflects upon itself, with judgment surveys itself; and abhors its former courses;" insomuch that he concludes to his friend Marius, "that it were the period of all philosophy, if we could so continue, sound, or perform but a part of that which we promised to do, being sick." Whoso is wise then, will consider these things, as David did (Psal. cxliv., verse last); and whatsoever fortune befal him, make use of it. If he be in sorrow, need, sickness, or any other adversity, seriously to recount with himself, why this or that malady, misery, this or that incurable disease is inflicted upon him; it may be for his good, "sic expedit, as Peter said of his daughter's ague. Bodily sickness is for his soul's health, perisset nisi perisset, had he not been visited, he had utterly perished; for "the Lord correcteth him whom he loveth, even as a father doth his child in whom he delighteth." If he be safe and sound on the other side, and free from all manner of infirmity; "et evi

Yet in the midst of his prosperity, let him remember that caveat of Moses, "Beware that he do not forget the Lord his God;" that he be not puffed up, but acknowledge them to be his good gifts and benefits, and "the more he hath, to be more thankful," (as Agapetianus adviseth) and use them aright.

**Instrumental Causes of our Infirmities.**] Now the instrumental causes of these our infirmities, are as diverse as the infirmities themselves; stars, heavens, elements, &c. And all those creatures which God hath made, are armed against sinners. They were indeed once good in themselves, and that they are now many of them pernicious unto us, is not in their nature, but our corruption, which hath caused it. For from the fall of our first parent Adam, they have been changed, the earth accursed, the influence of stars altered, the four elements, beasts, birds, plants, are now ready to offend us. "The principal things for the use of man, are water, fire, iron, salt, meal, wheat, honey, milk, oil, wine, clothing, good to the gouty, to the sinners turned to evil," Ecclus. xxxix. 26. "Fire, and hail, and famine, and dearth, all these are created

---

for vengeance," Ecclus. xxxix. 29. The heavens threaten us with their comets, stars, planets, with their great conjunctions, eclipses, oppositions, quartiles, and such unfriendly aspects. The air with his meteors, thunder and lightning, intemperate heat and cold, mighty winds, tempests, unseasonable weather; from which proceed death, famine, plague, and all sorts of epidemical diseases, consuming infinite myriads of men. At Cairo in Egypt, every third year, (as it is related by Boterus, and others) 300,000 die of the plague; and 200,000, in Constantinople, every fifth or seventh at the utmost. How doth the earth terrify and oppress us with terrible earthquakes, which are most frequent in China, Japan, and those eastern climes, swelling up sometimes six cities at once? How doth the water rage with his inundations, irruptions, flinging down towns, cities, villages, bridges, &c., besides shipwrecks; whole islands are sometimes suddenly overwhelmed with all their inhabitants in Zealand, Holland, and many parts of the continent drowned, as the lake Erne in Ireland? "Nihilque prae ter arcum cadavera potenti cerinium freto. In the lens of Friesland 1230, by reason of tempests, "the sea drowned multa hominum millia, et jumenta sine numero, all the country almost, men and cattle in it. How doth the fire rage, that merciless element, consuming in an instant whole cities? What town of any antiquity or note hath not been once, again and again, by the fury of this merciless element, defaced, ruined, and left desolate? In a word,

"Ignis pepercit, unda mergit, aeris
Vit pesterlentia negru crepatus necat,
Bello sapertat, tabulas morbo perit." | "Whom fire spares, sea doth drown; whom sea,
Postient ar doth send to clay;
Whom war'scapes, sickness takes away."

To descend to more particulars, how many creatures are at deadly feud with men? Lions, wolves, bears, &c. Some with hoofs, horns, tusks, teeth, nails: How many noxious serpents and venomous creatures, ready to offend us with stings, breath, sight, or quite kill us? How many pernicious fishes, plants, gums, fruits, seeds, flowers, &c., could I reckon up on a sudden, which by their very smell many of them, touch, taste, cause some grievous malady, if not death itself? Some make mention of a thousand several poisons: but these are but trifles in respect. The greatest enemy to man, is man, who by the devil's instigation is still ready to do mischief, his own executioner, a wolf, a devil to himself, and others.* We are all brethren in Christ, or at least should be, members of one body, servants of one Lord, and yet no fiend can so torment, insult over, tyrannize, vex, as one man doth another. Let me not fall therefore (saith David, when wars, plague, famine were offered) into the hands of men, merciless and wicked men:

† "Vix sunt homines loc nominem digni,
Quibus lapid, sese plus feratialis habent."

We can most part foresee these epidemical diseases, and likely avoid them; Dearts, tempests, plagues, our astrologers foretell us; Earthquakes, inundations, ruins of houses, consuming fires, come by little and little, or make some noise beforehand; but the knaveries, impostures, injuries and villanies of men no art can avoid. We can keep our professed enemies from our cities, by gates, walls, and towers, defend ourselves from thieves and robbers by watchfulness and weapons; but this malice of men, and their pernicious endeavours, no caution can divert, no vigilance foresee, we have so many secret plots and devices to mischief one another.

Sometimes by the devil's help as magicians, witches; sometimes by impos-

---

Diseases in General.

utes, mixtures, poisons, stratagems, single combats, wars, we hack and hew, as if we were ad internecionem nati, like Cadmus' soldiers born to consume one another. 'Tis an ordinary thing to read of a hundred and two hundred thousand men slain in a battle. Besides all manner of tortures, brazen bulks, racks, wheels, strapadoes, guns, engines, &c. "Ad unum corpus humanum supplicia plura, quam membra: We have invented more torturing instruments, than there be several members in a man's body, as Cyprian well observes. To come nearer yet, our own parents by their offences, indiscretion and intemperance, are our mortal enemies. "The fathers have eaten sour grapes, and the children's teeth are set on edge." They cause our grief many times, and put upon us hereditary diseases, inevitable infirmities: they torment us, and we are ready to injure our posterity;

"—max daturi progeniem vitiosorem." | "And yet with crimes to us unknown, Our sons shall mark the coming age their own."

and the latter end of the world, as Paul foretold, is still like to be the worst. We are thus bad by nature, bad by kind, but far worse by art, every man the greatest enemy unto himself. We study many times to undo ourselves, abusing those good gifts which God hath bestowed upon us, health, wealth, strength, wit, learning, art, memory to our own destruction, "Perdito tua ex te. As Judas Maccabees killed Apollonius with his own weapons, we arm ourselves to our own overthrows; and use reason, art, judgment, all that should help us, as so many instruments to undo us. Hector gave Ajax a sword, which so long as he fought against enemies, served for his help and defence; but after he began to hurt harmless creatures with it, turned to his own hurtlessbowels. Those excellent means God hath bestowed on us, well employed, cannot but much avail us; but if otherwise perverted, they ruin and confound us: and so by reason of our indiscretion and weakness they commonly do, we have too many instances. This St. Austin acknowledgeth of himself in his humble confessions, "promptness of wit, memory, eloquence, they were God's good gifts, but he did not use them to his glory." If you will particularly know how, and by what means, consult physicians, and they will tell you, that it is in offending in some of those six non-natural things, of which I shall "dilate more at large; they are the causes of our infirmities, our surfeiting, and drunkenness, our immoderate insatiable lust, and prodigious riot. Plures crapula, quam gladius, is a true saying, the board consumes more than the sword. Our intemperance it is, that pulls so many several incurable diseases upon our heads, that hastens "old age, perverts our temper-ature, and brings upon us sudden death. And last of all, that which crucifies us most, is our own folly, madness, (quos Jupiter perdit, dementat; by subtraktion of his assisting grace God permits it) weakness, want of government, our facility and promiscuity in yielding to several lusts, in giving way to every passion and perturbation of the mind: by which means we metamorphose ourselves and degenerate into beasts. All which that prince of poets observed of Agamemnon, that when he was well-pleased, and could moderate his passion, he was—os oculosque Jovi par: like Jupiter in feature, Mars in valour, Pallas in wisdom, another god; but when he became angry, he was a lion, a tiger, a dog, &c., there appeared no sign or likeness of Jupiter in him; so we, as long as we are ruled by reason, correct our inordinate appetite, and conform ourselves to God's word, are as so many saints; but if we give reins to lust, anger, ambition, pride, and follow our own ways, we degenerate into beasts,

a Lib. 2. Epist. 2. ad Donatum. *Ezech. xviii. 2. b Hor. 1. 3 Od. 6. *2 Tim. iii. 2.
Neculit qui ut non sint esse scemn. d Homer. Iliad.
transform ourselves, overthrow our constitutions, provoke God to anger, and heap upon us this of melancholy, and all kinds of incurable diseases, as a just and deserved punishment of our sins.

SUBSEC. II.—The Definition, Number, Division of Diseases.

What a disease is, almost every physician defines. Fernelius calleth it an "Affection of the body contrary to nature." Fuschius and Crato, "an hindrance, hurt, or alteration of any action of the body, or part of it." Tho-losanus, "a dissolution of that league which is between body and soul, and a perturbation of it; as health the perfection, and makes to the preservation of it." Labeo in Agellius, "an ill habit of the body, opposite to nature, hindering the use of it." Others otherwise, all to this effect.

Number of Diseases. How many diseases there are, is a question not yet determined; Pliny reckons up 300 from the crown of the head to the sole of the foot: elsewhere he saith, morborum infinita multitude, their number is infinite. Howsoever it was in those times, it boots not; in our days I am sure the number is much augmented:

For besides many epidemical diseases unheard of, and altogether unknown to Galen and Hippocrates, as scorbustum, small-pox, plica, sweating sickness, morbus Gallicus, &c., we have many proper and peculiar almost to every part.

No man free from some Disease or other. No man amongst us so sound, of so good a constitution, that hath not some impediment of body or mind. What say Pliny, that may happily live 105 years without any manner of impediment; a Pollio Romulus, that can preserve himself "with wine and oil;" a man as fortunate as Q. Metellus, of whom Valerius so much brags; a man as healthy as Otto Herwardus, a senator of Augsburg in Germany, whom Leovitius the astrologer brings in for an example and instance of certainty in his art; who because he had the significators in his geniture fortunate, and free from the hostile aspects of Saturn and Mars, being a very cold man, "could not remember that ever he was sick." Paracelsus may brag that he could make a man live 400 years or more, if he might bring him up from his infancy, and diet him as he list; and some physicians hold, that there is no certain period of man's life; but it may still by temperance and physic be prolonged. We find in the meantime, by common experience, that no man can escape, but that of Hesiod is true:

"Maien m'en για τον καικόν, πλειά δέ δάκσασα, Ναφιών δ' άλλ' αυτάσι έν χ' ἤμπρη, η' κ' έι νατι "Automato poieti天鹅。

"Th' earth's full of maladies, and full the seas, Which set upon us both by night and day."

Division of Diseases. If you require a more exact division of these ordinary diseases which are incident to men, I refer you to physicians; they will tell you of acute and chronic, first and secondary, lethales, salutares, errant, fixed, simple, compound, connexed, or consequent, belonging to parts or the whole, in

---

6 Def., Num., Div. of Diseases. [Part. 1. Sec. 1.]

---

a Intemperantia, luxus, inglacies, et infinita hujusmodi flagitia, que divinas pecnas mercenar. Crato.


* See Fernelius Path. lib. 1. cap. 9. 10, 11, 12. Fuschius instit. 1. 3. sect. 1. c. 7. Wecker. synt.
habit, or in disposition, &c. My division at this time (as most befitting my purpose) shall be into those of the body and mind. For them of the body, a brief catalogue of which Fusciius hath made, Institut. lib. 3, sect. 1, cap. 11. I refer you to the voluminous tomes of Galen, Areten, Rhasius, Avicenna, Alexander, Paulus Aetius, Gordinerius: and those exact Neoterics, Savannahola, Capivaccius, Donatus Altomarus, Hercules de Saxonia, Mercurialis, Victorius Faventius, Wecker, &c., that have methodically and elaborately written of them all. Those of the mind and head I will briefly handle, and apart.

**Subsect. III.**—Division of the Diseases of the Head.

These diseases of the mind, forasmuch as they have their chief seat and organs in the head, which are commonly repeated amongst the diseases of the head which are divers, and vary much according to their site. For in the head, as there be several parts, so there be divers grievances, which according to that division of Henrirns, (which he takes out of Arculanus,) are inward or outward (to omit all others which pertain to eyes and ears, nostrils, gums, teeth, mouth, palate, tongue, vesel, chops, face, &c.) belonging properly to the brain, as baldness, falling of hair, furfaire, lice, &c. Inward belonging to the skins next to the brain, called dura and pia mater, as all head-aches, &c., or to the ventricles, caules, kels, tunicles, cresses, and parts of it, and their passions, as caro, vertigo, incubus, apoplexy, falling sickness. The diseases of the nerves, cramps, stupor, convulsion, tremor, palsy: or belonging to the excrements of the brain, catarrhs, sneezing, rheums, distillations: or else those that pertain to the substance of the brain itself, in which are conceived frenzy, lethargy, melancholy, madness, weak memory, sopor, or Coma Vigilia et vigil Coma. Out of these again I will single such as properly belong to the phantasy, or imagination, or reason itself, which Laurentius calls the diseases of the mind; and Hildesheim, morbos imaginationis, aut rationis lesse, (diseases of the imagination, or of injured reason,) which are three or four in number, phrensy, madness, melancholy, dotage, and their kinds: as hydrophobia, lycanthropia, Chorus sancti viti, morbi demoniaci, (St. Vitus's dance, possession of devils,) which I will briefly touch and point at, insisting especially in this of melancholy, as more eminent than the rest, and that through all his kinds, causes, symptoms, prognostics, cures: as Louicerus hath done de apoplexiai, and many other of such particular diseases. Not that I find fault with those which have written of this subject before, as Jason Pratensis, Laurentius, Moutaltus, T. Bright, &c., they have done very well in their several kinds and methods; yet that which one omits, another may happily see; that which one contracts, another may enlarge. To conclude with Scribanis, “that which they had neglected, or profinctorily handled, we may more thoroughly examine; that which is obscurely delivered in them, may be perspicuously dilated and amplified by us:” and so made more familiar and easy for every man's capacity, and the common good, which is the chief end of my discourse.

**Subsect. IV.**—Dotage, Phrensy, Madness, Hydrophobia, Lycanthropia, Chorus sancti Viti, Extasis.

Delirium, Dotage.] Dotage, fituity, or folly, is a common name to all the following species, as some will have it. Laurentius and Altomarus comprehended madness, melancholy, and the rest under this name, and call it the

1 Prefat. de morbis capit. In capite ut vario habitant partes. Ha varia querula ibi evinient.
2 Of which read Henrirns, Mentalrus, Hildesheim, Querectan, Jason Pratensis, &c.
3 Cap. 2. del melanchol.
4 Cap. 2. de Phisiologia sagrum; Quod add minus recte fortasse dixist, nos examinare, melius judicarem, corrigitere studiumus.
5 Cap 4. de mol.
6 Art. Med. 7.
Diseases of the Mind.


sumnum genus of them all. If it be distinguished from them, it is natural or
ingenitive, which comes by some defect of the organs, and over-much brain, as
we see in our common fools; and is for the most part intended or remitted in
particular men, and thereupon some are wiser than others: or else it is acqui-
site, an appendix or symptom of some other disease, which comes or goes; or
if it continue, a sign of melancholy itself.

Phrensy.] Phrenitis, which the Greeks derive from the word ὑγές, is a
disease of the mind, with a continual madness or dotage, which hath an acute
fever annexed, or else an inflammation of the brain, or the membranes or
kels of it, with an acute fever, which causeth madness and dotage. It differs
from melancholy and madness, because their dotage is without an ague:
this continual, with waking, or memory decayed, &c. Melancholy is most
part silent, this clamorous; and many such like differences are assigned by
physicians.

Madness.] Madness, phrensy, and melancholy are confounded by Celsus
and many writers; others leave out phrensy, and make madness and melan-
choly but one disease, which 1Jason Pratensis especially labours, and that they
differ only secundum majus or minus, in quantity alone, the one being a degree to
the other, and both proceeding from one cause. They differ intenso et
remisso gradu, saith 2Gordonius, as the humour is intended or remitted. Of the
same mind is 3Arteius, Alexander Tertullianus, Guianerius, Savanarola, Heur-
nius; and Galen himself writes promiscuously of them both by reason of their
affinity: but most of our neoterics do handle them apart, whom I will follow in
this treatise. Madness is therefore defined to be a vehement dotage; or raving
without a fever, far more violent than melancholy, full of anger and clamour,
horrible looks, actions, gestures, troubling the patients with far greater vehe-

mency both of body and mind, without all fear and sorrow, with such impetuous
force and boldness, that sometimes three or four men cannot hold them.
Differing only in this from phrensy, that it is without a fever, and their memory
is most part better. It hath the same causes as the other, as choler adust,
and blood incensed, brains inflamed, &c. 4Fracastorius adds, “a due time,
and full age to this definition, to distinguish it from children, and will have it
confirmed impotency, to separate it from such as accidentally come and go
again, as by taking henbane, nightshade, wine,” &c. Of this fury there be
divers kinds; 5ecstasy, which is familiar with some persons, as Cardan saith of
himself, he could be in one when he list; in which the Indian priests deliver
their oracles, and the witches in Lapland, as Olaus Magnus writeth, 1. 3, cap.
18. Extasi omnia prædicere, answer all questions in an extasis you will ask;
what your friends do, where they are, how they fare, &c. The other species of
this fury are enthusiasms, revelations, and visions, so often mentioned by
Gregory and Beda in their works; obsession or possession of devils, sibylline
prophets, and poetical furies; such as come by eating noxious herbs, tarantulas’
stinging, &c., which some reduce to this. The most known are these, lycan-
thropia, hydrophobia, chorus sancti viti.

Lycanthropia.] Lycanthropia, which Avienca calls Cucubuth, others
Lupinam insaniam, or Wolf-madness, when men run howling about graves and
fields in the night, and will not be persuaded but that they are wolves, or
some such beasts. 6Ætius and 7Paulus call it a kind of melancholy; but I
should rather refer it to madness, as most do. Some make a doubt of it

1 Perique melius uno complexo perstringunt hos duos morbus, quod ex eadem causa oriuntur, quodque
magnitudine et modo solam distant, et alter gradus ad alterum existat. Jason Pratensis.
2 Lib. Med.
3 Pars mania mili videtar.
4 Insanas est, qui aptas debita, et tenebres debito per se, non momentanearum et fugacem, ut vini, solani, Hyoscyami, sed confirmatam habet impotientiam bene operandi circa intellectum.
5 Lib. 2. de intelliencis.
6 Of which read Felix Plater, cap. 3. de mentis alienatione.
7 Lib. 6. cap. 11.
whether there be any such disease. ¹Donat ab Altomari saith, that he saw
two of them in his time; ²Wierus tells a story of such a one at Padua 1541,
that would not believe to the contrary, but that he was a wolf. He hath
another instance of a Spaniard, who thought himself a bear; ³Forrestus
confirms as much by many examples; one amongst the rest of which he was
an eye-witness, at Alcmaer in Holland, a poor husbandman that still hunted
about graves, and kept in churchyards, of a pale, black, ugly, and fearful look.
Such belike, or little better, were King Pretrus' ⁴daughters, that thought
themselves kine. And Nebuchadnezzar in Daniel, as some interpreters hold,
was only troubled with this kind of madness. This disease perhaps gave occa-
sion to that bold assertion of ⁵Pliny, "some men were turned into wolves in his
time, and from wolves to men again:" and to that fable of Pansamias, of
a man that was ten years a wolf, and afterwards turned to his former shape:
to ⁶Ovid's tale of Lycon, &c. He that is desirous to hear of this disease, or
more examples, let him read Austin in his 18th book de Civitate Dei, cap. 5.
Mixalbus, cent. 5. 77. Skenkius, lib. 1. Hildesheim, spec. 2. de Mania.
Forrestus, lib. 10. de morbis cerebr. Olaus Magnus, l'Incentius Bellaviensis,
spec. &c. lib. 31. c. 122. Pierius, Bodine, Zuingier, Zeigler, Pencer, Wierus,
Spranger, &c. This malady, saith Avicenna, troubleth men most in February,
and is now-a-days frequent in Bohemia and Hungary, according to ⁷Heurnius.
Schmerzius will have it common in Livonia. They lie hid most part all day,
and go abroad in the night, barking, howling, at graves and deserts; ⁸"they
have usually hollow eyes, scabbed legs and thighs, very dry and pale," ⁹saith
Altomarus; he gives a reason there of all the symptoms, and sets down a
brief cure of them.

Hydrophobia is a kind of madness, well known in every village, which comes
by the biting of a mad dog, or scratching, saith ¹¹Aurelianus; touching, or
smelling alone sometimes as ¹²Skenkius proves, and is incident to many other
creatures as well as men: so called because the parties affected cannot endure
the sight of water, or any liquor, supposing still they see a mad dog in it.
And which is more wonderful; though they be very dry, (as in this malady
they are) they will rather die than drink: ¹³Celsius Aurelianus, an ancient
writer, makes a doubt whether this Hydrophobia be a passion of the body
or the mind. The part affected is the brain: the cause, poison that comes from
the mad dog, which is so hot and dry, that it consumes all the moisture in the
body. ¹⁴Hildesheim relates of some that died so mad; and being cut up, had
no water, scarce blood, or any moisture left in them. To such as are so
affected, the fear of water begins at fourteen days after they are bitten, to some
again not till forty or sixty days after: commonly saith Heurnius, they begin
to rave, fly water and glasses, to look red, and swell in the face, about twenty
days after (if some remedy be not taken in the meantime) to lie awake, to be
pensive, sad, to see strange visions, to bark and howl, to fall into a swoon,
and oftentimes fits of the falling sickness. ¹⁵Some say, little things like
whelps will be seen in their urine. If any of these signs appear, they are
past recovery. Many times these symptoms will not appear till six or seven
months after, saith ¹⁶Codronchus; and sometimes not till seven or eight years,
as Guianerius; twelve as Albertus; six or eight months after, as Galen holds.
Baldus the great lawyer died of it: an Augustine friar, and a woman in
Delft, that were ¹⁷Forrestus' patients, were miserably consumed with it. The

cap. 15. ⁴Hippocrates, lib. de insania. ⁵Lib. 8. cap. 22. homines interdum lupos fieri; et contra.
⁶Met. lib. 1. ⁷Cap. de Man. ⁸Observata curra, sitis ipsis adest immodica, pallidis, linguis alcoa.
⁹Cap. 9. art. Hydrophobia. ¹⁰Lib. 3. cap. 9. ¹¹Lib. 7. de Venenis. ¹²Lib. 3. Cap. 13. de morbis
acidus. ¹³Spencl. 2. ¹⁴Skenkius, lib. de Venenis. ¹⁵Lib. de Hydrophobia. ¹⁶Observat.
lib. 10. 25.
Diseases of the Mind.

[Part. 1. Sec. 1.

common cure in the country (for such at least as dwell near the sea-side) is to duck them over head and ears in sea water; some use charms: every good wife can prescribe medicines. But the best cure to be had in such cases, is from the most approved physicians; they that will read of them, may consult with Dioscorides, lib. 6. c. 37, Heurnius, Hildesheim, Capivaccius, Forrestus, Skenkius, and before all others Codronchus an Italian, who hath lately written two exquisite books on the subject.

Chorus sancti Viti, or S. Vitus' dance; the lascivious dance, *Paracelsus calls it, because they that are taken from it, can do nothing but dance till they be dead or cured. It is so called, for that the parties so troubled were wont to go to S. Vitus for help, and after they had danced there awhile, they were *certainly freed. *Tis strange to hear how long they will dance, and in what manner, over stools, forms, tables; even great bellied women sometimes (and yet never hurt their children) will dance so long that they can stir neither hand nor foot, but seem to be quite dead. One in red clothes they cannot abide. Music above all things they love, and therefore magistrates in Germany will hire musicians to play to them, and some lusty sturdy companions to dance with them. This disease hath been very common in Germany, as appears by those relations of *Skenkius, and Paracelsus in his book of madness, who brags how many several persons he hath cured of it. Felix Platerus de mentis alienat. cap. 3. reports of a woman in Basi whom he saw, that danced a whole month together. The Arabians call it a kind of palsy. Bodine in his 5th book de Repub. cap. 1, speaks of this infirmity; Monasius in his last epistle to Scoltius, and in another to Dudithus, where you may read more of it.

The last kind of madness or melancholy, is that demoniacal (if I may so call it) obsession or possession of devils, which Platerus and others would have to be preternatural: stupend things are said of them, their actions, gestures, contortions, fasting, prophesying, speaking languages they were never taught, &c. Many strange stories are related of them, which because some will not allow, (for Deacon and Darrel have written large volumes on this subject pro and con,) I voluntarily omit.

Fuscinus, institut. lib. 3. sec. 1. cap. 11, Felix Plater, *Laurentius, add to these another fury that proceeds from love, and another from study, another divine or religious fury; but these more properly belong to melancholy; of all which I will speak *apart, intending to write a whole book of them.

Subsect. V.—Melancholy in Disposition, improperly so called, Equivocations.

Melancholy, the subject of our present discourse, is either in disposition or habit. In disposition, is that transitory melancholy which goes and comes upon every small occasion of sorrow, need, sickness, trouble, fear, grief, passion, or perturbation of the mind, any manner of care, discontent, or thought, which causeth anguish, dulness, heaviness and vexation of spirit, any ways opposite to pleasure, mirth, joy, delight, causeth frowardness in us, or a dislike. In which equivocal and improper sense, we call him melancholy that is dull, sad, sour, lumpish, ill-disposed, solitary, any way moved, or displeased. And from these melancholy dispositions, 'no man living is free, no stoic, none so wise, none so happy, none so patient, so generous, so godly, so divine, that can vindicate himself; so well composed, but more or less, some time or
other he feels the smart of it. Melancholy in this sense is the character of mortality. "* Man that is born of a woman, is of short continuance, and full of trouble." Zeno, Cato, Socrates himself, whom *Elian so highly commend for a moderate temper, that "nothing could disturb him, but going out, and coming in, still Socrates kept the same serenity of countenance, what misery soever befel him," (if we may believe Plato his disciple) was much tormented with it. Q. Metellus, in whom * Valerius gives instance of all happiness, "the most fortunate man then living, born in that most flourishing city of Rome, of noble parentage, a proper man of person, well qualified, healthful, rich, honourable, a senator, a consul, happy in his wife, happy in his children," &c., yet this man was not void of melancholy, he had his share of sorrow. * Polycrates Samius, that flung his ring into the sea, because he would participate of discontent with others, and had it miraculously restored to him again shortly after, by a fish taken as he angled, was not free from melancholy dispositions. No man can cure himself; the very gods had bitter pangs, and frequent passions, as their own k poets put upon them. In general, "as the heaven, so is our life, sometimes fair, sometimes overcast, tempestuous, and serene; as in a rose, flowers and prickles; in the year itself, a temperate summer sometimes, a hard winter, a drought, and then again pleasant showers: so is our life intermixed with joys, hopes, fears, sorrows, calamities:" Invicem cedunt dolor et voluptas, there is a succession of pleasure and pain.

"Even in the midst of laughing there is sorrow" (as * Solomon holds): even in the midst of all our feasting and jollity, as, * Austin infers in his Com. on the 41st Psalm, there is grief and discontent. Inter delicias semper aliquid saevus nos strangulat, for a pint of honey thou shalt have likely find a gallon of gall, for a dram of pleasure a pound of pain, for an inch of mirth an ell of moan; as ivy doth an oak, these miseries encompass our life. And it is most absurd and ridiculous for any mortal man to look for a perpetual tenure of happiness in this life. Nothing so prosperous and pleasant, but it hath * some bitterness in it, some complaining, some grudging; it is all ychromasies, a mixed passion, and like a chequer table, black and white men, families, cities, have their falls and waves; now trines, sextiles, then quadriles and oppositions. We are not here as those angels, celestial powers and bodies, sun and moon, to finish our course without all offence, with such constancy, to continue for so many ages: but subject to infirmities, miseries, interrupted, tossed and tumbled up and down, carried about with every small blast, often molested and disquieted upon each slender occasion, * uncertain, brittle, and so is all that we trust unto. "And he that knows not this is not armed to endure it, is not fit to live in this world (as one confoles our time), he knows not the condition of it, where with a reciprocity, pleasure and pain are still united, and succeed one another in a ring." Exi e mundo, get thee gone hence if thou canst not;


brook it; there is no way to avoid it, but to arm thyself with patience, with magnanimity, to oppose thyself unto it, to suffer affliction as a good soldier of Christ; as "Paul adviseth constantly to bear it. But forasmuch as so few can embrace this so good counsel of his, or use it aright, but rather as so many brute beasts give a way to their passion, voluntary subject and precipitate themselves into a labyrinth of cares, woes, miseries, and suffer their souls to be overcome by them, cannot arm themselves with that patience as they ought to do, it falleth out oftentimes that these dispositions become habits, and "many affects contemned (as "Seneca notes) make a disease. Even as one distillation, not yet grown to custom, makes a cough; but continual and inveterate causeth a consumption of the lungs;" so do these our melancholy provocations: and according as the humour itself is intended, or remitted in men, as their temperature of body, or rational soul is better able to make resistance; so are they more or less affected. For that which is but a flabbiniting to one, causeth insufferable torment to another; and which one by its singular moderation, and well-composed carriage can happily overcome, a second is no whit able to sustain, but upon every small occasion of misconceived abuse, injury, grief, disgrace, loss, cross, humour, &c. (if solitary, or idle) yields so far to passion, that his complexion is altered, his digestion hindered, his sleep gone, his spirits obscured, and his heart heavy, his hypochondries misaffected; wind, crudity, on a sudden overtake him, and he himself overcome with melancholy. As it is with a man imprisoned for debt, if once in the gaol, every creditor will bring his action against him, and there likely hold him. If any discontent seize upon a patient, in an instant all other perturbations (for—quæ data porta ruunt) will set upon him, and then like a lame dog or broken-winged goose he droops and pines away, and is brought at last to that ill habit or malady of melancholy itself. So that as the philosophers make eight degrees of heat and cold, we may make eighty-eight of melancholy, as the parts affected are diversely seized with it, or have been plunged more or less into this infernal gulph, or waded deeper into it. But all these melancholy fits, howsoever pleasing at first, or displeasing, violent and tyrannizing over those whom they seize on for the time; yet these fits I say, or men affected, are but improperly so called, because they continue not, but come and go, as by some objects they are moved. This melancholy of which we are to treat, is a habit, morbus somniosus, or chronicus, a chronic or continue disease, a settled humour, as Aurelianus and others call it, not errant, but fixed; and as it was long increasing, so now being (pleasant, or painful) grown to an habit, it will hardly be removed.

SECT. I. MEMB. II.

SUBSECT. I.—Digression of Anatomy.

Before I proceed to define the disease of melancholy, what it is, or to discourse farther of it, I hold it not impertinent to make a brief digression of the anatomy of the body and faculties of the soul, for the better understanding of that which is to follow; because many hard words will often occur, as myrache, hypochondries, enrods, &c., imagination, reason, humours, spirits, vital, natural, animal, nerves, veins, arteries, chylus, pituita; which by the

* Horsem omnia studia dirigat debent, ut humana fortis femina. 
* Tim. ii. 3. 
* Epist. 96. lib. 10. 
* affectus frequentes contemptique morbom faciant. Distillabo una nec adhae in morem daucta, fascinum fact, asidua et violenta phthisim. 
* Calidum ad octo: frigidum ad octo. Una hincundo non fact. 
* Lib. 1. c. 6. 
* Fuscius, 1. 3. sec. 1. cap. 7. Hildesheim, fol. 130.
vulgar will not so easily be perceived, what they are, how cited, and to what end they serve. And besides, it may peradventure give occasion to some men to examine more accurately, search further into this most excellent subject, and thereupon with that royal * prophet to praise God, ("for a man is fearfully and wonderfully made, and curiously wrought") that have time and leisure enough, and are sufficiently informed in all other worldly businesses, as to make a good bargain, buy and sell, to keep and make choice of a fair hawk, hound, horse, &c. But for such matters as concern the knowledge of themselves, they are wholly ignorant and careless; they know not what this body and soul are, how combined, of what parts and faculties they consist, or how a man differs from a dog. And what can be more ignominious and filthy (as *Melancthon well inveighs) "than for a man not to know the structure and composition of his own body, especially since the knowledge of it tends so much to the preservation of his health, and information of his manners?" To stir them up therefore to this study, to peruse those elaborate works of *Galen, Bauhiniae, Plater, Vesalius, Falopius, Laurentius, Remelius, &c., which have written copiously in Latin; or that which some of our industrious countrymen have done in our mother tongue, not long since, as that translation of *Columbus and *Microcosmographia, in thirteen books, I have made this brief digression. Also because *Wecker, †Melancthon, *Fernelius, ‡Fuschina, and those tedious Tracts de Animal à (which have more compendiously handled and written of this matter) are not at all times ready to be had, to give them some small taste, or notice of the rest, let this epitome suffice.

SUBSECT. II.—Division of the Body, Humours, Spirits.

Of the parts of the body there may be many divisions: the most approved is that of *Laurentius, out of Hippocrates: which is, into parts contained, or containing. Contained, are either humours or spirits.

Humours.] A humour is a liquid or fluent part of the body, comprehended in it, for the preservation of it; and is either innate or born with us, or adventitious and acquisite. The radical or innate, is daily supplied by nourishment, which some call cambium, and make those secondary humours of rose and gluten to maintain it: or acquisite, to maintain these four first primary humours, coming and proceeding from the first concoction in the liver, by which means chylus is excluded. Some divide them into profitable and excrementitious. But †Crato out of Hippocrates will have all four to be juice, and not excrements, without which no living creature can be sustained: which four, though they be comprehended in the mass of blood, yet they have their several affections, by which they are distinguished from one another, and from those adventitious, peccant, or diseased humours, as Melancthon calls them.

Blood.] Blood is a hot, sweet, temperate, red humour, prepared in the meseraic veins, and made of the most temperate parts of the chylus in the liver, whose office is to nourish the whole body, to give it strength and colour, being dispersed by the veins through every part of it. And from it spirits are first begotten in the heart, which afterwards by the arteries are communicated to the other parts.

Pituita, or phlegm, is a cold and moist humour, begotten of the colder part of the chylus (or white juice coming out of the meat digested in the stomach), in the liver; his office is to nourish and moisten the members of the body, which as the tongue are moved, that they be not over dry.

*Psalm xxxix. 13. *De anima. Turpe enim est homini ignorare sui corporis (ut its dicam) sedifium, preserim cum ad valentudinem et moras hase cognito plarium conducat. †De van part. †Hist. of man. ‡D. Crooke. *In Syntaxi. †De Animæ. †Instit. lib. 1. ‡Physiol. 1. 1, 2. 1Anat. 1. 1. c. 18. 1In Micro. succos, sine quibus animal sustentari non potest. 1Morbosorum humores.
Choler is hot and dry, bitter, begotten of the hotter parts of the chylus, and gathered to the gall: it helps the natural heat and senses, and serves to the expelling of excrements.

Melancholy.] Melancholy, cold and dry, thick, black, and sour, begotten of the more feculent part of nourishment, and purged from the spleen, is a bridle to the other two hot humours, blood and choler, preserving them in the blood, and nourishing the bones. These four humours have some analogy with the four elements, and to the four ages in man.

Serum, Sweat, Tears.] To these humours you may add serum, which is the matter of urine, and those excrementitious humours of the third concoction, sweat and tears.

Spirits.] Spirit is a most subtile vapour, which is expressed from the blood, and the instrument of the soul, to perform all his actions; a common tie or medium between the body and the soul, as some will have it; or as Paracelsus, a fourth soul of itself. Melancholy holds the fountain of these spirits to be the heart, begotten there; and afterward conveyed to the brain, they take another nature to them. Of these spirits there be three kinds, according to the three principal parts, brain, heart, liver; natural, vital, animal. The natural are begotten in the liver, and thence dispersed through the veins, to perform those natural actions. The vital spirits are made in the heart of the natural, which by the arteries are transported to all the other parts: if the spirits cease, then life ceaseth, as in a syncope or swooning. The animal spirits formed of the vital, brought up to the brain, and diffused by the nerves, to the subordinate members, give sense and motion to them all.

SUBSECT. III.—Similar Parts.

Similar Parts.] CONTAINING parts, by reason of their more solid substance, are either homogeneal or heterogeneal, similar or dissimilar; so Aristotle divides them, lib. 1, cap. 1, de Hist. Animal.; Laurentius, cap. 20, lib. 1. Similar, or homogeneal, are such as, if they be divided, are still severed into parts of the same nature, as water into water. Of these some be spermatical, some fleshy or carnal. *Spermatical are such as are immediately begotten of the seed, which are bones, gristles, ligaments, membranes, nerves, arteries, veins, skins, fibres or strings, fat.

Bones.] The bones are dry and hard, begotten of the thickest of the seed, to strengthen and sustain other parts: some say there be 304, some 307, or 313 in man's body. They have no nerves in them, and are therefore without sense.

A gristle is a substance softer than bone, and harder than the rest, flexible, and serves to maintain the parts of motion.

Ligaments are they that tie the bones together, and other parts to the bones, with their subserving tendons: membranes' office is to cover the rest.

Nerves, or sinews, are membranes without, and full of marrow within; they proceed from the brain, and carry the animal spirits for sense and motion. Of these some be harder, some softer; the softer serve the senses, and there be seven pair of them. The first be the optic nerves, by which we see; the second move the eyes; the third pair serve for the tongue to taste; the fourth pair for the taste in the palate; the fifth belong to the ears; the sixth pair is most ample, and runs almost over all the bowels; the seventh pair moves the tongue. The harder sinews serve for the motion of the inner parts, proceeding from the marrow in the back, of whom there be thirty combinations, seven of the neck, twelve of the breast, &c.

* Spiritualis anima.  
* Laurentius, cap. 20, lib. 1, Anat.
Dissimilar Parts.

Arteries.] Arteries are long and hollow, with a double skin to convey the vital spirits; to discern which the better, they say that Vesalius the anatomist was wont to cut up men alive. * They arise in the left side of the heart, and are principally two, from which the rest are derived, aorta and venosa: aorta is the root of all the other, which serve the whole body; the other goes to the lungs, to fetch air to refrigerate the heart.

Veins.] Veins are hollow and round, like pipes, arising from the liver, carrying blood and natural spirits; they feed all the parts. Of these there be two chief, Vena porta and Vena cava, from which the rest are corrivated. That Vena porta is a vein coming from the concave of the liver, and receiving those meseraical veins, by whom he takes the chylus from the stomach and guts, and conveys it to the liver. The other derives blood from the liver to nourish all the other dispersed members. The branches of that Vena porta are the meseraical and haemorrhoides. The branches of the Cava are inward or outward. Inward, seminal or emulgent. Outward, in the head, arms, feet, &c., and have several names.

Fibres, Fat, Flesh.] Fibres are strings, white and solid, dispersed through the whole member, and right, oblique, transverse, all which have their several uses. Fat is a similar part, moist, without blood, composed of the most thick andunctuous matter of the blood. The skin covers the rest, and hath Cutilum, or a little skin under it. Flesh is soft and ruddy, composed of the congealing of blood, &c.

Subsect. IV.—Dissimilar Parts.

Dissimilar parts are those which we call organical, or instrumental, and they be inward or outward. The chiefest outward parts are situate forward or backward:—forward, the crown and foretop of the head, skull, face, forehead, temples, chin, eyes, ears, nose, &c., neck, breast, chest, upper and lower part of the belly, hypochondries, navel, groin, flank, &c.; backward, the hinder part of the head, back, shoulders, sides, loins, hipbones, os sacrum, buttocks, &c. Or joints, arms, hands, feet, legs, thighs, knees, &c. Or common to both, which, because they are obvious and well known, I have careless repeated, eoque præcipuæ et grandiora sunt; quod reliquum ex libris de animâ qui volet, accipiat.

Inward organical parts, which cannot be seen, are divers in number, and have several names, functions, and divisions; but that of Laurentius is most notable, into noble or ignoble parts. Of the noble there be three principal parts, to which all the rest belong, and whom they serve—brain, heart, liver; according to whose site, three regions, or a threatold division, is made of the whole body. As first of the head, in which the animal organs are contained, and brain itself, which by his nerves give sense and motion to the rest, and is, as it were, a privy counsellor and chancellor to the heart. The second region is the chest, or middle belly, in which the heart as king keeps his court, and by his arteries communicates life to the whole body. The third region is the lower belly, in which the liver resides as a Legat à latere, with the rest of those natural organs, serving for concoction, nourishment, expelling of excrescences. This lower region is distinguished from the upper by the midriff, or diaphragma, and is subdivided again by some into three concavities or regions, upper, middle, and lower. The upper of the hypochondries, in whose right side is the liver, the left the spleen; from which is denominated hypochondriacal melancholy. The second of the navel and flanks, divided from the first by the rim.

* In these they observe the beating of the pulse.  
*Cidebres est et pervulgata partium division in principes et ignobles partes.  
*D. Crook out of Galen and others.
The last of the water course, which is again subdivided into three other parts. The Arabians make two parts of this region, Epigastrium and Hypogastrium, upper or lower. Epigastrium they call Mirach, from whence comes Mirachiola Melancholia, sometimes mentioned of them. Of these several regions I will treat in brief apart; and first of the third region, in which the natural organs are contained.

De Animâ.—The Lower Region, Natural Organs. But you that are readers in the midst of that part of the belly beneath the midriff, the kitchen, as it were, of the first concoction, and which turns our meat into chylus. It hath two mouths, one above, another beneath. The upper is sometimes taken for the stomach itself; the lower and nether door (as Wecker calls it) is named Pylorus. This stomach is sustained by a large kell or kaul, called omentum; which some will have the same with peritoneum, or rim of the belly. From the stomach to the very fundament are produced the guts, or intestina, which serve a little to alter and distribute the chylus, and convey away the excrements. They are divided into small and great, by reason of their site and substance, slender or thicker: the slender is duodenum, or whole gut, which is next to the stomach, some twelve inches long, saith 'Fuschius.' Jejunum, or empty gut, continue to the other, which hath many meseraic veins annexed to it, which take part of the chylus to the liver from it. Ilium the third, which consists of many crinkles, which serves with the rest to receive, keep, and distribute the chylus from the stomach. The thick guts are three, the blind gut, colon, and right gut. The blind is a thick and short gut, having one mouth, in which the ilium and colon meet: it receives the excrements, and conveys them to the colon. This colon hath many windings, that the excrements pass not away too fast: the right gut is strait, and conveys the excrements to the fundament, whose lower part is bound up with certain muscles called sphincters, that the excrements may be the better contained, until such time as a man be willing to go to the stool. In the midst of these guts is situated the mesenterium or midriff, composed of many veins, arteries, and much fat, serving chiefly to sustain the guts. All these parts serve the first concoction. To the second, which is busied either in refining the good nourishment or expelling the bad, is chiefly belonging the liver, like in colour to concealed blood, the shop of blood, situate in the right hypercondry, in figure like to a half-moon—Generosum membrum Melanthon styles it, a generous part; it serves to turn the chylus to blood, for the nourishment of the body. The excrements of it are either choleric or watery, which the other subordinate parts convey. The gall placed in the concave of the liver, extracts choler to it: the spleen, melancholy; which is situate on the left side, over against the liver, a spongy matter that draws this black choler to it by a secret virtue, and feeds upon it, conveying the rest to the bottom of the stomach, to stir up appetite, or else to the guts as an excrement. That watery matter the two kidneys expurgate by those emulgent veins and ureters. The emulgent draw this superfluous moisture from the blood; the two ureters convey it to the

* Vos vero veluti in templum ac sacrarium quoddam vos duci putetas, &c. Suavis et utiles cognitio.

bladder, which by reason of his site in the lower belly, is apt to receive it, having two parts, neck and bottom: the bottom holds the water, the neck is constricted with a muscle, which, as a porter, keeps the water from running out against our will.

Members of generation are common to both sexes, or peculiar to one; which, because they are impertinent to my purpose, I do voluntarily omit.

Middle Region.] Next in order is the middle region, or chest, which comprehends the vital faculties and parts; which (as I have said) is separated from the lower belly by the diaphragma or midriff, which is a skin consisting of many nerves, membranes; and amongst other uses it hath, is the instrument of laughing. There is also a certain thin membrane, full of sinews, which covereth the whole chest within, and is called pleura, the seat of the disease called pleurisy, when it is inflamed; some add a third skin, which is termed Mediastinus, which divides the chest into two parts, right and left; of this region the principal part is the heart, which is the seat and fountain of life, of heat, of spirits, of pulse and respiration—the sun of our body, the king and sole commander of it—the seat and organ of all passions and affections. Primum vivens, ultimum mortiens, it lives first, and dies last in all creatures.

Of a pyramidal form, and not much unlike to a pine-apple; a part worthy of admiration, that can yield such variety of affections, by whose motion it is dilated or contracted, to stir and command the humors in the body. As in sorrow, melancholy; in anger, cholera; in joy, to send the blood outwardly; in sorrow, to call it in; moving the humors, as horses do a chariot. This heart, though it be a sole member yet it may be divided into two creeks right and left. The right is like the moon increasing, bigger than the other part, and receives blood from Vena cava distributing some of it to the lungs to nourish them; the rest to the left side, to engender spirits. The left creek hath the form of a cone, and is the seat of life, which, as a torch doth oil, draws blood unto it, begetting of it spirits and fire; and as fire in a torch, so are spirits in the blood; and by that great artery called aorta, it sends vital spirits over the body, and takes air from the lungs by that artery which is called venosa; so that both creeks have their vessels, the right two veins, the left two arteries, besides those two common anfractuous ears, which serve them both; the one to hold blood, the other air, for several uses. The lungs is a thin spongy part, like an ox hoof (saith *Fernelius), the town-clerk or crier (one terms it), the instrument of voice, as an orator to a king; annexed to the heart, to express their thoughts by voice. That it is the instrument of voice, is manifest, in that no creature can speak, or utter any voice, which wanteth these lights. It is besides the instrument of respiration, or breathing; and its office is to cool the heart, by sending air unto it, by the venosal artery, which vein comes to the lungs by that aspera arteria, which consists of many gristles, membranes, nerves, taking in air at the nose and mouth, and by it likewise exhales the fumes of the heart.

In the upper region serving the animal faculties, the chief organ is the brain, which is a soft, marrowish, and white substance, engendered of the purest part of seed and spirits, included by many skins, and seated within the skull or brain pan; and it is the most noble organ under heaven, the dwelling-house and seat of the soul, the habitation of wisdom, memory, judgment, reason, and in which man is most like unto God; and therefore nature hath covered it with a skull of hard bone, and two skins or membranes, whereof the one is called dura mater, or meninx, the other pia mater. The dura mater is

---

next to the skull, above the other, which includes and protects the brain. When this is taken away, the pia mater is to be seen, a thin membrane, the next and immediate cover of the brain, and not covering only, but entering into it. The brain itself is divided into two parts, the fore and hinder part; the fore part is much bigger than the other, which is called the little brain in respect of it. This fore part hath many concavities distinguished by certain ventricles, which are the receptacles of the spirits, brought hither by the arteries from the heart, and are there refined to a more heavenly nature, to perform the actions of the soul. Of these ventricles there are three—right, left, and middle. The right and left answer to their sight, and begat animal spirits; if they be any way hurt, sense and motion ceaseth. These ventricles, moreover, are held to be the seat of the common sense. The middle ventricle is a common concourse and concavity of them both, and hath two passages—the one to receive pituita, and the other extends itself to the fourth creek; in this they place imagination and cogitation, and so the three ventricles of the fore part of the brain are used. The fourth creek behind the head is common to the cerebel or little brain, and narrow of the back-bone, the last and most solid of all the rest, which receives the animal spirits from the other ventricles, and conveys them to the narrow in the back, and is the place where they say the memory is seared.

Subsect. V.—Of the Soul and her Faculties.

According to *Aristotle, the soul is defined to be immutia, perfectio et actus primus corporis organici, vitam habenitis in potentia: the perfection or first act of an organical body, having power of life, which most *philosophers approve. But many doubts arise about the essence, subject, seat, distinction, and subordinate faculties of it. For the essence and particular knowledge, of all other things it is most hard (be it of man or beast) to discern, as *Aristotle himself, *Tully, *Picus Miranda, *Tolet, and other Neoterick philosophers confess:—"We can understand all things by her, but what she is we cannot apprehend." Some therefore make one soul, divided into three principal faculties; others, three distinct souls. Which question of late hath been much controverted by Pico lominieus and Zabarel. *Paracelsus will have four souls, adding to the three grand faculties a spiritual soul: which opinion of his, Campanella, in his book de sensu verum, *much labours to demonstrate and prove, because carcasses bleed at the sight of the murderer; with many such arguments: And *some again, one soul of all creatures whatsoever, differing only in organs; and that beasts have reason as well as men, though, for some defect of organs, not in such measure. Others make a doubt whether it be all in all, and all in every part; which is amply discussed in Zabarel amongst the rest. The *common division of the soul is into three principal faculties—vegetal, sensitive, and rational, which make three distinct kinds of living creatures—vegetal plants, sensible beasts, rational men. How these three principal faculties are distinguished and connected, *Humano ingenio maxcem visetr, is beyond human capacity, as *Taurellus, Philip, Flavius, and others suppose. The inferior may be alone, but the superior cannot subsist without the other; so sensible includes vegetal, rational both; which are contained in it (saith Aristotle) at trigonus in tetragono, as a triangle in a quadrangle.

Vegetal Soul.] Vegetal, the first of the three distinct faculties, is defined to be "a substantial act of an organical body, by which it is nourished, augmented, and begets another like unto itself." In which definition, three several operations are specified—altrix, antrix, procreating; the first is \* nutrition, whose object is nourishment, meat, drink, and the like; his organ the liver in sensible creatures; in plants, the root or sap. His office is to turn the nutriment into the substance of the body nourished, which he performs by natural heat. This nutritive operation hath four other subordinate functions or powers belonging to it—attraction, retention, digestion, expulsion.

Attraction.] \*Attraction is a ministering faculty, which, as a loadstone doth iron, draws meat into the stomach, or as a lamp doth oil; and this attractive power is very necessary in plants, which suck up moisture by the root, as another mouth, into the sap, as a like stomach.

Retention.] Retention keeps it, being attracted into the stomach, until such time it be concocted; for if it should pass away straight, the body could not be nourished.

Digestion.] Digestion is performed by natural heat; for as the flame of a torch consumes oil, wax, tallow, so doth it alter and digest the nutritive matter. Indigestion is opposite unto it, for want of natural heat. Of this digestion there be three differences—maturation, elixation, assation.

Maturation.] Maturation is especially observed in the fruits of trees; which are then said to be ripe, when the seeds are fit to be sown again. Crudity is opposed to it, which gluttons, epicures, and idle persons are most subject unto, that use no exercise to stir natural heat, or else choke it, as too much wood puts out a fire.

Elixation.] Elixation is the seething of meat in the stomach, by the said natural heat, as meat is boiled in a pot; to which corruption or putrefaction is opposite.

Assation.] Assation is a concoction of the inward moisture by heat; his opposite is a semistimulation.

Order of Concoction four-fold.] Besides these three several operations of digestion, there is a four-fold order of concoction:—mastication, or chewing in the mouth; chilification of this so chewed meat in the stomach; the third is in the liver, to turn this chylus into blood, called sanguification; the last is assimilation, which is in every part.

Expulsion.] Expulsion is a power of nutrition, by which it expels all superfluous excrements, and relics of meat and drink, by the guts, bladder, pores; as by purging, vomiting, spitting, sweating, urine, hairs, nails, &c.

Augmentation.] As this nutritive faculty serves to nourish the body, so doth the augmenting faculty (the second operation or power of the vegetal faculty) to the increasing of it in quantity, according to all dimensions, long, broad, thick, and to make it grow till it come to his due proportion and perfect shape; which hath his period of augmentation, as of consumption; and that most certain, as the poet observes:—

"Stat una cuique dies, breve et irreparabile tempus
Omnibus est vita."  
"A term of life is set to every man,
Which is but short, and pass it no one can."

Generation.] The last of these vegetal faculties is generation, which begets another by means of seed, like unto itself, to the perpetual preservation of the species. To this faculty they ascribe three subordinate operations:—the first to turn nourishment into seed, &c.

Life and Death concomitants of the Vegetal Faculties.] Necessary concomitants or affections of this vegetal faculty are life and his privation, death. To
the preservation of life the natural heat is most requisite, though siccity and humidity, and those first qualities, be not excluded. This heat is likewise in plants, as appears by their increasing, fructifying, &c., though not so easily perceived. In all bodies it must have radical moisture to preserve it, that it be not consumed; to which preservation our climate, country, temperature, and the good or bad use of those six non-natural things avail much. For as this natural heat and moisture decays, so doth our life itself; and if not prevented before by some violent accident, or interrupted through our own default, is in the end dried up by old age, and extinguished by death for want of matter, as a lamp for defect of oil to maintain it.

SUBSECT. VI.—Of the sensible Soul.

Next in order is the sensible faculty, which is as far beyond the other in dignity as a beast is preferred to a plant, having those vegetal powers included in it. 'Tis defined an "Act of an organical body by which it lives, hath sense, appetite, judgment, breath, and motion." His object in general is a sensible or possible quality, because the sense is affected with it. The general organ is the brain, from which principally the sensible operations are derived. This sensible soul is divided into two parts, apprehending or moving. By the apprehensive power we perceive the species of sensible things present, or absent, and retain them as wax doth the print of a seal. By the moving, the body is outwardly carried from one place to another; or inwardly moved by spirits and pulse. The apprehensive faculty is subdivided into two parts, inward or outward. Outward, as the five senses, of touching, hearing, seeing, smelling, tasting, to which you may add Scaliger's sixth sense of titillation, if you please; or that of speech, which is the sixth external sense, according to Lullius. Inward are three—common sense, phantasy, memory. Those five outward senses have their object in outward things only and such as are present, as the eye sees no colour except it be at hand, the ear sound. Three of these senses are of commodity, hearing, sight, and smell; two of necessity, touch, and taste, without which we cannot live. Besides, the sensitive power is active or passive. Active in sight, the eye sees the colour; passive when it is hurt by his object, as the eye by the sun-beams. According to that axiom, Visibile forte destruit sensum. Or if the object be not pleasing, as a bad sound to the ear, a stinking smell to the nose, &c.

Sight.] Of these five senses, sight is held to be most precious, and the best, and that by reason of his object, it sees the whole body at once. By it we learn, and discern all things, a sense most excellent for use: to the sight three things are required; the object, the organ, and the medium. The object in general is visible, or that which is to be seen, as colours, and all shining bodies. The medium is the illumination of the air, which comes from "light, commonly called diaphanum; for in dark we cannot see. The organ is the eye, and chiefly the apple of it, which by those optic nerves, concurring both in one, conveys the sight to the common sense. Between the organ and object a true distance is required, that it be not too near, nor too far off. Many excellent questions appertain to this sense, discussed by philosophers: as whether this sight be caused inutra mitendo, vel extra mitendo, &c., by receiving in the visible species, or sending of them out, which Plato, Plutarch, Macrobius, Lactantius, and others dispute. And besides it is the subject of the perspectives, of which Alhazen the Arabian, Vitellio, Roger Bacon, Baptista Porta, Gaudius Ubaldis, Aquilonius, &c., have written whole volumes.

1 Vita consistit in calido et humido. "Too bright an object destroys the organ." 2 Lumen est actus perspicui. Lumen a luce provenit, lax est in corpore lucido. 3 Satur. 7. c. 14. 4 De pract. Philos. 4. 5 Plut. cap. 8. de spip. Del. 1. 6 De praeb. Philos. 4. 7 Lact. cap. 8. de spip. Del. 1. 8 In Phaedon.
**Hearing.** Hearing, a most excellent outward sense, "by which we learn and get knowledge." His object is sound, or that which is heard; the medium, air; organ the ear. To the sound, which is a collision of the air, three things are required; a body to strike, as the hand of a musician; the body struck, which must be solid and able to resist; and a bell, lute-string, not wool, or sponge; the medium, the air; which is inward, or outward; the outward being struck or collided by a solid body, still strikes the next air, until it come to that inward natural air, which as an exquisite organ is contained in a little skin formed like a drum-head, and struck upon by certain small instruments like drum-sticks, conveys the sound by a pair of nerves, appropriated to that use, to the common sense, as to a judge of sounds. There is great variety and much delight in them; for the knowledge of which, consult with Boethius and other musicians.

**Smelling.** Smelling is an "outward sense, which apprehends by the nostrils drawing in air," and of all the rest it is the weakest sense in men. The organ in the nose, or two small hollow pieces of flesh a little above it: the medium the air to men, as water to fish: the object, smell, arising from a mixed body resolved, which, whether it bea quality, fume, vapour, or exhalation, I will not now dispute, or of their differences, and how they are caused. This sense is an organ of health, as sight and hearing, saith "Agellius, are of discipline; and that by avoiding bad smells, as by choosing good, which do as much alter and affect the body many times, as diet itself.

**Taste.** Taste, a necessary sense, "which perceives all savours by the tongue and palate, and that by means of a thin spittle, or watery juice." His organ is the tongue with his tasting nerves; the medium, a watery juice; the object, taste, or savour, which is a quality in the juice, arising from the mixture of things tasted. Some make eight species or kinds of savour, bitter, sweet, sharp, salt, &c., all which sick men (as in an ague) cannot discern, by reason of their organs misaffected.

**Touching.** Touch, the last of the senses, is most ignoble, yet of as great necessity as the other, and of as much pleasure. This sense is exquisite in men, and by his nerves dispersed all over the body, perceives any tactile quality. His organ the nerves; his object those first qualities, hot, dry, moist, cold; and those that follow them, hard, soft, thick, thin, &c. Many delightsome questions are moved by philosophers about these five senses; their organs, objects, mediums, which for brevity I omit.

**SUBSECT. VII.—Of the Inward Senses.**

**Common Sense.** Inner senses are three in number, so called, because they be within the brain-pan, as common sense, phantasy, memory. Their objects are not only things present, but they perceive the sensible species of things to come, past, absent, such as were before in the sense. This common sense is the judge or moderator of the rest, by whom we discern all differences of objects; for by mine eye I do not know that I see, or by mine ear that I hear, but by my common sense, who judgeth of sounds and colours: they are but the organs to bring the species to be censured; so that all their objects are his, and all their offices are his. The forepart of the brain is his organ or seat.

**Phantasy.** Phantasy, or imagination, which some call estimative, or cogitative (confirmed, saith 'Fernelius, by frequent meditation), is an inner sense which doth more fully examine the species perceived by common sense, of things present or absent, and keeps them longer, recalling them to mind again, or making new of his own. In time of sleep this faculty is free, and

---

*Lib. 19. cap. 2.*  
*Phis. 1. 5. c. 8.*
many times conceives strange, stupend, absurd shapes, as in sick men we commonly observe. His organ is the middle cell of the brain; his objects all the species communicated to him by the common sense, by comparison of which he feigns infinite other unto himself. In melancholy men this faculty is most powerful and strong, and often hurts, producing many monstrous and prodigious things, especially if it be stirred up by some terrible object, presented to it from common sense or memory. In poets and painters imagination forcibly works, as appears by their several fictions, antics, images: as Ovid’s house of sleep, Psyche’s palace in Apuleius, &c. In men it is subject and governed by reason, or at least should be; but in brutes it hath no superior, and is ratio brutorum, all the reason they have.

Memory.] Memory lays up all the species which the senses have brought in, and records them as a good register; that they may be forthcoming when they are called for by phantasy and reason. His object is the same with phantasy, his seat and organ the back part of the brain.

Affections of the Senses, sleep and waking.] The affections of these senses are sleep and waking, common to all sensible creatures. "Sleep is a rest or binding of the outward senses, and of the common sense, for the preservation of body and soul" (as Scaliger defines it); for when the common sense resteth, the outward senses rest also. The phantasy alone is free, and his commander reason; as appears by those imaginary dreams, which are of divers kinds, natural, divine, demoniacal, &c., which vary according to humours, diet, actions, objects, &c., of which Artemidorus, Cardannus, and Sambucus, with their several interpreters, have written great volumes. This ligation of senses proceeds from an inhibition of spirits, the way being stopped by which they should come; this stopping is caused of vapours arising out of the stomach, filling the nerves, by which the spirits should be conveyed. When these vapours are spent, the passage is open, and the spirits perform their accustomed duties: so that "waking is the action and motion of the senses, which the spirits dispersed over all parts cause."

SUBSECT. VIII.—Of the Moving Faculty.

Appetite.] This moving faculty is the other power of the sensitive soul, which causeth all those inward and outward animal motions in the body. It is divided into two faculties; the power of appetite, and of moving from place to place. This of appetite is threefold, so some will have it; natural, as it signifies any such inclination, as of a stone to fall downward, and such actions as retention, expulsion, which depend not on sense, but are vegetal, as the appetite of meat and drink; hunger and thirst. Sensitive is common to men and brutes. Voluntary, the third, or intellectual, which commands the other two in men, and is a curb unto them, or at least should be, but for the most part is captivated and overruled by them; and men are led like beasts by sense, giving reins to their concupiscence and several lusts. For by this appetite the soul is led or inclined to follow that good which the senses shall approve, or avoid that which they hold evil: his object being good or evil, the one he embraces, the other he rejecteth; according to that aphorism, Omnia appetunt bonum, all things seek their own good, or at least seeming good. This power is inseparable from sense, for where sense is, there are likewise pleasure and pain. His organ is the same with the common sense, and is divided into two powers, or inclinations, concupiscible or irascible: or (as one translates it) coveting, anger invading, or impunging. Concupiscible covets always pleasant and delightsome things, and abhors that which is distasteful, harsh, and unpleasant.

Anatomy of the Soul.

Irascible, * quasi aversus per iram et odium, as avoiding it with anger and indignation. All affections and perturbations arise out of these two fountains, which, although the Stoics make light of, we hold natural, and not to be resisted. The good affections are caused by some object of the same nature; and if present, they procure joy, which dilates the heart, and preserves the body; if absent, they cause hope, love, desire, and concupiscence. The bad are simple or mixed: simple for some bad object present, as sorrow, which contracts the heart, macerates the soul, subverts the good estate of the body, hindering all the operations of it, causing melancholy, and many times death itself; or future, as fear. Out of these two arise those mixed affections and passions of anger, which is a desire of revenge; hatred, which is inveterate anger; zeal, which is offended with him who hurts that he loves; and ira quasi aversio, a compound affection of joy and hate, when we rejoice at other men's mischief, and are grieved at their prosperity; pride, self-love, emulation, envy, shame, &c., of which elsewhere.

Moving from place to place, is a faculty necessarily following the other. For in vain were it otherwise to desire and to abhor, if we had not likewise power to prosecute or eschew, by moving the body from place to place: by this faculty therefore we locally move the body, or any part of it, and go from one place to another. To the better performance of which, three things are requisite: that which moves; by what it moves; that which is moved. That which moves, is either the efficient cause, or end. The end is the object, which is desired or eschewed; as in a dog to catch a hare, &c. The efficient cause in man is reason, or his subordinate phantasy, which apprehends good or bad objects; in brutes imagination alone, which moves the appetite, the appetite this faculty, which, by an admirable league of nature, and by mediation of the spirit, commands the organ by which it moves; and that consists of nerves, muscles, cords, dispersed through the whole body, contracted and relaxed as the spirits will, which move the muscles, or * nerves in the midst of them, and draw the cord, and so per consequens, the joint, to the place intended. That which is moved, is the body or some member apt to move. The motion of the body is divers, as going, running, leaping, dancing, sitting, and such like, referred to the predicament of suis. Worms creep, birds fly, fishes swim; and so of parts, the chief of which is respiration or breathing, and is thus performed. The outward air is drawn in by the vocal artery, and sent by mediation of the midriff to the lungs, which, dilating themselves as a pair of bellows, reciprocally fetch it in, and send it out to the heart to cool it; and from thence now being hot, convey it again, still taking in fresh. Such a like motion is that of the pulse, of which, because many have written whole books, I will say nothing.

Subsect. IX.—Of the Rational Soul.

In the precedent subsections I have anatomized those inferior faculties of the soul; the rational remaineth, "a pleasant but a doubtful subject" (as *one terms it), and with the like brevity to be discussed. Many erroneous opinions are about the essence and original of it; whether it be fire, as Zeno held; harmony, as Aristoxenus; number, as Xenocrates; whether it be organic, or inorganic; seated in the brain, heart or blood; mortal or immortal; how it comes into the body. Some hold that it is ex traduce, as Phil. 1. de Animâ, Tertullian, Lactantius de opific. Dei, cap. 19. Hugo, lib. de Spiritu et Animâ, Vincentius Bellavici. spec. natural. lib. 23. cap. 2. et 11. Hippo-
crates, Avicenna, and many late writers; that one man begets another, body and soul; or as a candle from a candle, to be produced from the seed: otherwise, say they, a man begets but half a man, and is worse than a beast that begets both matter and form; and besides the three faculties of the soul must be together infused, which is most absurd as they hold, because in beasts they are beget, the two inferior I mean, and may not be well separated in men. Galen supposeth the soul crasis esse, to be the temperature itself; Trismegistus, Museus, Orpheus, Homer, Pindarus, Pheraeides Syrus, Epicetus, with the Chaldees and Egyptians, affirmed the soul to be immortal, as did those British Druids of old. The Pythagoreans defend Metempsychosis; and Palingenesia, that souls go from one body to another, epota prior Lebes unda, as men into wolves, bears, dogs, hogs, as they were inclined in their lives, or participated in conditions.

Lucian’s cock was first Euphorbus a captain:

"He ego (nam memini) Troiani tempore belli Panthoides Euphorbus cram."

A horse, a man, a sponge. Julian the Apostate thought Alexander’s soul was descended into his body: Plato in Timæo, and in his Phedon (for aught I can perceive), differs not much from this opinion, that it was from God at first, and knew all, but being inclosed in the body, it forgets, and learns anew, which he calls reminiscencia, or recalling, and that it was put into the body for a punishment; and thence it goes into a beast’s, or man’s, as appears by his pleasant fiction de sortitione animarum, lib. 10. de rep. and after ten thousand years is to return into the former body again.

Others deny the immortality of it, which Pomponatus of Padua decided out of Aristotle not long since, Plinius naturalist, cap. 1. lib. 2. et lib. 7. cap. 55; Seneca, lib. 7. epist. ad Lucilium epist. 55; Dacierus in Tull. Tusc. Epicurus, Aratus, Hippocrates, Galen, Lucretius, lib. 1.

"(Proterek gigii pariter cum corpore, et ulla Crescere sentium, pariterque sensescere mentem.)" †

Averroes, and I know not how many Neoterics. † This question of the immortality of the soul, is diversely and wonderfully impugned and disputed, especially among the Italians of late," saith Jab. Coterus, lib. de immort. animae, cap. 1. The popes themselves have doubted of it: Leo Decimus, that Epicurean pope, as some record of him, caused this question to be discussed pro and con before him, and concluded at last, as a prophet and atheistical moderator, with that verse of Cornelius Gallus, Et redit in nihilum, quod fuit ante nihil. It began of nothing, and in nothing it ends. Zeno and his Stoics, as || Austin quotes him, supposed the soul so long to continue, till the body was fully putrefied, and resolved into materia prima: but after that, in fumus evanesce, to be extinguished and vanished; and in the mean time, whilst the body was consuming, it wandered all abroad, et in longinquo multa annunciare, and (as that Clazomenian Hermotimus averred) saw pretty visions, and suffered I know not what. ¶ Errant exangues sine corpore et ossibus

---

† Goecenius in Hippocr. pag. 302. Bright in Phys. Scrbl. 1. 1. David Crusius, Melanchthon, Hippius Hernius, Levisius Lennius, &c. 2 Lib. an morae sequantur, &c. * Cesar. 6. com. † Read Eneas Gaeus. dial. of the Immortality of the Soul. † Ovid. Met. 15. "We, who may take up our abode in wild beasts, or be lodged in the breasts of cattle."

"Ov. Met. 9. "Caesar, &c. com. " In Gallo. Idem. " Necrophors, hist. lib. 10. cap. 35. ¶ Plauto. ¶ "Besides, we observe that the mind is born with the body, grows and wastes, and in its corrupt state is in an incorporeal state." § Coterus, lib. 1. De eccles. dog. cap. 16. ¶ Ovid. 4. Met. "The bloodless shades without either body or bones wander."
Anatomy of the Soul.

umbra. Others grant the immortality thereof, but they make many fabulous fictions in the meantime of it, after the departure from the body: like Plato's Elysian fields, and that Turkey paradise. The souls of good men they deified; the bad (saith Austin) became devils, as they supposed; with many such absurd tenets, which he hath confuted. Hierome, Austin, and other Fathers of the church, hold that the soul is immortal, created of nothing, and so infused into the child or embryo in his mother's womb, six months after the conception; not as those of brutes, which are eveduce, and dying with them vanish into nothing. To whose divine treatises, and to the Scriptures themselves, I rejoin all such atheistical spirits, as Tully did Atticus, doubting of this point, to Plato's Phaedon. Or if they desire philosophical proofs and demonstrations, I refer them to Niphus, Nic. Faventinus' tracts of this subject. To Fran. and John Picas in digress: sup. 3. de Animâ, Tholomæus, Eugubinus, to Soto, Canas, Thomas, Peresius, Dandinus, Colerus, to that elaborate tract in Zanchius, to Tolet's Sixty Reasons, and Lessins' Twenty-two Arguments, to prove the immortality of the soul. Campanella lib. de Sensu rerum, is large in the same discourse, Albertinus the Schoolman, Jacob. Nactantius, tom. 2. op. handleth it in four questions, Antony Brunus, Aominus Palearius, Marinus Marcenarius, with many others. This reasonable soul, which Austin calls a spiritual substance moving itself, is defined by philosophers to be "the first substantial act of a natural, humane, organical body, by which a man lives, perceives, and understands, freely doing all things, and with election." Out of which definition we may gather, that this rational soul includes the powers, and performs the duties of the two other, which are contained in it, and all three faculties make one soul, which is inorganical of itself, although it be in all parts, and incorporeal, using their organs, and working by them. It is divided into two chief parts, differing in office only, not in essence. The understanding, which is the rational power apprehending; the will, which is the rational power moving; to which two, all the other rational powers are subject and reduced.

Subsect. X.—Of the Understanding.

"Understanding is a power of the soul, by which we perceive, know, remember, and judge as well singulars, as universals, having certain innate notices or beginnings of arts, a reflecting action, by which it judgeth of his own doings, and examines them." Out of this definition (besides his chief office, which is to apprehend, judge all that he performs, without the help of any instruments or organs) three differences appear betwixt a man and a beast. As first, the sense only comprehends singularities, the understanding universalities. Secondly, the sense hath no innate notions. Thirdly, brutes cannot reflect upon themselves. Bees indeed make neat and curious works, and many other creatures besides; but when they have done, they cannot judge of them. His object is God, Ens, all nature, and whatsoever is to be understood: which successively it apprehends. The object first moving the understanding, is some sensible thing; after by discoursing, the mind finds out the corporeal substance, and from thence the spiritual. His actions (some say) are apprehension, composition, division, discoursing, reasoning, memory, which some include in invention, and judgment. The common divisions are of the understanding, agent, and patient; speculative, and practical; in habit, or in act; simple, or compound. The agent is that which is called the wit of man, acumen or subtlety, sharpness of invention, when he doth invent of himself.

*Bonorum lares, malorum verò larvas et lemures.*

*Some say at three days, some six weeks, others otherwise.*

*Melanethion.*
without a teacher, or learns anew, which abstracts those intelligible species from the phantasy, and transfers them to the passive understanding, "because there is nothing in the understanding, which was not first in the sense." That which the imagination hath taken from the sense, this agent judgeth of, whether it be true or false; and being so judged he commits it to the possible to be kept. The agent is a doctor or teacher, the passive a scholar; and his office is to keep and further judge of such things as are committed to his charge; as a bare and rased table at first, capable of all forms and notions. Now these notions are two-fold, actions or habits: actions, by which we take notions of, and perceive things; habits, which are durable lights and notions, which we may use when we will. Some reckon up eight kinds of them, sense, experience, intelligence, faith, suspicion, error, opinion, science; to which are added art, prudence, wisdom: as also "synteresis, dictamen rationis, conscience; so that in all there be fourteen species of the understanding, of which some are innate, as the three last mentioned; the other are gotten by doctrine, learning, and use. Plato will have all to be innate: Aristotle reckons up but five intellectual habits; two practical, as prudence, whose end is to practise; to fabricate; wisdom to comprehend the use and experiments of all notions, and habits whatsoever. Which division of Aristotle (if it be considered a right) is all one with the precedent; for three being innate, and five acquisite, the rest are improper, imperfect, and in a more strict examination excluded. Of all these I should more amply dilate, but my subject will not permit. Three of them I will only point at, as more necessary to my following discourse.

Synteresis, or the purer part of the conscience, is an innate habit, and doth signify "a conversation of the knowledge of the law of God and Nature, to know good or evil." And (as our divines hold) it is rather in the understanding than in the will. This makes the major proposition in a practical syllogism. The dictamen rationis is that which doth admonish us to do good or evil, and is the minor in the syllogism. The conscience is that which approves good or evil, justifying or condemning our actions, and is the conclusion of the syllogism: as in that familiar example of Regulus the Roman, taken prisoner by the Carthaginians, and suffered to go to Rome, on that condition he should return again, or pay so much for his ransom. The synteresis proposeth the question; his word, oath, promise, is to be religiously kept, although to his enemy, and that by the law of nature. "Do not that to another which thou wouldst not have done to thyself." Dictamen applies it to him, and dictates this or the like: Regulus, thou wouldst not another man should falsify his oath, or break promise with thee: conscience concludes, therefore, Regulus, thou dost well to perform thy promise, and oughtest to keep thine oath. More of this in Religious Melancholy.

SUBSECT. XI.—Of the Will.

Will is the other power of the rational soul, "which covets or avoids such things as have been before judged and apprehended by the understanding." If good, it approves; if evil, it abhors: so that his object is either good or evil. Aristotle calls this our rational appetite; for as, in the sensitive, we are moved to good or bad by our appetite, ruled and directed by sense; so in this we are carried by reason. Besides, the sensitive appetite hath a particular object, good or bad; this an universal, immaterial: that respects only things delectable and pleasant; this honest. Again, they differ in liberty. The

1 Nihil in intellectu, quod non primus fuerat in sensu. Velcro. = The pure part of the conscience.
2 Quod tibi neri non vis, alteri ne feceris. = Res ab intellectu monstratas recipit, vel reficit; approbat, vel improbat, Philip. Ignorat nulla culpa. = The pure part of the conscience.
sensual appetite seeing an object, if it be a convenient good, cannot but desire it; if evil, avoid it: but this is free in his essence, "much now depraved, obscured, and fallen from his first perfection; yet in some of his operations still free," as to go, walk, move at his pleasure, and to choose whether it will do or not do, steal or not steal. Otherwise, in vain were laws, deliberations, exhortations, counsels, precepts, rewards, promises, threats and punishments: and God should be the author of sin. But in "spiritual things we will no good, prone to evil (except we be regenerate, and led by the Spirit), we are egged on by our natural concupiscence, and there is *aresia, a confusion in our powers, "our whole will is averse from God and his law," not in natural things only, as to eat and drink, lust, to which we are led headlong by our temperature and inordinate appetite,

we cannot resist, our concupiscence is originally bad, our heart evil, the seat of our affections captivates and enforces our will. So that in voluntary things we are averse from God and goodness, bad by nature, by 'ignorance worse, by art, discipline, custom, we get many bad habits: suffering them to dominate and tyrannize over us; and the devil is still ready at hand with his evil suggestions, to tempt our depraved will to some ill-disposed action, to precipitate us to destruction, except our will be swayed and counterpoised again with some divine precepts, and good motions of the spirit, which many times restrain, hinder and check us, when we are in the full career of our dissolute courses. So David corrected himself, when he had Saul at a vantage. Revenge and malice were as two violent oppressors on the one side; but honesty, religion, fear of God, withheld him on the other.

The actions of the will are volle and nolle, to will and will not: which two words comprehend all, and they are good or bad, accordingly as they are directed, and some of them freely performed by himself; although the Stoics absolutely deny it, and will have all things inevitably done by destiny, imposing a fatal necessity upon us, which we may not resist; yet we say that our will is free in respect of us, and things contingent, howsoever in respect of God's determine counsel, they are inevitable and necessary. Some other actions of the will are performed by the inferior powers, which obey him, as the sensitive and moving appetite; as to open our eyes, to go hither and thither, not to touch a book, to speak fair or foul: but this appetite is many times rebellious in us, and will not be contained within the lists of sobriety and temperance. It was (as I said) once well agreeing with reason, and there was an excellent consent and harmony between them, but that is now dissolved, they often jar, reason is overborne by passion: *Fortur equis avriga, nec audit currus habenas, as so many wild horses run away with a chariot, and will not be curbed. We know many times what is good, but will not do it, as she said,

Lust counsels one thing, reason another, there is a new reluctancy in men. *Odi, nec possum, cupiens, non esse quod odi. We cannot resist, but as Phaedra confessed to her nurse, *qua loqueris, vera sunt, sed furor sugerit sequi pejora: she said well and true, she did swayed passion and fury made her to do that which was opposite. So David knew the filthiness of his fact, what a loathsome, foul, crying sin adultery was, yet

* Mem. 2. Subs. 11.] * Anatomy of the Soul. 107

107

Melaonthon. Operationes plerumque fere, et si libera sit illa in essentia sua. 5 In civilibus libera, sed non in spiritualibus Osiander. 7 Tota voluntas a Deo, Omnis homo mendax. * Virg. "We are neither able to contend against them, nor only to make way" * Vel propter ignorantiam, quod bonus studiis non sit instructa mens ut debuit, aut divinis preceptis exculta. * Med. Ovid. * Ovid.

Seneca. Hipp.
Definition of Melancholy.

Notwithstanding, he would commit murder, and take away another man’s wife, enforced against reason, religion, to follow his appetite.

Those natural and vegetal powers are not commanded by will at all; for “who can add one cubit to his stature?” These other may, but are not; and thence come all those headstrong passions, violent perturbations of the mind; and many times vicious habits, customs, feral diseases; because we give so much way to our appetite, and follow our inclination, like so many beasts. The principal habits are two in number, virtue and vice, whose peculiar definitions, descriptions, differences, and kinds, are handled at large in the ethics, and are, indeed, the subject of moral philosophy.

MEMB. III.

Subsect. I.—Definition of Melancholy, Name, Difference.

Having thus briefly anatomized the body and soul of man, as a preparative to the rest; I may now freely proceed to treat of my intended object, to most men’s capacity; and after many ambages, perspicuously define what this melancholy is, show his name and differences. The name is imposed from the matter, and disease denominated from the material cause: as Bruel observes, \textit{Melancholia} quasi \textit{Melana} \textit{χῆλη}, from black choler. And whether it be a cause or an effect, a disease or symptom, let Donatus Altomarus and Salvianus decide; I will not contend about it. It hath several descriptions, notations, and definitions. Fracastorus, in his second book of intellect, calls those melancholy, “whom abundance of that same depraved humour of black choler hath so misaffected, that they become mad thence, and dote in most things, or in all, belonging to election, will, or other manifest operations of the understanding.” Melanarius out of Galen, Ruffus, Ætius, describe it to be “a bad and peevish disease, which makes men degenerate into beasts”: Galen, “a privation or infection of the middle cell of the head,” define it from the part affected, which Hercules de Saxonii approves, lib. 1. cap. 16. calling it “a depravation of the principal function”: Fuschius, lib. 1. cap. 23. Arnoldus Breviar. lib. 1. cap. 18. Guianerius, and others: “By reason of black choler,” Paulus adds. Halyabbas simply calls it a “commotion of the mind.” Aretes, “a perpetual anguish of the soul, fastened on one thing, without an ague;” which definition of his, Mercurialis de affect. cap. lib. 1. cap. 10. taxeth: but Ælianus Montaltus defends, lib. de morb. cap. 1. de Melan. for sufficient and good. The common sort define it to be “a kind of dotage without a fever, having for his ordinary companions, fear and sadness, without any apparent occasion.” So doth Laurentius, cap. 4. Piso, lib. 1. cap. 43. Donatus Altomarus, cap. 1. art. medici. Jaccinus, in com. in lib. 9. Rhasis ad Almansor, cap. 15. Valesius exerc. 17. Fuschius, institut. 3. sec. 1. c. 11. du, which common definition, howsoever approved by most, Hercules de Saxonii will not allow of; nor David Crucius, Theat. morb. Herm. lib. 2. cap. 6. he holds it insufficient: “as rather showing what it is not, than what it is:” as omitting the specific difference, the phantasy and brain: but I descend to particulars. The \textit{summum genus} is “dotage, or anguish of the mind,” saith Aretes; “of the principal parts,” Hercules de Saxonii adds, to distinguish it from cramp and palsy, and such diseases as belong to the outward sense and motions.

\footnote{Melancholicus vocatus, quos exuberantia vel pravitas Melancholiae ita male habet, ut inde insiniant vel in omnibus, vel in pluribus insue manifesta sive ad rectam rationem, voluntatem pertinent, vel eolumnem, vel intellectus operationes. \footnote{Panth. medic. \footnote{Areng amin in una contentione detexxs, abaque scribe. \footnote{Cap. 16. 1. 1.}}}
Of the Parts affected, &c.

[depraved] * to distinguish it from folly and madness (which Montaltus makes angor animi, to separate) in which those functions are not depraved, but rather abolished; [without an ague] is added by all, to separate it from phrensy, and that melancholy which is cited in a pestilent fever. (Fear and sorrow) make it differ from madness: [without a cause] is lastly inserted, to specify it from all other ordinary passions of [fear and sorrow]. We properly call that dotage, as * Laurentius interprets it, "when some one principal faculty of the mind, as imagination, or reason, is corrupted, as all melancholy persons have." It is without a fever, because the humour is most part cold and dry, contrary to putrefaction. Fear and sorrow are the true characters and inseparable companions of most melancholy, not all, as Her. de Saxonii, Ttract. de posthumo de Melancholia, cap. 2. well excepts; for to some it is most pleasant, as to such as laugh most part; some are bold again, and free from all manner of fear and grief, as heretofore shall be declared.


Some difference I find amongst writers, about the principal part affected in this disease, whether it be the brain, or heart, or some other member. Most are of opinion that it is the brain: for being a kind of dotage, it cannot otherwise be but that the brain must be affected, as a similar part, be it by * consent or essence, not in his ventricles, or any obstructions in them, for then it would be an apoplexy, or epilepsy, as * Laurentius well observes, but in a cold, dry distemper of it in his substance, which is corrupt and become too cold, or too dry, or else too hot, as in madmen, and such as are inclined to it: and this * Hippocrates confirms, Galen, the Arabians, and most of our new writers. Marcus de Oddis (in a consultation of his, quoted by * Hildesheim) and five others there cited are of the contrary part; because fear and sorrow, which are passions, be seated in the heart. But this objection is sufficiently answered by * Montaltus, who doth not deny that the heart is affected (as * Melanchius proves out of Galen) by reason of his vicinity, and so is the midriff and many other parts. They do compati, and have a fellow feeling by the law of nature: but forasmuch as this malady is caused by precedent imagination, with the appetite, to whom spirits obey, and are subject to those principal parts, the brain must needs primarily be misaffected, as the seat of reason; and then the heart, as the seat of affectation. * Cappivaceus and Menzelialis have copiously discussed this question, and both conclude the subject is the inner brain, and from thence it is communicated to the heart and other inferior parts, which sympathize and are much troubled, especially when it comes by consent, and is caused by reason of the stomach, or myrach, as the Arabians term it, whole body, liver, or * spleen, which are seldom free, pylorus, meseralice veins, &c. For our body is like a clock, if one wheel be amiss, all the rest are disorderd; the whole fabric suffers: with such admirable art and harmony is a man composed, such excellent proportion, as Ludovicus Vives in his Fable of Man hath elegantly declared.

As many doubts almost arise about the *affection, whether it be imagination or reason alone, or both, Hercules de Saxonii proves it out of Galen, Aetius, and Altomarus, that the sole fault is in * imagination. Bruehl is of the same

mind: Montaltus in his 2 cap. of Melancholy confutes this tenet of theirs, and illustrates the contrary by many examples: as of him that thought himself a shell-fish, of a nun, and of a desperate monk that would not be persuaded but that he was damned; reason was in fault as well as imagination, which did not correct this error: they make away themselves oftentimes, and suppose many absurd and ridiculous things. Why doth not reason detect the fallacy, settle and persuade, if she be free? * Aviceenna therefore holds both corrupt, to whom most Arabians subscribe. The same is maintained by * Aretius, * Gorgonius, Guianerius, &c. To end the controversy, no man doubts of imagination, but that it is hurt and misaffected here; for the other, I determine with * Albertinus Bottomus, a doctor of Padua, that it is first in "imagination, and afterwards in reason; if the disease be inveterate, or as it is more or less of continuance; but by accident," as * Herc. de Saxonis adds; "faith, opinion, discourse, ratiocination, are all accidentally depraved by the default of imagination."

Parties affected.] To the part affected, I may here add the parties, which shall be more opportunely spoken of elsewhere, now only signified. Such as have the moon, Saturn, Mercury misaffected in their genitures, such as live in over cold, or over hot climes: such as are born of melancholy parents; as offend in those six non-natural things, are black, or of a high sanguine complexion, * that have little heads, that have a hot heart, moist brain, hot liver and cold stomach, have been long sick: such as are solitary by nature, great students, given to much contemplation, lead a life out of action, are most subject to melancholy. Of sexes both, but men more often; yet * women misaffected are far more violent, and grievously troubled. Of seasons of the year, the autumn is most melancholy. Of peculiar times: old age, from which natural melancholy is almost an inseparable accident; but this artificial malady is more frequent in such as are of a * middle age. Some assign 40 years, Gariopontus 30. Jubertus excepts neither young nor old from this adventitious. Daniel Sennertius involves all of all sorts, out of common experience, * in omnibus omnino corporibus cujuscumque constitutionis dominatur. Aβitus and Aretius * ascribe into the number "not only * discontented, passionate, and miserable persons, swarthy, black; but such as are most merry and pleasant, scoffers, and high coloured." "Generally," saith Rhasis, * "the finest wits and most generous spirits, are before other obnoxious to it;" I cannot except any complexion, any condition, sex, or age, but * fools and Stoics, which, according to * Synesius, are never troubled with any manner of passion, but as Anacreon's cicada, sine sanguine et dolore; similes fori diis sunt. Erasmus vindicates fools from this melancholy catalogue, because they have most part moist brains and light hearts; * they are free from ambition, envy, shame and fear; they are neither troubled in conscience, nor macerated with cares, to which our whole life is most subject.

SUBSECT. III.—Of the Matter of Melancholy.

Of the matter of melancholy, there is much question betwixt Avicen and Galen, as you may read in * Cardan's Contradictions, * Valesius' Controversies,
Montanus, Prosper Calenus, Cappiacciuss, \*Bright, \*Ficinus, that have written either whole tracts, or copiously of it, in their several treatises of this subject. \*What this humour is, or whence it proceeds, how it is engendered in the body, neither Galen, nor any old writer, hath sufficiently discussed, as Jacobinus thinks: the Neoterics cannot agree. Montanus, in his Consultations, holds melancholy to be material or inmaterial: and so doth Arculanus: the matter is one of the four humours before mentioned, and natural. The immaterial or adventitious, acquisite, redundant, unnatural, artificial; which \*Hercules de Saxoniis will have reside in the spirits alone, and to proceed from a “hot, cold, dry, moist distemper, which, without matter, alter the brain and functions of it. Paracelsus wholly rejects and derides this division of four humours and complexions, but our Galenists generally approve of it, subscribing to this opinion of Montanus.

This matter melancholy is either simple or mixed; offending in quantity or quality, varying according to his place, where it setteth, as brain, spleen, meseraic veins, heart, womb, and stomach; or differing according to the mixture of those natural humours amongst themselves, or four unnatural adust humours, as they are diversely tempered and mingled. If natural melancholy abound in the body, which is cold and dry, “so that it be more \*than the body is well able to bear, it must needs be distempered,” saith Faveantius, “and diseased;” and so the other, if it be depuved, whether it arise from that other melancholy of choler adust, or from blood, produce the like effects, and is, as Montaltus contends, if it come by adustion of humours, most part hot and dry. Some difference I find, whether this melancholy matter may be engendered of all four humours, about the colour and temper of it. Galen holds it may be engendered of three alone, excluding phlegm, or phluita, whose true assertion \*Valcius and Menardus stilly maintain, and so doth \*Fuscius, Montaltus, \*Montanus. How (say they) can white become black? But Hercules de Saxoniis, \*lib. post. de mela. c. 8, and \*Cardan are of the opposite part (it may be engendered of phlegm, \*etvi raró continat, though it seldom come to pass), so is \*Guianerus and Laurentius, c. 1. with Melautc. in his Book de Animà, and Chap. of Humours; he calls it Asinimam, dull, swinish melancholy, and saith that he was an eye-witness of it; so is \*Wecker. From melancholy adust ariseth one kind; from choler another, which is most brutish; another from phlegm, which is dull; and the last from blood, which is best. Of these some are cold and dry, others hot and dry, \*varying according to their mixtures, as they are intended, and remitted. And indeed as Rodericus à Fons. cons. 12. 1. determines, ichors, and those servus matters being thickened become phlegm, and phlegm degenerates into choler, choler adust becomes æruginosæ melancholia, as vinegar out of purest wine putrefied or by exhalation of purer spirits is so made, and becomes sour and sharp; and from the sharpness of this humour proceeds much waking, troublesome thoughts and dreams, &c., so that I conclude as before. If the humour be cold, it is, saith \*Faventinus, “a cause of dotage, and produce mild symptoms: if hot, they are rash, raving mad, or inclining to it.” If the brain be hot, the animal spirits are hot; much madness follows, with violent actions: if cold, fatuity and sottishness, \*Cappiacciuss. \*“The colour of this mixture varies likewise according
to the mixture, be it hot or cold; 'tis sometimes black, sometimes not, Altmarius. The same Melanclus proves out of Galen; and Hippocrates in his Book of Melancholy (if at least it be his), giving instance in a burning coal, "which when it is hot, shines; when it is cold, looks black; and so doth the humour." This diversity of melancholy matter produceth diversity of effects. If it be within the body, and not putrefied, it causeth black jaundice; if putrefied, a quartan ague; if it break out to the skin, leprosy; if to parts, several maladies, as scurvy, &c. If it trouble the mind; as it is diversely mixed, it produceth several kinds of madness and dotage: of which in their place.

SUBSECT. IV.—Of the species or kinds of Melancholy.

When the matter is divers and confused, how should it otherwise be, but that the species should be divers and confused? Many new and old writers have spoken confusedly of it, confounding melancholy and madness, as *Heurnius, Guianerius, Gordonius, Salustius, Salvianus, Jason Prateusius, Savanarola, that will have madness no other than melancholy in extent, differing (as I have said) in degrees. Some make two distinct species, as Raffus Ephesius, an old writer, Constantinus Africanus, Areteus, *Aurelianus, *Paulus Ægineta: others acknowledge a multitude of kinds, and leave them indefinite, as Ætius in his Tetrabiblos, *Aricia, lib. 3. Fæn. 1. Tract. 4. cap. 18. Arelanus, cap. 16. in 9. Rasis, Montanus, med. part. 1. "If natural melancholy be adjust, it maketh one kind; if blood, another; if choleric, a third, differing from the first; and so many several opinions there are about the kinds, as there be men themselves." *Heracleus de Saxonià sets down two kinds, "material and immaterial; one from spirits alone, the other from humours and spirits." Savanarola, Fæb. 11. Tract. 6. cap. 1. de vivitud. corporis, will have the kinds to be infinite; one from the myrach, called myrachialis of the Arabians; another stomachalis, from the stomach; another from the liver, heart, womb, humours: "one beginning, another consummate." Melanthon seconds him, "as the humour is diversely adjust and mixed, so are the species divers;" but what these men speak of species I think ought to be understood of symptoms, and so doth *Arelanus interpret himself: infinite species, id est, symptoms; and in that sense, as Jo. Gortheus acknowledgeth in his medical definitions, the species are infinite, but they may be reduced to three kinds by reason of their seat; head, body, and hypochondries. This threefold division is approved by Hippocrates in his Book of Melancholy (if it be his, which some suspect), by Galen, lib. 3. de loc. affectis, cap. 6., by Alexander, lib. 1. cap. 16., Rasis, lib. 1. Continent. Tract. 9. lib. 1. cap. 16., Avicenna, and most of our new writers. Th. Erastus makes two kinds; one perpetual, which is head melancholy; the other interrupt, which comes and goes by fits, which he subdivides into the other two kinds, so that all comes to the same pass. Some again make four or five kinds, with Rodericus à Castro, de morbis mutier. lib. 2. cap. 3., and Lod. Mercatus, who, in his second book de mutier. affect. cap. 4., will have that melancholy of nuns, widows, and more ancient maids, to be a peculiar species of melancholy differing from the rest: some will reduce enthusiasts, exctatals and demonical persons to this rank, adding *love melancholy to the first, and lycanthropy. The most received division is into

three kinds. The first proceeds from the sole fault of the brain, and is called head melancholy; the second sympathetically proceeds from the whole body, when the whole temperature is melancholy: the third ariseth from the bowels, liver, spleen, or membrane, called mesenterium, named hypochondriacal or windy melancholy, which ¹ Laurentius subdivides into three parts, from those three members, hepatic, splenetic, meseric. Love melancholy, which Avicenna calls Ilisha: and Lycanthropia, which he calls cucubuthe, are commonly included in head melancholy; but of this last, which Gerardus de Solo calls amoreus, and most knight melancholy, with that of religious melancholy, vir ginum et viduarum, maintained by Rod. à Castro and Mercatus, and the other kinds of love melancholy, I will speak of apart by themselves in my third partition. The three precedent species are the subject of my present discourse, which I will anatoniize and treat of through all their causes, symptoms, cures, together and apart; that every man that is in any measure affected with this malady, may know how to examine it in himself, and apply remedies unto it.

It is a hard matter, I confess, to distinguish these three species one from the other, to express their several causes, symptoms, cures, being that they are so often confounded amongst themselves, having such affinity, that they can scarce be discerned by the most accurate physicians; and so often intermixed with other diseases that the best experienced have been plunged. Montanus consil. 26, names a patient that had this disease of melancholy and caninus appetitus both together; and consil. 23, with vertigo, † Julius Cesar Claudinus, with stone, gout, jaundice. Trincavellius with an ague, jaundice, caninus appetitus, &c. " Paulus Rogoline, a great doctor in his time, consulted in this case, was so confounded with a confusion of symptoms, that he knew not to what kind of melancholy to refer it. * Trincavellius, Fallopius, and Francan zanus, famous doctors in Italy, all three conferred with about one party, at the same time, gave three different opinions. And in another place, Trincavellius being demanded what he thought of a melancholy young man to whom he was sent for, ingenuously confessed that he was indeed melancholy, but he knew not to what kind to reduce it. In his seventeenth consultation there is the like disagreement about a melancholy monk. Those symptoms, which others ascribe to misaffected parts and humours, ² Herc. de Saxonius attributes wholly to distempered spirits, and those immaterial, as I have said. Sometimes they cannot well discern this disease from others. In Reinerus Solinander's couns els, (Sect. consil. 5.) he and Dr. Braunde both agreed, that the patient's disease was hypochondriaca melancholy. Dr. Matholdus said it was asthma, and nothing else. ° Solinander and Guarionius, lately sent for to the melancholy Duke of Cleve, with others, could not define what species it was, or agree amongst themselves. The species are so confounded, as in Cesar Claudinus his forty-fourth consultation for a Polonian Count, in his judgment " he laboured of head melancholy, and that which proceeds from the whole temperature both at once. I could give instance of some that have had all three kinds semel et simul, and some successively. So that I conclude of our melancholy species, as † many politicians do of their pure forms of commonwealths, monarchies, aristocracies, democracies, are most famous in contemplation, but in practice they are temperate and usually mixed, (so ‡ Polybius informeth us) as the Lacedemonian, the Roman of old, German now, and many others. What physicians say of distinct species in their books it much matters not, since that in their patients' bodies they are commonly mixed. In such obscurity, therefore, variety and confused mixture of symptoms, causes, how difficult a thing is

it to treat of several kinds apart; to make any certainty or distinction among so many casualties, distractions, when seldom two men shall be like affected per omnia? 'Tis hard, I confess, yet nevertheless I will adventure through the midst of these perplexities, and, led by the clue or thread of the best writers, extricate myself out of a labyrinth of doubts and errors, and so proceed to the causes.

SECT. II. MEMB. I.


"It is in vain to speak of cures, or think of remedies, until such time as we have considered of the causes," so Galen prescribes Glauce: and the common experience of others confirms that those cures must be imperfect, lame, and to no purpose, wherein the causes have not first been searched, as Prosper Calenus well observes in his tract de avertâ bile to Cardinal Cassius. Inso-much that Ermelius puts a kind of necessity in the knowledge of the causes, and without which it is impossible to cure or prevent any manner of disease." Empirics may ease, and sometimes help, but not thoroughly root out; sublata causâ tollitur effectus, as the saying is, if the cause be removed, the effect is likewise vanquished. It is a most difficult thing (I confess) to be able to discern these causes whence they are, and in such variety to say what the beginning was. "He is happy that can perform it aright. I will adventure to guess as near as I can, and rip them all up, from the first to the last, general and particular, to every species, that so they may the better be described.

General causes, are either supernatural, or natural. "Supernatural are from God and his angels, or by God's permission from the devil" and his ministers. That God himself is a cause for the punishment of sin, and satisfaction of his justice, many examples and testimonies of holy Scriptures make evident unto us, Ps. xvi. 17. "Foolish men are plagued for their offence, and by reason of their wickedness." Gehazi was stricken with leprosy, 2 Reg. v. 27. Jehoram with dysentery and flux, and great diseases of the bowels, 2 Chron. xxxi. 15. David plagued for numbering his people, 1 Par. 21. Sodom and Gomorrah swallowed up. And this disease is peculiarly specified, Psalm cxvii. 12. "He brought down their heart through heaviness." Deut. xxviii. 28. "He struck them with madness, blindness, and astonishment of heart." "An evil spirit was sent by the Lord upon Saul, to vex him." "Nebuchadnezzar did eat grass like an ox, and his "heart was made like the hearts of the field." Heathen stories are full of such punishments. Lycurgus, because he cut down the vines in the country, was by Bacchus driven into madness: so was Pentheus and his mother Agave for neglecting their sacrifice. "Censor Fulvius ran mad for unmiling Juno's temple, to cover a new one of his own, which he had dedicated to Fortune, "and was confounded to death, with grief and sorrow of heart." When Xerxes would have spoiled Apollo's temple at Delphos of those infinite riches it possessed, a terrible thunder came from heaven and struck four thousand men dead, the rest ran mad. A little after, the like happened to Brennus, lightning, thunder, earthquakes, upon such a sacrilegious occasion. If we may believe our pontifical writers, they will relate unto us many strange and

[Part. 1. Sec. 2.]

\[\text{Causes of Melancholy.}\]

\[\text{SECT. II. MEMB. I.}\]

\[\text{SUBSECT. I.—Causes of Melancholy. God a cause.}\]

"It is in vain to speak of cures, or think of remedies, until such time as we have considered of the causes," so Galen prescribes Glauce: and the common experience of others confirms that those cures must be imperfect, lame, and to no purpose, wherein the causes have not first been searched, as Prosper Calenus well observes in his tract de avertâ bile to Cardinal Cassius. Inso-much that Ermelius puts a kind of necessity in the knowledge of the causes, and without which it is impossible to cure or prevent any manner of disease." Empirics may ease, and sometimes help, but not thoroughly root out; sublata causâ tollitur effectus, as the saying is, if the cause be removed, the effect is likewise vanquished. It is a most difficult thing (I confess) to be able to discern these causes whence they are, and in such variety to say what the beginning was. "He is happy that can perform it aright. I will adventure to guess as near as I can, and rip them all up, from the first to the last, general and particular, to every species, that so they may the better be described.

General causes, are either supernatural, or natural. "Supernatural are from God and his angels, or by God's permission from the devil" and his ministers. That God himself is a cause for the punishment of sin, and satisfaction of his justice, many examples and testimonies of holy Scriptures make evident unto us, Ps. xvi. 17. "Foolish men are plagued for their offence, and by reason of their wickedness." Gehazi was stricken with leprosy, 2 Reg. v. 27. Jehoram with dysentery and flux, and great diseases of the bowels, 2 Chron. xxxi. 15. David plagued for numbering his people, 1 Par. 21. Sodom and Gomorrah swallowed up. And this disease is peculiarly specified, Psalm cxvii. 12. "He brought down their heart through heaviness." Deut. xxviii. 28. "He struck them with madness, blindness, and astonishment of heart." "An evil spirit was sent by the Lord upon Saul, to vex him." "Nebuchadnezzar did eat grass like an ox, and his "heart was made like the hearts of the field." Heathen stories are full of such punishments. Lycurgus, because he cut down the vines in the country, was by Bacchus driven into madness: so was Pentheus and his mother Agave for neglecting their sacrifice. "Censor Fulvius ran mad for unmiling Juno's temple, to cover a new one of his own, which he had dedicated to Fortune, "and was confounded to death, with grief and sorrow of heart." When Xerxes would have spoiled Apollo's temple at Delphos of those infinite riches it possessed, a terrible thunder came from heaven and struck four thousand men dead, the rest ran mad. A little after, the like happened to Brennus, lightning, thunder, earthquakes, upon such a sacrilegious occasion. If we may believe our pontifical writers, they will relate unto us many strange and

\[\text{Primo artis curativa.}\]

\[\text{Nostri primum sit propositi affectonem causas indagare; res ipsa hortari videatur, nam aliqui eorum curatissima manca et inutilis esset.}\]

\[\text{Path. lib. 1. cap. 11. Rerum cognoscere causas, medicis imprimit necessarium, sine qua nec-medium curare, nec precaver, licet.}\]

\[\text{Tanta enim morbi varietas ac differentia, ut non facile discernat, unde initiis morbus simplex. Melanthonius Galeno.}\]

\[\text{Felix qui potuit rerum cognoscere causas.}\]

\[\text{1 Sam. xvi. 14.}\]

\[\text{Dan. v. 21.}\]

\[\text{Lactant. Instr.}\]

\[\text{lib. 2. cap. 8.}\]

\[\text{Mente captat, et summo animi morae consumptus.}\]

\[\text{Munster. cosmog. lib. 4.}\]

\[\text{cap. 43. de causis stultitiae.}\]

\[\text{Cap.}\]

\[\text{liv. lib. 38.}\]
prodigious punishments in this kind, inflicted by their saints. How Clodo-veus, sometime King of France, the son of Dagobert, lost his wits for uncovering the body of St. Denis: and how a sacrilegious Frenchman, that would have stolen a silver image of St. John, at Birgburge, became frantic on a sudden, raging, and tyrannising over his own flesh: of a Lord of Kladnor, that coming from hunting late at night, put his dogs into St. Avan's church, (Llan Avan they called it) and rising betimes next morning, as hunters use to do, found all his dogs mad, himself being suddenly stricken blind. Of Tyridates an Armenian king, for violating some holy nuns, that was punished in like sort, with loss of his wits. But poets and papists may go together for fabulous tales; let them free their own credits: howsoever they feign of their Nemesis, and of their saints, or by the devil's means may be declused; we find it true, that "Utter a long Deus, "He is God the avenger," as David styles him; and that it is our crying sins that pull this and many other maladies on our own heads. That he can by his angels, which are his ministers, strike and heal (saith * Dionysius) whom he will; that he can plague us by his creatures, sun, moon, and stars, which he useth as his instruments, as a husbandman (saith Zanchius) doth a hatchet: hail, snow, winds, &c. "Et con- jurati veniant in classica venti." as in Joshua's time, as in Pharaoh's reign in Egypt; they are but as so many executioners of his justice. He can make the proudest spirits stoop, and cry out with Julian the apostate, "Vivisti, Galliae: or with Apollo's priest in Chrysostom, O cælim! à terra! unde hostis hic? What an enemy is this? And pray with David, acknowledging his power, "I am weakened and sore broken, I roar for the grief of mine heart, mine heart panteth," &c. Psalm xxxviii. 8. "O Lord rebuke me not in thine anger, neither chastise me in thy wrath," Psalm xxxviii. 1. "Make me to hear joy and gladness, that the bones which thou hast broken, may rejoice," Psalm li. 8; and verse 12, "Restore to me the joy of thy salvation, and establish me with thy free spirit." For these causes belike Hippocrates would have a physician take special notice whether the disease come not from a divine supernatural cause, or whether it follow the course of nature. But this is farther discussed by Fran. Valesius de saer. philos. cap. 8. * Fernalius, and " J. Cesar Claudinus, to whom I refer you, how this place of Hippocrates is to be understood. Paracelsus is of opinion, that such spiritual diseases (for so he calls them) are spiritually to be cured, and not otherwise. Ordinary means in such cases will not avail: Non est reluctandum cum Deo (we must not struggle with God). When that monster-taming Hercules overcame all in the Olympics, Jupiter at last in an unknown shape wrestled with him; the victory was uncertain, till at length Jupiter descried himself, and Hercules yielded. No striving with supreme powers. Nil juvat immensos Cratero promittère monites, physicians and physic can do no good, "we must submit ourselves unto the mighty hand of God," acknowledge our offences, call to him for mercy. If he strike us, una eademque manus vulnus openaque forst, as it is with them that are wounded with the spear of Achilles, he alone must help; otherwise our diseases are incurable, and we not to be relieved.

Subsect. II.—A Digression of the nature of Spirits, bad Angels, or Devils, and how they cause Melancholy.

How far the power of spirits and devils doth extend, and whether they can cause this, or any other disease, is a serious question, and worthy to be  

considered: for the better understanding of which, I will make a brief digression of the nature of spirits. And although the question be very obscure, according to "Postellus, "full of controversy and ambiguity," beyond the reach of human capacity, fater excedere vires intentionis meae, saith * Austin, I confess I am not able to understand it, finitum de infinito non potest statuere, we can sooner determine with Tully, de nat. deorum, quid non sint quam quid sint, our subtle schoolmen, Cardans, Scaligers, profound Thomists, Fracastoriana and Ferneliana acies, are weak, dry, obscure, defective in these mysteries, and all our quickest wits, as an owl's eyes at the sun's light, wax dull, and are not sufficient to apprehend them; yet, as in the rest, I will adventure to say something to this point. In former times, as we read Acts xxiii., the Sadducees denied that there were any such spirits, devils, or angels. So did Galen the physician, the Peripatetics, even Aristotle himself, as Pomponatius stoutly maintains, and Scaliger in some sort grants. Though Dandinus the Jesuit, com. in lib. 2. de animâ, stiffly denies it; substantiae separate and intelligences, are the same which Christians call angels, and Platonists devils, for they name all the spirits, demones, be they good or bad angels, as Julius Pollux Onomasticon, lib. 1. cap. 1. observes. Epicures and atheists are of the same mind in general, because they never saw them. Plato, Plotinus, Porphyrius, Jamblichus, Proclus, insisting in the steps of Trismegistus, Pythagoras and Socrates, make no doubt of it: nor Stoics, but that there are such spirits, though much erring from the truth. Concerning the first beginning of them, the Talmudists say that Adam had a wife called Lilis, before he married Eve, and of her he begat nothing but devils. The Turks' Alcoran is altogether as absurd and ridiculous in this point: but the Scripture informs us Christians, how Lucifer, the chief of them, with his associates, 7 fell from heaven for his pride and ambition; created of God, placed in heaven, and sometimes an angel of light, now cast down into the lower aerial sublunary parts, or into hell, "and delivered into chains of darkness (2 Pet. ii. 4.), to be kept unto damnation."

Nature of Devils.] There is a foolish opinion which some hold, that they are the souls of men departed, good and more noble were deified, the baser grovelled on the ground, or in the lower parts, and were devils, the which with Tertullian, Porphyrius the philosopher, M. Tyris ser. 27 maintains. "These spirits," he saith, "which we call angels and devils, are nought but souls of men departed, which either through love and pity of their friends yet living, help and assist them, or else persecute their enemies, whom they hated," as Dido threatened to persecute Æneas:

"Omnia umbra locis adero: dabis, improbe, pænas."

"My angry ghost arising from the deep,
Shall haunt thee waking, and disturb thy sleep;
At least my shade thy punishment shall know,
And Fame shall spread the pleasing news below."

They are (as others suppose) appointed by those higher powers to keep men from their nativity, and to protect or punish them as they see cause: and are called boni et mali Genii by the Romans. Heroes, lares, if good, leumers or larve if bad, by the Stoics, governors of countries, men, cities, saith + Apuleius, Deos appellant qui ex hominum numero justae ac prudenti vitae curriculo gubernato, pro nomine, postea ab hominibus prudeti fanes et ceremoniosis vulgo admissurum, ut in Ægypto Osiris, &c. Presides, Capella calls them, "which

* Lib. 1. c. 7. de orbis concordia. In nihil æ re major fult altercation, major obscuritas, minor opinionum concordia, quam de demoniis et substantiis separatis.

† Lib. 3. de Trinit. cap. 1. * Pericius in Concilia, lib. 4. in cap. 3. v. 23. See Struozzius Clergna omnianis, Mag. lib. 2. c. 15. Jo. Aubanas, Breitenbuchus.

+ Angelus per superflumiam separatus a Deo, qui in veritate non stetit. Austin. * Nihil aliud sunt Demones quam nuda animas quæ corpore depopito prionem miserari vitam, cognatis succurrunt commoti misericordia, &c. 2 Deo Socrates. All those mortals are called gods, who, the course of life being prudently guided and governed, are honoured by men with temples and sacrifices, as Osiris in Ægypt, &c.
protected particular men as well as princes;" Socrates had his *Demonium Saturninum et ignium*, which of all spirits is best, *ad sublimes cogitationes animum erigentem*, as the Platonists supposed; Plotinus his, and we Christians our assisting angel, as Andreas Victorellus, a copious writer of this subject, Lodovicus de La-Cerda, the Jesuit, in his voluminous tract *de Angelo Custode*, Zanchius, and some divines think. But this absurd tenet of Tyreus, Proclus confutes at large in his book *de Animâ et demone.*

Psellus, a Christian, and sometimes tutor (saith Cuspinian) to Michael Parapinatius, Emperor of Greece, a great observer of the nature of devils, holds they are *corporal, and have* aerial bodies, that they are mortal, live and die, (which Martinus Capella likewise maintains, but our christian philosophers explode) "that they are nourished and have excrements, they feel pain if they be hurt (which Cardan confirms, and Scaliger justly laughs him to scorn for; *Si passantur aere, cur non pugnant ob puriorem aera? &c.*) or stroken:" and if their bodies be cut, with admirable cerenity they come together again. Austin, in Gen. lib. iii. lib. arbit., approves as much, *mutata casu corpora in deteriori qualitatem aeris spissioris,* so doth Hierome. Comment. in epist. ad Ephes. cap. 3, Origen, Tertullian, Lactantius, and many ancient fathers of the Church: that in their fall their bodies were changed into a more aerial and gross substance. Bodine, lib. 4, Theatri Nature, and David Crusius, Hermeticse Philosophie, lib. i. cap. 4, by several arguments proves angels and spirits to be corporeal: *quicquid continetur in loco Corporum est; At spiritus continetur in loco, ergo.* *Si spiritus sunt quanti, erunt Corporae; At sunt quanti, ergo. Sunt finiti, ergo quanti, &c.* † Bodine goes farther yet, and will have these, *Animae separate genti,* spirits, angels, devils, and so likewise souls of men departed, if corporeal (which he most eagerly contends) to be of some shape, and that absolutely round, like Sun and Moon, because that is the most perfect form, *quia nihil habet asperitatis,* nihil angulis incisum, nihil anfractibus involutum, nihil eminens, sed inter corpora perfecta est perfectissimum; *" therefore all spirits are corporeal he concludes, and in their proper shapes round. That they can assume other aerial bodies, all manner of shapes at their pleasures, appear in what likeness they will themselves, that they are most swift in motion, can pass many miles in an instant, and so likewise transform bodies of others into what shape they please, and with admirable cerenity remove them from place to place (as the Angel did Habakkuk to Daniel, and as Philip the deacon was carried away by the Spirit, when he had baptised the eunuch; so did Pythagoras and Apollonius remove themselves and others, with many such feats); that they can represent castles in the air, palaces, armies, spectrums, prodigies, and such strange objects to mortal men's eyes; † cause smells, savours, &c., deceive all the senses; most writers of this subject credibly believe; and that they can foretell future events, and do many strange miracles. Juno's image spake to Camillus, and Fortune's statue to the Roman matrons, with many such. Zanchius, Bodine, Spondanus, and others, are of opinion that they cause a true metamorphosis, as Nebuchadnezzar was really translated into a beast, Lot's wife into a pillar of salt; Ulysses' companions into hogs and dogs, by Circe's charms; turn themselves and others, as they do witches into cats, dogs, hares, crows, &c. Strozzius Cicogna hath many examples, lib. iii. omn. mag. cap. 4 and 5, which he there confutes, as

* He lived 500 years since.  
* Apuleius: *spiritus animalia sunt animo passibilia, mente rationalla, corpore aeria, tempore sempiterna.*  
* Katrientur, et excrementa habent, quod pulsa soluta solido percussa coeperit.*  
* Whatever occupies space is corporeal; spirit occupies space, therefore, &c. &c.*  
* Which has no roughness, angles, fractures, prominences, but is the most perfect amongst perfect bodies.*  
* Cyprianus in Epist. montes etiam et anima transferred possunt: as the devil did Christ to the top of the pinnacle; and witches are often translated. See more in Strozzius Cicogna, lib. ii. cap. 4. omn. mag. Per aera subdiacere et in subline corpora terre possunt, Biermannus. Percussi dolent et uruntur in consipios cinere, Agrippa, lib. 3. cap. de occult. Philos.  
† Agrippa de occult. Philos. liib. 3. cap. 18.
Austin likewise doth, de civ. Dei lib. xviii. That they can be seen when and in what shape, and to whom they will, saith Psellus, *Tumetsi nil tale viderim, nec optem videre*, though he himself never saw them nor desired it; and use sometimes carnal copulation (as elsewhere I shall prove more at large) with women and men. Many will not believe they can be seen, and if any man shall say, swear, and stiffly maintain, though he be discreet and wise, judicious and learned, that he hath seen them, they account him a timorous fool, a melancholy dizzard, a weak fellow, a dreamer, a sick or a mad man, they contemn him, laugh him to scorn, and yet Marcus of his credit told Psellus that he had often seen them. And Leo Suavius, a Frenchman, c. 8, in Commentar. 1. 1. *Paracelsi de vita longâ*, out of some Platonists, will have the air to be as full of them as snow falling in the skies, and that they may be seen, and withal sets down the means how men may see them; *Si irreverberatas occulis solei splendente versus celum continuaverint obtusus, &c.* and saith moreover he tried it, *praemissorum fici experimentum*, and it was true, that the Platonists said. Paracelsus confesseth that he saw them divers times, and conferred with them, and so doth Alexander ab *Alexandro, 'that he so found it by experience, when as before he doubted of it.' Many deny it, saith Lavater de spectris, part i. c. 2, and part ii. c. 11, "because they never saw them themselves;" but as he reports at large all over his book, especially c. 19, part 1, they are often seen and heard, and familiarly converse with men, as Lod. Vives assureth us, innumerable records, histories, and testimonies evince in all ages, times, places, and *all travellers besides; in the West Indies and our northern climes, Nikil familiarior quam in agris et urbisbus spiritus videre, audire qui vetet, juvest, &c.* Hieronymus vitâ Pauli, Basil ser. 40, Nicephorus, Eusebins, Socrates, Sozomenus, *Jacobus Boissardus in his tract de spirituam apparitionibus*, Petrus Leyerus l. de spectris, Wierus l. 1. have infinite variety of such examples of apparitions of spirits, for him to read that farther doubts, to his ample satisfaction. *One alone I will briefly insert.* A nobleman in Germany was sent ambassador to the King of Sweden (for his name, the time, and such circumstances, I refer you to Boissardus, mine "Author." After he had done his business, he sailed to Livonia, on set purpose to see those familiar spirits, which are there said to be conversant with men, and do their drudgery works. Amongst other matters, one of them told him where his wife was, in what room, in what clothes, what doing, and brought him a ring from her, which, at his return, *non sine omnium admiratione*, he found to be true; and so believed that ever after, which before he doubted of. Cardan l. 19. de substil. relates of his father, Facius Cardan, that after the accustomed solemnities, An. 1491, 13 August, he conjured up seven devils, in Greek apparel, about forty years of age, some ruddy of complexion, and some pale, as he thought; he asked them many questions, and they made ready answer, that they were aerial devils, that they lived and died as men did, save that they were far longer lived (700 or 800 b years); they did as much excel men in dignity as we do juments, and were as far excelled again of those that were above them; our *governors and keepers they are moreover, which § Plato in Critias delivered of old, and subordinate to one another, Ut enim homo homini, sic demoni demoni domina
tur, they rule themselves as well as us, and the spirits of the meaner sort had commonly such offices, as we make horse-keepers, neat-herds, and the basest of us, overseers of our cattle; and that we can no more apprehend their natures and functions, than a horse a man's. They knew all things, but might

not reveal them to men; and ruled and domineered over us, as we do over our horses; the best kings amongst us, and the most generous spirits, were not comparable to the basest of them. Sometimes they did instruct men, and communicate their skill, reward and cherish, and sometimes, again, terrify and punish, to keep them in awe, as they thought fit, Nihil magis cupientes (saith Lysius, Phis. Stoicorum) quam adorationem hominum,* The same Author, Cardan, in his Hyperchen, out of the doctrine of Stoics, will have some of these Genii (for so he calls them) to be *desirous of men's company, very affable and familiar with them, as dogs are; others, again, to abhor as serpents, and care not for them. The same belike Tritemius calls Ignios et sublunares, qui vunquam demergunt ad inferiorem, aut vix album habent in terris commercium: 

"Generally they far excell men in worth, as a man the meanest worm; though some of them are inferior to those of their own rank in worth, as the blackguard in a prince's court, and to men again, as some degenerate, base, rational creatures, are excelled of brute beasts."

That they are mortal, besides these testimonies of Cardan, Martianus, &c., many other divines and philosophers hold, post prolixum tempus moriturum omnes; The *Platonists, and some Rabbins, Porphyrius and Plutarch, as appears by that relation of Thamus: "The great god Pan is dead;" Apollo Pythius ceased; and so the rest. St. Hierome, in the life of Paul the Hermit, tells a story how one of them appeared to St. Anthony in the wilderness, and told him as much. *Paracelsus of our late writers stiffly maintains that they are mortal, live and die as other creatures do. Zozimus, l. 2, further adds, that religion and policy dies and alters with them. The *Gentiles' gods, he saith, were expelled by Constantine, and together with them, Imperii Romani majestas, et fortuna interit, et profugata est; The fortune and majesty of the Roman Empire decayed and vanished, as that heathen in *Minutius formerly bragged, when the Jews were overcome by the Romans, the Jews' God was likewise captivated by that of Rome; and Rabshakeh to the Israelites, no God should deliver them out of the hands of the Assyrians. But these paradoxes of their power, corporeity, mortality, taking of shapes, transposing bodies, and carnal copulations, are sufficiently confuted by Zanch. c. 10. 1. 4. Pererius in his comment, and Tostatus questions on the 6th of Gen. Th. Aquin., St. Austin, Wierus, Th. Erastus, Delrio, tom. 2. 1. 2, quest. 29; Sebastian Michaelis, c. 2, de spiritibus, D. Reinolds Lect. 47. They may deceive the eyes of men, yet not take true bodies, or make a real metamorphosis; but as Cieogna proves at large, they are Illusorice et prestigiatrices transformationes, omnif; mag. lib. 4, cap. 4, mere illusions and cozenings, like that tale of Pastis obulus in Suidas, or that of Antolictes, Mercury's son, that dwelt in Parnassus, who got so much treasure by cozenage and stealth. His father Mercury, because he could leave him no wealth, taught him many fine tricks to get means, for he could drive away men's cattle, and if any pursued him, turn them into what shapes he would, and so did mightily enrich himself, hoc astu maximam pravdam est adsecutus. This, no doubt, is as true as the rest; yet thus much in general. Thomas, Durand, and others, grant that they have understanding far beyond men, can probably conjecture and for tell many things; they can cause and cure most diseases, deceive our senses; they have

* Coveting nothing more than the admiration of mankind. * Natura familiares ut canes hominibus multa avertiscerant atque aberrorent.
* Ab homine plus distant quam homo ab ignobilissimo verme, et tamen quidam ex his ab hominibus superantur ut homines a feris, &c.
* Cibo et potu utile et venere cum hominibus ac tandem mori, Cieogna. 1. part. lib. 2. c. 3.
* Dij gentium a Constantio profugati sunt, &c.
* Octorian dial. Judæorum deumuisse Romanorum numinibus una cum gente captivam.
* Omnia spiritibus plena, et ex eorum concordia et discordia omnes honi et maii effectus propugnant, omnia humana requantur: paradoxo veterum de qua Cieogna, omnif. mag. 1. 2. c. 3. * Oves suas abactarum cras in quasqueque formas verburat Pausanias, Hyginus.
* Austin in 1. 2. de Gen. ad literam cap. 17. Partim quia substantiis sensus acumin, partim scientia calidore vigent et experientia propter magnam longitudinem vitæ, partim ab Angelis discunt, &c.
excellent skill in all Arts and Sciences; and that the most illiterate devil is Quovis homine scientior (more knowing than any man), as 1 Cicogna maintains out of others. They know the virtues of herbs, plants, stones, minerals, &c.; of all creatures, birds, beasts, the four elements, stars, planets, can aptly apply and make use of them as they see good; perceiving the causes of all meteors, and the like: Dant se coloribus (as 2 Austin hath it) accommodant se figuris, adhaerent somis, subjiciunt se odoribus, infundunt se saporibus, omnes sensus etiam ipsam intelligentiam demones fallunt, they deceive all our senses, even our understanding itself at once. 3 They can produce miraculous alterations in the air, and most wonderful effects, conquer armies, give victories, help, further, hurt, cross and alter human attempts and projects (Dei permisssus) as they see good themselves. 4 When Charles the Great intended to make a channel betwixt the Rhine and the Danube, look what his workmen did in the day, these spirits swung down in the night, Ut conatu Rex desisteret, pericerve. Such feats can they do. But that which Bodine, 1, 4, Theat. nat. thinks (following Tyrius belike, and the Platonists,) they can tell the secrets of a man's heart, aut cognationes hominum, is most false; his reasons are weak, and sufficiently confuted by Zanch. lib. 4, cap. 9. Hierom. lib. 2, com. in Mat. ad cap. 15, Athanasius quest. 27, and Autochoen Principem, and others.

Orders.] As for those orders of good and bad Devils, which the Platonists hold, is altogether erroneous, and those Ethics boni et mali Genii, are to be exploded: these heathen writers agree not in this point among themselves, as Dandinus notes, *' (mali non conveniunt, some will have all spirits good or bad to us by a mistake, as if an Ox or Horse could discourse, he would say the Butcher was his enemy because he killed him, the Grazier his friend because he fed him; a Hunter preserves and yet kills his game, and is hated nevertheless of his game; nec piscatorem piscis amare potest, &c. But Jamblichus, Psellus, Plutarch, and most Platonists acknowledge bad, et ab eorum malificios carendum, and we should beware of their wickedness, for they are enemies of mankind, and this Plato learned in Egypt, that they quarrelled with Jupiter, and were driven by him down to hell. § That which * Apuleius, Xenophon, and Plato contend of Socrates' Daemonium, is most absurd: That which Plotinus of his, that he had likewise Deam pro Daemonio; and that which Porphyry concludes of them all in general, if they be neglected in their sacrifice they are angry; nay more, as Cardan in his Hyperchen will, they feed on men's souls, Elementa sunt plantis elementum, animalibus planta, hominibus animalia, erunt et homines diis, non autem diis, nimis enim remota est eorum natura a nostris, quapropter demonibus: and so belike that we have so many battles fought in all ages, countries, is to make them a feast, and their sole delight: but to return to that I said before, if displeased they fret and chafe (for they feed belike on the souls of beasts, as we do on their bodies), and send many plagues amongst us; but if pleased, then they do much good; is as vain as the rest and confuted by Austin, 1, 9. c. 8, de Civ. Dei. Euseb. 1, 4. prepar. Evang. c. 6. and others. Yet thus much I find, that our School-men and other * Divines make nine kinds of bad spirits, as Dionysius hath done of Angels. In the first rank are those false gods of the Gentiles, which were adored heretofore in several Idols, and gave Oracles at Delphos, and elsewhere; whose Prince is Beelzebub. The second rank is of Liars and

Æquivocators, as Apollo Pythius, and the like. The third are those vessels of anger, inventors of all mischief; as that Theutus in Plato; Esay calls them\(^v\) vessels of fury; their Prince is Belial. The fourth are malicious revenging Devils; and their Prince is Asmodæus. The fifth kind are cozeners, such as belong to Magicians and Witches; their Prince is Satan. The sixth are those aerial devils that \(^v\) corrupt the air and cause plagues, thunders, fires, &c.; spoken of in the Apocalypse, and Paul to the Ephesians names them the Princes of the air; Meresin is their Prince. The seventh is a destroyer, Captain of the Furies, causing wars, tumults, combustions, uproars, mentioned in the Apocalypse; and called Abaddon. The eighth is that accusing or calumniating Devil, whom the Greeks call Διαβόλος, that drives men to despair. The ninth are those tempters in several kinds, and their Prince is Mammon. Psellus makes six kinds, yet none above the Moon: Wierus in his Pseudomonarchia Daemones, out of an old book, makes many more divisions and subordinations, with their several names, numbers, offices, &c., but Gauzæus cited by \(^v\) Lipsius will have all places full of Angels, Spirits, and Devils, above and beneath the Moon; \(^v\) aerial and aerial, which Austin cites out of Varro 1. vii. de Civ. Dei. e. 6. “The celestial Devils above, and aerial beneath,” or, as some will, gods above, Semidei or half gods beneath, Larces, Heroes, Genii, which climb higher, if they lived well, as the Stoics held; but grovel on the ground as they were baser in their lives, nearer to the earth: and are Manes, Lemures, Lamiae, &c. \(^v\) They will have no place but all full of Spirits, Devils, or some other inhabitants; \(^v\) Plenum Celum, aer, aqua, terra, et omnia sub terrâ, saith Gauzæus; though Anthony Rusca in his book de Inferno, lib. v. cap. 7. would confine them to the middle Region, yet they will have them everywhere. “Not so much as a hair-breadth empty in heaven, earth, or waters, above or under the earth.” The air is not so full of flies in summer, as it is at all times of invisible devils: this \(^v\) Paracelsus stilly maintains, and that they have every one their several Chaos, others will have infinite worlds, and each world his peculiar Spirits, Gods, Angels, and Devils to govern and punish it.

\(^*\) Singula \(^*\) semmulli erudent quoque sidera posse

**Dici orbos, terrarumque appellant sidad opacum,**

*Cui minus divinis presert.**

\(^*\) Some persons believe each star to be a world, and this earth an opaque star, over which the least of the gods presides.

\(^v\) Gregorius Tholsanus makes seven kinds of \(^v\) aerithal Spirits or Angels, according to the number of the seven Planets, Saturnine, Jovial, Martial, of which Cardan discourseth lib. xx. de subtil. he calls them \(^v\) substantias primas, \(^v\) Olympicos daemonis Trieniuss, qui praebat Zodiaco, &c., and will have them to be good Angels above, Devils beneath the Moon, their several names and offices he there sets down, and which Dionysius of Angels, will have several spirits for several countries, men, offices, &c., which live about them, and as so many assisting powers cause their operations, will have in a word, innumerable, as many of them as there be Stars in the Skies. \(^*\) Marcilii Ficinus seems to second this opinion, out of Plato, or from himself, I know not, (still ruling their inferiors, as they do those under them again, subordinate, and the nearest to the earth rule us, whom we subdivide into good and bad angels, call gods or devils, as they help or hurt us, and so adore, love or hate) but it is most likely from Plato, for he relying wholly on Socrates, quen mori potius quam mentiri voluisse scribit, whom he says would rather die than tell a falsehood out of Socrates’ authority alone, made nine kinds of them: which opinion

\(^v\) Vasa fr.” c. 13. \(^v\) Quibus datum est necesse terras et mari, &c. \(^*\) Physiol. Stoicorum & Senec. lib. 1. cap. 29. \(^v\) Usque ad lunam animas esse sideras vocarique herbas, larces, genios. \(^v\) Mari. Capella. \(^*\) Nilh vacuum ad his ullo vel capitum in aeris vel aqua jaccet. \(^v\) Lib. de Ziph. \(^*\) Palingenius. \(^v\) Lib. 7. cap. 34 et 5. Syntax. ar. mirr. \(^*\) Comment in dial. Plat. de amore, cap. 5. \(^v\) Ut sphaera qualslibet super nos, ita praestantiores habent habitatores suas sphaerae consortes, ut habet nostra.
belike Socrates took from Pythagoras, and he from Trismegistus, he from Zoroastes, first God, second idea, 3. Intelligences, 4. Arch-Angels, 5. Angels, 6. Devils, 7. Heroes, 8. Principalities, 9. Princes: of which some were absolutely good, as gods, some bad, some indifferent inter deos et homines, as heroes and demons, which ruled men, and were called genii, or as Proclus and Jamblichus will, the middle betwixt God and men. Principalities and Princes, which commanded and swayed Kings and countries; and had several places in the Spheres perhaps, for as every sphere is higher, so hath it more excellent inhabitants: which belike is that Galileus à Galileo and Kepler aims at in his Nuneio Syderio, when he will have Saturnine and Jovial inhabitants: and which Tycho Brahe doth in some sort touch or insinuate in one of his Epistles: but these things Zanchius justly explodes, cap. 3. lib. 4. P. Martyr, in 4. Sam. 28.

So that according to these men the number of æthereal spirits must needs be infinite: for if that be true that some of our mathematicians say: if a stone could fall from the sturvy heaven, or eighth sphere, and should pass every hour an hundred miles, it would be 65 years, or more, before it would come to ground, by reason of the great distance of heaven from earth, which contains as some say 170 millions 803 miles, besides those other heavens, whether they be crystalline or watery which Maginus addes, which peradventure holds as much more, how many such spirits may it contain? And yet for all this Thomas Albertus, and most hold that there be far more angels than devils. Sublunary devils, and their kinds.] But be they more or less, Quod supra nos nihil ad nos (what is beyond our comprehension does not concern us). Howsoever as Martianus foolishly supposeth, Ætherii Deamones non curant res humanas, they care not for us, do not attend our actions, or look for us, those æthereal spirits have other worlds to reign in belike or business to follow. We are only now to speak in brief of these sublunary spirits or devils: for the rest, our divine determine that the Devil had no power over stars, or heavens; Carminibus callo possunt deducere lunam, &c. (by their charms (verses) they can seduce the moon from the heavens). Those are poetical fictions, and that they can sistere aquam fluvii, et vertere silexere retro, &c., (stop rivers and turn the stars backwards in their courses) as Canada in Horace, tis all false. They are confined until the day of judgment to this sublunary world, and can work no farther than the four elements, and as God permits them. Wherefore of these sublunary devils, though others divide them otherwise according to their several places and offices, Psellus makes six kinds, fiery, aerial, terrestrial, watery, and sublunarian devils, besides those fairies, satyrs, nymphs, &c.

Fiery spirits or devils are such as commonly work by blazing stars, fire-drakes, or ignes fatai; which lead men often in flumina aut precipitia, saith Bodine, lib. 2. Theat. nature, fol. 221. Quos inquit arcere si volunt viatores, clara voce Deum appellare, aut pronam facere terram contingente adorare oportet, et hoc omnium majoribus nostris acceptum ferre debemus, &c. (whom if travellers wish to keep off they must pronounce the name of God with a clear voice, or adore him with their faces in contact with the ground, &c.); likewise they counterfeit suns and moons, stars oftentimes, and sit on ship masts: In navigiorum summatis visantur; and are called dioscuri, as Eusebius 1. contra Philosophos, c. xlviii. informeth us, out of the authority of Zenophanes; or little clouds, ad motum nescio quem volantes; which never appear, saith

* Lib. de Amicis, et demonum med. inter deos et homines, dicta ad nos et nostra equaliter ad deos servat.
* Saturninas et Joviales accidit.
* In loco detruiti sunt infra celestis orbis in aerem sollicit et infra ubi Jucunda generali reservatur. *a* q. 35. art. 9. *b* Virg. 8. Eg.
*c* En. 4. *d* Austin: hoc dixit, ne quis extinstet habitare ibi mala dementia ubi Solman et Luman et Stella Dei ordinavit, et aliis name arbitrariet Deamone coeli habitare cum Angelis suis unde lapsum credimus. *e* Leon Zanch. 1. 4. c. 3. de Angel. males. Pererius in Gen. cap. 6. lib. 8. in ver. 2.
Digression of Spirits.

Cardan, but they signify some mischief or other to come unto men, though some again will have them to pretend good, and victory to that side they come towards in sea fights, St. Elmo’s fires they commonly call them, and they do likely appear after a sea storm; Radzivillius, the Polonian duke, calls this apparition, Sanci Germani sidus; and saith moreover that he saw the same after in a storm as he was sailing, 1582, from Alexandria to Rhodes. Our stories are full of such apparitions in all kinds. Some think they keep their residence in that Hecla, a mountain in Iceland, Ætna in Sicily, Lipari, Vesuvius, &c. These devils were worshipped heretofore by that superstitious Pythagorizes and the like.

Aerial spirits or devils, are such as keep quarter most part in the air, cause many tempests, thunder, and lightnings, tear oaks, fire steeples, houses, strike men and beasts, make it rain stones, as in Livy’s time, wool, frogs, &c. Counterfeit armies in the air, strange noises, swords, &c., as at Vienna before the coming of the Turks, and many times in Rome, as Scheretzius 1. de spect. c. 1. part. 1. Lavater de spect. part. 1. c. 17. JuliusObssequens, an old Roman, in his book of prodigies, ab urb. cond. 505. *Machiavel* hath illustrated by many examples, and Josephus, in his book de bello Judaico, before the destruction of Jerusalem. All which Gual. Postellus, in his first book, c. 7, de orbis concordiâ, useth as an effectual argument (as indeed it is) to persuade them that will not believe there be spirits or devils. They cause whirlwinds on a sudden, and tempestuous storms; which though our meteorologists generally refer to natural causes, yet I am of Bodine’s mind, Theut. Nat. 1. 2. they are more often caused by those aerial devils, in their several quarters; for Tempstativs se inperunt, saith † Rich. Argentine; as when a desperate man makes away with himself, which by hanging or drowning they frequently do, as Kornmannus observes, de mirac. mort. part. 7. c. 76. tripudiun agentes, dancing and rejoicing at the death of a sinner. These can corrupt the air, and cause plagues, sickness, storms, shipwrecks, fires, inundations. At Mons Draconis in Italy, there is a most memorable example in †Jovianus Pontanus: and nothing so familiar (if we may believe those relations of Saxo Grammaticus, Olaus Magnus, Damianus A. Goes) as for witches and sorcerers, in Lapland, Lithuania, and all over Scandia, to sell winds to mariners, and cause tempests, which Marcus Paulus the Venetian relates likewise of the Tartars. These kind of devils are much †delighted in sacrifices (saith Porphyry), held all the world in awe, and had several names, idols, sacrifices, in Rome, Greece, Egypt, and at this day tyrannise over, and deceive those Ethnics and Indians, being adored and worshipped for †gods. For the Gentiles’ gods were devils (as †Trismegistus confesseth in his Asclepius), and he himself could make them come to their images by magic spells: and are now as much “respected by our papists (saith †Pictorius) under the name of saints.” These are they which Cardan thinks desire so much carnal copulation with witches (Incubi and Succubi), transform bodies, and are so very cold if they be touched; and that serve magicians. His father had one of them (as he is not ashamed to relate*), an aerial devil, bound to him for twenty and eight years. As Agrippa’s dog had a devil tied to his collar; some think that Paracelsus (or else Erastus belies him) had one confined to his sword pommel; others wear them in rings, &c. Jannes and James did many things of old by their help; Simon Magnus, Cinops, Apollonius Tianeus, Jamblichus, and Triteimus of late, that showed

---

* Perigrum. Hierosol. * Fire-worship, or divination by fire. † Domus dirum, muros deficiunt; immiscet se turbinitus et proculis et parvorum instar columnae elevunt. Ciconia 1. 5. c. 5. † Quest. in Liv. † De praestitis daemonum, c. 16. Concelli culmino videmus, protumri sata, &c. De bello Neapolitano, lib. 5. † Suffitis gaudent. Iadem Justin. Martyr Apologiae pro Christianis* 7. † In Dei imitationem, saith Enesbius. † Hi gentium Daemonia, &c. ego in eorum status pellexi. †Et nunc sub divorum nomine coluntur a Pontificibus. * Lib. 11. de rerum ver. **
Maximilian the emperor his wife, after she was dead; *Et verrucam in collo ejus* (saith *Godolman*) so much as the wart in her neck. Delrio, lib. ii. hath divers examples of their feats: Cicogna, lib. iii. cap. 3. and Wierus in his book *de prestig. domonum. Boissardus de magis et vehemens.*

Water-devils are those Naiads or water nymphs which have been heretofore conversant about waters and rivers. The water (as Paracelsus thinks) is their chaos, wherein they live; some call them fairies, and say that Habundia is their queen; these cause inundations, many times shipwrecks, and deceive men divers ways, as Succula, or otherwise, appearing most part (saith Trittinus) in women's shapes. *Paracelsus hath several stories of them that have lived and been married to mortal men, and so continued for certain years with them, and after, upon some dislike, have forsaken them. Such a one as *Ægeria,* with whom Numa was so familiar, Diana, Ceres, &c. ⁸ Olaus Magnus hath a long narration of one Hotherus, a king of Sweden, that having lost his company, as he was hunting one day, met with these water nymphs or fairies, and was feasted by them; and Hector Boethius, of Macbeth, and Banquo, two Scottish lords, that as they were wandering in the woods, had their fortunes told them by three strange women. To these, heretofore, they did use to sacrifice, by that *ibipavaria,* or divination by waters.

Terrestrial devils are those *Lares, Genii, Fauns, Satyrs,* *Wood-nymphs, Foliots, Fairies, Robin Goodfellows, Trulli,* &c., as which they are most conversant with men, so they do them most harm. Some think it was they alone that kept the heathen people in awe of old, and had so many idols and temples erected to them. Of this range was Dagon amongst the Phœnicians, Bel amongst the Babylonians, Astartes amongst the Sidonians, Isis and Osiris amongst the Egyptians, &c.; some put our *fairies* into this rank, which have been in former times adored with much superstition, with sweeping their houses, and setting of a pail of clean water, good victuals, and the like, and then they should not be pinched, but find money in their shoes, and be fortunate in their enterprises. These are they that dance on heaths and greens, as *Lavater* thinks with Trittinus, and as *Olaus Magnus* adds, leave that green circle, which we commonly find in plain fields, which others hold to proceed from a meteor falling, or some accidental rankness of the ground, so nature sports herself; they are sometimes seen by old women and children. Hierom. Pauli, in his description of the city of *Bercino* in Spain, relates how they have been familiarly seen near that town, about fountains and hills; *Nonnumquam* (saith Trittinus) *in sua latibula montium simpliciores homines ducent, stupenda mirabantur ostendentes miracula, notarum sonitus, spectacula,* &c. *Giraldus Cambrensis* gives instance in a monk of Wales that was so deluded. *Paracelsus reckons up many places in Germany, where they do usually walk in little coats, some two feet long. A bigger kind there is of them called with us hobgoblins, and Robin Goodfellows, that would in those superstitious times grind corn for a mess of milk, cut wood, or do any manner of drudgery work. They would mend old iron in those *Æolian* isles of Lipari, in former ages, and have been often seen and heard. *Tholosanu* calls them *Trullos and Getulos,* and saith, that in his days they were common in many places of France. Dithmars Bieskenius, in his description of Iceland, reports for a certainty, that almost in every family they have yet some such familiar spirits;

---

* Lib. 3. cap. 3. de magis et vehemens, &c. Nereides. ⁸ Lib. de Zilphis. ⁹ Lib. 3. ¹ Pro salute hominis excubare ac simulac, sed in corum periculm omnia mollitur. Annot. ² Dryades, Oriades, Hamadryades. ³ Elvas Olaus vocat lib. 3. ⁴ Part. 1. cap. 19. ⁵ Lib. 3. cap. 11. ⁶ Elvanum choris Olaus lib. 3. vocat salmon adae profundis in terras imprimit, ut locus insigni delinqueat viro orbicularis sit, et grumen non pereat. * Sometimes they seduce too simple men into their mountain retreats, where they exhibit wonderful sights to their marvelling eyes, and astonish their ears by the sound of bells, &c. ⁷ Lib. de Zilph. et Pigmatis Olaus lib. 3. ⁸ Lib. 7. cap. 11. qui et in famulio viris et feminis inserviant, conclusa scopo purgant, patimas mundant, ligna portant, equos curant, &c.
and Felix Malleolus, in his book de crudel. daemon, affirms as much, that these Trolli or Telchines are very common in Norway, "and seen to do drudgery work;" to draw water, saith Wierus, lib. 1. cap. 22. dress meat, or any such thing. Another sort of these there are, which frequent forlorn houses, which the Italians call foliots, most part innoxious, Cardan holds; "They will make strange noises in the night, howl sometimes pitifully, and then laugh again, cause great flame and sudden lights, flying stones, rattle chains, shave men, open doors and shut them, flying down platters, stools, chests, sometimes appear in the likeness of hares, crows, black dogs, &c." of which read Pet. Thyræus the Jesuit, in his Tract. de locis infestis, part. 1. et cap. 4, who will have them to be devils or the souls of damned men that seek revenge, or else souls out of purgatory that seek ease; for such examples peruse Sigismundus Scheretzius, lib. de spectris, part 1. c. 1. which he saith he took out of Luther most part; there be many instances. Plinius Secundus remembers such a house at Athens, which Athenodorus the philosopher hired, which no man durst inhabit for fear of devils. Austin, de Civ. Dei, lib. 22, cap. 1. relates as much of Hesperius the Tribune's house, at Zabeda, near their city of Hippo, vexed with evil spirits, to his great hindrance, Cum afflictionem animaliam et servorum suorum. Many such instances are to be read in Niderius Formicur, lib. 5. cap. xii. 3. &c. Whether I may call these Zim and Ochim, which Issiah, cap. xiii. 21. speaks of, I make a doubt. See more of these in the said Scheretz. lib. 1. de spect. cap. 4. he is full of examples. These kinds of devils many times appear to men, and afflict them out of their wits, sometimes walking at noon-day, sometimes at nights, counterfeiting dead men's ghosts, as that of Caligula, which (saith Suetonius) was seen to walk in Lavinia's garden, where his body was buried, spirits haunted, and the house where he died, *Nulla nos sine terræ transacta, donec incendio consumpta;* every night this happened, there was no quietness, till the house was burned. About Hecla, in Iceland, ghosts commonly walk, animas mortuorum simulantes, saith Joh. Anan. lib. 3. de nat. dem. Olaus, lib. 2. cap. 2. Natal. Tallopid. lib. de apparit. spir. Kornmannus de mirac. mort. part. 1. cap. 44. such sights are frequently seen circa sepulchra et monasteria, saith Lavat. lib. 1. cap. 19. in monasteries and about churches, loca paludinosæ, ampla adiciæ, solitaria, et cæde hominum notata, &c. (marshes, great buildings, solitary places, or remarkable as the scene of some murder). Thyræus adds, uti gravissum peccatum est commissum, impii pavorum oppressores et nequitier insignes habitant (where some very heinous crime was committed, there the impious and infamous generally dwell). These spirits often foretell men's deaths by several signs, as knocking, groanings, &c., though Rich. Argentine, c. 18. de prestigiiis daemonum, will ascribe these predictions to good angels, out of the authority of Ficinus and others; prodigia in obitu principum sepius contingunt, &c. (prodigies frequently occur at the deaths of illustrious men), as in the Lateran church in Rome, the popes' deaths are foretold by Sylvester's tomb. Near Rupes Nova in Finland, in the kingdom of Sweden, there is a lake, in which, before the governor of the castle dies, a spectrum, in the habit of Arion with his harp, appears, and makes excellent music, like those blocks in Cheshire, which (they say) presage death to the master of the family; or that *oak in Lanthadran park in Cornwall, which foreshows as much. Many families in Europe are so put in mind of their last by such predictions, and many men are forewarned (if we may believe Paracelsus)
by familiar spirits in divers shapes, as cocks, crows, owls, which often hover about sick men's chambers, vel quia morientium faciuntem sentit, as "Barcellus conjectures, et idem super noctem infirmorum crotant, because they smell a corse; or for that (as Bernardinus de Bustis thinketh) God permits the devil to appear in the form of crows, and such like creatures, to scare such as live wickedly here on earth. A little before Tully's death (saith Plutarch) the crows made a mighty noise about him, tumulibusque perstrepentes, they pulled the pillow from under his head. Rob. Gagninus hist. Franc. lib. 8, telleth such another wonderful story at the death of Johannes de Monteforti, a French lord, anno 1345, tanta corvorum multitudo cadibus morientis insedit, quantum esse in Gallia nemo judicasse (a multitude of crows alighted on the house of the dying man, such as no one imagined existed in France). Such prodigies are very frequent in authors. See more of these in the said Lavater, Thyræus de locis infestis, part 3, cap. 58. Pictorius, Delrio, Cicogna, lib. 3, cap. 9. Necromancers take upon them to raise and lay them at their pleasures: and so likewise those which Mizaldus calls Ambulones, that walk about midnight on great heaths and desert places, which (saith Lavater) "draw men out of the way, and lead them all night a bye-way, or quite bar them of their way," these have several names in several places; we commonly call them Pucks. In the deserts of Lop, in Asia, such illusions of walking spirits are often perceived, as you may read in M. Paulus, the Venetian his travels; if one lose his company by chance, these devils will call him by his name, and counterfeit voices of his companions to seduce him. Hieronym. Pauli, in his book of the hills of Spain, relates of a great mount in Cantabria, where such spectrums are to be seen; Lavater and Cicogna have variety of examples of spirits and walking devils in this kind. Sometimes they sit by the highway side, to give men falls, and make their horses stumble and start as they ride (if you will believe the relation of that holy man Ketellus in * Nubrigensis, that had an especial grace to see devils, Gratiam divinitus collatam, and talk with them, Et impavidus cum spiritibus sermonem miscere, without offence, and if a man curse or spur his horse for stumbling, they do heartily rejoice at it; with many such pretty feats.

Subterranean devils are as common as the rest, and do as much harm. Olaus Magnus, lib. 6, cap. 19, makes six kinds of them; some bigger, some less. These (saith Munster) are commonly seen about mines of metals, and are some of them noxious; some again do no harm. The metal-men in many places account it good luck, a sign of treasure and rich ore when they see them. Georgius Agricola in his book de subterraneis animantibus, cap. 37, reckons two more notable kinds of them, which he calls Getuli and Cobali, both "are clothed after the manner of metal-men, and will many times imitate their works." Their office, as Pictorius and Paracelsus think, is to keep treasure in the earth, that it be not all at once revealed; and besides, Cicogna avereth that they are the frequent causes of those horrible earthquakes "which often swallow up, not only houses, but whole islands and cities;" in his third book, cap. 11, he gives many instances.

The last are conversant about the centre of the earth to torture the souls of damned men to the day of judgment; their egres and regress some suppose to be about Ætna, Lipari, Mons Hecla in Iceland, Vesuvius, Terra del Fuego, &c., because many shrieks and fearful cries are continually heard thereabouts, and familiar apparitions of dead men, ghosts and goblins.

7Horto Geniali, folio 137. 8 Part. 1, c. 19. 9 Abudacunt eos a recta via, et visam iter facientibus intercludunt. 10 Lib. 1, cap. 44. Demoneum cerunatur et auduntur ibi frequentes illusiones, unde vistorium carentium ne se dissolvent, sunt a tergo mancant, voces enim flungunt socororum, ut a recto finire abudacant, &c. 11 Mons sterilis et nivosus, ibi intercessa nocte mana se aparent. 12 Lib. 2, cap. 21. Officiduia faciant transcuntibus in via, et petulanter ridet cum vel hominum vel jumentorum ejus pedes attergere ducet, et maximin si homo maledeficit et calcaribus seavit. 13 In Cosmongr. 14 Vestiti more metallorum, gestis et opera erantimitantur. 15 Immiso in terra carceres vasto horribiles terre motus efficitum, quibus supe non dominus modo et turres, sed civitates integras et insulas hausta sunt.
Their Offices, Operations, Study.] Thus the devil reigns, and in a thousand several shapes, "as a roaring lion still seeks whom he may devour," 1 Pet. v., by earth, sea, land, air, as yet unconfined, though *some will have his proper place the air; all that space between us and the moon for them that transgressed least, and hell for the wickedest of them, Hic velut in carceres ad fines mundi, tune in locum funestiorum trudendi, as Austin holds de Civit. Dei, c. 22, lib. 14, cap. 3 et 23; but be where he will, he rages while he may to comfort himself, as "Lactantius thinks, with other men's falls, he labours all he can to bring them into the same pit of perdition with him. "For men's miseries, calamities, and ruins are the devil's banqueting dishes." By many temptations and several engines, he seeks to captivate our souls. The Lord of Lies, saith * Austin, "As he was deceived himself, he seeks to deceive others, the ringleader to all naughtiness, as he did by Eve and Cain, Sodom and Gomorrah, so would he do all the world. Sometimes he tempts by covetousness, drunkenness, pleasure, pride, &c., errors, dejects, saves, kills, protects, and rides some men, as do their horses. He studies our overthrow, and generally seeks our destruction;" and although he pretend many times human good, and vindicate himself for a god by curing of several diseases, aigris sanatatem, et caecis luminis usum restituendo, as Austin declares, lib. 10, de Civit. Dei, cap. 6, as Apollo, Æsculapius, Isis, of old have done; divert plagues, assist them in wars, pretend their happiness, yet nihil his impuris, scelustis, nihil humano generi infestius, nothing so impure, nothing so pernicious, as may well appear by their tyrannical and bloody sacrifices of men to Saturn and Moloch, which are still in use among those barbarous Indians, their several deceits and cozenings to keep men in obedience, their false oracles, sacrifices, their superstitious impositions of fasts, penury, &c. Heresies, superstitious observations of meats, times, &c., by which they *crucify the souls of mortal men, as shall be showed in our Treatise of Religious Malancholy. Modico adhuc tempore ainitur malignari, as Bernard expresseth it, by God's permission he rages a while, hereafter to be confined to hell and darkness, "which is prepared for him and his angels," Mat. xxv.

How far their power doth extend it is hard to determine; what the ancients held of their effects, force and operations, I will briefly show you: Plato in Critias, and after him his followers, gave out that these spirits or devils, "were men's governors and keepers, our lords and masters, as we are of our cattle." "They govern provinces and kingdoms by oracles, auguries, dreams, rewards and punishments, prophecies, inspirations, sacrifices, and religious superstitions, varied in as many forms as there be diversity of spirits; they send wars, plagues, peace, sickness, health, death, plenty, "Aвестantes hic jam nobis, spectantes, et arbitrantes, &c. as appears by those histories of Thucydidès, Livius, Dionysius Halicarnassus, with many others that are full of their wonderful stratagems, and were therefore by those Roman and Greek commonwealths admired and worshipped for gods with prayers and sacrifices, &c. "In a word, "Nihil magis querunt quam nevum et admirationem hominum; "and as another hath it, "Dic non potest, quam impotentis ardore in homines dominium, et

Divinos culos maligni spiritus affectent." Tritemius in his book de septem secondis, assigns names to such angels as are governors of particular provinces, by what authority I know not, and gives them several jurisdictions. Asclepiades a Grecian, Rabbi Achib the Jew, Abraham Avenezra, and Rabbi Azariel, Arabians, (as I find them cited) farther add, that they are not our governors only, Sed ex eorum concordia et discordia, boni et mali affectus prominant, but as they agree, so do we and our princes, or disagree; stand or fall. Juno was a bitter enemy to Troy, Apollo a good friend, Jupiter indifferent, Aquae Venus Tauris, Pallas unius fuit; some are for us still, some against us, Premente Deo, fert Deus alter open. Religion, policy, public and private quarrels, wars are procured by them, and they are delighted perhaps to see men fight, as men are with cocks, bulls, and dogs, bears, &c., plagues, dearths depend on them, our benè and mali esse, and almost all our other peculiar actions, for (as Anthony Rusea contends, lib. 5, cap. 18, every man hath a good and a bad angel attending on him in particular, all his life long, which Jamblanchus calls daemonem,) preferments, losses, weddings, deaths, rewards and punishments, and as Proclus will, all offices whatsoever, alii genetricum, alii opificem potestatem habent, &c., and several names they give them according to their offices, as Lares Indegites, Prestites, &c. When the Arcades in that battle at Cherone, which was fought against King Philip for the liberty of Greece, had deceitfully carried themselves, long after, in the very same place, Dies Graeciae ulioribus (saith mine author) they were miserably slain by Metellus the Roman: so likewise, in smaller matters, they will have things fall out, as these boni and mali genii favour or dislike us: Saturni non conveniunt Jovialibus, &c. He that is Saturniinus shall never likely be preferred.

"That base fellows are often advanced, undeserving Gnathoes, and vicious parasites, whereas discreet, wise, virtuous and worthy men are neglected and unwarded; they refer to those domineering spirits, or subordinate Genii; as they are inclined, or favour men, so they thrive, are ruled and overcome; for as Libanius supposeth in our ordinary conflicts and contentions, Genius Geni cedit et obtempert, one genius yields and is overcome by another. All particular events almost they refer to these private spirits; and (as Porcellus adds) they direct, teach, inspire, and instruct men. Never was any man extraordinary famous in any art, action, or great commander, that had not familiarism daemonem to inform him, as Numa, Socrates, and many such, as Cardian illustrates, cap. 128, Avarnis prudentiae civilis, Speciali sigillum gratia, si à Deo donati asserunt magi, à Genii celestibus instruxit, ab viis doceiri. But these are most erroneous paradoxes, ineptus et fabulosa nugae, rejected by our divines and Christian churches. 'Tis true they have, by God's permission, power over us, and we find by experience, that they can a hurt not our fields only, cattle, goods, but our bodies and minds. At Hammel in Saxony, An. 1484, 20 Juni, the devil, in likeness of a pied piper, carried away 130 children that were never after seen. Many times men are a frighted out of their wits, carried away quite, as Scheretzius illustrates, lib. 1. c. iv., and severally molest ed by his means, Plotinus the Platonist, lib. 14, advers. Gnos. languis them to scorn, that hold the devil or spirits can cause any such diseases. Many think he can work upon the body, but not upon the mind. But experience pronounces otherwise, that he can work both upon body and mind. Terrullian is

"It is scarcely possible to describe the impotent armour with which these malignant spirits aspire to the honour of being divinely worshipped." 1 Omnif. mag. lib. 2. cap. 29. 2 Ludus deorum summis. 3 Lib. de anima et demone. 4 Quoties ft, ut Prinzipes novitium auilecum divitias et dignitatis pene obstent, et multorum anormum ministrum, qui non semel pro hero parcellam subit, ne tenerato domin, &c. Idem. Quod Philopomp non renumeret, caea scura et ineptus ob iussu una quae sanctum praemia reportet, inde ft, &c. 5 Lib. de Cruceatu. Gadala. 6 Boissardus c. 3. magis. 7 Godofrnmus cap. 3. lib. 1. de Magia. Idem Zachius lib. 4. cap. 10 et 11. de mulis angis. 8 Novca Melancholica furrosis effect, et quandque penitus interret. E. Picolomineus Idemque Zach. cap. 10. lib. 4. et Deus permettut, corpora nostra movere possunt, alterare, quovis morborum et malorum genere affecer, line et in ipsa penetrare et savorre.
of this opinion, c. 22. "That he can cause both sickness and health," and that secretly. *Taurellus adds "by clancular poisons he can infect the bodies, and hinder the operations of the bowels, though we perceive it not, closely creeping into them," saith *Lipius, and so crucify our souls: Et necissa melancholia furiosos effect. For being a spiritual body, he struggles with our spirits, saith Rogers, and suggests (according to 1 Cardan, verba sine voce, species sine visu, envy, lust, anger, &c.) as he sees men inclined.

The manner how he performs it, Biarmannus in his Oration against Bodine, sufficiently declares. "He begins first with the phantasy, and moves that so strongly, that no reason is able to resist. Now the phantasy he moves by mediation of humours; although many physicians are of opinion, that the devil can alter the mind, and produce this disease of himself. Quibusdam medicorum visum, saith 1 Avicenna, quod Melancholia contingat à diemone. Of the same mind is Psellus and Rhasis the Arab. lib. 1. Tract. 9. Cont. "m That this disease proceeds especially from the devil, and from him alone." Arianus cap. 6. in 9. Rhasis, Elianus Montaltus in his 9. cap. Daniel Sennertus lib. 1. part 2. cap. 11. confirm as much, that the devil can cause this disease; by reason many times that the parties affected prophesy, speak strange language, but non sine intervenu humoris, not without the humour, as he interprets himself; no more doth Avicenna, si contingat à diemone, sufficit nobis ut conversat complexionem ad choleram nigram, et sit causa ejus proprioquâ choleira nigra, the immediate cause is choler adjust, which *Pomponatius likewise labours to make good: Galgerandus of Mantua, a famous Physician, so cured a demonical woman in his time, that spoke all languages, by purging black choler, and thereupon belike this humour of Melancholy is called Balneum Diaboli, the Devil's Bath; the devil spying his opportunity of such humours drives them many times to despair, fury, rage, &c., mingling himself amongst these humours. This is that which Tertullian avers, Corporibus infligunt acerbos casus, animaque repentinam, membra distoguant, occulte repentes, &c. and which Lemnius goes about to prove, Inmiserat se mali Genii pravis humoribus, utque abre bili, &c. And "Jason Pratensis, "that the devil, being a slender incomprehensible spirit, can easily insinuate and wind himself into human bodies, and cunningly couched in our bowels vitiate our healths, terrify our souls with fearful dreams, and shake our mind with furies." And in another place, "These unclean spirits settled in our bodies, and now mixed with our melancholy humours, do triumph as it were, and sport themselves as in another heaven." Thus he argues, and that they go in and out of our bodies, as bees do in a hive, and so provoke and tempt us as they perceive our temperature inclined of itself, and most apt to be deluded. *Agrippa and *Lavater are persuaded, that this humour invites the devil to it, whereasoever it is in extremity, and of all other, melancholy persons are most subject to diabolical temptations and illusions, and most apt to entertain them, and the Devil best able to work upon them. But whether by obsession, or possession, or otherwise, I will not determine; 'tis a difficult question. Delrio the Jesuit, Tom. 3. lib. 6. Springer and his colleague, mall. malef. Pet. Thyreus the Jesuit, lib. de demoniacis, de locis injustis, de Terrificationibus nocturnis, Hieronymus Mengus Flagel. dam.

and others of that rank of pontifical writers, it seems, by their exorcisms and conjurations approve of it, having forged many stories to that purpose. A nun did eat a lettuce without grace, or signing it with the sign of the cross, and was instantly possessed. Durand. *lib. 6.* Rationall. c. 36, numb. 8. relates that he saw a wench possessed in Bononia with two devils, by eating an unhallowed pomegranate, as she did afterwards confess, when she was cured by exorcisms. And therefore our Papists do sign themselves so often with the sign of the cross, *Ne demon ingredi ausit,* and exercise all manner of meats, as being unclean or accursed otherwise, as Bellarmine defends. Many such stories I find amongst pontifical writers, to prove their assertions, let them free their own credits; some few I will recite in this kind out of most approved physicians. Cornelius Gemma *lib. 2.* de nat. mirac. c. 4. relates of a young maid, called Katherine Gualter, a cooper's daughter, *An. 1571,* that had such strange passions and convulsions, three men could not sometimes hold her; she purged a live eel, which he saw a foot and a half long, and touched it himself; but the eel afterwards vanished; she vomited some twenty-four pounds of fulsome stuff of all colours, twice a day for fourteen days; and after that she voided great balls of hair, pieces of wood, pigeons' dung, parchment, goose dung, coals; and after them two pounds of pure blood, and then again coals and stones, of which some had inscriptions bigger than a walnut, some of them pieces of glass, brass, &c. besides paroxysms of laughing, weeping and ecstasies, &c. *Et hoc (inquit) omn horrore vide,* this I saw with horror. They could do no good on her by physic, but left her to the clergy. Marcellus Donatus *lib. 2.* c. 1. of med. mirab. hath such another story of a country fellow, that had four knives in his belly, *Instar serro dentostos,* indented like a saw, every one a span long, and a wreath of hair like a globe, with much baggage of like sort, wonderful to behold: how it should come into his guts, he concludes, *Certe non alio quam demonis astutia et dolo* (could assuredly only have been through the artifice of the devil). Langius *Epist. med. lib. 1.* *Epist. 38.* hath many relations to this effect, and so hath Christopherus à Vega: Wierus, Skenkius, Scribonius, all agree that they are done by the subtility and illusion of the devil. If you shall ask a reason of this, 'tis to exercise our patience; for as *Tertullian holds, Virtus non est virtus, nisi comparum habeat aliquem,* in quo superando vim suam ostendat, 'tis to try us and our faith, 'tis for our offences, and for the punishment of our sins, by God's permission they do it, *Carniicios vindicta justa Dei,* as *Tolosanus styles them, Executioners of his will;* or rather as David, *Ps. 78.* ver. 49. "He cast upon them the fierceness of his anger, indignation, wrath, and vexation, by sending out of evil angels:" so did he afflict Job, Saul, the Lunatics and demoniacal persons whom Christ cured, *Mat. iv.* 8. *Luke iv.* 11. *Luke xiii.* Mark ix. Tobit viii. 3. &c. *This, I say,* happeneth for a punishment of sin, for their want of faith, incredulity, weakness, distrust, &c.

SUBSECT. III.—Of Witches and Magicians, how they cause Melancholy.

You have heard what the devil can do of himself, now you shall hear what he can perform by his instruments, who are many times worse (if it be possible) than he himself, and to satisfy their revenge and lust cause more mischief, *Multa enim mala non ejisset demon, nisi provocatus a sagis,* as *Erastus thinks; much harm had never been done, had he not been provoked by witches to it.* He had not appeared in Samuel's shape, if the Witch of Endor had let him alone; or represented those serpents in Pharo's presence, had not the magicians urged him unto it; *Nec morbus vel hominibus, vel brutis inflicting (Erastus maintains) si saga quiescerent; men and cattle might go free, if the*  

*Greg. pag. c. 9.*  
*Penuit. de opifit. Dei.*  
*De Lamiis.*
witches would let him alone. Many deny witches at all, or if there be any they can do no harm; of this opinion is Wierus, lib. 3. cap. 55. de praestig. dom. Austin Lorchemer a Dutch writer, Biarmannus, Ewichius, Euwaldus, our countryman Scot; with him in Horace,

"Sonnia, terrones Magieos, miracula, saga,
Notornos Lemenres, portentaque Theassai risu
Excipiens. ———"

They laugh at all such stories; but on the contrary are most lawyers, divines, physicians, philosophers, Austin, Heringius, Danaeus, Chytroeus, Zanchius, Arelius, &c. Delrio, Springer, * Niderius lib. 5. Fornicar. Cuiatius, Bartoli, consil. 6. tom. 1. Bodine deemoniant. lib. 2. cap. 8. Godelman, Damhoderius, &c. Paracelsus, Erasmus, Scribians, Camerarius, &c. The parties by whom the devil deals, may be reduced to these two, such as command him in show at least, as conjurors, and magicians, whose detestable and horrid mysteries are contained in their book called + Arbatell; * demons enim advoca- cati præsto sunt, seque exorcismis et conjurationibus quasi cogi patiuntur, ut miserum magorum genus, in impiitate delinquent. Or such as are commanded, as witches, that deal ex parte implicitè, or explicitè, as the 'king hath well defined; many subdivisions there are, and many several species of sorcerers, witches, enchanters, charmers, &c. They have been tolerated heretofore some of them; and magic hath been publicly professed in former times, in * Salamanca, † Cracow, and other places, though after censured by several * Universities, and now generally contradicted, though practised by some still, maintained and excused, Tunquam res secreta que non nisi viris magis et peculiari beneficio de Celto instructis communicatur (I use § Boesartus his words) and so far approved by some princes, Ut nihil ausi aggravi in politicis, in sacris, in consiliis, sine eorum arbitrio; they consult still with them, and dare indeed do nothing without their advice. Nero and Heliogabalus, Maxentius, and Julianus Apostata, were never so much addicted to magic of old, as some of our modern princes and popes themselves are now-a-days. Errius King of Sweden had an * enchanted cap, by virtue of which, and some magical murmur or whispering terms, he could command spirits, trouble the air, and make the wind stand which way he would, insomuch that when there was any great wind or storm, the common people were wont to say, the king now had on his conjuring cap. But such examples are infinite. That which they can do, is as much almost as the devil himself, who is still ready to satisfy their desires, to oblige them the more unto him. They can cause tempests, storms, which is familiarly practised by witches in Norway, Iceland, as I have proved. They can make friends enemies, and enemies friends by philters; * Turpes amores conciliare, enforce love, tell any man where his friends are, about what employed though in the most remote places; and if they will, + * bring their sweethearts to them by night, upon a goat's back flying in the air." Sigismund Scheretzius, part. 1. cap. 9. de spect., reports confidently, that he conferred with sundry such, that had been so carried many miles, and that he heard witches themselves confess as much; hurt and infect men and beasts, vines, corn, cattle, plants, make women abortive, not to conceive, ‡ barren, men and women unapt and unable, married and unmarried, fifty several ways, saith Bodine, lib. 2. c. 2, fly in the air, meet when and where they will, as Cicogna proves, and Lavat. de spec. part. 2. c. 17, "steal young children out of their cradles, ministerio daemonium,

* Et quomodo venefici sanct annariat. † De quo plura leges in Bolsaredo lib. 1. de prestig. ‡ Rex
Jacques Dameron. l. 1. c. 3. ³ An university in Spain in old Castile. ⁴ The chief town in Poland. ⁵ Prefat. de magie et veneficiis. ⁶ Tostum Plenum habet, quo vendos violentos cereat, aereum tursbaret, et in quum partem, &c. ⁷ Erastus. ⁸ Ministerio hibr nocturnali. ⁹ Storyes myptes et inhabilltes, vide Forum de Palude lib. 4. distri. 54. Paullum Guilael.
and put deformed in their rooms, which we call changelings, saith § Scheretzius, part. 1, c. 6, make men victorious, fortunate, eloquent; and therefore in those ancient monomachies and combats they were searched of old, *they had no magical charms; they can make *stick fress, as shall endure a rapier's point, musket shot, and never be wounded: of which read more in Boissardus, cap. 6, de Magiā, the manner of the adoration, and by whom *tis made, where and how to be used in expeditionibus bellicis, praelitis, duellis, &c., with many peculiar instances and examples; they can walk in fiery furnaces, make men feel no pain on the wreck, aut alias torturas sentire; they can stanch blood, *represent dead men's shapes, alter and turn themselves and others into several forms, at their pleasures. *Agaberta, a famous witch in Lapland, would do as much publicly to all spectators, Modō Pasilla, modō anus, modō procera ut quercus, modō vacca, avis, coluber, &c. Now young, now old, high, low, like a cow, like a bird, a snake, and what not! she could represent to others what forms they most desired to see, show them friends absent, reveal secrets, maxima omnium admiratione, &c. And yet for all this subtility of theirs, as Lysius well observes, Physiolog. Stoi Cor. lib. 1, cap. 17, neither these magicians nor devils themselves can take away gold or letters out of mine or Crassus' chest, et Clientelis suis largiri, for they are base, poor, contemptible fellows most part; as Bodine notes, they can do nothing in judicium decreto aut penas, in regum concilia vel arcanis, nihil in rem nummariam aut thesauros, they cannot give money to their clients, alter judges' decrees, or councils of kings, these minuti Genii cannot do it, alteriores Genii hoc sibi adseruunt, the higher powers reserve these things to themselves. Now and then peradventure there may be some more famous magicians like Simon Magus, A Pol lonium Tyaneus, Pasetes, Jamblicus, § Odo de Stellis, that for a time can build castles in the air, represent armies, &c., as they are said to have done, command wealth and treasure, feed thousands with all variety of meats upon a sudden, protect themselves and their followers from all princes' persecutions, by removing from place to place in an instant, reveal secrets, future events, tell what is done in far countries, make them appear that died long since, and do many such miracles, to the world's terror, admiration and opinion of deity to themselves, yet the devil forsakes them at last, they come to wicked ends, and rerò aut nunquam such imposters are to be found. The vulgar sort of them can work no such feats. But to my purpose, they can, last of all, cure and cause most diseases to such as they love or hate, and this of melancholy amongst the rest. Paraclesus, T. m. 4, de morbis amentium. Tract. 1, in express words affirms; Multi fanci tatur in melancholiam, many are bewitched into melancholy, out of his experience. The same saith Danaeus lib. 3, de sortiariis. Vidi, inquit, qui Melancholicos morbos gravissimos inducereut: I have seen those that have caused melancholy in the most grievous manner, *dried up women's paps, cured gout, palsy; this and apoplexy, falling sickness, which no physic could help, solo tactu, by touch alone. Ruland in his 3 Cent. Cura 91, gives an instance of one David Helde, a young man, who by eating cakes which a witch gave him, max delivere capiit, began to date on a sudden, and was instantly mad: F. H. D. in Hildesheim, consulted about a melancholy man, thought his disease was partly magical, and partly natural, because he vomited pieces of iron and lead, and spake such languages as he had never been taught; but such examples are common in Scribanius, Hercules de

Saxonia, and others. The means by which they work are usually charms, images, as that in Hector Boethius of King Dufo; characters stamped of sundry metals, and at such and such constellations, knots, amulets, words, philters, &c., which generally make the parties affected, melancholy; as [* Monavius discoursset at large in an epistle of his to Acelius, giving instance in a Bohemian baron that was so troubled by a philter taken. Not that there is any power at all in those spells, charms, characters, and barbarous words; but that the devil doth use such means to delude them. Ut fideles inde magos (saith * Libanius) in officio reticent, tum in consortium malfactorum vocet.

SUBJECT. IV.—Stars a cause. Signs from Physiognomy, Meteorscopy, Chiroscropy.

NATURAL causes are either primary and universal, or secondary and more particular. Primary causes are the heavens, planets, stars, &c., by their influence (as our astrologers hold) producing this and such like effects. I will not here stand to discuss obiter, whether stars be causes, or signs; or to apologise for judicial astrology. If either Sextus Empiricus, Picus Mirandula, Sextus ab Heminga, Perierius, Erastus, Chambers, &c., have so far prevailed with any man, that he will attribute no virtue at all to the heavens, or to sun, or moon, much more than he doth to their signs at an innkeeper’s post, or tradesman’s shop, or generally condemn all such astrological aphorisms approved by experience: I refer him to Bellantius, Pirovanius, Marascallerus, Geelenius, Sir Christopher Heidon, &c. If thou shalt ask me what I think, I must answer, nam et doctis hisce erroribus versus sum (for I am conversant with these learned errors), they do incline, but not compel; no necessity at all: * agunt non cogunt: and so gently incline, that a wise man may resist them; sapientes dominabitur astra: they rule us, but God rules them. All this (methinks) *Joh. de Indagine hath comprised in brief, Quae ris a me quantum in nobis operantur astra? &c.

“Wilt thou know how far the stars work upon us? I say they do but incline, and that so gently, that if we will be ruled by reason, they have no power over us; but if we follow our own nature, and be led by sense, they do as much in us as in brute beasts, and we are no better.” So that, I hope, I may justly conclude with *Cajetan, Caelum est vehiculum divina virtutis, &c., that the heaven is God’s instrument, by mediation of which he governs and disposeth these elementary bodies; or a great book, whose letters are the stars (as one calls it), wherein are written many strange things for such as can read, “or an excellent harp, made by an eminent workman, on which, he can but play, will make most admirable music.” But to the purpose.

*Paracelsus is of opinion, “that a physician without the knowledge of stars can neither understand the cause or eure of any disease, either of this or gout, not so much as toothache; except he see the peculiar geniture and scheme of the party affected.” And for this proper malady, he will have the principal and primary cause of it proceed from the heaven, ascribing more to stars than humours, “and that the constellation alone many times produceth melancholy, all other causes set apart.” He gives instance in lunatic persons, that are deprived of their wits by the moon’s motion; and in another place refers all to the ascendant, and will have the true and chief cause of it to be sought from the stars. Neither is it his opinion only, but of many Galenists and philoso-

[Note: The text contains numerous references to classical authors and astrological practices, including aphorisms attributed to such figures as Paracelsus, Cajetan, and others. The passage discusses the influence of celestial bodies on human affairs and the limitations of astrological interpretation.]
Causes of Melancholy.

[Part. 1. Sec. 2.]

phers, though they do not so peremptorily maintain as much. "This variety of melancholy symptoms proceeds from the stars," saith Melanchton: the most generous melancholy, as that of Augustus, comes from the conjunction of Saturn and Jupiter in Libra: the bad, as that of Catiline's, from the meeting of Saturn and the moon in Scorpio. Joannius Pontanus, in his tenth book, and thirteenth chapter de rebus celestibus, discourseth to this purpose at large, Ex atri bile vari vari generantur morbi, &c., "many diseases proceed from black choler, as it shall be hot or cold; and though it be cold in its own nature, yet it is apt to be heated, as water may be made to boil, and burn as bad as fire; or made cold as ice: and thence proceed such variety of symptoms, some mad, some solitary, some laugh, some rage." &c. The cause of all which intemperance he will have chiefly and primarily proceed from the heavens, "from the position of Mars, Saturn, and Mercury." His aphorisms be these, "Mercury in any geniture, if he shall be found in Virgo, or Pisces his opposite sign, and that in the horoscope, irradiated by those quartile aspects of Saturn or Mars, the child shall be mad or melancholy." Again, "He that shall have Saturn and Mars, the one culminating, the other in the fourth house, when he shall be born, shall be melancholy, of which he shall be cured in time, if Mercury behold them." "If the moon be in conjunction or opposition at the birth time with the sun, Saturn or Mars, or in a quartile aspect with them (mdc), Leovitius adds, many diseases are signified, especially the head and brain is like to be misaffected with pernicious humours, to be melancholy, lunatic, or mad," Cardan adds, quartâ lund natos, eclipses, earthquakes. Garœus and Leovitius will have the chief judgment to be taken from the lord of the geniture, or where there is an aspect between the moon and Mercury, and neither behold the horoscope, or Saturn and Mars shall be lord of the present conjunction or opposition in Sagittarius or Pisces, of the sun or moon, such persons are commonly epileptic, dote, demonical, melancholy: but see more of these aphorisms in the above-named Pontanus. Garœus, cap. 23. de Jud. genitur. Schoner. lib. 1. cap. 8. which he hath gathered out of Prolemy, Albubater, and some other Arabians, Junctine, Ranzovius, Lindhout, Origenc, &c. But these men you will reject peradventure, as astrologers, and therefore partial judges; then hear the testimony of physicians, Galenists themselves. Carto confesseth the influence of stars to have a great hand to this peculiar disease, so doth Jason Pratensis, Lonicerius profat. de Aplexid, Ficinus, Fernelius, &c. P. Cnemander acknowledgeth the stars an universal cause, the particular from parents, and the use of the six non-natural things, Baptista Port. mag. 4. 1. c. 10, 12, 15, will have them causes to every particular individuum. Instances and examples, to evince the truth of these aphorisms, are common amongst those astrologian treatises. Cardan, in his thirty-seventh geniture, gives instance in Math. Bologninus. Camerar. hor. natalit. centur. 7. genit. 6. et 7. of Daniel Garç, and others; but see Garœus, cap. 33. Luc. Gaironius. Test. 6. de Azenemis, &c. The time of this melancholy is, when the significators of any geniture are directed according to art, as the hor: moon, hyloch, &c. to the hostile beams or terms.

* Lib. de anima, cap. de humoribus. Ex variâs in Melancholia, habet celestes causas Æ & Æ in Æ & Æ in Æ. Ex atri bile vari vari generantur morbi, perinde ut ipsa multum calidum aut frigidi in sa habetur, quam utrique suscipiendo quam aptissima sit, tametsi sublig natura frigida sit. Annos aqua sic afficiunt uracao ur ad arcaet; et frigore, ut in gladiis concrecente, et hoc variâs distinctionum, alli fient, rident, &c. Hanc ad intertemparantium signum plenum confert Æ & Æ positis, &c. 
* Quætes aliquos genitura in Æ et Æ adverse signo positis, horoscopum partiliter textit et atque Æ Æ vel Æ Æ radio percussos fuit, natos ab insanis reliquit. "Quæ Æ Æ & Æ habet, alternam in culmine, alternam loco calido, eam in lucem veleri, melancholicus habet, quæ reliquit, si Æ Æ illis irradiati. 
* Hæc configuratione natus, aut insanicos, aut mente captus. "Prolemai contignos, quæ quadruparti tribun omni melancholicorum symptomata siderum influentis. 
* Hildesheim, spicile. 2. de mel.
of that especially, or any fixed star of their nature, or if by his revolution, or transitus, shall offend any of those radical promissors in the geniture.

Other signs are taken from physiognomy, metoposcopy, chiromancy, which because Joh. de Indagine, and Rotman, the landgrave of Hesse his mathematician, not long since in his Chiromancy; Baptista Porta, in his celestial Physiognomy, have proved to hold great affinity with astrology, to satisfy the curious, I am the more willing to insert.

The general notions of physiognomers give, be these; "black colour argues natural melancholy; so doth leanness, hirsuteness, broad veins, much hair on the brows," saith Gratianarolus, cap. 7, and a little head, out of Aristotle, high sanguine, red colour, shows head melancholy; they that stutter and are bald, will be soonest melancholy (as Avicenna supposed), by reason of the dryness of their brains; but he that will know more of the several signs of humour and wits out of physiognomy, let him consult with old Adamantus and Polemus, that comment, or rather paraphrase upon Aristotle's Physiognomy, Baptista Porta's four pleasant books, Michael Scot de secretis naturae, Joh de Indagine, Montaltus, Antony Zara. anat. inveniurum, sect. 1, memb. 13, et lib. 4.

Chiromancy hath these aphorisms to foretell melancholy. Tasneir. lib. 5, cap. 2, who hath comprehended the sum of John de Indagine: Triassus, Corvinus, and others in his book, thus hath it; "The Saturnine line going from the rascetta through the hand, to Saturn's mount, and there intersected by certain little lines, argues melancholy; so if the vital and natural make an acute angle, Aphorism 100. The saturnine, epatic, and natural lines, making a gross triangle in the hand, argue as much;" which Godeniua, cap. 5. Chiros, repeats verbatim out of him. In general they conclude all, that if Saturn's mount be full of many small lines and intersections, "such men are most part melancholy, miserable, and full of disquietness, care and trouble, continually vexed with anxious and bitter thoughts, always sorrowful, fearful, suspicious; they delight in husbandry, buildings, pools, marshes, springs, woods, walks," Thaddæus Haggesius, in his Metoposopia, hath certain aphorisms derived from Saturn's lines in the forehead, by which he collects a melancholy disposition; and Baptista Porta makes observations from those other parts of the body, as if a spot be over the spleen; "or in the nails; if it appear black, it signifies much care, grief, contention, and melancholy;" the reason he refers to the humours, and gives instance in himself, that for seven years' space he had such black spots in his nails, and all that while was in perpetual law-suits, controversies for his inheritance, fear, loss of honour, banishment, grief, care, &c., and when his miseries ended, the black spots vanished. Cardan, in his book de libris propriis, tells such a story of his own person, that a little before his son's death, he had a black spot, which appeared in one of his nails; and dilated itself as he came nearer to his end. But I am over tedious in these toys, which howsoever, in some men's too severe consurs, they may be held absurd and ridiculous, I am the bolder to insert, as not borrowed from circumforanean rogues and gipsies, but out of the writings of worthy philosophers and physicians, yet living some of them, and religious professors in famous universities, who are able to patronize that which they have said, and vindicate themselves from all cavaliers and ignorant persons.

SUBSECT. V.—Old age a cause.

SECONDARY peculiar causes efficient, so called in respect of the other preced- ent, are either congenite, internae, innateae, as they term them, inward, innate, inbred; or else outward and adventitious, which happen to us after we are born: congenite or born with us, are either natural, as old age, or præter naturam (as *Fernelius calls it) that distemperature, which we have from our parents' seed, it being an hereditary disease. The first of these, which is natural to all, and which no man living can avoid, is old age, which being cold and dry, and of the same quality as melancholy is, must needs cause it, by diminution of spirits and substance, and increasing of abut humours; therefore *Melancthon avers out of Aristotle, as an undoubted truth, *Senes plerunque delirasse in senectâ, that old men familiarly dote, ob aetatem blem, for black choler, which is then superabundant in them: and Rhasis, that Arabian physician, in his Cont. lib. 1, cap. 9, calls it "a necessary and inseparable accident," to all old and decrepit persons. After seventy years (as the Psalmist saith) "all is trouble and sorrow;" and common experience confirms the truth of it in weak and old persons, especially such as have lived in action all their lives, had great employment, much business, much command, and many servants to oversee, and leave off erecto; as 'Charles the Fifth did to King Philip, resign up all on a sudden; they are overcome with melancholy in an instant: or if they do continue in such courses, they do at last (sensu bis puere), and are not able to manage their estates through common infirmities incident in their age; full of ache, sorrow and grief, children again, dizzards, they carle many times as they sit, and talk to themselves, they are angry, waspish, displeased with everything, "suspicious of all, wayward, covetous, hard (saith Tully), self-willed, superstitious, self-conceited, braggers and admirers of themselves," as Balthasar Castalio hath truly noted of them. This natural infirmity is most eminent in old women, and such as are poor, solitary, live in most base esteem and beggary, or such as are witches; inso-much that Wierus, Baptista Porta, Ulricus Molitor, Edwicus, do refer all that witches are said to do, to imagination alone, and this humour of melancholy. And whereas it is controverted, whether they can bewitch cattle to death, ride in the air upon a cloudstuff out of a chimney-top, transform themselves into cats, dogs, &c., translate bodies from place to place, meet in companies, and dance, as they do, or have carnal copulation with the devil, they ascribe all to this redundant melancholy, which domineers in them, to somniferous potions, and natural causes, the devil's policy. Non levedam omninò (saith Wierus) aut quiad mirum faciunt (de Lamiais, lib. 3, cap. 30), ut putatur, solam viabbitum habent phantasiam; they do no such wonders at all, only their brains are crazed. "They think they are witches, and can do hurt, but do not." But this opinion Bodine, Erasmus, Daneus, Seribianus, Sebastian Michaelis, Campanella de sensu rerum, lib. 4, cap. 9, *Dandins the Jesuit, lib. 2, de Animâ, explode; * Cicogna confutes at large. That witches are melancholy, they deny not, but not out of corrupt phantasy alone, so to delude themselves and others, or to produce such effects.

SUBSECT. VI.—Parents a cause by Propagation.

That other inward inbred cause of Melancholy is our temperature, in whole or part, which we receive from our parents, which *Fernelius calls Præter naturam,
or unnatural, it being an hereditary disease; for as he justifies *Qua<
maxim<
> patris semen obtinet, tales evadunt similares spermatiqueque partes*
qua<
> conque etiam morbo Patris quam generat tenetur, cum semine transvertit in
Prolen; such as the temperature of the father is, such is the son’s, and look
what disease the father had when he begot him, his son will have after him;
*“and is as well inheritor of his infirmities, as of his lands.” And where the
complexion and constitution of the father is corrupt, there (“saith Roger Bacon)
the complexion and constitution of the son must needs be corrupt, and so the
corruption is derived from the father to the son.” Now this doth not so much
appear in the composition of the body, according to that of Hippocrates, “in
habit, proportion, scars, and other lineaments; in manners and conditions of
the mind, Et putrum in natos absunt cum semine morest.”

Seleucus had an anchor on his thigh, so had his posteriority, as Trogus records,
1. 15. Lepidus in Pliny l. 7, c. 17, was purblind, so was his son. That famous
family of Ænobarbi were known of old, and so surmained from their red beards;
the Austrian lip, and those Indian flat noses are propagated, the Bavarian
chin, and goggle eyes amongst the Jews, as *Buxtorfius observes; their voice,
pace, gesture, looks, are likewise derived with all the rest of their conditions
and infirmities; such a mother, such a daughter; the very *affections Le-
nius contends “to follow their seed, and the malice and bad conditions of
children are many times wholly to be imputed to their parents;” I need not
therefore make any doubt of Melancholy, but that it is an hereditary disease.
7 Paracelsus in express words affirms it, lib. de morb. amentium, to. 4, tr. 1;
do so *Crato in an Epistle of his to Monavins. So doth Bruno Seidelius in
his book de morbo encurab. Montaltius proves, cap. 11, out of Hippocrates and
Plutarch, that such hereditary dispositions are frequent, et hunc (iniqu<
> fieri
> reor ob participatam melancholicam intertemperantium (speaking of a patient) I
think he became so by participation of Melancholy. Daniel Sennertus, lib. 1,
part 2, cap. 9, will have his melancholy constitution derived not only from the
father to the son, but to the whole family sometimes; *Quandoque totis familiis
hereditatis non.* Forestus, in his medicinal observations, illustrates this point,
with an example of a merchant, his patient, that had this infirmity by inherite-
ance; so doth Rodericus à Fonseca, tom. 1, consul. 69, by an instance of a
young man that was so affected ex matre melancholica, had a melancholy mother,
et vietu melancholico, and bad diet together. Lodovicus Mercatus, a Spanish
physician, in that excellent Tract which he hath lately written of hereditary
diseases, tom. 2, oper. lib. 5, reckons up leprosy, as those *Galbots in Gascony,
hereditary lepers, pox, stone, gout, epilepsy, &c. Amongst the rest, this and
madness after a set time comes to many, which he calls a miraculous thing in
nature, and sticks for ever to them as an inurable habit. And that which is
more to be wondered at, it skips in some families and, goes to the son,
“or takes every other, and sometimes every third in a lineal descent, and doth
not always produce the same, but some like, and a symbolizing disease.” These
secondary causes hence derived, are commonly so powerful, that (as *Wolphi-
us holds) sepe mutant decreta siderum, they do often alter the primary causes,
and decrees of the heavens. For these reasons, belike, the Church and com-
monwealth, human and Divine laws, have conspired to avoid hereditary diseases,

* Ut arthritici, epilep. &c. 7 Ut filii non tam possessionem quam morborum heredes sint. 5 Epist.
de secretis artis et naturae c. 7, man in how quod patres corrupti sunt, gerentur filii corrupte compleantur,
et compositiones, et filii eorum cadelum de causa sorveum patres, et sic derivatur corruptio i patribus ad filios.
6 Non tam (iniqu Hippocrates) gibbos et eliceare oris et corporis habitum agnosce ex illis, sed verum
incessive, gestus, mors, morbos, &c. 6 Synagog. Jud. 1. * Affectionem parentem in filius transit, et
puerorum malitia parentum imputanda, lib. 1. cap. 5. de occ. nat. mires. 2 Ex piliositis pilitosi, ex
biliosis biliosi, ex leiosis et melancolicis melancoliue. 7 Epist. 174. in Scoltz. hastcar nobisum illis
alturque et una cum parentibus habemus malum hunc asseem. Jo. Pelusius lib. 2. de cura humanorum
affectionum. 6 Lib. 10. observat. 15. b Magnus Geog. 8 Serpe non cunem, sed similium product
effectum, et illosa parenti transit in nepotem. 3 Dial. praef. genitura Leovalign.
Causes of Melancholy.

[Part. 1. Sec. 2.

forbidding such marriages as are any whit allied: and as Mercatus adviseth all families to take such, 

si fieri possit que maximè distant natura, and to make choice of those that are most differing in complexion from them; if they love their own, and respect the common good. And sure, I think, it hath been ordered by God's especial providence, that in all ages there should be (as usually there is) once in 600 years, a transmigration of nations, to amend and purify their blood, as we alter seed upon our land, and that there should be as it were an inundation of those northern Goths and Vandals, and many such like people which came out of that continent of Scandia and Sarmatia (as some suppose) and over-ran, as a deluge, most part of Europe and Afric, to alter for our good, our complexions, which were much defaced with hereditary infirmities, which by our lust and intemperance we had contracted. A sound generation of strong and able men were sent amongst us, as those northern men usually are, innocuous, free from riot, and free from diseases; to qualify and make us as those poor naked Indians are generally at this day; and those about Brazil (as a late writer observes), in the Isle of Maragnan, free from all hereditary diseases, or other contagion, whereas without help of physic they live commonly 120 years or more, as in the Oreades and many other places. Such are the common effects of temperance and intemperance, but I will descend to particular, and show by what means, and by whom especially, this infirmity is derived unto us.

Filii ex senibus nati, rarò sunt firmi temperamenti, old men's children are seldom of a good temperament, as Scoltzius supposeth, consult. 177, and therefore most apt to this disease; and as Levinus Lenius farther adds, old men beget most part wayward, peevish, sad, melancholy sons, and seldom merry. He that begets a child on a full stomach, will either have a sick child, or a crazed son (as Carden thinks), contradict. med. lib. 1, contradict. 18, or if the parents be sick, or have any great pain of the head, or megrim, headach, (Hieronymus Woldius doth instance in a child of Sebastian Castalio's; if a drunken man get a child, it will never likely have a good brain, as Cellius argues, lib. 12, cap. 1. Ebriiignant Ebrios, one drunkard begets another, saith Plutarch, symp. lib. 1, quest. 5, whose sentence Lemnius approves, l. 1, c. 4. Alsarius Cratius Gen. de qui sit med. cent. 3, fol. 182. Macrobius, lib. 1. Avicenna, lib. 3. Fen. 21. Tract 1, cap. 8, and Aristotle himself, sect. 2, prov. 4, foolish, drunken, or hair-brain women, most part bring forth children like unto themselves, morosos et languidos, and so likewise he that lies with a menstruous woman.


Causes of Melancholy.

vocant, qui quartd hanc profuente hoc mensium illiue concubitum hanc non perhorrescant. Damnavit olim divina Lec et morte unculavit hujusmodi homines, Lev. 18, 20, et indù nati, siqui de nonus aut nutui, pater dilapidatus, quod non contineret ab "immundâ materi. Gregorius Magnus, petenti Augustinò nunquid apud? Britannus hujusmodi concubitum toleraret, severe prohibuit viris suis tum misceri feminas in consuetis suis monstruis, &c. I spare to English this which I have said. Another cause some give, inordinate diet, as if a man eat garlic, onions, fast overmuch, study too hard, be over-sorrowful, dull, heavy, dejected in mind, perplexed in his thoughts, fearful, &c., "their children (saith *Cardan subit. lib. 18) will be much subject to madness and melancholy; for if the spirits of the brain be fusled, or misaffected by such means, at such a time, their children will be fusled in the brain: they will be dull, heavy, timorous, discontented all their lives." Some are of opinion, and maintain that paradox or problem, that wise men beget commonly fools; Suidas gives instance in Aristarchus the Grammariam, duos reliquit filios Aristarchum et Aristochorum, ambos stultos; and which *Erasmus urgeth in his Morla, fools beget wise men. Card. subit. l. 12, gives this cause, Quumiam spiritus sepiemtum ob studium resolvuntur, et in cerebri feruntur à corde: because their natural spirits are resolved by study, and turned into animal; drawn from the heart, and those other parts to the brain. Lemnius subscribes to that of Cardan, and assigns this reason, Quod persolvant debitem languide, et obstanter, unde fatut a parentum generositate desciscit: they pay their debt (as Paul calls it) to their wives remissly, by which means their children are weaklings, and many times idiots and fools.

Some other causes are given, which properly pertain, and do proceed from the mother: if she be over-dull, heavy, angry, peevish, discontented, and melancholy, not only at the time of conception, but even all the while she carries the child in her womb (saith Fernelius, path. 1. 1, 11) her son will be so likewise affected, and worse, as *Lemnius adds, 1. 4, c. 7, if she grieve over much, be disquieted, or by any casualty be affrighted and terrified by some fearful object heard or seen, she endangers her child, and spoils the temperature of it; for the strange imagination of a woman works effectually upon her infant, that as Baptista Porta proves, Physiog. celestis 1. 5, c. 2, she leaves a mark upon it, which is most especially seen in such as prodigiously long for such and such meats, the child will love those meats, saith Fernelius, and be addicted to like humouris: "if a great-bellied woman see a hare, her child will often have a hare-lip," as we call it. Garaeus de Judicis geniturorum, cap. 33, hath a memorable example of one Thomas Nickell, born in the city of Brandeburg, 1551, "that went reeling and staggering all the days of his life, as if he would fall to the ground, because his mother being great with child saw a drunken man reeling in the street." Such another I find in Martin Wenrichius com. de ortu monstrorum, c. 17, I saw (saith he) at Wittenberg, in Germany, a citizen that looked like a carcass; I asked him the cause, he replied, * His mother, when she bore him in her womb, saw a carcass by chance, and was so sore affrighted with it, that ex eo fuit ei assimilatus, from a ghastly impression the child was like it." So many several wayes are we plagued and punished for our father’s defaults; insomuch that as Fernelius truly saith, * It is the greatest part of our felicity

---

to be well born, and it were happy for human kind, if only such parents as are sound of body and mind should be suffered to marry." An husbandman will sow none but the best and choicest seed upon his land, he will not rear a bull or a horse, except he be right shapen in all parts, or permit him to cover a mare, except he be well assured of his breed; we make choice of the best rams for our sheep, rear the neatest kine, and keep the best dogs, Quanto id diligentius in proceritudi liberis observandum? And how careful then should we be in begettings of our children? In former times some countries have been so chary in this behalf, so stern, that if a child were crooked or deformed in body or mind, they made him away; so did the Indians of old by the relation of Curtius, and many other well-governed commonwealths, according to the discipline of those times. Heretofore in Scotland, saith *Hect. Boethus, "if any were visited with the falling sickness, madness, gout, leprosy, or any such dangerous disease, which was likely to be propagated from the father to the son, he was instantly gelled; a woman kept from all company of men; and if by chance having some such disease, she were found to be with child, she with her brood were buried alive:" and this was done for the common good, lest the whole nation should be injured or corrupted. A severe doom you will say, and not to be used amongst Christians, yet more to be looked into than it is. For now by our too much facility in this kind, in giving way for all to marry that will, too much liberty and indulgence in tolerating all sorts, there is a vast confusion of hereditary diseases, no family secure, no man almost free from some grievous infirmity or other, when no choice is had, but still the eldest must marry, as so many stallions of the race; or if rich, be they fools or dizzards, lame or maimed, unable, intemperate, dissolve, exhaust through riot, as he said, *jure hareditario sapere jubentur; they must be wise and able by inheritance: it comes to pass that our generation is corrupt, we have many weak persons, both in body and mind, many feral diseases raging amongst us, crazed families, parentes peremptores; our fathers bad, and we are like to be worse.

MEMBR. II.

SUBJECT. I.—Bad Diet a cause. Substance. Quality of Meats.

According to my proposed method, having opened hitherto these secondary causes, which are inbred with us, I must now proceed to the outward and adventitious, which happen unto us after we are born. And those are either evident, remote, or inward, antecedent, and the nearest: continent causes some call them. These outward, remote, precedent causes are subdivided again into necessary and not necessary. Necessary (because we cannot avoid them, but they will alter us, as they are used, or abused) are those six non-natural things, so much spoken of amongst physicians, which are principal causes of this disease. For almost in every consultation, whereas they shall come to speak of the causes, the fault is found, and this most part objected to the patient; Pecavit circa res sex non naturales: he hath still offended in one of those six. Montanus, consil. 22, consulted about a melancholy Jew, gives that sentence, so did Frisemelica in the same place; and in his 244 consel, censuring a melancholy soldier, assigns that reason of his malady, "he offended in all

those six non-natural things, which were the outward causes, from which came those inward obstructions; and so in the rest.

These six non-natural things are diet, retention and evacuation, which are more material than the other because they make new matter, or else are conversant in keeping or expelling of it. The other four are air, exercise, sleeping, waking, and perturbations of the mind, which only alter the matter. The first of these is diet, which consists in meat and drink, and causeth melancholy, as it offends in substance, or accidents, that is quantity, quality, or the like. And well it may be called a material cause, since that, as Fernelius holds, "it hath such a power in begetting of diseases, and yields the matter and sustenance of them; for neither air, nor perturbations, nor any of those other evident causes take place, or work this effect, except the constitution of body, and preparation of humours, do concur. That a man may say, this diet is the mother of diseases, let the father be what he will, and from this alone, melancholy and frequent other maladies arise." Many physicians, I confess, have written copious volumes of this one subject, of the nature and qualities of all manner of meats; as namely, Galen, Isaac the Jew, Haly Abbas, Avicenna, Mesue, also four Arabians, Gordonius, Villanovanus, Wecker, Johannes Bruerinus, *sitologia de Excensitis et Poculentis, Michael Savanarola, Tract. 2, c. 8, Anthony Fumanellus, *lib. de regimine sermon, Curio in his Comment on Schola Salerna, Godefridus Stekius *arte med., Marsilius cognatus, Ficinus, Ranzovius, Fonseca, Lessius, Magninus, *regim. sanatitatis, Frietagus, Hugo Fridevallius, &c., besides many other in English, and almost every peculiar physician, discourseth at large of all peculiar meats in his chapter of melancholy: yet because these books are not at hand to every man, I will briefly touch what kind of meats engender this humour, through their several species, and which are to be avoided. How they alter and change the matter, spirits first, and after humours, by which we are preserved, and the constitution of our body, Fernelius and others will show you. I hasten to the thing itself: and first of such diet as offends in substance.

**Beef.** Beef, a strong and hearty meat (cold in the first degree, dry in the second, saith Gal. l. 3, c. 1, *de alim. fac.) is condemned by him and all succeeding authors, to breed gross melancholy blood: good for such as are sound, and of a strong constitution, for labouring men if ordered aright, corned, young, of an ox (for all gelded meats in every species are held best), or if old, *such as have been tired out with labour, are preferred. Aubanius and Sabellius commend Portugal beef to be the most savoury, best and easiest of digestion; we commend ours: but all is rejected, and unfit for such as lead a restful life, any ways inclined to Melancholy, or dry of complexion: *Tules (Galen thinks) de facile melancholiciis appetitibus capiturur.

**Pork.** Pork, of all meats, is most nutritive in his own nature, *but altogether unfit for such as live at ease, are any ways unsound of body or mind: too moist, full of humours, and therefore *nocia delicatis, saith Savanarola, ex eorum usu ut dubitetur an febris quartana generetur: nought for queasy stomachs, insomuch that frequent use of it may breed a quartan ague.

**Goat.** Savanarola discommends goat's flesh, and so doth Bruerinus, l. 13, c. 19, calling it a filthy beast, and rammish: and therefore supposest it will breed rank and filthy substance; yet kid, such as are young and tender, Isaac accepts, Bruerinus and Galen, l. 1, c. 1, *de alimentorum facultatibus.

**Hart.** Hart and red deer *hath an evil name: it yields gross nutriment:

a strong and great grainèd meat, next unto a horse. Which although some
countries eat, as Tartars, and they of China; yet
Galen condemns. Young
foals are as commonly eaten in Spain as red deer, and to furnish their navies,
about Malaga especially, often used; but such meats ask long baking, or
seething, to qualify them, and yet all will not serve.

Venison, Follow Deer.] All venison is melancholy, and begets bad blood;
a pleasant meat: in great esteem with us (for we have more parks in
England than there are in all Europe besides) in our solemn feasts. 'Tis somewhat
better hunted than otherwise, and well prepared by cookery; but generally
bad, and seldom to be used.

Hare.] Hare, a black meat, melancholy, and hard of digestion, it breeds
incubus, often eaten, and causeth fearful dreams, so doth all venison, and is
condemned by a jury of physicians. Mizaldus and some others say, that hare is
a merry meat, and that it will make one fair, as Martial's Epigram testifieth to
Gellia; but this is rer accidens, because of the good sport it makes, merry
company and good discourse that is commonly at the eating of it, and not
otherwise to be understood.

Conies.] Conies are of the nature of hares. Magninus compares them to
beef, pig, and goat, Reg. sanita. part. 3, c. 17; yet young rabbits by all men
are approved to be good.

Generally, all such meats as are hard of digestion breed melancholy.
Aretæus, lib. 7, cap. 5, reckons up heads and feet, bowels, brains, entrails,
marrow, fat, blood, skins, and those inward parts, as heart, lungs, liver, spleen,
&c. They are rejected by Isaac, lib. 2, part. 3. Magninus, part. 3. cap. 17,
Brucinus, lib. 12, Savanarola, Rub. 32, Tract. 2.

Milk.] Milk, and all that comes of milk, as butter and cheese, curds, &c.,
increase melancholy (whey only excepted, which is most wholesome): 'some except asses' milk. The rest, to such as are sound, is nutritive and good,
especially for young children, but because soon turned to corruption, not
good for those that have unclean stomachs, are subject to headache, or have
green wounds, stone, &c. Of all cheeses, I take that kind which we call
Banbury cheese to be the best, ex vetustis pessinus, the older, stronger; and
harder, the worst, as Langius discourseth in his Epistle to Melancthon, cited
by Mizaldus, Isaac, p. 5, Gal. 3, de cibus boni succi, &c.

Fowl.] Amongst fowl, peacocks and pigeons, all fenny fowl are forbidden,
as ducks, geese, swans, herons, cranes, coots, didappers, waterhens, with all
those teals, curts, sheldrakes, and peckled fowls, that come hither in winter out
of Scandia, Museovy, Greenland, Friezland, which half the year are covered
all over with snow, and frozen up. Though these be fair in feathers, pleasant
in taste, and have a good outside, like hypocrites, white in plumes, and soft,
their flesh is hard, black, unwholesome, dangerous, melancholy meat; Gravant
et putrefaciunt stomachum, saith Isaac, part. 5, de vol., their young ones are
more tolerable, but young pigeons he quite disapproves.

Fishes.] Rhaxis and Magninus discomfit all fish, and say, they breed
viceaciosities, slimy nutriment, little and humourous nourishment. Savanarola
adds, cold, moist: and phlegmatic, Isaac; and therefore unwholesome for all
cold and melancholy complexion: others make a difference, rejecting only
amongst fresh-water fish, eel, tench, lamprey, crawfish (which Bright approves,
cap. 6), and such as are bred in muddy and standing waters, and have a taste
of mud, as Franciscus Bonsuetus poetically defines, Lib. de aquatilibus

"Nam placens omnem, qui stagna, lacusque frequentant, 
Semper plus succī detectoris habet."  
"All fish, that standing pools, and lakes frequent, 
Do ever yield bad juice and nourishment."

6 Lib. de subtillis. dieta. Equina caro et asinina equinis danda est hominis et asinina.
3 Hidræbulis succī nauseam provocat. 4 Pisa. Al-omar. 5 Curio. Furganius. Magninus, part. 3, cap. 17. Mercurialis,
de auct. lib. 1. c. 16. excepts all milk meats in Hypochromical Melancholy. 6 Wecker Syntax. theor.
7 Sec. 2. Isaac, Bruer. lib. 15. cap. 30. et 31.
Lampryes, Paulus Jovius, c. 34, de piscibus fluvial. highly magnifies, and saith, None speak against them, but inept et scrupulosi, some scrupulous persons; but *Peels, c. 33, "he abhorreth in all places, at all times, all physicians detest them, especially about the solstice." Gomesius, lib. 1. c. 22, de sale, doth immoderately extol sea-fish, which others as much vili fy, and above the rest, dried, soured, indurate fish, as ling, munados, red-herrings, sprats, stock-fish, haberdine, poor-john, all shell-fish. *Tim. Bright excepts lobster and crab. Mesarius commends salmon, which Bruerinus contradicts, lib. 22, c. 17. Magninus rejects conger, sturgeon, tarbot, mackerel, skate.

Carp is a fish of which I know not what to determine. Franciscus Bonnetus accounts it a muddy fish. Hippolitus Salvianius, in his Book de Piscium naturæ et preparatio ne, which was printed at Rome in folio, 1554, with most elegant pictures, esteems carp no better than a slimy watery meat. Paulus Jovius on the other side, disallowing tengh, approves of it; so doth Dupravius in his Books of Fish-ponds. Fretagius *extols it for an excellent wholesome meat, and puts it amongst the fishes of the best rank; and so do most of our country gentlemen, that store their ponds almost with no other fish. But this controversy is easily decided, in my judgment, by Bruerinus, l. 22, c. 13. The difference riseth from the site and nature of pools, *sometimes muddy, sometimes sweet; they are in taste as the place is from whence they be taken. In like manner almost we may conclude of other fresh fish. But see more in Rondoletius, Bellonius, Orbiasius, lib. 7, cap. 22, Isaac, l. 1, especially Hippolitus Salvianius, who is instar omnium solus, &c. Howsoever they may be wholesome and approved, much use of them is not good; P. Forestus, in his medicinal observations, *relates, that Carthusian friars, whose living is most part fish, are more subject to melancholy than any other order, and that he found by experience, being sometimes their physician ordinary at Delft, in Holland. He exemplifies it with an instance of one Bucedone, a Carthusian of a ruddy colour, and well liking, that by solitary living, and fish-eating, became so misaffected.

Herbs.] Amongst herbs to be eaten I find gourds, cucumbers, coleworths, melons, disallowed, but especially cabbage. It causeth troublesome dreams, and sends up black vapours to the brain. Galen, loc. affect. l. 3, c. 6, of all herbs condemns cabbage; and Isaac, lib. 2, c. 1, Antinece gravitate facit, it brings heaviness to the soul. Some are of opinion that all raw herbs and salads breed melancholy blood, except bugloss and lettuce. Crato, consil. 21, lib. 2, speaks against all herbs and works, except borage, bugloss, fennel, parsley, dill, balm, succory. Magninus, regim. sanitatis, part. 3, cap. 31. Omnès herbe simpliciter male, viā cibi; all herbs are simply evil to be cook on (as he thinks). So did that scoffing cook in "Plautus hold:"

"Non ego comam condio ut ali coqui solent, Qui mihi condita prata in patina proferunt, Boves qui convivias faciunt, herbasque aggerunt."  

"Like other cooks I do not supper dress, That put whole meadows in a platter, And make no better of their guests than beavers, With herbs and grass to feed them fatter."  

Our Italians and Spaniards do make a whole dinner of herbs and salads (which our said Plautus calls conas terrestres, Horace, conas sine sanguine), by which means, as he follows it,  

"Hic homines tam brevem vitam colunt— Qui herbes hujusmodi in alvum suum congerunt, Fermeolosum dictus, non esse modi Quas herbes pecudes non edunt, homines edunt."  

"Their lives, that eat such herbs, must needs be short, And 'tis a fearful thing for to report, That men should feed on such a kind of meat, Which very jamous would refuse to eat."  

*Omní loco et omní tempore medicí deestantur ancullas, præsertim circa solstitialium. Dannmantur tunc sans tunc agris.  
*a Cap. 6. in his Tract of Melancholy.  
*Optimum nutrit omnium judicio inter primum notas gustu præstantis.  
*Non est ubiquem quin, pro variis situs et natura, magnas alimen tumorum sortantur differentiationes, alibi saniores, alibi larulantes.  
*Observat. 15. lib. 10.  
*Psedolus, act. 2. scen. 2.  
*Plautus libit.
They are windy, and not fit therefore to be eaten of all men raw, though qualified with oil, but in broths, or otherwise. See more of these in every husbandman and herbalist.

Roots.] Roots, Etsi quorumdam gentium opes sint, saith Bruerinus, the wealth of some countries, and sole food, are windy and bad, or troublesome to the head: as onions, garlic, scallions, turnips, carrots, radishes, parsnips: Crato, lib. 2. consil. 11, disallows all roots, though *some approve of parsnips and potatoes. **Magninus is of Crato’s opinion, "*They trouble the mind, sending gross fumes to the brain, make men mad, especially garlic, onions, if a man liberally feed on them a year together." Guianerius, tract. 15, cap. 2, complains of all manner of roots, and so doth Bruerinus, even parsnips themselves, which are the best. Lib. 9. cap. 14.

Fruits.] Pastinacaruira usus succos dignit improbos. Crato, consil. 21, lib. 1, utterly forbids all manner of fruits, as pears, apples, plums, cherries, strawberries, nuts, medlars, serves, &c. Sanguinem infectam, saith Villanovanus, they infect the blood, and putrefy it, Magninus holds, and must not therefore be taken via cibi, aut quantitate magnâ, not to make a meal of, or in any great quantity. *Cardan makes that a cause of their continual sickness at Fessa in Africa, "because they live so much on fruits, eating them thrice a day." Laurentius approves of many fruits, in his Tract of Melancholy, which others disallow, and amongst the rest apples, which some likewise commend, sweetings, pairmains, pippins, as good against melancholy; but to him that is any way inclined to, or touched with this malady, *Nicholas Piso in his Practics, forbids all fruits, as windy, or to be sparingly eaten at least, and not raw. Amongst other fruits, *Bruerinus, out of Galen, excepts grapes and figs, but I find them likewise rejected.

Pulse.] All pulse are naught, beans, peas, vetches, &c., they fill the brain (saith Isaac) with gross fumes, breed black thick blood, and cause troublesomesome dreams. And therefore, that which Pythagoras said to his scholars of old, may be for ever applied to melancholy men, A fabis abstine, eat no peas, nor beans; yet to such as will needs eat them, I would give this counsel, to prepare them according to those rules that Arnoldus Villanovanus, and Frietagius prescribe, for eating, and dressing, fruits, herbs, roots, pulse, &c.

Spices.] Spices cause hot and head melancholy, and are for that cause forbidden by our physicians to such men as are inclined to this malady, as pepper, ginger, cinnamon, cloves, mace, dates, &c., honey and sugar. *Some except honey; to those that are cold, it may be tolerable, but *Dulcie se in bilem vertitur (sweets turn into bile), they are obtrusive. Crato therefore forbids all spice, in a consultation of his, for a melancholy schoolmaster, Omnìa aromatica, et qui sequitur sanguinem admonit: so doth Ferialius, consil. 45. Guianerius, tract. 15, cap. 2. Mercurialis, cons. 189. To these I may add all sharp and sour things, luscious, and over-sweet, or fat, as oil, vinegar, verjuice, mustard, salt; as sweet things are obtrusive, so these are corrosive. Gomesius, in his books, de sale, l. 1, c. 21, highly commend salt; so doth Codronchus in his tract, de sale Absinthii, Lemn. l. 3, c. 9. de occult. nat. mir. yet common experience finds salt, and salt-meat, to be great procures of this disease. And for that cause belike those Egyptian priests abstained from salt, even so much, as in their bread, ut sine perturbatione anima esset, saith mine author, that their souls might be free from perturbations.

* Quare rectius valentissima usum suum quibus consulant, qui laribus priorum parentum memor, cas plane vel omiserit vel pane destutit. Korseileus cap. 4. de vora usu med. **In Mizzado de Horte P. Crescent. Herbastin, &c. • Cap. 13. part. 3. Bright in his Tract. of Mel. "Intelleqtum turbant, producant Insaniam. • Androl (Doc. Magnin.) quod si quis ex his per annum continuo comedat, in insaniam caderat. cap. 13. Improbi usus sunt, cap. 12. • De rerum varietate. In Fessa plenamque morbos, quod fructus comestam ter in die. • Cap. de Mel. • Lib. 11. c. 3. • Bright, c. 6. excepte honey. • Hor. apud Scultzium consil. 186.
Causes of Melancholy.

Bread. Bread that is made of baser grain, as peas, beans, oats, rye, or over-hard baked, crusty, and black, is often spoken against, as causing melancholy juice and wind. Joh. Mayor, in the first book of his History of Scotland, contends much for the wholesomeness of oat-bread: it was objected to him then living at Paris in France, that his countrymen fed on oats, and base grain, as a disgrace; but he doth ingenuously confess, Scotland, Wales, and a third part of England, did most part use that kind of bread, that it was as wholesome as any grain, and yielded as good nourishment. And yet Wecker out of Galen calls it horse-meat, and fitter for jumens than men to feed on. But read Galen himself, lib. 1. De cibis boni et mali succi, more largely discouraging of corn and bread.

Wine. All black wines, over-hot, compound, strong thick drinks, as Muscadine, Malmsay, Alicant, Rumney, Brownbastard, Methiglen, and the like, of which they have thirty several kinds in Muscovy, all such made drinks are hurtful in this case, to such as are hot, or of a sanguine choleric complexion, young, or inclined to head-melancholy. For many times the drinking of wine alone causeth it. Arculanus, c. 16. in 9. Rhasis, puts in wine for a great cause, especially if it be in immediately used. Guianerius, tract. 15. c. 2. tells a story of two Dutchmen, to whom he gave entertainment in his house, that in one month's space were both melancholy by drinking of wine, one did nought but sing, the other sigh. Galen, l. de causis morb. c. 3. Matthiolius on Dioscorides, and above all other Andreas Bachius, l. 3. 18, 19, 20, have reckoned upon those inconveniences that come by wine: yet notwithstanding all this, to such as are cold, or sluggish melancholy, a cup of wine is good physic, and so doth Mercenarius grant, consil. 25, in that case, if the temperature be cold, as to most melancholy men it is, wine is much commended, if it be moderately used.

Cider, Perry. Cider and perry are both cold and windy drinks, and for that cause to be neglected, and so are all those hot spiced strong drinks.

Beer. Beer, if it be over-new or over-stale, over-strong, or not sodden, smell of the cask, sharp, or sour, is most unwholesome, frets, and galls, &c. Henricus Ayrerus, in a consultation of his, for one that laboured of hypochondriacal melancholy disapproves beer. So doth Crato in that excellent counsel of his, Lib. 2. consil. 21. as too windy, because of the hop. But he means belike that thick black Bohemian beer used in some other parts of Germany,

As that old poet scoffed, calling it Stygian monstrum conformes palludis, a monstrous drink, like the river Styx. But let them say as they list, to such as are accustomed unto it, "tis a most wholesome (so Polydor Virgil calleth it) and a pleasant drink," it is more subtle and better, for the hop that rarefies it, hath an especial virtue against melancholy, as our herbalists confess, Fuchsius approves, Lib. 2. sec. 2. instit. cap. 11. and many others.

Waters. Standing waters, thick and ill-coloured; such as come forth of pools, and moats, where hemp hath been steeped, or slimy fishes live, are most unwholesome, putrefied, and full of mites, creepers, slimy, muddy, unclean, corrupt, impure, by reason of the sun's heat, and still-standing; they cause foul distemperatures in the body and mind of man, are unfit to make drink of, to dress meat with, or to be used about men inwardly or outwardly. They are good for many domestic uses, to wash horses, water cattle, &c., or in time

---

1 Ne comedas crusраст, choleram quis gignit adustam. Seol. Sal. 2 Ex vini patentis bibittone, due Alemani in uva meante melancollie facti sunt. 3 Crassum generat sanguinem. 4 About Dantaer in Spruce, Hamburgh, Ldpsce. 5 Pifuricius Austricensis. 6 Pates tum salubris tum jucundas. 1. 1. 7 Galen, 1. 1. de san. tuend. Cavendae sunt aque que ex stagnus haeriment, et aque turbide et male olentes, &c.
of necessity, but not otherwise. Some are of opinion, that such fat standing waters make the best beer, and that seething doth defecate it, as "Cardan holds, Lib. 13. subtil. "It mends the substance, and savour of it," but it is a paradox. Such beer may be stronger, but not so wholesome as the other, as "Jobertus truly justifieth out of Galen, Paradox, dec. 1. Paradox 5. that the seething of such impure waters doth not purge or purify them, Pliny, lib. 31. c. 3. is of the same tenet, and P. Crescentius, agricult. lib. 1. et lib. 4. c. 11. et c. 45. Pamphilus Herilachus, l. 4. de nat. aquarum, such waters are naught, not to be used, and by the testimony of "Galen, "brect agues, dropisies, pleurisies, splenetic and melancholy passions, hurt the eyes, cause a bad temperature, and ill disposition of the whole body, with bad colour." This Jobertus stiffly maintains, Paradox, lib. 1. part. 5. that it causeth clear eyes, bad colour, and many loathsome diseases to such as use it: this which they say, stands with good reason; for as geographers relate, the water of Astraean breeds worms in such as drink it. "Axius, or as now called Verduri, the fairest river in Macedonia, makes all catical black that taste of it. Aleactman now Pelea, another stream in Thessaly, turns cattle most part white, si potui ducas. L. Aubanus Rohemus refers that "struma or pocke of the Bavarians and Styrians to the nature of their waters, as " Munster doth that of the Valesians in the Alps, and " Bodine supposeth the stuttering of some families in Aquitania, about Labden, to proceed from the same cause, "and that the filth is derived from the water to their bodies." So that they that use filthy, standing, ill-coloured, thick, muddy water, must needs have muddy, ill-coloured, impure, and infirm bodies. And because the body works upon the mind, they shall have grosser understandings, dull, foggy, melancholy spirits, and be really subject to all manner of infirmities.

To these noxious simples, we may reduce an infinite number of compound, artificial, made dishes, of which our cooks afford us a great variety, as tailors do fashions in our apparel. Such are "puddings stuffed with blood, or otherwise composed; baked meats, souced infurate meats, fried and broiled buttered meats; coutide, powdered, and over-dried, "all cakes, sinnels, buns, cracknels made with butter, spice, &c., fritters, pancakes, pies, sausages, and those several saucis, sharp, or over-sweet, of which scientia popum, as Senecha calls it, hath served those " Apician tricks, and perfumed dishes, which Adrian the sixth Pope so much admired in the accounts of his predecessor Leo decimus; and which prodigious riot and prodigality have invented in this age. These do generally engender gross humours, fill the stomach with crudities, and all those inward parts with obstructions. Montanus, consil. 22, gives instance, in a melancholy Jew, that by eating such tart saucis, made dishes, and salt meats, with which he was overmuch delighted, became melancholy, and was evil affected. Such examples are familiar and common.

SUBSECT. II.—Quantity of Diet a Cause.

There is not so much harm proceeding from the substance itself of meat, and quality of it, in ill-dressing and preparing, as there is from the quantity, disorder of time and place, unseasonable use of it, "intemperance, overmuch, or overlittle of it. A true saying it is, Phlores crapula quam gladiis, This gluttony kills more than the sword, this omnivoranza et homicida gula,
this all devouring and murdering grunt. And that of Pliny is truer, "Simple diet is the best; heaping up of several meats is pernicious, and saucy worse; many dishes bring many diseases." Avicen cries out, "That nothing is worse than to feed on many dishes, or to protract the time of meats longer than ordinary; from thence proceed our infirmities, and 'tis the fountain of all diseases, which arise out of the repugnancy of gross humours." Thence, saith bFermius, come crudities, wind, opipations, cacochymia, plethora, cachexia, bradipoesia, A Hic subite mortes, atque intestata senectus, sudden death, &c., and what not.

As a lamp is choked with a multitude of oil, or little fire with overmuch wood quite extinguished, so is the natural heat with immoderate eating, strangled in the body. Pernitiiosa sentina est abdomeni insaturabile: one saith, An insatiable paunch is a pernicious sink, and the fountain of all diseases, both of body and mind. 1Mercurialis will have it a peculiar cause of this private disease; Scolander, consil. 5. sect. 3, illustrates this of Mercurialis, with an example of one so melancholy, ab intempestivis commissationibus, unseasonable feasting. Crato confirms as much, in that often cited Counsel, 21, lib. 2, putting superfluous eating for a main cause. But what need I seek farther for proofs? Hear 1Hippocrates himself, Lib. 2, Aphor. 10, "Impure bodies the more they are nourished, the more they are hurt, for the nourishment is putrefied with vicious humours."

And yet for all this harm, which apparently follows surfeiting and drunkenness, see how we luxuriate and rage in this kind; read what Johannes Stuckius hath written lately of this subject, in his great volume De Antiquorum Com-

viviis, and of our present age; Quum "portentosae cane, prodigious suppers, Qui dum invitant ad ecumen efferunt ad sivulichrum, what Fagos, Epicures, Apetis, Heliogabals, our times afford? Lucullus' ghost walks still, and every man desires to sup in Apollo; 2Bosop's costly dish is ordinarily served up. 3Magis ulla juven, que pluris omnunt: The dearest cates are best, and 'tis an ordinary thing to bestow twenty or thirty pounds upon a dish, some thousand crowns upon a dinner: Mully-Hamet, king of Fez and Morocco, spent three pounds on the sauce of a capon: it is nothing in our times, we scorn all that is cheap.1 "We loathe the very light (some of us, as Seneca notes) because it comes free, and we are offended with the sun's heat, and those cool blasts, because we buy them not." This air we breathe is so common, we care not for it; nothing pleaseth but what is dear. And if we be 'witty in anything, it is ad gulam: If we study at all, it is erudito luxu, to please the palate, and to satisfy the gut. "A cook of old was a base knave (as 'Livy complains), but now a great man in request; cookery is become an art, a noble science: cooks are gentlemen." Venter Deus: They wear "that their brains in their bellies, and their guts in their heads," as Agrippa taxed some parasites of his time, rushing on their own destruction, as if a man should run upon the point of a sword, "Vogue dum rumpuntur comedunt, They eat till they burst:" "All day, all night, let the physician say what he will, imminent danger, and fever diseases are now ready to seize upon them, that will eat till they vomit, Edunt ut vomant, vomant ut clamant, saith Seneca; which Dion relates of Vitellius, Solo bLib. 11. c. 52. Hondii cibus utilisimius simplex, acervati ciborum pestiferus, et condimenta perversius, multos morbos multa formula foramin. cEbull. 3. c. Nisi decorius quam atrozes, has homines comedeantur post protractatam, et variis ciborum genera conjunctionat: inde mordicrium, scacrum, quae ex repugnantia humorum ortur. 'Path. 1. 1. 14. 'Nimia repletio ciborum factit melancho- liam. bCornes, superbus cibis, et potis quantitates nimia. Impura corpora quasi magis narrant, tanto magis levis; putrefactus enim alaearem vitiosum humor. 'Vid. Grecian. de porrettosis cibis, cTutani Com. 'Aub. Lib. de Jocu. cap. 14. "They who invite us to our supper, only conduct us to our tomb." bJuvenal. "The highest-priced dishes afford the greatest gratification." cGuiccardini. dNa. quest. 4. ea. ult. fastidio est jurem gratiitiam, dolet quod solo, quod spirituum emere non possim, quod hic aer non emptus ex facili, e.c. adeo nihil placeat, nisi quod currum esse. eInventor ad jam. fOmnin cibus, sune in omni assumatione, sune ars liberi epta, &c. gEpith. 25. 1. 7. quodna in ventre ingenium, in patris, &c. iIn luxum coma. Sertorius.
transitu ciborum nutriri judicatus: His meat did pass through and away, or till they burst again. "Straige animantium ventrem onerant, and rake over all the world, as so many "slaves, belly-gods, and land-serpents, Et totus orbis ventri nimis angustus, the whole world cannot satisfy their appetite. "Sea, land, rivers, lakes, &c., may not give content to their raging guts." To make up the mess, what immoderate drinking in every place? Senem potum pota trahebat annus, how they flock to the tavern: as if they were fruges consumere nati, born to no other end but to eat and drink, like Offellius Bibulus, that famous Roman parasite, Quid dum visibis, aut bibit aut minxit; as so many casks to hold wine, yea worse than a cask, that mars wine, and itself is not marred by it, yet these are brave men, Silenus Ebrius was no braver. Et quae fuerunt vitiis, mores sunt: 'tis now the fashion of our times, an honour: Nunc vero res ista esredit (as Chrysost. serm. 30, in v. Ephes. comments) Ut effuminaret ridendequae ignavice loco habeatur, nolle inebriari; 'tis now come to that pass that he is no gentleman, a very milk-sop, a clown of no bringing up, that will not drink; fit for no company; he is your only gallant that plays it off finest, no disparagement now to stagger in the streets, recl, raves, &c., but much to his fame and renown; as in like case Epidicus told Thesprio his fellow-servant, in the Poet. Aéridipol facinus improbum, one urged, the other replied, At jam alii fecere idem, erit illi illa res honoris, 'tis now no fault, there be so many brave examples to bear one out; 'tis a credit to have a strong brain, and carry his liquor well; the sole contention who can drink most, and fox his fellow the soonest. 'Tis the summum bonum of our tradesmen, their felicity, life, and soul, Tanta dulcedee affectionet, saith Pliny, lib. 14. cap. 12. ut magna pars non aliud vita praemium intelligat, their chief comfort, to be merry together in an alehouse or tavern, as our modern Muscovites do in their mede-inns, and Turks in their coffee-houses which much resemble our taverns; they will labour hard all day, long to be drunk at night, and spend totius annum labores, as St. Ambrose adds, in a tippling feast; convert day into night, as Seneca taxes some in his times, Pervertunt officia noctis et lucis; when we rise, they commonly go to bed, like our antipodes,

"Nasque ubi primus equus ordis affavit ahellis, Illis sera rubens ascendit lamina vesper." So did Petronius in Tacitus, Heliogabalus in Lampridius.

Snymdiris, the Sybarite never saw the sun rise or set so much as once in twenty years. Verres, against whom Tully so much inveighs, in winter he never was extra sectum vis ex sectum, never almost out of bed, still wenching and drinking; so did he spend his time, and so do myriads in our days. They have gymnasia bibonium, schools and rendezvous; these centaurs and lapithae toss pots and bowls as so many balls; invent new tricks, as sausages, anchovies, tobacco, caviare, pickled oysters, herring, fumadoes, &c.; innumerable salt meats to increase their appetite, and study how to hurt themselves by taking antidotes "to carry their drink the better; "and when nought else serves, they will go forth, or be conveyed out, to empty their gourge, that they may return to drink afresh." They make laws, insuras leges, contra bibendi fallacias, and "brag of it when they have done, crowning that man that is soonest gone, as their drunken predecessors have done,—quid ego video? Ps. Cum coronā Pseudolum ebrion tram. — And when they are dead, will have a can of wine with Maron's old woman to be engraved on their tombs. So

---


*Severina guttura satiāre non possunt fūvit et maria. *Aesopus Sylvius de miser. curial.

*Hor. lib. 1. Sat. 3. *Dici brevitas curvītis, noxīs longituādī sumptūs contraebrat.

they triumph in villany, and justify their wickedness; with Rabelais, that French Lucian, drunkenness is better for the body than physic, because there be more old drunkards than old physicians. Many such frothy arguments they have, inviting and encouraging others to do as they do, and love them dearly for it (no glue like to that of good fellowship). So did Alciabades in Greece; Nero, Bonosus, Heliogabalus in Rome, or Alegalbalus rather, as he was styled of old (as Ignatius proves out of some old coins). So do many great men still, as Heresbachius observes. When a prince drinks till his eyes stare, like Bittias in the Poet,

"(Utile impiger hasuit
Spumantem vino pateram.)"

and comes off clearly, sound trumpets, file and drums, the spectators will applaud him, the bishop himself (if he belie them not) with his chaplain, will stand by and do as much," O dignum princeps haustum, "twas done like a prince. "Our Dutchmen invite all comers with a pail and a dish," Velut infundibula integras obbas excurrant, et in monstrosis pocius, ipsi monstrosi monstruosus, "making barrels of their bellies." Incredibile dictu, as one of their own countrymen complains: Quantum liquoris immodestissima gens capit, "How they love a man that will be drunk, crown him and honour him for it," hate him that will not pledge him, stab him, kill him; a most intolerable offence, and not to be forgiven. 

"He is a mortal enemy that will not drink with him," as Munster relates of the Saxons. So in Poland, he is the best servitor, and the honestest fellow, saith Alexander Gaguinis, that drinketh most healths to the honour of his master, he shall be rewarded as a good servant, and held the bravest fellow that carries his liquor best," when a brewer's horse will bear much more than any sturdy drinker, yet for his noble exploits in this kind, he shall be accounted a most valiant man, for Tam inter opulas fortis vir esse potest ac in bello, as much value is to be found in feasting as in fighting, and some of our city captains, and carpet knights will make this good, and prove it. Thus they many times willfully pervert the good temperature of their bodies, stifle their wits, strength nature, and degenerate into beasts.

Some again are in the other extreme, and draw this mischief on their heads by too ceremonious and strict diet, being over-precise, cockney-like, and curious in their observation of meats, times, as that Medicina statica prescribes, just so many ounces at dinner, which Lessius enjoins, so much at supper, not a little more, nor a little less, of such meat, and at such hours, a diet-drink in the morning, cock-broth, China-broth, at dinner, plum-broth, a chicken, a rabbit, rib of a rack of mutton, wing of a capon, the merry-thought of a hen, &c.; to sounder bodies this is too nice and most absurd. Others offend in over-much fasting: pining adays, saith Guianerus, and waking anights, as many Moors and Turks in these our times do. "Anchorites, monks, and the rest of that superstitious rank (as the same Guianerus witnesseth, that he hath often seen to have happened in his time) through immoderate fasting, have been frequently mad." Of such men belike Hippocrates speaks, 1 Aphor. 5, when as

* Gratiana concordant potando.
* Notis ad Casareae.
* Lib. de occanndis principum libris.
1 Virg. E. 1. * idem strenuus potatoris i piscopi sacerdons, cum ingenium pateram exhaerit princeps.
* Bohemius in Saxonia. Adoe immoderate et immodestae et libidines ab ipsis bibitur, ut in compositionibus suis non cysulis solum et cantharis sit infundere possint, sed impletum multicirca apponant, et seulentia iniecta hortantur quemlibet ad libitum potare.
* Dicta incredibile, quantum luxuriae liquoris immodesta gens capit, plus potientem amicissimum habent, et secto coram, inmischissimum e contra qui non vult, et eade et fistibus expulant.
* Qul potare resquant, hostis habetur, et eade nonnumquam res expusit.
* Qul melius bibit pro salute dominii, melior habetur minister.
* Grac. Poeta apud Stobenius, ser. 18. * Qui de die iujantur, et noete vigilant, facile cadunt in melancholiam; et qui natura non decedunt, c. 5. tract. 15. c. 2. Longa famis tolerantia, ut ille sepe accidit qui tano cum servore Deo servire cupit per iujantium, quod maniace offecit, IPSA VIDI SAGE.
Causes of Melancholy. [Part. 1. Sec. 2.]

he saith, "1. They more offend in too sparing diet, and are worse damned, than they that feed liberally, and are ready to surfeit.

SUBSECT. III.—Custom of Diet, Delight, Appetite, Necessity, how they cause or hinder.

No rule is so general, which admits not some exception; to this, therefore, which hath been hitherto said (for I shall otherwise put most men out of commons), and those inconveniences which proceed from the substance of meats, an intemperate or unseasonable use, custom somewhat detracts and qualifies, according to that of Hippocrates 2, Aphorism, 50, "Such things as we have been long accustomed to, though they be evil in their own nature yet they are less offensive." Otherwise it might well be objected that it were a mere 3 tyranny to live after those strict rules of physic; "for custom 4 doth alter nature itself, and to such as are used to them it makes bad meats wholesome, and unseasonable times to cause no disorder. Cider and perry are windy drinks, so are all fruits windy in themselves; cold most part, yet in some shires of England, Normandy in France, Guipuscoa in Spain, "tis their common drink, and they are no whit offended with it. In Spain, Italy, and Africa, they live most on roots, raw herbs, camel's milk, and it agrees well with them: which to a stranger will cause much grievance. In Wales, lacticinii. vescuntur, as Humphry Lwyd confessed, a Cambro-Briton himself, in his elegant epistle to Abraham Ortelius, they live most on white meats: in Holland on fish, roots, butter; and so at this day in Greece, as Bellonius observes, they had much rather feed on fish than flesh. With us, Maxima pars victæ in carne consistit, we feed on flesh most part, saith Polydor Virgil, as all northern countries do; and it would be very offensive to us to live after their diet, or to live after ours. We drink beer, they wine; they use oil, we butter; "we in the north are great eaters; they most sparing in those hotter countries; and yet they and we following our own customs are well pleased. An Ethiopian of old seeing an European eat bread, wondered, quomodo ster- coribus vescentes viveremus, how we could eat such kind of meats: so much differed his countrymen from ours in diet, that as mine author infers, si quus illorum victam apud nos cumdari velit; if any man should so feed with us, it would be all one to nourish, as Cictua, Aconitum, or Hellebore itself. At this day in China, the common people live in a manner altogether on roots and herbs, and to the wealthiest, horse, ass, mule, dogs, cat-flesh, is as delightful as the rest, so Mat. Riccius the Jesuit relates, who lived many years amongst them. The Tartars eat raw meat, and most commonly horse-flesh, drink milk and blood, as the Nomades of old. Et lac concretum cum sanguina potat equino. They scoff at our Europeans for eating bread, which they call tops of weeds, and horse meat, not fit for men; and yet Scaliger accounts them a sound and witty nation, living a hundred years; even in the civilest country of them they do thus, as Benedict the Jesuit observed in his travels, from the great Mogul's Court by land to Pekin, which Riccius contends to be the same with Cambula in Cataia. In Scandia their bread is usually dried fish, and so likewise in the Shetland isles; and their other fare, as in Iceland, saith

1 In temi victæ argi delinquunt, ex qua fit ut majori afficiantur detrimenta, majoreque fit error tenui quam pliciore victœ. 2 Quia longo tempore consuciata sunt, etiamn dilectorum, minus in assenti molatior solenta. 3 Quia medici vitât, nimier vitât. 4 Consensunt altera natura. 5 Herefordsire, Gloucestershire, Worcestershire. 6 Leo Afer. 1. 1. solo cameralorum facte contenti, nihil preterea deliciarum ambient. 7 Flandri vinum butyro-oblatum bibunt (naueus reoferens) ubique butyrum inter omnia femina et bellaia locum obtinent. Steph. praefat. Herod. 8 Delectantur Greci duxid magis quam caribbs. Lib. 1. hist. Ang. 9 P. Johnius descript. Britonum. They sit, eat and drink all day at dinner in Iceland, Muscovy, and those northern parts. 10 Sasan viet. Herod. situllo cum eo victam quam si quis Cictua, Aconitum, &c. 11 Exped. in Sinas lib. 1. c. 3. horsterenum herbarum et ceterum, apud Sinas quam apud nos longe frequenter usus, com- plures quippe de vulgo repertae multa aliis re vel tematiis, vel religiosam causam vescentes. Equus, Malus, Asellus, &c. acque fere vescentur ac pabula omnia, Mat. Riccius, lib. 5. cap. 12. 12 Tartari multis, quis vescentur et crudele caribbus, et fruges contentuunt, dicentes, hoc jumentorum pabulum et boun, non homium.
Causes of Melancholy.

Causes of their husbands, with Montezuma himself. In some coasts, again, one tree yields them cacao-nuts, meat, and drink, fire, fuel, apparel; with his leaves, oil, vinegar, cover for houses, &c., and yet these men going naked, feeding coarse, live commonly a hundred years, are seldom or never sick; all which diet our physicians forbid. In Westphalia they eat most part on fat meats and worts, knockle deep, and call it cerebrum Iovis: in the low countries with roots, in Italy frogs and snails are used. The Turks, saith Busbequius, delight most in fried meats. In Muscovy, garlic and onions are ordinary meat and sauce, which would be pernicious to such as are accustomed to them, delightful to others; and all this because they have been brought up unto it. Husbandmen, and such as labour, can eat fat bacon, salt gross meat, hard cheese, &c. (O dura messorum illa), coarse bread at all times, go to bed and labour upon a full stomach, which to some idle persons would be present death, and against the rules of physic, so that custom is all in all. Our travellers find this by common experience when they come in far countries, and use their diet, they are suddenly offended, as our Hollander and Englishmen when they touch upon the coasts of Africa, those Indian capes and islands, are commonly molested with calentures, fluxes, and much distempered by reason of their fruits. Peregrina, esti suavis, solent vescicibus perturbationes insigne adferre, strange meats, though pleasant, cause notable alterations and distempers. On the other side, use or custom mitigates or makes all good again. Mithridates by often use, which Pliny wonders at, was able to drink poison; and a maid, as Curtius records, sent to Alexander from K. Porus, was brought up with poison from her infancy. The Turks, saith Bellonius, lib. 3, c. 15, eat opium familiarly, a drachm at once, which we dare not take in grains. Garcia ab Herto writes of one whom he saw at Goa in the East Indies, that took ten drachms of opium in three days; and yet consulto loquebatur, spake understandingly, so much can custom do. Theophrastus speaks of a shepherd that could eat hellebore in substance. And therefore Cardan concludes out of Galen, Consuetudinem uocumque ferendam, nisi valde mala. Custom is howsoever to be kept, except it be extremely bad: he advises all men to keep their old customs, and that by the authority of Hippocrates himself, Dandum aliquid temporis, atati, regioni, consuetudini, and therefore to continue as they began, be it diet, bath, exercise, &c., or whatsoever else.

Another exception is delight, or appetite, to such and such meats; though they be hard of digestion, melancholy; yet as Fuchsius excepts cap. 6. lib. 2. Institut. sect. 2. “The stomach doth really digest, and willingly entertain such meats we love most, and are pleasing to us, abhors on the other side such as we distaste.” Which Hippocrates confirms, Aphorism. 2, 38. Which cannot endure cheese out of a secret antipathy, or to see a roasted duck, which to others is a delightsome meat.

The last exception is necessity, poverty, want, hunger, which drives men
**Causes of Melancholy.**

Part 1. Sec. 2.

many times to do that which otherwise they are loth, cannot endure, and thankfully to accept of it: as beverage in ships, and in sieges of great cities, to feed on dogs, cats, rats, and men themselves. Three outlaws in *Hector Boethius,* being driven to their shifts, did eat raw flesh, and flesh of such fowl as they could catch, in one of the Hebrides for some few months. These things do mitigate or disannul that which hath been said of melancholy meats, and make it more tolerable; but to such as are wealthy, live pleasantly, at ease, may take their choice, and refrain if they will, these viands are to be forbore, if they be inclined to, or suspect melancholy, as they tender their healths; Otherwise if they be intemperate, or disorderd in their diet, at their peril be it. *Qui monet amat, Ave et cave.*

He who advises is your friend, 
Farewell and to your health attend,

**Subsec. IV.— Retention and Evacuation a cause, and how.**

Of retention and evacuation, there be divers kinds, which are either concomitant, assisting, or sole causes many times of melancholy. *Gal*en reduceth defect and abundance to this head; others *"All that is separated, or remains.*

**Costiveness.** In the first rank of these, I may well reckon up costiveness, and keeping in of our ordinary excrements, which as it often causeth other diseases, so this of melancholy in particular. *Celsius, lib. 1. cap. 3. saith,* "It produceth inflammation of the head, dulness, cloudiness, headache, &c." *Prosper Calenus, lib. de aetrâ bile,* will have it distemper not the organ only, "but the mind itself by troubling of it:" and sometimes it is a sole cause of madness, as you may read in the first book of *Skenkius's Medicinal Observations.* A young merchant going to Nordeling fair in Germany, for ten days' space never went to stool; at his return he was "grievously melancholy, thinking that he was robbed, and would not be persuaded but that all his money was gone; his friends thought he had some philter given him, but Cnelius, a physician, being sent for, found his "costiveness alone to be the cause, and thereupon gave him a diyster, by which he was speedily recovered. Trincavelius, consult. 35 *lib. 1. saith as much of a melancholy lawyer, to whom he administered physic,* and Rodericus à Fonseca, consult. 55. tom. 2.* of a patient of his, that for eight days was bound, and therefore melancholy affected. Other retentions and evacuations there are, not simply necessary, but at some times; as Fernelius accounts them. *Path. lib. 1. cap. 15.* as suppression of hemorrholods, or monthly issues in women, bleeding at nose, inmoderate or no use at all of Venus: or any other ordinary issues.

*Detention of hemorrholods, or monthly issues, Villanovanus Breviar. lib. 1. cap. 18. Arculanus, cap. 16. in 9. Ithasis, Vittorius Faventinus, pract. mag. Tract. 2. cap. 15. Bruel, &c. put for ordinary causes. Fuchsius, 1. 2. sect. 5. c. 30. goes farther, and saith, "That many men unseasonably cured of the hemorrholods have been corrupted with melancholy, seeking to avoid Scylla, they fall into Charybdis. Galen, *l. de hum. commun. 3. ad text. 26.* illustrates this by an example of Lucius Martinus, whom he cured of madness, contracted by this means: And *Skenkius hath two other instances of two melancholy and mad women,* so caused from the suppression of their months. The same may be said of bleeding at the nose, if it be suddenly stopped, and have been formerly used, as *Villanovanus urgeth: And Fuchsius, lib. 2. sect. 5.* cap. 33.

---

stiffly maintains, “That without great danger, such an issue may not be stayed.”

Venice omitted produceth like effects. Mathiolus, epist. 5. 1. penult. 
“avoucheth of his knowledge, that some through bashfulness abstained from venery, and thereupon became very heavy and dull; and some others that were very timorous, melancholy, and beyond all measure sad.” Oribasius, med. collect. l. 6. c. 37. speaks of some, “That if they do not use carnal copulation, are continually troubled with heaviness and headache; and some in the same case by intermission of it.” Not use of it hurts many, Arculamus, c. 6. in 9. Rphasis, et Magninus, part. 3. cap. 5. think, because it “m sends up poisonous vapours to the brain and heart. And so doth Galen himself hold, “That if this natural seed be over-long kept (in some parties) it turns to poison.” Hieronymus Mercurialis, in his chapter of Melancholy, cites it for an especial cause of this malady, “Priapismus, Satyriaosis, &c., Halibassas, 5. Theor. c. 36. reckons up this and many other diseases. Villanovanus Breviar, l. 1. c. 18. saith, “He knew “many monks and widows grievously troubled with melancholy, and that for this sole cause.” p Lodovicus Mercuratus, l. 2. de melanchol. affect. cap. 4. and Rodericus à Castro, de morbis mulier. l. 2. c. 3. treat largely of this subject, and will have it produce a peculiar kind of melancholy in stable maids, nuns, and widows, Ob suppressionem mensium et venereum omnium, timide, mastax, anxie, verecundae, surpiciose, languentes, consenti inpexes, cum summa vitae et rerum meliorum desperatione, &c., they are melancholy in the highest degree, and all for want of husbands. Elianus Montaltus, cap. 37. de melanchol. confirms as much out of Galen; so doth Wierus, Christoferus à Vega de art. med. lib. 3. c. 14, relates many such examples of men and women, that he had seen so melancholy. Félix Plater in the first book of his Observations, “tells a story of an ancient gentleman in Alsatia, that married a young wife, and was not able to pay his debts in that kind for a long time together, by reason of his several infirmities: but she, because of this inhibition of Venus, fell into a horrible fury, and desired every one that came to see her, by words, looks, and gestures, to have to do with her,” &c. Bernhardus Paternus, a physician, saith, “He knew a good honest godly priest, that because he would neither willingly marry, nor make use of the stews, fell into grievous melancholy fits,” Hildesheim, spied. 2. hath such another example of an Italian melancholy priest, in a consultation had Anno 1580. Jason Pratensis gives instance in a married man, that from his wife’s death abstaining, “after marriage, became exceedingly melancholy,” Rodericus à Fonseca in a young man so misaffected, Tom. 2. consult. 83. To these you may add, if you please, that conceited tale of a Jew, so visited in like sort, and so cured, out of Poggius Florentinus.

Intemperate Venus is all but as bad in the other extreme. Galen. l. 6. de morbis popular. sect. 5. text. 26, reckons up melancholy amongst those diseases which are “exasperated by venery;” so doth Avicenna, 2. 3. c. 11. Oribius, loc. citat. Ficinus, lib. 2. de sanitate tuend. Marsilius Cognatus, Montaltus, cap. 27. Guianerius, Tract. 3. cap. 2. Magninus, cap. 5. part. 3. gives the reason, because “it inflrigidates and dries up the body, consumes

1Novi quosdam pra pudore ad coitum abstinentes, torpidos, picroseque factos: nonnullae etiam melancholici, praeter modum macrostos, timidosque. 
2Nonnulli nisi coeunt, assidue capitum gravitate infestantur, Dicit se novisse quosdam tristes et ita factos ex intermissione Venere. 
3Vaporque venenum mortalis sperma ad cor et procerum. Sperma piae diu retentum, transit in venere. 
4Graves producit corporis et animi agrindines. 
5Ex spermate supra medium retento monachos et viduas melancholici sape feri vii. 
6Melancholia orta a vasis seminariis in utero. 
7Nobilis semex Alacatus juvenem uxorem dixit, ut ille coelo dolore, et multis morbis corrupit, non potuit praeclare obsidium mariti, vit illa matrimonio agrotos. Ilia in hereditarum favorem incidit, ob Venerem colibitam, ut omnium eum invincimus congressus, voca, vulta, gesta expetenter, et quum non consentirent, nulloso Anglicos magma expellere clamore. 
8Vidi sacerdotem optimum et pium, qui quondam sit Venero, in melancholici symptomatica incidi. 
9Ob abstinentiam cum concubiti incidit in melancholiam. 
10Quo a coitis excedit. 
11Superlunium coluna causam ponunt. 
12Exsiccat corpus, spiritus consumit, &c., caveant ab hoc seci, velint mirico mortali.
Heteiouion, 21, will as I say, their, a 16. and Johan, 9. "In multo patient, generating hot the choly may one lettiug, well; but when it was stopped, Reduit melancholia, his melancholy fit seized on him again.

Artificial evacuations are much like in effect, as hot houses, baths, blood-letting, purging, unseasonably and immoderately used. *Baths dry too much, if used in excess, be they natural or artificial, and offend extreme hot or cold; b one dries, the other refrigerates over much. Montanus, consil. 137, saith, they over-heat the liver. Joh. Struthins, Stigmat. artis. l. 4. c. 9, contends, "that if one stays longer than ordinary at the bath, go in too oft, or at unseasonable times, they putrefies the humours in his body." To this purpose writes Magnus, l. 3. c. 5. Guianerius, Tract. 15. c. 21, utterly disallows all hot baths in melancholy adust. "I saw (saith he) a man that laboured of the gout, who to be freed of his malady came to the bath, and was instantly cured of his disease, but got another worse, and that was madness." But this judgment varies as the humour doth, in hot or cold: baths may be good for one melancholy man, bad for another; that which will cure it in this party, may cause it in a second.

Phlebotomy.] Phlebotomy, many times neglected, may do much harm to the body, when there is a manifest redundance of bad humours, and melancholy blood; and when these humours heat and boil, if this be not used in time, the parties affected, so inflamed, are in great danger to be mad; but if it be unadvisedly, importunately, immoderately used, it doth as much harm by refrigerating the body, dulling the spirits, and consuming them: as Joh. "Curio in his 10th Chapter well reprehends, such kind of letting blood doth more hurt than good: "The humours rage much more than they did before, and is so far from avoiding melancholy, that it increaseth it, and weakeneth the sight."

Prosper Calemus observes as much of all phlebotomy, except they keep a very good diet after it; yea, and as Leonartus Jacchins speaks out of his own experience, "The blood is much blacker to many men after their letting of blood than it was at first." For this cause belike Salust. Salvianus, l. 2. c. 1, will admit or hear of no blood-letting at all in this disease, except it be manifest it proceed from blood: he was (it appears) by his own words in that place, master of an hospital of mad men, "and found by long experience, that this kind of evacuation, either in head, arm, or any other part, did more harm than good." To this opinion of his, Felix Plater is quite opposite,

* Ita excificiatus ut & melanchelic static stimat furiet insanus, ab humectantibus curatus.
* Item canario et uleare exsiccatum.
* Ex canario et uleare exsiccatum.
* Cord. e. 10. Lib. 1. Discommends cold baths as noxious.
* Siccum reddunt corpor.
* Si quis longius moraretur in lucis, aut nimius frequentaret, aut importunum uatat, humores putredint.
* Ex parte superiori, quendam guttasum vidit abusum, qui at liberaerat de gutta, at balneos accensit, et de gutta liberatus, manuex factum est.
* On Schola Salvermanni. "Calcofacto et ebullito per venae incubationem, magis spere incipiat et augaret, magiore impetu humores per corporum descen-
* runt."
* Lib. de fiatentia Melancholia. Frequens sanguis miscit corpus extremant.
* In 9 Rassis, atrum bilena partit, et visum debilitatur.
* Illoque spectabilis spectabilis post dies quados, quam fuit ab humore humorum, ut non haud hodiernum ante mendacius spectabilius.
* Non tamen eis qui in despeletia decent secundum esse venas frontis, qua spiritus debilitatis inde, et ego longa experimentia observavi in proprio Xenodochio, quos despeletii ex phlebotomia magis deducunt, et magis despeletium spectabilis inde pejores.
* De mentis alienat. cap. 3. et multis hic improbusse sejum, innumeros hic radione sanatos longa observatione cognovi, qui vicis, sex- agiles venas tendendo, &c.
Bad Air, a Cause.

Mem. 2. Subs. 5.

Bad Air, a Cause.

"though some wink at, disallow and quite contradict all phlebotomy in melancholy, yet by long experience I have found innumerable so saved, after they had been twenty, nay, sixty times let blood, and to live happily after it. It was an ordinary thing of old, in Galen's time, to take at once from such men six pounds of blood, which now we dare scarce take in ounces: sed viderint medici," great books are written of this subject.

Purging upward and downward, in abundance of bad humours omitted, may be for the worst; so likewise as in the precedent, if overmuch, too frequent or violent, it 1 weakeneth their strength, saith Fuchsius, t. 2. sect. 2. c. 17. or if they be strong or able to endure physic, yet it brings them to an ill habit, they make their bodies no better than apothecaries' shops, this and such like infirmities must needs follow.

SUBSEC. V.—Bad Air, a Cause of Melancholy.

Air is a cause of great moment, in producing this, or any other disease, being that it is still taken into our bodies by respiration, and our more inner parts. "If it be impure and foggy, it dejects the spirits, and causeth diseases by infection of the heart," as Paulus hath it, lib. 1. c. 49. Avicenna lib. 1. Gal. de usu. tuend. Mercurialis, Montaltus, &c. "Fernelius saith, "A thick air thickenth the blood and humours." 2 Lennius reckons up two main things most profitable, and most pernicious to our bodies; air and diet: and this peculiar disease, nothing sooner causeth (Bobertus holds) "than the air wherein we breathe and live." "Such as is the air, such be our spirits; and as our spirits, such are our humours. It offends commonly if it be too 3 hot and dry, thick, fuliginous, cloudy, blustering, or a tempestuous air. Bodine in his fifth Book, De repub. cap. 1, 5. of his Method of History, proves that hot countries are most troubled with melancholy, and that there are therefore in Spain, Africa, and Asia Minor, great numbers of mad men, insomuch that they are compelled in all cities of note, to build peculiar hospitals for them. Leo Afer, lib. 3. de Fessa urbe, Ortelius and Zuinger, confirm as much: they are ordinarily so choleric in their speeches, that scarce two words pass without railing or chiding in common talk, and often quarrelling in the streets. 4 Gordonius will have every man take notice of it: "Note this (saith he) that in hot countries it is far more familiar than in cold." Although this we have now said not be continually so, for as 5 Acosta truly saith, under the Equator itself, is a most temperate habituation, wholesome air, a paradise of pleasure: the leaves ever green, cooling showers. But it holds in such as are temperamently hot, as 6 Johannes a Meggen found in Cyprus, others in Malta, Apulia, and the 7 Holy Land, where at some seasons of the year is nothing but dust, their rivers dried up, the air scorching hot, and earth inflamed; insomuch that many pilgrims going barefoot for devotion sake, from Joppa to Jerusalem upon the hot sands, often run mad, or else quite overwhelmed with sand, profusius arentes, as in many parts of Africa, Arabia Deserta, Bactriana, now Charassan, when the west wind blows 8 Involuti arenis transvecte ascendunt. 9 Hercules de Saxonia, a professor in Venice, gives this cause why so many Venetian women are melancholy, Quod diu sub sole decant, they tarry too long in the sun. Mountanus, consil. 21. among-'t other causes assigns this; Why that Jew his patient was mad, Quod tam multum exposuit se calori et

1 Vires defatilat. 2 Impurus aëris spiritus deject, infecto corde gignit morbos. 3 Sanguineum densat, et humores, Pl. 1. c. 13. 4 Lib. 3. cap. 3. 5 Lib. de quanta. 6 Ex aëre ambiente contaminator humor melancholicae. 7 Alaminus Montaltus, cap. II. cauibus et securis, frigidos et seculos, paludinosus, cruscas. 8 Multa his in Xerodochis fanatizantur nulliaque strictissime carentia servatur. 9 Lib. med. part. 2. cap. 10. Intellige, quod in caldes regionibus, frequenter accidit mensa, in frigilis autem tarda. 10 Lib. 2. Hodopericon, cap. 7. 11 Apollis sevior calore maxime fervet, ut ut ante annem Mali pene exesta sit. 12 They perish in clouds of sand." Magnani Pers. 13 Putrescit subae. Prat. med. I. 1. cap. 16. Venetæ mulieres, quæ diu sub sole vivunt, aliquando melancholicas evadunt.
frigori: he exposed himself so much to heat and cold, and for that reason in Venice, there is little stirring in those brick paved streets in summer about noon, they are most part then asleep: as they are likewise in the great Mogol's countries, and all over the East Indies. At Aden in Arabia, as Lodovicus Vertomannus relates in his travels, they keep their markets in the night, to avoid extremity of heat; and in Ormus, like cattle in a pasture, people of all sorts lie up to the chin in water all day long. At Braga in Portugal; Burgos in Castile; Messina in Sicily, all over Spain and Italy, their streets are most part narrow, to avoid the sunbeams. The Turks wear great turbans ad fugati | solis radios, to refract the sunbeams; and much inconvenience that hot air of Bantam in Java yields to our men, that sojourn there for traffic; where it is so hot, "that they that are sick of the pox, lie commonly bleeding in the sun to dry up their sores." Such a complaint I read of those isles of Cape Verde, fourteen degrees from the Equator, they do | male audire: * One calls them the unhealthiest clime of the world, for fluxes, fevers, frenzies, calentures, which commonly seize on seafaring men that touch at them, and all by reason of a hot distemperatur of the air. The hardiest men are offended with this heat, and stillest clowns cannot resist it, as Constantine affirms, Agricult. l. 2. c. 45. They that are naturally born in such air, may not endure it, as Niger records of some part of Mesopotamia, now called Diarbecha: Quibusdam in locis servianti aestui adeo subjecta est, ut pleraque animalia ferro solis et cali extinguatur, 'tis so hot there in some places, that men of the country and cattle are killed with it; and Adricomius of Arabia Felix, by reason of myrrh, frankincense, and hot spices there growing, the air is so obnoxious to their brains, that the very inhabitants at some times cannot avoid it, much less weaklings and strangers. ‡ Amatus Lusitanus, cent. I. curat. 45, reports of a young maid, that was one Vincent a currier's daughter, some thirteen years of age, that would wash her hair in the heat of the day (in July) and so let it dry in the sun, "to make it yellow, but by that means tarrying too long in the heat, she inflamed her head, and made herself mad."

Cold air in the other extreme is almost as bad as hot, and so doth Montaltus esteem it, c. 11. if it be dry withal. In those northern countries, the people are therefore generally dull, heavy, and many witches, which (as I have before quoted) Saxo Grammaticus, Olaus, Baptista Porta ascribe to melancholy. But these cold climes are more subject to natural melancholy (not this artificial) which is cold and dry: for which cause * Mercurius Britannicus belike puts melancholy men to inhabit just under the Pole. The worst of the three is a thick, cloudy, misty, foggy air, or such as come from feus, moorish grounds, lakes, muckhills, draughts, sinks, where any carcases or carrion lies, or from whence any stinking fulsome smell comes: Galen, Avicenna, Mercurialis, new and old physicians, hold that such air is unwholesome, and engenders melancholy, plagues, and what not? * Alexandretta an haven-town in the Mediterranean Sea, Saint John de Ulloa, an haven in Nova-Hispania, are much condemned for a bad air, so are Durazzo in Albania, Lithuania, Ditmarsh, Pomptine Paludes in Italy, the territories about Fisa, Ferrara, &c., Romney Marsh with us; the Hundreds in Essex, the fens in Lincolnshire. Cardan, de verum varistate, l. 17. c. 96. finds fault with the sight of those rich, and most populous cities in the Low Countries, as Bruges, Ghent, Amsterdam, Leyden, Utrecht, &c., the air is bad; and so at Stockholm in Sweden; Regium in Italy, Salisbury with us, Hull and Lynn: they may be commodious for naviga-

Accounts of Melancholy. [Part 1. Sec. 2.

* Navig. lib. 2. cap. 4. commendi nec horae secundae, ob nimios qui servianti interdum aestu, exercent.  
* Morbo gallieae laborantem, exemptum ad solenm at morbus exsistent.  
* Sir Richard Hawkins in his Observations, sect. 13.  
* Hippocrates, 3. Aphorismorum idem aut.  
† Idem Magnus in Ferrgia.  
‡ Descripit. Per. sancte.  
§ Quam ad solis radios in loco longam moram trahere, ut capillos flavos reddere, in maniam impediment.  
¶ Mundus alter et idem, seu Terra Australis incognita.  
* Crassus et turbidus ait, tristiam efficit animam.  
* Commonly called Scandaroon in Asia Minor.
tion, this new kind of fortification, and many other good necessary uses; but are they so wholesome? Old Rome hath descended from the hills to the valley, 'tis the site of most of our new cities, and held best to build in plains, to take the opportunity of rivers. Leander Albertus pleads hard for the air and site of Venice, though the black Moorish lands appear at every low water: the sea, fire, and smoke (as he thinks) qualify the air; and 'tis some suppose, that a thick foggy air helps the memory, as in them of Pisa in Italy; and our Cambden, out of Polo, commends the site of Cambridge, because it is so near the fens. But let the site of such places be as it may, how can they be excused that have a delicious seat, a pleasant air, and all that nature can afford, and yet through their own nastiness, and sluttishness, immund and sordid manner of life, suffer their air to putrefy, and themselves to be choked up? Many cities in Turkey do male and female in this kind: Constanti-nople itself, where commonly carrion lies in the streets. Some find the same fault in Spain, even in Madrid, the king's seat, a most excellent air, a pleasant site; but the inhabitants are slovens, and the streets uneasily kept.

A troublesome tempestuous air is as bad as impure, rough and foul weather, impetuous winds, cloudy dark days, as it is commonly with us, Caelum viae fœdum; Polydore calls it a filthy sky, et in quo facili generantur nubes; as Tully's brother Quintus wrote to him in Rome, being then Questor in Britain. "In a thick and cloudy air (saith Lemnus) men are tetric, sad, and peevish: And if the western winds blow, and that there be a calm, or a fair sunshine day, there is a kind of alacrity in men's minds; it cheers up men and beasts: but if it be a turbulent, rough, cloudy, stormy weather, men are sad, lumpish, and much dejected, angry, waspish, dull, and melancholy." This was Virgil's experiment of old,

"Verum sibi tempestas, et calvi mobilis humor
Naturae vicos, et Jupiter humidas Austro,
Vertuntur species annorum, et pectora mutus
Consipit alios." 

And who is not weather-wise against such and such conjunctions of planets, moved in foul weather, dull and heavy in such tempestuous seasons? "Gelidum contristat Aquarius annum: the time requires, and the autumn breeds it: winter is like unto it, ugly, foul, squallid, the air works on all men, more or less, but especially on such as are melancholy, or inclined to it, as Lemnus holds, "They are most moved with it, and those which are already mad, rave downright, either in, or against a tempest. Besides, the devil many times takes his opportunity of such storms, and when the humors by the air be stirred, he goes in with them, exagitates our spirits, and vexeth our souls; as the sea waves, so are the spirits and humours in our bodies tossed with tempestuous winds and storms." To such as are melancholy therefore, Montanus, consil. 24, will have tempestuous and rough air to be avoided, and consil. 27, all night air, and would not have them to walk abroad, but in a pleasant day. Lemnus, l. 3, c. 3, discommends the south and eastern winds, commends the north. Montanus, consil. 31, "will not any windows to be opened in the night." Consil. 229. et consil. 230, he discommends especially the south wind, and nocturnal air: So doth Plutarch. The night and darkness makes men sad, the like do all subterranean vaults, dark houses in caves and rocks, desert places cause melancholy in an instant, especially such as have not been

---


**SUBSECT. VI.—Immoderate Exercise a Cause, and how. Solitariness, Idleness.**

Nothing so good but it may be abused: nothing better than exercise (if opportunistically used) for the preservation of the body: nothing so bad if it be unseasonable, violent, or overmuch. Femnocotis out of Galen, *Path.* *lib.* 1. c. 16, saith, "That much exercise and weariness consumes the spirits and substance, refrigerates the body: and such humours which Nature would have otherwise concocted and expelled, it stirs up and makes them rage: which being so enraged, diversely affect and trouble the body and mind." So doth it, if it be unseasonably used, upon a full stomach, or when the body is full of crudities, which Fuchsius so much inveighs against, *lib.* 2, *instit.* sect. 2. c. 4, giving that for a cause why school-boys in Germany are so often scabbed, because they use exercise presently after meals. *Bayenus* puts in a caveat against such exercise, because "it corrupts the meat in the stomach, and carries the same juice raw, and as yet undigested, into the veins (saith Lemnus,) which there putrefies and confounds the animal spirits." *Crato,* *consil.* 21. 1. 2. *protests* against all such exercise after meat, as being the greatest enemy to concoction that may be, and cause of corruption of humours, which produce this, and many other diseases. Not without good reason then doth *Salust.* *Salvianus,* 1. 2. c. 1. and *Leonartus Jacchius,* in 9, *Rhis.* *Mercuraius,* *Arcubanus,* and many other, set down "immoderate exercise as a most forcible cause of melancholy.

Opposite to exercise is idleness (the badge of gentry) or want of exercise, the bane of body and mind, the nurse of naughtiness, stepmother of discipline, the chief author of all mischief, one of the seven deadly sins, and a sole cause of this and many other maladies, the devil's cushion, as "Gualter calls it, his pillow and chief reposi. "For the mind can never rest, but still meditates on one thing or other, except it be occupied about some honest business, of his own accord it rusheth into melancholy. "As too much and violent exercise offends on the one side, so doth an idle life on the other (saith Crato), it fills the body full of phlegm, gross humours, and all manner of obstructions, rheums, catarrhs," &c. *Rhis.* *cont. lib.* 1. *tract.* 9, *accounts* of it as the greatest cause of melancholy. "I have often seen (saith he) that idleness begets this humour more than anything else." *Montsalus,* c. 1, seconds him out of his experience, "They that are idle are far more subject to melancholy than such as are conversant or employed about any office or business." *Plutarch* reckons up idleness for a sole cause of the sickness of the soul: "There are they (saith he) troubled in mind, that have no other cause but this." *Homer,* *Ilid.* 1, brings in Achilles eating of his own heart in his idleness, because he might not fight. *Mercurialis,* *consil.* 86, for a melancholy young man urgeth "it is a chief cause; why was he melancholy? because idle."

---

Nothing begets it sooner, increaseth and continueth it oftener than idleness. A disease familiar to all idle persons, an inseparable companion to such as live at ease, *Pinging ut oto desidiose agentes*, a life out of action, and have no calling or ordinary employment to busy themselves about, that have small occasions; and though they have such is their laziness, dulness, they will not compose themselves to do aught; they cannot abide work, though it be necessary; easy as to dress themselves, write a letter or the like; yet as he that is benumbed with cold sits still shaking, that might relieve himself with a little exercise or stirring do they complain, but will not use the facile and ready means to do themselves good; and so are still tormented with melancholy. Especially if they have been formerly brought up to business, or to keep much company, and upon a sudden come to lead a sedentary life; it crucifies their souls, and seizeth on them in an instant; for whilst they are any ways employed, in action, discourse, about any business, sport or recreation, or in company to their liking; they are very well; but if alone or idle, tormented instantly again; one day’s solitariness, one hour’s sometimes, doth them more harm, than a week’s physic, labour, and company can do good. Melancholy seizeth on them forthwith being alone, and is such a torture, that as wise Seneca well saith, *Malo mihii malé quam maliier esse*, I had rather be sick than idle. This idleness is either of body or mind. That of body is nothing but a kind of benumbing laziness, intermitting exercise, which if we may believe *Fernelius, “causeth crudities, obstructions, excremental humours, quencheth the natural heat, dulls the spirits, and makes them unapt to do any thing whatsoever.”* "Neglecti urenda filix innascitur agris." 

As fern grows in untilled grounds, and all manner of weeds, sod grosse humours in an idle body, *Ignium corruptum otia corpus*. A horse in a stable that never travels, a hawk in a mew that seldom flies, are both subject to diseases; which left unto themselves, are most free from any such incumbrances. An idle dog will be mangy, and how shall an idle person think to escape? Idleness of the mind is much worse than this of the body; wit without employment is a disease, *Erugo animi, rubigo ingeni*: the rust of the soul, a plague, a hell itself, *Maximum animi nocentum*, Galen calls it. "As in a standing pool, worms and filthy creepers increase (et vitium capiunt un moveantur aqua, the water itself putresfies, and air likewise, if it be not continually stirred by the wind), so do evil and corrupt thoughts in an idle person," the soul is contaminated. In a commonwealth, where is no public enemy, there is likely civil wars, and they rage upon themselves: this body of ours, when it is idle, and knows not how to bestow itself, macerates and vexeth itself with cares, griefs, false fears, discontents, and suspicions; it tortures and preys upon his own bowels, and is never at rest. Thus much I dare boldly say, "He or she that is idle, be they of what condition they will, never so rich, so well allied, fortunate, happy, let them have all things in abundance and felicity that heart can wish and desire, all contentment, so long as he or she or they are idle, they shall never be pleased, never well in body and mind, but weary still, sickly still, vexed still, loathing still, weeping, sighing, grieving, suspecting, offended with the world, with every object, wishing themselves gone or dead, or else carried away with some foolish phantasy or other. And this is the true cause that so many great men, ladies, and gentlewomen, labour of this disease in country and city; for idleness is an appendix to nobility;"
they count it a disgrace to work, and spend all their days in sports, recreations, and pastimes, and will therefore take no pains; be of no vocation; they feed liberally, fare well, want exercise, action, employment (for to work, I say, they may not abide), and company to their desires, and theuce their bodies become full of gross humours, wind, crudities; their minds disequiet, dull, heavy, &c. care, jealousy, fear of some diseases, sullen fits, weeping fits seize too familiarly on them. For what will not fear and phantasy work in an idle body? what distempers will they not enue when the children of Israel murmured against Pharaoh in Egypt, he commanded his officers to double their task, and let them get straw themselves, and yet make their full number of bricks; for the sole cause why they mutiny, and are evil at ease, is, "they are idle." When you shall hear and see so many discontented persons in all places where you come, so many several grievances, unnecessary complaints, fear, suspicions, the best means to redress it is to set them a work, so to busy their minds: for the truth is, they are idle. Well they may build castles in the air for a time, and soothe themselves with phantastical and pleasant humours, but in the end they will prove as bitter as gall, they shall be still I say discontented, suspicious, fearful, jealous, sad, fretting and vexing of themselves; so long as they be idle, it is impossible to please them. Otho qui nescit uti, plus habet negativum quam qui negotium in negativum, as that Augustus could observe: He that knows not how to spend his time, hath more business, care, grief, anguish of mind, than he that is most busy in the midst of all his business, Otiosus animus nescit quid velit: An idle person (as he follows it) knows not when he is well, what he would have, or whither he would go. Quum illuc venit est illinc lubet, he is tired out with everything, dispossessed with all, weary of his life: Nec bene domi, nec militaris; neither at home nor abroad, errat, et propter vitam vestram, he wanders and lives besides himself. In a word, What the mischievous effects of laziness and idleness are, I do not find any where more accurately expressed, than in these verses of Philolaus in the 3 Comical Poet, which for their elegancy I will in part insert.

"Novarum sedium esse arbitror similis ego hominem, Quando hic natus est: Et regi argumenta dicam. Ades quando sunt ad amissum expolitae, Diocletianum fabrum, atque exemplum, expedit, &c. At ubi illo migravit quemquam hominindignissima, &c. Temporibus vestris, congressit tegulas, indigentisque, Patriciae aet operam fabri, &c. Dicam ut homines similis esse sediun arboremini, Faberi parentes fundamentum subtruentur librarum, Expeditum, docent litteras, nec parente sumptui. Ego autem sub fabrorm pestate frugi ful, Postquam autem migravi in ingenium meum, Perdidic operam fabrorum illic, oppidis, Veniet ignavia, ea milia tempustas fuit, Adventuque suo grandinem et imbreAttuulit, Illa milia virtutem detrarubavit, &c." "A young man is like a fair new house, the carpenter leaves it well built, in good repair of solid stuff; but a bad tenant lets it rain in, and for want of repairation, fall to decay, &c. Our parents, tutors, friends, spare no cost to bring us up in our youth, in all manner of virtuous education; but when we are left to ourselves, idleness as a tempest drives all virtuous motions out of our minds, et nihil sumus, eu a sudden, by sloth and such bad ways, we come to nought." 

Cousin german to idleness, and a conomitant cause, which goes hand in hand with it, is simia solitudo, too much solitariness, by the testimony of all physicians, cause and symptom both; but as it is here put for a cause it is

---

* Now this leg, now that arm, now their head, heart, &c.  
* Exod. v.  
* (For they cannot well tell what abuse them, or what they would have themselves) my heart, my head, my husband, my son, &c.  
* Prov. xviii.  
* Piprum dejict timor.  
* Heautontimorumenon.  
* Lib. 10. c. 10.  
* Fido, Montaltus, Mercurialis, &c.  
* Sec. 2.
either coact, enforced, or else voluntarily. Enforced solitariness is commonly seen in students, monks, friars, anchorites, that by their order and course of life must abandon all company, society of other men, and betake themselves to a private cell: Otoio superavitidioso seclusi, as Bale and Hospinian well term it, such as are the Carthusians of our time, that eat no flesh (by their order), keep perpetual silence, never go abroad. Such as live in prison, or some desert place, and cannot have company, as many of our country gentlemen do in solitary houses, they must either be alone without companions, or live beyond their means, and entertain all comers as so many hosts, or else converse with their servants and hinds, such as are unequal, inferior to them, and of a contrary disposition: or else as some do, to avoid solitariness, spend their time with lewd fellows in taverns, and in alehouses, and thence addict themselves to some unlawful disports, or dissolve courses. Divers again are cast upon this rock of solitariness for want of means, or out of a strong apprehension of some infirmity, disgrace, or through bashfulness, rudeness, simplicity, they cannot apply themselves to others' company. Nullum solum infelici gratius solitudine, ubi nullus sit qui miseriam exprobret; this enforced solitariness takes place, and produceth his effect soonest in such as have spent their time jovially, peradventure in all honest recreations, in good company, in some great family or populous city, and are upon a sudden confined to a desert country cottage far off, restrained of their liberty, and barred from their ordinary associates; solitariness is very irksome to such, most tedious, and a sudden cause of great inconvenience.

Voluntary solitariness is that which is familiar with melancholy, and gently brings on like a syren, a shoeing-horn, or some sphinx to this irrevocable gulf, 1 a primary cause, Piso calls it; most pleasant it is at first, to such as are melancholy given, to lie in bed whole days, and keep their chambers, to walk alone in some solitary grove, betwixt wood and water, by a brook side, to meditate upon some delightful subject, which shall affect them most; amabilis insania, et mentis gratissimus error: a most incomparable delight it is so to melancholize, and build castles in the air, to go smiling to themselves, acting an infinite variety of parts, which they suppose and strongly imagine they represent, or that they see acted or done: Blanda quidem ab initio, saith Lemnius, to conceive and meditate of such pleasant things, sometimes, "as present, past, or to come," as Rhasis speaks. So delightful are these toys at first, they could spend whole days and nights without sleep, even whole years alone in such contemplations, and fantastical meditations, which are like unto dreams, and they will hardly be drawn from them, or willingly interrupt, so pleasant their vain conceits are, that they hinder their ordinary tasks and necessary business, they cannot address themselves to them, or almost to any study or employment, these fantastical and bewitching thoughts so covertly, so feelingly, so urgently, so continually set upon, creep in, insinuate, possess, overtake, distract, and detain them, they cannot, I say, go about their more necessary business, stave off or extricate themselves, but are ever musing, melancholizing, and carried along, as he (they say) that is led round about a heath with a Puck in the night, they run earnestly on in this labyrinth of anxious and solicitous melancholy meditations, and cannot well or willingly refrain, or easily leave off, winding and unwinding themselves, as so many clocks, and still pleasing their humours, until at last the scene is turned upon a sudden, by some bad object, and they being now habituated to such vain meditations and solitary places, can endure no company, can ruminate of nothing but harsh and distasteful subjects. Fear, sorrow, suspicion, subrusticus

1 A quibus malum, velut à primaria causa, occasiorem nactum est.
2 Jucunda rerum praebens, prateritarum, et futurarum meditatio.
Causes of Melancholy.

Part. 1. Sec. 2.

pudor, discontent, cares, and weariness of life surprise them in a moment, and they can think of nothing else, continually suspecting; no sooner are their eyes open, but this infernal plague of melancholy seizeth on them, and terrifies their souls, representing some dismal object to their minds, which now by no means, no labour, no persuasions they can avoid, hæret lateri lethali arundo (the arrow of death still remains in the side), they may not be rid of it, they cannot resist. I may not deny but that there is some profitable meditation, contemplation, and kind of solitariness to be embraced, which the fathers so highly commended, Hierom, Chrysostom, Cyprian, Austin, in whole tracts, which Petrarch, Erasmus, Stella, and others, so much magnify in their books; a paradise, a heaven on earth, if it be used aright, good for the body, and better for the soul: as many of those old monks used it, to divine contemplations, as Stimulus a courtier in Adrian's time, Dioclesian the emperor, retired themselves, &c., in that sense, Vatia solus seít vivere, Vatia lives alone, which the Romans were wont to say, when they commended a country life. Or to the bettering of their knowledge, as Democritus, Cleanthus, and those excellent philosophers have ever done, to sequester themselves from the tumultuous world, or as in Pliny's villa Laurentana, Tully's Tusculan, Jovin's study, they might better vacare studiis et Dee, serve God, and follow their studies. Methinks, therefore, our too zealous innovators were not so well advised in that general subversion of abbeys and religious houses, promiscuously to fling down all; they might have taken away those gross abuses crept in amongst them, rectified such inconveniences, and not so far to have raved and raged against those fair buildings, and everlasting monuments of our forefathers' devotion, consecrated to pious uses; some monasteries and collegiate cells might have been well spared, and their revenues otherwise employed, here and there one, in good towns or cities at least, for men and women of all sorts and conditions to live in, to sequester themselves from the cares and tumults of the world, that were not desirous, or fit to marry; or otherwise willing to be troubled with common affairs, and know not well where to bestow themselves, to live apart in, for more convenience, good education, better company sake, to follow their studies (I say), to the perfection of arts and sciences, common good, and as some truly devoted monks of old had done, freely and truly to serve God. For these men are neither solitary, nor idle, as the poet made answer to the husbandman in Æsup, that objected idleness to him; he was never so idle as in his company; or that Scipio Africanus in Tully, Nun quam minus solus, quæm cum solus; nunquam minus otiosus, quam quum esset otiosus; never less solitary, than when he was alone, never more busy, than when he seemed to be most idle. It is reported by Plato in his dialogue de Amore, in that prodigious commendation of Socrates, how a deep meditation coming into Socrates' mind by chance, he stood still musing, eodem vestigio cogitabundus, from morning to noon, and when as then he had not yet finished his meditation, perstabil cogitans, he so continued till the evening, the soldiers (for he then followed the camp) observed him with admiration, and on set purpose watched all night, but he persevered immovable ad escortum solis, till the sun rose in the morning; and then saluting the sun, went his ways. In what humour constant Socrates did thus, I know not, or how he might be affected, but this would be pernicious to another man; what intricate business might so really possess him, I cannot easily guess; but this is otiosum otium, it is far otherwise with these men, according to Seneca, Omnia nobis mala solutio persuadet; this solitude undoeth us, pugnat cum vita sociali; 'tis a destructive solitariness. These men are devils alone, as the saying is, Homo

Facilis desensus Avernī: Sed revocare gradum, supersasque evadere aduras, His labor, hoc opus est. Virg.
Hieronymus ep. 72. dixit oppida et urbibus videre silvis terras carceres, solitudo Paradisum: solium scorpiolbus infectum, sacco amicta, humi cubans, aqua et herbis victianum, Romulis pretuli deliciis.
Offic. 3.
163

Mem. 2. Subs. 7.] Sleeping and Waking, Causes.

solum aut Deus, aut Daemon: a man alone, either a saint or a devil, mens ejus aut langescit, aut tumescit; and * Fec soli in this sense, woe be to him that is so alone. These wretches do frequently degenerate from men, and of sociable creatures become beasts, monsters, inhumane, ugly to behold, Misanthrophi; they do even loathe themselves, and hate the company of men, as so many Timons, Nebuchadnezzars, by too much indulging to these pleasing humours, and through their own default. So that which Mercurialis, consil. 11. sometimes expostulated with his melancholy patient, may be justly applied to every solitary and idle person in particular. *Natura de te videetur conqueri posse, &c. "Nature may justly complain of thee, that whereas she gave thee a good wholesome temperature, a sound body, and God hath given thee so divine and excellent a soul, so many good parts, and profitable gifts, thou hast not only contemned and rejected, but hast corrupted them, polluted them, overthrown their temperature, and perverted those gifts with riot, idleness, solitariness, and many other ways, thou art a traitor to God and nature, an enemy to thyself and to the world." Perditio tua ex te; thou hast lost thyself wilfully, cast away thyself, "thou thyself art the efficient cause of thine own misery, by not resisting such vain cogitations, but giving way unto them."

SUBSECT. VII.—Sleeping and Waking, Causes.

What I have formerly said of exercise, I may now repeat of sleep. Nothing better than moderate sleep, nothing worse than it, if it be in extremes, or unseasonably used. It is a received opinion, that a melancholy man cannot sleep overmuch; Somnus supra modum prodest, as an only antidote, and nothing offends them more, or causeth this malady sooner, than waking, yet in some cases sleep may do more harm than good, in that phlegmatic, swinish, cold, and sluggish melancholy which Melancthon speaks of; that thinks of waters, sighing most part, &c. * It dulls the spirits, if overmuch, and senses; fills the head full of gross humours; causeth distillations, rheums, great store of excrements in the brain, and all the other parts, as "Fuchsius speaks of them, that sleep like so many dormice. Or if it be used in the day-time, upon a full stomach, the body ill-composed to rest, or after hard meats, it increaseth fearful dreams, incubus, night walking, crying out, and much unquietness; such sleep prepares the body, as one observes, "to many perilous diseases." But, as I have said, waking overmuch, is both a symptom, and an ordinary cause. "It causeth dryness of the brain, frenzy, dotage, and makes the body dry, lean, hard, and ugly to behold," as *Lemnius hath it. "The temperature of the brain is corrupted by it, the humours adjust, the eyes made to sink into the head, choler increased, and the whole body inflamed:" and, as may be added out of Galen 3. de sanitate tuendâ, Avicenna 3. 1. "*It overthrows the natural heat, it causeth crudities, hurts concoction," and what not? Not without good cause therefore Crato consil. 21, lib. 2; Hildesheim, spicel. 2, de Delir. et Mania, Jaccinus, Arculanus on Rhasis, Guianerius and Mercurialis, reckon up this overmuch waking as a principal cause.

MEMB. III.

SUBSECT. I.—Passions and Perturbations of the Mind, how they cause Melancholy.

As that gymnosophist in \textit{Plutarch} made answer to Alexander (demanding which spake best), Every one of his fellows did speak better than the other: so I may say of these causes; to him that shall require which is the greatest, every one is more grievous than other, and this of passion the greatest of all. A most frequent and ordinary cause of melancholy, \textit{fulmen perturbationum} (Piccolomineus calls it) this thunder and lightning of perturbation, which causeth such violent and speedy alterations in this our microcosm, and many times subverts the good estate and temperature of it. For as the body works upon the mind by his bad humour, troubling the spirits, sending gross fumes into the brain, and so per consequens disturbing the soul, and all the faculties of it,

\begin{quote}
\textit{"* \textit{Corpus estum,}
Hesternis vitis animum quoque praegravit uns."}
\end{quote}

with fear, sorrow, &c., which are ordinary symptoms of this disease: so on the other side, the mind most effectually works upon the body, producing by his passions and perturbations miraculou alterations, as melancholy, despair, cruel diseases, and sometimes death itself. Insomuch that it is most true which Plato saith in his Charmides, \textit{omnia corporis meda ob anima\textit{ proceder}}; all the mischiefs of the body proceed from the soul: and Democritus in \textit{Plutarch} urgeth, \textit{Dennatium \textit{uri animam à corpore}}, if the body should in this behalf bring an action against the soul, surely the soul would be cast and convicted, that by her supine negligence had caused such inconveniences, having authority over the body, and using it for an instrument, as a smith does his hammer (saith \textit{Cyprian}), imputing all those vices and maladies to the mind. Even so do \textit{Phi}l	extit{o}stratus, \textit{non coinginatur corpus, nisi consentu animae}; the body is not corrupted, but by the soul. Lodovicus Vives will have such turbulent commotions proceed from ignorance and indiscretion. All philosophers impute the miseries of the body to the soul, that should have governed it better, by command of reason, and hath not done it. The Stoics are altogether of opinion (as \textit{Lipsius} and \textit{Piccolomineus} record), that a wise man should be \textit{sparsus}, without all manner of passions and perturbations whatsoever, as \textit{Seneca} reports of \textit{Cato}, the \textit{Greeks} of \textit{Socrates}, and \textit{To}, \textit{Aubanus} of a nation in \textit{Africa}, so free from passion, or rather so stupid, that if they be wounded with a sword, they will only look back. \textit{Lactantius \textit{instit.}} will exclude \textit{fear from a wise man:} others except all, some the greatest passions. But let them dispute how they will, set down in \textit{Thesi}, give precepts to the contrary; we find that of \textit{Lemius} true by common experience: \textit{No mortal man is free from these perturbations: or if he be so, sure he is either a god, or a block.} They are born and bred with us, and we have them from our parents by inheritance. \textit{A parentibus habemus malum hunc assem}, saith \textit{Pelezius}, \textit{Nascitur unà nobiscum, altitut}, 'tis propagated from Adam, Cain was melancholy, \textit{as} \textit{Austin} hath it, and who is not? Good discipline, education, philosophy, divinity (I cannot deny), may mitigate and restrain these passions in some few men at some times, but most part they dominate, and are so violent, \textit{as} a torrent (\textit{torrentem velut augere rupio}) bears down all before, and overflows his banks, \textit{sternit agros, sternit sata}, (lays wastethe
fields, prostrates the crops, they overwhelm reason, judgment, and pervert the temperature of the body; *Perturbationes aureae, nec audit curras habendas. Now such a man (saith* Austin) "that is so led, in a wise man's eye, is no better than he that stands upon his head." It is doubted by some, *Graviores morbi à perturbationibus, an ob humoribus, whether humours or perturbations cause the more grievous maladies. But we find that of our Saviour, Mat. xxvi. 41, most true, "The spirit is willing, the flesh is weak;" we cannot resist; and this of* Philo Judaeus, "Perturbations often offend the body, and are most frequent causes of melancholy, turning it out of the hinges of his health." Vives compares them to "Winds upon the sea, some only move as those great gales, but others turbulent quite overturn the ship." Those which are light, easy, and more seldom, to our thinking, do us little harm, and are therefore contemned of us: yet if they be reiterated, "as the rain (saith Austin) doth a stone, so do these perturbations penetrate the mind:" and (as one observes) "produce a habit of melancholy at the last, which having gotten the mastery in our souls, may well be called diseases."

How these passions produce this effect, *Agrippa hath handled at large, Occult. Philos. l. 11. c. 63. Cardan, l. 14. subtil. Lemnus, l. 1. c. 12. de occult. nat. mir. et lib. 1. cap. 16. Suarez, Met. disput. 18. sect. 1. art. 25. T. Bright, cap. 12. of his Melancholy Treatise. Wright the Jesuit in his book of the Passions of the Mind, &c. Thus in brief, to our imagination cometh by the outward sense or memory, some object to be known (residing in the foremost part of the brain), which he misconceiving or amplifying presently communicateth to the heart, the seat of all affections. The pure spirits forthwith flock from the brain to the heart, by certain secret channels, and signify what good or bad object was presented; *which immediately bends itself to prosecute, or avoid it; and withal, draweth with it other humours to help it: so in pleasure, concur great store of purer spirits; in sadness, much melancholy blood; in ire, choler. If the imagination be very apprehensive, intent, and violent, it sends great store of spirits to, or from the heart, and makes a deeper impression, and greater tumult, as the humours in the body be likewise prepared, and the temperature itself ill or well disposed, the passions are longer and stronger: so that the first step and fountain of all our grievances in this kind, is* lex imaginativa, which misinforming the heart, causeth all these distemperatures, alteration, and confusion of spirits and humours. By means of which, so disturbed, concoction is hindered, and the principal parts are much debilitated; as *Dr. Navarre well declared, being consulted by Montanus about a melancholy Jew. The spirits so confounded, the nourishment must needs be abated, had humours increased, crudities and thick spirits engendered with melancholy blood. The other parts cannot perform their functions, having the spirits drawn from them by vehement passion, but fail in sense and motion; so we look upon a thing, and see it not; hear, and observe not; which otherwise would much affect us, had we been free. I may therefore conclude with* Arnoldus, Maxima vis est phantasia, et haec unius erit, non autem corporis intemeratae, omnibus melancholie causis est abscendita: "Great is the force of imagination, and much more ought the cause of melancholy to be ascribed to this alone, than to...
Causes of Melancholy.

[Part 1. Sec. 2.]

the distemperater of the body." Of which imagination, because it hath so great a stroke in producing this malady, and is so powerful of itself, it will not be improper to my discourse, to make a brief digression, and speak of the force of it, and how it causeth this alteration. Which manner of digression howevert some dislike, as frivolous and impertinent, yet I am of * Beroaldus's opinion, "Such digressions do mightily delight and refresh a weary reader, they are like sauce to a bad stomach, and I do therefore most willingly use them."

SUBJECT II.—Of the force of Imagination.

What imagination is, I have sufficiently declared in my digression of the anatomy of the soul. I will only now point at the wonderful effects and power of it; which, as it is eminent in all, so most especially it rageth in melancholy persons, in keeping the species of objects so long, mistaking, amplifying them by continual and"strong meditation, until at length it produceth in some parties real effects, causeth this and many other maladies. And although this fantasy of ours be a subordinate faculty to reason, and should be ruled by it, yet in many men, through inward or outward distemperatures, defect of organs, which are unapt, or otherwise contaminated, it is likewise unapt, or hindered, and hurt. This we see verified in sleepers, which by reason of humours and concourse of vapours troubling the fantasy, imagine many times absurd and prodigious things, and in such as are troubled with incubus, or witch-ridden (as we call it), if they lie on their backs, they suppose an old woman rides, and sits so hard upon them, that they are almost stifled for want of breath; when there is nothing offends, but a concourse of bad humours, which trouble the fantasy. This is likewise evident in such as walk in the night in their sleep, and do strange feats: *these vapours move the fantasy, the fantasy the appetite, which moving the animal spirit causeth the body to walk up and down as if they were awake. Fracast. l. 3. de intellect. refers all ecstasies to this force of imagination such as lie whole days together in a trance: as that priest whom *Celsius speaks of, that could separate himself from his senses when he list, and lie like a dead man, void of life and sense. Cardau brags of himself, that he could do as much, and that when he list. Many times such men when they come to themselves, tell strange things of heaven and hell, what visions they have seen; as that St. Owen, in Matthew Paris, that went into St. Patrick's purgatory, and the monk of Evesham in the same author. Those common apparitions in Bede and Gregory, Saint Bridget's revelations, Wier. l. 3. de lamits, c. 11. Caesar Vanninus, in his Dialogues, &c. reduceth (as I have formerly said), with all those tales of witches' progresses, dancing, riding, transformations, operations, &c. to the force of imagination, and the "devil's illusions. The like effects almost are to be seen in such as are awake; how many chimeras, antics, golden mountains and castles in the air do they build unto themselves? I appeal to painters, mechanicians, mathematicians. Some ascribe all vices to a false and corrupt imagination, anger, revenge, lust, ambition, covetousness, which prefers falsehood before that which is right and good, deluding the soul with false shows and suppositions. *Bernardus Penottus will have heresy and superstition to proceed from this fountain; as he falsely imagineth, so he believeth; and as he conceiveth of it, so it must be,

* Solent hujusmodi egresiones favorablibile oblectare, et lectorem inasum jacunde deferovere, stomachumque nauseans, quodam quasi condimento reficere, et ego libenter excurrere. 
* Ab imaginatione oriitu affectiones, quibus anima compositor, aut turbata deturbatur, Jo. Sarsibus. Mafolog. lib. 4. c. 10. 
* Scalig. exercit. 
* Idem Nymanus erat de Imaginat. 
* Verbiis et actionibus consecrata daemonis pensive mollieres, qui iis ad opus suum utiur, et earum phantasiae regit, ductique ad loca sub lipis occadere, corpora vero earum sine sensu permanere, quae umbra cooperita diabolu, in nulli sint conspicuo, et post, umbra subiecit, propriis corporibus esse restituit. l. 3. c. 11. Wier. 
* Denario medico.
and it shall be, contra gentes, he will have it so. But most especially in passions and affections, it shows strange and evident effects: what will not a fearful man conceive in the dark? What strange forms of bugbears, devils, witches, goblins? Lavater imputes the greatest cause of spectrums, and the like apparitions, to fear, which above all other passions begets the strongest imagination (saith 1 Wierus), and so likewise, love, sorrow, joy, &c. Some die suddenly, as she that saw her son come from the battle at Cannae, &c. Jacob the patriarch, by force of imagination, made speckled lambs, laying speckled rods before his sheep. Persina that Æthiopian queen in Heliodorus, by seeing the picture of Perseus and Andromeda, instead of a blackamoor, was brought to bed of a fair white child. In imitation of whom belike, a hard-favoured fellow in Greece, because he and his wife were both deformed, to get a good brood of children, Elegantisissimas imaginines in thalamo collocavit, &c., hung the fairest pictures he could buy for money in his chamber, "That his wife by frequent sight of them, might conceive and bear such children." And if we may believe Bale, one of Pope Nicholas the Third’s concubines by seeing of a bear was brought to bed of a monster. "If a woman (saith 1 Lemnius), at the time of her conception think of another man present or absent, the child will be like him." Great-bellied women, when they long, yield us prodigious examples in this kind, as moles, warts, scars, harelips, monsters, especially caused in their children by force of a depraved fancy in them: Ipsam speciem quam animo effigiar, foetus induct: She imprints that stamp upon her child which she conceives unto herself. And therefore Lodovici Vives, lib. 2. de Christ. fœm. gives a special caution to great-bellied women, "That they do not admit such absurd conceits and cognitions, but by all means avoid those horrible objects, heard or seen, or filthy spectacles." Some will laugh, weep, sigh, groan, blush, tremble, sweat, at such things as are suggested unto them by their imagination. Aviceanna speaks of one that could cast himself into a palsy when he list; and some can imitate the tunes of birds and beasts that they can hardly be discerned: Dagebertus’ and Saint Francis’ scars and wounds, like those of Christ’s (if at the least any such were). 2 Agrippa supposed to have happened by force of imagination: that some are turned to wolves, from men to women, and women again to men (which is constantly believed) to the same imagination; or from men to asses, dogs, or any other shapes. 3 Wierus ascribes all those famous transformations to imagination; that in hydrophobia they seem to see the picture of a dog, still in their water, that melancholy men and sick men conceive so many fantastical visions, apparitions to themselves, and have such absurd apparitions, as that they are Kings, lords, cocks, bears, apes, owls; that they are heavy, light, transparent, great and little, senseless and dead (as shall be showed more at large, in our sections of symptoms), can be imputed to nought else, but to a corrupt, false, and violent imagination. It works not in sick and melancholy men only, but even most forcibly sometimes in such as are sound: it makes them suddenly sick, and alters their temperature in an instant. And sometimes a strong conceit or apprehension, as 4 Valesius proves, will take away diseases: in both kinds it will produce real effects. Men, if they see but another man tremble, giddily or sick of some fearful disease, their apprehension and fear is so strong in this kind, that they

1 Solet timor, præ omniibus affectibus, fortis imaginaciones gignere, post. amor, &c. 1. 2. e 8. 2 Ex viso urso, talem peperit. 3 Lib. 1. cap. 4. de occult. nat. mir. ali inter amplissimam et suavissimam cogitii de uno, aut alió absente, ejus effigies solet in fœtu discernere. 3 Quod non fœtū adeo munito unti, subit spirituum vibrations per nervos, quius matrix eccevum conjuncta est, imprimatur irregimine imaginatio? ut si imaginatur malum granatum, illusion in profecto factus simul hærent, infans editum spectat limbo biforme, et dissecato: Vehemens cogitatio movet rerum species. 3 Wier. lib. 3. cap. 3. 3 Ne dum uterum gestent, admittere absurdas cognitio, fact et visus, audituque seda et horrenda devinct. 3 Occult. Philos. lib. 1. cap. 64. 4 Lib. 3. sect. 3. 4 Lamius, cap. 10. 2 Agrippa, lib. 1. cap. 64. 6 Sect. 3. memh. 1. subsect. 3. 2 Malleson malefic. fol. 77. corpus mutari potest in diversa ægritudines, ex fœto apprehensione. 4 Fr. Vales. 1. 5. cont. 6. nonnullum quant etiam morbi diuturni consequuntur, quandoque curatur.
will have the same disease. Or if by some soothsayer, wise man, fortune-teller, or physician, they be told they shall have such a disease, they will so seriously apprehend it, that they will instantly labour of it. A thing familiar in China (saith Riccius the Jesuit), "If it be told them they shall be sick on such a day, when that day comes they will surely be sick, and will be so terribly afflicted, that sometimes they die upon it." Dr. Cotta in his discovery of ignorant practitioners of physic, cap. 8. hath two strange stories to this purpose, what fancy is able to do. The one of a parson's wife in Northamptonshire, An. 1607, that coming to a physician, and told by him that she was troubled with the sciatica, as he conjectured (a disease she was free from), the same night after her return, upon his words, fell into a grievous fit of a sciatica: and such another example he hath of another good wife, that was so troubled with the cramp, after the same manner she came by it, because her physician did but name it. Sometimes death itself is caused by force of fantasy. I have heard of one that coming by chance in company of him that was thought to be sick of the plague (which was not so) fell down suddenly dead. Another was sick of the plague with conceit. One seeing his fellow let blood falls down in a swoon. Another (saith Cardan out of Aristotle), fell down dead (which is familiar to women at any ghastly sight), seeing but a man hanged. A Jew in France (saith Lodovius Vives), came by chance over a dangerous passage or plank, that lay over a brook in the dark, without harm, the next day perceiving what danger he was in, fell down dead. Many will not believe such stories to be true, but laugh commonly, and deride when they hear of them; but let these men consider with themselves, as Peter Byarvs illustrates it, If they were set to walk upon a plank on high, they would be giddy, upon which they dare securely walk upon the ground. Many (saith Agrippa), "strong-hearted men otherwise, tremble at such sights, dazzle, and are sick, if they look but down from a high place, and what moves them but conceit?" As some are so molested by fantasy; so some again, by fancy alone, and a good conceit, are as easily recovered. We see commonly the tooth-ache, gout, falling-sickness, biting of a mad dog, and many such maladies, cured by spells, words, characters, and charms, and many green wounds by that now so much used Unguentum Armarius, magnetically cured, which Crollius and Goclenius in a book of late hath defended, Libavius in a just tract as stiffly contradicts, and most men controvert. All the world knows there is no virtue in such charms or cures, but a strong conceit and opinion alone, as Pomponatius holds, "which forcaeth a motion of the humours, spirits, and blood, which takes away the cause of the malady from the parts affected." The like we may say of our magical effects, superstitious cures, and such as are done by mountebanks and wizards. "As by wicked incredulity many men are hurt (so saith Wierus of charms, spells, &c.), we find in our experience, by the same means many are relieved." An empiric oftentimes, and a silly chirurgeon, doth more strange cures than a rational physician. Nymannus gives a reason, because the patient puts his confidence in him, "which Avicenna prefers before art, precepts, and all remedies whatsoever." Tis opinion alone (saith Cardan, that makes or mars physicians, and he doth the best cures, according to Hippocrates, in whom most trust. So
diversely doth this fantasy of ours affect, turn, and wind, so imperiously command our bodies, which as another "Proteus, or a chameleon, can take all shapes; and is of such force (as Ficinus adds), that it can work upon others, as well as ourselves." How can otherwise bear eyes in one man cause the like affection in another? Why doth one man's yawning "make another yawn? One man's pissing provoke a second many times to do the like? Why doth scraping of trenchers offend a third, or hacking of files? Why doth a carcase bleed when the murderer is brought before it, some weeks after the murder hath been done? Why do witches and old women fascinate and bewitch children: but as Wierus, Paracelsus, Cardan, Mizaldis, Valleriola, Caesar Vanninus, Campanella, and many philosophers think, the forcible imagination of the one party moves and alters the spirits of the other. Nay more, they can cause and cure not only diseases, maladies and several infirmities, by this means, as Avicenna de anim. l. 4. sect. 4. supposeth in parties remote, but move bodies from their places, cause thunder, lightning, tempests, which opinion Alkindus, Paracelsus, and some others, approve of. So that I may certainly conclude this strong conceit or imagination is astrum hominis, and the rudder of this our ship, which reason should steer, but overborne by fantasy cannot manage, and so suffers itself and this whole vessel of ours to be overruled, and often overturned. Read more of this in Wierus, l. 3. de Lamis, c. 8, 9, 10. Francisceus, Valesius med. controvers. l. 5. cont. 6. Marcellus Donatus, l. 2. c. 1. de hist. med. mirabil. Levinus Lemmns, de occult. nat. mir. l. 1. c. 12. Cardan, l. 18. de rerum var. Corn. Agrippa, de occult. philos. cap. 64, 65. Camerarius, l. 1 cent. cap. 54. horarum subchis. Nymannus, morat. de Imag. Laurentius, and him that is instar omnium, Fienus, a famous physician of Antwerp that wrote three books de viribus imaginationis. I have thus far digressed, because this imagination is the medium deferens of passions, by whose means they work and produce many times prodigious effects: and as the fantasy is more or less intended or remitted, and their humours disposed, so do perturbations move, more or less, and take deeper impression.

SUBSECT. III.—Division of Perturbations.

Perturbations and passions, which trouble the fantasy, though they dwell between the confines of sense and reason, yet they rather follow sense than reason, because they are drowned in corporeal organs of sense. They are commonly reduced into two inclinations, irascible and concupiscible. The Thomists subdivide them into eleven, six in the coveting, and five in the invading. Aristotle reduceth all to pleasure and pain, Plato to love and hatred, 
Vives to good and bad. If good, it is present, and then we absolutely joy and love; or to come, and then we desire and hope for it. If evil, we absolutely hate it; if present, it is sorrow; if to come, fear. These four passions Bernard compares "to the wheels of a chariot, by which we are carried in this world." All other passions are subordinate unto these four, or six, as some will: love, joy, desire, hatred, sorrow, fear; the rest, as anger, envy, emulation, pride, jealousy, anxiety, mercy, shame, discontent, despair, ambition, avarice, &c., are reducible unto the first; and if they be immoderate, they consume the spirits, and melancholy is especially caused by them. Some few discreet men there are, that can govern themselves, and curb in these inordinate affections, by religion, philosophy, and such divine precepts, of meekness, patience, and the like; but most part for want of government, out of indiscretion, ignorance, they suffer themselves wholly to be led by sense,
and are so far from repressing rebellious inclinations, that they give all encouragement unto them, leaving the reins, and using all provocations to further them: bad by nature, worse by art, discipline, custom, education, and a perverse will of their own, they follow on, wheresoever their unbridled affections will transport them, and do more out of custom, self-will, than out of reason. Contumax voluntas, as Melanchton calls it, malum facit: this stubborn will of ours perverts judgment, which sees and knows what should and ought to be done, and yet will not do it. Mancipia gude, slaves to their several lusts and appetites, they precipitate and plunge themselves into a labyrinth of cares blinded with lust, blinded with ambition; "They seek that at God's hands which they may give unto themselves, if they could but refrain from those cares and perturbations, wherewith they continually macerate their minds."

But giving way to these violent passions of fear, grief, shame, revenge, hatred, malice, &c., they are torn in pieces, as Acteon was with his dogs, and crucify their own souls.

**SUBSECT. IV.—Sorrow a cause of Melancholy.**

**Sorrow, Insanus dolor.** In this catalogue of passions, which so much torment the soul of man, and cause this malady (for I will briefly speak of them all, and in their order), the first place in this inscrutable appetite, may justly be challenged by sorrow. An inseparable companion, "The mother and daughter of melancholy, her epitome, symptom, and chief cause:" as Hippocrates hath it, they beget one another, and tread in a ring, for sorrow is both cause and symptom of this disease. How it is a symptom shall be shown in its place. That it is a cause all the world acknowledgeth, Dolor nonnullus insanus causa fuit, et aliorum morborum insanabilium, saith Plutarch to Apollonius; a cause of madness, a cause of many other diseases, a sole cause of this mischief, Lemniius calls it. So doth Rhasis, cont. l. 1. tract. 9. Giannerius, Tract. 15, c. 5. And if it take root once, it ends in despair, as Felix Plater observes, and as in 'Cebes' table may well be coupled with it. Chrysostom in his seventeenth epistle to Olympia, describes it to be a cruel torture of the soul, a most inexplicable grief, poisoned worm, consuming body and soul, and gnawing the very heart, a perpetual executioner, continual night, profound darkness, a whirlwind, a tempest, an ague not appearing, heating worse than any fire, and a battle that hath no end. It crucifies worse than any tyrant; no torture, no strappado, no bodily punishment is like unto it. "This the eagle without question which the poets feigned to gnaw Prometheus heart, and "no heaviness is like unto the heaviness of the heart," Eccles. xxv. 15, 16. "Every perturbation is a misery, but grief a cruel torment," a dominating passion: as in old Rome, when the Dictator was created, all inferior magistracies ceased; when grief appears, all other passions vanish. "It dries up the bones," saith Solomon, ch. 17. Prov., "makes them hollow-eyed, pale, and lean, furrow-faced, to have dead looks, wrinkled brows, shrivelled cheeks,

---

1 Malā consuetudine depravatur Innovum ne bene faciat. Prosper Calenius, l. 1. de atrā bile. Plura factum hominēs est consuetudine, quam est ratione. A teneris assueciter multum est. Vide meliore proboque, detiora sequor. Ovid. 2 Nemo lexitter nīsi se ēscipere. 3 Multi se iniquitātēm precipitant ambitiōne et cupiditātibus exsecrātis, non intellexant se illud ad diēs pēteris, quod aliique se velint praestare postimī, si curis et perturbationibus, quibus assimilē se maerentur, imperare vellent. 4 Tanto studio misericordiōs causas, et alimenta dolorumque viribus, vitamque secus felicissimam, tristes et misericordium effectīus. Petarch. proem. 5 Remediis, &c. 61: Retor et nostri, si sūn perseverent, causas et solores atī humōris sunt, et in circulum se proserant. 7 Tit. Apōrhis. 22. 1. 6. Idem Montalvius cap. xix. Victorius Faverinus pract. imag. 8 Multi ex morore et metu huc delapsi sunt. Lenn. lib. 1. cap. 16. 9 Multius et triāstis faciunt accedere melancholiām, cap. 3. de mentis alien. Ita altiss radices aget, in veram famam dégenerat melancoliām et in desperacionem destinat. 10 Ille luctus, que vero despēratiō sinum potuit. 11 Animalum crudelēs tormentūm, dolor inestimabīlis, tinea, no solum ossa sed omnia pertingant, pereunt inter se, virent animē commōnē, juxā nos, et tenebuntur profundēs, temperātus et turbō et fēbris non apparet, omnia ignis validīs incendēbant; longitor, et pugnas fœnīc non habēbat—crūcem circumferent dolor, faciemque omni tyranno cruciēlōrem prae se fert. 12 Nat. Comus Mythol. 1. c. 6. 13 Tulli S. Tusce. omnis perturbation miseria et carnisinnima est dolor.
dry bodies, and quite perverts their temperature that are misaffected with it. As Eleonora, that exiled mournful duchess (in our English Ovid), laments to her noble husband Humphrey, duke of Glocester,

"Sawest thou those eyes in whose sweet cheerful look
Duke Humphry once such joy and pleasure took,
Sorrow hath so despised me of all grace,
Thou couldst not say this was my Elmore's face.
Like a foul Gorgon," &c.

"'t homits concoction, refrigerates the heart, takes away stomach, colour, and sleep, thickens the blood (Fernelius l. 1. cap. 18, de morb. causis), contaminates the spirits." (Piso.) Overthrows the natural heat, perverts the good estate of body and mind, and makes them weary of their lives, cry out, howl and roar for very anguish of their souls. David confessed as much, Psalm xxxviii. 8, "I have roared for the very disquietness of my heart." And Psalm cxix. 4 part, 4 v. "My soul melteth away for very heaviness," v. 83, "I am like a bottle in the smoke." Antiochus complained that he could not sleep, and that his heart fainted for grief. ¹Christ himself, Vir dolorum, out of an apprehension of grief, did sweat blood, Mark xiv. "His soul was heavy to the death, and no sorrow was like unto his." Crato consil. 21, l. 2, gives instance in one that was so melancholy by reason of grief; and Montanus consil. 30, in a noble matron, "that had no other cause of this mischief." I. S. D. in Hildesheim, fully cured a patient of his that was much troubled with melancholy, and for many years, "but afterwards, by a little occasion of sorrow, he fell into his former fits, and was tormented as before." Examples are common, how it causeth melancholy, ²desperation, and sometimes death itself; for (Eccles. xxxviii. 15), "Of heaviness comes death; worldly sorrow causeth death." ²2 Cor. vii. 10, Psalm xxxi. 10. "My life is wasted with heaviness, and my years with mourning." Why was Heecuba said to be turned to a dog? Niobe into a stone? but that for grief she was senseless and stupid. Severus the Emperor ³died for grief; and how ⁴many myriads besides? Tanta illi est feritas, tanta est insanitas lactus. ¹Melanchon gives a reason of it, "the gathering of much melancholy blood about the heart, which collection extinguisheth the good spirits, or at such dulleth them, sorrow strikes the heart, makes it tremble and pine away, with great pain; and the black blood drawn from the spleen, and diffused under the ribs, on the left side, makes those perilous hypochondriacal convulsions, which happen to them that are troubled with sorrow."

SUBSECT. V.—Fear, a Cause.

Cousin-german to sorrow, is fear, or rather a sister, fidus Achates, and continual companion, an assistant and a principal agent in procuring of this mischief; a cause and symptom as the other. In a word, as ¹Virgil of the Harpies, I may justly say of them both,

"Tristis haud illis monstrum, nec savior uula
Pestes et ira Demn stygisis see extulit undis." | "A saddler monster, or more cruel plague so fell,
Or vengeance of the gods, ne'er came from Styx or Hell."

This foul fiend of fear was worshipped heretofore as a god by the Lace-

¹ M. Drayton in his Her. ep. ³Crato consil. 21. lib. 2. mestaitia universam in frigidat corpus, calorem innamum extinguit, appetitum appellat. ²Cor refrigerat tristitia, spiritus exsiccatur, inmutatque corcem obturat, vigilitas inducit, concoctio niam labefacit, sanguinem increasset, exageratque melancholia: um succum. ³ Spiritus et sanguis hoc contaminatn. Piso. ⁴Marc. vi. 16. 11. ¹ Mororae maceror, marcesco et consenesco miser, ossa atque pelles cura misera macritudine. Plant. ² Nalam incaecam et acutam a tristitia sola. ³ Hildesheim, spicel. 2. de melancholia, morore animi postea accedente, in priora symptomata incidit. ⁴Vives 3. de anima, c. de morore. Sabin. in Ovid. "Herodian. 1. 3. mororae magis quam morore consumptus est. ¹ Bothwellis attributis obit. Brizarrus Genenalis hist. &c. ² So great is the fierceness and madness of melancholy. ³ Mestitia quo quasi percutere constringitur, tremit et languescit cum aere sensu doloris. In tristitia cor fugiens attrahit ex Spino lentum humorem melancholicum, qui effusus sub costis in sinistro latere hypochondriacos flatus hucit, quod sepe acciclit quis diurna cura et mestaitia confidentur. Melanchon. ¹Lib. 3.Æn. 4.
Causes of Melancholy.

[Part. 1. Sec. 2.]

demonians, and most of those other torturing affections, and so was sorrow amongst the rest, under the name of Angerona Dea, they stood in such awe of them, as Austin do Civit. Dei, lib. 4. cap. 8. noteth out of Varro, fear was commonly "adored and painted in their temples with a lion's head; and as Macrobius records l. 10. Saturniunm; "in the calends of January, Angerona had her holy day, to whom in the temple of Volupia, or goddess of pleasure, their augurs and bishops did yearly sacrifice; that, being propitiions to them, she might expel all cares, anguish, and vexation of the mind for that year following." Many lamentable effects this fear causeth in men, as to be red, pale, trembling, sweat, it makes sudden cold and heat to come over all the body, palpitation of the heart, syncope, &c. It amazeth many men that are to speak, or show themselves in public assemblies, or before some great personages, as Tully confessed of himself, that he trembled still at the beginning of his speech; and Demosthenes, that great orator of Greece, before Philippus. It confounds voice and memory, as Lucian wittingly brings in Jupiter Tragedus, so much afraid of his auditory, when he was to make a speech to the rest of the gods, that he could not utter a ready word, but was compelled to use Mercury's help in prompting. Many men are so amazed and astonished with fear, they know not where they are, what they say, what they do, and that which is worse, it tortures them many days before with continual affrights and suspicion. It hinders most honourable attempts, and makes their hearts ache, sad and heavy. They that live in fear are never free, resolve, secure, never merry, but in continual pain: that, as Vives truly said, Nulla est miseria major quam metus, no greater misery, no rack, nor torture like unto it, ever suspicious, anxious, solicitous, they are childishly drooping without reason, without judgment, especially if some terrible object be offered, as Plutarch hath it. It causeth oftentimes sudden madness, and almost all manner of diseases, as I have sufficiently illustrated in my digression of the force of imagination, and shall do more at large in my section of terrors. Fear makes our imagination conceive what it list, invites the devil to come to us, as Agrippa and Cardan avouch, and tyrannizeth over our fantasy more than all other affections, especially in the dark. We see this verified in most men, as Lavater saith, Quae metuunt, fingunt; what they fear they conceive, and feign unto themselves; they think they see goblins, hags, devils, and many times become melancholy thereby. Cardan subt. lib. 18. hath an example of such an one, so caused to be melancholy (by sight of a bagbear) all his life after. Augustus Caesar durst not sit in the dark, nisi aliquid assidenter, saith Suetonius, Non quum tendris evigilavit. And tis strange what women and children will conceive unto themselves, if they go over a church-yard in the night, lie, or be alone in a dark room, how they sweat and tremble on a sudden. Many men are troubled with future events, foreknowledge of their fortunes, destinies, as Severus the emperor, Adrian and Domitian, Quod sciret ultimum vitae diem, saith Suetonius, valde sollicitus, much tortured in mind because he foreknew his end; with many such, of which I shall speak more opportunely in another place. Anxiety, mercy, pity, indignation, &c. and such fearful branches derived from these two stems of fear and sorrow, I voluntarily omit; read more of them in Carolus Pascalianus, Dandinus, &c.
SHAME and Disgrace, Causes.

SHAME and disgrace cause most violent passions and bitter pangs. Ob pudore et dilectus publicum, ob errorem commissum sapor movet generosi animi (Felix Plater lib. 3. de oblacnat. mentis): Generous minds are often moved with shame, to despair for some public disgrace. And he, saith Philo lib. 2. de provid. dei, "that subjects himself to fear, grief, ambition, shame, is not happy, but altogether miserable, tortured with continual labour, care, and misery." It is as forcible a batterer as any of the rest: "Many men neglect the tumults of the world, and care not for glory, and yet they are afraid of infamy, repulse, disgrace, (Tul. offic. l. 1) they can severely contain pleasure, bear grief indifferently, but they are quite "battered and broken with reproach and obloquy;" (siquidem vita et fama pari passu ambulant) and are so dejected many times for some public injury, disgrace, as a box on the ear by their inferior, to be overcome of their adversary, foiled in the field, to be out in a speech, some foul fact committed or disclosed, &c. that they dare not come abroad all their lives after, but melancholize in corners, and keep in holes. The most generous spirits are most subject to it; Spiritus altos fragint et generosos: Hieronymus. Aristotle, because he could not understand the motion of Euripus, for grief and shame drowned himself: Celius Rodiginus antiquar. lec. lib. 29. cap. 8. Homerus pudore consumptus, was swallowed up with this passion of shame "because he could not unfold the fisherman's riddle." Sophocles killed himself, "for that a tragedy of his was hissed off the stage:" Valer. Max. lib. 9. cap. 12. Lucretia stabbed herself, and so did Cleopatra, "when she saw that she was reserved for a triumph, to avoid the infamy." Antonius the Roman, "after he was overcome of his enemy, for three days' space sat solitary in the fore-part of the ship, abstaining from all company, even of Cleopatra herself, and afterwards for very shame butchered himself," Plutarch vita ejus. "Apollonius Rhodius k wilfully banished himself, forsaking his country, and all his dear friends, because he was out in reciting his poems," Plinius lib. 7. cap. 23. Ajax ran mad, because his arms were adjudged to Ulysses. In China 'tis an ordinary thing for such as are excluded in those famous trials of theirs, or should take degrees, for shame and grief to lose their wits, Mat. Riccius expedit. ad Sinas, l. 3. c. 9. Hostratus the friar took that book which Reuclin had writ against him, under the name of Epist. obscurorum virorum, so to heart, that for shame and grief he made away himself, Jovius in eloqius. A grave and learned minister, and an ordinary preacher at Alemar in Holland, was (one day as he walked in the fields for his recreation) suddenly taken with a lax or looseness, and thereupon compelled to retire to the next ditch; but being "surprised at unawares, by some gentlewomen of his parish wandering that way, was so abashed, that he did never after show his head in public, or come into the pulpit, but pined away with melancholy: (Pet. Forestus med. observat. lib. 10. observat. 12.) So shame amongst other passions can play his prize.

I know there be many base, impudent, brazen-faced rogues, that will Nulla pallescere culpä, be moved with nothing, take no infamy or disgrace to heart,

* Qui mente subjicit timoris dominationi, cupiditatis, doloris, ambitionis, pudoris, felix non est, sed omnin miser, assiduis laboribus torquetur et miseria.
* Nulli contemnunt mundi starepitu, renum pro nillo gloriam, sed timent infantiam, offendentes, reprehens.
* Velipedatam severissimam contemnunt, id dolore sunt molleres, gloriarm neglectuar, franguntur infania.
Causes of Melancholy.

[Part 1. Sec. 2.]

laugh at all; let them be proved perjured, stigmatized, convict rogues, thieves, traitors, lose their ears, be whipped, branded, carted, pointed at, hissed, reviled, and derided with * Ballio the Bawd in Plautus, they rejoice at it, Cantores pro-

bros; "babæ and bombax," what care they? We have too many such in our times,

Yet a modest man, one that hath grace, a generous spirit, tender of his repu-
tation, will be deeply wounded, and so grievously affected with it, that he had rather give myriads of crowns, lose his life, than suffer the least defamation of honour, or blot in his good name. And if so be that he cannot avoid it, as a nightingale, Quæ cantando victa moritur (saith * Mızaldus), dies for shame if another bird sing better, he languisheth and pineth away in the anguish of his spirit.

SUBSECT. VII.—Envy, Malice, Hatred, Causes.

Envy and malice are two links of this chain, and both, as Guianerius Tract.

15. cap. 2. proves out of Galen 3. Aphorism. com. 22. "*cause this malady by themselves, especially if their bodies be otherwise disposed to melancholy." "Tis Valescns de Taranta, and Felix Platerus' observation, "Envy so gnaws many men's hearts, that they become altogether melancholy." And therefore belike Solomon, Prov. xiv. 13. calls it, "the rotting of the bones," Cyprian, vulnus occulit;

The Sicilian tyrants never invented the like torment. It crucifies their souls, withers their bodies, makes them hollow-eyed, * pale, lean, and ghastly to behold, Cyprian ser. 2. de zelo et livore. "*As a moth gnaws a garment, so," saith Chrysostom, "doth envy consume a man; to be a living anatomy: a skeleton, to be a lean and *pale carcass, quickened with a "fiend," Hall in Charact. for so often as an envious wretch sees another man prosper, to be enriched, to thrive, and be fortunate in the world, to get honours, offices, or the like, he repines and grieves,

The Sicilian tyrants never invented the like torment. It crucifies their souls, withers their bodies, makes them hollow-eyed, * pale, lean, and ghastly to behold, Cyprian ser. 2. de zelo et livore. "*As a moth gnaws a garment, so," saith Chrysostom, "doth envy consume a man; to be a living anatomy: a skeleton, to be a lean and *pale carcass, quickened with a "fiend," Hall in Charact. for so often as an envious wretch sees another man prosper, to be enriched, to thrive, and be fortunate in the world, to get honours, offices, or the like, he repines and grieves,

He tortures himself if his equal, friend, neighbour, be preferred, commended, do well; if he understand of it, it galls him afresh; and no greater pain can come to him than to hear of another man's well-doing; *tis a dagger at his heart every such object. He looks at him as they that fell down in Lucian's rock of honour, with an envious eye, and will damage himself, to do another a mischief: Atque cadet subito, dum super hoste cadat. As he did in Âsop, lose one eye willingly, that his fellow might lose both, or that rich man in * Quintilian that poisoned the flowers in his garden, because his neighbour's bees should get no more honey from them. *His whole life is sorrow, and every word he speaks a satire: nothing fats him but other men's ruins. For to speak in a word, envy is nought else but Tristitia de bonis alienis, sorrow for

other men's good, be it present, past, or to come: et gaudium de adversis, and joy at their harms, opposite to mercy, which grieves at other men's mischances, and misaffect the body in another kind; so Damascus defines it, lib. 2. de orthodox.f. Thomas 2. 2. quest. 36. art. 1. Aristotle l. 2. Rhet. c. 4. et 10., Plato Philebo., Tully 3. Tusc. Greg. Nic. l. de virt. animae, c. 12. Basil. de Invidia, Pindarus Od. I. ser. 5. and we find it true. 'Tis a common disease, and almost natural to us, as 'Tacitus holds, to envy another man's prosperity. And 'tis in most men an incurable disease. "I have read," saith Marcus Aurelius, "Greek, Hebrew, Chaldee authors; I have consulted with many wise men for a remedy for envy, I could find none, but to renounce all happiness, and to be a wretch, and miserable for ever." 'Tis the beginning of hell in this life, and a passion not to be excused. 2. Every other sin hath some pleasure annexed to it, or will admit of an excuse; envy alone wants both. Others sin without, but for awhile; the gut may be satisfied, anger remits, hatred hath an end, envy never ceaseth." Cardan lib. 2. de sop. Divine and human examples are very familiar; you may run and read them, as that of Saul and David, Cain and Abel, angebat illum non proprium peccatum, sed fratribus perperias, saith Theodoret, it was his brother's good fortune galled him. Rachel envied her sister, being barren, Gen. xxx. Joseph's brethren, him, Gen. xxxvii. David had a touch of this vice, as he confesseth, Ps. 37. 'Jeremy and Habakkuk, they repined at others' good, but in the end they corrected themselves. Ps. 75. "fret not thyself," &c. Domitian spited Agricola for his worth, "that a private man should be so much glorified." Cecina was envied of his fellow-citizens, because he was more richly adorned. But of all others, "women are most weak, ob pulchritudinem invide sunt femeae (Musaeus) aut amat, aut odit, nihil est tertium (Granatensis). They love or hate, no medium amongst them. Implacabiles plerunque tesa mulieres, Agrippina like, "A woman if she see her neighbour more neat or elegant, richer in tires, jewels, or apparel is enraged, and like a lioness sets upon her husband, rails at her, scolds at her, and cannot abide her;" so the Roman ladies in Tacitus did at Solonica, Cecina's wife, "because she had a better horse, and better furniture, as if she had hurt them with it; they were much offended. In like sort our gentlewomen do at their usual meetings, one repines or scolds at another's bravery and happiness. Myrsine, an Attic wench, was murdered of her fellows', "because she did excel the rest in beauty," Constantine Agricult. l. 11. c. 7. Every village will yield such examples.

Subsect. VIII.—Emulation, Hatred, Faction, Desire of Revenge, Causes.

Out of this root of envy 'spring those feral branches of faction, hatred, livor, emulation, which cause the like grievances, and are, servire animae, the saws of the soul, * consternationis pleni affectus, affections of full desperate amazement; or as Cyprian describes emulation, it is "a moth of the soul, a consumption

to make another man's happiness his misery, to torture, crucify, and execute himself, to eat his own heart. Meat and drink can do such men no good, they do always grieve, sigh, and groan, day and night without intermission, their breast is torn asunder:’ and a little after, ‘‘Whomsoever he is whom thou dost emulate and envy, he may avoid thee, but thou canst neither avoid him nor thyself; whereasover thou art he is with thee, thine enemy is ever in thy breast, thy destruction is within thee, thou art a captive, bound hand and foot, as long as thou art malicious and envious, and canst not be comforted. It was the devil’s overthrow;’’ and whereasover thou art thoroughly affected with this passion, it will be thine. Yet no perturbation so frequent, no passion so common.

A potter emulates a potter;  
One smith envies another:  
A beggar emulates a beggar;  
A singing man his brother.

Every society, corporation, and private family is full of it, it takes hold almost of all sorts of men, from the prince to the ploughman, even amongst gossip it is to be seen, scarce three in a company but there is siding, faction, emulation, between two of them, some simulac, jar, private grudge, heart-burning in the midst of them. Scarce two gentlemen dwell together in the country (if they be not near kin or linked in marriage), but there is emulation betwixt them and their servants, some quarrel or some grudge betwixt their wives or children, friends and followers, some contention about wealth, gentry, precedence, &c., by means of which, like the frog in *Aesop, “that would swell till she was as big as an ox, burst herself at last;’’ they will stretch beyond their fortunes, callings, and strive so long that they consume their substance in law-suits, or otherwise in hospitality, feasting, fine clothes, to get a few bombast titles, for aemulatio pavertata laborans omnes, to outbrave one another, they will tire their bodies, macerate their souls, and through contentions or mutual invitations beggar themselves. Scarce two great scholars in an age, but with bitter invectives they fall foul one on the other, and their adherents; Scotists, Thomists, Reals, Nominals, Plato and Aristotle, Galenists and Paracelsians, &c., it holds in all professions.

Honest *emulation in studies, in all callings is not to be disliked, *tis ingeniorum cos, as one calls it, the whetstone of wit, the nurse of wit and valour, and those noble Romans out of this spirit did brave exploits. There is a modest ambition, as Themistocles was roused up with the glory of Miltiades; Achilles’ trophies moved Alexander,  

—Ambire semper, stulta confidentia est,  
—Ambire munquam, desce arrogantia est.”

*Tis a sluggish humour not to emulate or to sue at all, to withdraw himself, neglect, refrain from such places, honours, offices, through sloth, niggardliness, fear, bashfulness, or otherwise, to which by his birth, place, fortunes, education, he is called, apt, fit, and well able to undergo; but when it is immoderate, it is a plague and a miserable pain. What a deal of money did Henry VIII. and Francis I. king of France, spend at that *famous interview? and how many vain courtiers, seeking each to outbrave other, spent themselves, their livelihood and fortunes, and died beggars? *Adrian the emperor was so galled with it, that he killed all his equals; so did Nero. This passion made *Dionysius the tyrant banish Plato and Philoxenus the poet, because they did excel and eclipse his glory, as he thought; the Romans exile Coriolanus, con-

1. Quisquis est ille quem ammiraria, cui invides is te subterfugere potest, ut tu non te ubi baneque fugeris, adversarius tuum teem est, hostis tuus semper in pecore tuo est, pernicius tuus inclus, ligatus es, victus, vel dominata captivus: nec solida tibi nilla subvenient: hinc diabolus intima statum muni, et periti primus, et perdit, Cyprian ser. 2. de solo et livore.  
3. Rana cupida aquanidi boren, se distendebat, &c.  
5. Grotius. Epig. lib. 1. “Ambition always, is a foolish confidence, never, a slothful arrogance.”  
6. Anna 274, between Arde and Quine.  
7. Spartan.  
8. Plutarch.
fine Camillus, murder Scipio; the Greeks by ostracism to expel Aristides, Nicias, Alcibiades, imprisonment Theseus, make away Phocion, &c. When Richard I. and Philip of France were fellow soldiers together, at the siege of Acon in the Holy Land, and Richard had approved himself to be the more valiant man, insomuch that all men's eyes were upon him, it so galled Philip, Francem urebat Regis victoria, saith mine *author, tam agré forebat Richardi gloriwm, ut carpsere dicta, calumniari facta; that he cavilled at all his proceedings, and fell at length to open defiance; he could contain no longer, but hasting home, invaded his territories, and professed open war. "Hatred stirs up contention," Prov. x. 12, and they break out at last into immortal enmity, into virulence, and more than Vatianin hate and rage; "they persecute each other, their friends, followrs, and all their posterity, with bitter taunts, hostile wars, scurrile invective, libels, calumnies, fire, sword, and the like, and will not be reconciled. Witness that Guelph and Ghibelline faction in Italy; that of the Adurni and Fregosi in Genoa; that of Caeius Papirius, and Quintus Fabius in Rome; Caesar and Pompey; Orleans and Burgundy in France; York and Lancaster in England: yea, this passion so rageth "many times, that it subverts not men only, and families, but even populous cities, * Carthage and Corinth can witness as much, nay flourishing kingdoms are brought into a wilderness by it. This hatred, malice, faction, and desire of revenge, invented first all those racks and wheels, strapadoes, brazen bulls, feral engines, prisons, inquisitions, severe laws to macerate and torment one another. How happy might we be, and end our time with blessed days and sweet content, if we could contain ourselves, and, as we ought to do, put up injuries, learn humility, meekness, patience, forget and forgive, as in "God's word we are enjoined, compose such final controversies amongst ourselves, moderate our passions in this kind, "and think better of others," as "Paul would have us, " than of ourselves: be of like affection one towards another, and not avenge ourselves, but have peace with all men." But being that we are so peevish and perverse, insolent and proud, so factious and seditious, so malicious and envious; we do invicem angariare, malu and vex one another, torture, disquiet, and precipitate ourselves into that gulf of woes and cares, aggravate our misery and melancholy, heap upon us hell and eternal damnation.

**SUBSECT. IX.—Anger, a Cause.**

**Anger,** a perturbation, which carries the spirits outwards, preparing the body to melancholy, and madness itself: *Ira furor brevis est,* "anger is temporary madness;" and as *Picolomineus accounts it, one of the three most violent passions. *Areteus sets it down for an especial cause (so both Seneca, op. 18. l. 1.) of this malady. *Magninus gives the reason, "Ec frequenti ilra supra modum calefuit;" it overheats their bodies, and if it be too frequent, it breaks out into manifest madness, saith St. Ambrose. "Tis a known saying. *Furus fit luna sequi patientia, the most patient spirit that is, if he be often provoked, will be incensed to madness; it will make a devil of a saint: and therefore Basil (belike) in his *Homily de Ira, calls it tenbras rationis, morbum animae, et daemonum pessimum; the darkening of our understanding, and a bad angel. *Luecin, in *Abdicato, tom. 1. will have this passion to work this effect, especially in old.

---

men and women. "Anger and calumny (saith he) trouble them at first, and after a while break out into madness: many things cause fury in women, especially if they love or hate overmuch, or envy, be much grieved or angry; these things by little and little lead them on to this malady." From a disposition they proceed to an habit, for there is no difference between a mad man, and an angry man, in the time of his fit; anger, as Lactantius describes it. 

L. de Ira Dei, ad Donatum, c. 5. is "Saea animi tempestas, &c., a cruel tempest of the mind; "making his eyes sparkle fire, and stare, teeth gnash in his head, his tongue stutter, his face pale, or red, and what more filthy imitation can be of a mad man?"

"Ora tument ira, fervescat sanguine venas, 
Lamina Gorgonius sawius angus mecant."

They are void of reason, inexorable, blind, like beasts and monsters for the time, say and do they know not what, curse, swear, rail, fight, and what not? How can a mad man do more? as he said in the comedy, "Iracundia non sum opud me, I am not mine own man. If these fits be immoderate, continue long, or be frequent, without doubt they provoke madness. Montanus, consi. 21, had a melancholy Jew to his patient, he ascribes this for a principal cause: "Irascebatur lexibus de causis, he was easily moved to anger. Ajax had no other beginning of his madness; and Charles the Sixth, that lunatic French king, fell into this misery, out of the extremity of his passion, desire of revenge and malice, "incensed against the duke of Britain, he could neither eat, drink, nor sleep for some days together, and in the end, about the calends of July, 1392, he became mad upon his horseback, drawing his sword, striking such as came near him promiscuously, and so continued all the days of his life, Œmil. lib. 10. Gal. hist. Aëigesippus de excid. urbis Hieros. l. 1. c. 37. hath such a story of Herod, that out of an angry fit, became mad, "leaping out of his bed, he killed Josippus, and played many such bedlam pranks, the whole court could not rule him for a long time after: sometimes he was sorry and repented, much grieved for that he had done, Postquam deferbuit ira, by and by outrageous again. In hot choleric bodies, nothing so soon causeth madness, as this passion of anger, besides many other diseases, as Pelesins observes, cap. 21. l. 1. de hum. affect. causis; Sanguinem immunuit, fecit auget: and as "Valiosus controvertos, Med. contron. lib. 5. contro. 8. many times kills them quite out. If this were the worst of this passion, it were more tolerable, "but it ruins and subverts whole towns, cities, families and kingdoms;" Nulla pestis humana generi pluris stetit, saith Seneca, de Ira, lib. 1. No plague hath done mankind so much harm. Look into our histories, and you shall almost meet with no other subject, but what a company "of hare-brains have done in their rage. We may do well therefore to put this in our procession amongst the rest; "From all blindness of heart, from pride, vain-glory, and hypocrisy, from envy, hatred and malice, anger, and all such pestiferous perturbations, good Lord deliver us."

SUBJECT. X.—Discontents, Cares, Miseries, &c. Causes.

Discontents, cares, crosses, miseries, or whatsoever it is, that shall cause any molestation of spirits, grief, anguish, and perplexity, may well be reduced to this head (preposterously placed here in some men's judgments they may seem), yet in that Aristotle in his "Rhetoric defines these cares, as he doth envy, emulation, &c. still by grief, I think I may well rank them in this iras-

n Saea animi tempestas tantos excitans fluctus at statim ardescant cepit, extrimat, lingua lusit, ductes concerpast, &c.  
Ovid.  
Terence.  
Infensus Britannicus Duci, et in utilem versus, nee album cepit, nec quietem, ad Calendas Julias 1392, comites occidit.  
Impotentia, exilit de lecto, furentem non capiebat sola, &c.  
Abernethe.  
As Troy, saevus memorem Junonis ob iram.  
Stultorum regnum et populorum coniunct matus.  
Lib. 2. Invidia est dolor et ambitio est dolor, &c.
cible row; being that they are as the rest, both causes and symptoms of this disease, producing the like inconveniences, and are most part accompanied with anguish and pain. The common etymology will evince it, *Curæ, quasi cor uro, Dementes curae, insomnes curae, damnosœ curæ, tristis, mordaces, carniſces, &c., biting, eating, gnawing, cruel, bitter, sick, sad, unquiet, pale, tetric, miserable, intolerable cares, as the poets *call them, worldly cares, and are as many in number as the sea sands. *Galæn, Fernelius, Felix Plater, Valesius de Taranta, &c., reckon afflictions, miseries, even all these contentions, and vexations of the mind, as principal causes, in that they take away sleep, hinder conception, dry up the body, and consume the substance of it. They are not so many in number, but their causes be as divers, and not one of a thousand free from them, or that can vindicate himself, whom that *Ate dea,

"*Per hominum capita molliter ambulans, Plantas pedum torceras habens:"

"Over men's heads walking aloft, With tender feet treading so soft,"

Homer's Goddess Ate hath not involved into this discontented *rank, or plagued with some misery or other. Hyginus, *fab. 220, to this purpose hath a pleasant tale. Dame Curæ by chance went over a brook, and taking up some of the dirty slime, made an image of it; Jupiter eftsounes coming by, put life to it, but Curæ and Jupiter could not agree what name to give him, or who should own him; the matter was referred to Saturnus judge, he gave this arbitrement: his name shall be *Homo ab humo, Curæ eum possidet quamulû vivit, Care shall have him whilst he lives, Jupiter his soul, and Tellus his body when he dies. But to leave tales. A general cause, a continuating cause, an inseparable accident, to all men, is discontent, care, misery: were there no other particular affliction (which who is free from ?) to molest a man in this life, the very cogitation of that common misery were enough to macerate, and make him weary of his life; to think that he can never he secure, but still in danger, sorrow, grief, and persecution. For to begin at the hour of this birth, as *Pliny doth elegantly describe it, "he is born naked, and falls *a whining at the very first, he is swaddled and bound up like a prisoner, cannot help himself, and so he continues to his life's end." *Cujuque fere pabulum, saith *Seneca, impatient of heat and cold or other, impatient of labour, impatient of idleness, exposed to fortune's contumelies. To a naked mariner Lucertius compares him, cast on shore by shipwreck, cold and comfortless in an unknown land: *no estate, age, sex, can secure himself from this common misery. "A man that is born of a woman is of short continuance, and full of trouble." Job xiv. 1, 22. "And while his flesh is upon him he shall be sorrowful, and while his soul is in him it shall mourn." "All his days are sorrow and his travels griefs; his heart also taketh not rest in the night," Eccles. ii. 23. and ii. 11. "All that is in it is sorrow and vexation of spirit." *Ingress, progress, regress, egresse, much alike: blindness seizeth on us in the beginning, labour in the middle, grief in the end, error in all. What day ariseth to us without some grief, care, or anguish? Or what so secure and pleasing a morning have we seen, that hath not been overcast before the evening? One is miserable, another ridiculous, a third odious. One complains of this grievance, another of that. *Aliquando nervi, aliquando pedes vexant, (Seneca) *nunc distillatio, *nunc hepatis morbus; *nunc desest, *nunc supræst sanguis: now the head aches then the feet, now the lungs, then the liver, &c. *Huic sensus exrubrat, sed

Causes of Melancholy.

[Part. 1. Sec. 2.]

est pudori degeri sanguis, &c. He is rich, but base born; he is noble, but poor; a third hath means, but he wants health peradventure, or wit to manage his estate; children vex one, wife a second, &c. Nemo facili cum conditione suad concordat, no man is pleased with his fortune, a pound of sorrow is familiarly mixed with a dram of content, little or no joy, little comfort, but *everywhere danger, contention, anxiety, in all places: go where thou wilt, and thou shalt find discontents, cares, woes, complaints, sickness, diseases, incumbrances, exclamations: "If thou look into the market, there (saith *Chrysostom) is brawling and contention; if to the court, there knavery and flattery, &c.; if to a private man’s house, there’s care and care, heaviness," &c. As he said of old, *Nil homine in terrâ spirat miserum magis alnâ? No creature so miserable as man, so generally molested, "in miseries of body, in miseries of mind, miseries of heart, in miseries asleep, in miseries awake, in miseries wheresoever he turns," as Bernard found, Nuncuid tentatit ut vita humana super terram? A mere temptation is our life (Austin, confess. lib. 10, cap. 28), exsuerim perpetuum malorum, et quis potest molestias et difficulitates pati? Who can endure the miseries of it? "† In prosperity we are insolent and intolerable, dejected in adversity, in all fortunes foolish and miserable." In adversity I wish for prosperity, and in prosperity I am afraid of adversity. What mediocrity may be found? Where is no temptation? What condition of life is free? Wisdom hath labour annexed to it, glory envy; riches and cares, children and incumbrances, pleasure and diseases, rest and beggary, go together: as if a man were therefore born (as the Platonists hold) to be punished in this life for some precedent sins." Or that, as *Pliny complains, "Nature may be rather accounted a step-mother, than a mother unto us, all things considered: no creature’s life so brittle, so full of fear, so mad, so furious; only man is plagued with envy, discontent, griefs, covetousness, ambition, superstition." Our whole life is an Irish sea, wherein there is no halcyon time, wherein a man can hold himself secure, or agree with his present estate; but as Boethius infers, "There is something in every one of us which before trial we seek, and having tried abhor: * we earnestly wish, and eagerly covet, and are et cetera weary of it." Thus between hope and fear, suspicions, angers, Inter spemque mutumque, tinores inter et iras, betwixt falling in, falling out, &c., we bangle away our best days, befool out our times, we lead a contentious, discontent, tumultuous, melancholy, miserable life; insomuch, that if we could foretell what was to come, and it put to our choice, we should rather refuse than accept of this painful life. In a word, the world itself is a maze, a labyrinth of errors, a desert, a wilderness, a den of thieves, cheaters, &c., full of filthy puddles, horrid rocks, precipitums, an ocean of adversity, an heavy yoke, wherein infirmities and calamities overtake, and follow one another, as the sea waves; and if we scape Scylla, we fall foul on Charybdis, and so in perpetual fear, labour, anguish, we run from one

plague, one mischief, one burden to another, durum servientes servitutem, and
you may as soon separate weight from lead, heat from fire, moistness from
water, brightness from the sun, as misery, discontent, care, calamity, danger,
from a man. Our towns and cities are hut so many dwellings of human
misery. "In which grief and sorrow (as he right well observes out of Solon)
innumerable troubles, labours of mortal men, and all manner of vices, are
included, as in so many pens." Our villages are like mole-hills, and men as
so many emmets, busy, busy still, going to and fro, in and out, and crossing
one another's projects, as the lines of several sea-cards cut each other in
a globe or map. "Now light and merry, but (as one follows it) by-and-by
sorrowful and heavy; now hoping, then distracting; now patient, to-morrow
exhaling; now pale, then red; running, sitting, sweating, trembling, halting, &c.
Some few amongst the rest, or perhaps one of a thousand, may be
Pullus Jovis, in the world's esteem, Gallinus filius alba, an happy and fortu-
nate man, ad invitantiam felix, because rich, fair, well allied, in honour and office;
yet peradventure ask himself, and he will say, that of all others, "he is most
miserable and unhappy. A fair shoe, Hic soccus novus, elegans, as he said,
sed nescis ubi warat, but thou knowest not where it pinchoth. It is not another
man's opinion can make me happy: but as Seneca well hath it, "He is a
miserable wretch that doth not account himself happy; though he be sovereign
lord of a world, he is not happy, if he think himself not to be so; for what
avail eth it what thine estate is, or seem to others, if thou thyself dislike it?"
A common humour it is of all men to think well of other men's fortunes, and
dislike their own: "Cui placet alterius, sua nimium est odio sors; but *qui
fit Mevonas, &c., how comes it to pass, what's the cause of it? Many men are
of such a perverse nature, they are well pleased with nothing, (saith *Theodoret)
"neither with riches nor poverty, they complain when they are well and when
they are sick, grumble at all fortunes, prosperity and adversity; they are
troubled in a cheap year, in a barren, plenty or nor plenty, nothing pleaseth
them, war nor peace, with children, nor without." This for the most part is
the humour of us all, to be discontent, miserable, and most unhappy, as we
think at least; and show me him that is not so, or that ever was otherwise.
Quintus Metellus his felicity is infinitely admired amongst the Romans, inso-
much that as Paterculus mentioneth of him, you can scarce find of any nation,
order, age, sex, one for happiness to be compared unto him: he had, in a
word, Bona animi, corporis et fortunae, goods of mind, body, and fortune, so
had P. Mutianus, Crassus. Lampsaces, that Lacedemonian lady was such another
in Pliny's conceit, a king's wife, a king's mother, a king's daughter:
and all the world esteemed as much of Polycrates of Samos. The Greeks
brought of their Socrates, Phocion, Aristides; the Psophidians in particular of
their Aglaus, Omni vilié felix, ab omné periculo immunit (which by the way
Pausanias held impossible); the Romans of their Cato, Curius, Fabricius, for
their composed fortunes, and retired estates, government of passions, and con-
tempt of the world: yet none of all these were happy, or free from discontent,
neither Metellus, Crassus, nor Polycrates, for he died a violent death, and so

* Borbonis in 6. Job. Ures et oppida nihil aliud sunt quum humanarum arumianarum dominabilia, quibus

liberius et moeror, et mortalia variis infiniti laborés, et omnis generis vita, quasi septic incontinentur.

† Nat. Chytreus de lit. Europae. Liberius nunc, max tristis; nunc sperans, paulo post diffidentes; patieus hodie,

eros ejus; nunc pallerus, rubens, currons, sedens, cladancens, trenzis, &c. * Sua cuique calamitas

praebuit. Mutius Mutius, &c. Mutius, qui se beatissimum non judicavit: locut imperius,

mondo non est beatus, qui se non putat; quid enim rectum quals status tuus sit, si tibi videtur melius?


nihil placet atque adeo et divitas damnant, et paupertatem, de morbis exspoliant, bene valuentes graviter

ferant, atque ut semel deam, nihil eos delectat, &c. * Vix ulius genitis, atatis, ordinis, hominum

inveniens ejus felicitatem fortunae Metelli comparat, vol. 1.

* P. Crassus Mutianus, quinque habuisse
dicturorum bonorum maximum, quod esset ditissimum, quod esset nobilissimum, eloquentissimum, jurisconsul-

sitissimum, portiæs maximins. * Lib. 7. Regis filia, Regis uxor, Regis mater. * Quel nihil unquam

mal alii dixit, aut iecit, aut sensit, qui bene semper fecit, quod alter facere non putuit.
Causes of Melancholy.

Part 1. Sec. 2.

did Cato; and how much evil doth Lactantius and Theodoret speak of Socrates, a weak man, and so of the rest. There is no content in this life, but as he said, "All is vanity and vexation of spirit;" lame and imperfect. Hadst thou Sampson’s hair, Milo’s strength, Scanderbeg’s arm, Solomon’s wisdom, Absalom’s beauty, Creesus’s wealth, Pasitisc obulum, Caesar’s valour, Alexander’s spirit, Tully’s or Demosthenes’ eloquence, Gyges’ ring, Perseus’ Pegasus, and Gorgon’s head, Nestor’s years to come, all this would not make thee absolute, give thee content and true happiness in this life, or so continue it. Even in the midst of all our mirth, jollity, and laughter, is sorrow and grief, or if there be true happiness amongst us, ’tis but for a time,

"*Deiuit in piscem mulier formosà supernà:" | "A handsome woman with a fish’s tail."

a fair morning turns to a lowering afternoon. Brutus and Cassius, once renowned, both eminently happy, yet you shall scarce find two, (saith Paterculus) Quos forturna maturius destituerit, whom fortune sooner forsook. Hannibal, a conqueror all his life, met with his match, and was subdued at last, Occurrit fortì, qui magô fortis erit. One is brought in triumph, as Cesar into Rome, Alcibiades into Athens, coronis aureis donatus, crowned, honoured, admired; by-and-by his statues demolished, he hissed out, massacred, &c.

Magnus Gonsalva, that famous Spaniard, was of the prince and people at first honoured, approved; forthwith confined and banished. Admirandas actiones; graves plerunque sequuntur invidie, et acres calumnias: ’tis Polybius his observation, grievous enmities, and bitter calumnies, commonly follow renowned actions. One is born rich, dies a beggar; sound to-day, sick to-morrow; now in most flourishing estate, fortunate and happy, by-and-by deprived of his goods by foreign enemies, robbed by thieves, spoiled, captivated, impoverished as they of Rabbah, put under iron saws, and under iron harn-rows, and under axes of iron, and cast into the tile kiln,"

"*Quid me felix tem toties factâstis amici, Qui ceeliti, stabili non erat ille gradu."

He that erst marched like Xerxes with innumerable armies, as rich as Creesus, now shifts for himself in a poor cock-boot, is bound in iron chains, with Bajazet the Turk, and a foot stool with Aurelian, for a tyrannising conqueror to trample on. So many casualties there are, that as Seneca said of a city consumed with fire, Una dies interest inter maximam civitatem et nudam, one day betwixt a great city and none: so many grievances from outward accidents, and from ourselves, our own indiscretion, inordinate appetite, one day betwixt a man and no man. And which is worse, as if discontented and miseries would not come fast enough upon us: homo homini diem, we maul, persecute, and study how to sting, gall, and vex one another with mutual hatred, abuses, injuries; preying upon and devouring as so many ravenous birds; and as jugglers, panders, bawds, cozening one another; or raging as wolves, tigers, and devils, we take a delight to torment one another; men are evil, wicked, malicious, treacherous, and naught, not loving one another, or loving themselves, not hospitable, charitable, nor sociable as they ought to be, but counterfeit, dissemblers, ambidexters, all for their own ends, hard-hearted, merciless, pitiless, and to benefit themselves, they care not what mischief they procure to others. Praxinece and Gorgo in the poet, when they had got in to see those costly sights, they then cried benedest, and would thrust out all the rest: when they are rich themselves, in honour, preferred, full, and have even that they would, they debar others of those pleasures which youth requires, and they


Quod Paterculus de populo Roman. durante bello Punico per annos 115, aut bellum inter eos, aut bellum preparato, aut indita pax, idem ego de mundi accoll. | Theocritus Idyll. 15.
formerly have enjoyed. He sits at table in a soft chair at ease, but he doth not remember in the meantime that a tired waiter stands behind him, "an hungry fellow ministers to him full, he is athirst that gives him drink (saith* Epictetus) and is silent whilst he speaks his pleasure: pensive, sad, when he laughs." *Pleno se proluit auro: he feasts, revels, and profusely spends, hath variety of robes, sweet music, ease, and all the pleasures the world can afford, whilst many an hunger-starved poor creature pines in the street, wants clothes to cover him, labours hard all day long, runs, rides for a trifle, fights peradventure from sun to sun, sick and ill, weary, full of pain and grief, is in great distress and sorrow of heart. He loathes and scorns his inferior, hates or emulates his equal, envies his superior, insults over all such as are under him, as if he were of another species, a demi-god, not subject to any fall, or human infirmities. Generally they love not, are not beloved again: they tire out others' bodies with continual labour, they themselves living at ease, caring for none else, *sibi nati; and are so far many times from putting to their helping hand, that they seek all means to depress, even most worthy and well deserving, better than themselves, those whom they are by the laws of nature bound to relieve and help, as much as in them lies, they will let them caterwaul, starve, beg, and hang, before they will any ways (though it be in their power) assist or ease: *so unnatural are they for the most part, so unregardful; so hard-hearted, so churlish, proud, insolent, so dogged, of so bad a disposition. And being so brutish, so devilishly bent one towards another, how is it possible but that we should be discontent of all sides, full of cares, woes, and miseries?

If this be not a sufficient proof of their discontent and misery, examine every condition and calling apart. Kings, princes, monarchs, and magistrates seem to be most happy, but look into their estate, you shall *find them to be most encumbered with cares, in perpetual fear, agony, suspicion, jealousy: that as *he said of a crown, if they knew but the discontents that accompany it, they would not stoop to take it up. *Quem mihi regem dabis (saith Chrysostom) non curis plenum? What king canst thou show me, not full of cares? *"Look not on his crown, but consider his afflictions; attend not his number of servants, but multitude of crosses." *Nihil aliud potestas culminis, quam tempestas mentis, as Gregory seconds him; sovereignty is a tempest of the soul: Sylla-like they have brave titles but terrible fits: *splendorem titulo, cruciatum animo: which made *Demosthenes vow, *si vel ad tribunal, vel ad interium duceretur: if to be a judge, or to be condemned, were put to his choice, he would be condemned. Rich men are in the same predicament; what their pains are, *stulti nesciant, *ipsi sentiant: they feel, fools perceive not, as I shall prove elsewhere, and their wealth is brittle, like children's rattles: they come and go, there is no certainty in them: those whom they elevate, they do as suddenly depress, and leave in a vale of misery. The middle sort of men are as so many asses to bear burdens; or if they be free, and live at ease, they spend themselves, and consume their bodies and fortunes with luxury and riot, contention, emulation, &c. The poor I reserve for another *place, and their discontents. For particular professions, I hold as of the rest, there's no content or security in any; on what course will you pitch; how resolve? to be a divine, *tis contemptible in the world's esteem; to be a lawyer, *tis to be a wrangler; to be a physician, *puget latii, *tis loathed; a philosopher, a madman; an alchymist, a beggar; a poet, *esurit, an hungry jack; a musician, a player; a schoolmaster, a drudge; an husbandman, an emnet; a merchant, his gains are uncer-

---

tainty; a mechanician, base; a chirurgeon, fulsome; a tradesman, a liar; a tailor, a thief; a serving-man, a slave; a soldier, a butcher; a smith, or a metalman, the pot's never from his nose; a courtier, a parasite, as he could find no tree in the wood to hang himself; I can show no state of life to give content. The like you may say of all ages; children live in a perpetual slavery, still under that tyrannical government of masters; young men, and of riper years, subject to labour, and a thousand cares of the world, to treachery, falsehood, and cozenage,

"— Incedit per ignes,
Suppositos cineri dolosus,"

"—you injurious tread
On fires, with faithless ashes overhead."

"old are full of aches in their bones, cramps and convulsions, silicemia, dull of hearing, weak sighted, hoary, wrinkled, harsh, so much altered as that they cannot know their own face in a glass, a burthen to themselves and others, after 70 years, "all is sorrow" (as David hath it), they do not live but linger. If they be sound, they fear diseases; if sick, weary of their lives:

Non est vivere sed volere, vita. One complains of want, a second of servitude, "another of a secret or incurable disease; of some deformity of body, of some loss, danger, death of friends, shipwreck, persecution, imprisonment, disgrace, repulse, "contumely, calumny, abuse, injury, contempt, ingratitude, unkindness, scoffs, flouts, unfortunate marriage, single life, too many children, no children, false servants, unhappy children, barrenness, banishment, oppression, frustrate hopes and ill success, &c.

"A Talia de genere hoc adeo sunt multa, loquacem ut
Delassare valent Fabinum;"

"But, every various instance to repeat,
Would tire even Fabius of incessant praise."

Talking Fabius will be tired before he can tell half of them; they are the subject of whole volumes, and shall (some of them) be more opportunely dilated elsewhere. In the meantime thus much I may say of them, that generally they crucify the soul of man, "attenuate our bodies, dry them, wither them, shrivel them up like old apples, make them as so many anatomies (ossa atque pellis est totus, ita curis macer), they cause tempus fidelum et squalidum, cumbersome days, ingrataque tempora, slow, dull, and heavy times: make us howl, roar, and tear our hairs, as sorrow did in "Cebe's table, and groan for the very anguish of our souls. Our hearts fail us as David's did, Psal. xl. 12, "for innumerable troubles that compassed him;" and we are ready to confess with Hezekiah, Isaiah xviii. 17, "behold, for felicity I had bitter grief;" to weep with Heraclitus, to curse the day of our birth with Jeremy, xx. 14, and our stars with Job: to hold that axiom of Silenus, "better never to have been born, and the best next of all, to die quickly:" or if we must live, to abandon the world, as Timon did; creep into caves and holes, as our anchorites; cast all into the sea, as Crates Thebanus; or as Theombrotus Ambriacito's 400 auditors, precipitate ourselves to be rid of these miseries.

SUBJECT. XI.—Concupiscible Appetite, as Desires, Ambition, Causes.

These concupiscible and irascible appetites are as the two twists of a rope, mutually mixed one with the other, and both twining about the heart: both good, as Austin holds, l. 14, c. 9, de cius. Dei, "if they be moderate; both pernicious if they be exorbitant." This concupiscible appetite, howsoever it may seem to carry with it a show of pleasure and delight, and our concupiscences most part affect us with content and a pleasing object, yet if they be in extremes, they rack and wring us on the other side. A true saying it is, "Desire hath no rest;" is infinite in itself, endless; and as one calls it, a perpetual rack, 'or

Mem. 3. Subs. 11.] Ambition, a Cause.

185

horse-mill, according to Austin, still going round as in a ring. They are not so continual, as divers, fidelitas atomos denumerare possem, saith 6 Bernard, quia motus cordis; nunc hoc, nunc illa cogito, you may as well reckon up the motes in the sun as them. "

8 It extends itself to every thing," as Guianerus will have it, "that is superfluously sought after:" or to any ° fervent desire, as Fernelius interprets it; be it in what kind soever, it tortures if immoderate, and is (according to Plater and others) an especial cause of melancholy. Multitudes concupiscientiae dileviantur cogitationes naves, ° Austin confessed, that he was torn a pieces with his manifold desires: and so doth Bernard complain, "that he could not rest for them a minute of an hour: this I would have, and that, and then I desire to be such and such." 'Tis a hard matter therefore to confine them, being they are so various and many, impossible to apprehend all. I will only insist upon some few of the chief, and most noxious in their kind, as that exorbitant appetite and desire of honour, which we commonly call ambition; love of money, which is covetousness, and that greedy desire of gain: self-love, pride, and inordinate desire of vain-glory or applause, love of study in excess; love of women (which will require a just volume of itself), of the other I will briefly speak, and in their order.

Ambition, a proud covetousness, or a dry thirst of honour, a great torture of the mind, composed of envy, pride, and covetousness, a gallant madness, one defines it a pleasant poison, Ambrose, "a canker of the soul, an hidden plague:" ° Bernard, "a secret poison, the father of livor, and mother of hypocrisy, the sprout of holiness, and cause of madness, crucifying and disquieting all that it takes hold of." ° Seneca calls it, rem sollicitam, timidam, vanam, ventosam, a windy thing, a vain, solicitous, and fearful thing. For commonly they that, like Sysiphus, roll this restless stone of ambition, are in a perpetual agony, still perplexed, semper tacti, tristesque recendum (Lucretius), doubtful, timorous, suspicious, loath to offend in word or deed, still cogging and colloquing, embracing, capping, cringing, applauding, flattering, fleering, visiting, waiting at men's doors, with all assiduity, counterfeit honesty and humility. If that will not serve, if once this humour (as Cyprian describes it) possess his thirsty soul, ambitionis salutis ubi bibulam animam possidet, by hook and by crook he will obtain it, "and from his hole he will climb to all honours and offices, if it be possible for him to get up, flattering one, bribing another, he will leave no means unessay'd to win all." ° It is a wonder to see how slavishly these kind of men subject themselves, when they are about a suit, to every inferior person; what pains they will take, run, ride, cast, plot, countermine, protest and swear, vow, promise, what labours undergo, early up, down late; how obsequious and affable they are, how popular and courteous, how they grin and fleer upon every man they meet; with what feeding and inviting, how they spend themselves and their fortunes, in seeking that many times, which they had much better be without; as Cyneas the orator told Pyrrhus: with what waking nights, painful hours, anxious thoughts, and bitterness of mind, inter spemque metumque, distracted and tired, they consume the interim of their time. There can be no greater plague for the present. If they do obtain their suit, which with such cost and solicitude they have sought, they are not so freed,
their anxiety is anew to begin, for they are never satisfied, *nihil aliquid nisi imperium spirant*, their thoughts, actions, endeavours are all for sovereignty and honour, like b Luces Sforsia that huffing duke of Milan, "a man of singular wisdom, but profound ambition, born to his own, and to the destruction of Italy," though it be to their own ruin, and friends' undoing, they will contend, they may not cease, but as a dog in a wheel, a bird in a cage, or a squirrel in a chain, so "Budaens compares them; " they climb and climb still, with much labour, but never make an end, never at the top. A knight would be a baronet, and then a lord, and then a viscount, and then an earl, &c.; a doctor, a dean, and then a bishop; from tribune to priest; from bailiff to major; first this office, and then that; as Pyrrhus in *Plutarch*, they will first have Greece, then Africa, and then Asia, and swell with *Æsop's* frog so long, till in the end they burst, or come down with Sejanus, ad Geminias scalas, and break their own necks; or as Evangelus the piper in Lucian, that blew his pipe so long, till he fell down dead. If he chance to miss, and have a canvass, he is in a hell on the other side; so dejected, that he is ready to hang himself, turn heretic, Turk, or traitor in an instant. Enraged against his enemies, he rails, swears, fights, slanders, detracts, envies, murders: and for his own part, *si appetitum explore non potest, furor correptitur*; if he cannot satisfy his desire (as Bodine writes) he runs mad. So that both ways, hit or miss, he is distracted so long as his ambition lasts, he can look for no other but anxiety and care, discontent and grief in the meantime, *madness* itself, or violent death in the end. The event of this is common to be seen in populous cities, or in princes' courts, for a courtier's life (as Budaens describes it) "is a *gallimaufry* of ambition, lust, fraud, imposture, dissimulation, destruction, envy, pride; the court, a common convention of flatterers, time-servers, politicians," &c.; or as *Anthony Perez* will, "the suburbs of hell itself." If you will see such discontented persons, there you shall likely find them. And which he observed of the markets of old Rome,

> *Qui perjurum convenire vult hominem, mittit in Comitum; Qui mendacem et gloriorem, apud Claudianum sacrum; Dites, damnosos marios, sub basilico quartio,* &c.

Perjured knaves, knights of the post, liars, crackers, bad husbands, &c. keep their several stations; they do still, and always did in every commonwealth.

**SUBSECT. XII.—*phlegmia*, Covetousness, a Cause.**

**Plutarch,** in his *"* book whether the diseases of the body be more grievous than those of the soul, is of opinion, "if you will examine all the causes of our miseries in this life, you shall find them most part to have had their beginning from stubborn anger, that furious desire of contention, or some unjust or immoderate affection, as covetousness," &c. "From whence are wars and contentions amongst you?" *St. James asks: I will add usury, fraud, rape, simony, oppression, lying, swearing, bearing false witness, &c. are they not from this fountain of covetousness, that greediness in getting, tenacity in keeping, sordity in spending; that they are so wicked, "unjust against God, their neighbour, themselves," all comes hence. "The desire of money is the root of all evil, and they that last after it, pierce themselves through with many

a *Jovius hist. 1. 1. vir singulari prudentia, sed profunda ambione, ad eceiturum Italianis autus. * Or he'd a barbori adherere, ase ambitio, &c.

b *Lib. 5. de contemptu rerum fortuinarum. Magno cometa et impetu moveatur, super cedum centre rotae, non proculuit, nec ad eum perveniet. * Vita Pyrrhi.

"*Ambito in insaniam facile debilatur, si excedat. * Patr. 1. 4. 4. dit. 20. de regni instit."

*Lib. 6. de rep. cap. 1. 1 *(Imprimis vero appetitus, seu concupiscencia nimirum rics aliquos, honeste vel in honore, phantom sedut; unde multo ambitiosis, habulatae, utri, utari, insan, ase. * Felix Plater. 1. 3. de mentis alien."

*Vita vita colluvae ambitionis, capitalitas, simulacri, impostura, fraudis, invidia, superbiae Titaniacis, discordiarum, aula, et communiter coactiversum assentendi, artifactum, &c. Budaens de ass. Lib. 5."

"* In his *Philo*.


* Cap. 1. 1. * Ut al it iniquus in deum, in proximum, in seipsum.
sorrows," 1 Tim. vi. 10. Hippocrates therefore in his Epistle to Cratea, an herbalist, gives him this good counsel, that if it were possible, "amongst other herbs, he should cut up that weed of covetousness by the roots, that there be no remainder left, and then know this for a certainty, that together with their bodies, thou mayst quickly cure all the diseases of their minds." For it is indeed the pattern, image, epitome of all melancholy, the fountain of many miseries, much discontented cure and woe; this "inordinate or improper desire of gain, to get or keep money," as Bonaventure defines it: or, as Austin describes it, a madness of the soul, Gregory, a torture; Chrysostom, an insatiable drunkenness; Cyprian, blindness, speciosum supplicium, a plague subverting kingdoms, families, an incurable disease; Budaeus, an ill habit, "yielding to no remedies:" neither, Æsculapius nor Plutus can cure them: a continual plague, saith Solomon, and vexation of spirit, another hell. I know there be some of opinion, that covetous men are happy, and worldly-wise, that there is more pleasure in getting of wealth than in spending, and no delight in the world like unto it. "'Twas Æbias' problem of old, "With what art thou not weary? with getting money. What is more delectable? to gain." What is it, trow you, that makes a poor man labour all his lifetime, carry such great burdens, fare so hardly, macerate himself, and endure so much misery, undergo such base offices with so great patience, to rise up early, and lie down late, if there were not an extraordinary delight in getting and keeping of money? What makes a merchant that hath no need, satis superque domus, to range all over the world, through all those intemperate Zones of heat and cold; voluntarily to venture his life, and be content with such miserable famine, nasty usage, in a stinking ship; if there were not a pleasure and hope to get money, which doth season the rest, and mitigate his indefatigable pains? What makes them go into the bowels of the earth, an hundred fathom deep, endangering their dearest lives, enduring damps and filthy smells, when they have enough already, if they could be content, and no such cause to labour, but an extraordinary delight they take in riches. This may seem plausible at first show, a popular and strong argument; but let him that so thinks, consider better of it, and he shall soon perceive, that it is far otherwise than he supposeth; it may be haply pleasing at the first, as most part all melancholy is. For such men likely have some lucida intervalla, pleasant symptoms intermixed; but you must note that of Chrysostom, "Tis one thing to be rich, another to be covetous:" generally they are all fools, dizzards, mad-men, miserable wretches, living beside themselves, sine arte fruendi, in perpetual slavery, fear, suspicion, sorrow, and discontent, plus alois quam mellis habent: and are indeed, "rather possessed by their money, than possessors:" as Cyprian hath it, manipati pecuniis; bound prentice to their goods, as Pliny; or as Chrysostom, servi divitiarum, slaves and drudges to their substance; and we may conclude of them all, as Valerius doth of Ptolomæus king of Cyprus, "He was in title a king of that island, but in his mind, a miserable drudgery of money."

wanting his liberty, which is better than gold. Damasippus the Stoic, in Horace, proves that all mortal men dote by fits, some one way, some another,

---

* Si vero, Crateva, inter easter herbarum radices, avaritiae radices esse quae posses amorum, ut nullus reliquum esset, probé soto, &c.
† Cap. 6. Dietes salus: avaritia est amor inmoderatus pecuniæ vel acquirandæ, vel retinendæ, vel relinquendæ.
‡ Forum profecto duxit Augumione puellas atutii, renudas non semetips medendi exaspetat.
□ Divinit æ mappa animam hominum timoribus, solitudinibus, angustibus, mirifice pungent, vexant, cruciant. Greg. in hon. § Epist. ad Donat. cap. 2.
¶ Lib. 9. ep. 30.
□ Lib. 9. cap. 4. insulae rex titulus, sed animo pecuniæ miserabile manipium. § Hor. 10. lib. 1.
but that covetous men "are madder than the rest; and he that shall truly look into their estates, and examine their symptoms, shall find no better of them, but that they are all "fools, as Nabal was, Re et nomine (1. Reg. 25). For what greater folly can there be, or "madness, than to macerate himself when he need not? and when, as Cyprian notes, "he may be freed from his burden, and eased of his pains, will go on still, his wealth increasing, when he hath enough, to get more, to live besides himself," to starve his genius, keep back from his wife and children, neither letting them nor other friends use or enjoy that which is theirs by right, and which they much need perhaps; like a hog, or dog in the manger, he doth only keep it, because it shall do nobody else good, hurting himself and others: and for a little momentary pelf, damn himself his own soul! They are commonly sad and tetric by nature, as Ahab's spirit was, because he could not get Naboth's vineyard, (3. Reg. 21.) and if he lay out his money at any time, though it be to necessary uses, to his own children's good, he brawls and scolds, his heart is heavy, much disequited he is, and loath to part from it: Miser absetinet et timet uti, Hor. He is of a wearish, dry, pale constitution, and cannot sleep for cares and worldly business; his riches, saith Solomon, will not let him sleep, and unnecessary business which he heathop on himself; or if he do sleep, 'tis a very unquiet, interrupt, unpleasing sleep; with his bags in his arms,

"ocongestis multae saecis
Ineditum inhania,"

And though he be at a banquet, or at some merry feast, "he sighs for grief of heart (as Cyprian hath it) and cannot sleep though it be upon a down bed; his wearish body takes no rest, "troubled in his abundance, and sorrowful in plenty, unhappy for the present, and more unhappy in the life to come." Basil. He is a perpetual drudge, "restless in his thoughts, and never satisfied, a slave, a wretch, a dust-worm, semper quod idolo suo innolet, sedulius observat, Cypr. prolog. ad sermon, still seeking what sacrifice he may offer to his golden god, per fas et nefas, he cares not how, his trouble is endless, "rareunt divitiae, tenem curvae nescio quid semper abest rei: his wealth increaseth, and the more he hath, the more "he wants: like Pharaoh's lean kine, which devoured the fat, and were not satisfied. "Austin therefore defines covetousness, quarumlibet rerum inhonestam et insatiabilem cupiditatem, a dishonest and insatiable desire of gain; and in one of his epistles compares it to hell; "which devours all, and yet never hath enough, a bottomless pit," an endless misery; in quem scopulum avaritiae cadaver est, cetero ut plurimum impingunt, and that which is their greatest corrosive, they are in continual suspicion, fear, and distrust. He thinks his own wife and children are so many thieves, and go about to cozen him, his servants are all false:

"Rem suam peritse, seque eradicaveri,
Et dirimi atque hominum dignam continuat fidem,
De suo tigillo fannus si quis exit foras."  

"If his doors creeke, then oat he cries anon,
His gods are gone, and he is quite undone."

Timidus Plutus, an old proverb, As fearful as Plutus; so both Aristophanes and Lucian bring him in fearful still, pale, anxious, suspicious, and trusting no man, "They are afraid of tempests for their corn; they are afraid of their

"Danda est hali-boli multa pars maxima avaris.
Opes quidem mortalia sunt dementia, Theog.
Epist. 2. lib. 2. Exonerare cum se possit et relevare possidendum pergiti magis fortunis augmentis pertinacer incumber. "Non amiliis, non libris, non ipsi sibi quidquid invidet; possidendi aliis iussit, &C. Hieron. ad Paulinum."
Epist. 2. lib. 2. Suspiscit in conveo, bibat hic gemula cum deo: quod habet quan non habet. "Angustiar ex abundante, contristatur ex opulentia, infelix passendum bona, infelicitas futura, pecuniae suppleri diligenter. Gal. tract. 15. c. 17."
Hor. 1. 2. Sat. 6. &C."
Libr. 3. de lib. arbrit. Immortuum studibus, et amore aeneae habendi. "Avarus vir informe est similis, &C. medium non habet, hoc eensorio quo plures habet."
Erasm. Aegag. chil. 3. cont. 7. pro. 72. Nulli fidibus omnium formidant opes, nici parvum duum vitat Euripides; motum tempusque os frumentum, animos non regent, inimicos ne hantant, fures ne rapiant, bellum timant, pacem timent, somnus, molles, inimiti."

* Danda est hali-boli multa pars maxima avaris.  
* Ed. 2. lib. 2. Exonerare cum se possit et relevare possidendum pergiti magis fortunis augmentis pertinacer incumber. "Non amiliis, non libris, non ipsi sibi quidquid invidet; possidendi aliis iussit, &C. Hieron. ad Paulinum."
* Epist. 2. lib. 2. Suspiscit in conveo, bibat hic gemula cum deo: quod habet quan non habet. "Angustiar ex abundante, contristatur ex opulentia, infelix passendum bona, infelicitas futura, pecuniae suppleri diligenter. Gal. tract. 15. c. 17."
* Hor. 1. 2. Sat. 6. &C."
* Libr. 3. de lib. arbrit. Immortuum studibus, et amore aeneae habendi. "Avarus vir informe est similis, &C. medium non habet, hoc eensorio quo plures habet."
* Erasm. Aegag. chil. 3. cont. 7. pro. 72. Nulli fidibus omnium formidant opes, nici parvum duum vitat Euripides; motum tempusque os frumentum, animos non regent, inimicos ne hantant, fures ne rapiant, bellum timant, pacem timent, somnus, molles, inimiti."

[Part. 1. Sec. 2.]

Causes of Melancholy.
friends lest they should ask something of them, beg or borrow; they are afraid of their enemies lest they hurt them, thieves lest they rob them; they are afraid of war and afraid of peace, afraid of rich and afraid of poor; afraid of all." Last of all, they are afraid of want, that they shall die beggars, which makes them lay up still, and dare not use that they have: what if a dear year come, or dearth, or some loss? and were it not that they are loath to lay out money on a rope, they would be hanged forthwith, and sometimes die to save charges, and make away themselves, if their corn and cattle miscarry; though they have abundance left, as Agellius notes. Valerius makes mention of one that in a famine sold a mouse for 200 pence, and famished himself: such are their cares, griefs and perpetual fears. These symptoms are elegantly expressed by Theophrastus in his character of a covetous man; "lying in bed, he asked his wife whether she shut the trunks and chests fast, the carcass be sealed, and whether the hall door be bolted; and though she say all is well, he riseth out of his bed in his shirt, barefoot and barelegged, to see whether it be so, with a dark lantern searching every corner, scarce sleeping a wink all night." Lucian in that pleasant and witty dialogue called Gallius, brings in Mycillus the cobbler disputing with his cock, sometimes Pythagoras; where after much speech pro and con to prove the happiness of a mean estate, and discontents of a rich man, Pythagoras' cock in the end, to illustrate by examples that which he had said, brings him to Gypphon the usurer's house at midnight, and after that to Encrates; whom they found both awake, casting up their accounts, and telling of their money, clean, dry, pale and anxious, still suspecting lest somebody should make a hole through the wall, and so get in; or if a rat or mouse did but stir, starting upon a sudden, and running to the door to see whether all were fast. Plantus, in his Aulularia, makes old Eucleio commanding Staphyla his wife to shut the doors fast, and the fire to be put out, lest any body should make that an errand to come to his house: when he washed his hands, he was loath to fling away the foul water, complaining that he was undone, because the smoke got out of his roof. And as he went from home, seeing a crow scratch upon the muck-hill, returned in all haste, taking it for madum omen, an ill sign, his money was dug up; with many such. He that will but observe their actions, shall find these and many such passages not feigned for sport, but really performed, verified indeed by such covetous and miserable wretches, and that it is,

\[\text{"manifesta phrenesis}\]

Ut locuples moriaris egeati vivere fat."  

A mere madness, to live like a wretch, and die rich.

Subsect. XIII.—Love of Gaming, &c. and pleasures immoderate; Causes.

It is a wonder to see, how many poor, distressed, miserable wretches, one shall meet almost in every path and street, begging for an alms, that have been well descended, and sometimes in flourishing estate, now ragged, tattered, and ready to be starved, lingering out a painful life, in discontent and grief of body and mind, and all through immoderate lust, gaming, pleasure and riot. "Tis the common end of all sensual epicures and brutish prodigals, that are stupefied and carried away headlong with their several pleasures and lusts. Cebe in his

1 Hall Char.  
2 Agellius lib. 3. cap. 1. Interdum eo ecclesiis pervenient ob lucrum, ut vitam proprium comment.  
3 Lib. 7. cap. 6.  
6 Curis extenuatas, vigilias et secum supplices.  
7 Care quemquam alienum in seolos intruere. Ignum ex aeterni volo, ne causa quidquam sit quod te quisquam quereret. Si bona fortuna veniat ne intrinsecus; Oclude sis forens ambobus pessulis. Discernitor animal quia domo abundans est mihi: Nimis hercule lavitas abea, nec qui ad se suo, Floras aquam prorsum, &c. perlut dam funus de tegillo exit foras.  
table, S. Ambrose in his second book of Abel and Cain, and amongst the rest Lucian in his tract de Mercede conductis, hath excellent well deciphered such men's proceedings in his picture of Opulentia, whom he feigns to dwell on the top of a high mount, much sought after by many suitors; at their first coming they are generally entertained by pleasure and dalliance, and have all the content that possibly may be given, so long as their money lasts: but when their means fail, they are contemptibly thrust out at a back door, headlong, and there left to shame, reproach, despair. And he at first that had so many attendants, parasites, and followers, young and lusty, richly arrayed, and all the dainty fare that might be had, with all kind of welcome and good respect, is now upon a sudden stripit of all, 'pale, naked, old, diseased and forsworn, cursing his stars, and ready to strangle himself; having no other company but repentance, sorrow, grief, derision, baggary and contempt, which are his daily attendants to his life's end. As the 'prodigal son had exquisite music, merry company, dainty fare at first; but a sorrowful reckoning in the end; so have all such vain delights and their followers. *Tristes volupatum exctus, et quisquis volupatum suarum reminisci voluit, intelliget, as bitter as gall and wormwood is their last; grief of mind, madness itself. The ordinary rocks upon which such men do impinge and precipitate themselves, are cards, dice, hawks and hounds, Insanum venandi studium, one calls it, insanae subtractiones: their mad structures, disports, plays, &c., when they are unseasonably used, imprudently handled, and beyond their fortunes. Some men are consumed by mad fantastical buildings, by making galleries, cloisters, terraces, walks, orchards, gardens, pools, rillies, bowers, and such like places of pleasure; Invites domos, *Xenophon calls them, which howsoever they be delightful things in themselves, and acceptable to all beholders, an ornament and befitting some great men; yet unprofitable to others, and the sole overthrow of their estates. Forestus in his observations hath an example of such a one that became melancholy upon the like occasion, having consumed his substance in an unprofitable building, which would afterward yield him no advantage. Others, I say, are *overthrown by those mad sports of hawking and hunting; honest recreations, and fit for some great men, but not for every base inferior person; whilst they will maintain their falconers, dogs, and hunting nags, their wealth, saith *Salmutze, "runs away with hounds, and their fortunes fly away with hawks." They persecute beasts so long till in the end they themselves degenerate into beasts, as *Agrippa taxeth them, *Acteon-like, for as he was eaten to death by his own dogs, so do they devour themselves and their patrimonies, in such idle and unnecessary disports, neglecting in the mean time their more necessary business, and to follow their vocations. Over mad too sometimes are our great men in delighting, and doting too much on it. *When they drive poor husbandmen from their tillage," as *Sarisburiensis objects, Polycrat. I. 1. c. 4. "fling down country farms, and whole towns, to make parks, and forests, starving men to feed beasts, and *punishing in the mean time such a man that shall molest their game, more severely than him that is otherwise a common hacker, or a notorious thief." But great men are some ways to be excused, the meaner sort have no evasion why they should not be

counted mad. Poggius the Florentine tells a merry story to this purpose, condemning the folly and impertinent business of such kind of persons. A physician of Milan, saith he, that cured mad men, had a pit of water in his house, in which he kept his patients, some up to their knees, some to the girdle, some to the chin, pro modo insanire, as they were more or less affected. One of them by chance, that was well recovered, stood in the door, and seeing a gallant ride by with a hawk on his fist, well mounted, with his spaniels after him, would needs know to what use all this preparation served; he made answer to kill certain fowls; the patient demanded again, what his fowl might be worth which he killed in a year; he replied 5 or 10 crowns; and when he urged him farther what his dogs, horse, and hawks stood him in, he told him 400 crowns; with that the patient bade be gone, as he loved his life and welfare, for if our master come and find thee here, he will put thee in the pit amongst mad men up to the chin: taxing the madness and folly of such vain men that spend themselves in those idle sports, neglecting their business and necessary affairs. Leo decimus, that hunting pope, is much discommended by *Jovius in his life, for his inmoderate desire of hawking and hunting, in so much that (as he saith) he would sometimes live about Ostia weeks and months together, leave suitors *unrespecting, bulls and partridges unsigned, to his own prejudice, and many private men's loss. "And if he had been by chance crossed in his sport, or his game not so good, he was so impatient, that he would revile and miscall many times men of great worth with most bitter taunts, look so sour, be so angry and waspish, so grieved and molested, that it is incredible to relate it." But if he had good sport, and been well pleased, on the other side, incredibilium munificentia, with unspeakable bounty and munificence he would reward all his fellow hunters, and deny nothing to any suitor when he was in that mood. To say truth, *tis the common humour of all gamblers, as Galateus observes, if they win, no men living are so jovial and merry, but "if they lose, though it be but a trifle, two or three games at tables, or a dealing at cards for twopence a game, they are so choleric and testy that no man may speak with them, and break many times into violent passions, oaths, imprecations, and unbecoming speeches, little differing from mad men for the time. Generally of all gamblers and gaming, if it be excessive, thus much we may conclude, that whether they win or lose for the present, their winnings are not Munera fortunae, sed insidiae, as that wise Seneca determines, not fortune's gifts, but baits, the common catastrophe is *beggary, *Ut pestis vitam, sic adimit alex pecuniam, as the plague takes away life, doth gaming goods, for *omnes vidi, nones et egeni;

Causes of Melancholy.

10. but Spartan.

Justinian, they began themselves, tongue, about; borrowing them, bankrupts calls Adrian desperately idle an infamous kind, disclaim stone remiges. desperacy in prison, as many times they do; they repent at leisure; and when all is gone begin to be thrifty: but Sera est in fundo parsimoniora, 'tis then too late to look about; their 'end is misery, sorrow, shame, and discontent. And well they deserve to be infamous and discontent. Catamidiai in Amphitheatro, as by Adrian the emperor's edict they were of old, decocores honorum suorum, so he calls them, prodigal fools, to be publicly shamed, and hissed out of all societies, rather than to be pitied or relieved.* The TuscanS and Boëtians brought their bankrupts into the market place in a bier with an empty purse carried before them, all the boys following, where they sat all day circumstante plebe, to be infamous and ridiculous. At Padua in Italy they have a stone called the stone of turpitude, near the senate house, where spendthrifts, and such as disclaim non-payment of debts, do sit with their hinder parts bare, that by that note of disgrace, others may be terrified from all such vain expense, or borrowing more than they can tell how to pay. The civilians of old set guards over such brain-sick prodigals, as they did over madmen, to moderate their expenses, that they should not so lose consume their fortunes, to the utter undoing of their families.

I may not here omit those two main plagues, and common dotages of human kind, wine and women, which have infatuated and besotted myriads of people: they go commonly together.

* Qui vine indulget, quemque alea deconquiit, Ille
In venerem putet.——

To whom is sorrow, saith Solomon, Pro. xxiii. 29. to whom is woe, but to such a one as loves drink? it causeth torture (vino tortus et ira), and bitterness of mind, Sirac. 31. 21. Vinum furoris, Jeremiy calls it, 15. cap. wine of madness, as well he may, for insanire facit sanos, it makes sound men sick and sad, and wise men mad, to say and do they know not what. Accident hodie terribilis casus (saith 'S. Austin), bear a miserable accident; Cyrilus' son this day in his drink, Matrem pregnatam nequiter oppressit, sororem violare voluit, patrem occidit ferè, et duas alias sorores ad mortem vulneravit, would have violated his sister, killed his father, &c. A true saying it was of him, Vino dari lecitiâm et dolorem, drük causeth mirth, and drink causeth sorrow, drink causeth "poverty and want," (Prov. xxi.) shame and disgrace. Multi ignobiles evasere ob vini potum, et (Austin) amissis honoribus profugi aberravunt: many men have made shipwreck of their fortunes, and go like rogues and beggars, having turned all their substance into aurum potabile, that otherwise might have lived in good worship and happy estate, and for a few hours' pleasure, for their Hilary term's but short, or "free madness, as Seneca calls it, purchase unto themselves eternal tediousness and trouble.

That other madness is on women, Apostatis facit ser, saith the wise man, "Atque homini cerebrum minuit. Pleasant at first she is, like Dioscorides

Rhododaphne, that fair plant to the eye, but poison to the taste, the rest as bitter as wormwood in the end (Prov. v. 4.) and sharp as a two-edged sword. (vii. 27.) "Her house is the way to hell, and goes down to the chambers of death." What more sorrowful can be said? they are miserable in this life, mad, beasts, led like "fozen to the slaughter:" and that which is worse, whose-masters and drunkards shall be judged, amittunt gratiam, saith Austin, pertinent gloriem, incurrent damnationem aeternam. They lose grace and glory;

they gain hell and eternal damnation.

**Subsect. XIV.—Philautia, or Self-love, Vain-glory, Praise, Honour, Immoderate Applause, Pride, over-much Joy, &c., Causes.**

**Self-love, pride, and vain-glory, [caecus amor sui, which Chrysostom calls one of the devil’s three great nets;** "Bernard, an arrow which pierceth the soul through, and slays it; a sly, insensible enemy, not perceived," are main causes. Where neither anger, lust, covetousness, fear, sorrow, &c., nor any other perturbation can lay hold; this will sily and insensibly pervert us, Quem non gula vicit, Philautia superavit, (saith Cyprian) whom surfeiting could not overtake, self-love hath overcome. "He hath scornd all money, bribes, gifts, upright otherwise and sincere, hath inserted himself to no fond imagination, and sustained all those tyrannical concupiscences of the body, hath lost all his honour, captivated by vain-glory." Chrysostom. sup. Io. Tu sola animam mentemque perurus, gloria. A great assault and cause of our present malady, although we do most part neglect, take no notice of it, yet this is a violent batterer of our souls, causeth melancholy and dotage. This pleasing humour; this soft and whispering popular air, Amabilis insania; this delectable frenzy, most irrefragable passion, Mentis gratissimus error, this acceptable disease, which so sweetly sets upon us, ravisheth our senses, lulls our souls asleep, puffs up our hearts as so many bladders, and that without all feeling, "insomuch as "those that are misaffected with it, never so much as once perceive it, or think of any cure." We commonly love him best in this "malady, that doth us most harm, and are very willing to be hurt; adulationibus nostris liberenter favesmus (saith "Jerome) we love him, we love him for it: O Bonciari, suave suave fuit à te tali hac tribui; "Twas sweet to hear it. And as Pliny doth ingeniously confess to his dear friend Augustinus, "all thy writings are most acceptable, but those especially that speak of us." Again, a little after to Maximus, "I cannot express how pleasing it is to me to hear myself commended." Though we smile to ourselves, at least ironically, when parasites bedaub us with false eumomims, as many princes cannot choose but do, Quam tale quid nihil intra se repeterint, when they know they come as far short, as a mouse to an elephant, of any such virtues; yet it doth us good. Though we seem many times to be angry, "and blush at our own praises, yet our souls inwardly rejoice, it puffs us up;" tis fallax suavitas, blandus daemon, "makes us swell beyond our bounds, and forget ourselves." Her two daughters are lightness of mind, immoderate joy and pride, not excluding those other concomitant vices, which I Todocus Lorichius reckons up; bragging, hypocrisy, peevishness, and curiosity.

**Trov. 5.** [Merlin. cocc. "That momentary pleasure blows out the eternal glory of a heavenly life."

**Hor.** [Sagitta que animam penetras, leviter penetras, sed non love infigit valum. sup. cant. "Qui omnes pecuniarum contemptum habebat, et nulli imaginations totin mundi so imissiconcerit, et tyrannicas corporis concupiscencias sustinerit, ha multitates capit à vana gloria omnia perdaret."

**Iac. corripit nostri non eigit de nuda."

**Dil iulam à terris avere te pestem.** [Ep. ad Eustochiunm, de eustod. virgin.

**Ly.** [Ep. ad Bonciariunm. [Ep. lib. 9. Omnia tua scripta pulcherrima existimno, maximme tamen illa que de nobis. [Exprimere non possim quam sit jucundum, &c."

**Hieron. et flet nos indignas dictum et calidus rutor ora perfundat, utatem ad laudem suam intrinsecus animi latatur.** [Thesaur. Tho.
Now the common cause of this mischief, ariseth from ourselves or others, as we are active and passive. It proceeds inwardly from ourselves, as we are active causes, from an overweening conceit we have of our good parts, own worth, (which indeed is no worth) our bounty, favour, grace, valour, strength, wealth, patience, meekness, hospitality, beauty, temperance, gentry, knowledge, wit, science, art, learning, our "excellent gifts and fortunes, for which, Narcissus-like, we admire, flatter, and applaud ourselves, and think all the world esteemsof us; and as deformed women easily believe those that tell them they be fair, we are too cedulous of our own good parts and praises, too well persuaded of ourselves. We brag and venditate our 'own works, and scorn all others in respect of us; Inflati scientiad (saith Paul), our wisdom, "our learning, all our geese are swans, and we as basely esteem and vilify other men's, as we do, over-highly prize and value our own. We will not suffer them to be in secundis, no, not in textis; what, Nuncum confortur Ulysses? they are Mures, Musae, culicis pro se, nits and flies compared to his inexorable and supercilious, eminent and arrogant worship: though indeed they be far before him. Only wise, only rich, only fortunate, valorous, and fair, puffed up with this tympany of self-conceit; as that proud Pharisee, they are not (as they suppose) "like other men," of a purer and more precious metal: * Soli rei gerendii sunt efficaces, which that wise Periander held of such: * meditatur comme qui prius negotiav. Novi quendam (saith † Erasmus) I knew one so arrogant that he thought himself inferior to no man living, like Callisthenes the philosopher, that neither held Alexander's acts, or any other subject worthy of his pen, such was his insolency; or Seleucus king of Syria, who thought none fit to contend with him but the Romans. * Eos solos dignos ratus quibuscum de imperio certore. That which Tully writ to Atticus long since, is still in force, "There was never yet true poet nor orator, that thought any other better than himself." And such for the most part are your princes, potentates, great philosophers, historiographers, authors of sects or heresies, and all our great scholars, as Hierom defines: "A natural philosopher is a glorious creature, and a very slave of rumour, fame, and popular opinion," and though they write de contemptu gloriae, yet as he observes, they will put their names to their books. * Vobis et famae me semper dedi, saith Trebellius Pollio, I have wholly consecrated myself to you and fame." "Tis all my desire, night and day, 'tis all my study to raise my name." Proud * Pliny seconds him; Quonquam 0. &c. and that vain-glorious orator, is not ashamed to confess in an Epistle of his to Marcus Lceceins Ardeo incredibili cupiditate, &c. "I burn with an incredible desire to have my 'name registered in thy book." Out of this fountain proceed all those cracks and brags,— * speramus carmina fingi Posse linenda cedro, et leni servanda expresso—"Non usitat nec tenui ferar penat nec in terris moraber longius. Nil parum aut humili modo, nil mortales logor. Dicar qua vires ostrepit Ausidas.—Exegi monumentum are perennius. Janoque opus exegi, quod nec Jovis ira, nec ignis, &c., cum venti ile dice, &c., partes tamen meliore mei super alta perennius astra ferar, nomenque erit indebile nostriun. (This of Ovid I have paraphrased in English.)

*In the original, this sentence is not transcribed accurately.

"And when I am dead and gone,
My corpse laid under a stone,
My fame shall yet survive,
And I shall be alive.
In these my works for ever,
My glory shall preserve," &c.
And that of Ennius,

"Nemo me lacrymis decorat, neque funera ficta
Faxit, cur? volito docta per ora virum."

"Let none shed tears over me, or adorn my bier with sorrow—because I am eternally in the mouths of men." With many such proud strains, and foolish flashes too common with writers. Not so much as Democritus on the *Topics, but he will be immortal. *Typotius de famul., shall be famous, and well he deserves, because he writ of fame; and every trivial poet must be renowned, "— *Plausuque petit clarescere vulg." "He seeks the applause of the public.

This puffing humour it is, that hath produced so many great tomes, built such famous monuments, strong castles, and Mausolean tombs, to have their acts eternised, "Digitu monstrari, et dicier hic est;" "to be pointed at with the finger, and to have it said, 'there he goes,'" to see their names inscribed, as Phryne on the walls of Thebes, Phryne fecit; this canseth so many bloody battles, "et noctes cogit vigilare serenas;" "and induces us to watch during calm nights." Long journeys, "Magnum iter intendo, sed dat multi gloria vires," "I contemplate a monstrous journey, but the love of glory strengthens me for it," gaining honour, a little applause, pride, self-love, vain-glory. This it is which makes them take such pains, and break out into those ridiculous strains, this high conceit of themselves, to *scorn all others; *ridiculo fustu et interando contemptu; as *Talmon the grammarian condemned Varro, secum et natae et moritura literas jactans, and brings them to that height of insolency, that they cannot endure to be contradicted, or "hear of any thing but their own commendation," which Hierom notes of such kind of men. And as *Austin well seconds him, "tis their sole study day and night to be commended and applauded." When as indeed, in all wise men's judgments, *quibus cor sapit, they are "mad, empty vessels, funges, beside themselves, derided, et ut Camelus in proverbio quares cornua, etiam quas habebat avras amisit, *their works are toys, as an almanac out of date, *authoris percut rutilitate sui, they seek fame and immortality, but reap dishonour and infamy, they are a common obloquy, *insensati, and come far short of that which they suppose or expect. *O puer ut sis vitalis metuo.

"— How much I dread
Thy days are short, some lord shall strike thee dead."
star there be a sun, as some will, and as this sun of ours hath his planets about him, all inhabited, what proportion bear we to them, and where's our glory? Orbeum terrarum victor Romanus habebat, as he cracked in Petronius, all the world was under Augustus: and so in Constantine's time, Eusebius brags he governed all the world, universum mundum praecelar admodum administravit, —et omnis orbis gentes Imperatori subjecti: so of Alexander it is given out, the four monarchies, &c., when as neither Greeks nor Romans ever had the fifteenth part of the now known world, nor half of that which was then described.

What braggingdoices are they and we then? quæ brevis hic de nobis sermo, as 'he said, pudetii auti nominis, how short a time, how little a while doth this fame of ours continue? Every private province, every small territory and city, when we have all done, will yield as generous spirits, as brave examples in all respects, as famous as ourselves, Cadwalader in Wales, Rollo in Normandy, Robin Hood and Little John, are as much renowned in Sherwood, as Cæsar in Rome, Alexander in Greece, or his Hephestion, Omnis etas omnisque populus in exemplum et admirationem ventet, every town, city, book, is full of brave soldiers, senators, scholars; and though Bracydas was a worthy captain, a good man, and, as they thought, not to be matched in Lacedæmon, yet as his mother truly said, plures habet Sparta Bracyda meliores, Sparta had many better men than ever he was; and howsoever thou admirest thyself, thy friend, many an obscure fellow the world never took notice of, had he been in place or action, would have done much better than he or he, or thou thyself.

Another kind of mad men there is opposite to these, that are insensibly mad, and knound of it, such as contemn all praise and glory, think themselves most free, when as indeed they are most mad: calcant sed alio fastu: a company of cynics, such as are monks, hermits, anachorites, that contemn the world, contemn themselves, contemn all titles, honours, offices: and yet in that contempt are more proud than any man living whatsoever. They are proud in humility, proud in that they are not proud, sese homu de vanæ glorio contemptu, vanius gloriarur, as Austin hath it, confess. lib. 10. cap. 38, like Diogenes, intus gloriantur, they brag inwardly, and feed themselves fat with a self-conceit of sanctity, which is no better than hypocrisy. They go in sheep's russet, many great men that might maintain themselves in cloth of gold, and seem to be dejected, humble by their outward carriage, when as inwardly they are swoln full of pride, arrogancy, and self-conceit. And therefore Seneca adviseth his friend Lucilius, in his attire and gesture, outward actions, especially to avoid all such things as are more notable in themselves: as a rugged attire, hirsute head, horrid beard, contempt of money, coarse lodging, and whatsoever leads to fame that opposite way."

All this madness yet proceeds from ourselves, the main engine which batters us is from others, we are merely passive in this business: from a company of parasites and flatterers, that with immoderate praise, and bombast epithets, glozing titles, false eulogiums, so bedaub and applaud, gild over many a silly and undeserving man, that they clap him quite out of his wits. Res imprima violenta est, as Hierom notes, this common applause is a most violent thing, laudum placenta, a drum, fife, and trumpet cannot so animate; that fattens men, erects and dejects them in an instant. Palma negata macrum, donata reduct optimum. It makes them fat and lean, as frost doth conies. "And who is that mortal man that can so contain himself, that if he be immatchably commended and applauded, will not be moved?" Let him be what he will,
those parasites will overturn him: if he be a king, he is one of the nine
worthies, more than a man, a god forthwith,—*edictum Domini Deique
nostri: and they will sacrifice unto him,
——— "divinos si in patrisi honores,
Utrô ipsi daibinus meritasque sacraibus aras."

If he be a soldier, then Themistocles, Epaminondas, Hector, Achilles, duo
fulmina bell i, triumviri terrarum, &c., and the valour of both Scipios is too
little for him, he is invictissimus, serenissimus, multis trophiiws ornatissimus,
nature dominus, although he be lepus galatas, indeed a very coward, a milk-
sop, þ and as he said of Xerxes, postremus in pugnâ, primus in fugâ, and such
a one as never durst look his enemy in the face. If he be a big man, then is
he a Samson, another Hercules; if he pronounce a speech, another Tully or
Demosthenes: as of Herod in the Acts, "the voice of God and not of man;"
if he can make a verse, Homer, Virgil, &c. And then my silly weak patient
takes all these eulogiums to himself; if he be a scholar so commended for his
much reading, excellent style, method, &c., he will eviscerate himself like a
spider, study to death, Laudatas ostendit avis Junonia pennas, peacock-like he
will display all his feathers. If he be a soldier, and so applauded, his valour
extolled, though it be imper congressus, as that of Troilus, and Achilles, Invelix
puer, he will combat with a giant, run first upon a breach, as another *Philippus,
he will ride into the thickest of his enemies. Commend his housekeeping,
and he will beggar himself; commend his temperance, he will starve himself.
——— "laudatique virtus
Crescit, et immensum gloria calcar habet."§

he is mad, mad, mad, no woe with him;——impatiens consortis erit, he will
over the Alps to be talked of, or to maintain his credit. Commend an ambi-
tuous man, some proud prince or potentate, si plus aquo laudetur (saith
*Erasmus) cristas erigit, exuit hominem, Deum se putat, he sets up his crest,
and will be no longer a man but a god.
——— "fahil est quod credere de se
Non audit quam laudatur dix aqua potestas."¶

How did this work with Alexander, that would needs be Jupiter’s son, and go
like Hercules in a lion’s skin! Domitian a god (**Domini Deus noster sic
fieri jubet), like the †† Persian kings, whose image was adored by all that came
into the city of Babylon. Commodus the emperor was so galled by his flatter-
ing parasites, that he must be called Hercules. † Antonius the Roman would
be crowned with ivy, carried in a chariot, and adored for Bacchus. Cotys,
king of Thrace, was married to *Minerva, and sent three several messengers
one after another, to see if she were come to his bed-chamber. Such a one was
*Jupiter Menecrates, Maximinus Jovianus, Dioclesianus Hercules, Sapor
the Persian king, brother of the sun and moon, and our modern Turks, that
will be gods on earth, kings of kings, God’s shadow, commanders of all that
may be commanded, our kings of China and Tartary in this present age. Such
a one was Xerxes, that would whip the sea, fetter Neptune, stultâ jactandi, and
send a challenge to Mount Athos; and such are manyottish princes, brought
into a fool’s paradise by their parasites, ’tis a common humour, incident to all
men, when they are in great places, or come to the solstice of honour, have
done, or deserved well, to applaud and flatter themselves. Stultitiam suam

* Mart. † Stroza. "If you will accept divine honours, we will willingly erect and consecrate altars to
you." ‡ Justin. • Livius. Gloria tantum estus, non ira. In medium hastas irrucse, quod complectis marus
temple se pagament, a muro spectantes, egregium ducetab. § "Applauded virtue grows space, and
glory includes within it an immense impulse."

¶ There is nothing which over-lauded power will not presume to imagine of itself." **Sueton. c. 12.
††Brisonius.
†‡Antonius ab assentatiis erectus Librum se patrem appellari Juisit, et pro deo se venditavit reducits hedera, et corona velatw aura, et thyrsum tenens, cothurnusque egressus
curru velat Liber pater vectus est Alexandr. Pater. vol. post. • Minerva nugas ambit, tanta furor
periclit, ut satellites mittentes ad videndum sum deus in balsamis venisset, &c. †† Billan. H. 12.
Causes of Melancholy.

Leonartus Fuchsius, Instit. lib. iii. sect. 1. cap. 1. Felix Plater, lib. iii. de mentis alienat., Hercl. de Saxonia, Tract. post. de melanch. cap. 3, speak of a peculiar fury, which comes by overmuch study. Fernelius, lib. 1. cap. 18, puts study, contemplation, and continual meditation, as an especial cause of madness: and in his 86 consul. cites the same words. Jo. Arculanus, in lib. 9, Rhasis ad Alavasorem, cap. 16, amongst other causes reckons up studium vehement: so doth Levinus Lemnius, lib. de occul. nat. mirac. lib. 1, cap. 16. "Many men (saith he) come to this malady by continual study, and night-waking, and of all other men, scholars are most subject to it:" and such Rhasis adds, "that have commonly the finest wits." Cont. lib. 1, tract. 9. Marsilii Ficinus, de sanlt. vita, lib. 1, cap. 7, puts melancholy amongst one of those five principal plagues of students, 'tis a common Maal unto them all, and almost in some measure an inseparable companion. Varro belike for that cause calls Tristes Philosophos et securos, severe, sad, dry, tetric, are common epithets to scholars: and Patritius therefore, in the institution of princes, would not have them to be great students. For (as Machiavel holds) study weakens their bodies, dulls the spirits, abates their strength and courage; and

* De mentis alienat. cap. 2.  
* Sequiturque superbia formam. Livius li. 11. Oraenium est, vividea sepe ingenia luxuriant haec et evanesce, maloquurm secum sensum penitus aneant. Homines inuentar, ac si nisi non vaeest honores.  
* Galeus de Rhibus, vivis alter fiber ferrum, ob inventionem instrumentum Coelestis et Archimedis dicti, praestantia insignit.  
* Insania postmodum corruptas, ob nimium inde arrogans.  
* Bene ferro magnam discas fortunam. Hor.  
* Fortunam reverenter habe, quicquaque repente Dives ab exili progrederi loco. Ausonius.  
* Processit squalidus et submissus, ut hesterni diei gaudium intertemporali hodie castigaret.  
* Exor. Herr. 8.  
* Neuritis sec fortuna extremitium ilciens exspectatum dictis: sed si necessitas alterius subinde imponeretur, optare se difficilem et adversarum: quod in hac nullum unquam defuit solutum, in altera multis consilia, ac Lod. Vives.  
* Peculiaris fuerit, qui ex literis fit. Nilhi magic auger, ac missus studia, et profanae cogitationes.  
* Non desunt, qui ex jugi studio, et intimpestiva lavacrabus, huc dereramur, ut praestet enim pleraque melancholia solevit infestari.  
* Study is a continual and earnest meditation, applied to something with great desire. Tully.  
* Et illi qui sunt subitus juvenil, et multae praeminestiones, de facili incidunt in melancholiam.  
* Ob studiorum sollicitudinem lib. 8. tit. 5.
good scholars are never good soldiers, which a certain Goth well perceived, for when his countrymen came into Greece, and would have burned all their books, he cried out against it, by no means they should do it, "leave them that plague, which in time will consume all their vigour, and martial spirits." The "Turks abdicated Cornutus the next heir from the empire, because he was so much given to his book: and 'tis the common tenet of the world, that learning dulls and diminisheth the spirits, and so per consequens produced melancholy.

Two main reasons may be given of it, why students should be more subject to this malady than others. The one is, they live a sedentary, solitary life, sibi et musis, free from bodily exercise, and those ordinary disports which other men use: and many times if discontent and idleness concur with it, which is too frequent, they are precipitated into this gulf on a sudden: but the common cause is overmuch study; too much learning (as *Festus told Paul) hath made thee mad; 'tis that other extreme which effects it. So did Trincavelli, lib. 1., consil. 12 and 13, find by his experience, in two of his patients, a young baron, and another that contracted this malady by too vehement study. So Forestus, observat. l. 10, observ. 13, in a young divine in Louvaine, that was mad, and said "he had a bible in his head." Marsilius Ficinus de sanct. tuend. lib. 1, cap. 1, 3, 4, and lib. 2, cap. 16, gives many reasons, "why students dote more often than others." The first is their negligence; "other men look to their tools, a painter will wash his pencils, a smith will look to his hammer, anvils, forge; a husbandman will mend his plough-irons, and grind his hatchet, if it be dull; a falconer or huntsman will have an especial care of his hawks, hounds, horses, dogs, &c.; a musician will string and unstring his lute, &c.; only scholars neglect that instrument, their brain and spirits (I mean) which they daily use, and by which they range over all the world, which by much study is consumed." *Vide* (said Lucian) ne jucundum nimis intendendo, aliquando abrumpas: "See thou twist not the rope so hard, till at length it brake." Ficinus in his fourth chap. gives some other reasons; Saturn and Mercury, the patrons of learning, they are both dry planets; and Origamus assigns the same cause, why Mercurialists are so poor, and most part beggars; for that their president Mercury had no better fortune himself. The destines of old put poverty upon him as a punishment; since when, poetry and beggary are Gemelli, twin-born brats, inseparable companions;

"And to this day is every scholar poor; Gross gold from them runs headlong to the boor."

Mercury can help them to knowledge, but not to money. The second is contemplation, "which dries the brain and extinguisheth natural heat; for whilst the spirits are intent to meditation above in the head, the stomach and liver are left destitute, and thence come black blood and crudities by defect of concoction, and for want of exercise the superfluous vapours cannot exhale," &c. The same reasons are repeated by Gomesius, lib. 4, cap. 1. de sale *Nymannus orat. de Imag. Jo. Voschius, lib. 2, cap. 5, de peste: and something more they add, that hard students are commonly troubled with gouts, catarrhs, rheums, 

é cachexia, bradipoezia, bad eyes, stone and colic, crudities, oppilations, vertigo, winds, consumptions, and all such diseases as come by overmuch sitting; they are most part lean, dry, ill-coloured, spend their fortunes, lose their wits, and many times their lives, and all through inordinate pains, and extraordinary studies. If you will not believe the truth of this, look upon great Tostatus and Thomas Aquinas's works, and tell me whether those men took pains! peruse Austin, Hieron, &c., and many thousands besides.

"Qui cupit optatum cursu contingere metam,
Multa tulit, factaque puer, seditat et alit:"  
He that desires this wished goal to gain.

Must sweat and freeze before he can attain," and labour hard for it. So did Seneca, by his own confession, ep. 8. "Not a day that I spend idle, part of the night I keep mine eyes open, tired with waking, and now slumbering to their continual task." Hear Tully pro Archi Posta: "whilst others loitered, and took their pleasures, he was continually at his book," so they do that will be scholars, and that to the hazard (I say) of their healths, fortunes, wits, and lives. How much did Aristotle and Ptolemy spend virius regni precium they say, more than a king's ransom; how many crowns per annum, to perfect arts, the one about his History of Creatures, the other on his Almagest? How much time did Thebet Benchorath employ, to find out the motion of the eighth sphere? forty years and more, some write: how many poor scholars have lost their wits, or become dizzards, neglecting all worldly affairs and their own health, esse and bene esse, to gain knowledge, for which, after all their pains, in this world's esteem they are accounted ridiculous and silly fools, idiots, asses, and (as oft they are) rejected, contempted, derided, doting, and mad. Look for examples in Hildesheim, spicel. 2, de mania et delirio: read Trincavellius, l. 3. consil. 36, et c. 17. Montanus, consil. 233. b Garceus de Judic. genit. cap. 33. Mercurialis consil. 86, cap. 25. Prosper 4 Calenius in his Book de astrâ bile: Go to Bedlam and ask. Or if they keep their wits, yet they are esteemed scurbs and fools by reason of their carriage "after seven years' study"

"statuit tactu trium suim exit,  
Plerunque et risu populum quotit."  
"He becomes more silent than a statue, and generally excites people's laughter." Because they cannot ride a horse, which every clown can do; salute and court a gentlewoman, carve at table, cringe and make congés, which every common swasher can do, hos populus ridet, &c., they are laughed to scorn, and accounted silly fools by our gallants. Yea, many times, such is their misery, they deserve it: 1 a mere scholar, a mere ass.

"Obstipo capite, et agentes lumine terram,  
Marmura cun secum, et rabiosa silentia rodent,  
Atque expersculo transtansur verba labello,  
Egregio veteris meditantes somnia, gumi  
De nihilio nihilium: in nihilium nihil posse reverti."  
"who do lean away.  
Their heads, piercing the earth with a fist eye;

Thus they go commonly meditating unto themselves, thus they sit, such is their action and gesture. Fulgusos, l. 8, c. 7, makes mention how Th. Aquinas, supping with king Lewis of France, upon a sudden knocked his fist upon the table, and cried, conclusum est contra Manicheos: his wits were a wool-gathering, supping with king Lewis of France, upon a sudden knocked his fist upon the table, and cried, conclusum est contra Manicheos: his wits were a wool-gathering, supping with king Lewis of France, upon a sudden knocked his fist upon the table, and cried, conclusum est contra Manicheos: his wits were a wool-gathering, when he perceived his error, he was much abashed. Such a story there is of Archimedes in Vitruvius, that having found out the means to know how much gold was mimgled
with the silver in king Hiero's crown, ran naked forth from the bath and cried " \\
I have found: "And was commonly so intent to his studies, that he never perceived what was done about him: when the city was taken, and the \\
soldiers now ready to rifle his house, he took no notice of it." St. Bernard \\
rode all day long by the Lemnian lake, and asked at last where he was, Marul-


with the silver in king Hiero's crown, ran naked forth from the bath and cried "I have found: "And was commonly so intent to his studies, that he never perceived what was done about him: when the city was taken, and the soldiers now ready to rifle his house, he took no notice of it." St. Bernard rode all day long by the Lemnian lake, and asked at last where he was, Marulus, lib. 2, cap. 4. It was Democritus's carriage alone that made the Abderites suppose him to have been mad, and sent for Hippocrates to cure him: if he had been in any solemn company, he would upon all occasions fall a laughing. Theophrastus saith as much of Heraclitus, for that he continually wept, and Laertius of Menedemus Lampsacus, because he ran like a madman, saying, "he came from hell as a spy, to tell the devils what mortal men did." Your greatest students are commonly no better, silly, soft fellows in their outward behaviour, absurd, ridiculous to others, and no whit experienced in worldly business; they can measure the heavens, range over the world, teach others wisdom, and yet in bargains and contracts they are circumvented by every base tradesman. Are not these men fools? and how should they be otherwise, "but as so many sots in schools, when (as 'he well observed) they neither hear nor see such things as are commonly practised abroad?" how should they get experience, by what means? "I knew in my time many scholars," saith Æneas Sylvius (in an epistle of his to GASPER SCITICK, chancellor to the em- 
peror), "excellent well learned, but so rude, so silly, that they had no common civility, nor knew how to manage their domestic or public affairs." "Pagla-


now, because they are commonly subject to such hazards and inconve-
niences as dotage, madness, simplicity, &c., Jo. Voschius would have good 
scholars to be highly rewarded, and had in some extraordinary respect above 
other men, "to have greater "privileges than the rest, that adventure them-


"If there were nothing else to trouble them, the conceit of this alone were 


enough to make them all melancholy. Most other trades and professions, after some seven years' apprenticeship, are not capable of a craft to live of them-
selves. A merchant adventures his goods at sea, and though his hazard be great,


Fuerunt morbi, lactus, curaque laborque |


Terribilis vicus formas" |


Grief, labour, care, pale sickness, miserable, |


Fear, filthy poverty, hunger that cries, |


Terrible monsters to be seen with eyes." |
Causes of Melancholy.

yet if one ship return of four, he likely makes a saving voyage. An husband
man’s gains are almost certain; quibus ipsis Jupiter nescire non potest (whom
Jove himself can’t harm), (tis * Cato’s hyperbole, a great husband himself); 
only scholars methinks are most uncertain, unrespected, subject to all casual-

dies and hazards. For first, not one of a many proves to be a scholar, all 
are not capable and docile, ✓ ex omnii ligno non fit Mercurius: we can make 
majors and officers every year, but not scholars: kings can invest knights 
and barons, as Sigismund the emperor confessed; universities can give de-
grees; and Tu quid es, è populo quilibet esse potest; but he not they, nor all 
the world, can give learning, make philosophers, artists, orators, poets; we 
can soon say, as Seneca well notes, O virum bonum, ô dividem, point at a rich 
man, a good, a happy man, a prosperous man, sumptuoso vestitum, Calamis-
tratum, bene olentem, magni temporis impendio constat hoc laudabo, ô virum 
literarum, but ‘tis not so easily performed to find out a learned man. Learn-
ing is not so quickly got, though they may be willing to take pains, to that 
end sufficiently informed, and liberally maintained by their patrons and parents, 
yet few can compass it. Or if they be docile, yet all men’s wills are not an-
swerable to their wits, they can apprehend, but will not take pains; they 
are either seduced by bad companions, vel in puellam impingunt, vel in pecu-
lium (they fall in with women or wine), and so spend their time to their friends’ 
grief and their own undoings. Or put case they be studious, industrious, of 
ripe wits, and perhaps good capacities, then how many diseases of body and 
mind must they encounter? No labour in the world like unto study. It 
may be, their temperature will not endure it, but striving to be excellent to 
know all, they lose health, wealth, wit, life and all. Let him yet happily 
escape all these hazards, eres intestinis, with a body of brass, and is now con-
summate and ripe, he hath profited in his studies, and proceeded with all 
applause: after many expenses, he is fit for preferment, where shall he have it? 
he is as far to seek it as he was (after twenty years’ standing) at the 
first day of his coming to the University. For what course shall he take, 
being now capable and ready? The most parable and easy, and about which 
many are employed, is to teach a school, turn lecturer or curate, and for that 
he shall have falconer’s wages, ten pound per annum, and his diet, or some 
small stipend, so long as he can please his patron or the parish; if they 
approve him not (for usually they do but a year or two), as inconstant as † they 
that eried “Hosanna” one day, and “Crucify him” the other; serving-man-
like, he must go look a new master; if they do, what is his reward?

∗∗‘Hoc quoque te manet ut pueros elementa docentem
Ocuperet extremis in viuis alba senectus:’

Like an ass, he wears out his time for provender, and can show a stum rod, 
togam tritam et laceram, saith † Hæsus, an old torn gown, an ensign of his 
infelicity, he hath his labour for his pain, a molicum to keep him till he be 
decrepit, and that is all. Grammaticus non est felix, &c. If he be a trencher 
chaplain in a gentleman’s house, as it befal ∗ Euphorhnia, after some seven 
years’ service, he may perchance have a living to the halves, or some small 
rectory with the mother of the maids at length, a poor kinswomen, or a 
cracked chambermaid, to have and to hold during the time of his life. But if 
he offend his good patron, or displease his lady mistress in the mean time,

∗Duceau Planctas velut letus ab Hercule Caesu,
Pomatuerque foras, si quid tentaverit unquam
Hercere’——

as Hercules did by Caesu, he shall be dragged forth of doors by the heels,

*Plutarch, vita elus, Certum aggragationis lucrum, &c.  
*Quotidianum sunt consulatur et proconsulatur: 
*Ex et Foeta quotidianum non nasceatur. † Mat. 21.  
† Hor. epist. 20 1. 1. ‡ Lib. 1. de contum. autot.  
*Satyricon.  
*Juvi. Sat. 9.
away with him. If he bend his forces to some other studies, with an intent to be at secretis to some nobleman, or in such a place with an ambassador, he shall find that these persons rise like apprentices one under another, and in so many tradesmen's shops, when the master is dead, the foreman of the shop commonly steps in his place. Now for poets, rhetoricians, historians, philosophers, mathematicians, sophisters, &c.; they are like grasshoppers, sing they must in summer, and pine in the winter, for there is no prefarrment for them. Even so they were at first, if you will believe that pleasant tale of Socrates, which he told fair Phaedrus under a plane tree, at the banks of the river Issus; about noon when it was hot, and the grasshoppers made a noise, he took that sweet occasion to tell him a tale, how grasshoppers were once scholars, musicians, poets, &c., before the Muses were born, and lived without meat and drink, and for that cause were turned by Jupiter into grasshoppers. And may be turned again, in Typhon Cicadæs aut Lyciorum ruinas, for any reward I see they are like to have: or else in the meantime, I would they could live as they did, without any vaticinium, like so many manumodiatae, those Indian birds of paradise, as we commonly call them, those I mean that live with the air and dew of heaven, and need no other food? for being as they are, their " rhetoric only serves them to curse their bad fortunes," and many of them for want of means are driven to hard shifts; from grasshoppers they turn humble-bees and wasps, plain parasites, and make the muses, mules, to satisfy their hunger-starved paunches, and get a meal's meat. To say truth, 'tis the common fortune of most scholars, to be servile and poor, to complain pitifully, and lay open their wants to their respectless patrons, as Cardan doth, as Xilander and many others: and which is too common in those dedicatory epistles, for hope of gain, to lie, flatter, and with hyperbolical elogiums and commendations, to magnify and extol an illiterate unworthy idiot, for his excellent virtues, whom they should rather, as Machiavel observes, vilify and rail at downright for his most notorious villainies and vices. So they prostitute themselves as fiddlers, or mercenary tradesmen, to serve great men's turns for a small reward. They are like § Indians, they have store of gold, but know not the worth of it: for I am of Synesius's opinion. "King Hiero got more by Simonides acquaintance, than Simonides did by his;" they have their best education, good institution, sole qualification from us, and when they have done well, their honour and immortality from us: we are the living tombs, registers, and as so many trumpeters of their fames: what was Achilles without Homer? Alexander without Arrian and Curtius? who had known the Caesars, but for Suetonius and Dion?

"[Vixerunt fortes ante Asiam Carminum
Multla sed quæm illehaemiasides
Urgentur, igne tique longa
Nocet, cantet quisque sacro."

"Before great Aesammones regant,
Regia d kings as great as he, and brave,
Whose huge ambition's now confin'd
In the small compass of a grave:
In endless night they sleep, unwept, unknown,
No bard they had to make all time their own."

they are more beholden to scholars, than scholars to them; but they undervalue themselves, and so by those great men are kept down. Let them have that encyclopædian, all the learning in the world; they must keep it to themselves, "I live in base esteem, and starve, except they will submit," as Budaœus well hath it, "so many good parts, so many ensigns of arts, virtues, be slavishly obnoxious to some illiterate potentate, and live under his insolent

---

1. According to Calcidius.  
6. Polit. disput. laudibus exaltant eos, &c. virtutibus polemient quos ob infinita aestiva potius vittuperare oporteat.  
7. Or as horses know not their strength, they consider not their own worth.  
8. Plura ex simonides familiaritate Hiero consequantur; est, quam ex Hiero having Simoniudes.  
9. Hor. Lib. 4, ad 3.  
10. Inser fraters et plebesior fore lucet; ultimum locum habens, nisi tot artis virtutissimæ insignis, turpissimi obnoxious, supparislatinando faciabas subjecist extremo insolentissimae potentias, Lib. 1. de contempt. rerum fortunatarum.
Causes of Melancholy.

[Part. I. Sec. 2.]

worship, or honour, like parasites," Qui tanquam mures alienum panem com-duct. For to say truth, artes haec non sunt lucrative, as Guido Bonat that great astrologer could foresee, they be not gainful arts these, sed esurientes et famelice, but poor and hungry.

"* Dat Galenus opes, dat Justinianus honores, Sed genus et species cogitari irre potest;" | "The rich physician, honour'd lawyers ride, Whilst the poor scholar foots it by their side."

Poverty is the muse's patrimony, and as that poetical divinity teacheth us, when Jupiter's daughters were each of them married to the gods, the muses alone were left solitary, Helicon forsaken of all suitors, and I believe it was, because they had no portion.

"Calliopae longam celebres car vixit in avum! Nempe nihil dotis, qued numeraret, erat." | "Why did Calliopae live so long a maid? Because she had no dowry to be paid."

Ever since all their followers are poor, forsaken and left unto themselves, Insomuch, that as Petronius argues, you shall likely know them by their clothes. "There came," saith he, "by chance into my company, a fellow not very spruce to look on, that I could perceive by that note alone he was a scholar, whom commonly rich men hate: I asked him what he was, he answered, a poet: I demanded again why he was so ragged, he told me this kind of learning never made any man rich."

"* Qui Petago credit, magnus se famore tollit, Qui pugnas et rostra petiti, praeceps auro: Villula adulator picto facundia altrius. Sola pruinosis horret facundia paenu." | "A merchant's gain is great, that goes to sea; A soldier embossed all in gold; A flatterer lies fast in a brave array; A scholar only raged to behold."

All which our ordinary students, right well perceiving in the universities, how unprofitable these poetical, mathematical, and philosophical studies are, how little respected, how few patrons; apply themselves in all haste to those three commodious professions of law, physic, and divinity, sharing themselves between them, rejecting these arts in the meantime, history, philosophy, philology, or lightly passing them over, as pleasant toys fitting only table-talk, and to furnish them with discourse. They are not so behoveful: he that can tell his money hath arithmetic enough: he is a true geometrician, can measure out a good fortune to himself; a perfect astrologer that can cast the rise and fall of others, and mark their errant motions to his own use. The best optics are, to reflect the beams of some great men's favour and grace to shine upon him. He is a good engineer, that alone can make an instrument to get preferment. This was the common tenet and practice of Poland, as Cromerus observed not long since, in the first book of his history; their universities were generally base, not a philosopher, a mathematician, an antiquary, &c., to be found of any note amongst them, because they had no set reward or stipend, but every man betook himself to divinity, hoc solum in votis habens, optimum sacerdotium, a good parsonage was their aim. This was the practice of some of our near neighbours, as Lippius inveighs, "they thrust their children to the study of law and divinity, before they be informed aright, or capable of such studies." Scilicet omnibus artibus autstat spes luceri, et for- mostor est cumulums ueri, quam quicquid Gracii Latinique deligantes scripservant. Ex hoc numero deinde veniant ad gubernacula reipub. intersunt et pressunt consilliis regum, ò pater, ò patria? so he complained, and so may others. For even so we find, to serve a great man, to get an office in some bishop's court (to practise in some good town), or compass a benefice, is the mark we shoot at, as being so advantageous, the highway to preferment. Although many times, for aught I can see, these men fail as often as the

* Buchanan, eleg. bib. 1 In Satyrican. intrat senex, sed cultu non ipsa speciosus, ut facili appareret enm hac nostra literatum esse, quos divites odisse solent. Ergo iniquo Poetae aium Quae ergo tam male vestitus est? Proprer hoc ipsum; amore ingenii neminem unquam divinum fuit. 2 Oppressus puerpater animas, nihil eximium aut sublime cogitare potest, ammortatis literarum, aut elegantiam, quantum nihil possidii in his ad vitam commodum videt, primo negligere, mox odisse incipit. Illius, 1 Epistol. quaest. bib. 4. Ep. 21.
rest in their projects, and are as usually frustrate of their hopes. For let him be a doctor of the law, an excellent civilian of good worth, where shall he practise and expatiate? Their fields are so scant, the civil law with us so contracted with prohibitions, so few causes, by reason of those all-devouring municipal laws, quibus nihil illustratus, saith Erasmus, an illiterate and a barbarous study (for though they be never so well learned in it, I can hardly vouchsafe them the name of scholars, except they be otherwise qualified), and so few courts are left to that profession, such slender offices, and those commonly to be compassed at such dear rates, that I know not how an ingenious man should thrive amongst them. Now for physicians, there are in every village so many mountebanks, empirics, quacksalvers, paracelsians, as they call themselves, Caucyfici et sancidices, so * Clenard terms them, wizards, alchemists, poor vicars, cast apothecaries, physicians' men, barbers, and good wives, professing great skill, that I make great doubt how they shall be maintained, or who shall be their patients. Besides, there are so many of both sorts, and some of them such harpies, so covetous, so clamorous, so impudent; and as he said, litigious idiots,

"Quibus legates affliction arrogantiae cat, Perite parum aut nihil, Nee valla mica literarii satis, Crumenimulga natio: Leptoteias turba, litium strophon, Maligna litigantium coheres, tegati vultures, Laverne alumnus, Asytes," &c.

that they cannot well tell how to live one by another, but as he jested in the Comedy of Clocks, they were so many, † major pars populii aridam reptant famam, they are almost starved a great part of them, and ready to devour their fellows, ‡ Et noxid calliditate se corripere, such a multitude of petitagogues and empirics, such impostors, that an honest man knows not in what sort to compose and behave himself in their society, to carry himself with credit in so vile a rout, scientia nomen, tot sumplibus partum et vigilia, profiteri dispudet, postquam, &c.

Last of all come to our divines, the most noble profession and worthy of double honour, but of all others the most distressed and miserable. If you will not believe me, hear a brief of it, as it was not many years since publicly preached at Paul's cross, in a grave minister then, and now a reverend bishop of this land: "We that are bred up in learning, and destined by our parents to this end, we suffer our childhood in the grammar-school, which Austin calls magnam tyrannidem, et grave malum, and compares it to the torments of martyrdom; when we come to the university, if we live of the college allowance, as Phalaris objected to the Leontines, παρίζω πρός πάλιν ημείς και τρίτος, needy of all things but hunger and fear, or if we be maintained but partly by our parents' cost, do expend in unnecessary maintenance, books and degrees, before we come to any perfection, five hundred pounds, or a thousand marks. If by this price of the expense of time, our bodies and spirits, our substance and patrimonies, we cannot purchase those small rewards, which are ours by law, and the right of inheritance, a poor parsonage, or a vicarage of £50 per annum, but we must pay to the patron for the lease of a life (a spent and out-worn life) either in annual pension, or above the rate of a copyhold, and that with the hazard and loss of our souls, by simony and perjury, and the forfeiture of all our spiritual preferments, in esse et posses, both present and to come. What father after a while will be so improvident to bring up his son to his great charge, to this necessary beggary? What Christian will be so irreligious, to bring up his son in that course of life, which by all probability and necessity, cogeat ad turpia, enforcing to sin, will entangle him in simony

* Ciceron. dial.  † Eplab. lib. 2.  ‡ Ja. Douan Epodon. lib. 2. car. 2.  § Plautus.  ‡ Bard.  Argenis. lib. 3.  = Joh. Howson 4 Novemberis 1597, the sermon was printed by Arnold Hartfield.
Causes of Melancholy.

[Part 1. Soc. 2.]

and perjury," when as the poet said, Invitat us ad huc aliquis de ponte negabit: "a beggar's brat taken from the bridge where he sits a begging, if he knew the inconvenience, had cause to refuse it." This being thus, have not we fished fair all this while, that are initiate divines, to find no better fruits of our labours, "hoc est our pulles, cur quis non prandeat? hoc est? do we macerate ourselves for this? Is it for this we rise so early all the year long? "*leaping (as he saith) out of our beds, when we hear the bell ring, as if we had heard a thunderclap." If this be all the respect, reward and honour we shall have, Frange leves calamos, et sicinde Thalia libellos: let us give over our books, and betake ourselves to some other course of life; to what end should we study? Quid me litterulas stulti docuere parentes, what did our parents mean to make us scholars, to be as far to seek of preferment after twenty years' study, as we were at first: why do we take such pains? Quid tantum insanis juxta impallescere chartis? If there be no more hope of reward, no better encouragement, I say again, Frange leves calamos, et sicinde Thalia libellos; let's turn soldiers, sell our books, and buy swords, guns, and pikes, or stop bottles with them, turn our philosopher's gowns, as Cleanthes once did, into millers' coats, leave all, and rather betake ourselves to any other course of life, than to continue longer in this misery. Praestat dentiscalpia radere, quain litterarivs monumentis magnatum favorem emendicare.

Yea, but methinks I hear some man except at these words, that though this be true, which I have said of the estate of scholars, and especially of divines, that it is miserable and distressed at this time, that the church suffers shipwreck of her goods, and that they have just cause to complain; there is a fault, but whence proceeds it? If the cause were justly examined, it would be retorted upon ourselves, if we were cited at that tribunal of truth, we should be found guilty, and not able to excuse it. That there is a fault among us, I confess, and were there not a buyer, there would not be a seller: but to him that will consider better of it, it will more than manifestly appear, that the fountain of these miseries proceeds from these gorping patrons. In accusing them, I do not altogether excuse us; both are faulty, they and we: yet in my judgment, theirs is the greater fault, more apparent causes, and much to be condemned. For my part, if it be not with me as I would, or as it should, I do ascribe the cause, as "Cardan did in the like case: nemo infortunio potius quam illorum sceleri, to mine own infidelity rather than their naughtiness; although I have been baffled in my time by some of them, and have as just cause to complain as another: or rather indeed to mine own negligence; for I was ever like that Alexander in § Plutarch, Crassus his tutor in philosophy, who, though he lived many years familiarly with rich Crassus, was even as poor when from (which many wondered at) as when he came first to him; he never asked, the other never gave him any thing; when he travelled with Crassus he borrowed a hat of him, at his return restored it again. I have had some such noble friends' acquaintance and scholars, but most part (common courtesies and ordinary respects excepted), they and I parted as we met, they gave me as much as I requested, and that was — Aud as Alexander ab Alexandro, Genial. dier. l. 6. c. 16. made answer to Hieronymus Massaimus, that wondered, quum plures ignaves et ignobles ad dignitates et aederaetia promotos quotidiani videret, when other men rose, still he was in the same state, cedem tenere et fortunae cui mercedem laborum studiorumque debere putaret, whom he thought to deserve as well as the rest. He made answer, that he was content with his present estate,
was not ambitious, and although objurgabundus suam senvitiam accusaret, cum obsecure sortis hominis ad excerollia et pontificiacus exterrt, &c., he chid him for his backwardness, yet he was still the same: and for my part (though I be not worthy perhaps to carry Alexander's books) yet by some overweening and well-wishing friends, the like speeches have been used to me; but I replied still with Alexander, that I had enough, and more peradventure than I deserved; and with Libanius Sophista, that rather chose (when honours and offices by the emperor were offered unto him) to be talis Sophista, quam talis Magistratus. I had as lief be still Democritus junior, and privus privatus, si mihi jam daretur optio, quam talis fortasse Doctor, talis Dominius.—-Sei quorsum hoc? For the rest 'tis on both sides facinus detestandum, to buy and sell livings, to detain from the church, and that God's and men's laws have bestowed on it; but in them most, and that from the covetousness and ignorance of such as are interested in this business; I name covetousness in the first place, as the root of all these mischiefs, which, Achan-like, compels them to commit sacrilege, and to make simoniacal compacts, (and what not) to their own ends, 'that kindles God's wrath, brings a plague, vengeance, and a heavy visitation upon themselves and others. Some out of that insatiable desire of filthy lucre, to be enriched, care not how they come by it per fias et nefas, hook or crook, so they have it. And others when they have with riot and prodigality embezzeled their estates, to recover themselves, make a prey of the church, robbing it, as "Julian the apostate did, spoil parsons of their revenues (in keeping half back 'as a great man amongst us observes): "and that maintenance on which they should live," by means whereof, barbarism is increased, and a great decay of christian professors: for who will apply himself to these divine studies, his son, or friend, when after great pains taken, they shall have nothing whereupon to live? But with what event do they these things?

"*Opesque totis viribus venamini, 
At inde messis accidit inserrima."

They toil and moil, but what reap they? They are commonly unfortunate families that use it, accused in their progeny, and, as common experience evinceth, accused themselves in all their proceedings. "With what face (as he quotes out of Auct.) can they expect a blessing or inheritance from Christ in heaven, that defraud Christ of his inheritance here on earth?" I would all our simoniacal patrons, and such as detain tithes, would read those judicious tracts of Sir Henry Spelman, and Sir James Sempill, knights; those late elaborate and learned treatises of Dr. Tillbye, and Mr. Montague, which they have written of that subject. But though they should read, it would be to small purpose, clanes lect et mare cxro confundus; thunder, lighten, preach hell and damnation, tell them 'tis a sin, they will not believe it; denounce and terrify, they have cantedised consciences, they do not attend, as the enchanted adder, they stop their ears. Call them base, irreligious, profane, barbarous, pagans, atheists, epicureans, (as some of them surely are) with the bawd in Plautus, Euge, optimus, they cry and applaud themselves with that miser, simul ac numinos contemptor in arct, say what you will, quocunque modo rem: as a dog barks at the moon, to no purpose are your sayings: Take your heaven, let them have money. A base, profane, epicurean, hypocritical rout: for my part, let them pretend what zeal they will, counterfeit religion, blear the world's eyes, bombast themselves, and stuff out their greatness with church spoils, shine like so many peacocks; so cold is my charity, so defective in this behalf, that I shall never think better of them, than that they are rotten at core, their

* Nicephorus lib. 10. cap. 5. 1 Lord Cook, in his Reports, second part, fol. 41.
* Euripides. * Sir Henry Spelman, de non tenemrandis Ecclesias. 1 Tim. 4. 2. 
* Hor. *
Causes of Melancholy. [Part. 1. Sec. 2.

...bones are full of epicurean hypocrisy, and atheistical marrow, they are worse than heathens. For as Dionysius Halicarnassensis observes, Antiq. Rom. lib. 7. "Primum locum, &c. "Greeks and Barbarians observe all religious rites, and dare not break them for fear of offending their gods; but our simoniacal contractors, our senseless Achans, our stupified patrons, fear neither God nor devil, they have evasions for it, it is no sin, or not due jure divino, or if a sin, no great sin, &c. And though they be daily punished for it, and they do manifestly perceive, that as he said, frost and fraud come to foul ends; yet as

"Chrysostom follows it, Nulla ex peenâ sit correctio, et quasi adversis malitia hominum provocet, crescit quotidié quod puniatur: they are rather worse than better,—iam atque anninos à criminibus sumunt, and the more they are corrected, the more they offend: but let them take their course, &c. Rode, caper, vites, go on still as they begin, 'tis no sin, let them rejoice secure, God's vengeance will overtake them in the end, and these ill-gotten goods, as an eagle's feathers, will consume the rest of their substance; it is "aurum Tholosanum, and will produce no better effects. "Let them lay it up safe, and make their conveyances never so close, lock and shut door," saith Chrysostom, "yet fraud and covetousness, two most violent thieves, are still included, and a little gain evil gotten will subvert the rest of their goods." The eagle in Æsop, seeing a piece of flesh, now ready to be sacrificed, swept it away with her claws, and carried it to her nest; but there was a burning coal stuck to it by chance, which unawares consumed her young ones, nest, and all together. Let our simoniacal church-chopping patrons, and sacrilegious harpies, look for no better success.

A second cause is ignorance, and from thence contempt, successit odium in literas ab ignorantia vulgi; which "Junius well perceived: this hatred and contempt of learning proceeds out of ignorance; as they are themselves barbarous, idiots, dull, illiterate, and proud, so they esteem of others. Sint Meccenates, non deerrunt, Placce, Marones: Let there be bountiful patrons, and there will be painful scholars in all sciences. But when they contemn learning, and think themselves sufficiently qualified, if they can write and read, scramble at a piece of evidence, or have so much Latin as that emperor had, "qui nescit dissimulare, nescit vivere, they are unfit to do their country service, to perform or undertake any action or employment, which may tend to the good of a commonwealth, except it be to fight, or to do country justice, with common sense, which every yeoman can likewise do. And so they bring up their children, rude as they are themselves, unqualified, untaught, uncivil most part. "Quis è nostrâ juventute legitimè instituitur literis? Quis oratores aut philosophos tangit? quis historiam legit, illum rerum agendarum quasi animam praecipient parentes vota tua, &c. 'twas Lipsius' complaint to his illiterate countrymen, it may be ours. Now shall these men judge of a scholar's worth, that have no worth, that know not what belongs to a student's labours, that cannot distinguish between a true scholar and a drone? or him that by reason of a valuable tongue, a strong voice, a pleasing tone, and some trivially polyanthan helps, steals and gleans a few notes from other men's harvests, and so makes a fairer show, than he that is truly learned indeed: that thinks it no more to preach, than to speak, "or to run away with an empty cart;" as a grave man said: and thereupon vilify us, and our pains; scorn us, and all learning. "Because they are rich, and have..."
other means to live, they think it concerns them not to know, or to trouble themselves with it; a fitter task for younger brothers, or poor men's sons, to be pen and inkhorn men, pedantical slaves, and no whit beseeeming the calling of a gentleman, as Frenchmen and Germans commonly do, neglect therefore all human learning, what have they to do with it? Let mariners learn astronomy; merchants, factors study arithmetic; surveyors get them geometry; spectacle-makers optics; landleapers geography; town-clerks rhetoric, what should he do with a spade, that hath no ground to dig; or they with learning, that hath no use of it? thus they reason, and are not ashamed to let mariners, apprentices, and the basest servants, be better qualified than themselves. In former times, kings, princes, and emperors, were the only scholars, excellent in all faculties.

Julius Caesar mended the year, and writ his own Commentaries,

" *media inter praelia semper, Stularum collique plagis, superisque vacuit."

1 Antonius, Adrian, Nero, Seve. Jul. &c. 2 Michael the emperor, and Issicus, were so much given to their studies, that no base fellow would take so much pains: Orion, Perseus, Alphonson, Ptolomeus, famous astronomers; Sabor, Mithridates, Lysimachus, admired physicians: Plato's kings all: Evax, that Arabian prince, a most expert jeweller, and an exquisite philosopher; the kings of Egypt were priests of old, chosen and from thence,—Idem rex hominum, Phareique sucerdos: but those herocical times are past; the Muses are now banished in this bastard age, ad sordida tuguriola, to meaner persons, and confined alone almost to universities. In those days, scholars were highly beloved, *honoured, esteemed; as old Ennius by Scipio Africanus, Virgil by Augustus; Horace by Mecenas: princes' companions; dear to them, as Anacreon to Poly-crates; Philoxenus to Dionysius, and highly rewarded. Alexander sent Xenocrates the Philosopher fifty talents, because he was poor, visu rerum, aut eruditione prostantes viri, menitis olim regum achibiti, as Philostratus relates of Adrian and Lampadius of Alexander Severus: famous clerks came to these princes' courts, velut in Lyceum, as to a university, and were admitted to their tables, quasi divinum epulis accumbentes; Archilaus, that Macedonian king, would not willingly sup without Euripides (amongst the rest he drank to him at supper one night and gave him a cup of gold for his pains), deditatus poetae suavi sermone; and it was fit it should be so; because, as †Plato in his Protagoras well saith, a good philosopher as much excels other men, as a great king doth the commons of his country; and again, *quomiam illis nihil deest, et minimè egere solet, et disciplinas quas profitentur, soli à contemplu vindicare possunt, they needed not to beg so basely, as they compel *scholars in our times to complain of poverty, or crouch to a rich chuff for a meal's meat, but could vindicate themselves, and those arts which they prosessed. Now they would and cannot: for it is held by some of them, as an axiom, that to keep them poor, will make them study; they must be dieted, as horses to a race, not pampered, ‡ Alendos volupt, non saginandos, ne melioris mentis flammula extinguatur; *a fat bird will not sing, a fat dog cannot hunt, and so by this depression of theirs, *some want means, others will, all want *encouragement, as being forsaken almost; and generally contemned. †Tis an old saying, Sint Mecenas, non deerunt, Flaccus, Marones, and ‡tis a true saying still. Yet oftentimes, I may not deny it, the main fault is in ourselves. Our academica

Causes of Melancholy.

[Part 1. Sec. 2.]

too frequently offend in neglecting patrons, as *Erasmus well taxeth, or making ill choice of them; negligentus oblatos aut amplexatur purum aptos, or if we get a good one, non studensus mutuis officiis favorem ejus alere, we do not ply and follow him as we should. *Idem mihij accidit Adolescenti (saith Erasmus) acknowledging his fault, et gravissime peccavi, and so may †I say myself; I have offended in this, and so peradventure have many others. We did not spondere magnatum favoribus, qui coperunt nos amplexi, apply ourselves with that readiness we should: idleness, love of liberty, immodicus amor libertatis effecto ut diu cum perfidis amicis, as he confesseth, et pertinaci paupertate locutur, bashfulness, melancholy, timorousness, cause many of us to be too backward and remiss. So some offend in one extreme, but too many on the other, we are most part too forward, too solicitous, too ambitious, too impudent; we commonly complain desse Maccenates, of want of encouragement, want of means, when as the true defect is in our own want of worth, our insufficiency: did Maccenas take notice of Horace or Virgil till they had shown themselves first? or had Bavius and Mevius any patrons? *Egregium specimen dext, saith Erasmus, let them approve themselves worthy first, sufficiently qualified for learning and manners, before they presume or impudently intrude and put themselves on great men as too many do, with such base flattery, parasitical colleguing, such hyperbolical elegies they do usually insinuate, that it is a shame to hear and see. *Immodice laudes conciliant inviidiam, potius quam laudem, and vain commendations derogate from truth, and we think in conclusion, non melius de laudato, pejus de laudante, ill of both, the commender and commended. So we offend, but the main fault is in their harshness, defect of patrons. How beloved of old, and how much respected was Plato to Dionysius? How dear to Alexander was Aristotle, Demeratus to Philip, Solon to Cressus, Anaxarcus and Trebatius to Augustus, Cassius to Vespasian, Plutarch to Trajan, Seneca to Nero, Simonides to Hiero? how honoured?

"Sed hinc prius huere, nunc recondita Senem quieta,"

those days are gone; *Et spes, et ratio studiorum in Cesare tantum:* †as he said of old, we may truly say now, he is our amulet, our "sun, our sole comfort and refuge, our Ptolemy, our common Maccenas, Jacobus manicus, Jacobus pacificus, mystic Musarum, Rex Platonicus: Grande docus, columnenque nostrum: a famous scholar himself, and the sole patron, pillar, and sustainer of learning: but his worth in this kind is so well known, that as Paterculus of Cato, Jam ipsum laudare nefas sit: and which §Pliny to Trajan, Seria te cornina, honorque aeternus annalium, non hue brevis et pudenda praedicatio coet. But he is now gone, the sun of ours set, and yet no night follows, Sol occubuit, nox nulla sequueta est. We have such another in his room, ||auerus alter. Avulsus, simili frondesecit virga metallo, and long may he reign and flourish amongst us.

Let me not be malicious, and lie against my genius, I may not deny, but that we have a sprinkling of our gentry, here and there one, excellently well learned, like those Fuggeri in Germany; Dubartus, Du Plessis, Sadael, in France; Picus Miranda, Schottus, Barotius, in Italy; *Apparent vori vantes in gurgite vaste. But they are but few in respect of the multitude, the major part (and some again excepted, that are indifferent) are wholly bent for hawks and hounds, and carried away many times with intemperate lust, gaming and drinking. If they read a book at any time (si quod est interim oti a venatu, poculis, alea, scortis) ’tis an English Chronicle, St. Huon of Bordeaux, Amadis

*Chil. 4. Cent. 1. add. 1. † Had I done as others did, put myself forward, I might have haply been as great a man as many of my equals. ‡Catullus, Juven. § All our hopes and inducements to study are centred in Caesar alone. \[Paus. \] Virgil.
de Gaul, &c., a play book, or some pamphlet of news, and that at such seasons only, when they cannot stir abroad, to drive away time, their sole discourse is dogs, hawks, horses, and what news? If some one have been a traveller in Italy, or as far as the emperor's court, wintered in Orleans, and can court his mistress in broken French, wear his clothes neatly in the newest fashion, sing some choice outlandish tunes, discourse of lords, ladies, towns, palaces, and cities, he is complete and to be admired: otherwise he and they are much at one; no difference between the master and the man, but worshipful titles: wink and choose betwixt him that sits down (clothes excepted) and him that holds the trencher behind him: yet these men must be our patrons, our governors too sometimes, statesmen, magistrates, noble, great, and wise by inheritance.

Mistake me not (I say again) Vos, Πατρίτιους sanguis, you that are worthy senators, gentlemen, I honour your names and persons, and with all submission, prostrate myself to your censure and service. There are amongst you, I do ingenuously confess, many well-deserving patrons, and true patriots, of my knowledge, besides many hundreds which I never saw, no doubt, or heard of, pillars of our commonwealth, whose worth, bounty, learning, forwardness, true zeal in religion, and good esteem of all scholars, ought to be consecrated to all posterity; but of your rank, there are a debauched, corrupt, covetous, illiterate crew again, no better than stocks, merum pecus (testor Deum, non mihi videri dignos ingenui hominis appellatone), barbarous Thracians, et quis ille thrax qui hoc neget? a sordid, profane, pernicious company, irreligious, impudent and stupid, I know not what epithets to give them, enemies to learning, confounders of the church, and the ruin of a commonwealth; patrons they are by right of inheritance, and put in trust freely to dispose of such livings to the church's good; but (hard task-masters they prove) they take away their straw, and compel them to make their number of brick; they commonly respect their own ends, commodity is the steer of all their actions, and him they present in conclusion, as a man of greatest gifts, that will give most; no penny, *no pater-noster, as the saying is. Nisi preces auro fulcis, amphiis irritas: ut Cerberus ossa, their attendants and officers must be bribed, feed, and made, as Cerberus is with a sop by him that goes to hell. It was an old saying, Omnia Rome venaliss (all things are venal at Rome), 'tis a rag of Popery, which will never be rooted out, there is no hope, no good to be done without money. A clerk may offer himself, approve his worth, learning, honesty, religion, zeal, they will commend him for it; but *probitas laudatur et alget. If he be a man of extraordinary parts, they will flock afar off to hear him, as they did in Apuleius, to see Psyche: multij mortales confuelant ad videndum secundum decus, spectulum gloriosum, laudatur ab omnibus, spectatur ab omnibus, nec quisquam non rez, non regit, cupiidus ejus nuptiarum petitor accedit; mirantur quidem divinam formam omnes, sed ut simulaecri fratrib polemica mirantur; many mortal men came to see fair Psyche the glory of her age, they did admire her, commend, desire her for her divine beauty, and gaze upon her; but as on a picture; none would marry her, quod indotata, fair Psyche had no money. *So they do by learning;

"didictam jam daves avarus
Tantam admirari, tantum laude disertos,
Ut pucri Jannius avem——"

"Your rich men have now learnt of latter days
To admire, commend, and some together
To hear and see a worthy scholar speak,
As children do a peacock's feather."

  * I have often met with myself, and conferred with divers worthy gentlemen in the country, no wist inferior, if not to be preferred for divers kinds of learning to many of our academicians.
  * Ipsa lebet Musis venias comitantes, Homere, Nili tenam multitibus, iberis, Homere, fora.
  * Et legat historicis auctores, noverit omnes Toganque angues digitoque suas. Juv. Sat. 7.
  * Juvenalis.
  * Tu vero licet Orpheus sis, saxa som: testudinis emolliam.
  * nisi plumbum eorum corda, sura vel argenti malleo emollias, &c. Sallustiannis Pollion. lib. 5. c. 10.
  * Juven. Sat. 7.
He shall have all the good words that may be given; *a proper man, and 'tis pity he hath no preferment, all good wishes, but inexorable, indurate as he is, he will not prefer him, though it be in his power, because he is indolatus, he hath no money. Or if he do give him entertainment, let him be never so well qualified, plead affinity, consanguinity, sufficiency, he shall serve seven years, as Jacob did for Rachel, before he shall have it. †If he will enter at first, he must yet in at that Simoniacal gate, come off soundly, and put in good security to perform all covenants, else he will not deal with, or admit him. But if some poor scholar, some parson chaff, will offer himself; some trencher chaplain, that will take it to the halves, thirds, or accept of what he will give, he is welcome; be conformable, preach as he will have him, he likes him before a million of others; for the best is always best cheap; and then as Hierom said to Cromatius, patellâ dignam operculum, such a patron, such a clerk; the cure is well supplied, and all parties pleased. So that is still verified in our age, which *Chrysostom complained of in his time, Qui opulentiores sunt, in ordinem parasitorum cogunt eos, et ippos tanganum caros ad mensas suas enuantur, eorumque impudentes Ventres iniquarium cenarum reliquis differtunt, idem pro arbitrio abutentes: Rich men keep these lecturers, and fawning parasites, like so many dogs at their tables, and filling their hungry guts with the offals of their meat, they abuse them at their pleasure, and make them say what they propose. "As children do by a bird or a butterfly in a string, pull in and let him out as they list, do they by their trencher chaplains, prescribe, command their wits, let in and out as to them it seems best." If the patron be precise, so must his chaplain be; if he be papistical, his clerk must be too, or else be turned out. These are those clerks which serve the turn, whom they commonly entertain, and present to church livings, whilst in the meantime we that are University men, like so many hide-bound calves in a pasture, tarry out our time, wither away as a flower ungathered in a garden, and are never used; or as so many candles, illuminate ourselves alone, obscuring one another's light, and are not discerned here at all, the least of which, translated to a dark room, or to some country benefice, where it might shine apart, would give a fair light, and be seen over all. Whilst we lie waiting here as those sick men did at the Pool of *Bethesda, till the Angel stirred the water, expecting a good hour, they step between, and beguile us of our preferment. I have not yet said, if after long expectation, much expense, travel, earnest suit of ourselves and friends, we obtain a small benefice at last; our misery begins afresh, we are suddenly encountered with the flesh, world, and devil, with a new onset; we change a quiet life for an ocean of troubles, we come to a ruinous house, which before it be habitable, must be necessarily to our great damage repaired; we are compelled to sue for dilapidations, or else sue ourselves, and scarce yet settled, we are called upon for our predecessor's arrearages; first-fruits, tenths, subsidies, are instantly to be paid, benevolence, procurations, &c., and which is most to be feared, we light upon a cracked title, as it befel Clerand, of Brabant, for his rectory and charge of his Beginium; he was no sooner inducted, but instantly sued, capimusque (faith he) strenuè litigare, et implacabili bello configere: at length, after ten years' suit, as long as Troy's siege, when he had tired himself, and spent his money, he was fain to leave all for quietness' sake, and give it up to his adversary. Or else we are insulted over, and trampled on by domineering officers, fleeced by those greedy harpies to get more fees; we stand in fear of some precedent lapse; we fall

* Enufe bene, no need, Douss. epod. lib. 2.—dox ipsa scientia sibique convinaria est. † Quatuor ad portas Ecclesiae tares ad omnes; sanctiuis ant Simoniis, praebuit steque Del. Holoc.  † Lib. contra Gentiles de Babia mortuy.  * Præsentant, imperant, in ordinem cognitum, ingenium nostrum praet ipsa videbitur, astringant et relaxant ut papilionem pruni aut bruchum flolemmittunt, aut attribuant, nos et libidine suspender acqueum consentientes. Helianus.  † Joh. 5.  ‡ Epist. lib. 2. Jam sufficit in locum demotum, protinus exortus est adversarius, &c., post multos labores, sumptus, &c.
amongst refractory, seditious sectaries, peevish puritans, perverse papists, a lascivious rout of atheistical Epicures, that will not be reformed, or some litigious people (those wild beasts of Ephesus must be fought with) that will not pay their dues without much repining, or compelled by long suit; Laici clericis oppido infesti, an old axiom, all they think well gotten that is had from the church, and by such uncivil, harsh dealings, they make their poor minister weary of his place, if not his life; and put case they be quiet honest men, make the best of it, as often it falls out, from a polite and terse academic, he must turn rustic, rude, melanochile alone, learn to forget, or else, as many do, become maltsters, graziers, chapmen, &c. (now banished from the academy, all commerce of the muses, and confined to a country village, as Ovid was from Rome to Pontus), and daily converse with a company of idiots and clowns.

Nos interim quod attinet (nec enim immunes ab hoc norâ sumus) idem reatus manet, idem nobis, et si non multâ gravis, crimen objici potest: nostrâ enim culpâ sit, nostrâ incuriâ, nostrâ avariâ, quod tam frequentes, fideque sancti in Ecclesiâ nunniugentes, templum est venale, desque) tot sordes insec- chantur, tanta grassei pietae, tanta nequitiâ, tam insanus misericorium Euripus, et turbarem aetarium, nostro inquinum, omnium (Academicorum im- primis) vitio sit. Quod tot Resp. malis accipiat, ut nobis seminariorum; ulterior matut hoc accursimus, et quâvis contumeliâ, quâvis interim miseriâ digni, qui pro virili non occurrimus. Quod enim fieri posse speramus, quanâ tot indies sine detectu pauperes alumi, terrâ filli, et cyjusque ordines hominones ad gradus certamin âdmittere? qui sâ definitionem, distinctionemque unam aut alteram memoriter eddicerint, et pro more tot annos in dialectica posuerint, non refert quo profectâ, quales deumum sint, idiotae, nugasores, oLitores, aleatores, computores, indigii, libidinis voluptuataneque administrî, "Sponsi Penaphees, nebulones, Aleiinque," modâ tot annos in academîa insuppeterint, et sepro togatis venditârî; luceri causâ, et amicorum intercessu presentantur: adeo etiam magnificis nonnunquam elegiis morum et scientiâ: et jam valedictori testimonialibus hisce litteris, amplissimâ conscriptis in eorum gratiam hono- râruntur, ab ipsis, qui fidei sue et existimationis factorem proculudo factiunt. Doctores enim et professores (quod ait ille) id unum curant, ut ex professionibus frequentibus, et tumultuaribus potius quam legitiimis, commoda sua pro- moveant, et pro dispensio publico suum faciant incrementum. Id solum in vo- bis habent animi plerunque magistratus, ut ab incipientium numero pecunias emu- gant, nec nullum interest qui sint, litteratores au litterati, modâ pingues, nitiûs, ad aspectum speciosi, et quod verbo dicam, pecuniosi sint. 1 Philosophi licen- tiantur in artibus, ortem qui non habent. 2 Eoque sapientes esse jubet, qui nulla preditâ sunt sapientia, et nihil ad gradum preterquam velle afferrent.

Theologistri (solvant modo) satis superque docti, per annos honorum gradus evelluntur et ascendent. Atque hinc fit quod tam viles surrec, tot passim idiotae, literarum crepusculo posti, larvâe pastorum, circumforanoci, vagi, barbi, fango, crass, asini, merum pecus, in sacrosanctos theologice aditus, illatipes sedis irru- pant, preter inverecundam frontem adferentes nihil, vulgares quasdam quis- quilias, et scholarium quodam nugam, indigna que vel recipitantur in trivis. Hoc illiis indignum genus hominum et familiae, indignum, vagum, ventris muncipium, ad stivam potius relegandum, ad haras aptius quam ad aras, quod divinae hasce litteras turpiter prostitut; hi sunt qui pulpa com- plent, in edes nobilium irreptum, et quum reliquis vita destituantur subsidii, ob corporis et animi egestatem, aliarum in repub. partium minimâ caepae- sim; ad sacram hanc anchoram configuant, sacerdotium quovismodò captantes, non ex sinceritate, quod 3 Paulus ait, sed cauponantes verbum Dei. Ne quis

1 Jan. Acad. cap. 6. 2 Acipicam peccantium, deniitamus asini ut apud Patavinius, Itiologia. 3 Us non latio pridem præsertin in Philosophistri, Concordia Latin, in .Edi Christi Oxoni. publice habita, Ann. 1617. Feb. 16. 4 Sat. Memip. 5 2 Cor. ii. 17.
interim viris bonis detractum quid putet, quos habet ecclesia Anglicana quamplurimos, egregiis doctas, illustres, intactae famae homines, et plures forsan quam quevis Europa provinciarum; ne quis a florentissimis Academias, que viros undique doctissimos, omni virtutum genere suspiciendos, abunde producunt. Et multa plures utroque habitura, multo splendider futura, si non hazards splendider tamen ejus obfuscerent, obstatet corruptio, et cauponantes quaedam harpyae, proletariisque homac hoc nobis non invidenter. Nemo enim tam cecat mente, qui non hoc ipsum videat: nemo tam stulto ingenio, qui non intelligat: tam pertinenti judicio, qui non agnoscat, ab his idiotis circumforaneis, sacrum pollui Theologiam, ac celestes Musas quasi prophaneum quidam prostitui.

Vile animae et effrontes (sic enim Lutherus * aliqui vocat) luelli causa, ut muscae ad mulcera, ad nobilium et heroum mensas advolant, in spem sacerdobi, cujuslibet honoris, officii, in quamvis aulae, ubem se inerunt, quod quidvis se ministerium camponunt.——

——Hor. Lib. 11. Sat. 7. * offam sequentes, psittacorum more, in praeda spem quidvis effluat: * offuscantur Parasiti (* Erasmus ait) quidvis docent, dicunt, scribunt, suadent, et contra conscientiam probant, non ut salutarem reddant gregem, sed ut magnificam sibi parent fortunam. * Opinioneis quavis et decreta contra verbum Dei astraunt, ne non offendant patronum, sed ut retineant favorem procerum, et populi plausum, ubique ipsis opes accumulate. Eo etenimplerunque animo ad Theologiam accedunt, non ut rem divinam, sed ut suam faciant; non ad Academiae honorem promovendum, sed explicandum; quaerentes, quod Paulus ait, non que Jesu Christi, sed quae sua, non domini thesaurum, sed ut sibi, suisque thesaurizent. Nec tantum ipsis, qui vitioris fortuna, et abjette sortis sunt, hoc in usu est: sed et medios, summos, elutos, ne dicam Epi- scopos, hoc malum invosit. * * Ditie, pontifices, in sacris quid facit aurum? * * * * * * * ssumos sepe viros transversos agit avaritia, et qui reliquis marum probitate praeclarebant, hic facem praefarent ad Sinoniam, et in corruptionibus hunc scopulum impingentes, non tondent pecus, sed deglubunt, et quocunque se conferunt, exspirant, exauriant, abradunt, magnum fumae suae, si non animae naufragium facientes; ut non ab insimia ad summos, sed a summis ad infimus malum pro- manasse videatur, et illud verum sit quod ille alicubi, emergat ille prins, vnde jure potest. Simoniacus enim (quod cum Leonc dicam) gratiam non accepit, ac non accipiet, non habet, et si non habet, nec gratios potest esse; tantum enim absunt istorum nonnulli, qui ad clavum sedent, a promovendo reli- quas, ut pentitus impediant, proh sibi consci, quibus artibus illic pervenerint. * Nam qui ob literas emersisse illos credat, desipit; qui vero ingenii, eruditionis, experientiae, probitatis, pietatis, et Mussarum id esse pretium putat (quod olim revera fut, hodie prontitutur) planissim insunt. Utequeque vel undene- qua malum hoc originem ducat, non ultra quaram, ex his primordiis copit vitiorum colluvias, omnis calamitas, omne miseriarm omgen in Ecclesiam inven- hitur. Hinc tam frequens simonia, hinc ortae quereles, fraudes, impostures, ab hoc fonte se derivent omnes negation. Ne quis obiter dicas de ambitione, adulatione quasquam aulicae, ne tristi domino laborent, de lucre, de fidei nonnamquem vita exemplo, quo nonnullis offendunt, de computatione Sybaritica, * sic hic ille squalor academicus, triestes haec tempestatem Camenae, quum quivis homunculi, artium ignarum, his artibus assurgat, hunc in modum promoveat, et dicas, ambitiosis appellationibus insignis, et multis dignitatis auctoribus vulgi aculique penitentia, bene se habeat, et grandia gradis majestatem quamdam ac amplitudinem pra se ferens, miramque solicitutinem, barba reverendus, toto nitidus, purpur a coruscus, supellectron splendens, et famulosum numerum maximae conspicuus. Quales staturae (quod ait ’ille) quae sacris in sedibus

---

columns imponentur, velut oneris cedentes videntur, ac si insaudent, quum revera sensu sint carentes, et nihil saxonem adjuvamur formantem: attempet videri volunt, quum sint statuae lapideae, unbratiles revera homunciones, fingi, forsan et bardi, nihil æ saxo differentes. Quum interim docti viri, et vita sanctioris ornamentis prædicti, qui estun diei sustinent, his iniqua sorte serviant, minimino forsan salario contenit, puris minibus nuncupati, humiles, obscuri, multoque digniores fict, egentes, in honoriati vitam privam privatam agent, tentique sepe et sacerdotio, et in collegiis sui in aeterno incerarati, inglori delectant. Sed nolo diutius habe movere sentimentum, hinc ille lacryme, lugubris musarum habitus, *hinc ipsa religio (quod cum Secello dicam) in Ludibrium et contemptum adducitur, abjectum sacerdotium (atque hoc ubi fuit, ausim dicere, et putidum *putidit dicterium de clero usurpare) putidum vulgus, inops, rude, sordidum, melanchothicum, miserum, despicable, contemnedum.*

* As for ourselves (for neither are we free from this fault) the same guilt, the same crime, may be objected against us: for it is through our fault, negligence, and avarice, that so many and such shameful corruptions occur in the church (both the temple and the Daley are offered for sale), that such well known faults, in the midst of open admissions, sit in the company of licentiousness and irregularity: these I say arise from all our faults, but more particularly from ours of the University. We are the nursery in which those ills are bred with which the state is afflicted; we voluntarily introduce them, and are deserving of every opprobrium and suffering; since the faults after which we lament, according to our strength.

For what better can we expect when so many poor, beggarly fellows, men of every order, are ready and without election, admitted to degrees? Who, if they can only commit to memory a few definitions and divisions, and pass the customary period in the study of logics, no matter with what effect, whatever sort they prove to be, idiots, traffers, idlers, gamblers, sots, sensualists.

"... mere dippers in the book of life
Like those who boldly woo'd Ulysses' wife;
Born to consume the fruits of earth: in truth,
As vain and idle as Phoeica's youth;"

only let them have passed the stipulated period in the University, and professed themselves collectors: either for the sake of profit, or through the influence of their friends, they obtain a presentation; may, sometimes even, by small bribery, for which end their friends are sometimes. However, they take leave, they are honoured with the most flattering literary testimonials in their favour, by those who undoubtedly sustain a loss of reputation in granting them. For doctors and professors (as an author says) are anxious about one thing only, viz., that out of their various callings they may promote their own advantage, and convert the public loss into their private gains. For our annual officers wish this only, that those who commence, whether they are taught or taught is of no moment, shall be sick, fat, pigeons, worth the plucking. The Philosophists are admitted to a degree in Arts, because they have no acquaintance with them. And they are desired to be wise men, because they are endowed with no wisdom, and bring no qualification for a degree, except the wish to have it. The Theologistic (only let them pay) thus, learned, are promoted to every academic honour. Hence it is that so many vile buffoons, so many idiots everywhere, placed in the twilight of letters, the mere ghosts of scholars, wanderers in the market place, vagrant poets, muskrats, dogs, do anything they please, break into the sacred presence of theology, bringing nothing along with them but an impudent front from their various tails, and pollute scholastic technicalities, unworthy of respect even at the crossing of the highways. This is the unworthy, vagrant, voluptuous race, fitter for the hog-stye (haram) than the altar (arum), that basely prostitutions of the human heart. They are they who bring the public dissemination of another and all other prospects of existence fail them, owing to their imbecility of body and mind, and their being obnoxious of sustaining any other parts in the commonwealth; to this sacred refuge they fly, under the shelter of the ministry, not from sincerity, but as St. Paul says, backsteering the word of God. Let act any one that it is here intended to detract from those many exemplary men of which the Church of England may boast, learned, eminent, and of spotless fame, for they are more numerous in that than in any other church of Europe; nor from those most learned universities which constantly send forth men endowed with every form of virtue. And these seminaries would produce a still greater number of most able scholars hereafter if sordidness did not obscure the splendid light, corruption intercept, and certain truckling harpies and beggars envy them their usefulness. Nor can any one be so blind as not to perceive this—any so stolid as not to understand it—any so perverse as not to acknowledge how sacred Theology has been contaminated by those notorious idiots, and the celestial Muse treated with profanity. Vile and shameful considerations! For this most ancient, like flies to a milk-pail, crowd round the tables of the nobility in expectation of a church living, any office, or honour, and flock into any public hall or city ready to accept of any employment that may offer.

"A thing of wood and wire by others played."

Following the paste as the parrot, they statter out any thing in hopes of reward: obsequious parasites, says Erasmus, teach, say, write, admire, approve, contrary to their conviction, anything you please, not to benefit the people but to improve their own fortunes. They subscribe to any opinions and decisions contrary to the true order of the state. They may not attempt any application to the multitude, and thereby acquire riches for themselves; for they approach Theology, not that they may perform a sacred duty, but make a fortune: not to promote the interest of the church, but to pillege it: seeking, as Paul says, not the things which are of Jesus Christ, but what may be their own: not the treasure of their Lord, but the enrichment of themselves and their followers. Nor does this evil belong to those of humbler birth and fortunes only, it possesses the middle and higher ranks, bishops excepted.

O Pontiffs, tell the efficacy of gold in sacred matters!" Ariaric often leads the highest men astray, and men, admirable in all other respects; these find a salvo for simony; and, striking against this rock of corruption, they do not shear but lay the flock; and, wherever they roam, plunder, exhaust, rage, making shipwreck of their reputation, if not of their souls also. Hence it appears that this melody did not flow

Causes of Melancholy.  

[Part. 1. Sec. 2.]

from the humblest to the highest classes, but since sacred, so that the maxims is true although spoken in jest—"he bought first, therefore has the best right to sell." For a Simia (that I may use the phraseology of Leo) has not received a favour: since he has not received one he does not possess one; and since he does not possess one he cannot confer one. So far indeed are some of those who are placed at the helm from promoting others, that they completely obstruct them, from a consciousness of the means by which themselves obtained the honour. For he who imagines that they emerged from their obscurity through their learning, is deceived; indeed, whoever supposes promotion to be the reward of genius, erudition, experience, probity, piety, and poetry (which formerly was the case, but now-a-days is only promised) is evidently deterred. How or when this malady commenced, I shall not further inquire; but from these beginnings, this accumulation of vices, all her calamities and miseries have been brought upon the Church; hence such frequent acts of simony, complaints, fraud, impostures—from this one fountain spring all its conspicious iniquities. I shall not press the question of ambition and costly flattery, lest they may be charged about luxury, base examples of life, which offend the honest, wanton drinking parties, &c. Yet, hence is that academic squalor, the masses now look sad, since every low fellow ignorant of the arts, by those very arts rises, is promoted, and grows rich, distinguished by ambitious titles, and puffed up by his numerous honours: he just shrugs his shoulders, and sprears his garments drying the natural seminis, giant, a remarkable solicitude, letting down a flowing beard, decked in a brilliant toga resplendent with purple, and respected also on account of the splendour of his household and number of his servants. There are certain statutes placed in sacred edifices that seem to sink under their load, and almost to perspire, when in reality they are void of sensation, and do not contribute to the stability, so this ridicule would wish to look like Aciases, when they are no better than statues of stone, insignificant scuffs, funguses, dots, little different from stone. Meanwhile really learned men, endowed with all that can adorn a holy life, men who have endured the heat of mid-day, by some unjust lot obey these dizzards, content probably with a miserable salary, known by honest appellations, humble, obscure, although eminently worthy, needy, leading a private life without honour, buried alive in some poor benefit, or incarcerated for ever in their college chambers, lying hid ingloriously. But I am unwilling to stir this sink any longer or any deeper; hence those tears, this melancholy habit of the masses; hence (that I may speak with scelculi) it is that religion is brought into disrepute and contempt, and the priesthood abject; (and since this is so, I must speak out and in flabby witticism of the filthy) a factid crowd, poor, sordid, melancholy, miserable, despicable, contemptible.

MEMB. IV.

SUBSEC. I.—Non-necessary, remote, outward, adventitious, or accidental causes: as first from the Nurse.

Of those remote, outward, ambient, necessary causes, I have sufficiently discoursed in the precedent member, the non-necessary follow; of which, saith "Fuchsius, no art can be made, by reason of their uncertainty, casualty, and multitude; so called "not necessary" because according to *Fernellius, "they may be avoided, and used without necessity." Many of these accidental causes, which I shall entreat of here, might have well been reduced to the former, because they cannot be avoided, but fatally happen to us, though accidentally, and unawares, at some time or other: the rest are contingent and inevitable, and more properly inserted in this rank of causes. To reckon up all is a thing impossible; of some therefore most remarkable of those contingent causes which produce melancholy, I will briefly speak and in their order.

From a child's nativity, the first ill accident that can likely befall him in this kind is a bad nurse, by whose means alone he may be tainted with this malady from his cradle, Aulus Gellius l. 12. c. 1. brings in Phavorinus, that eloquent philosopher, proving this at large, "*that there is the same virtue and property in the milk as in the seed, and not in men alone, but in all other creatures; he gives instance in a kid and lamb, if either of them suck of the other's milk the lamb of the goat's, or the kid of the ewe's, the wool of the one will be hard, and the hair of the other soft." Giralduus Cambrensis Itinerar. Cambria, l. 1. c. 2. confirms this by a notable example which happened in his time. A sow-pig by chance sucked a brach, and when she was grown, "would miraculously hunt all manner of deer, and that as well, or rather better, than any ordinary hound." His conclusion is, "*that men and beasts participate of her nature and conditions by whose milk they are fed." Phavorinus urges it farther, and demonstrates it more evidently, that if a nurse be "misshapen, unchaste,  

* Proem. Lib. 2. Nulla est constitutum potest.  
* Lib. 1. c. 19. de morborum canis. Quas declarat liest ant valla necessitate uitum.  
* Quo semel est imbusta recens servabat odorem Testa dixit. Hor.  
* Sicbat vaelit ad fingendas corporis, alque animi similiumdes vis et magis sanctissimae lacte secretas. Neque id in hominibus solam, sed in pecullibus animadversam. Nam si ovium lacte lubat, ut caprae non simillimiora, studiis ferei in suam duriorem, in lillas caprae gigani severiores.  
* Adulta in conversa persueutio ad miraculum saepe sagas.  
* Tam animal quadlibet quam homo, ab illis cujus lacte nutritur, naturam contrahit.  
* Impetus, impedis, impudicia, temeritas, nutris, &c. quoniam, in moribus eorum mandatis, magnam sepe partem ingeniua atricis et natura lactis tenet.
dishonest, impudent, *cruel, or the like, the child that sucks upon her breast will be so too;” all other affections of the mind and diseases are almost ingrained, as it were, and imprinted into the temperature of the infant, by the nurse’s milk; as pox, leprous, melancholy, &c. Cato for some such reason would make his servants’ children suck upon his wife’s breast, because by that means they would love him and his the better, and in all likelihood agree with them. A more evident example that the minds are altered by milk cannot be given, than that of Dion, which he relates of Caligula’s cruelty; it could neither be imputed to father nor mother, but to his cruel nurse alone, that anointed her paps with blood still when he sucked, which made him such a murderer, and to express her cruelty to a hair: and that of Tiberius, who was a common drunkard, because his nurse was such a one. Et si delivra fuerit (‘one observes) infantulum delirum faciet, if she be a fool or dolt, the child she nurtureth will take after her, or otherwise be misaffected; which Francisca Barbarus, l. 2. c. ult. de re xworid, proves at full, and Ant. Guivarra, lib. 2. de Marco Aurelio: the child will surely partake. For bodily sickness there is no doubt to be made. Titus, Vespasian’s son, was therefore sickly, because the nurse was so, Lampridius. And if we may believe physicians, many times children catch the pox from a bad nurse, Botaldus, cap. 61. de bue vener. Besides evil attendance, negligence, and many gross inconveniences, which are incident to nurses, much danger may so come to the child. *For these causes Aristotle, Polit. lib. 7. c. 17. Phavorinus and Marcus Aurelius would not have a child put to nurse at all, but every mother to bring up her own, of what condition soever she be; for a sound and able mother to put out her child to nurse, is nature intemperies, so *Guatso calls it, ‘tis fit therefore she should be nurse herself; the mother will be more careful, loving, and attendant, than any servile woman, or such hired creatures; this all the world acknowledgeth, convenientissimum est (as Rod. à Castro de nat. mulierum, lib. 4. c. 12. in many words confesseth) matrem ipsum lactare infantem, “ It is most fit that the mother should suckle her own infant”—who denies that it should be so?—and which some women most curiously observe ; amongst the rest, *that queen of France, a Spaniard by birth, that was so precise and zealous in this behalf, that when in her absence a strange nurse had suckled her child, she was never quiet till she had made the infant vomit it up again. But she was too jealous. If it be so, as many times it is, they must be put forth, the mother be not fit or well able to be a nurse, I would then advise such mothers, as 1Plutarch doth in his hook de liberis educandis, and *S. Hierom, li. 2. epist. 27. Lacte de institut. fil. Magninus part. 2. Reg. sanit. cap. 7. and the said Rodericus, that they make choice of a sound woman, of a good complexion, honest, free from bodily diseases, if it be possible, all passions and perturbations of the mind, as sorrow, fear, grief, folly, melancholy. For such passions corrupt the milk, and alter the temperature of the child, which now being inud et molle lutum, “a moist and soft clay” is easily seasoned and perverted. And if such a nurse may be found out, that will be diligent and careful withal, let Phavorinus and M. Aurelius plead how they can against it, I had rather accept of her in some cases than the mother herself, and which Bonarcius the physician, Nic. Biesius the politician, lib. 4. de repub. cap. 8. approves, “ Some nurses are much to be preferred to some mothers.” For why may not the mother be taught, a peevish drunken flirt, a waspish choleric slut, a crazed piece, a fool (as many mothers are), unsound, as soon as the nurse? There is more choice of nurses

---

4 Hircanæque admorunt ubera Tigres, Virg. *Lib. 2. de Casaribus.
5 Beda, c. 27. l. 1. Eccles. hist. Ne insitivo factis alimento degeneret corpus, et animus corrupatur. *Lib. 5. de civ. conuers.
than mothers; and therefore except the mother be most virtuous, staid, a
woman of excellent good parts, and of a sound complexion, I would have all
children in such cases committed to discreet strangers. And 'tis the only way;
as by marriage they are ingrafted to other families to alter the breed, or if
any thing be amiss in the mother, as Ludovicius Mercatus contends, Tom. 2. lib.
de morb. hered. to prevent diseases and future maladies, to correct and qualify
the child's ill-disposed temperature, which he had from his parents. This
is an excellent remedy, if good choice be made of such a nurse.

SUBSECT. II.—Education a Cause of Melancholy.

Education, of these accidental causes of Melancholy, may justly challenge
the next place, for if a man escape a bad nurse, he may be undone by evil
bringing up. *Jason Pratensis puts this of education for a principal cause;
bad parents, step-mothers, tutors, masters, teachers, too rigorous, too severe,
too remiss or indulgent on the other side, are often fountains and furtherers
of this disease. Parents and such as have the tuition and oversight of children,
often many times in that they are too stern, always threatening, chiding,
brawling, whipping, or striking; by means of which their poor children are so
dishartened and cowed, that they never after have any courage, a merry hour
in their lives, or take pleasure in any thing. There is a great moderation to be
had in such things, as matters of so great moment to the making or marring of
a child. Some fright their children with beggars, bugbears, and hobgoblins,
if they cry, or be otherwise unruly: but they are much to blame in it, many
times, saith Lavater, de spectris, part 1. cap. 5. ex metu in morbos graves inci-
dunt et noctu dormientes clamant, for fear they fall into many diseases, and cry
out in their sleep, and are much the worse for it all their lives: these things
ought not at all, or to be sparingly done, and upon just occasion. Tyrannical,
impotent, hare-brained schoolmasters, aridi magistri, so Fabius terms them
Ajaes flagelliferi, are in this kind as bad as hangmen and executioners, they
make many children endure a martyrdom all the while they are at school, with
bad diet, if they board in their houses, too much severity and ill-usage, they
quite pervert their temperature of body and mind: still chiding, railing,
frowning, lashing, tasking, keeping, that they are fracti animis, moped many
times weary of their lives, nimia severitate deficiunt et desperant, and think
no slavery in the world (as once I did myself) like to that of a grammar
scholar. Præceptorum ineptis discruciuntur ingenia puerorum, *saith Eras-
mus, they tremble at his voice, looks, coming in. St. Austin, in the first book
of his confess. et 4. ca. calls this schooling meticulosan necessitatem, and else-
where a martyrdom, and confesseth of himself, how cruelly he was tortured in
mind for learning Greek, nulla verba noveram, et sevis terroribus et poenis, ut
nãosem, instabatur mihi vehementer, I knew nothing, and with cruel terrors and
punishment I was daily compelled. Beza complains in like case of a rigorous
schoolmaster in Paris, that made him by his continual thunder and threats
once in a mind to drown himself, had he not met by the way with an uncle of
his that vindicated him from that misery for the time, by taking him to his
house. Trinacellius, lib. 1. constil. 16. had a patient nineteen years of
age, extremely melancholy, ob nimium studium, Turviti et præceptoris minas,
by reason of overmuch study; and his tutor's threats. Many masters are
hard-hearted, and bitter to their servants, and by that means do so deject, with
terrible speeches and hard usage so crucify them, that they become desperate,
and can never be recalled.

* Lib. de morbis capitis. cap. de mania; Hand postrema causa suppurator educato, inter has mentis
abjationem causas. Injusta novera. * Lib. 2. cap. 4. + Idem. Et quod maxime nocet, damn in
teneris i timent nihil constanter. + The pupil's faculties are perverted by the indiscretion of the
master. * Prefat. ad Testam. + Plus mentis pedagogico supercilio abstulit, quam unquam
præceptis suis sapientius insinuavit.
Others again, in that opposite extreme, do as great harm by their too much remissness, they give them no bringing up, no calling to busy themselves about, or to live in, teach them no trade, or set them in any good course; by means of which their servants, children, scholars, are carried away with that stream of drunkenness, illleness, gaming, and many such irregular courses, that in the end they rue it, curse their parents, and mischief themselves. Too much indulgence causeth the like, "nepta patris lenias et facilias prava, when as Mitio-like, with too much liberty and too great allowance. They feed their children's humours, let them revel, wench, riot, swagger, and do what they will themselves, and then punish them with noise of musicians:

"Obsonet, potes, obat unguenta de meo; Anamit dinamur ubi erit commodum."

But as Demeo told him, tu illum corrupsi sinis, your lenity will be his undoing, praevidere videor jam diem illum, quum hic egens profugiet aliquo militate, I foresee his ruin. So parents often err, many fond mothers especially, dote so much upon their children, like T. Scop's ape, till in the end they crush them to death, Corporum nutrices animarum nowerce, pampering up their bodies to the undoing of their souls; they will not let them be "corrected or controlled, but still soothed in every thing they do, that in conclusion "they bring sorrow, shame, heaviness to their parents, (Eccles. cap. xxx. 8, 9,) become wanton, stubborn, wilful, and disobedient; rude, untaught, headstrong, incorrigible, and graceless," "they love them so foolishly," saith Cardan, "that they rather seem to hate them, bringing them not up to virtue but injury, not to learning but to riot, not to sober life and conversation, but to all pleasure and licentious behaviour." Who is he of so little experience that knows not this of Fabius to be true? "Education is another nature, altering the mind and will, and I would to God (saith he) we ourselves did not spoil our children's manners, by our overmuch coquetting and nice education, and weaken the strength of their bodies and minds, that causeth custom, custom nature," &c.

For those causes Plutarch in his book de lib. educ. and Hieron, epist. lib. 1. epist. 17. to Larta de institut. filic, gives a most especial charge to all parents, and many good cautions about bringing up of children, that they be not committed to indiscreet, passionate, bedlam tutors, light, giddy-headed, or covetous persons, and spare for no cost, that they may be well nurtured and taught, it being a matter of so great consequence. For such parents as do otherwise, Plutarch esteems of them "that are more careful of their shoes than of their feet," that rate their wealth above their children. And he, saith "Cardan, that leaves his son to a covetous schoolmaster to be informed, or to a close Abbey to fast and learn wisdom together, doth no other, than that he be a learned fool, or a sickly wise man."

**SUBSECT. III.-Terrors and Affrights, Causes of Melancholy.**

**TULLY,** in the fourth of his Tusculans, distinguishes these terrors which arise from the apprehension of some terrible object heard or seen, from other

*Ter. Adelph. 3. 4. *Idem. Act. 1. ec. 2. "Let him feast, drink, perfume himself at my expense; If he be in love, I shall supply him with money. Has he broken in the gates? he shall be repaired. Has he torn his garments? they shall be replaced. Let him do what he pleases, take, spend, waste, I am resolved to submit.

*Camar. 1. 77. cent. 2. hath elegantly expressed it an emblem, perdit amando, &c.

*Prov. xiii. 24. *"That he spareth the rod hates his son." Lib. 3. de consol. Tum stultus pueros diligens ut edisses potius vademum, illos non ad virtutem sed ad injuriam, non ad eruditionem sed ad luxum, non ad virtutem sed voluptatem, educant.

*Lib. 1. c. 3. Educatio altera natura, alterat animos et voluntatem, atque atinam (inquit) liberorum nostrorum mores non ipsi perdereumb, quam infantiam stultitiam solutum: mollar ita educato, quam indulgentiam vacnam, nervos omnes, et mentes et corporis frangit; it ex his consuetudo, inde natura.

*Periodice agit ac si quis de calceo sit solius, pedem nihil curat. Juven Nil patri minus est quam filius.

*Lib. 3. de sapientia; qui aversa pedesagogus pueros alendos dant, vel clausos in conobiles jejunare sancul et saperare, nihil aliud agunt, nihil ut sit vel non sita stultitia crudelit, vel non integra vita sapiences.
Causes

Causes of Melancholy.

[Part 1. Sec. 2.

fears, and so doth Patritius, lib. 5. Tit. 4. de regis institut. Of all fears they are most pernicious and violent, and so suddenly alter the whole temperature of the body, move the soul and spirits, strike such a deep impression, that the parties can never be recovered, causing more grievous and fiercer melancholy, as Felix Plater, c. 3. dementis alienat. speaks out of his experience, than any inward cause whatsoever: and imprints itself so forcibly in the spirits, brain, humours, that if all the mass of blood were let out of the body, it could hardly be extracted. This horrible kind of melancholy (for so he terms it) had been often brought before him, and troubles and affrights commonly men and women, young and old of all sorts. *Hercules de Saxonia calls this kind of melancholy (ab agitatione spirituum) by a peculiar name, it comes from the agitation, motion, contraction, dilatation of spirits, not from any distemper of humours, and produceth strong effects. This terror is most usually caused, as Plutarch will have, "from some imminent danger, when a terrible object is at hand," heard, seen, or conceived, "truly appearing, or in a dream," and many times the more sudden the accident, it is the more violent.

"*Stat terror anima, et cor attonitum salt, Pavidumque trepidis palpitat venis jejus." | "Their soul's affright, their heart amazed quakes, The trembling liver pants ('tis veins, and aches."

Arthemidorus the grammarian lost his wits by the unexpected sight of a crocodile, Laurentius, 7. de melan. *The massacre at Lyons, 1572, in the reign of Charles IX., was so terrible and fearful, that many ran mad, some died, great-bellied women were brought to bed before their time, generally all affrighted aguish. Many lose their wits by the sudden sight of some spectre or devil, a thing very common in all ages, saith Lavater, part 1. cap. 9, as Orestes did at the sight of the Furies, which appeared to him in black (as Pausanias records). The Greeks call them μογονολύκατα, which so terrify their souls, or if they be but affrighted by some counterfeit devils in jest,

"—§ ut pueri trepidant, atque omnia caecis
In tenebris mutuunt —"

as children in the dark conceive hobsoblins, and are so afraid, they are the worse for it all their lives. Some by sudden fires, earthquakes, inundations, or any such dismal objects: Themison the physician fell into a hydrophobia, by seeing one sick of that disease: (Diocorides, l. 6. c. 33,) or by the sight of a monster, a carcase, they are disquieted many months following, and cannot endure the room where a corpse hath been, for a world would not be alone with a dead man, or lie in that bed many years after in which a man hath died. At Basil many little children in the spring time went to gather flowers in a meadow at the town's end, where a malefactor hung in gibbets; all gazing at it, one by chance flung a stone, and made it stir, by which accident, the children affrighted ran away; one slower than the rest, looking back, and seeing the stirred carcase wag towards her, cried out it came after, and was so terribly affrighted, that for many days she could not rest, eat, or sleep, she could not be pacified, but melancholy, died. In the same town another child, beyond the Rhine, saw a grave opened, and upon the sight of a carcase, was so troubled in mind that she could not be comforted, but a little after departed, and

was buried up. Platerus, observat. l. i, a gentlewoman of the same city saw a fat hog cut up, when the entrails were opened, and a noisome savour offended her nose, she much misliked, and would not longer abide: a physician in presence told her, as that hog, so was she, full of filthy excrements, and aggrava
ted the matter by some other loathsome instances, insomuch this nice gentle-
woman apprehended it so deeply, that she fell forthwith a-vomiting, was so
mightily distressed in mind and body, that with all his art and persuasions,
for some months after, he could not restore her to herself again, she could not
forget it, or remove the object out of her sight, Idem. Many cannot endure to
see a wound opened, but they are offended: a man executed, or labour of any
fearful disease, as possession, apoplexies, one bewitched; or if they read by
chance of some terrible thing, the symptoms alone of such a disease, or that
which they dislike, they are instantly troubled in mind, aghast, ready to apply
it to themselves, they are as much disquieted as if they had seen it, or were so
affected themselves. Hecatus sibi videntur somniare, they dream and contin-
ually think of it. As lamentable effects are caused by such terrible objects
heard, read, or seen, auditus maximos motus in corpore facit, as Plutarch
holds, no seuse makes greater alteration of body and mind: sudden speech
sometimes, unexpected news, be they good or bad, previsus minus oratio, will
move as much, minium obrure, et de sede sua de\'
\'ere, as a philosopher observes, will take away our sleep and appetite, disturb and quite overturn us.
Let them bear witness that have heard those tragical alarms, outcries, hideous
noises, which are many times suddenly heard in the dead of the night by
irruption of enemies and accidental fires, &c., those panic fears, which often
drive men out of their wits, bereave them of sense, understanding and all, some
for a time, some for their whole lives, they never recover it. The \'\"Midianites
were so affrighted by Gideon's soldiers, they breaking but every one a pitcher;
and Hannibal's army by such a panic fear was discomfited at the walls of
Rome. Augusta Livia hearing a few tragical verses recited out of Virgil, Tu
Marcellus eris, &c., fell down dead in a swoon. Edinus king of Denmark, by
a sudden sound which he heard, \"was turned into fury with all his men.\"
Cranzius, l. 5, Dan. hist. et Alexander ab Alexandro l. 3. c. 5. Amatus
Lusitanus had a patient, that by reason of bad tidings became epilepticus, cen.
2. cura 90., Cardan subtil. l. 18, saw one that lost his wits by mistaking of an
echo. If one sense alone can cause such violent commotions of the mind, what
may we think when hearing, sight, and those other senses are all troubled at
once? as by some earthquakes, thunder, lightning, tempests, &c. At Bologna
in Italy, Anno 1504, there was such a fearful earthquake about eleven o'clock
in the night (as Beroaldus, in his book de terre motu, hath commended to pos-
terity) that all the city trembled, the people thought the world was at an end,
actum de mortalibus, such a fearful noise, it made such a detestable smell, the
inhabitants were infinitely affrighted, and some ran mad. Audi rem atroceum, et
annalibus memorandam (mine author adds), hear a strange story, and worthy
to be chronicled: I had a servant at the same time called Fulco Argelanus, a
bold and proper man, so grievously terrified with it, that he \"was first melan-
choly, after dotted, at last mad, and made away himself. At Fuscinum in Japa
\"there was such an earthquake, and darkness on a sudden, that many
men were offended with headache, many overwelmed with sorrow and melan-
ocholy. At Meaum whole streets and goodly palaces were overturned at the
same time, and there was such a hideous noise withal, like thunder, and filthy smell, that their hair stared for fear, and their hearts quaked, men and beasts were incredibly terrified. In Saci, another city, the same earthquake was so terrible unto them, that many were bereft of their senses; and others by that horrible spectacle so much amazed, that they knew not what they did." Blasius, a Christian, the reporter of the news, was so affrighted for his part, that though it were two months after, he was scarce his own man, neither could he drive the remembrance of it out of his mind. Many time, some years following, they will tremble afresh at the remembrance or conceit of such a terrible object, even all their lives long, if mention be made of it. Cornelius Agrippa relates out of Gulielmus Parisiensis, a story of one, that after a distasteful purge which a physician had prescribed unto him, was so much moved, "that at the very sight of physic he would be distempered," though he never so much as smelled to it, the box of physic long after would give him a purge; nay, the very remembrance of it did effect it; "like travellers and seamen," saith Plutarch, "that when they have been sanded, or dashed on a rock, for ever after fear not that mischance only, but all such dangers whatsoever."

SUBSECT. IV.—Scoffs, Calumnies, bitter Jests, how they cause Melancholy.

It is an old saying, "A blow with a word strikes deeper than a blow with a sword:" and many men are as much galled with a calumni, a scurrilous and bitter jest, a libel, a pasquil, satire, apologie, epigram, stage-play or the like, as with any misfortune whatsoever. Princes and potentates that are otherwise happy, and have all at command, secure and free, quibus potentia secleriis impunitatem fecit, are grievously vexed with these pasquilling libels, and satires: they fear a railing Areteine, more than an enemy in the field, which made most princes of his time (as some relate) "allow him a liberal pension, that he should not tax them in his satires."

The gods had their Momus, Homer his Zoilus, Achilles his Thersites, Philip his Demades: the Caesars themselves in Rome were commonly taunted. There was never wanting a Petronius, a Lucian in those times, nor will be a Rabelais, an Euphormio, a Boccalinus in ours. Adrian the sixth pope was so highly offended, and grievously vexed with Pasquillers at Rome, he gave command that his statue should be demolished and burned, the ashes flung into the river Tiber, and had done it forthwith, had not Lodovicus Suessanus, a facetie companion, dissuaded him to the contrary, by telling him, that Pasquil's ashes would turn to frogs in the bottom of the river, and croak worse and louder than before,—genus irritabile vatun, and therefore Socrates in Plato adviseth all his friends, "that respect their credits, to stand in awe of poets, for they are terrible fellows, can praise and dispraise as they see cause." Hinc quonam sit calumnas securior ense, patet. The prophet David complains, Psalm cxviii. 4. "that his soul was full of the mocking of the wealthy, and of the despitefulness of the proud," and Psalm Iv. 4. "for the voice of the wicked, &c., and their hate: his heart trembled within him, and the terrors of death came upon him; fear and horrible fear," &c., and Psalm lix. 20. "Rebuke hath broken my heart, and I am full of heaviness." Who hath not like cause to complain, and is not so troubled, that shall fall into the mouths of such men? for many are of so

* Quam subi illius tristissima noxem Imago. * Qui solo aspectu medicinae movebatur ad purgandum.
Saucfs, he their madman, "he leviter silly they' and sweeter h misuse using, book others. heavy, are is serve else sport, or speaking, inferiors, or speaking, or putting galleries on some or other till they have made by their humouring or gulling 'ex stulto insanum, a mope or a noddy, and all to make themselves merry:

"_dummodo risum
Executis sibi; non hic unquam pareis amico;"

Friends, neuters, enemies, all are as one, to make a fool a madman, is their sport, and they have no greater felicity than to scoff and deride others; they must sacrifice to the god of laughter, with them in 'Apuleius, once a day, or else they shall be melancholy themselves; they care not how they grind and misuse others, so they may exhilarate their own persons. Their wits indeed serve them to that sole purpose, to make sport, to break a scurrile jest, which is levissimus ingenii fructus, the froth of wit, as 'Fully holds, and for this they are often applauded, in all other discourse, dry, barren, straminous, dull and heavy, here lies their genius, in this they alone excel, please themselves and others. Leo Decimus, that scoffing pope, as Jovius hath registered in the Fourth book of his life, took an extraordinary delight in humouring of silly fellows, and to put galleries upon them, by commending some, persuading others to this or that; he made ex stolidis stultissimos, et maxime ridiculos, ex stultis insanos; soft fellows, stark noddies; and such as were foolish, quite mad before he left them. One memorable example he recites there, of Tarasconus of Parma, a musician that was so humourd by Leo Decimus, and Bibiena his second in this business, that he thought himself to be a man of most excellent skill (who was indeed a mummy), they 'made him set foolish songs, and invent new ridiculous precepts, which they did highly commend," as to tie his arm that played on the lute, to make him strike a sweeter stroke, "and to pull down the Arras hangings, because the voice would be clearer, by reason of the reverberation of the wall." In the like manner they persuaded one Baraballius of Caieta, that he was as good a poet as Petrarch; would have him to be made a laurate poet, and invite all his friends to his instalment; and had so possessed the poor man with a conceit of his excellent poetry, that when some of his more discreet friends told him of his folly, he was very angry with them, and said "they envied his honour, and prosperity:" it was strange (saith Jovius) to see an old man of 60 years, a venerable and grave old man, so gulled. But what cannot such scoffers do, especially if they find a soft creature, on whom they may work? nay, to say truth, who is so wise, or so discreet, that may not be humourd in this kind, especially if some excellent wits shall set upon him; he that mads others, if he were so humourd, would be as mad himself, as much grieved and tormented; he might cry with him in the comedy, "Proh Jupiter, tu homo me adigas ad insaniam. For all in these things as they are taken; if he be a silly soul, and do not perceive it, 'tis well, he may haply make others sport, and be no whit troubled himself; but if he be apprehensive of his folly, and take it to heart, then it torments him worse than any lash: a bitter jest, a slander, a calumny, pierceth deeper than any loss, danger, bodily pain, or injury whatsoever; _leviter enim volat (it flies swiftly), as Bernard of an arrow, sed graviter vulnerat (but wounds deeply), especially if it shall proceed from a virulent tongue, "it cuts (saith David) like a two-edged sword." They
shoot bitter words as arrows," Psalm lxiv. 3. "And they smote with their tongues," Jer. xviii. 18. and that so hard, that they leave an incurable wound behind them. Many men are undone by this means, moped, and so dejected, that they are never to be recovered; and of all other men living, those which are actually melancholy, or inclined to it, are most sensible (as being suspicious, choleric, apt to mistake) and impatient of an injury in that kind: they aggravate, and so meditate continually of it, that it is a perpetual corrosive, not to be removed till time wear it out. Although they peradventure that so scoff, do it alone in mirth and merriment, and hold it optimum aliena frui insaniam, an excellent thing to enjoy another man's madness; yet they must know, that it is a mortal sin (as Thomas holds), and as the propheti"David denounced, "they that use it, shall never dwell in God's tabernacle."

Such scurrilous jests, flouts, and sarcasms, therefore, ought not at all to be used; especially to our betters, to those that are in misery, or any way distressed: for to such, ærumnarum incrementa sunt, they multiply grief, and as he perceived, In multis pudor, in multis traccandia, &c., many are ashamed, many vexed, angered, and there is no greater cause or furtherer of melancholy. Martin Cromerus, in the Sixth book of his history, hath a pretty story to this purpose, of Uladislaus, the second king of Poland, and Peter Duninus, earl of Shrine; they had been hunting late, and were enforced to lodge in a poor cottage. When they went to bed, Uladislaus told the earl in jest, that his wife lay sofer with the abbot of Shrine; he not able to contain, replied, Et tua cum Dabesso, and yours with Dabessus, a gallant young gentleman in the court, whom Christina the queen loved. *Tebigit id dictum Principis animus,* these words of his so galled the prince, that he was long after tristis et cogitabundus, very sad and melancholy for many months; but they were the earl's utter undoing: for when Christina heard of it, she persecuted him to death. Sophia the empress, Justinius's wife, broke a bitter jest upon Narsetes the eunuch, a famous captain then disquited for an overthrow which he lately had: that he was fitter for a distaff and to keep women company, than to wield a sword, or to be general of an army: but it cost her dear, for he so far distasted it, that he went forthwith to the adverse part, much troubled in his thoughts, caused the Lombards to rebel, and thence procured many miseries to the commonwealth. Tiberius the emperor withheld a legacy from the people of Rome, which his predecessor Augustus had lately given, and perceiving a fellow round a dead corse in the ear, would needs know wherefore he did so; the fellow replied, that he wished the departed soul to signify to Augustus, the commons of Rome were yet unpaid: for this bitter jest the emperor caused him forthwith to be slain, and carry the news himself. For this reason, all those that otherwise approve of jests in some cases, and facetie companions, (as who doth not?) let them laugh and be merry, rumpuntur et ilia Codro, 'tis laudable and fit, those yet will by no means admit them in their companies, that are any way inclined to this malady; non jocandum cum iis qui miseris sunt, et ærumnosi, no jesting with a discontented person, "Tis Castilio's caveat, *Jo. Pontanus,* and *Galateus,* and every good man's."

Play with me, but hurt me not: 
Jest with me, but shame me not."

Comitas is a virtue between rusticity and scurrility, two extremes, as affability is between flattery and contention, it must not exceed; but be still accompanied with that *'et Bia* or innocency, *qua nemini nocet, omnem injurias oblationem abhorrenas,* hurts no man, abhors all offer of injury. Though a man be liable to such a jest or obloquy, have been overseen, or committed a foul

---

Notes and references:
- "Part. 1. Sec. 2." is indicated once, but not referenced in the text.
- "Play with me, but hurt me not: 
Jest with me, but shame me not." is cited twice.
- "Comitas is a virtue between rusticity and scurrility, two extremes, as affability is between flattery and contention, it must not exceed; but be still accompanied with that *'et Bia* or innocency, *qua nemini nocet, omnem injurias oblationem abhorrenas,* hurts no man, abhors all offer of injury. Though a man be liable to such a jest or obloquy, have been overseen, or committed a foul" is cited in full.
fact, yet it is no good manners or humanity to upbraid, to hit him in the teeth
with his offence, or to scoff at such a one; 'tis an old axiom, turpis in reum
omnis exprobatio. * I speak not of such as generally tax vice, Barclay, Gen-
tilis, Erasmus, Agrippa, Fishcartus, &c., the Varroists and Lucians of our
time, satirists, epigrammatists, comedians, apologists, &c., but such as per-
sonate, rail, scoff, calumniate, perstringe by name, or in presence offend;

* "audi qui stolidi proeactitate,
Non est Sextius ille sed caelulus;"

'Tis horse-play this, and those jests (as he 'saith) "are no better than inju-
ries," biting jests, mordentes et aculeati, they are poisoned jests, leave a sting
behind them, and ought not to be used.

"Set not thy foot to make the blind to fall;
Nor wilyly offend thy weaker brother;
Nor wound the dead with thy tongue's bitter gall,
Neither rejoice then in the fall of other."

If these rules could be kept, we should have much more ease and quietness
than we have, less melancholy; whereas, on the contrary, we study to misuse
each other, how to sting and gall, like two fighting boors, bending all our
force and wit, friends, fortune, to crucify one another's souls; by means of
which, there is little content and charity, much virulence, hatred, malice, and
disquietude among us.

SUBSECT. V.—Loss of Liberty, Servitude, Imprisonment, how they cause
Melancholy.

To this catalogue of causes, I may well annex loss of liberty, servitude, or
imprisonment, which to some persons is as great a torture as any of the rest.

Though they have all things convenient, sumptuous houses to their use, fair
walks and gardens, delicious bowers, galleries, good fare and diet, and all
things correspondent, yet they are not content, because they are confined, may
not come and go at their pleasure, have and do what they will, but live in alien
quadra, at another man's table and command. As it is in meats so it is in
all other things, places, societies, sports; let them be never so pleasant,
 commodious, wholesome, so good; yet omnium rerum sunt satiates, there is a
loathing satiety of all things. The children of Israel were tired with manna,
it is irksome to them so to live, as to a bird in a cage, or a dog in his kennel,
they are weary of it. They are happy, it is true, and have all things, to
another man's judgment, that heart can wish, or that they themselves can
desire, bona si sua nörint: yet they loathe it, and are tired with the present:
Est natura hominum novitatis avida; men's nature is still desirous of news,
variety, delights; and our wandering affections are so irregular in this kind,
that they must change, though it must be to the worst. Bachelors must be
married, and married men would be bachelors; they do not love their own
wives, though otherwise fair, wise, virtuous, and well qualified, because they
are theirs; our present estate is still the worst, we cannot endure one course
of life long, et quod modo voverat, odi, one calling long, esse in honore juvat,
nox displicet; one place long, * Romae Tybur amo, venosus Tybure Romam,
that which we earnestly sought, we now contemn. Hoc quosdam agit ad mor-
tem (saith Seneca) quod proposita sepe mutando in eadem revolutione, et non
relinquant covered locum: Pastidio cepit esse vita, et ipsus mundus, et subit
illud rapidissinimum decorarum, Quonque eadem? this alone kills many a
man, that are tied to the same still, as a horse in a mill, a dog in a wheel,

* * "Every reproach uttered against one already condemned, is mean-spirited." * Mart. lib. 1. epig. 35.
* Tales joci ab iniuria non possint discerni. Galaeus fo. 55. * Pybrac in his Quadrant 37.
* De tranquilli anima.
they run round, without alteration or news, their life growth odious, the world loathsome, and that which crosteth their furious delights, what? still the same? Marcus Aurelius and Solomon, that had experience of all worldly delights and pleasure, confessed as much of themselves; what they most desire, was tedious at last, and that their last could never be satisfied, all was vanity and affliction of mind.

Now if it be death itself, another hell, to be glutted with one kind of sport, dieted with one dish, tied to one place; though they have all things otherwise as they can desire, and are in heaven to another man's opinion, what misery and discontent shall they have, that live in slavery, or in prison itself? Quiad tristius morte, in servitute vivendum, as Hermolaus told Alexander in Curtius, worse than death is bondage: *hoc animo seco omnes fortis ut mortem servitutis anteponat, All brave men at arms (Tully holds) are so affected. *Equidem ego is sum qui servitudinem extremum omnium malorum esse arbitr: I am he (saith Boterus) that account servitude the extremity of misery. And what calamity do they endure, that live with those hard taskmasters, in gold mines (like those 30,000 †Indian slaves at Potosi, in Peru), tin-mines, lead-mines, stone-quarries, coal-pits, like so many mouldwarpes under ground, condemned to the galleys, to perpetual drudgery, hunger, thirst, and stripes, without all hope of delivery? How are those women in Turkey affected, that most part of the year come not abroad; those Italian and Spanish daunes, that are mewed up like hawks, and locked up by their jealous husbands? how tedious is it to them that live in stoves and caves half a year together? as in Iceland, Muscovy, or under the pole itself, where they have six months' perpetual night. Nay, what misery and discontent do they endure, that are in prison? They want all those six non-natural things at once, good air, good diet, exercise, company, sleep, rest, ease, &c., that are bound in chains all day long, suffer hunger, and (as Lucian describes it) “must abide that filthy stink, and rattling of chains, howlings, pitiful outcries, that prisoners usually make; these things are not only troublesome, but intolerable.” They lie nastily among toads and frogs in a dark dungeon, in their own dung, in pain of body, in pain of soul, as Joseph did, Psalm ev. 18, “They hurt his feet in the stocks, the iron entered his soul.” They live solitary, alone, sequestered from all company but heart-eating melancholy; and for want of meat, must eat that bread of affliction, prey upon themselves. Well might Arculanus put long imprisonment for a cause, especially to such as have lived jovially, in all sensuality and lust, upon a sudden are estranged and debarked from all manner of pleasures: as were Huniades, Edward, and Richard III., Valerian the Emperor, Bajazet the Turk. If it be irksome to miss our ordinary companions and repast for once a day, or an hour, what shall it be to lose them for ever? If it be so great a delight to live at liberty, and to enjoy that variety of objects the world affords; what misery and discontent must it needs bring to him, that shall now be cast headlong into that Spanish inquisition, to fall from heaven to hell, to be cabbed up upon a sudden, how shall he be perplexed, what shall become of him? Robert Duke of Normandy being imprisoned by his youngest brother Henry I., ab illo die inconsolabilis dolore in carcere contabat, saith Matthew Paris, from that day forward pined away with grief. †Jugurtha that generous captain, “brought to Rome in triumph, and after imprisoned, through anguish of his soul, and melancholy, died.” †Roger, Bishop of Salisbury, the second man from King Stephen, (he that built that famous castle of

---

*Causes of Melancholy.* [Part. 1. Sec. 2.]

---

† Lib. 8. ‡ Tallins Lepido, Fam. 10. 27. † Boterus, l. 1. polit. cap. 4. † Last. descript. Americ. 2. If there be any inhabitants. † In Taxari. Interdix quidem collum vinetum est, et manna consticta, necu vero totum corpus virgineum, ad has miserias accedit corporis fact, strepitus ejulantium, sonni brevitas, hac omne plane molesta et intolerabilia. † In 9 dibasis. ‡ William the Conqueror's eldest son. 1 Sallust. Roman triumph duxat duxandque in arcerem concretus, animi dolore perirt. 3 Camden in Wilton. miserum semem im fame et calamitatibus in carcerem fugavit, inter mortis metum, et vitae tormentos, &c.
Poverty and want, causes of melancholy.

Poverty and want are so very oppugnerous, so unwelcome guests, so much abhorred of all men, that I may not omit to speak of them apart. Poverty, although (if considered aright, to a wise, understanding, truly regenerate, and contented man) it be donum Dei, a blessed estate, the way to heaven, as Chrysostom calls it, God's gift, the mother of modesty, and much to be preferred before riches (as shall be shown in his place), yet as it is esteemed in the world's censure, it is a most odious calling, vile and base, a severe torture, sumnum scelus, a most intolerable burden; we shun it all, canē pejus et angue (worse than a dog or a snake), we abhor the name of it, *Pauertas fugirtur, toloque arcessit orbe, as being the fountain of all other miseries, cares, woes, labours, and grievances whatsoever. To avoid which, we will take any pains, extremos currit mercator ad Indos, we will leave no haven, no coast, no creek of the world unsearched, though it be to the hazard of our lives; we will dive to the bottom of the sea, to the bowels of the earth, five, six, seven, eight, nine hundred fathom deep, through all five zones, and both extremes of heat and cold: we will turn parasites and slaves, prostitute ourselves, swear and lie, damn our bodies and souls, forsake God, abjure religion, steal, rob, murder, rather than endure this insufferable yoke of poverty, which doth so tyrannize, crucify, and generally depress us.

For look into the world, and you shall see men most part esteemed according to their means, and happy as they are rich: *Ubique tandem quisque quantum habuit fuit. If he be likely to thrive, and in the way of preferment, who but he? In the vulgar opinion, if a man be wealthy, no matter how he gets it, of what parentage, how qualified, how virtuously endowed, or villainously inclined; let him be a bawd, a gripe, an usurer, a villain, a pagan, a barbarian, a wretch, §Lucian's tyrant, "on whom you may look with less security than on the sun;" so that he be rich (and liberal withal) he shall be honoured, admired, adored, reverenced, and highly magnified. "The rich is had in reputation because of his goods," Exclus. x. 31. He shall be befriended: "for riches gather many friends," Prov. xix. 4, —multis numerabit amicos, all happiness ebb, and flows with his money. He shall be accounted a gracious lord, a Mecenas, a benefactor, a wise, discreet, a proper, a valiant, a fortunate man, of a generous spirit, Pullus Jovis, et gallina filius albæ: a hopeful, a good man, a virtuous, honest man. Quoando ego te Junonum puerum et matris portum vere aureum, as Tully said of Octavianus, while he was adopted Caesar, and an heir apparent of so great a monarchy, he was a golden child. All honour, offices, applause, grand titles, andurgent epithets are put upon him, omnès omnia bona dicere; all men's eyes are upon him, God bless his good worship, his honour; every man speaks well of him, every man presents him, seeks and sues to him for his love, favour and protection, to serve him, 

k Vies, holde. 1 Seneca. 2 Com. ad Hebræos. Part. 2. Sect. 3. Membr. 3. 4 Quem ut difficilium morbus mparis tradere formidamus. Plut. 5 Lucum. 1. 1. 6 As in the silver mines at Fribourg in Germany. Fine. Morison. 7 Euripides. 8 Tom. 4. dial. minera perpendo solem quam hunc detecti secun liceat incerti. 9 Omnès enim res, virtus, fama, decus, divinae humanæque pulchrae. Divitis parent. Hor. Sor. 1. 2. Sat. 3. Clarus ariis, fortis, justus, saepius, etiam rerum. Et quicquid vol. Hor. 10 Et genus, et formam, regina pecunia domat. Money adds spirits, courage, &e. 11 Epist. ult. ad Atticum. 12 Our young master, a fine, gentleman, God bless him, and hopeful; why? he is heir apparent to the right worshipful, to the right honorable, &c. 13 O nummi, nummi! void hunc præstitam honorem. 14 Etinde sapere cum omnès dicimus, ac quiesque fortunam habet. Plaut., Pseud.
belong unto him, every man riseth to him, as to Themistocles in the Olympics, if he speak, as of Herod, \textit{Vox Dei, non hominis}, the voice of God, not of man. All the graces, Veneres, pleasures, elegances attend him, *golden fortune accompanies and lodgeth with him; and as to those Roman emperors, is placed in his chamber.

"\textit{Secura naviget aura,} \\
Fortunamque tuo temperet arbitrio:"

he may sail as he will himself, and temper his estate at his pleasure, jovial days, splendour and magnificence, sweet music, dainty fare, the good things, and fat of the land, fine clothes, richattires, soft beds, down pillows are at his command, all the world labours for him, thousands of artificers are his slaves to drudge for him, run, ride, and post for him: *Divines (for \textit{Pythia Philippisat}), lawyers, physicians, philosophers, scholars are his, wholly devote to his service. Every man seeks his *acquaintance, his kindred, to match with him, though he be an oaf, a ninnny, a monster, a goosecap, \textit{uxorem ducat Danaen,} \textsuperscript{1} when and whom he will, \textit{hunc optant generum Rex et Regina}—he is an excellent *match for my son, my daughter, my niece, &c. \textit{Quicquid calcaravit hic, Rosa fet}, let him go whither he will, trumpets sound, bells ring, &c., all happiness attends him, every man is willing to entertain him, he sups in \textsuperscript{b} Apollo wheresover he comes; what preparation is made for his *entertainment! fish and fowl, spices and perfumes, all that sea and land affords. What cookery, masking, mirth to exhilarate his person!

"\textsuperscript{4} Da Trebium, pone ad Trebium, vis frater ab illis ilibus?——

What dish will your good worship eat of?

\begin{quote}
\textit{Et quaeque feeret cultus tibi fundus honores,} \\
\textit{Ante Larum, gustet venerabilior Lare dives.} \\
\textit{Sweet apples, and whatsoever they fields afford,} \\
\textit{Before thy gods be served, let serve thy Lord.}
\end{quote}

What sport will your honour have? hawking, hunting, fishing, bowling, bulls, bears, cards, dice, cocks, players, tumblers, fiddlers, jesters, &c., they are at your good worship's command. Fair houses, gardens, orchards, terraces, galleries, cabinets, pleasant walks, delightful some places, they are at hand: *\textit{In aureis luscina in argenteis, adolescentule ad nutum speciosis, wine, wenches, &c., a Turkish paradise, a heaven upon earth.} Though he be a silly soft fellow, and scarce have common sense, yet if he be born to fortunes (as I have said), *\textit{jure hereditario sapere jubetur,} he must have honour and office in his course: *\textit{Venero nisi dives honore dignus} (Ambros. offic. 21.) none so worthy as himself: he shall have it, \textit{atque esto quicquid Servius aut Labeo.}

Get money enough and command $\text{\&c.,} kingdoms, provinces, armies, hearts, hands, and affections; thou shalt have popes, patriarchs to be thy chaplains and parasites: thou shalt have (Tamerlane-like) kings to draw thy coach, queens to be thy laundresses, emperors thy footstools, build more towns and cities than great Alexander, Babel towers, pyramids and mausolean tombs, &c., command heaven and earth, and tell the world it is thy vassal, \textit{auro emitur diadema, argento caelum panditur, denarius philosophum conduct, nummus jus cogit, obolus literatum passit, metallum sanitatem conciliat, es amicos conglutinant.} \textsuperscript{2} And therefore not without good cause, John de Medicis, that rich Florence, when he lay upon his death-bed, calling his sons, Cosmo and Laurence, before him, amongst other sober sayings, repeated this, \textit{animo quieto digredior, quod}

\begin{itemize}
\item [\textsuperscript{a}] Aurea fortuna, principum cubiculo repont solita. Julius Capitolinus vita Antonini.  
\item [\textsuperscript{2}] Petronius. 
\item \textsuperscript{b} Theologii opulentus adherent, Jurisprudentia peculiaris, literatae munimmo, liberalissimae artifices. 
\item \textsuperscript{c} Multi illium juvenes, multae petere paculis. 
\item \textsuperscript{d} He may have Danae to wife. 
\item \textsuperscript{2} Dummodo sit dives, barbarus illa placet. 
\item \textsuperscript{e} Plut. in Lucullo, a rich chamber so called. 
\item \textsuperscript{5} Fams pane melior. 
\item \textsuperscript{6} Boeheimus de Turcis et Bredembach. 
\item \textsuperscript{7} Emporiniae. 
\item \textsuperscript{8} Qui pecuniam habent, clari sunt animis, lobosi spiritus, brave men at arms; all rich men are generous, courageous, &c. 
\item \textsuperscript{9} Nummus sit pro me nubat Cornubia Romae. 
\item \textsuperscript{10} A diadem is purchased with gold; silver opens the way to heaven; philosophy may be hired for a penny; money controls justice; one obolus satisfies a man of letters; precious metal procures health; wealth attaches friends.
\end{itemize}
Poverty and Want, Causes.

vos sanos et divites post me relinquam, "It doth me good to think yet, though I be dying, that I shall leave you, my children, sound and rich:" for wealth sways all. It is not with us, as amongst those Lacedemonian senators of Lycurgus in Plutarch, "He preferred that deserved best, was most virtuous and worthy of the place, not swiftness, or strength, or wealth, or friends carried it in those days:" but inter optimos optimus, inter temperantes temperantissimus, the most temperate and best. We have no aristocracies but in contemplation, all oligarchies, wherein a few rich men domineer, do what they list, and are privileged by their greatness. They may freely trespass, and do as they please, no man dare accuse them, no not so much as mutter against them, there is no notice taken of it, they may securely do it, live after their own laws, and for their money get pardons, indulgences, redeem their souls from purgatory and hell itself,—clausum possidet arca Jovem. Let them be epicures, or atheists, libertines, machiavelians (as they often are), "Et quamvis perjurus erit, sine gente, cruens," they may go to heaven through the eye of a needle, if they will themselves, they may be canonised for saints, they shall be honourably interred in mausolean tombs, commended by poets, registered in histories, have temples and statues erected to their names,—ex machina illis—nascuntur violae.—If he be bountiful in his life, and liberal at his death, he shall have one to swear, as he did by Claudius the Emperor in Tacitus, he saw his soul go to heaven, and be miserably lamented at his funeral. Ambibus ararum collegia, etc. Trimalchionis topvinta in Petronius recta in calum abit, went right to heaven: a base queen, "thou wouldst have scorned once in thy misery to have a penny from her;" and why? medoa nummos metit, she measured her money by the bushel. These prerogatives do not usually belong to rich men, but to such as are most part seeming rich, let him have but a good outside, he carries it, and shall be adored for a god, as Cyrus was amongst the Persians, ob splendidum apparatum, for his gay attires; now most men are esteemed according to their clothes. In our gullish times, whom you peradventure in modesty would give place to, as being deceived by his habit, and presuming him some great worshipful man, believe it, if you shall examine his estate, he will likely be proved a serving man of no great note, my lady's tailor, his lordship's barber, or some such gull, a Fastidius Brisk, Sir Petronel Flash, a mere outside. Only this respect is given him, that wheresoever he comes, he may call for what he will, and take place by reason of his outward habit.

But on the contrary, if he be poor, Prov. xv. 15. "all his days are miserable," he is under hatches, dejected, rejected and forsaken, poor in purse, poor in spirit; * prout res nobis fluit, ita et animus se habet; * money gives life and soul. Though he be honest, wise, learned, well-deserving, noble by birth, and of excellent good parts; yet in that he is poor, unlikely to rise, come to honour, office or good means, he is contemned, neglected, frustra sopit, inter literas eurit, amicus molestus. "If he speak, what babbler is this?" Eclesius. his nobility without wealth, is "projecta vilior alga, and he not esteemed: nos viles pulli noti infelicibus ovis, if once poor, we are metamorphosed in an instant, base slaves, villains, and vile drudges: 'for to be poor, is to be a knave, a fool, a wretch, an odious fellow, a common eye-sore, say poor and say all: they are born to labour, to misery, to carry burdens like jumens, pistum stercus comedere with Ulysses' companions, and as Chremilus

---

Causes of Melancholy.

[Part. 1. Sec. 2.

objected in Aristophanes, * salem linger, lick salt, to empty jakes, lay channels, carry out dirt and dunghills, sweep chimneys, rub horse-heels, &c. I say nothing of Turks, galley-slaves, which are bought * and sold like jumens, or those African negroses, or poor * Indian drudges, qui indies hine unde diffrerentis oneribus occumbat, nam quod apud nos boves et asini velit, trabalunt, &c.* Id omne miselliis Indis, they are ugly to behold, and though erst spruce, now rusty and squallid, because poor; *immundas fortunas equum est squalorem sequi, it is ordinarily so. *  

" * Others eat to live, but they live to drudge," * servilis et misera gens nihil recuperare audet, a servile generation, that dare refuse no task.— " * Heus tu, Dromo, cape hoc flabellum, ventulum hinc facito dom lavamus," sirrah, blow wind upon us while we wash, and bid your fellow get him up betimes in the morning, be it fair or foul, he shall run fifty miles afoot to-morrow, to carry me a letter to my mistress, * Socia ad pistrimum, Socia shall tarry at home and grind malt all day long, Tristan threash. Thus are they commanded, being indeed some of them as so many footstools for rich men to tread on, blocks for them to get on horseback, or as " * walls for them to piss on." They are commonly such people, rude, silly, superstitious idiots, nasty, unclean, lousy, poor, dejected, slavishly humble: and as * Leo Afer observes of the commonalty of Africa, * natura viliores sunt, nec apud suos duces majores tunc precio quum si canes essent: * base by nature, and no more esteemed than dogs, miseram, laboriosam, calamitosam vitam agunt, et inopem, infelicitatem, rudiores asinum, ut et bruti suas minus dicas: no learning, no knowledge, no civility, scarce common sense, naught but barbarism amongst them, bellum more vivum, neque calices gestant, neque vestes, like rogues and vagabonds, they go barefooted and barelegged, the soles of their feet being as hard as horsehoofs, as * Radivilus observed at Damietta in Egypt, leading a laborious, miserable, wretched, unhappy life, " * like beasts and jumens, if not worse": (for a * Spaniard in Incatan, sold three Indian boys for a cheese, and a hundred negro slaves for a horse) their discourse is scurrility, their summum bonum a pot of ale. There is not any slavery which these villains will not undergo, interillos plerique latrinis vacuant, aliis culinarian curant, aliis stabularios agunt, urinatores, et id genus similiam exercunt, &c. like those people that dwell in the * Alps, chimney-sweepers, jakes farmers, dirt-daubers, vagrant rogues, they labour hard some, and yet cannot get clothes to put on, or bread to eat. For what can filthy poverty give else, but * beggary, fulsome nastiness, squalor, content, drudgery, labour, ugliness, hunger and thirst; pediculum, et pulicum numerum? as * he well followed it in Aristophanes, fleas and lice, * por pillo vestem laceration, et pro pulvini lapidem bene magnum ad caput, rags for his raiment, and a stone for his pillow, * pro cathedra, ruptae caput urna, he sits in a broken pitcher, or on a block for a chair, * et malvae ramos pro panicibus comedib, he drinks water, and lives on wort leaves, pulse, like a hog, or scraps like a dog, * ut omne nobis vita officitur, quis non putabit insanias esse, infelicissimamque? as Chremilus concludes his speech, as we poor men live now-a-days, who will not take our life to be * infelicity, misery, and madness?  

If they be of little better condition than those base villains, hunger-starved beggars, wandering rogues, those ordinary slaves, and day-labouring drudges;
yet they are commonly so preyed upon by "polling officers for breaking the laws, by their tyrannizing landlords, so flayed and fleeced by perpetual "exactions, that though they do drudge, fare hard, and starve their genius, they cannot live in "some countries; but what they have is instantly taken from them, the very care they take to live, to be drudges, to maintain their poor families, their trouble and anxiety "takes away their sleep," Siree. xxxi. 1. it makes them weary of their lives: when they have taken all pains, done their utmost and honest endeavours, if they be cast behind by sickness, or overtaken with years, no man pities them, hard-hearted and merciless, un-charitable as they are, they leave them so distressed, to beg, steal, murmur, and "rebel, or else starve. The feeling and fear of this misery compelled those old Romans, whom Menenius Agrippa pacified, to resist their governors: outlaws, and rebels in most places, to take up seditious arms, and in all ages hath caused uppers, murmuring, seditions, rebellions, thefts, murders, mutinies, jars and contentions in every commonwealth: grudging, repining, complaining, discontent in each private family, because they want means to live according to their callings, bring up their children, it breaks their hearts, they cannot do as they would. No greater misery than for a lord to have a knight's living, a gentleman a yeoman's, not to be able to live as his birth and place require. Poverty and want are generally corrosives to all kind of men, especially to such as have been in good and flourishing estate, are suddenly distressed, nobly born, liberally brought up, and by some disaster and casualty miserably deserted. For the rest, as they have base fortunes, so have they base minds correspondent, like beetles, è stercore orbi, è stercore victus, in stercore deliciun, as they were obscurely born and bred, so they delight in obscenity; they are not so thoroughly touched with it. Angustas animas angusto in pectore versant. 'Yea, that which is no small cause of their torments, if once they come to be in distress, they are forsaken of their fellows, most part neglected, and left unto themselves; as poor 'Tenere in Rome was by Scipio, Lælius, and Furius, his great and noble friends.

"Nil Publii Scipio profuit, nil ei Lælius, niit Furius, Tres per eadem tempus qui agitatabant noblesse familiarit. Horum ille opera ne donum quidem habuit conductitiam." *

'Tis generally so, Tempora si fuerint nobilia, solus eris, he is left cold and comfortless, nullus ad amissas vbi amicus opes, all flee from him as from a rotten wall, now ready to fall on their heads. Prov. xix. 4. "Poverty separates them from their neighbours."

"A Dum fortuna faveat, vulsum servavit, amici, Cum cedidit, turpi veritatis ora fugit. | Whistler fortune favort d. friends, you smiled on me, But when she fled, a friend I could not sec." Which is worse yet, if he be poor 'every man contemns him, insults over him, oppresseth him, scoffs at, aggravates his misery.

"A Quam eript quassata donum subsidere, partes In proclamatas omne recumbit omus. | When once the tottering house begins to shrink, Thither comes all the weight by an instinct." Nay, they are odious to their own brethren and dearest friends, Prov. xix. 7. "His brethren hate him if he be poor," omnes vicini odorunt, "his neighbours hate him," Prov. xiv. 20. "omnes me noti ac ignoti deservunt, as he complained in the comedy, friends and strangers, all forsake me. Which is most grievous, poverty makes men ridiculous, Nil habet infelix pauportas duravit in es, quidam quod ridiculos homines facitur, they must endure ' jests, taunts, flouts,

blows of their betters, and take all in good part to get a meal’s meat: *magnum pauperies opprobrium, jubet quidoe et facere et pati.* He must turn parasite, jester, fool, *cum desipientibus desperere;* saith *1 Euripides.* Slave, villain, drudge to get a poor living, apply himself to each man’s humours, to win and please, &c., and be buffeted when he hath all done, as Ulysses was by Melanthius *2 in Homer,* be reviled, baffled, insulted over, for *potentiorum stultitia perferenda est,* and may not so much as mutter against it. He must turn rogue and villain; for as the saying is, *Necessitas cogit ad turpia,* poverty alone makes men thieves, rebels, murderers, traitors, assassins, *because of poverty we have sinned,* Ecclus. xxvii. 1. swear and forswear, bear false witness, lie, dissemble, any thing, as I say, to advantage themselves, and to relieve their necessities: *Culpae scellerisque magistra est,* when a man is driven to his shifts, what will he not do?

*a  si miserum fortuna Sinonem
Finxit, vanum etiam mendacemente improba finget.*

he will betray his father, prince, and country, turn Turk, forsake religion, abjure God and all, *nulla tam horrenda prodictio, quam illi lucr i causa* (saith *1 Leo Afer*) *perpetrare nobi.* *k Plato,* therefore, calls poverty, “thievish, sacrilegious, filthy, wicked, and miscivious:” and well he might. For it makes many an upright man otherwise, had he not been in want, to take bribes, to be corrupt, to do against his conscience, to sell his tongue, heart, hand, &c., to be churlish, hard, unmerciful, uncivil, to use indirect means to help his present estate. It makes princes to exact upon their subjects, great men tyrannise, landlords oppress, justice mercenary, lawyers vultures, physicians harpies, friends importunate, tradesmen liars, honest men thieves, devout assassins, great men to prostitute their wives, daughters, and themselves, middle sort to repine, commons to mutiny, all to grudge, murmur, and complain. A great temptation to all mischief, it compels some miserable wretches to counterfeit several diseases, to dismember, make themselves blind, lame, to have a more plausible cause to beg, and lose their limbs to recover their present wants. *Jodocus Danhoderius,* a lawyer of Bruges, *praxi verum criminal.* c. 112. hath some notable examples of such counterfeit cranks, and every village almost will yield abundant testimonies amongst us; we have dummerers, Abraham men, &c. And that which is the extent of misery, it enforcing them, through anguish and wearisomeness of their lives, to make away themselves: they had rather be hanged, drowned, &c., than to live without means.

"1 In marc castierum, ne te premat aspera egastis, Desil, et a celis corrue Cerne jagis." 4 Much better 'tis to break thy neck, Or drown thyself in the sea, Than suffer irksome poverty; Go make thyself away."

A Sybarite of old, as I find it registered in *2 Athenæus,* supping in Phidittis in Sparta, and observing their hard fare, said it was no marvel if the Lacedaemonians were valiant men; “for his part he would rather run upon a sword point (and so would any man in his wits), than live with such base diet, or lead so wretched a life.” *In Japonia 'tis a common thing to stifle their children if they be poor, or to make an abortion, which Aristotle commends. In that civil commonwealth of China, *the mother strangles her child if she be not able to bring it up, and had rather lose than sell it, or have it endure such misery as poor men do.* *Arnobius, lib. 7. adversus gentes,* *Lactantius, lib. 5. cap. 9. objects as much to those ancient Greeks and Romans,* “they did expose their children to wild beasts, strangle or knock out their brains against

*Hor. 2 In Pharnis. Odys. 17. 11dcm. g Mantuan. b 3 Since cruel fortune has made Simon poor, she has made him vain and mendacious.” *De Africa lib. 1. cap. ult. 4. de legibus. furacissima pauperitas, sacrilega, turpia, flagitiosa, omnium malorum opex. 1 Theoginis. Dipnosophist. lib. 12. Millies pedes mortuum (si quis hibi mente constaret) quam tam viles et crumenos victis communione habere. 2 Gasper Vilela Jesuita epist. Japon. lib. 5. 3 In sinis. 1. c. 3. 4 Vos Romani procreat filios feris et canibus expunitis, nunc strangulatis vel in saxum eliditis, &c.
a stone, in such cases." If we may give credit to "Munster, amongst us Christians in Lithuania, they voluntarily mancipate and sell themselves, their wives and children to rich men, to avoid hunger and begging; "many make away themselves in this extremity. Apicius the Roman, when he cast up his accounts, and found but 100,000 crowns left, murdered himself for fear he should be famished to death. P. Forestus, in his medicinal observations, hath a memorable example of two brothers of Louvain that, being destitute of means, became both melancholy, and in a discontented humour massacred themselves. Another of a merchant, learned, wise otherwise and discreet, but out of a deep apprehension he had of a loss at seas, would not be persuaded but as "Venti- dius in the poet, he should die a beggar. In a word, thus much I may conclude of poor men, that though they have good 'parts they cannot show or make use of them: "ab inopis ad virtutem obsepta est via, 'tis hard for a poor man to rise, haud facile emergunt, quorum virtutibus obstat res augusta domi."

"The wisdom of the poor is despised, and his words are not heard." Eccles. vi. 19. His works are rejected, contemned, for the baseness and obscurity of the author, though landable and good in themselves, they will not likely take.

"Nulla placere diis, neque vivere carmina possunt, Quae scribuntur a quo potioribus—"

"No verses can please men or live long that are written by water-drinkers." Poor men cannot please, their actions, counsels, consultations, projects, are vilified in the world's esteem, anuntiunt consilium in re, which Gnatho long since observed. "Sapiens crepidis sibi nunquam nec solos fecit, a wise man never cobbled shoes; as he said of old, but how doth he prove it? I am sure we find it otherwise in our days, "pruinosis horret facundia pandis. Homer himself must beg if he want means, and as by report sometimes he did "go from door to door, and sing ballads, with a company of boys about him." This common misery of theirs must needs distract, make them discontented and melancholy, as ordinarily they are, wayward, peevish, like a weary traveller, for "Fames et mora blem in naves concidunt, still murmuring and repining: Ob inopiam morosi sunt, quibus est males, as Plutarch quotes out of Euripides, and that comical poet well seconds,

"Omnis quisbus res sunt minus secunda, nescio quomodo Suspitiones, ad centumsemia omnia accipiendo magis, Propter sibi impotentiam se credunt negligi."

"If they be in adversity, they are more suspicious and apt to mistake: they think themselves scorned by reason of their misery: " and therefore many generous spirits in such cases withdraw themselves from all company, as that comelian Terence is said to have done; when he perceived himself to be forsaken and poor, he voluntarily banished himself to Stymphalus, a base town in Arcadia, and there miserably died.

"—ad summam inopiam redactus, Itaque e conspectu omnium absit Graecia in terram ultimam."

Neither is it without cause, for we see men commonly respected according to their means (§an dives sit omnes quærunt, nemo an bonus), and vilified if they be in bad clothes. "Thiopæmen the orator was set to cut wood, because he was so homely attired, "Terentius was placed at the lower end of Cecillus' table, because of his homely outside. "Dante, that famous Italian poet, by reason his clothes were but mean, could not be admitted to sit down at a feast. Gnatho
Causes of Melancholy.

[Hominem video pannis, ansistes obistem, hic ego illum contempsi pra me. King Persius overcome sent a letter to *Paulus Æmillius, the Roman general; Persius P. Consuli, S. but he scorned him any answer, tacite exprobans fortunam suam (saith mine author), upbraiding him with a present fortune. †Carolus Pugnax, that great duke of Burgundy, made H. Holland, late duke of Exeter, exiled, run after his horse like a lackey, and would take no notice of him: *tis the common fashion of the world. So that such men as are poor may justly be discontent, melancholy, and complain of their present misery, and all may pray with Solomon, “Give me, O Lord, neither riches nor poverty; feed me with food convenient for me.”

SUBSECT. VII.—A heap of other Accidents causing Melancholy, Death of Friends, Losses, &c.

In this labyrinth of accidental causes, the farther I wander, the more intricate I find the passage, multae ambages, and new causes as so many by-paths offer themselves to be discussed: to search out all, were an Herculean work, and fitter for Theseus: I will follow mine intended thread; and point only at some few of the chiefest.

Death of Friends.] Amongst which, loss and death of friends may challenge a first place, multae tristantur, as †Vives well observes, post delicias, convivia, dies festos, many are melancholy after a feast, holiday, merry meeting, or some pleasing sport, if they be solitary by chance, left alone to themselves, without employment, sport, or want their ordinary companions, some at the departure of friends only whom they shall shortly see again, weep and howl, and look after them as a cow lows after her calf, or a child takes on that goes to school after holidays. Ut me levaret tuus adventus, sic discessus affixit, (which §Tully writ to Atticus) thy coming was not so welcome to me, as thy departure was harsh. Montanus, consil. 132. makes mention of a country woman that parting with her friends and native place, became grievously melancholy for many years; and Trallianus of another, so caused for the absence of her husband: which is an ordinary passion amongst our good wives, if their husband tarry out a day longer than his appointed time, or break his hour, they take on presently with sighs and tears, he is either robbed, or dead, some mischance or other is surely befallen him, they cannot eat, drink, sleep, or be quiet in mind, till they see him again. If parting of friends, absence alone can work such violent effects, what shall death do, when they must eternally be separated, never in this world to meet again? This is so grievous a torment for the time, that it takes away their appetite, desire of life, extinguisheth all delights, it causeth deep sighs and groans, tears, exclamations, ("O duce germani matris, a sanguinis mens, Eten teneptes, &c. —— et fio tener.")

howling, roaring, many bitter pangs (flamenis geminitque et flamino uulutato Tecta fremunt), and by frequent meditation extends so far sometimes, "they think they see their dead friends continually in their eyes," observantes imagines, as Conciliator confesseth he saw his mother’s ghost presenting herself still before him. Quod minus miseri volunt, hoc facile credunt, still, still, still, that good father, that good son, that good wife, that dear friend runs in their minds: Totus animus haec und cognitione defixus est, all the year long.** Pliny com-

plans to Romanus, "methinks I see Virginius, I hear Virginius, I talk with Virginius," &c.

They that are most staid and patient, are so furiously carried headlong by the passion of sorrow in this case, that brave discreet men otherwise, oftentimes forget themselves, and weep like children many months together, "as if that they to water would," and will not be comforted. They are gone, they are gone; what shall I do?


Fountains of tears who gives, who lends me groans, Deep sights sufficient to express my moans; Mine eyes are dry, my breast in pieces torn, My loss so great, I cannot enough mourn.

So Strza Filius, that elegant Italian poet, in his Epicedium, bewails his father's death, he could moderate his passions in other matters (as he confessed), but not in this, he yields wholly to sorrow,

"Nunc fateor do terga mali, mens illa fatigat, Indomitus quondam vigor et constantia mentis."

How doth 'Quintilian complain for the loss of his son, to despair almost: Cardan lament his only child in his book de libris propriis, and elsewhere in many other of his tracts, St. Ambrose his brother's death? an ego possum non cogitare de te, aut sine lachrymis cogitare? O amari dies, o flebiles noctes, &c. Can I ever cease to think of thee, and to think with sorrow? O bitter days, O nights of sorrow, &c. Gregory Nazianzen, that noble Pulcheria! O decorum, &c. flos recens, pullulans, &c. Alexander, a man of most invincible courage, after Hephestes's death, as Curtius relates, triduum jacuit ad moriendum obstinatus, lay three days together upon the ground, obstinate, to die with him, and would neither eat, drink, nor sleep. The woman that communed with Esdras (lib. 2. cap. 10.) when her son fell down dead, "fled into the field, and would not return into the city, but there resolved to remain, neither to eat nor drink, but mourn and fast until she died." "Rachel wept for her children, and would not be comforted because they were not." Matt. ii. 18. So did Adrian the emperor bewail his Antinous; Hercules, Hylas; Orpheus, Eurydice; David, Absalom; (O my dear son Absalom;) Austin his mother Monica, Niobe her children, insomuch that the poets feigned her to be turned into a stone, as being stupefied through the extremity of grief. "Ægeus, signo lugubri fuit consternatus, in mare se præcipitum dedit, impatient of sorrow for his son's death, drowned himself. Our late physicians are full of such examples. Montanus, consil. 242. had a patient troubled with this infirmity, by reason of her husband's death, many years together. Trincavellus, l. i. c. 14. hath such another, almost in despair, after his mother's departure, ut se ferane præcipitem daret; and ready through distraction to make away himself: and in his Fifteenth counsel, tells a story of one fifty years of age, "that grew desperate upon his mother's death;" and cured by Fallopus, fell many years after into a relapse, by the sudden death of a daughter which he had, and could never after be recovered. The fury of this passion is so violent sometimes, that it daunts whole kingdoms and cities. Vespasian's death was pitifully lamented all over the Roman empire, totus orbis lugubrat, saith Aurelius Victor. Alexander commanded the battlements of houses to be pulled down, mules and horses to have their names shorn off, and many common soldiers to be slain, to accompany his dear Hephestes's death; which is now practised amongst

* Calphurnius Graecus. "Without thee, ah! wretched me, the lilies lose their whiteness, the roses become pallid, the hyacinth forgets to blush; neither the myrtle nor the laurel retains its odours." † Chaucer. 1.Praefat. lib. 6. 2.Lib. de obtù Satyrif Hraxis. 3.Ovid. Met. 4.Pint. vitæ ejus. 5Nothilia martona melancholia ob mortem mariti. 6.Ex matris obitù in desperationum incidit.
the Tartars, when "a great Cham dieth, ten or twelve thousand must be slain, men and horses, all they meet; and among those the Pagan Indians, their wives and servants voluntarily die with them." Leo Decimus was so much bewailed in Rome after his departure, that as Jovins gives out, "communis salus, publica hilaritas, the common safety of all good fellowship, peace, mirth, and plenty died with him, tangquam codem sepulchro cum Leone condita lugebantur; for it was a golden age whilst he lived," but after his decease, an iron season succeeded, barbara vis et foda vastitas, et dira malorum omnium incommoda, wars, plagues, vanity, discontent. When Augustus Cesar died, saith Paterculus, orbis rwiamum timuercamus, we were all afraid, as if heaven had fallen upon our heads. Budeus records, how that, at Lewis the Twelfth his death, tam subita mutatio, ut qui prius digito cælum attingere videbantur, nunc humili dererent serpere, sideratos esse dicere, they that were erst in heaven, upon a sudden, as if they had been planet-struck, lay grovelling on the ground;

"† Concessis eccidere animis, sen frondibus ingen "Sylla docte lapis"

they looked like cropped trees. † At Nancy in Lorraine, when Claudia Valesia, Henry the Second French king's sister, and the duke's wife deceased, the temples for forty days were all shut up, no prayers nor masses, but in that room where she was. The senators all seen in black, and for a twelve-month's space throughout the city, they were forbid to sing or dance.

"§ Non umb pastores illis egrae diebus "Frigida (Daphne) boves ad fiamma, nulla nec "amnem "Libavit quadrupes, nec graminis attigit herbam."

"The swains forgot their sheep, nor near the brink Of running waters brought their herds to drink; The thirsty cattle, of themselves, abstain'd From water, and their grassy fare disdain'd." How were we affected here in England for our Titus, delicie humani generis, Prince Henry's immature death, as if all our dearest friends' lives had exhaled with his? || Scanderbeg's death was not so much lamented in Epirus. In a word, as "he saith of Edward the First at the news of Edward of Caernarvon's son's birth, immortaler gavisis, he was immortally glad, may we say on the contrary of friends' deaths, immortaler gementes, we are diverse of us as so many turtles, eternally dejected with it. There is another sorrow, which arises from the loss of temporal goods and fortunes, which equally afflicts, and may go hand in hand with the preceding; loss of time, loss of honour, office, of good name, of labour, frustrate hopes, will much torment; but in my judgment, there is no torture like unto it, or that sooner procure this malady and mischief:

"‡ Floratur lachrymis amissa pecunia veris: " "Lost money is bewailed with grief sincere:" it wrings true tears from our eyes, many sighs, much sorrow from our hearts, and often causes habitual melancholy itself, Guianerius, tract. 15. 5. repeats this for an especial cause: "I. Loss of friends, and loss of goods, make many men melancholy, as I have often seen by continual meditation of such things." The same causes Arnoldus Villanovanus inculcates, Breviar. l. 1. c. 18. ex rerum amissione, damno, amicorum morte, &c. Want alone will make a man mad, to be Sans argent will cause a deep and grievous melancholy. Many persons are affected like "Irishmen in this behalf, who if they have a good scimitar, had rather have a blow on their arm, than their weapon hurt: they will sooner lose their life, than their goods: and the grief that cometh hence,

 continua liqu long (saith Plater) “and out of many dispositions procureth an habit.” * Montanus and Frisemelica cured a young man of 22 years of age, that so became melancholy, ob amissam pecuniam, for a sum of money which he had unhappily lost. Skeneckins hath such another story of one melancholy, because he overshott himself, and spent his stock in unnecessary building. b Roger, that rich bishop of Salisbury, exuvit opibus et castris à Roeye Stephano, spoiled of his goods by king Stephen, vi doloris absorptus, atque in amantium versus, indecentia fecit, through grief ran mad, spoke and did he knew not what. Nothing so familiar, as for men in such cases, through anguish of mind to make away themselves. A poor fellow went to hang himself (which Ausonius hath elegantly expressed in a neat Epigram), but finding by chance a pot of money, flung away the rope, and went merrily home, but he that hid the gold, when he missed it, hanged himself with that rope which the other man had left, in a discontented humour.

At qui considerat, postquam non reperit aurum, Aptavit colo, quem reperit laqueum.

Such feral accidents can want and penury produce. Be it by swetyship, shipwreck, fire, spoil and pillage of soldiers, or what loss soever, it boots not, it will work the like effect, the same desolation in provinces and cities, as well as private persons. The Romans were miserably dejected after the battle of Canne, the men amazed for fear, the stupid women tore their hair and cried. The Hungarians, when their king Ladislaus and bravest soldiers were slain by the Turks, Luctus publicus, &c. The Venetians, when their forces were overcome by the French king Lewis, the French and Spanish kings, pope, emperor, all conspired against them at Cambray, the French herald denounced open war in the senate: Laureana Venetorum duce, &c., and they had lost Padua, Brixia, Verona, Forum Julii, their territories in the continent, and had now nothing left but the city of Venice itself, et ubi quoque ipsi (saith Plater) timendum potarent, and the loss of that was likewise to be feared, tantus repente dolor omnibus tenuit, ut munquam alias, &c., they were pitifully plunged, never before in such lamentable distress. Anno 1527, when Rome was sacked by Barbarous, the common soldiers made such spoil, that fair churches were turned to stables, old monuments and books made horse-litter, or burned like straw; relics, costly pictures defaced; altars demolished, rich hangings, carpets, &c., trampled in the dirt. Their wives and loveliest daughters conspurred at every base cullion, as Sejanus’ daughter was by the hangman in public, before their fathers’ and husbands’ faces. Noblemen’s children, and of the wealthiest citizens, reserved for princes’ beds, were prostitute to every common soldier, and kept for concubines; senators and cardinals themselves dragged along the streets, and put to exquisite torments, to confess where their money was hid; the rest murdered on heaps, lay stinking in the streets; infants’ brains dashed out before their mothers’ eyes. A lamentable sight it was to see so goodly a city so suddenly defaced, rich citizens sent a begging to Venice, Naples, Ancona, &c., that erst lived in all manner of delights. * Those proud palaces that even now vaunted their tops up to heaven, were dejected as lowas hell in an instant.” Whom will not such misery make discontented? Terence the poet drowned himself (some say) for the loss of his comedies, which suffered shipwreck. When a poor man hath made many hungry meals, got together a small sum, which he lost in an instant; a scholar spent many an hour’s study to no purpose, his labours lost, &c., how should it otherwise be? I may con-


clunde with Gregory, temporalium amor, quantum affecti cùm hæret possessio, tantum quum subtrahatur, utrùs dolor; riches do not so much exhilarate us with their possession, as they torment us with their loss.

Next to sorrow still I may annex such accidents as procure fear; for besides those terrors which I have e before touched, and many other fears (which are infinite) there is a superstitious fear, one of the three great causes of fear in Aristotle, commonly caused by prodigies and dismal accidents, which much trouble many of us. (Nescio quid animus mihi præsaegit mali.) As if a hare cross the way at our going forth, or a mouse gnaw our clothes: if they bleed three drops at nose, the salt fall towards them, a black spot appear in their nails, &c., with many such, which Delrio, Tom. 2. l. 3. sect. 4, Austin Niphns in his book de Auguris, Polydore Virg., l. 3. de Prodigis, Sarisburiensis, Polycrat. l. 1. c. 13., discuss at large. They are so much affected, that with the very strength of imagination, fear, and the devil's craft, "they pull those misfortunes they suspect upon their own heads, and that which they fear shall come upon them," as Solomon foretelleth, Prov. x. 24. and Isaiah denounceth, lxvi. 4, which if they could neglect and contemn, would not come to pass, Eorum vires nostrid resident opiniones, ut morbi gravitas agrotantium cogitations, they are intended and remitted, as our opinion is fixed, more or less. N. N. dat poenas, saith Crato of such a one, utinam non attraheret: he is punished, and is the cause of it himself:

* Dum fata fugimus, fata stulti incurrimus, the thing that I feared, saith Job, is fallen upon me.

As much we may say of them that are troubled with their fortunes; or ill destinies foreseen: multis angit præscientia malorum: The foreknowledge of what shall come to pass, crucifies many men: foretold by astrologers, or wizards, iratum ob caelem, be it ill accident, or death itself: which often falls out by God's permission; quia daemonem timent (saith Chrysostom) Deus ideo permittit accidere. Severus, Adrian, Domitian, can testify as much, of whose fear and suspicion, Sueton, Herodian, and the rest of those writers, tell strange stories in this behalf. b Montanus, consil. 31. hath one example of a young man, exceeding melancholy upon this occasion. Such fears have still tormented mortal men in all ages, by reason of those lying oracles, and juggling priests, &c. There was a fountain in Greece, near Ceres' temple in Achaia, where the event of such diseases was to be known; "A glass let down by a thread," &c. Amongst those Cyanean rocks at the springs of Lycia, was the oracle of Thriceus Apollo, c where all fortunes were foretold, sickness, health, or what they would besides: so common people have been always deluded with future events. At this day, Metus futurorum maximi torquet Sinum, this foolish fear mightily crucifies them in China: as Matthew Riecius the Jesuit informeth us, in his commentaries of those countries, of all nations they are most superstitious, and much tormented in this kind, attributing so much to their diviners, ut ipse metus fidem faciat, that fear itself and conceit cause it to fall out: if he foretell sickness such a day, that very time they will be sick, vi metus afflicti in egritudinem cadent; and many times die as it is foretold. A true saying, Timor mortis, morte pejor, the fear of death is worse than death itself, and the memory of that sad hour, to some fortunate and rich men, "is as bitter as gall," Ecclus. xii. 1. Inquidam nobis vitam facit mortis metus, a worse plague cannot happen to a man, than to be so troubled in his mind; *tis triste divertium, a heavy separation, to leave their goods, with so much labour got,
pleasures of the world, which they have so deliciously enjoyed, friends and companions whom they so dearly loved, all at once. Axiclus the philosopher was bold and courageous all his life, and gave good precepts de bono morte, and against the vanity of the world, to others; but being now ready to die himself, he was mightily dejected, hac luce privator? his orbabor bonis? he lamented like a child, &c. And though Socrates himself was there to comfort him, ubi pristina virtutum iactatio, O Axioc? “where is all your boasted virtue now, my friend?” yet he was very timorous and impatient of death, much troubled in his mind, Imbellis paror el impatientia, &c. “O Clotho,” Megapetus the tyrant in Lucian exclaims, now ready to depart, “let me live a while longer. I will give thee a thousand talents of gold, and two boles besides, which I took from Cleoritus, worth a hundred talents apiece.” “Woe’s me,” “saith another, “what goodly mansions shall I leave! what fertile fields! what a fine house! what pretty children! how many servants! Who shall gather my grapes, my corn? Must I now die so well settled? Leave all, so richly and well provided? Woe’s me, what shall I do?” Animula vagula, blandula, qua nunc abibis in loca?

To these terrors of fear and sorrow, may well be annexed curiosity, that irksome, that tyrannising care, nimia solicitude, “superfluous industry about unprofitable things and their qualities,” as Thomas defines it; an itching humour or a kind of longing to see that which is not to be seen, to do that which ought not to be done, to know that secret which should not be known, to eat of the forbidden fruit. We commonly molest and tire ourselves about things unfit and unnecessary, as Martha troubled herself to little purpose. Be it in religion, humanity, magic, philosophy, policy, any action or study, ’tis a needless trouble, a mere torment. For what else is school divinity, how many doth it puzzle? what fruitless questions about the Trinity, resurrection, election, predestination, reprobation, hell-fire, &c., how many shall be saved, damned? What else is all superstition, but an endless observation of idle ceremonies, traditions? What is most of our philosophy but a labyrinth of opinions, idle questions, propositions, metaphysical terms? Socrates, therefore, held all philosophers, cavillers, and mad men, circa subtilia Cuvilliores pro insanis habuit, palam eos arguentes, saith Eusebius, because they commonly sought after such things, que nec percipi a nobis necque comprehendi possent, or put case they did understand, yet they were altogether unprofitable. For what matter is it for us to know how high the Pleiades are, how far distant Persians and Cassiopea from us, how deep the sea, &c.? we are neither wiser, as he follows it, nor modester, nor better, nor richer, nor stronger for the knowledge of it. Quod supra nos nihil ad nos, I may say the same of those genetical studies, what is astrology but vain elections, predictions? all magic, but a troublesome error, a pernicious fancy? physie, but intricate rules and prescriptions? philology, but vain criticisms? logic, needless sophisms? metaphysics themselves, but intricate subtleties and fruitless abstractions? alchemy, but a bundle of errors? to what end are such great tomes? why do we spend so many years in their studies? Much better to know nothing at all, as those barbarous Indians are wholly ignorant, than as some of us, to be sore vexed about unprofitable toys: stipitus labor est ineptiarum, to build a house without pins, make a rope of sand, to what end? cui bono? He studies on, but as the boy told St. Austin, when I have laved the sea dry, thou shalt understand the mystery of the Trinity. He makes observations, keeps times and seasons; and as Conradus the emperor would not touch his new bride, till an astrologer had told him a masculine hour, but with what success? He travels

*“Must I be deprived of this life,—of those possessions?”

†Tem. 4 dial. 8. Cataplo. Auri puri mileta tanta me ludit adatum promitto, &c.

‡Pindem. Hie mili que relinquuenta preclada? quam fertiles agri? &c.

§Adrian.


**Industria superstes circa res lucubrati.

††Contra Philo. cap. 61.

‡‡Mat. Paris.
into Europe, Africa, Asia, searcheth every creek, sea, city, mountain, gulf, to what end? See one promontory (said Socrates of old), one mountain, one sea, one river, and see all. An alchemist spends his fortunes to find out the philosopher's stone forsooth, cure all diseases, make men long-lived, victorious, fortunate, invisible, and beggars himself, misled by those seducing impostors (which he shall never attain) to make gold; an antiquary consumes his treasure and time to scrape up a company of old coins, statues, rules, edicts, manuscripts, &c., he must know what was done of old in Athens, Rome, what lodging, diet, houses they had, and have all the present news at first, though never so remote, before all others, what projects, counsels, consultations, &c., quid Juno in aurum insusurret Jovi, what's now decreed in France, what in Italy; who was he, whence comes he, which way, whither goes he, &c., Aristotle must find out the motion of Euripus; Pliny must needs see Vesuvius, but how sped they? One loseth goods, another his life; Pyrrhus will conquer Africa first, and then Asia; he will be a sole monarch, a second immortal, a third rich, a fourth commands. * Turbine magno spes solicite in urbibus errant; we run, ride, take indefatigable pains, all up early, down late, striving to get that which we had better be without (Ardelion's busy-bodies as we are), it were much fitter for us to be quiet, sit still, and take our ease. His sole study is for words, that they be — Lepide lexis composta ut serulae omnes, not a syllable misplaced, to set out a stramineous, subject; as thine is about apparel, to follow the fashion, to be terse and polite, 'tis thy sole business: both with like profit. His only delight is building, he spends himself to get curious pictures, intricate models and plots, another is wholly ceremonious about titles, degrees, inscriptions: a third is over-solicitous about his diet, he must have such and such exquisite sauces, meat so dressed, so far fetched, peregrini aeris voluceres, so cooked, &c., something to provoke thirst, something anon to quench his thirst. Thus he redeems his appetite with extraordinary charge to his purse, is seldom pleased with any meal, whilst a trivial stomach useth all with delight, and is never offended. Another must have roses in winter, alieni temporis florès, snow-water in summer, fruits before they can be or are usually ripe, artificial gardens and fish-ponds on the tops of houses, all things opposite to the vulgar sort, intricate and rare, or else they are nothing worth. So busy, nice curious wits, make that insupportable in all vocations, trades, actions, employments, which to duller apprehensions is not offensive, earnestly seeking that which others so scornfully neglect. Thus through our foolish curiosity do we macerate ourselves, tire our souls, and run headlong, through our indiscretion, perverse will, and want of government, into many needless cares and troubles, vain expenses, tedious journeys, painful hours; and when all is done, quorsum hæc? cui bono? to what end?

Unfortunate marriage.] Amongst these passions and irksome accidents, unfortunate marriage may be ranked: a condition of life appointed by God himself in Paradise, an honourable and happy estate, and as great a felicity as can befall a man in this world, "if the parties can agree as they ought, and live as Seneca lived with his Paulina; but if they be unequally matched, or at discord, a greater misery cannot be expected, to have a scold, a slut, a harlot, a fool, a fury or a fiend, there can be no such plague. Eccles. xxvi. 14. " He that hath her is as if he held a scorpion," &c. xxvi. 25. "A wicked wife makes a sorry countenance, a heavy heart, and he had rather dwell with a lion than keep house with such a wife." Her property Jovianus Pontanus hath

---

* Seneca.
* Jos. Scaliger in Gnomit. "To profess a disinclination for that knowledge which is beyond our reach, is pedantic ignorance." * "A virtuous woman is the crown of her husband." Prov. xii 4. * but she," &c. &c.
described at large, *Ant. dial. Tom. 2*, under the name of Euphorbia. Or if they be not equal in years, the like mischief happens. *Cecilius in Agellius lib. 2. cap. 23*, complains much of an old wife, *dam ejus morti inhio, eponet mortuas vivō inter vivos*, whilst I gape after her death, I live a dead man amongst the living, or if they dislike upon any occasion, 

> Judge who that are unfortunately wed
> What 'tis to come into a loathed bed.

The same inconvenience befals women, 

> At vos duri miseram lugetare parentes,
> Si fiero aut laqueo lata hac me excelle sors
> Sustineo;""
Causes of Melancholy.

Part 1. Sec. 2.

marry again if she died. “No cut to unkindness,” as the saying is, a frown and hard speech, ill respect, a brow-beating, or bad look, especially to courtiers, or such as attend upon great persons, is present death: *Ingenium vultu statique caditque suo*, they ebb and flow with their masters’ favour. Some persons are at their wits' ends, if by chance they overshoot themselves, in their ordinary speeches, or actions, which may after turn to their disadvantage or disgrace, or have any secret disclosed. *Rouesus, epist. miscel. 3*, reports of a gentlewoman, 25 years old, that falling foul with one of her gossips, was upbraided with a secret infirmity (no matter what) in public, and so much grieved with it, that she did thereupon *solitudines querere, omnes ab se ablegere*, *ac tandem in gravissimam incidens melancholiam, contabescere*, forsake all company, quite mopeed, and in a melancholy humour pine away. Others are as much tortured to see themselves rejected, contemned, scorned, disabled, defamed, detracted, undervalued, or “left behind their fellows.” Lucian brings in *Élamacles*, a philosopher in his *Lapith. convivio*, much discontented that he was not invited amongst the rest, expostulating the matter, in a long epistle, with Aristenetus their host. *Pretextatus*, a robed gentleman in Plutarch, would not sit down at a feast, because he might not sit highest, but went his ways all in a chafe. *We see the common quarrellings that are ordinary with us, for taking of the wall, precedency, and the like, which though toys in themselves, and things of no moment, yet they cause many distemper, much heart-burning amongst us. Nothing pierceth deeper than a contempt or disgrace, especially if they be generous spirits, scarce any thing affects them more than to be despised or vilified. Crato, *consil. 16. l. 2*, exemplifies it, and common experience confirms it. Of the same nature is oppression, *Eccles. vii. 7*, “surely oppression makes a man mad,” loss of liberty, which made Brutus venture his life, *Cato kill himself, and Tully complain, *Omnem hilaritatem tu perpetuum amisti*, mine heart’s broken, I shall never look up, or be merry again, *hac jactura intolerabilis*, to some parties ‘tis a most intolerable loss. Banishment a great misery, as Tyrtæus describes it in an epigram of his,

“No miserum est patria amisit, laroquque vagat
Mendium, et finit pace rogare ribe:
Omnibus invias, quocunque accessorit exul
Semper erit, semper aequus egonque Jactet,” &c.

Polyneices in his conference with Jocasta in *Éuripides*, reckons up five miseries of a banished man, the least of which alone were enough to deject some pusillanimous creatures. Oftentimes a too great feeling of our own infirmities or imperfections of body or mind, will shrivel us up; as if we be long sick:

“O beata sanitas, te presente, amicum
Vir fructus gratil, absque te nemo beatus;”

O blessed health! “thou art above all gold and treasure,” *Eccles. xxx. 15*, the poor man’s riches, the rich man’s bliss, without thee there can be no happiness: or visited with some loathsome disease, offensive to others, or troublesome to ourselves; as a stinking breath, deformity of our limbs, crookedness, loss of an eye, leg, hand, paleness, leanness, redness, baldness, loss or want of hair, &c., *hic ubi fluere capit, diros ictus cordi infert*, saith *Synesius*, he himself troubled not a little *ob conae defectum*, the loss of hair alone, strikes a cruel stroke to the heart. *Acco*, an old woman, seeing by chance her face in a true glass (for she used false flattering glasses belike at other times, as most gentlewomen do), *animi dolore in insanium delapsa est* (*Cælius Rhodiginus, l. 17, c. 2*), ran mad. *Brothers*, the son of Vulcan, because he was ridiculous for his imperfections, flung himself into the fire. *Lais of Corinth, now grown old,

gave up her glass to Venus, for she could not abide to look upon it. *Qualis sum noto, qualis erum negueo. Generally to fair nice pieces, old age and foul linen are two most odious things, a torment of torments, they may not abide the thought of it,

"... à deorum Quisquis haec audax, utinam intererem Nuda leones, Antequam turpis macies decentes Occup t udias, teneroque succus Definit praece, speciosus quoque Pascere tigres."

"Hear me, some gracious heavenly power, Let lions dire this naked corse devour. My checks ere hollow wrinkles selve, Ere yet their rosy bloom decays; While youth yet rolls its vital flood, Let tigers friendly riot in my blood."

To be foul, ugly, and deformed, much better be buried alive. Some are fair but barren, and that galls them. "Hannah wept sore, did not eat, and was troubled in spirit, and all for her barrenness," 1 Sam. i. and Gen. xxx. Rachel said "in the anguish of her soul, give me a child, or I shall die:" another hath too many: one was never married, and that's his hell, another is, and that's his plague. Some are troubled in that they are obscure; others by being traduced, slandered, abused, disgraced, vilified, or any way injured: minimi miror eos (as he said) qui insanire occupiunt ex injuriis, I marvel not at all if offences make men mad. Seventeen particular causes of anger and offence Aristotle reckons them up, which for brevity's sake I must omit. No tidings troubles one; ill reports, rumours, bad tidings or news, hard hap, ill success, cast in a suit, vain hopes, or hope deferred, another: expectation, adeo omnibus in rebus molesta semper est expectatio, as Polybius observes; one is too eminent, another too base born, and that alone tortures him as much as the rest: one is out of action, company, employment; another overcome and tormented with worldly cares, and onerous business. But what 'tongue can suffice to speak of all?

Many men catch this malady by eating certain meats, herbs, roots, at unawares; as henbane, nightshade, cicaia, mandrakes, &c. A company of young men at Agrigentum in Sicily, came into a tavern; where after they had freely taken their liquor, whether it were the wine itself, or something mixed with it 'tis not yet known, but upon a sudden they began to be so troubled in their brains, and their phantasy so crazed, that they thought they were in a ship at sea, and now ready to be cast away by reason of a tempest. Wherefore to avoid shipwreck and present drowning, they flung all the goods in the house out at the windows into the street, or into the sea, as they supposed; thus they continued mad a pretty season, and being brought before the magistrate to give an account of this their fact, they told him (not yet recovered of their madness) that what was done they did for fear of death, and to avoid imminent danger: the spectators were all amazed at this their stupidity, and gazed on them still, whilst one of the ancientest of the company, in a grave tone, excused himself to the magistrate upon his knees, O viri Tritones, ego in uno jacui, I beseech your deities, &c., for I was in the bottom of the ship all the while: another besought them as so many sea gods to be good unto them, and if ever he and his fellows came to land again, he would build an altar to their service. The magistrate could not sufficiently laugh at this their madness, bid them sleep it out, and so went his ways. Many such accidents frequently happen, upon these unknown occasions. Some are so caused by philters, wandering in the sun, biting of a mad dog, a blow on the head, stingling with that kind of spider called tarantula, an ordinary thing if we may believe Skenek, l. 6. de Venenis, in Calabria and Apulia in Italy, Cardan, subt. l. 9. Scaliger, exercit. 185. Their symptoms are merely described by Jovianus Pontanus, Ant. dial. how they
dance altogether, and are cured by music. Cardan speaks of certain stones, if they be carried about one, which will cause melancholy and madness; he calls them unhappy, as an "advenient, selenites, &c.," which dry up the body, increase cares, diminish sleep." Ctesias in Persicis, makes mention of a well in those parts, of which if any man drink, "he is mad for 24 hours." Some lose their wits by terrible objects (as elsewhere I have more copiously dilated) and life itself many times, as Hippolitus affrighted by Neptune's sea-horses, Athemas by Juno's furies: but these relations are common in all writers.

These causes if they be considered, and come alone, I do easily yield, can do little of themselves, seldom, or apart (an old oak is not felled at a blow), though many times they are all sufficient every one: yet if they concur, as often they do, vis unita fortior; et quae non obtus singular, multa nocent, they may batter a strong constitution; as "Austin said, "many grains and small sands sink a ship, many small drops make a flood," &c., often reiterated; many dispositions produce an habit.

MEMB. V. *

SUBSEC. I.—Continent, inward, antecedent, next causes, and how the Body works on the Mind.

As a purly hunter, I have hitherto beaten about the circuit of the forest of this microcosm, and followed only those outward adventitious causes. I will now break into the inner rooms, and rip up the antecedent immediate causes which are there to be found. For as the distraction of the mind, amongst other outward causes and perturbations, alters the temperature of the body, so the distraction and distemper of the body will cause a distemperature of the soul, and 'tis hard to decide which of these two do more harm to the other. Plato, Cyprian, and some others, as I have formerly said, lay the greatest fault upon the soul, excuses the body; others again accusing the body, excuse the soul, as a principal agent. Their reasons are, because "the manners do follow the temperature of the body," as Galen proves in his book of that subject, Prosper Calenius de Atra Tite, Jason Pratenesis, c. de Mania, Lennius, l. 4. c. 16. and many others. And that which Guaiter hath commented, hom. 10. in epist. Johannis, is most true; concupiscence and original sin, inclinations, and bad humours, are radical in every one of us, causing these perturbations, affections, and several distempers, offering many times violence unto the soul.

"Every man is tempted by his own concupiscence" (James i. 14.), the spirit is willing but the flesh is weak, and rebelleth against the spirit, as our apostle teacheth us: that methinks the soul hath the better plea against the body, which so forcibly inclines us, that we cannot resist, Nec nos obviti contra, nec tendere tantum sufficientium. How the body being material, worketh upon the immaterial soul, by mediation of humours and spirits, which participate of both, and ill-disposed organs, Cornelia Agrrippa hath discoursed, lib. 1. de occult. Philos. cap. 63, 64, 65. Levinus Lennius, lib. 1. de occult. nat. mir. cap. 12. et 16. et 21. institut. ad opt. vit. Perkins, lib. 1. Cases of Cons. cap. 12. T. Bright, c. 10. 11, 12. "in his treatise of melancholy," for as angler,
fear, sorrow, obtestation, emulation, &c., si mentis intimos recessus occupárint, saith 1 Lemnins, corpori quoque infesta sunt, et illi tetrímos mortos inferunt, cause grievous diseases in the body, so bodily diseases affect the soul by consent. Now the chiefest causes proceed from the heart, humours, spirits: as they are purer, or impurer, so is the mind, and equally suffers, as a lute out of tune, if one string or one organ be distempered, all the rest miscarry, 1 corpus onustum hesternis vitis, animun quoque praegravat uà. The body is domicilium animae, her house, abode, and stay; and as a torch gives a better light, a sweeter smell, according to the matter it is made of; so doth our soul perform all her actions, better or worse, as her organs are disposed; or as wine savours of the cask wherein it is kept; the soul receives a tincture from the body through which it works. We see this in old men, children, Europeans; Asians, hot and cold climes; sanguine are merry; melancholy, sad; phlegmatic, dull; by reason of abundance of those humours, and they cannot resist such passions which are inflicted by them. For in this infirmity of human nature, as Melanchton declares, the understanding is so tied to, and captivated by his inferior senses, that without their help he cannot exercise his functions, and the will being weakened, hath but a small power to restrain those outward parts, but suffers herself to be overruled by them; that I must needs conclude with Lemnins, spiritus et humores maximum nocentum obtinunt, spirits and humours do most harm in troubling the soul. How should a man choose but be choleric and angry, that hath his body so clogged with abundance of gross humours? or melancholy, that is so inwardly disposed? That thence comes then this malady, madness, apoplexies, lethargies, &c., it may not be denied. Now this body of ours is most part distempered by some precedent diseases, which molest his inward organs and instruments, and so per consequens cause melancholy, according to the consent of the most approved physicians. “This humour (as Avicenna, l. 3. Fen. 1. Tract. 4. c. 18. Arnoldus, brevisir. l. 1. c. 18. Jacchins, comment. in 9 Rhasis, c. 15. Montaltus, c. 10. Nicholas Pico, c. de Melan. &c., suppose) is begotten by the distemper of some inward part, innate, or left after some inflammation, or else included in the blood after an age, or some other malignant disease.” This opinion of theirs concerns with that of Galen, l. 3. c. 6. de locis affect. Guianerius gives an instance in one so caused by a quartar age, and Montanus, consil. 32. in a young man of twenty eight years of age, so distempered after a quartar, which had molested him five years together: Hildebrand, spic. 2. de Mani, relates of a Dutch baron, grievously tormented with melancholy after a long age: Galen, l. de atro bile, c. 4. puts the plague a cause. Baltdus in his book de lue vener. c. 2. the French pox for a cause, others phrensy, epilepsy, apoplexy, because those diseases do often degenerate into this. Of suppression of hemorrhoids, hemorrhagia, or bleeding at the nose, menstруous retentions (although they deserve a larger explication, as being the sole cause of a proper kind of melancholy, in more ancient maids, nuns and widows, handled apart by Rodericus à Castro, and Mercatus, as I have elsewhere signified), or any other evacuation stopped, I have already spoken. Only this I will add, that this melancholy which shall be caused by such infirmities, deserves to be pitied of all men, and to be respected with a more tender compassion, according to Laurentius, as coming from a more inevitable cause.

1 Lib. 1. c. 16. 2 Corporis indicem morbi animum per consequam, a lege consortii affectent, et quanquam objecta multos motus turbulentes in homine concidit, precibus tam in causa in corde et humoribus spiritibusque consistit, &c. 3 Vide ante. 4 Humores pravi mentem dominabant. 5 Sic humor vel a partis interpector generatur vel relinquitur post inflammaciones, vel castrator in vannis conclusus vel tormentis maligni qualitatem contrahit. 6 Sic cease constat in febro hominem Melancholiam vel post febre rem redit, aut album modum. Calida intertemperies inanata, vel se febre contracra. 7 Raro quis disturn morbo laborat, qui non sit melancholicus. Mercurialis de affect. capitis, lib. 1. cap. 10. de Melanc.
SUBSECT. II.—Distemperature of particular Parts, Causes.

There is almost no part of the body, which being distempered, doth not cause this malady, as the brain and his parts, heart, liver, spleen, stomach, matrix or womb, pylorus, miraphe, mesentery, hypochondries, meseraic veins; and in a word, saith "Arculanus, "there is no part which causeth not melancholy, either because it is adust, or doth not expel the superfluity of the nutrient. Savanarola, Pract. major. rubric. 11. Tract. 6. cap. 1. is of the same opinion, that melancholy is engendered in each particular part, and "Crato in consil. 17. lib. 2. Gordonius, who is instar omnium, lib. med. partic. 2. cap. 19. confirms as much, putting the "matter of melancholy, sometimes in the stomach, liver, heart, brain, spleen, miraphe, hypochondries, when as the melancholy humour resides there, or the liver is not well cleansed "from melancholy blood."

The brain is a familiar and frequent cause, too hot, or too cold, "through adust blood so caused," as Mercurialis will have it, "within or without the head," the brain itself being distempered. Those are most apt to this disease, "that have a hot heart and moist brain," which Montaltus, cap. 11. de Melanch. approves out of Halyabbes, Rhasis, and Avicenna. Mercurialis, consil. 11. assigns the coldness of the brain a cause, and Salustius Salvianus, med. lect. l. 2. c. 1. "will have it "arise from a cold and dry distemperature of the brain." Piso, Benedictus Victorius Faventinus, will have it proceed from a "hot distemperature of the brain," and "Montaltus, cap. 10. from the brain's heat, scorching the blood. The brain is still distempered by himself, or by consent: by himself or his proper affection, as Faventinus calls it, "or by vapours which arise from the other parts, and famine up into the head, altering the animal faculties."

Hildesheim, spicel. 2. de Maria, thinks it may be caused from a "distemperature of the heart; sometimes hot; sometimes cold." A hot liver, and a cold stomach, are put for usual causes of melancholy: Mercurialis, consil. 11. et consil. 6. consil. 36. assigns a hot liver and cold stomach for ordinary causes. "Monavius, in an epistle of his to Crato in Scoltz, is of opinion, that hypochondriacal melancholy may proceed from a cold liver; the question is there discussed. Most agree that a hot liver is in fault; "the liver is the shop of humours, and especially causeth melancholy by his hot and dry distemperaturce.

The stomach and meseraic veins do often concur, by reason of their obstructions, and thence their heat cannot be avoided, and many times the matter is so adust and inflamed in those parts, that it degenerates into hypochondriacal melancholy." Guianerius, c. 2. Tract. 15. holds the meseraic veins to be a sufficient cause alone. The spleen concurs to this malady, by all their consents, and suppression of hemorrhoids, dum non expurgat altera causa lien, saith Montaltus, if it be "too cold and dry, and do not purge the other parts as it ought, consil. 23. Montanus puts the "spleen stopped," for a great cause. "Christopherus à Vega reports of his knowledge, that he hath known melancholy caused from putrefied blood in those seeded veins and womb; "Arcu-
lanus, from that menstruous blood turned into melancholy, and seed too long detained (as I have already declared) by putrefaction or adustion."

The mesenterium, or midriff, diaphragma, is a cause which the Greeks called φέσα: because by his inflammation the mind is much troubled with convulsions and dotage. All these, most part, offend by inflammation, corrupting humours and spirits, in this non-natural melancholy: for from these are engendered fuliginous and black spirits. And for that reason Montaltus cap. 10. de causis melan. will have "the efficient cause of melancholy to be hot and dry, not a cold and dry distemperature, as some hold, from the heat of the brain, roasting the blood, immoderate heat of the liver and bowels, and inflammation of the pylorus. And so much the rather, because that," as Galen holds, "all spises inflame the blood, solitariness, waking, agues, study, meditation, all which heat: and therefore he concludes that this distemperature causing adventitious melancholy is not cold and dry, but hot and dry." But of this I have sufficiently treated in the matter of melancholy, and hold that this may be true in non-natural melancholy, which produceth madness, but not in that natural, which is more cold, and being immoderate, produceth a gentle dotage. "Which opinion Geraldus de Solo maintains in his comment upon Rhasis.

Subsect. III.—Causes of Head-Melancholy.

After a tedious discourse of the general causes of melancholy, I am now returned at last to treat in brief of the three particular species, and such causes as properly appertain unto them. Although these causes promiscuously concur to each and every particular kind, and commonly produce their effects in that part which is most weak, ill-disposed, and least able to resist, and so cause all three species, yet many of them are proper to some one kind, and seldom found in the rest. As for example, head-melancholy is commonly caused by a cold or hot distemperature of the brain, according to Laurentius, cap. 5 de melan. but as "Hercules de Saxonii contends, from that agitation or distemperature of the animal spirits alone. Salust. Salvianus, before mentioned, lib. 2. cap. 3. de re med. will have it proceed from cold: but that I take of natural melancholy, such as are fools and dote: for as Galen writes, lib. 4. de puls. 8. and Avicenna, "a cold and moist brain is an inseparable company of folly." But this adventitious melancholy which is here meant, is caused of a hot and dry distemperature, as Damascen, the Arabian, lib. 3. cap. 22. thinks, and most writers: Altomarus and Piso call it "an innate burning intemperateness, turning blood and choler into melancholy." Both these opinions may stand good, as Brul maintains, and Cappivaccius, si cerebrum sit calidius, "if the brain be hot, the animal spirits will be hot, and thence comes madness; if cold, folly." David Crusius, Thes. morb. Hermet. lib. 2. cap. 6. de atrabile, grants melancholy to be a disease of an inflamed brain, but cold notwithstanding of itself: calida per accidens, frigida per se, hot by accident only; I am of Cappivaccius' mind for my part. Now this humour, according to Salvianus, is sometimes in the substance of the brain, sometimes contained in the membranes and tunicles that cover the brain, sometimes in the passages of the ventricles of the brain, or veins of those ventricles. It follows many times "phrensy, long diseases, agues, long abode in hot places, or under the sun, a blow on the head," as Rhasis informeth us: Piso adds solitariness, waking, inflammations

2Magirus. 3Ergo efficiens causa melancholiah est calida et sicca intemperies, non frigida et sicca, quod multa opini sunt, ortur enim a calore cerebri assante sanguinum, &c., rum quod aromata sanguinum incendant, solutio, vigilia, febris procedentem, meditatio, studium, et hoc omnino caelefactum, ergo ratum sit, &c. 4Lib. 1. cap. 13. de Melanch. 5Lib. 3. Tract. posthum. de melan. 6A faciata inseparabils cerebri frigiditas. 7As intimo calor assatur. 8Intemperies innatae exsures, favam billem se sauganinem in melancholiam convertens. 9Si cerebrum sit calidius, fiet spiritus animalis calorior, et delirium manuacum: si frigidus, fiet fatigatus. 10Melancholia capitis accedit post phrenesim aut longan moram sub sole, aut persimunem in capite, cap. 13. lib. 1.
of the head, proceeding most part *from much use of spices, hot wines, hot meats: all which Montanus reckons up, consil. 22. for a melancholy Jew; and Heurnius repeats, cap. 12. de Mania: hot baths, garlic, onions, saith Guianerius, bad air, corrupt, much *waking, &c., retention of seed or abundance, stopping of haemorrhagia, the midriff m*saffectet; and according to Trallianus, l. 1. 16. immoderate cares, troubles, griefs, discontent, study, meditation, and, in a word, the abuse of all those six non-natural things. Hercules de Saxoniâ, cap. 16. lib. 1. will have it caused from a *cauterity, or boil dried up, or an issue. Amatus Lusitanus, cent. 2. cura. 67. gives instance in a fellow that had a hole in his arm, "*after that was healed, ran mad, and when the wound was open, he was cured again." Trincavellius, consil. 13. lib. 1. hath an example of a melancholy man so caused by overmuch continuance in the sun, frequent use of venery, and immoderate exercise: and in his cons. 49. lib. 3. from a *headpiece overheated, which caused head-melancholy. Prosper Calenus brings in Cardinal Cæsius for a pattern of such as are so melancholy by long study; but examples are infinite.

SUBSECT. IV.—Causes of Hypochondriacal, or Windy Melancholy.

In repeating of these causes, I must cram him his cockam apponere, say that again which I have formerly said, in applying them to their proper species. Hypochondriacal or flatuous melancholy, is that which the Arabians call myrachial, and is in my judgment the most grievous and frequent, though Bruel and Laurentius make it least dangerous, and not so hard to be known or cured. His causes are inward or outward. Inward from divers parts or organs, as midriff, spleen, stomach, liver, pylorus, womb, diaphragma, meseraic veins, stopping of issues, &c. Montaltius, cap. 15. out of Galen recites, "*heat and obstruction of those meseraic veins, as an immediate cause, by which means the passage of the chilus to the liver is detained, stopped or corrupted, and turned into rumbling and wind." Montanus, consil. 233, hath an evident demonstration, Trincavellius another, lib. 1, cap. 12, and Plater a third, observat. lib. 1, for a doctor of the law visited with this infirmity, from the said obstruction and heat of these meseraic veins, and bowels; quantum inter ventriculum et jejur venae affluerant, the veins are inflamed about the liver and stomach. Sometimes those other parts are together misaffected; and concur to the production of this malady: a hot liver and cold stomach, or cold belly: look for instances in Hollerus, Victor Trincavellius, consil. 35, l. 3, Hildesheim, Spicel. 2, fol. 132, Solenander, consil. 9, pro cive Lugdunensi, Montanus, consil. 229, for the Earl of Montfort in Germany, 1519, and Frisimelica in the 233 consultation of the said Montanus. I. Cæsar Claudinus gives instance of a cold stomach and over-hot liver, almost in every consultation, con. 89, for a certain count; and con. 106, for a Polonian baron, by reason of heat the blood is inflamed, and gross vapours sent to the heart and brain. Mercurialis subscribes to them, cons. 89, "*the stomach being misaffected," which he calls the king of the belly, because if he be distempered, all the rest suffer with him, as being deprived of their nutriment, or fed with bad nourishment, by means of which come crudities, obstructions, wind, rumbling, griping, &c. Hercules de Saxoniâ, besides heat, will have the weakness of the liver and his obstruction a cause, facultatem debilem jejunioris, which he calls the mineral of melancholy. Laurentius assigns this reason, because the liver over hot draws the meat undigested out of the stomach, and burneth the humours. Montanus, cons. 244, proves that some-

* Qui bilium vina potentia, et sapè sunt sub sole.

* Cure valida, largiores vini et aromatum usus.

* A cautero et utilis exsiccato.

* Ab ileore curato indecit in insaniam, sapero vulnere curatur.

* A gale nīmis calfecta.

* Exuritur sangnis et vena obsturatur, quilbus obstructis prohibetur transitus Chili ad jejur, correputur et in rugetus et fatus vertitur.

* Stomacho lasso robur corporis immunitur, et reliqua membra alimento orbata, &c.
times a cold liver may be a cause. Laurentius, c. 12, Trincavellius, lib. 12, consil., and Gualter Bruel, seems to lay the greatest fault upon the spleen, that doth not his duty in purging the liver as he ought, being too great, or too little, in drawing too much blood sometimes to it, and not expelling it, as P. Cnemiandurus in a "consultation of his noted tumorem lievis, he names it, and the fountain of melancholy. Diocles supposed the ground of this kind of melancholy to proceed from the inflammation of the pylorus, which is the nether mouth of the ventricle. Others assign the mesenterium or midriph distempered by heat, the womb misaffected, stopping of hemorrhois, with many such. All which Laurentius, cap. 12, reduceth to three, mesentery, liver, and spleen, from whence he denominates hepatic, splenetic, and meseralia melancholy. Outward causes, are bad diet, care, griefs, discontent, and in a word all those six non-natural things, as Montanus found by his experience, consil. 22, Selenander, consil. 9, for a citizen of Lyons, in France, gives his reader to understand that he knew this mischief procured by a medicine of cantharides, which an unskilful physician ministered his patient to drink ad venerem excitandam. But most commonly fear, grief, and some sudden commotion, or perturbation of the mind, begin it, in such bodies especially as are ill-disposed. Melanchthon, tract. 14, cap. 2. de anima, will have it as common to men, as the mother to women, upon some grievous trouble, dislike, passion, or discontent. For as Camerarius records in his life, Melanchthon himself was much troubled with it, and therefore could speak out of experience. Montanus, consil. 22, pro delirante Judeo confirms it, "grievous symptoms of the mind brought him to it. Randolotius relates of himself, that being one day very intent to write out a physician's notes, molested by an occasion, he fell into a hypocondriacal fit, to avoid which he drank the decoction of wormwood, and was freed. 'Melanchthon ("seeing the disease is so troublesome and frequent") holds it a most necessary and profitable study, for every man to know the accidents of it, and a dangerous thing to be ignorant," and would therefore have all men in some sort to understand the causes, symptoms, and cures of it.

SUBSECT. V.—Causes of Melancholy from the whole Body.

As before, the cause of this kind of melancholy is inward or outward. Inward, "when the liver is apt to engender such a humour, or the spleen weak by nature, and not able to discharge his office." A melancholy temperature, retention of hemorrhois, monthly issues, bleeding at nose, long diseases, agues, and all those six non-natural things increase it. But especially bad diet, as Piso thinks, pulse, salt meat, shell-fish, cheese, black wine, &c. Mercurialis out of Averroes and Avicea condemn all herbs: Galen, lib. 3. de loc. affect. cap. 7, especially cabbage. So likewise fear, sorrow, discontent, &c., but of these before. And thus in brief you have had the general and particular causes of melancholy.

Now go and brag of thy present happiness, whosoever thou art, brag of thy temperature, of thy good parts, insult, triumph, and boast; thou seest in what a brittle state thou art, how soon thou mayest be dejected, how many several ways, by bad diet, bad air, a small loss, a little sorrow or discontent, an age, &c.; how many sudden accidents may procure thy ruin, what a small tenure of happiness thou hast in this life, how weak and silly a creature thou art. "Humble thyself, therefore, under the mighty hand of God," 1 Peter, v. 6, know thyself, acknowledge thy present misery, and make right use of it.
Symptoms of Melancholy.

[Part. 1. Sec. 3.

Qui stat videt ne cuadat. Thou dost now flourish, and hast bona animi, corporis, et fortune, goods of body, mind, and fortune, necis quid serus secum vesper ferat, thou knowest not what storms and tempests the late evening may bring with it. Be not secure then, "be sober and watch," fortunam reverenter habe, if fortunate and rich; if sick and poor, moderate thyself. I have said.

SECT. III. MEMB. I.

SUBSECT. I.—Symptoms, or Signs of Melancholy in the Body.

Parrhasius, a painter of Athens, amongst those Olyanthian captives Philip of Macedon brought home to sell, bought one very old man; and when he had him at Athens, put him to extreme torture and torment, the better by his example to express the pains and passions of his Prometheus, whom he was then about to paint. I need not be so barbarous, inhuman, curious, or cruel, for this purpose to torture any poor melancholy man, their symptoms are plain, obvious and familiar, there needs no such accurate observation or far-fetched object, they delineate themselves, they voluntarily betray themselves, they are too frequent in all places, I meet them still as I go, they cannot conceal it, their grievances are too well known, I need not seek far to describe them.

Symptoms therefore are either universal or particular, saith Gordonius, lib. med. cap. 19, part. 2, to persons, to species: "some signs are secret, some manifest, some in the body, some in the mind, and diversely vary, according to the inward or outward causes," Cappievacius: or from stars, according to Jovianus Pontanus, de reb. celest. lib. 10. cap. 13, and celestial influences, or from the humours diversely mixed, Ficinus, lib. 1, cap. 4, de sanit. tuendâ: as they are hot, cold, natural, unnatural, intended or remitted, so will Ætius have melancholica deliria multiformia, diversity of melancholy signs. Laurentius ascribes them to their several temperatures, delights, natures, inclinations, continuance of time, as they are simple or mixed with other diseases, as the causes are divers, so must the signs be, almost infinite, Altomarus, cap. 7. art. med. And as wine produceth divers effects, or that herb Tortocolla in "Laurentius, "which makes some laugh, some weep, some sleep, some dance, some sing, some howl, some drink," &c., so doth this our melancholy humour work several signs in several parties.

But to confine them, these general symptoms may be reduced to those of the body or the mind. Those usual signs appearing in the bodies of such as are melancholy, be these cold and dry, or they are hot and dry, as the humour is more or less adsut. From "these first qualities arise many other second, as that of "colour, black, swarthy, pale, ruddy, &c., some are impensé rubri, as Montaltus, c. c. 16, observes out of Galen, lib. 3, de locis affectis, very red and high coloured. Hippocrates in his book de insanias et melan. reckons up these signs, that they are "lean, withered, hollow-eyed, look old, wrinkled, harsh, much troubled with wind, and a gripping in their bellies, or belly-ache, belch often, dry bellies and hard, dejected looks, flaggy beards, singing of the ears, vertigo, light-headed, little or no sleep, and that interrupt, terrible and fearful dreams," Anna soror, qua me suspensam insomniar terret? The same symptoms are repeated by Melanarius in his book of melancholy collected out of Galen, 1 Ansonius. 2 Seneca, cont. lib. 10. cont. 5. 3 Quedam universalia, particularia, quaedam manifesta, quasad in corpore, quasad in cogitatione et anima, quasad a steillis, quasad ab homilibus, quae ut vivum corpus variât disposit, &c. Diversa phantasmata pro varietate causae externae vel internae. *Lib. 1. de riva. fol. 17. Ac ejus. sum aliud suadant, alius vocant, fient, bibunt, saltant, aliu ridunt, tremunt, dormiunt, &c. 4 T. Bright, cap. 20. 5 Nigrescit hic humor aliquando superscelefactus, aliquando supraregificefactus. Melan. 6 Gal. Interprete F. Caio. 7 Omiss his excavantur, ventis gigantur circum praecordia, et acidi ractus, scil. ferri ventres, vertigo, timorius aurium, somni puellii, somnia terribilis et interrupta. 8 Ying. En.
Rufus, Ætius, by Rhasis, Gordonius, and all the juniors, "continual, sharp, and stinking belchings, as if their meat in their stomachs were putrefied, or that they had eaten fish, dry bellies, absurd and interrupt dreams, and many phantastical visions about their eyes, vertiginous, apt to tremble, and prone to venery." Some add palpitation of the heart, cold sweat, as usual symptoms, and a leaping in many parts of the body, salutum in multis corporis partibus, a kind of itching, saith Laurentius, on the superficies of the skin, like a flesh-biting sometimes. • Montaltus, cap. 21. puts fixed eyes and much twinkling of their eyes for a sign, and so doth Avicenna, oculars habentae palpitantes, tremule, vehementer rubicundus, &c., lib. 3. Fen. 1. Tract. 4. cap. 18. They stout most part, which he took out of Hippocrates' aphorisms. • Rufus makes "head-ache and a binding heaviness for a principal token, much leaping of wind about the skin, as well as stutting, or tripping in speech, &c., hollow eyes, gross veins, and broad lips." To some too, if they be far gone, mimical gestures are too familiar, laughing, grinning, fleering, murmuring, talking to themselves, with strange mouths and faces, inarticulate voices, exclamations, &c. And although they be commonly lean, hirsute, uncheerful in countenance, withered, and not so pleasant to behold, by reason of those continual fears, griefs, and vexations, dull, heavy, lazy, restless, unapt to go about any business; yet their memories are most part good, they have happy wits, and excellent apprehensions. Their hot and dry brains make them they cannot sleep, Ingentes habent et erbras vigilitas (Areteus), mighty and often watchings, sometimes waking for a month, a year together. • Hercules de Saxoniâ faithfully averreth, that he hath heard his mother swear, she slept not for seven months together: Trincavellius, Tom. 2. cons. 16. speaks of one that waked 50 days, and Skencius hath examples of two years, and all without offence. In natural actions their appetite is greater than from their concoction, multa appetunt, pausa digerunt, as Rufus hath it, they covet to eat, but cannot digest. And although they "do eat much, yet they are lean, ill-looking," saith Areteus, "withered and hard, much troubled with costiveness," crudities, oppulations, spitting, belching, &c. Their pulse is rare and slow, except it be of the • Carotides, which is very strong; but that varies according to their intended passions or perturbations, as Struthius hath proved at large, Spigmatae artis, l. 4. c. 13. To say truth, in such chronic diseases the pulse is not much to be respected, there being so much superition in it, as • Crato notes, and so many differences in Galen, that he dares say they may not be observed, or understood of any man. Their urine is most part pale, and low coloured, urina paoua, acris, biliosa, (Areteus), not much in quantity; but this, in my judgment, is all out as uncertain as the other, varying so often according to several persons, habits, and other occasions not to be respected in chronic diseases. • Their melancholy excrements in some very much, in others little, as the spleen plays his part, and thence proceeds wind, palpitation of the heart, short breath, plenty of humidity in the stomach, heaviness of heart and heartache, and intolerable stupidity and dulness of spirits. Their excrements or stool hard, black to some and little. If the heart, brain, liver, spleen, be misaffected, as usually they are inconveniences proceed from them, many diseases accompany, as incubus, • apoplexy, epilepsy, vertigo, those frequent wakings and terrible
Symptoms of Melancholy.

[Part 1. Sec. 3.]

dreams, 'intempetive laughing, weeping, sighing, sobbing, bashfulness, blushing, trembling, sweating, swooning, &c. ' All their senses are troubled, they think they see, hear, smell, and touch that which they do not, as shall be proved in the following discourse.

SUBSECT. II.—Symptoms or Signs in the Mind.

Fear.] ARCUANUS in 9 Rhabis ad Almансor. cap. 16. will have these symptoms to be infinite, as indeed they are, varying according to the parties, "for scarce is there one of a thousand that does alike," * Laurentius, c. 16. Some few of greater note I will point at; and amongst the rest, fear and sorrow, which as they are frequent causes, so if they persevere long, according to Hippocrates * and Galen's aphorisms, they are most assured signs, inseparable companions, and characters of melancholy; of present melancholy and habituated, saith Montaltus, cap. 11. and coumion to them all, as the said Hippocrates, Galen, Avicenna, and all Neoterics hold. But as hounds many times run away with a false cry, never perceiving themselves to be at fault, so do they. For Dioecles of old (whom Galen confutes), and amongst the juniors, * Hercules de Saxonìa, with Lod. Mercatus, cap. 17. l. 1. de melan. take just exceptions at this aphorism of Hippocrates, *tis not always true, or so generally to be understood, "fear and sorrow are no common symptoms to all melancholy; upon more serious consideration, I find some (saith he) that are not so at all. Some indeed are sad, and not fearful; some fearful and not sad; some neither fearful nor sad; some both." Four kinds he excepts, fanaticat persons, such as were Cassandra, Nanto, Nicostrata, Mopsus, Proteus, the Sybils, whom * Aristotle confesseth to have been deeply melancholy. Baptista Porta semists him, Physiol. lib. 1. cap. 8, they were atrà bile pereiti: demonical persons, and such as speak strange languages, are of this rank: some poets, such as laugh always, and think themselves kings, cardinals, &c., sanguine they are, pleasantly disposed most part, and so continue. * Baptista Porta confines fear and sorrow to them that are cold; but lovers, sybils, enthusiasts, he wholly excludes. So that I think I may truly conclude, they are not always sad and fearful, but usually so: and that * without a cause, timent de non timenatis (Gordonius), quaeque momenti non sunt, "although not all alike (saith Altomarius), "yet all likely fear, * some with an extraordinary and a mighty fear," Aretaeus. " * Many fear death, and yet in a contrary humour, make away themselves," Galen, lib. 3. de loc. affect. cap. 7. Some are afraid that heaven will fall on their heads: some they are damned, or shall be. "They are troubled with scruples of consciences, distrusting God's mercies, think they shall go certainly to hell, the devil will have them, and make great lamentation," Jason Pratensis. Fear of devils, death, that they shall be so sick of some such or such disease, ready to tremble at every object, they shall die themselves forthwith, or that some of their dear friends or near allies are certainly dead; imminent danger, loss, disgrace, still torment others, &c.; that they are all glass, and therefore will suffer no man to come near them: that they are all core, as light as feathers; others as heavy as lead; some are afraid their heads will fall off their shoulders, that they have frogs in their bellies, &c. * Montanus, consil. 23, speaks of one "that durst not walk alone from

home, for fear he should swoon or die." A second *"fears every man he meets will rob him, quarrel with him, or kill him." A third dares not venture to walk alone, for fear he should meet the devil, a thief, be sick; fears all old women as witches, and every black dog or cat he sees he suspicion to be a devil, every person comes near him is maliciated, every creature, all intend to hurt him, seek his ruin; another dares not go over a bridge, come near a pool, rock, steep hill, lie in a chamber where cross beams are, for fear he be tempted to hang, drown, or precipitate himself. If he be in a silent auditory, as at a sermon, he is afraid he shall speak aloud at unawares, something indecent, unfit to be said. If he be locked in a close room, he is afraid of being stifled for want of air, and still carries biscuit, aquavitæ, or some strong waters about him, for fear of deliquiums, or being sick; or if he be in a throng, middle of a church, multitude, where he may not well get out, though he sit at ease, he is so misaffected. He will freely promise, undertake any business beforehand, but when it comes to be performed, he dare not adventure, but fears an infinite number of dangers, disasters, &c. Some are *"afraid to be burned, or that the "ground will sink under them, or "swallow them quick, or that the king will call them in question for some fact they never did (Rhasis cont.) and that they shall surely be executed." The terror of such a death troubles them, and they fear as much and are equally tormented in mind, *"as they that have committed a murder, and are pensive without a cause, as if they were now presently to be put to death." Plater, cap. 3. de mentis alienæ. They are afraid of some loss, danger, that they shall surely lose their lives, goods, and all they have, but why they know not. Trincavitios, consil. 13. lib. 1. had a patient that would needs make away himself, for fear of being hanged, and could not be persuaded for three years together, but that he had killed a man. Plater, observat. lib. 1. hath two other examples of such as feared to be executed without a cause. If they come in a place where a robbery, theft, or any such offence hath been done, they presently fear they are suspected, and many times betray themselves without a cause. Lewis XI., the French king, suspected every man a traitor that came about him, durst trust no officer. Alliæ formidolosi omnium, alliæ quorundam (Pracastorius, lib. 2. de Intellect.) *"some fear all alike, some certain men, and cannot endure their companies, are sick in them, or if they be from home." Some suspect *"treason still, others *"are afraid of their ò dearest and nearest friends." (Melanelius è Galeno, Ruffo, Ætio,) and dare not be alone in the dark for fear of hobgoblins and devils; he suspects every thing he hears or sees to be a devil, or enchanted, and imagineth a thousand chimeras and visions, which to his thinking he certainly sees, bugbears, talks with black men, ghosts, goblins, &c., *"Omnès se terrent auro, somnus excitat omnis. Another through bashfulness, suspicion, and timoromnus, will not be seen abroad, *"loves darkness as life, and cannot endure the light," or to sit in lightsome places, his hat still in his eyes, he will neither see nor be seen by his goodwill, Hippocrates, lib. de Insania et Melancholia. He dare not come in company for fear he should be misused, disgraced, overshoot himself in gesture or speeches, or be sick; he thinks every man observes him, aims at him, derides him, owes him malice. Most part *"they are afraid they are bewitched, possessed, or poisoned by their enemies, and sometimes they suspect their nearest friends ; he thinks something speaks

---

or talks within him, or to him, and he belcheth of the poison." Christopherus à Vega, lib. 2. cap. 1. had a patient so troubled, that by no persuasion or physic he could be reclaimed. Some are afraid that they shall have every fearful disease they see others have, hear of, or read, and dare not therefore hear or read of any such subject, no not of melancholy itself, lest by applying to themselves that which they hear or read, they should aggravate and increase it. If they see one possessed, bewitched, an epileptic paroxysm, a man shaking with the palsy, or giddy-headed, reeling or standing in a dangerous place, &c., for many days after it runs in their minds, they are afraid they shall be so too, they are in like danger, as Perk. c. 12. sc. 2. well observes in his Cases of Concern, and many times by violence of imagination they produce it. They cannot endure to see any terrible object, as a monster, a man executed, a carcase, hear the devil named, or any tragical relation seen, but they quake for fear. Hecatas somniare sibi videntur (Lucian), they dream of hobgoblins, and may not get it out of their minds a long time after: they apply (as I have said) all they hear, see, read, to themselves; as Felix Plater notes of some young physicians, that study to cure diseases, catch them themselves, will be sick, and appropriate all symptoms they find related of others, to their own persons. And therefore (quod iterum moneo, licet nauseam paret lectori, malo decent potius verba, decies repetita licet, abundare, quam unum desiderari) I would advise him that is actually melancholy not to read this tract of Symptoms, lest he disquiet or make himself for a time worse, and more melancholy than he was before. Generally of them all take this, de inanibus semper conquirentur et timent, saith Areteus: they complain of toys, and fear without a cause, and still think their melancholy to be most grievous, none so bad as they are, though it be nothing in respect, yet never any man sure was so troubled, or in this sort. As really tormented and perplexed, in as great an agony for toys and trifles (such things as they will after laugh at themselves) as if they were most material and essential matters indeed, worthy to be feared, and will not be satisfied. Pacify them for one, they are instantly troubled with some other fear; always afraid of something which they foolishly imagine or conceive to themselves, which never peradventure was, never can be, never likely will be; troubled in mind upon every small occasion, unquiet, still complaining, grieving, vexing, suspecting, grudging, discontent, and cannot be freed so long as melancholy continues. Or if their minds be more quiet for the present, and they free from foreign fears, outward accidents, yet their bodies are out of tune, they suspect some part or other to be amiss, now their head aches, heart, stomach, spleen, &c. is misaffected, they shall surely have this or that disease; still troubled in body, mind, or both, and through wind, corrupt fantasy, some accidental distemper, continually molested. Yet for all this, as Jacchinius notes, "in all other things they are wise, staid, discreet, and do nothing unbecoming their dignity, person, or place, this foolish, ridiculous, and childish fear excepted; which so much, so continually tortures and crucifies their souls, like a barking dog that always bawls, but seldom bites, this fear ever molesteth, and so long as melancholy lasteth, cannot be avoided."

Sorrow is that other character, and inseparable companion, as individual as Saint Cosmus and Damian, fidus Achates, as all writers witness, a common symptom, a continual, and still without any evident cause. Inserent omnes, et si rogesc eos reddere causam, non possunt: grieving still, but why they cannot tell: Agelastii, maestii, cogitandum, they look as if they had newly come forth of Trophoion's den. And though they laugh many times, and seem to be extra-

---

1 Cap. 15. In 2. Rhasia, in multis vidi, prater rarinomin semper aliquid timent, in ceteris tamen optimo se gerunt, neque aliquid prater dignitatem committunt.  
2 Altemanus, cap. 7. Areteus, tristes sunt.
ordinary merry (as they will by fits), yet extreme lumpish again in an instant, dull and heavy, semel et simul, merry and sad, but most part sad: * Si qua placent, absunt; inimica tenacius herent: sorrow sticks by them still continually, gnawing as the vulture did 'Titius' bowels, and they cannot avoid it. No sooner are their eyes open, but after terrible and troublesome dreams their heavy hearts begin to sigh: they are still fretting, chafing, sighing, grieving, complaining, finding faults, repining, grudging, weeping, Heautontimorumenoi, vexing themselves, "disquieted in mind, with restless, unquiet thoughts, discontent, either for their own, other men's or public affairs, such as concern them not; things past, present, or to come, the remembrance of some disgrace, loss, injury, abuses, &c. troubles them now being idle afresh, as if it were new done; they are afflicted otherwise for some danger, loss, want, shame, misery, that will certainly come, as they suspect and mistrust. Lugubris Ate frowns upon them, insomuch that Areteus well calls it angorem animi, a vexation of the mind, a perpetual agony. They can hardly be pleased or eased, though in other men's opinion most happy, go, tarry, run, ride, " — post equem sedet utra cura: they cannot avoid this feral plague, let them come in what company they will, pero heret lateri lethali arundo, as to a deer that is struck, whether he run, go, rest with the herd, or alone, this grief remains: irresolution, inconstancy, vanity of mind, their fear, torture, care, jealousy, suspicion, &c., continues, and they cannot be relieved. So he complained in the poet,

"Domam revortor mastus, atque animo ferè
Purturbato, atque incerto prae agitudine,
Assido, accurrunt servi: soecos detrahunt,
Video alios festinare, lectos stornere,
Comam apparece, pro se quisque sedulo
Faciabant, qui illam milii lenient missiam."

"He came home sorrowful, and troubled in his mind, his servants did all they possibly could to please him; one pulled off his socks, another made ready his bed, a third his supper, all did their utmost endeavours to ease his grief, and exhalate his person, he was profoundly melancholy, he had lost his son, illud angebat, that was his Cordium, his pain, his agony which could not be removed."

*Tedidum vitae.] Hence it proceeds many times, that they are weary of their lives, and feral thoughts to offer violence to their own persons come into their minds, tedidum vitae is a common symptom, tarda fluit, ingrataque tempora, they are soon tired with all things; they will now tarry, now be gone; now in bed they will rise, now up, then go to bed, now pleased, then again displeased; now they like, by and by dislike all, weary of all, sequitur nive vivendi, nive moriendo cupido, saith Aurelianus, Lib. 1. cap. 6, but most part vitam damnant, discontent, disquieted, perplexed upon every light, or no occasion, object: often tempeted, I say, to make away themselves: *Vivere nobunt, mori nesciunt: they cannot die, they will not live: they complain, weep, lament, and think they lead a most miserable life, never was any man so bad, or so before, every poor man they see is most fortunate in respect of them, every beggar that comes to the door is happier than they are, they could be contented to change lives with them, especially if they be alone, idle, and parted from their ordinary company, molested, displeased, or provoked: grief, fear, agony, discontent, wearisomeness, laziness, suspicion, or some such passion forcibly seizeth on them. Yet by and by when they come in company again, which they like, or be pleased, suum sententiam rursus damnant, et videt solatio delectatur, as Octavius Horatianus observes, Lib. 2. cap. 5, they condemn their former dislike, and are well pleased to live. And so they continue, till with some fresh discontent they be molested again, and then they are weary of their lives, weary of all, they will die, and show rather a necessity to live, than a desire. Claudius the emperor, as *Sueton describes him, had a


*Cap. 31. Quo stomachi dolore corrupi sunt etiam de conscendi morte cogitasse dixit.
Syrnptoms of Melancholy.

[Part. I. Sec. 3.

spice of this disease, for when he was tormented with the pain of his stomach, he had a conceit to make away himself. Julius Caesar Claudius, consil. 84, had a Polonian to his patient, so affected, that through fear and sorrow, with which he was still disquieted, hated his own life, wished for death every moment, and to be freed of his misery. Mercurialis another, and another that was often minded to dispatch himself, and so continued for many years.

Suspicion, jealousy.] Suspicion, and jealousy, are general symptoms: they are commonly distrustful, apt to mistake, and amplify, facile irascibiles, testy, pettish, peevish, and ready to snarl upon every small occasion, cum amicissimis, and without a cause, datum vel non datum, it will be scandalum acceptum. If they speak in jest, he takes it in good earnest. If they be not saluted, invited, consulted with, called to counsel, &c., or that any respect, small compliment, or ceremony be omitted, they think themselves neglected, and con
temned; for a time that tortures them. If two talk together, discourse, whisper, jest, or tell a tale in general, he thinks presently they mean him, applies all to himself, de se putat omnia dici. Or if they talk with him, he is ready to misconstrue every word they speak, and interpret it to the worst; he cannot endure any man to look steadily on him, speak to him almost, laugh, jest, or be familiar, or hem, or point, cough, or spit, or make a noise sometimes, &c. 7 He thinks they laugh or point at him, or do it in disgrace of him, circumvent him; every man looks at him, he is pale, red, sweats for fear and anger, lest somebody should observe him. He works upon it, and long after this false conceit of an abuse troubles him. Montannus, consil. 22, gives instance in a melancholy Jew, that was Iracundior Adirâ, so waspish and suspicious, tam facile iratus, that no man could tell how to carry himself in his company.

Inconstancy.] Inconstant they are in all their actions, vertiginous, restless, unapt to resolve of any business, they will and will not, persuaded to and fro upon every small occasion, or word spoken: and yet if once they be resolved, obstinate, hard to be reconciled. If they abhor, dislike, or distaste, once settled, though to the better by odds, by no counsel, or persuasion to be removed. Yet in most things wavering, irresolute, unable to deliberate, through fear, faciunt, et max faciit penitet (Areteus), avari, et paulo post prodigi. Now prodigal, and then covetous, they do, and by-and-by repent them of that which they have done, so that both ways they are troubled, whether they do or do not, want or have, hit or miss, disquieted of all hands, soon weary, and still seeking change, restless, I say, fickle, fugitive, they may not abide to tarry in one place long.

"Rome rus optans, absentem rustiscus urdem
Tollit ad astra——" no company long, or to persevere in any action or business.

"Et simul regum parent, pappare minatum
Possit, et irritans mammas laillre recusat." efsoons pleased, and anon displeased, as a man that's bitten with fleas, or that cannot sleep turns to and fro in his bed, their restless minds are tossed and vary, they have no patience to read out a book, to play out a game or two, walk a mile, sit an hour, &c., erected and dejected in an instant; animated to undertake, and upon a word spoken again discouraged.

Passionate.] Extreme passionate, Quicquid volunt velâ, volunt; and what they desire, they do most feariously seek: anxious ever and very solicitous, distrustful, and timorous, envious, malicious, profuse one while, sparing ano-

1 Angst et semper tristatur, solitudinem amat, mortem sibi precatur, vitam propriam odio habet. = Facilié in iram incident: Aret. 2 Triste causa, velocitatem irae. Savanarola, prael. major, velocitatem ire sibiomin. Avicenna, 1. 5. Penn. 1. Tract. 4. cap. 18. Anger sine causa. 3 Suspicio diffidentia, symptoma: Cato Ep. Julio Alexandro cons. 185 Scotih. 4 Hor. "At Rome, wishing for the fields; in the country, extolling the city to the skies." 5 Pers. Sat. 3. 18. "And like the children of nobility, require to eat pep, and, angry at the nurse, refuse her to sing lullably."
Symptoms of the Mind.

other, but most part covetous, muttering, repining, discontent, and still complaining, grudging, peevish, injuriarum tenaces; prone to revenge, soon troubled, and most violent in all their imaginations, not affable in speech, or apt to vulgar compliment, but surlly, dull, sad, austere; cogitabundi still, very intent, and as Albertus Durer paints melancholy, like a sad woman leaning on her arm with fixed looks, neglected habit, &c., held therefore by some proud, soft, sottish, or half-mad, as the Abderites esteemed of Democritus: and yet of a deep reach, excellent apprehension, judicious, wise, and witty: for I am of that "nobleman’s mind, "Melancholy advanceh men’s conceits, more than any humour whatsoever," improves their meditations more than any strong drink or sack. They are of profound judgment in some things, although in others non recte judicant inquieti, said Fracastorius, lib. 2. de Intell. And as Arculanus, c. 16. in 9. Rhesis terms it, Judicium plerumque perversum corrupti, cum judicant honesta in honesta, et amicitiam habent pro inimicitia: they count honesty dishonesty, friends as enemies, they will abuse their best friends, and dare nor offend their enemies. Cowards most part et ad inferendam injuriarum timidissimis, said Cardan, lib. 8. cap. 4. de rerum varietate; loth to offend, and if they chance to overshoot themselves in word or deed: or any small business or circumstance be omitted, forgotten, they are miserably tormented, and frame a thousand dangers and inconveniences to themselves, ex musco elephanth, if once they conceal it: overjoyed with every good rumour, tale, or prosperous event, transported beyond themselves: with every small cross again, bad news, misconceived injury, loss, danger, afflicted beyond measure, in great agony, perplexed, dejected, astonished, impatient, utterly undone: fearful, suspicions of all. Yet again, many of them desperate hare-brains, rash, careless, fit to be assassins, as being void of all fear and sorrow, according to Hercules de Saxoniis, "Most audacious, and such as dare walk alone in the night, through deserts and dangerous places, fearing none."

Amorous.] "They are prone to love," and easy to be taken; Propensi ad amorem et eannadescentiam (Montalvus, cap. 21). quickly enamoured, and dote upon all, love one dearly, till they see another, and then dote on her, Et haec, et hanc, et illam, et omnes, the present moves most, and the last commonly they love best. Yet some again Anterotes, cannot endure the sight of a woman, abhor the sex, as that same melancholy duke of Muscovy, that was instantly sick if he came but in sight of them; and that Anchorite, that fell into a cold palsy when a woman was brought before him.

Humorous.] Humorous they are beyond all measure, sometimes profusely laughing, extraordinarily merry, and then again weeping without a cause (which is familiar with many gentlewomen), groaning, sighing, pensive, sad, almost distracted, multa absurda fingunt, et a ratione aliena (saith Frame-sarius), they feign many absurdities, vain, void of reason: one suppose himself to be a dog, cock, bear, horse, glass, butter, &c. He is a giant, a dwarf, as strong as an hundred men, a lord, duke, prince, &c. And if he be told he hath a stinking breath, a great nose, that he is sick, or inclined to such or such a disease, he believes it eftsoons, and peradventure by force of imagination will work it out. Many of them are immovable, and fixed in their conceits, others vary upon every object, heard or seen. If they see a stage-play, they run upon that a week after; if they hear music, or see dancing, they have nought but beggips in their brain; if they see a combat, they are all for arms. If abused, an abuse troubles them long after; if crossed, that cross, &c. Restless

---


S
in their thoughts and actions, continually meditating, *Velet egris somnia, vanus fonguntur species*; more like dreams, than men awake, they fabric a company of antic, fantastical conceits, they have most frivolous thoughts, impossible to be effected; and sometimes think verily they hear and see present before their eyes such phantasms or goblins, they fear, suspect, or conceive, they still talk with, and follow them. In fine, *cogitationes somniantibus similes, id vigilant, quod aliis somniant cogitabundus:* still, saith Avicenna, they wake, as others dream, and such for the most part are their imaginations and conceits, *absurd, vain, foolish toys, yet they are* k most curious and solicitous, continual, and *et supra modum, Rasis, cont. lib. 1. cap. 9, premeditantur de aliqua re.* As serious in a toy, as if it were a most necessary business, of great moment, importance, and still, still, still thinking of it: *savoiant in se, macerating themselves.* Though they do talk with you, and seem to be otherwise employed, and to your thinking very intent and busy, still that toy runs in their mind, that fear, that suspicion, that abuse, that jealousy, that agony, that vexation, that cross, that castle in the air, that crotchet, that whimsey, that fiction, that pleasant waking dream, whatsoever it is. *Nec interrogant* (saith 1 Fracastorius) *nec interrogatuis resti respondunt.* They do not much heed what you say, their mind is on another matter; ask what you will, they do not attend, or much intend that business they are about, but forget themselves what they are saying, doing, or should otherwise say or do, whither they are going, distracted with their own melancholy thoughts. One laughs upon a sudden, another smiles to himself, a third frowns, calls, his lips go still, he acts with his hand as he walks, &c. "Tis proper to all melancholy men, saith "*Mercurialis,* con. 11. "What conceit they have once entertained, to be most intent, violent, and continually about it." *Invitus occurrat,* do what they may they cannot be rid of it, against their wills they must think of it a thousand times over, *Perpetuo molestantur nec obliviscuntur,* they are continually troubled with it, in company, out of company; at meat, at exercise, at all times and places, *non desinunt ea, que minime volunt, cogitaris,* if it be offensive especially, they cannot forget it, they may not rest or sleep for it, but still tormenting themselves, *Sysipi saxum volvant sibi ipsa,* as *Bruner observes, Perpetua calamitas et miserabile flagellum.*

**Bashfulness.** 2 Crato, 4 Laurentius, and Fermelinus, put bashfulness for an ordinary symptom, *subrusticus pudor, or vitiosus pudor,* is a thing which much haunts and torments them. If they have been misused, derided, disgraced, chidden, &c., or by any perturbation of mind misaffected, it so far troubles them, that they become quite moped many times, and so disheartened, dejected, they dare not come abroad, into strange companies especially, or manage their ordinary affairs, so childish, timorous, and bashful, they can look no man in the face; some are more disquieted in this kind, some less, longer some, others shorter, by fits, &c., though some on the other side (according to 5 Fracastorius) be *inverecundi et pertinacae,* impudent and peevish. But most part they are very shamefaced, and that makes them with Pet. Blesensis, Christopher Urswick, and many such, to refuse honours, offices and preferments, which sometimes fall into their mouths, they cannot speak, or put forth themselves as others can, *timor hos, pudor impedit illos,* timorousness and bashfulness hinder their proceedings, they are contented with their present estate, unwilling to undertake any office, and therefore never likely to rise. For that cause they seldom visit their friends, except some familiaris: *pauciloqui,* of few words,
and oftentimes wholly silent. *Frambeserins, a Frenchman, had two such patients, omnino taciturnos, their friends could not get them to speak: Rodericius à Fonseca, consult. tom. 2. 85. consil. gives instance in a young man, of twenty-seven years of age, that was frequently silent, bashful, moped, solitary, that twenty-eights not eat his meat, or sleep, and yet again by fits apt to be angry, &c.

**Similarities.**] Most part they are, as Plater notes, de ides, taciturni, aegre impulsit nec nisi coaequi procedent, &c, they will scarce be compelled to do that which concerns them, though it be for their good, so dillent, so dull, of small or no compliment, unsociable, hard to be acquainted with, especially of strangers; they had rather write their minds than speak, and above all things love solitariness. **Ob voluptatem, an ob timorem soli sunt?** Are they so solitary for pleasure (one asks) or pain? for both; yet I rather think for fear and sorrow, &c.


As Bellerophon in "Homer,

"Qui miser in sylvis morerent opacis, Ipsa summi cor edens, hominum vestigia viae." — "That wandered in the woods, sad, all alone, Forsaking men's society, making great mourn."

They delight in floods and waters, desert places, to walk alone in orchards, gardens, private walks, back lanes, averse from company, as Diogenes in his tub, or Timon Misanthropus, *they abhor all companions at last, even their nearest acquaintances and most familiar friends, for they have a conceit (I say) every man observes them, will deride, laugh to scorn, or misuse them, confining themselves therefore wholly to their private houses or chambers, fugianthomines sine causa (saith Rhasis) et odio habent, cont. l. 1, c. 9. they will diet themselves, feed and live alone. It was one of the chiefest reasons why the citizens of Abdera suspected Democritus to be melancholy and mad, because that, as Hippocrates related in his epistle to Philopomenes, "he forsook the city, lived in groves and hollow trees; upon a green bank by a brook side, or confinement of waters all day long, and all night." Quae quidem (saith he) plurimum atra bile vexatis et melancholicis eventual, deserta frequentant, hominumque congressum aversantur; *which is an ordinary thing with melancholy men. The Egyptians therefore in their hieroglyphics expressed a melancholy man by a bare sitting in her form, as being a most timorous and solitary creature, Pierius, Hieroglyph. l. 12. But this, and all precedent symptoms, are more or less apparent, as the humour is intended or remitted, hardly perceived in some, or not at all, most manifest in others. Childish in some, terrible in others; to be derided in one, pitied or admired in another; to him by fits, to a second continuat: and howsoever these symptoms be common and incident to all persons, yet they are the more remarkable, frequent, furious and violent in melancholy men. To speak in a word, there is nothing so vain, absurd, ridiculous, extravagant, impossible, incredible, so monstrous a chimera, so prodigious and strange, *such as painters and poets durst not attempt, which they will not really fear, feign, suspect and imagine unto themselves: and that which b Lod. Viv. said in a jest of a silly country fellow, that killed his ass for drinking up the moon, ut lunam mundo redderet, you may truly say of them in earnest; they will act, conceive all extremes, contrarieties, and contradictions, and that in infinite varieties. Melancholiae plane incredibilia sibi persuadent, ut vis omnibus secusius duo reperti sint, qui videm imaginiati sint (Erasstus de Lamis), scarce two of two thousand that concur in the same symptoms. The tower of

---

Babel never yielded such confusion of tongues, as the chaos of melancholy doth variety of symptoms. There is in all melancholy *similitudo dissimilis*, like men’s faces, a disagreeing likeness still; and as in a river we swim in the same place, though not in the same numerical water; as the same instrument affords several lessons, so the same disease yields diversity of symptoms. Which howsoever they be diverse, intricate, and hard to be confined, I will adventure yet in such a vast confusion and generality to bring them into some order; and so descend to particulars.

**Subsect. III.—Particular Symptoms from the influence of Stars, parts of the Body, and Humours.**

Some men have peculiar symptoms, according to their temperament and crisis, which they had from the stars and those celestial influences, variety of wits and dispositions, as Anthony Zara contends, Anat. *ingen. sect.* 1. *memb.* 11, 12, 13, 14, *plurimum irritant influential celestes, unde ciecuntur animi crig- tuilines et morbi corporum.* *One saith, diverse diseases of the body and mind proceed from their influences,* *as I have already proved out of Ptolemy, Pontanus, Lemnians, Cardan, and others, as they are principal signifiers of manners, diseases, mutually irradiated, or lords of the geniture, &c.* *Ptolomeus in his centiloquy, Hermes, or whosoever else the author of that tract, attributes all these symptoms, which are in melancholy men, to celestial influences; which opinion, Mercurialis de affect. lib. cap. 10. rejects; but, as I say, “Jovianus Pontanus and others still defend. That some are solitary, dull, heavy, churlish; some again blithe, buxom, light, and merry; they ascribe wholly to the stars. As if Saturn be predominant in his nativity, and cause melancholy in his temperature, then he shall be very austere, sullen, churlish, black of colour, profound in his cogitations, full of cares, miseries, and discontentions, sad and fearful, always silent, solitary, still delighting in husbandry, in woods, orchards, gardens, rivers, ponds, pools, dark walks and close: Cogitationes sunt velle edificare, velle arbores plantare, agros colere, &c.* *To catch birds, fishes, &c., still contriving and musing of such matters. If Jupiter domineers, they are more ambitious, still meditating of kingdoms, magistracies, offices, honours, or that they are princes, potentates, and how they would carry themselves, &c.* *If Mars, they are all for wars, brave combats, monomachies, testy, choleric, hare-brain, rash, furious, and violent in their actions. They will feign themselves victors, commanders, are passionate and satirical in their speeches, great bargers, ruddy of colour. And though they be poor in show, vile and base, yet like Telephus and Pelcus in the poet, *Ampullae jactant et sesquipedalia verba,* “forget their swelling and gigantic words,” their mouths are full of myriads, and tetrarchs at their tongues’ end. If the sun, they will be lords, emperors, in conceit at least, and monarchs, give offices, honours, &c. If Venus, they are still courting of their mistresses, and most apt to love, amorously given, they seem to hear music, plays, see fine pictures, dancers, merriments, and the like. Ever in love, and dote on all they see. Mercurialists are solitary, much in contemplation, subtle, poets, philosophers, and musing most part about such matters. If the moon have a hand, they are all for peregrinations, sea voyages, much affected with travels, to discourse, read, meditate of such things; wandering in their thoughts, diverse, much delighting in waters, to fish, fowl, &c.*

But the most immediate symptoms proceed from the temperature itself, and the organical parts, as head, liver, spleen, meseraic veins, heart, womb, stomach, &c., and most especially from distemperature of spirits (which, as *Hercules de Saxonîa contende, are wholly immaterial), or from the four humours in

those seats, whether they be hot or cold, natural, unnatural, innate or adventitious, intended or remitted, simple or mixed, their diverse mixtures, and several adustions, combinations, which may be as diversely varied, as those four first qualities in \*\*\* Clavius, and produce as many several symptoms and monstrous fictions as wine doth effect, which as Andreas Bachius observes, lib. 3. de vino, cap. 20. are infinite. Of greater note be these.

If it be natural melancholy, as Lod. Mercatus, lib. 1. cap. 17. de melan. T. Bright, c. 16. hath largely described, either of the spleen, or of the veins, faulty by excess of quantity, or thickness of substance, it is a cold and dry humour, as Montanus affirmes, consil. 26. the parties are sad, timorous and fearful. Prosper Calenus, in his book de atra bile, will have them to be more stupid than ordinary, cold, heavy, dull, solitary, sluggish; \*\*\*multum atrum bilem et frigidam habent. Hercules de Saxon\*\*, c. 19. l. 7. \*\*\*holds these that are naturally melancholy, to be of a leaden colour or black,\* and so doth Guianerius, c. 3. tract. 15. and such as think themselves dead many times, or that they see, talk with black men, dead men, spirits and goblins frequently, if it be in excess. These symptoms vary according to the mixture of those four humours adust, which is unnatural melancholy. For as Trallianus hath written, cap. 16. l. 7. \*\*\*There is not one cause of this melancholy, nor one humour which but, diverse diversely intermixed, from whence proceeds this variety of symptoms.\* and those varying again as they are hot or cold. \*\*\*Cold melancholy (saith Benedict. Vittorius Favitinius pract. mag.) is a cause of dotage, and more mild symptoms; if hot or more adust, of more violent passions, and furies." Fracastorius, l. 2. de intellect. will have us to consider well of it, \*\*\*with what kind of melancholy every one is troubled, for it much avails to know it;\* one is enraged by fervent heat, another is possessed by sad and cold; one is fearful, shamefaced; the other impudent and bold; as Ajax, Arna rupit superaque furus in praebi poscit: quite mad or tending to madness: \*\*\*Nunc hos, nunm impulsit illos. Bellerophon on the other side, solis errat multe saus in agris, wanders alone in the woods; one despairs, weeps, and is weary of his life, another laughs, &c. All which variety is produced from the several degrees of heat and cold, which \*\*\*Hercules de Saxon\*\*\*, will have wholly proceed from the distemperatures of spirits alone, animal especially, and those inmaterial, the next and immediate causes of melancholy, as they are hot, cold, dry, moist, and from their agitation proceeds that diversity of symptoms, which he reckons up in the \*\*\*fourteenth chap. of his tract of Melancholy, and that largely through every part. Others will have them come from the diverse adustion of the four humours, which in this unnatural melancholy, by corruption of blood, adust choler, or melancholy natural, \*\*\*by excessive distemper of heat turned, in comparison of the natural, into a sharp lye by force of adustion, cause, according to the diversity of their matter, diverse and strange symptoms," which T. Bright reckons up in his following chapter. So both \*\*\*Arcaulus, according to the four principal humours adust, and many others.

For example, if it proceed from phlegm (which is seldom and not so frequently as the rest), \*\*\*it stirs up dull symptoms, and a kind of stupidity, or impassionate hurt: they are sleepy, saith \*\*\*Savaranola, dull, slow, cold, blockish, ass-like, \*\*\*Astrinum melancholiam; \*\*\*Melanchton calls it, \*\*\*they are much given to weeping, and delight in waters, ponds, pools, rivers, fishing, fowling, &c.
Symptoms of Melancholy. [Part. 1. Sec. 3.]

(Arnoldus, breviari. 1. cap. 18.) They are: pale of colour, slothful, apt to sleep, heavy; much troubled with head-ache, continual meditation, and muttering to themselves; they dream of waters, that they are in danger of drowning, and fear such things, Rhasis. They are fatter than others that are melancholy, of a muggy complexion, apter to spit, sleep more troubled with rheum than the rest, and have their eyes still fixed on the ground. Such a patient had Heraclea de Saxoniâ, a widow in Venice, that was fat and very sleepy still; Christophorus à Vega another afflicted in the same sort. If it be inveterate or violent, the symptoms are more evident, they plainly denote and are ridiculous to others, in all their gestures, actions, speeches; imagining impossibilities, as he in Christophorus à Vega, that thought he was a tun of wine, and that Sienois, that resolved within himself not to piss, for fear he should drown all the town.

If it proceed from blood adust, or that there be a mixture of blood in it, "such are commonly ruddy of complexion, and high-coloured," according to Salust Salvianus, and Heraclea de Saxoniâ. And as Savanarola, Vittorius Faventius Emper. farther adds, "the veins of their eyes be red, as well as their faces." They are much inclined to laughter, witty and merry, conceited in discourse, pleasant, if they be not far gone, much given to music, dancing, and to be in women's company. They meditate wholly on such things, and think they see or hear plays, dancing, and such-like sports (free from all fear and sorrow, as Hercole de Saxoniâ supposed). If they be more strongly possessed with this kind of melancholy, Arnoldus adds, Breviari., lib. 1. cap. 18., like him of Argos in the Poet, that sate laughing all day long, as if he had been at a theatre. Such another is mentioned by Aristotle, living at Abydos, a town of Asia Minor, that would sit after the same fashion, as if he had been upon a stage, and sometimes act himself; now clap his hands, and laugh, as if he had been well pleased with the sight. Wolius relates of a country fellow called Brunessius, subject to this humour, "that being by chance at a sermon, saw a woman fall off from a form half asleep, at which object most of the company laughed, but he for his part was so much moved, that for three whole days after he did nothing but laugh, by which means he was much weakened, and worse a long time following." Such a one was old Sophocles, and Democritus himself had hilare delirium, much in this vein. Laurentius, cap. 3. de mel. thinks this kind of melancholy, which is a little adust with some mixture of blood, to be that which Aristotle meant, when he said melancholy men of all others are most witty, which causeth many times a divine ravishment, and a kind of enthusiasmus, which stirreth them up to be excellent philosophers, poets, prophets, &c. Mercurialis consil. 110. gives instance in a young man his patient, sanguine melancholy, "of a great wit, and excellently learned."

If it arise from choler adust, they are bold and impudent, and of a more harebrain disposition, apt to quarrel, and think of such things, battles, combats, and their manhood, furious; impatient in discourse, stiff, irreproachable and prodigious in their tenets; and if they be moved, most violent, outrageous, ready to disgrace, provoke any, to kill themselves and others; Arnoldus adds, stark mad by fits, "they sleep little, their urine is subtile and fiery. (Gnaec.) In their fits you shall hear them speak all manner of languages.

Symptoms of the Stars, Humours, &c.

Hebrew, Greek, and Latin, that never were taught or knew them before." Apponensis in com. in Pro. sec. 30. speaks of a mad woman that spake excellent good Latin: and Rhasis knew another, that could prophesy in her fit, and foretell things truly to come. * Guianerius had a patient could make Latin verses when the moon was combust, otherwise illiterate. Avicenna and some of his adherents will have these symptoms, when they happen, to proceed from the devil, and that they are rather daemoniaci, possessed, than mad or melancholy, or both together, as Jason Pratensis thinks, Imminct se mali genii, &c., but most ascribe it to the humour, which opinion Montaltus, cap. 21. stiffly maintains, confuting Avicenna and the rest, referring it wholly to the quality and disposition of the humour and subject. Cardan de rerum var. lib. 8. cap. 10. holds these men of all others fit to be assassins, bold, hardy, fierce, and adventurous, to undertake any thing by reason of their choler adust. * This humour, says he, prepares them to endure death itself, and all manner of torments with invincible courage, and 'tis a wonder to see with what alacrity they will undergo such tortures; * ut supra naturam res videatur: he ascribes this generosity, fury, or rather stupidity, to this adustion of choler and melancholy: but I take these rather to be mad or desperate, than properly melancholy: for commonly this humour so adust and hot, degenerates into madness.

If it come from melancholy itself adust, those men, saith Avicenna, "are usually sad and solitary, and that continually, and in excess, more than ordinarily suspicious, more fearful, and have long, sore, and most corrupt imaginations;" cold and black, bashful, and so solitary, that as * Arnoldus writes, "they will endure no company, they dream of graves still, and dead men, and think themselves bewitched or dead:" if it be extreme, they think they hear hideous noises, see and talk "with black men, and converse familiarly with devils, and such strange chimeras and visions" (Gordonius), or that they are possessed by them, that somebody talks to them, or within them. * Tales melancholici plerumque daemoniaci, Montaltus, consil. 20. ex Avicenna. Valescusc de Taranta had such a woman in cure, "that thought she had to do with the devil:" and Gentilis Fulgosus quest. 55. writes that he had a melancholy friend, that "had a black man in the likeness of a soldier" still following him wheresoever he was. Laurentius, cap. 7. hath many stories of such as have thought themselves bewitched by their enemies; and some that would eat no meat as being dead. * Anno 1550 an advocate of Paris fell into such a melancholy fit, that he believed verily he was dead, he could not be persuaded otherwise, or to eat or drink, till a kinsman of his, a scholar of Bourges, did eat before him dressed like a corse. The story, saith Serres, was acted in a comedy before Charles the Ninth. Some think they are beasts, wolves, hogs, and cry like dogs, foxes, bray like asses, and low like kine, as King Prætus' daughters. * Hildesheim, spicel. 2. de manial, hath an example of a Dutch baron so affected, and Trincavellus, lib. 1. consil. 11., another of a nobleman in his country, "that thought he was certainly a beast, and would imitate most of their voices," with many such symptoms, which may properly be reduced to this kind.

If it proceed from the several combinations of these four humours, or spirits, Herc. de Saxon. adds hot, cold, dry, moist, dark, confused, settled, con-strunged, as it participates of matter, or is without matter, the symptoms are likewise mixed. One thinks himself a giant, another a dwarf; one is heavy

* Tract. 15. c. 4. 5 Ad hæc perpetuamente duravit exspectax textum, cruculatus quauid tolerante, o clam, et adud exacerbae adente et ad spiritus; et iritans urban, cumque in tormentis patiens. 6 Tales plus extensis timeas, et conceivable, suspicii, solito in territum diligent, corruptissimas habebat imaginationes, &c. 7 Si a melancholis adusta, tristis, de sepulchro sonantis, timent ne faciasentur, putant se mortuus, aspsi auat. 8 Videtur sibi videri monaches nigres et daemones, et suspensos et mortuos. 9 Quavis ecco secum dummo coire putavit. 10 Semper fere vidisse militem nigrum presentem. 11 Anthony de Verderon. 12 quidam mugitus boun amunuant, et pecora se putant, ut prætii nillo. 13 Baro quidam mugitus boun, et rugitus asinorum, et aliorum animalium voces effingit.
as lead, another is as light as a feather. Marcellus Donatus, l. 2. cap. 41. makes mention out of Seneca, of one Senecchio, a rich man, "a that thought himself and every thing else he had, great: great wife, great horses, could not abide little things, but would have great pots to drink in, great hose, and great shoes bigger than his feet." Like her in b Trallianus, that supposed she "could shake all the world with her finger," and was afraid to clinch her hand together, lest she should crush the world like an apple in pieces: or him in Galen, that thought he was c Atlas, and sustained heaven with his shoulders. Another thinks himself so little, that he can creep into a mouse-hole: one fears heaven will fall on his head: a second is a cook; and such a one, d Guianerius saith he saw at Padua, that would clap his hands together and crow. "Another thinks he is a nightingale, and therefore sings all the night long; another he is all glass, a pitcher, and will therefore let nobody come near him, and such a one e Laurentius gives out upon his credit, that he knew in France. Christophorus à Vega, cap. 3., l. 14., Skencius and Marcellus Donatus, l. 2. cap. 1. have many such examples, and one amongst the rest of a baker in Ferrara, that thought he was composed of butter, and durst not sit in the sun, or come near the fire for fear of being melted: of another that thought he was a case of leather, stuffed with wind. Some laugh, weep; some are mad, some dejected, moped, in much agony, some by fits, others continue, &c. Some have a corrupt ear, they think they hear music, or some hideous noise as their phantasy conceives, corrupt eyes, some smelling: some one sense, some another. "Lewis the Eleventh had a conceit every thing did stink about him, all the odoriferous perfumes they could get, would not ease him, but still he smelled a filthy stink. A melancholy French poet in b Laurentius being sick of a fever, and troubled with waking, by his physicians was appointed to use unguentum populeum to anoint his temples; but he so distasted the smell of it, that for many years after, all that came near him he imagined to scent of it, and would let no man talk with him but aloof off, or wear any new clothes, because he thought still they smelled of it; in all other things wise and discreet, he would talk sensibly, save only in this. A gentleman in Limousin, saith Anthony Verdeur, was persuaded he had but one leg, afflicted by a wild boar, that by chance struck him on the leg; he could not be satisfied his leg was sound (in all other things well) until two Franciscans by chance coming that way, fully removed him from the conceit. Sed abundant f. dulcarum audivimus,—enough of story-telling.

SUBSECT. IV.—Symptoms from Education, Custom, Continuance of Time, our Condition, mixed with other Diseases, by Fits, Inclination, &c.

Another great occasion of the variety of these symptoms proceeds from custom, discipline, education, and several inclinations, "this humour will imprint in melancholy men the objects most answerable to their condition of life, and ordinary actions, and dispose men according to their several studies and callings." If an ambitious man become melancholy, he forthwith thinks he is a king, an emperor, a monarch, and walks alone, pleasing himself with a vain hope of some future preferment, or present as he supposed, and withal acts a lord's part, takes upon him to be some statesman or magnifico, makes conges, gives entertainment, looks big, &c. Francisco Sansovino records of a melancholy man in Cremona, that would not be induced to believe but that

---

a Omnia magna putabat, uxorem magnam, grandes equos, abhorruit omnia parva, magna poca, et ealuae mensa pedibus majora.  
b Lib. 1. cap. 16. putavit se uno digito posse totum mundum contener.  
c Sunt heurisem, oculis eum Athenes. Alii seul ruinas timent.  
d Cap. 1. Tract. 35. alius se gallum putat, alius luculent.  
e Trallianus.  
f Cap. 7. de mel.  
g Anthony de Verdeur.  
h Cap. 7 de mel.
he was pope, gave pardons, made cardinals, &c. 2 Christophorus à Vega makes mention of another of his acquaintance, that thought he was a king, driven from his kingdom, and was very anxious to recover his estate. A covetous person is still conversant about purchasing of lands and tenements, plotting in his mind how to compass such and such manors, as if he were already lord of, and able to go through with it; all he sees is his, re or spe, he hath devoured it in hope, or else in conceit esteems it his own: like him in 1 Atheneseus, that thought all the ships in the haven to be his own. A lascivious inamorato plots all the day long to please his mistress, acts and struts, and carries himself as if she were in presence, still dreaming of her, as Pamphilus of his Glycerium, or as some do in their morning sleep. 3 Marcellus Donatus knew such a gentlewoman in Mantua, called Elionora Mellorina, that constantly believed she was married to a king, and "would kneel down and talk with him, as if he had been there present with his associates; and if she had found by chance a piece of glass in a muck-hill or in the street, she would say that it was a jewel sent from her lord and husband." If devout and religious, he is all for fasting, prayer, ceremonies, alms, interpretations, visions, prophecies, revelations, "he is inspired by the Holy Ghost, full of the Spirit: one while he is saved, another while damned, or still troubled in mind for his sins, the devil will surely have him, &c. more of these in the third partition of love-melancholy. 4 A scholar's mind is busied about his studies, he applauds himself for what he hath done, or hopes to do, one while fearing to be out in his next exercise, another while contemning all censures; envies one, emulates another; or else with indefatigable pains and meditation, consumes himself. So of the rest, all which vary according to the more reuiss and violent impression of the object, or as the humour itself is intended or remitted. For some are so gently melancholy, that in all their carriage, and to the outward apprehension of others it can hardly be discerned, yet to them an intolerable burden, and not to be endured. "Quedam occulta quedam manifesta, some signs are manifest and obvious to all at all times, some to few or seldom, or hardly perceived; let them keep their own counsel, none will take notice or suspect them. They do not express in outward show their depraved imaginotions," as 'Hercules de Saxoniâ observes, "but conceal them wholly to themselves, and are very wise men, as I have often seen; some fear, some do not fear at all, as such as think themselves kings or dead, some have more signs, some fewer, some great, some less, some vex, fret, still fear, grieve, lament, suspect, laugh, sing, weep, chafe, &c. by fits (as I have said) or more during and permanent." Some dote in one thing, are most childish, and ridiculous, and to be wondered at in that, and yet for all other matters most discreet and wise. To some it is in disposition, to another in habit; and as they write of heat and cold, we may say of this humour, one is melancholicus ad octo, a second two degrees less, a third half-way. "Tis superparticular, sesqui- altera, sesquieteria, and superparticularis tertius, quintus Melancholie, &c., all those geometrical proportions are too little to express it. "It comes to many by fits, and goes; to others it is continuato: many (saith 'Paventricus') in spring and fall only are molested, some once a year, as that Roman 'Galen speaks of: "one, at the conjunction of the moon alone, or some unfortunate aspects, at such and such set hours and times, like the sea-tides, to some

1 Lib. 3. cap. 14. qui se regeem putavit regnum expulsam. 1 Dipinosophist. lib. Thrasius putavit omnes naves in Pireum portum appetientes suas esse. 1 De hist. Med. mirabil. lib. 2. cap. 1. 2 Genibus flexis leque carn fillo voluit, et adscare jum tum putavit, &c. 3 Gordinus, quod sit prophecta, et in tabis a spiritu sancto. 4 Quis forensibus causis imputat, nulli nisi arcesta egestat, et supplices libellis, alius non nisi veram fact. P. Fores. 5 Gordinus. 6 Verbo non exprimunt, nec operes, sed alta mente recoundunt, et sunt viri prudentissimum, quos ego ampe novi, cum multi sint sine timore, ut qui se reges et mortuos putant, plura signa quidam habent, pauciora, majora, minora. 7 Trailliamus, lib. 1. 16. alii intervalia quemabat, ut etiam consuetud administrunt, ali ad continue delicito sunt, &c. 8 Prac. mag. Vere tantum et autumno. 9 Lib. de moribous. 10 Guianarius.
women when they be with child, as 7 Plater notes, never otherwise: to others 'tis settled and fixed: to one led about and variable still by that ignis fatuus of phantasy, like an arthritus or running gout, 'tis here and there, and in every joint, always molesting some part or other; or if the body be free, in a myriad of forms exercising the mind. A second once peradventure in his life hath a most grievous fit, once in seven years, once in five years, even to the extremity of madness, death, or dotage, and that upon some feral accident or perturbation, terrible object, and that for a time, never perhaps so before, never after. A third is moved upon all such troublesome objects, cross fortune, disaster, and violent passions, otherwise free, once troubled in three or four years. A fourth, if things be to his mind, or he in action, well pleased, in good company, is most jocund, and of a good complexion: if idle, or alone, à la mort, or carried away wholly with pleasant dreams and phantasies, but if once crossed and displeased,

"Pector concipiet nil nisi triste son;" 8  
"He will imagine naught save sadness in his heart;" 9 his countenance is altered on a sudden, his heart heavy, irksome thoughts crucify his soul, and in an instant he is moped or weary of his life, he will kill himself. A fifth complains in his youth, a sixth in his middle age, the last in his old age.

Generally thus much we may conclude of melancholy; that it is "most pleasant at first, I say, mentis gratissimus error," a most delightful humour, to be alone, dwell alone, walk alone, meditate, lie in bed whole days, dreaming awake as it were, and frame a thousand fantastical imaginations unto themselves. They are never better pleased than when they are so doing, they are in paradise for the time, and cannot well endure to be interrupt; with him in the poet, "pol me occiditās, amāci, non servīstis, ait? you have undone him, he complains if you trouble him; tell him what inconvenience will follow, what will be the event, all is one, canis ad vomitum, 'tis so pleasant he cannot refrain. He may thus continue peradventure many years by reason of a strong temperature, or some mixture of business, which may divert his cogitations: but at the last lassa imaginatio, his phantasy is crazed, and now habituated to such toys, cannot but work still like a fate, the scene alters upon a sudden, fear and sorrow supplant those pleasing thoughts, suspicion, discontent, and perpetual anxiety succeed in their places; so by little and little, by that shoeing-horn of idleness, and voluntary solitariness, melancholy this feral fiend is drawn on, et quantum vertice ad auros Ἀθηνας, tantum radices in Tartara tendit, "extending up, by its branches, so far towards Heaven, as, by its roots, it does down towards Tartarus;" it was not so delicious at first, as now it is bitter and harsh; a cankered soul macerated with cares and discontents, tardium vitae, impatience, agony, inconstancy, irresolution, precipitate them unto unspeakable miseries. They cannot endure company, light, or life itself, some unit for action, and the like. Their bodies are lean and dried up, withered, ugly, their looks harsh, very dull, and their souls tormented, as they are more or less entangled, as the humour hath been intended, or according to the continuance of time they have been troubled.

To discern all which symptoms the better, "Rasis the Arabian makes three degrees of them. The first is, falsa cogitatio, false conceits and idle thoughts: to misconstrue and amplify, aggravating every thing they conceive or fear; the second is, falsa cogitata loquai, to talk to themselves, or to use inarticulate inconcindive voices, speeches, obsolete gestures, and plainly to utter their minds and conceits of their hearts, by their words and actions, as to laugh, weep, to be silent, not to sleep, eat their meat, &c.: the third is to put in practice that

1 De mentis alienat. cap. 3. 7 Levinsus Lennus, Jason Pratensis, bland ab initio. 8 "A most agreeable mental delusion." 9 Hor. b Pætulis desconsens Averni. 10 Virg. d Corpus cadaverorum. 11 Pet. lxvii. carinae est facies mea praegruitudine animae. 12 Lib. 9. ad Almainorum.
which they 'think or speak. Savanarola, Rub. 11. Tract. 8. cap. 1. de agritura-
dine, confirms as much, * "when he begins to express that in words, which he
conceives in his heart, or talks idly, or goes from one thing to another," which
* Gordonius calls nec coput habetutia nec caudom ("having neither head nor
tail"), he is in the middle way: "but when he begins to act it likewise, and
to put his fopperies in execution, he is then in the extent of melancholy, or
madness itself." This progress of melancholy you shall easily observe in them
that have been so affected, they go smiling to themselves at first, at length
they laugh out; at first solitary, at last they can endure no company: or if
they do, they are now dizzards, past sense and shame, quite moped, they care
not what they say or do, all their actions, words, gestures, are furious or ri-
culous. At first his mind is troubled, he doth not attend what is said, if you
tell him a tale, he cries at last, what said you? but in the end he mutters to
himself, as old women do many times, or old men when they sit alone, upon a
sudden they laugh, whoop, halloo, or run away, and swear they see or hear
players, * devils, hobgoblins, ghosts, strike, or strut, &c., grow humorous in
the end: like him in the poet, sepe ducentos, sepe ducem servos ("at one
time followed by two hundred servants, at another only by ten"), he will
dress himself, and undress, careless at last, grows insensible, stupid, or mad.
He howls like a wolf, barks like a dog, and raves like Ajax and Orestes,
hears music and outcries, which no man else hears. As * he did whom
Amatus Lusitanus mentioneth cent. 3. cura. 55, or that woman in a Springer,
that spoke many languages, and said she was possessed: that farmer in * Pro-
ser Calenus, that disputed and discoursed learnedly in philosophy and astro-
nomy with Alexander Achilles his master, at Bologna, in Italy. But of
these I have already spoken.

Who can sufficiently speak of these symptoms, or prescribe rules to com-
prehend them? as Echo to the painter in Ausonius, vane, quid affectas, &c.,
foolish fellow; what wilt? if you must needs paint me, paint a voice, et similum
sii vis pingere, pingre sonum; if you will describe melancholy, describe a phan-
tastical conceit, a corrupt imagination, vain thoughts and different, which
who can do? The four and twenty letters make no more variety of words in
diverse languages, than melancholy conceits produce diversity of symptoms
in several persons. They are irregular, obscure, various, so infinite, Proteus
himself is not so diverse, you may as well make the moon a new coat, as a
true character of a melancholy man; as soon find the motion of a bird in the
air, as the heart of man, a melancholy man. They are so confused, I say,
diverse, intermixed with other diseases. As the species be confounded (which
* I have shewed) so are the symptoms: sometimes with headache, cachexia,
dropsy, stone; as you may perceive by those several examples and illus-
trations, collected by Hildesheim, spicel. 2, Mercurialis, consil. 118. cap. 6 and
11, with headache, epilepsy, priapismus. Trincavellii, consil. 12. lib. 1.
consil. 49. with gout: caninus appetitus. Montanus, consil. 26, &c. 23, 254,
249, with falling-sickness, headache, vertigo, lycanthropia, &c. I. Caesar
Claudinus, consult. 4. consult. 89 and 116, with gout, agues, hemorrhoids,
stone, &c., who can distinguish these melancholy symptoms so intermixed with
others, or apply them to their several kinds, confine them into method? 'Tis
hard I confess, yet I have disposed of them as I could, and will descend to
particularise them according to their species. For hitherto I have expatiated

* Practica major.
* Quum ore loquitur quod corde concepist, quum subito de una re ad aliud transit,
neque rationem de aliquo reducit, tunc est in medo, at quum hiccup operari quod loquitur, in summo gradu est.
* Cap. 10. Parte. 2. Loquitur secum et ad alios, at el vere presentes. Ang. cap. 11. h. de cura
pro mortuis gerenda. Rhins.
* Quum res ad hoc devent, ut ea quod cogitare coperit, cre premiat, atque acta permaneat, tum perfecta melanchohia est.
* Melanocholis se videt et audire putat daemones. Lavater de spectris, part. 3. cap. 2.
* Wirius, lib. 3. cap. 31.
* Michael à musan.
* Malaco melaf.
* Lib. de alia bile.
* Part. 1. Subs. 2. Memb. 2.
* De delirio, melancholia, et mania.
in more general lists or terms, speaking promiscuously of such ordinary signs, which occur amongst writers. Not that they are all to be found in one man, for that were to paint a monster or chimera, not a man: but some in one, some in another, and that successively, or at several times.

Which I have been the more curious to express and report; not to upbraid any miserable man, or by way of derision (I rather pity them), but the better to discern, to apply remedies unto them; and to show that the best and soundest of us all is in great danger; how much we ought to fear our own fickle natures, remember our miseries and vanities, examine and humble ourselves, seek to God, and call to Him for mercy, that needs not look for any rods to scourge ourselves, since we carry them in our bowels, and that our souls are in a miserable captivity, if the light of grace and heavenly truth doth not shine continually upon us; and by our discretion to moderate ourselves, to be more circumspect and wary in the midst of these dangers.

MEMB. II.

SUBSECT. I.—Symptoms of Head-Melancholy.

"If no symptoms appear about the stomach, nor the blood be misaffected, and fear and sorrow continue, it is to be thought the brain itself is troubled, by reason of a melancholy juice bred in it, or otherwise conveyed into it, and that evil juice is from the distemperature of the part, or left after some inflammation," thus far Piso. But this is not always true, for blood and hypochondries both are often affected even in head-melancholy. *Hercules de Saxoniah differs here from the common current of writers, putting peculiar signs of head-melancholy, from the sole distemperature of spirits in the brain, as they are hot, cold, dry, moist, "all without matter from the motion alone, and tenebrosity of spirits;" of melancholy which proceeds from humours by adustion, he treats apart, with their several symptoms and cures. The common signs, if it be by essence in the head, "are reddiness of face, high sanguine complexion, most part rubore saturato, one calls it a blueish, and sometimes full of pimples," with red eyes. *Avicenna, l. 3, Fen, 2, Tract, 4, c. 18. *Duretus and others out of Galen, de affect. l. 3, c. 6. *Hercules de Saxoniah to this of redness of face, adds "heaviness of the head, fixed and hollow eyes. *If it proceed from dryness of the brain, then their heads will be light, vertiginous, and they most apt to wake, and to continue whole months together without sleep. Few excrements in their eyes and nostrils, and often bald by reason of excess of dryness," Montaltus adds, c. 17. If it proceed from moisture: dulness, drowsiness, headache follows; and as Salust, Salvianus, c. 1, l. 2, out of his own experience found, epileptic, with a multitude of humours in the head. They are very bashful, if ruddy, apt to blush, and to be red upon all occasions, pressentim si metus accesserit. But the chiefest symptom to discern this species, as I have said, is this, that there be no notable signs in the stomach, hypochondries, or elsewhere, digna, as Montaltus terms them, or of greater note, because oftentimes the passions of the stomach concern with them. Wind is common to all three species, and is not exclu led, only that of the hypochondries is *more windy than the rest, saith Hollerius. *Etius, tetrab. l. 2, sc. 2, c. 9.


* Facie sunt rubente et liveness, quibus etiam aliquando aduent pastiles.

*Jo. Pantheon, cap. de mel. Si cerebrum primario affectatur aduent capitis gravitas, fixi oculi, &c. *I aurent. cap. 5, si a cerebro ex asicitate, tum capitis erit lovitias, sitvs, vigilia, panchias superfluitatum in oculis et naribus.

* Si nulla digna lesio ventriculo, quoniam in hae melacholica capitis, exigua nonnamquam ventriculi pathemata caecum, duc enim hae membra sibi invicem affectionem transsuntur.

* Postrema magis salutum.
and 10, maintains the same, *if there be more signs, and more evident in the head than elsewhere, the brain is primarily affected and prescribes head-melancholy to be cured by meats amongst the rest, void of wind, and good juice, not excluding wind, or corrupt blood, even in head-melancholy itself: but these species are often confounded, and so are their symptoms, as I have already proved. The symptoms of the mind are superfluous and continual cogitations: "*for when the head is heated, it scorcht the blood, and from thence proceed melancholy fumes, which trouble the mind," Avicenna. They are very cholerick, and soon hot, solitary, sad, often silent, watchful, discontent, Montaltus, cap. 2. 1. If any thing trouble them, they cannot sleep, but fret themselves still, till another object mitigate, or time wear it out. They have grievous passions, and immoderate perturbations of the mind, fear, sorrow, &c., yet not so continue, but that they are sometimes merry, apt to profuse laughter, which is more to be wondered at, and that by the authority of Galen himself, by reason of mixture of blood, prorubri jocosis delectantur et irrisores plerumque sunt, if they be ruddy, they are delighted in jests, and sometimes scoffers themselves, conceited; and as Rodericus; à Vega comments on that place of Galen, merry, witty, of a pleasant disposition, and yet grievously melancholy anon after: omnia discunt sine doctore, saith Areteus, they learn without a teacher: and as Laurentius supposeth, those feral passions and symptoms of such as think themselves glass, pitchers, feathers, &c., speak strange languages, proceed à calore cerebri (if it be in excess), from the brain's distempered heat.

SUBJECT II.—Symptoms of windy Hypochondriacal Melancholy.

"In this hypochondriacal or flatuous melancholy, the symptoms are so ambiguous," said * Crato in a counsel of his for a noblewoman, "that the most exquisite physicians cannot determine of the part affected." Matthew Flaccius, consulted about a noble matron, confessed as much, that in this malady he with Hollerius, Fracastorius, Falopius, and others, being to give their sentence of a party labouring of hypochondriacal melancholy, could not find out by the symptoms which part was most especially affected; some said the womb, some heart, some stomach, &c., and therefore Crato, consil. 24. lib. 1. boldly avers, that in this diversity of symptoms, which commonly accompany this disease, "no physician can truly say what part is affected." Galen, lib. 3. de loc. affect. reckons up these ordinary symptoms, which all the Neoterics repeat of Diocles; only this fault he finds with him, that he puts not fear and sorrow amongst the other signs. Trincavellius excuseth Dioles, lib. 3. consil. 35, because that oftentimes in a strong head and constitution, a generous spirit, and a valiant, these symptoms appear not, by reason of his value and courage. * Hercules de Saxonii (to whom I subscribe) is of the same mind (which I have before touched) that fear and sorrow are not general symptoms; some fear and are not sad; some be sad and fear not; some neither fear nor grieve. The rest are these, beside fear and sorrow, *··••sharp belchings, fulsome crudities, heat in the bowels, wind and rumbling in the guts, vehemcnt gripings, pain in the belly and stomach sometimes, after meat that is hard of concoction, much watering of the stomach, and moist spittle, cold sweat, importunus sudor,

*Si minus molestia circa ventriculum aut ventrem, in ilis cerebrum primario affectur, et curare oporetur, hune affecturum, per cibos flatus exortes, et bonae concioniones, &c., raro cerebrum affectur sine ventriculo.
*Sangvinem aduant caput calidius, et inde fumi melancholici adiutor, animam exsanguitat.
*Lib. de loc. affect. cap. 6.
*Cap. 6.
*Tract. posthumo de mel. Patavi edit. 1636. per Boeztum Bibliop. cap. 2.
*Aeclii raetus, eruditates, suatus in precordii, status, interum ventriculi dolores vehementes, simpques ob concordia difficilis, spatul humidiudique mutum sequetur, &c. Hip. lib. de mel. Galenus, Melancholia; Ruffo et Astio, Altorius, Piso, Montaltus, Brucl, Wecker, &c.
unseasonable sweat all over the body;" as Octavius Horatianus, lib. 2. cap. 5. calls it; cold joints, indigestion, "they cannot endure their own fulsome belchings, continual wind about their hypochondries, heat and griping in their bowels, prae cordia sursum convalluntur, midriff and bowels are pulled up, the veins about their eyes look red, and swell from vapours and wind." Their ears sing now and then, vertigo and giddiness come by fits, turbulent dreams, dryness, leanness, apt they are to sweat upon all occasions, of all colours and complexions. Many of them are high-coloured, especially after meals, which symptom Cardinal Caesius was much troubled with, and of which he complained to Prosper Calenus his physician, he could not eat, or drink a cup of wine, but he was as red in the face as if he had been at a mayor's feast. That symptom alone vexeth many. *Some again are black, pale, ruddy, sometimes their shoulders, and shoulder blades ache, there is a leaping all over their bodies, sudden trembling, a palpitation of the heart, and that cardia ca passio, grief in the mouth of the stomach, which maketh the patient think his heart itself acheth, and sometimes suffocation, difficultia anhelitice, short breath, hard wind, strong pulse, swooning. Montanus, consil. 53, Trincavellius, lib. 3. consil. 36, et 37. Fernelius, consil. 43. Frambesarius, consult. lib. 1. consil. 17. Hildesheim, Claudinus, &c., give instance of every particular. The peculiar symptoms, which properly belong to each part be these. If it proceed from the stomach saith Savanarola, 'tis full of pain and wind, Guianerius adds vertigo, nausea, much spitting, &c. If from the myrica, a swelling and wind in the hypochondries, a loathing, and appetite to vomit, pulling upward. If from the heart, aching and trembling of it, much heaviness. If from the liver, there is usually a pain in the right hypochondrie. If from the spleen, hardmess and grief in the left hypochondrie, a rumbling, much appetite and small digestion, Avicenna. If from the meseraic veins and liver on the other side, little or no appetite. Heron de Saxonia. If from the hypochondries, a rumbling inflation, coneection is hindered, often belching, &c. And from these crudities, windy vapours ascend up to the brain which trouble the imagination, and cause fear, sorrow, dulness, heaviness, many terrible conceits and chimeras, as Lemnius well observes, l. 1. c. 16. "as a black and thick cloud covers the sun, and intercepts his beams and light, so doth this melancholy vapour obnubilate the mind, enforce it to many absurd thoughts and imaginations," and compel, good, wise, honest, discreet men (arising to the brain from the "lower parts, "as smoke out of a chimney") to dote, speak, and do that which becomes them not, their persons, callings, wisdoms. One by reason of those ascending vapours and gripings, rumbling beneath, will not be persuaded but that he hath a serpent in his guts, a viper, another frogs. Trallianus relates a story of a woman, that imagined she had swallowed an eel, or a serpent, and Felix Platerus, observat. lib. 1. hath a most memorable example of a countryman of his, that by chance falling into a pit where frogs and frogs' spawn was, and a little of that water swallowed, began to suspect that he had likewise swallowed frogs' spawn, and with that conceit and fear, his phantasy wrought so far, that he verily thought he had young live frogs in his belly, qui vivebant ex alimento suo, that lived by his nourishment, and was so certainly persuaded of it, that for many years following he could not be rectified in its conceit: He studied physic seven years together to cure himself, travelled into Italy, France and Germany to confer with the best physicians about it, and A.D. 1609, asked his counsel amongst the rest; he told him it was wind, his conceit, &c., but morbidus contradictire, et ore et scriptis probare nilebatur: no saying would serve, it was no wind, but

1 Circum praecordia de asduus infallione queruntur, et cum sudore totius corporis importans, frigidos articulos esse patinantur, indigestione laborant, ructus suos insanes perhorrescent, viscerum dolores labant.
real frogs: "and do you not hear them croak?" Platerus would have deceived him, by putting live frogs into his excrement; but he, being a physician himself, would not be deceived, *vir prudentis alias, et doctus*, a wise and learned man otherwise, a doctor of physic, and after seven years' dotage in this kind, à phantasia liberatus est, he was cured. Laurentius and Gouart have many such examples, if you be desirous to read them. One commodity above the rest which are melancholy, these windy flatous have, *lucida intercella*, their symptoms and pains are not usually so continue as the rest, but come by fits, fear and sorrow, and the rest: yet in another they exceed all others; and that is, "they are luxurious, incontinent, and prone to venery, by reason of wind, et facile amant, et quæmulat. Venus doth many of them much good; the other symptoms of the mind be common with the rest.

**SUBSECT. III.—Symptoms of Melancholy abounding in the whole body.**

Their bodies that are affected with this universal melancholy are most part black, "the melancholy juice is redundant all over," hirsute they are, and lean, they have broad veins, their blood is gross and thick. "Their spleen is weak," and a liver apt to engender the humour; they have kept bad diet, or have had some evacuation stopped, as haemorrhoids, or months in women, which *Trallianus, in the cure, would have carefully to be inquired, and withal to observe of what complexion the party is of, black or red. For as Forrestus and Hollerius contend, if "they be black, it proceeds from abundance of natural melancholy; if it proceed from cares, agony, discontents, diet, exercise, &c., they may be as well of any other colour: red, yellow, pale, as black, and yet their whole blood corrupt; *prærubri colore sæpe sunt tales, sæpe flavi*, (saith "Montaltus, cap. 22.) The best way to discern this species, is to let them bleed, if the blood be corrupt, thick and black, and they withheld from those hypochondriacal symptoms, and not so grievously troubled with them, or those of the head, it argues they are melancholy, à toto corporis. The fumes which arise from this corrupt blood, disturb the mind, and make them fearful and sorrowful, heavy hearted as the rest, dejected, discontented, solitary, silent, weary of their lives, dull and heavy, or merry, &c., and if far gone, that which Apuleius wished to his enemy, by way of imprecation, is true in them; "Dead men's bones, hobgoblins, ghosts, are ever in their minds, and meet them still in every turn: all the bugbears of the night, and terrors, fairy-babes of tombs, and graves are before their eyes, and in their thoughts, as to women and children, if they be in the dark alone." If they hear, or read, or see any tragical object, it sticks by them, they are afraid of death, and yet weary of their lives, in their discontented humours they quarrel with all the world, bitterly inveigh, tax satirically, and because they cannot otherwise vent their passions or redress what is amiss, as they mean, they will by violent death at last be revenged on themselves.

**SUBSECT. IV.—Symptoms of Maids, Nuns, and Widows' Melancholy.**

Because Lodovicus Mercatus in his second book *de mulier. affect. cap. 4. and Rodericus à Castro de morb. mulier. cap. 3. lib. 2. two famous physicians

---

*Symptoms of Women's Melancholy.*

271

---

*Hypochondriac maxime affectant colera, et multiplicatur colera in ipsis, có quod ventositates multipli-
chrorum terminaculis.
in Spain, Daniel Sennertus of Wittenberg, lib. 1. part. 2. cap. 13. with others, have vouchsafed in their works, not long since published, to write two just treatises de Melancholie Virginum, Momialium et Viduarum, as a particular species of melancholy (which I have already specified) distinct from the rest; (for it much differs from that which commonly befalls men and other women, as having one only cause proper to women alone) I may not omit in this general survey of melancholy symptoms, to set down the particular signs of such parties so misaffected.

The causes are assigned out of Hippocrates, Cleopatra, Moschion, and those old Gynaeorum Scriptores, of this feral malady, in more ancient maids, widows, and barren women, ob septum transversum violatum, saith Mercatus, by reason of the midriff or Diaphragma, heart and brain offended with those vicious vapours which come from menstrual blood, inflammationem arteriae circa dorsum, Rodericus adds, an inflammation of the back, which with the rest is offended by "that fuliginous exhalation of corrupt seed, troubling the brain, heart and mind; the brain, I say, not in essence, but by consent, Universa enim hujus affectus causa ab utero pendet, et a sanguinis menstrui malitia, for in a word, the whole malady proceeds from that inflammation, putridity, black smoky vapours, &c., from thence comes care, sorrow, and anxiety, obfuscation of spirits, agony, desperation, and the like, which are intended or remitted; si amatorius accessorit ordor, or any other violent object or perturbation of mind. This melancholy may happen to widows, with much care and sorrow, as frequently it doth, by reason of a sudden alteration of their accustomed course of life, &c. To such as lie in childbed ob suppressam purgationem; but to nuns and many ancient maids, and some barren women for the causes aforesaid, tis more familiar, crebris his quam religio accidit, inquit Rodericus, the rest are not altogether excluded.

Out of these causes Rodericus defines it with Areteus, to be angorem animi, a vexation of the mind, a sudden sorrow from a small, light, or no occasion, a with a kind of still dotage and grief of some part or other, head, heart, breasts, sides, back, belly, &c., with much solitariness, weeping, distraction, &c., from which they are sometimes suddenly delivered, because it comes and goes by fits, and is not so permanent as other melancholy.

But to leave this brief description, the most ordinary symptoms be these, pulsatio juxta dorsum, a beating about the back, which is almost perpetual, the skin is many times rough, squalid, especially, as Areteus observes, about the arms, knees, and knuckles. The midriff and heart-strings do burn and beat very fearfully, and when this vapour or fume is stirred, flieth upward, the heart itself beats, is sore grieved, and faints, fauces siccitate precluctantur, ut difficulter possit ab uteri strangulatione decerni, like fits of the mother, Alvis plerisque vid redditi, aliis exignum, ocre, biliosum, lotium flavum. They complain many times, saith Mercatus, of a great pain in their heads, about their hearts, and hypochondries, and so likewise in their breasts, which are often sore, sometimes ready to swoon, their faces are inflamed, and red, they are dry, thirsty, suddenly hot, much troubled with wind, cannot sleep, &c. And from thence proceed ferina deliramenti, a brutish kind of dotage, troublesome sleep, terrible dreams in the night, subrasticus puder et verecundia ignava, a foolish kind of bashfulness to some, perverse conceits and opinions, b dejection

1 Differt enim ab ea quae viris et religiosis feminis communitatis contingit, propriam habens causam. 2 Ex mensuri sanguinis tetra ad cor et cerebrum exhalatione, vitiatum semen mente perturbat, &c. non per essentiam sed per concinxum. Animus moruntas et animas inde malum trahit, et spiritus cerebrum obsitcuntur, quae cuteta augmentur, &c. 3 Cum taceat delirio ac dolore aliqual furtus intus, &c. in medicina haec prorsus toleranda est. 4 Cum aliqua eruptione sanguinis evoluta, &c. non autem affectis parte externa, animus delectis, &c. 5 Animis dejecti, perversa rerum existimatione, pretiosissimum judicium. Fastidiosos, languentes, tides, comminique, lachrymosos, timentes, meentes, cum summa rerum mollerorum desperatione, nulla re detectantur, solitudinem amant, &c.
of mind, much discontent, preposterous judgment. They are apt to loathe, dislike, disdain, to be weary of every object, &c., each thing almost is tedious to them, they pine away, void of counsel, apt to weep, and tremble, timorous, fearful, sad, and out of all hope of better fortunes. They take delight in nothing for the time, but love to be alone and solitary, though that do them more harm: and thus they are affected so long as this vapour lasteth; but by-and-by as pleasant and merry as ever they were in their lives, they sing, discourse, and laugh in any good company, upon all occasions, and so by fits it takes them now and then, except the malady be inveterate, and then "tis more frequent, vehement, and continue. Many of them cannot tell how to express themselves in words, or how it holds them, what airs all, you cannot understand them, or well tell what to make of their sayings; so far gone sometimes, so stupidified and distracted, they think themselves bewitched, they are in despair, aptec ad flatum, desperationem, dlores mammae et hypochondrius. Mercatus therefore adds, now their breasts, now their hypochondrieties, belly and sides, then their heart and head aches, now heat, then wind, now this, now that offends, they are weary of all; and yet will not, cannot again tell how, where or what offends them, though they be in great pain, agony, and frequently complain, grieving, sighing, weeping, and discontented still, sine causa manifesta, most part, yet I say they will complain, grudge, lament, and not be persuaded, but that they are troubled with an evil spirit, which is frequent in Germany, saith Rodericus, amongst the common sort: and to such as are most grievously affected (for he makes three degrees of this disease in women), they are in despair, surely forespoken or bewitched, and in extremity of their dotage (weary of their lives), some of them will attempt to make away themselves. Some think they see visions, confer with spirits and devils, they shall surely be damned, are afraid of some treachery, imminent danger, and the like, they will not speak, make answer to any question, but are almost distracted, mad, or stupid for the time, and by fits: and thus it holds them, as they are more or less affected, and as the inner humour is intended or remitted, or by outward objects and perturbations aggravated, solitariness, idleness, &c.

Many other maladies there are incident to young women, out of that one and only causes above specified, many feral diseases. I will not so much as mention their names, melancholy alone is the subject of my present discourse, from which I will not swerve. The several cures of this infirmity, concerning diet, which must be very sparing, phlebotomy, physic, internal, external remedies, are at large in great variety in Rodericus à Castro, Sennertus, and Mercatus, which whose will, as occasion serves, may make use of. But the best and surest remedy of all, is to see them well placed, and married to good husbands in due time, hinc illo lachryme, that is the primary cause, and this the ready cure, to give them content to their desires. I write not this to patronise any wanton, idle flirt, lascivious or light housewives, which are too forward many times, unruly, and apt to cast away themselves on him that comes next, without all care, counsel, circumcision, and judgment. If religion, good discipline, honest education, wholesome exhortation, fair promises, fame and loss of good name, cannot inhibit and deter such (which to chaste and sober maids cannot choose but avail much), labour and exercise, strict diet, rigour and threats, may more opportunely be used, and are able of themselves to qualify and divert an ill-disposed temperament. For seldom should you see an hired servant, a poor handmaid, though ancient, that is kept hard to her work, and bodily labour, a coarse country wench troubled in this kind, but noble virgins,

---

6 Nolunt aperire molestiam quam patiuntur, sed conqueruntur tenem de capite, corde, mammae, &c. In putoeos fere manaci prodri, ac strangulati capiunt, nullas ortiones sanitatis recuperandum erit, &c. Familiases non cunctant, non loquantur, non respondunt, &c., et hae graviora, si, &c.

4 Clistero et Hellenobismami Mathioli summae laudati.
nice gentlewomen, such as are solitary and idle, live at ease, lead a life out of action and employment, that fare well, in great houses and jovial companies, ill disposed peradventure of themselves, and not willing to make any resistance, discontented otherwise, of weak judgment, able bodies, and subject to passions, (grandiores virgines, saith Mercatus, stortes et vidua plerumque melancholique), such for the most part are misaffected, and prone to this disease. I do not so much pity them that may otherwise be eased, but those alone that out of a strong temperament, innate constitution, are violently carried away with this torrent of inward humours, and though very modest of themselves, sober, religious, virtuous, and well given (as many so distressed maids are), yet cannot make resistance, these grievances will appear, this malady will take place, and now manifestly show itself, and may not otherwise be helped. But where am I? Into what subject have I rushed? What have I to do with nuns, maids, virgins, widows? I am a bachelor myself, and lead a monastic life in a college, me ego sane ineptus qui hac dixerim, I confess 'tis an indecorum, and as Pallas a virgin blushed, when Jupiter by chance spake of love matters in her presence, and turned away her face; me reprimum, though my subject necessarily require it, I will say no more.

And yet I must and will say something more, add a word or two in gradium Virginum et Viduarum, in favour of all such distressed parties, in commiseration of their present estate. And as I cannot choose but condole their mishap that labour of this infirmity, and are destitute of help in this case, so must I needs inveigh against them that are in fault, more than manifest causes, and as bitterly tax those tyrannising pseudo-politicians superstitious orders, rash vows, hard-hearted parents, guardians, unnatural friends, allies (call them how you will), those careless and stupid overseers, that out of worldly respects, covetousness, supine negligence, their own private ends (cum sibi sit interim bene) can so severely reject, stubbornly neglect, and implausibly condemn, without all remorse and pity, the tears, sighs, groans, and grievous miseries of such poor souls committed to their charge. How odious and abominable are those superstitious and rash vows of Popish monasteries! so to bind and enslave men and women to vow virginity, to lead a single life, against the laws of nature, opposite to religion, policy, and humanity, so to starve, to offer violence, to suppress the vigour of youth by rigorous statutes, severe laws, vain persuasions, to debar them of that to which by their innate temperature they are so furiously inclined, urgently carried, and sometimes precipitated, even irresistibly led, to the prejudice of their soul’s health, and good estate of body and mind: and all for base and private respects, to maintain their gross superstition, to enrich themselves and their territories, as they falsely suppose, by hindering some marriages, that the world be not full of beggars, and their parishes pestered with orphans; stupid politicians, haecine fieri flagitio? ought these things so to be carried? better marry than burn, saith the Apostle, but they are otherwise persuaded. They will by all means quench their neighbour’s house if it be on fire, but that fire of lust which breaks out into such lamentable flames, they will not take notice of: their own bowels oftentimes, flesh and blood shall so rage and burn, and they will not see it: miserum est, saith Austin, seipsum non miserescere, and they are miserable in the mean time that cannot pity themselves, the common good of all, and per consequens their own estates. For let them but consider what fearful maladies, feral diseases, gross inconveniences, come to both sexes by this enforced temperance, it troubles me to think of, much more to relate those frequent abortions and murdering of infants in their nunneries (read * Kemnitus and others), their notorious fornications, those Spintrias, Tribadas, Ambubeias, &c., those rapes, incests, adulteries, masturbations.

*Examen conc. Trident. de calibatu sacerd.
Causes

275

Fracastorius, Valesius, if and "Intemperies facit the cap. cloud. Bright, ventri. Averroes I Ut intrepidi. patronise vi, humor blood Arabians doth then men furious, de • which fictions and most think, symptoms, to give their substance a materia, Melici, ordinai-y exhalant. de constros. Priapis. Constantinus, Saxonia, diaphragma Melanch. for Constantinus, melancholy, melancholy, melanc. ob oftenscat. Constantinus, lib. de melan. Ilemb. Ilemb. 1. 6. 5. 2. 3. Peter Porestus, Porestus, &c., 3. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 2. 3. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1. 5. 6. 7. 5. 2. 1.

MEMB. III.

Immediate cause of these precedent Symptoms.

To give some satisfaction to melancholy men that are troubled with these symptoms, a better means in my judgment cannot be taken, than to show them the causes whence they proceed; not from devils as they suppose, or that they are bewitched or forsaken of God, hear or see, &c., as many of them think, but from natural and inward causes, that so knowing them, they may better avoid the effects, or at least endure them with more patience. The most grievous and common symptoms are fear and sorrow, and that without a cause to the wisest and discreetest men, in this malady not to be avoided. The reason why they are so Aëtius discuseth at large, Tetrabib. 2. 2. in his first problem out of Galen, lib. 2. de causis symptom. 1. For Galen imputeth all to the cold that is black, and thinks that the spirits being darkened, and the substance of the brain cloudy and dark, all the objects thereof appear terrible, and the 'mind itself, by those dark, obscure, gross fumes, ascending from black humour, is in continual darkness, fear, and sorrow; divers terrible monstrous fictions in a thousand shapes and apparitions occur, with violent passions, by which the brain and phantasy are troubled and eclipsed. Fracastorius, lib. 2, de intellect. "will have cold to be the cause of fear and sorrow; for such as are cold are ill-disposed to mirth, dull, and heavy, by nature solitary, silent; and not for any inward darkness (as physicians think) for many melancholy men dare boldly be, continue, and walk in the dark, and delight in it:” solum frigid: timidi: if they be hot, they are merry; and the more hot, the more furious, and void of fear, as we see in madmen; but this reason holds not, for then no melancholy, proceeding from choler adjut, should fear. Averroes scoffs at Galen for his reasons, and brings five arguments to repel them: so doth Here. de Saxonii, Tract. de Melanch. cap. 3. assigning other causes, which are copiously censured and contaminated by Aëtius Montaltus, cap. 5 and 6, Lod. Mercatus de Interv. morb. cur. lib. 1. cap. 17, Altemarius, cap. 7. de med., Guianerius, tract. 15. cap. 1, Bright, cap. 37, Laurentius, cap. 5, Valesius, med. cont. lib. 5, con. 1. "Distemperature," they conclude, "makes black juice, blackness obscures the spirits, the spirits obscured, cause fear and sorrow." Laurentius, cap. 13. supposeth these black fumes offend specially the diaphragma or midriff, and so per consequens the mind, which is obscured as the sun by a cloud. To this opinion of Galen, almost all the Greeks and Arabians subscribe, the Latinus new and old, interna tenet ob officiant animum, ut externae nocent pueros, as children are affrighted in the dark, so are melancholy men at all times, as having the inward cause with them, and still carrying it about. Which black vapours, whether they proceed from the black blood about the heart, as T. W. Jes. thinks in his Treatise of the passions of sodomies, buggeries of monks and friars. See Bale's visitation of abbey, ‘Mercurialis, Rodericus à Castro, Peter Forestus, and divers physicians; I know their ordinary apologies and excuses for these things, sed viderint Politi- tici, Medici, Theologi, I shall more opportunely meet with them else where. "Ilius videre, ant patronum Virginis hujus, No me forte putes, voc. bun non amplius addam."

Mem. 3. ]

Causes of these Symptoms.

275

‘Cap. de Satyr. et PriapLS. 2 Part. 3. sect. 2. Memob. 5. Subh. 5. 3 Lest you may imagine that I patronise that widow or this virgin, I shall not add another word. 4Vapores crusad et nigri, a ventri- culo in cerebrum exhalant. Fel. Platerus. 5 Calidi hilaris, frigidis indispositi ad hibernationem, et hideo solitarii, taciturni, non ob tenebras internas, ut medici volunt, sed ob frigus: multis melancholicis noce ambulant interpidi. 6Vapores melancholici, spiritibus misti, tenerebrum cause sunt, cap. 1. 8Intemperie furti- suecuri nigras, algeriae obscurat spiritum, obscurato spiritibus factis metum et tristitiam. 9Urnabeculae Solomon offuscat. Constantinus, lib. de melanch. 10Altemarius, c. 7. Causa timoris circumfert etur humor passionis materia, et atri spiritus perpetae animae domiciellio offuscatum occultum.
the mind, or stomach, spleen, midriff, or all the misaffected parts together, it
boots not, they keep the mind in a perpetual dungeon, and oppress it with 
continual fears, anxieties, sorrows, &c. It is an ordinary thing for such as are 
sound to laugh at this dejected pusillanimity, and those other symptoms of 
melancholy, to make themselves merry with them, and to wonder at such, as 
toys and trifles, which may be resisted and withstood, if they will themselves:
but let him that so wonders, consider with himself, that if a man should tell
him on a sudden, some of his especial friends were dead, could he choose but 
grieve? Or set him upon a steep rock, where he should be in danger to be 
precipitated, could he be secure? His heart would tremble for fear, and his 
head be giddy. P. Byar, Tract. depest. gives instance (as I have said) "and 
put case (saith he) in one that walks upon a plank, if it lie on the ground, he
can safely do it: but if the same plank be laid over some deep water, instead 
of a bridge, he is vehemently moved, and 'tis nothing but his imagination,
forma cadendi impressa, to which his other members and faculties obey." 
Yea, but you infer, that such men have a just cause to fear, a true object of 
fear; so have melancholy men an inward cause, a perpetual fume and dark-
ness, causing fear, grief, suspicion, which they carry with them, an object 
which cannot be removed; but sticks as close, and is as inseparable as a 
shadow to a body, and who can expel or overrun his shadow? Remove heat 
of the liver, a cold stomach, weak spleen: remove those adust humours and 
vapours arising from them, black blood from the heart, all outward perturba-
tious, take away the cause, and then bid them not grieve nor fear, or be heavy,
dull, lumpish, otherwise counsel can do little good; you may as well bid him 
that is sick of an ague not to be a-dry; or him that is wounded not to feel pain.

Suspicion follows fear and sorrow at heels, arising out of the same fountain,
so thinks Fracastorius, "that fear is the cause of suspicion, and still they 
suspect some treachery, or some secret machination to be framed against them,
still they distrust." Restlessness proceeds from the same spring, variety of 
fumes make them like and dislike. Solitariness, avoiding of light, that they 
are weary of their lives, hate the world, arise from the same causes, for their 
spirits and humours are opposite to light, fear makes them avoid company, and 
absent themselves, lest they should be misused, hissed at, or overshoot them-
selves, which still they suspect. They are prone to venery by reason of wind. 

Angry, waspish, and fretting still, out of abundance of choler, which causeth 
fearful dreams and violent perturbations to them, both sleeping and waking: 
That they suppose they have no heads, fly, sink, they are pots, glasses, &c., is 
wind in their heads. Herc. de Saxoniâ doth ascribe this to the several 
motions in the animal spirits, "their dilation, contraction, confusion, alteration,
tenebrosity, hot or cold distemperature," excluding all material humours. 
Fracastorius "accounts it a thing worthy of inquisition, why they should 
entertain such false conceits, as that they have horns, great noses, that they 
are birds, beasts," &c., why they should think themselves kings, lords, cardini-
als. For the first, Fracastorius gives two reasons: "One is the disposition 
of the body; the other, the occasion of the phantasy," as if their eyes be pur-
blind, their ears sing, by reason of some cold and rheum, &c. To the second, 
Laurentius answers, the imagination inwardly or outwardly moved, represents 
to the understanding, not enticements only, to favour the passion or dislike,
but a very intensive pleasure follows the passion or displeasure, and the will 
and reason are captivated by delighting in it.

Pone exemplum, quod quis potest ambulare super trabem qua est in via: sed si sit super aquam pro-
fundum, loco pontis, non ambulabit super eam, non quod imaginetur in animo et timet vehementer, forma 
cadendi impressa, cui obflectat membra omnia, et facultates reliquae. Lib. 2. de intellect. Suspirat 
ob timorem et obliquum disserat, et semper inde putant ab eis insidias. Lauren. s. Tract. de 
mal. cap. 7. Ex dilatione, contractione, confusione, tenebroseitate spiritum, calida, frigida intemperie, &c.
Ilard inquisitione dignum, cur tam falsa recipiunt, habet se cornua, eas mortuos, nasutos, esse aves, &c.
1. Dispositio corporis. 2. Occasio imaginations.
Causes of these Symptoms.

Why students and lovers are so often melancholy and mad, the philosopher of "Coimbra assigns this reason, "because by a vehement and continual meditation of that wherewith they are affected, they fetch up the spirits into the brain, and with the heat brought with them, they ascend it beyond measure; and the cells of the inner senses dissolve their temperature, which being dissolved, they cannot perform their offices as they ought."

Why melancholy men are witty, which Aristotle hath long since maintained in his problems; and that "all learned men, famous philosophers, and law-givers, ad unum ferò omnes melancholici, have still been melancholy, is a problem much controverted. Jason Pratensis will have it understood of natural melancholy, which opinion Melancthon inclines to, in his book de Anima, and Marcellus Ficinus, de san. ius. lib. 1. cap. 5. but not simple, for that makes men stupid, heavy, dull, being cold and dry, fearful, fools, and solitary, but mixed with the other humors, phlegm only excepted; and they not adust, but so mixed as that blood be half, with little or no adustion, that they be neither too hot nor too cold. Apponensis, cited by Melancthon, thinks it proceeds from melancholy adust, excluding all natural melancholy as too cold. Laurentius condemns his tenet, because adustion of humours makes men mad, as lime burns when water is cast on it. It must be mixed with blood, and somewhat adust, and so that old aphorism of Aristotle may be verified, Nihilum magnum ingenium sine mixtura dementia, no excellent wit without a mixture of madness. Fracastorius shall decide the controversy, "phlegmatic are dull: sanguine lively, pleasant, acceptable, and merry, but not witty: choleric are too swift in motion, and furious, impatient of contemplation, deceitful wits: melancholy men have the most excellent wits, but not all; this humour may be hot or cold, thick or thin; if too hot, they are furious and mad: if too cold, dull, stupid, timorous, and sad: if temperate, excellent, rather inclining to that extreme of heat, than cold."

This sentence of his will agree with that of Heraclitus, a dry light makes a wise mind, temperate heat and dryness are the chief causes of a good wit: therefore, saith Aelian, an elephant is the wisest of all brute beasts, because his brain is driest, et ob atrar bilis copiama: this reason Cardan approves, subtil. l. 12. Jo. Baptista Silvaticus, a physician of Milan, in his first controversy, hath copiously handled this question: Rulandus in his problems, Celsius Rhodiginus, lib. 17, Vallerola 6° narrat. med., Herc. de Saxoio, Tract. posth. de mel. cap. 3, Lodovicius Mercatus, de Inter. morb. cur. lib. 1. cap. 17, Baptista Porta, Physic. lib. 1. c. 13, and many others.

Weeping, sighing, laughing, itching, trembling, sweating, blushing, hearing and seeing strange noises, visions, wind, crudity, are motions of the body, depending upon these precedent motions of the mind: neither are tears, affections, but actions (as Scaliger holds) "the voice of such as are afraid, trembles, because the heart is shaken," (Comim. prob. 6. sec. 3. de som.) why they stutter or falter in their speech, Mercurialis and Montaltus, cap. 17, give like reasons out of Hippocrates, "dryness, which makes the nerves of the tongue torpid." Fast speaking (which is a symptom of some few) Ætius will have caused "from abundance of wind, and swiftness of imagination: baldness comes from excess of dryness," hirsuteness from a dry temperature. The cause of much making in a dry brain, continual meditation, discontent, fears and cares, that suffer not the mind to be at rest, incontinency is from wind, and a hot liver, Montanus, cons. 26. Rumbling in the guts is caused from wind, and

"In pro. II. de colo. Vehemens et asidua cogitatio rerum quam afflectur, spiritus in cerebrum evcent.
"Melancholici ingeniosi omnes, summam viri in artibus et disciplinis, sive cernens imperatorum aut resp. discipulam omnes ferò melanclolithio. Aristoteles."
"Adeo miscentur, ut si duplum sanguis ad reliquum omo."
"Lib. 2. de intellectuone. Pingu sunt Minerva phlegmatici: sanguinel amabilis, grati, bilare et non ingeniosi; cholericel cereles morta, et ob id contemplationes impatientes: Melancholici solutum excellentes, &c."
"Trepidantur vox tremula, qui quorquitatem."
"Ob ariditatem quod reddit nervos linianu torpidos."
"Incontinentia linguae ex copia flatuus, et velocitate imaginantium."
"Gutibus ob aesculapium excessum."
Symptoms of Melancholy.

Part 1. Sec. 3.

wind from ill concoction, weakness of natural heat, or a distempered heat and cold; 1 palpitation of the heart from vapours, heaviness and aching from the same cause. That the belly is hard, wind is a cause, and of that leaping in many parts. Redness of the face, and itching, as if they were fleas-bitten, or stung with pismires, from a sharp subtle wind. 2 Cold sweat from vapours arising from the hypochondries, which pitch upon the skin; leanness for want of good nourishment. Why their appetite is so great, 6 Etius answers: Os ventris frigescit, cold in those inner parts, cold belly, and hot liver, causeth crudity, and intention proceeds from perturbations, our souls for want of spirits cannot attend exactly to so many intentive operations, being exhaust, and overswayed by passion, she cannot consider the reasons which may dissuade her from such affections.

1 Bashfulness and blushing is a passion proper to men alone, and is not only caused for some shame and ignominy, or that they are guilty unto themselves of some foul fact committed, but as Præcastorius well determines, ob defectum proprium, et timorem, "from fear, and a conceit of our defects; the face labours and is troubled at his presence that sees our defects, and nature, willing to help, sends thither heat, heat draws the subtilest blood, and so we blush. They that are bold, arrogant, and careless, seldom or never blush, but such as are fearful." Anthonius Lodovicius, in his book de pudore, will have this subtile blood to arise in the face, not so much for the reverence of our better in presence, "but for joy and pleasure, or if any thing at unwares shall pass from us, a sudden accident, occurse, or meeting;" (which Disarius in "Macrobius confirms) any object heard or seen, for blind men never blush, as Dandinus observes, the night and darkness make them impudent. Or that we be staid before our better, or in company, it not, or if any thing molest and offend us, eru- beantia turns to rubor, blushing to a continue redness. 6 Sometimes the extremity of the ears tingle, and are red, sometimes the whole face, Esi nihil vitiosum commiseris, as Lodovicius holds: though Aristotle is of opinion, omnis pudor ex vito commissus, all shame for some offence. But we find otherwise, it may as well proceed from fear, from force and inexperience (so Dandinus holds), as vice; a hot liver, saith Duretus (notis in Hollarium:) "from a hot brain, from wind, the lungs heated, or after drinking of wine, strong drink, perturbations, &c.

"Laughter, what it is," saith Tully, "how caused, where, and so suddenly breaks out, that desire to stay it, we cannot, how it comes to possess and stir our face, veins, eyes, countenance, mouth, sides, let Democritus determine." The cause that it often affects melancholy men so much, is given by Gommeius, lib. 3. de sale genial. cap. 18. abundance of pleasaz vapours, which, in sanguine melancholy especially, break because of the heart, "and tickle the meddred, because it is transverse and full of nerves: by which titillation, the sense being moved, and arteries distended or pulled, the spirits from thence move and possess the sides, veins, countenance, eyes." See more in Jossius de risu et flēr., Voces 3 de Animā. Tears, as Scaliger defines, proceed from grief and pity, "or from the heating of a moist brain, for a dry cannot weep."

That they see and hear so many phantasms, chimeras, noises, visions, &c.,

1 Etius. 2 Laurent. c. 13. 3 Tetrab. 2. ser. 2. cap. 10. 4 Ant. Lodovicius, probe. lib. 1. sect. 5. de astrallarīs. 5 Subastricus pudor vitiosus pudor. 5 Ob ignominiam aut turbidum factum, &c. 6 De sympathet. et Antip. cap. 12 labor fatui ob præsentiam enim qui defectum nostrum videt, at natura quasi opena latura calorem illius mittit, calor sanguinem trahit, unde rubor, audaces non Ruben, &c. 7 Ob gaudium at et voluptatem foris exit sanguis, aut ob meiosis reverientiam, aut ob subitum oeconom, aut si quid ingenti excitati. 8 Com. in Arist. de anima. Cuculi ut plurimum impudicentis, nec facit Impudicentia. 9 Alexander Apuleiuscissis makes all bashfulnes a virtus, canque se robor in seipso expertis soltam, cre est admodum senex. 10 Epist post dium apti ad ruborem, ex potvi vinae, ex timore sapit et ad hats caldo, cerebro calo, &c. 11 Com. in Arist. de anima, tam a vi et inexperientia quam a vito. 12 De oratore. quid lipo risus, quo pacto concludit, ubi sit, &c. 13 Diaphragnas titillat, quia transversum et longum. quia tumultus minime sensus aqua arteriae diversitatis, spiritus inae late, veras, os, oculos occupat. 14 Ex caldulcine humilii cerebri: nam ex seco lachrymne non fluit.
Causes of these Symptoms.

as Fienus hath discoursed at large in his book of imagination, and *Lavater de spectris, part. 1. cap. 2, 3, 4. their corrupt phantasy makes them see and hear that which indeed is neither heard nor seen, Qui meditant jejunaut, aut noctes ducent insomnes, they that much fast, or want sleep, as melancholy or sick men commonly do, see visions, or such as are weak-sighted, very timorous by nature, mad, distracted, or earnestly seek. Sahini quod volunt somniari, as the saying is, they dream of that they desire. Like Sarmiento the Spaniard, who when he was sent to discover the straits of Magellan, and confine places, by the Prorex of Peru, standing on the top of a hill, Amausalmissam plantien despicerre sibi visum fuit, edification magna, quamplurimos Pasgos, altas Turres, splendida Templia, and brave cities, built like ours in Europe, not, saith mine *author, that there was any such thing, but that he was vanis-simus et nimis credulus, and would have had it so. Or as *Lod. Mercatus proves, by reason of inward vapours, and humour from blood, choler, &c., diversely mixed, they apprehend and see outwardly, as they suppose, divers images, which indeed are not. As they that drink wine think all runs round, when it is in their own brain; so is it with these men, the fault and cause is inward, as Galen affirms, mad men and such as are near death, quae extra se videre putant Imagines, intra oculos habent, 'tis in their brain, which seems to be before them; the brain as a conave glass reflects solid bodies. Senes etiam decrepitati cerebro habent concavum et aridum, ut imaginatur se videre (saith *Boissardus) quae non sunt, old men are too frequently mistaken and dote in like case: or as he that looketh through a piece of red glass, judgeth everything he seeth to be red; corrupt vapours mounting from the body to the head, and distilling again from thence to the eyes, when they have mingled themselves with the watery crystal which receiveth the shadows of things to be seen, make all things appear of the same colour, which remains in the humour that overspreads our sight, as to melancholy men all is black, to phlegmatic all white, &c. Or else as before the organs, corrupt by a corrupt phantasy, as Lemins, lib. 1. cap. 16. well quotes, *"cause a great agitation of spirits, and humours, which wander to and fro in all the crevices of the brain, and cause such apparitions before their eyes." One thinks he reads something written in the moon, as Pythagoras is said to have done of old, another smells brimstone, hears Cerberus back: Orestes now mad supposed he saw the furies tormenting him, and his mother still ready to run upon him—

"O mater obscuris noli me persequi,
His furis, aspectus angustiis, horribilibus,
Ecce ecce me invadunt, in me: jann runit;" * but Electra told him thus raving in his mad fit, he saw no such sights at all, it was but his crazed imagination.

"Quiesco, quiesce miser in lustulis tuis,
Non cerea estenin qua videber te putas." *

So Penteus (in Bacchis Euripidis) saw two suns, two Thebes, his brain alone was troubled. Sickness is an ordinary cause of such sights. Cardan, subtil. 8. Mens egra laboribus et jejunnis fracta, facit eos videre, audire, &c. And Os-ander beheld strange visions, and Alexander ab Alexandre both, in their sickness, which he relates de rerum varietat. lib. 8. cap. 44. Albatgiinus that noble Arabian, on his death-bed, saw a ship ascending and descending, which Fracastorius records of his friend Baptista Tirrianus. Weak sight and a vain persuasion withal, may effect as much, and second causes concurring, as an our

* Res mirandae imaginatur: et putant se videre que nescit, nec audiat. ** Lact. lib. 13. cap. 2, descript. India Occident. *** Lib. 1. ca. 17. cap. de mel. **** Insani, et qui meri vidit sunt, res quas extra se videre putant, intra oculos habent. ***** Cap. 10. de Spirit. apparition. **** De occult. Nat. mirac. "O mother! I beseech you not to persecute me with those horrible-looking furies. See! see! they attack, they assault me!" "Peace! peace! unhappy being, for you do not see what you think you see."
in water makes a refraction, and seems bigger, bended, double, &c. The thick-
ness of the air may cause such effects, or any object not well discerned in the
dark, fear and phantasy will suspect to be a ghost, a devil, &c. *Quod
nimis miseri timent, hoc facile credunt, we are apt to believe, and mistake
in such cases. Marcellus Donatus, lib. 2. cap. 1. brings in a story out of Aristotle,
of one Antepharon which likely saw, wheresoever he was, his own image in the air,
as in a glass. Vitellio, lib. 10. perspect. hath such another instance of a
familiar acquaintance of his, that after the want of three or four nights' sleep,
as he was riding by a river side, saw another riding with him, and using all
such gestures as he did, but when more light appeared, it vanished. Eremites
and anchorites have frequently such absurd visions, revelations by reason of
much fasting, and bad diet, many are deceived by legerdemain, as Scot hath
well showed in his book of the discovery of witchcraft, and Cardan, subtil. 18.
suffites, perfumes, suffumigations, mixed candles, perspective glasses, and such
natural causes, make men look as if they were dead, or with horse-heads,
bulls'-horns, and such like brutish shapes, the room full of snakes, adders, dark,
light, green, red, of all colours, as you may perceive in Baptista Porta, Alexis,
Albertus, and others, glow-worms, fire-drakes, meteors, Ignis fatuus, which
Plinius, lib. 2. cap. 37. calls Castor and Pollux, with many such that appear
in moorish grounds, about churchyards, moist valleys, or where battles have
been fought, the causes of which read in Godenius, Velourius, Finkius, &c.,
such fears are often done, to frighten children with squibs, rotten wood, &c.,
to make folks look as if they were dead, *solito majores, bigger, lesser, fairier,
fouler, ut astantes sine capitis videantur; aut toti igniti, aut forma demonum,
aeipe pilos canis nigrum, &c., saith Albertus; and so 'tis ordinary to see strange
uncoath sights by catoptries; who knows not that if in a dark room, the light
be admitted at one only little hole, and a paper or glass put upon it, the sun
shining, will represent on the opposite wall all such objects as are illuminated
by his rays? with concave and cylinder glasses, we may reflect any shape of
men, devils, antics (as magicians most part do, to gull a silly spectator in a
dark room), we will ourselves, and that hanging in the air, when 'tis nothing
but such an horrible image as * Agrrippa demonstrates, placed in another room.
Roger Bacon of old is said to have represented his own image walking in the
air by this art, though no such thing appear in his perspectives. But most
part it is in the brain that deceives them, although I may not deny, but that
oftentimes the devil deludes them, takes his opportunity to suggest, and repre-
sent vain objects to melancholy men, and such as are ill-affected. To these
you may add the knavis impostures of jugglers, exorcists, mass-priests, and
mountebanks, of whom Roger Bacon speaks, &c., de miraculis naturae et artis,
cap. 1. *they can counterfeit the voices of all birds and brute beasts almost,
all tones and tunes of men, and speak within their throats, as if they spoke
afar off, that they make their auditors believe they hear spirits, and are thence
much astonished and affrighted with it. Besides, those artificial devices to
over-hear their confessions, like that whispering place of Gloucester1 with us,
or like the duke's place at Mantua in Italy, where the sound is reverberated
by a concave wall; a reason of which Blanesius in his Echometria gives, and
mathematically demonstrates.

So that the hearing is as frequently deluded as the sight, from the same
causes almost, as he that hears bells, will make them sound what he list. "As
the fool thinketh, so the bell clinketh." Theophilus in Galen thought he heard
music from vapours, which made his ears sound, &c. Some are deceived by

* Seneca. Quod meditant nimis, varquam amoveri posse, nec tolli patatur.
* Sangnis upeos cum multis compositus et centareus, &c. Albertus.
* Lib. 1. occult. philos. Imperitibus homines demonum et umbrarum imaginibus videre se patuant, quum nihil sint aliud, quam simulacra animae expressi.
* Pyhonomas vocum variatatem in ventre et guttura tingentes, formant voces humanas a longe vel prope prout volunt, ut si spiritus cum homine lequeretur, et sonos brutorum flugunt, &c.
* Gloucester cathedral.
Prognostics of Melancholy.

Echoes, some by roaring of waters, or concaves and reverberation of air in the ground, hollow places and walls. At Cadureum, in Aquitaine, words and sentences are repeated by a strange echo to the full, or whatsoever you shall play upon a musical instrument, more distinctly and louder, than they are spoken at first. Some echoes repeat a thing spoken seven times, as at Olympus, in Macedonia, as Pliny relates, lib. 36, cap. 15. Some twelve times, as at Charenton, a village near Paris, in France. At Delphos, in Greece, heretofore was a miraculous echo, and so in many other places. Cardan, subtil. l. 18, hath wonderful stories of such as have been deluded by these echoes. Blancanus the Jesuit, in his Echometria, hath variety of examples, and gives his reader full satisfaction of all such sounds by way of demonstration. At Barrey, an isle in the Severn mouth, they seem to hear a smith's forge: so at Lipari, and those sulphurous isles, and many such like which Olaus speaks of in the continent of Scandia, and those northern countries. Cardan, dererum var. l. 15, c. 84, mentioneth a woman, that still supposed she heard the devil call her, and speaking to her, she was a painter's wife in Milan: and many such illusions and voices, which proceed most part from a corrupt imagination.

Whence it comes to pass, that they prophesy, speak several languages, talk of astronomy, and other unknown sciences to them (of which they have been ever ignorant): I have in brief touched, only this I will here add, that Arculanus, Bodin. lib. 3. cap. 6, demon. and some others, hold as a manifest token that such persons are possessed with the devil; so doth Herenolus de Saxonii, and Apponensis, and fit only to be cured by a priest. But Guianerius, Montaltus, Pomponatius of Padua, and Lemnius, lib. 2, cap. 2, refer it wholly to the ill-disposition of the humour, and that out of the authority of Aristotle, prob. 30. 1, because such symptoms are cured by purging; and as by the striking of a flint fire is enforced, so by the vehement motion of spirits, they do elicere voces inauditas, compel strange speeches to be spoken: another argument he hath from Plato's reminiscentia, which all out as likely as that which Marsilii Ficinii speaks of his friend Pierleonus; by a divine kind of infusion he understood the secrets of nature, and tenets of Grecian and barbarian philosophers, before ever he heard of, saw, or read their works: but in this I should rather hold with Aviceana and his associates, that such symptoms proceed from evil spirits, which take all opportunities of humours decayed, or otherwise to pervert the soul of man: and besides, the humour itself is Balneum Diaboli, the devil's bath; and as Agrippa proves, doth entice him to seize upon them.

SECT. IV. MEMB. I.

Prognostics of Melancholy.

Prognostics, or signs of things to come, are either good or bad. If this malady be not hereditary, and taken at the beginning, there is good hope of cure, recens curationem non habet difficilem, saith Aviceana, l. 3, Fen. 1, Tract. 4, c. 18. That which is with laughter, of all others is most secure, gentle, and remiss, Hercules de Saxonii, If that evacuation of hemorrhois, or varices, which they call the water between the skin, shall happen to a melan-

k Tam clarē et articulatē audieis, repetitum, ut perfectior sit Echo quam ipsa dixerat.
1 Flowing of bellows, and knocking of hammers, if they apply their ear to the cliff.
2 Membr. 1. Sub. 2. of this partition, cap. 16. in 9. Rhasia.
3 Signa daemonis nulla sunt nisi quod loquentur ea quae ante nesciebant, ut Teutonicam aut aliam Idiomam, &c.
4 Cap. 12. tract. de mel.
5 Cap. 15. c. 4.
6 Cap. 9.
7 Miras vis concitat humores, adurque vehemens mentem exagitat, quum, &c.
8 Trabit. Isambii mysteria.
9 Si melancholici hemorrhois supervenirent varices, quod ut quibusdam placet aqua inter eum, solvitur malum.
choly man, his misery is ended," Hippocrates, Aphor. 6. 11. Galen, l. 6, de morbis vulgar. com. §, confirms the same; and to this aphorism of Hippocrates, all the Arabians, new and old Latins subscribe; Montaltus, c. 25, Heracleus de Saxonia, Mercurialis, Vettorius Faventinus, &c. Skenckius, l. 1, observat. med. c. de Manie, illustrates this aphorism, with an example of one Daniel Federer a coppersmith that was long melancholy, and in the end mad, about the 27th year of his age, these varices or water began to arise in his thighs, and he was freed from his madness. Marius the Roman was so cured, some say, though with great pain. Skenckius hath some other instances of women that have been helped by flowing of their months, which before were stopped. That the opening of the hemorroids will do as much for men, all physicians jointly signify, so they be voluntary, some say, and not by compulsion. All melancholy are better after a quartan; a Jobertus saith, scarce any man hath that ague twice; but whether it free him from this malady, 'tis a question; for many physicians ascribe all long agues for especial causes, and a quartan ague amongst the rest. * Raxis, conf. lib. 1, tract. 9. "When melancholy gets out at the superficies of the skin, or settles breaking out in scabs, leprosy, morphew, or is purged by stools, or by the urine, or that the spleen is enlarged, and those varices appear, the disease is dissolved." Guianerius, cap. 5, tract. 15, adds dropsy, jaundice, dysentery, leprosy, as good signs to these scabs, morphews, and breaking out, and proves it out of the 6th of Hippocrates Aphorisms. 

Evil prognostics on the other part. Inveretera melancholia incurabilis, if it be inveretare, it is incurable, a common axiom, aut difficiliter curabilis as they say that make the best, hardly cured. This Galen witnessedeth, l. 3, de loc. affect. cap. 6, "* be it in whom it will, or from what cause soever, it is ever long, onward, tedious, and hard to be cured, if once it be habituated." As Lucian said of the gout, she was "* the queen of diseases, and inexorable," may we say of melancholy. Yet Paracelsus will have all diseases whatsoever curable, and laughs at them which think otherwise, as T. Erastus, par. 3, objects to him; although in another place, hereditary diseases he accounts incurable, and by no art to be removed. Hildesheim, spicel. 2, de mel. holds it less dangerous if only "* imagination be hurt, and not reason, "* the gentlest is from blood. Worse from choler adjut, but the worst of all from melancholy putrefied." * Bruel esteems hypochondriacal least dangerous, and the other two species (opposite to Galen) hardest to be cured. * The cure is hard in man, but much more difficult in women. And both men and women must take notice of that saying of Montanus, consil. 230, pro Abate Italo, "* This malady doth commonly accompany them to their grave; physicians may ease, and it may lie hid for a time, but they cannot quite cure it, but it will return again more violent and sharp than at first, and that upon every small occasion or error:" as in Merceny's weather-beaten statue, that was once all over gilt, the open parts were clean, yet there was in fimbriis aurum, in the chinks a remnant of gold: there will be some relics of melancholy left in the purest bodies (if once tainted) not so easily to be rooted out. * Oftentimes it degenerates into epilepsy, apoplexy, convulsions, and blindness: by the authority of Hippocrates and Galen, 1 all avar, if once it possess the ventricles of the brain, Frambesarius, and Salust. Salvianius adds, if it get into the optic nerves, blindness. Mercuri-
rialis, consil. 20, had a woman to his patient, that from melancholy became epileptic and blind. *If it come from a cold cause, or so continue cold, or increase, epilepsy; convulsions follow; and blindness, or else in the end they are moped, sottish, and in all their actions, speeches, and gestures, ridiculous. *If it come from a hot cause, they are more furious, and boisterous, and in conclusion mad. Calescentem melancholiam sepium sequitur mania. "If it heat and increase, that is the common event, *per circuitus, aut semper insanit, he is mad by fits, or altogether. For as "Sennertus contends out of Crato, there is seminarius ignis in this humour, the very seeds of fire. If it come from melancholy natural adjust, and in excess, they are often demoniacal, Montanus.

"Seldom this malady procures death, except (which is the greatest, most grievous calamity, and the misery of all miseries,) they make away themselves, which is a frequent thing, and familiar amongst them. *Tis *Hippocrates' observation, Galen's sentence: Etsi mortem timent, tamen plerumque sibi ipsi mortem conscient, b. 3. de locis effect. cap. 7. The doom of all physicians. 'Tis *Rabbi Moses' Aphorism, the prognosticon of Avicenna, Rhasis, Etius, Gordonius, Valescus, Altonorus, Salust. Salvianus, Capivaccius, Mercatus, Hercules de Saxonia, Piso, Bruel, Fanchius, all, &c.

"Et sepelisse adeo mortis formidina vitae
Percepit infelix odium lucisque videndae,
Ut sibi consciente marenii pectori lethum." "And so far forth death's terror doth afflict,
He makes away himself, and hates the light:
To make an end of fear and fear of heart,
He voluntary dies to ease his smart.

In such sort doth the torture and extremity of his misery torment him, that he can take no pleasure in his life, but is in a manner enforced to offer violence unto himself, to be freed from his present insufferable pains. So some (saith *Pracastorius) "in fury, but most in despair, sorrow, fear, and out of the anguish and vexation of their souls, offer violence to themselves: for their life is unhappy and miserable. They can take no rest in the night, nor sleep, or if they do slumber, fearful dreams astonish them." "In the day-time they are affrighted still by some terrible object, and torn in pieces with suspicion, fear, sorrow, discontent, cares, shame, anguish, &c., as so many wild horses, that they cannot be quiet an hour, a minute of time, but even against their wills they are intent, and still thinking of it, they cannot forget it, it grinds their souls day and night, they are perpetually tormented, a burden to themselves, as Job was, they can neither eat, drink, or sleep. Psal. cvii. 18. "Their soul abhorreth all meat, and they are brought to death's door, "being bound in misery and iron:"
"they *curse their stars with Job, "and day of their birth, and wish for death:"
"for as Pineda and most interpreters hold, Job was even melancholy to despair; and almost *madness itself; they murmur many times against the world, friends, allies, all mankind, even against God himself in the bitterness of their passion, *vivere nolunt, mari nescient,
live they will not, die they cannot.
And in the midst of these quail, ugly, and such irksome days, they seek at last, finding no comfort, *no remedy in this wretched life, to be eased of all by death. Omnia appetunt bonum, all creatures seek the best, and for their good as they hope, *sub specie, in show at least, *vel quia mori pulchrum putant (saith *Hippocrates) vel quia putant inde se majoribus malis liberari, to be freed from the frying-pan into the fire itself, yet they hope

---

Yea, that which scoffing Lucian said of the gout in jest, I may truly affirm of melancholy in earnest.

No torture of body like unto it, *Siculi non invenere tyranni majus tormentum, non strappadose, hot irosus, Phalaris' bulls,*

---

and a melancholy man is that true Prometheus, which is bound to Caucasus; the true Titius, whose bowels are still by a vulture devoured (as poets feign) for so doth "Lilius Geraldus interpret it, of anxieties, and those gripping cares, and so ought it to be understood. In all other maladies, we seek for help, if a leg or an arm ache, through any distemper or wound, or that we have an ordinary disease, above all things whatsoever, we desire help and health, a present recovery, if by any means possible it may be procured; we will freely part with all our other fortunes, substance, endure any misery, drink bitter potions, swallow those distasteful pills, suffer our joints to be seared, to be cut off, any thing for future health: so sweet, so dear, so precious above all other things in this world is life: "tis that we chiefly desire, long life and happy days, "multos da, Juniper, annos, increase of years all men wish; but to a melancholy man, nothing so tedious, nothing so odious; that which they so carefully seek to preserve "he abhors, he alone; so intolerable are his pains; some make a question, graviores morbi corporis an animi, whether the diseases of the body or mind be more grievous, but there is no comparison, no doubt to be made of it, multò enim scientia longèque est atrocius animi, quam corporis cruciatus (Lem. l. 1. c. 12.) the diseases of the mind are far more grievous.—Totum hic pro vulnere corpus, body and soul is misaffected here, but the soul especially. So Cardan testifies, de rerum var. lib. 8. 40. "Maximus Tyrius a Platonist, and Plutarch, have made just volumes to prove it. "Dies adimit agreditidinem hominibus, in other diseases there is some hope likely, but these unhappy men are born to misery, past all hope of recovery, incurably sick, the longer they live the worse they are, and death alone must ease them.

Another doubt is made by some philosophers, whether it be lawful for a man, in such extremity of pain and grief, to make away himself: and how these men that so do are to be censured. The Platonists approve of it, that it is lawful in such cases, and upon a necessity; Plotinus, l. de beatitud. c. 7. and Socrates himself defends it, in Plato's Phaedon, "if any man labour of an incurable disease, he may despatch himself, if it be to his good." Epicurus and his followers, the cynics and stoics in general, affirm it, Epictetus and "Seneca amongst the rest, quamcumque verum esse vivam ad libertatem, any way is allowable that leads to liberty, "let us give God thanks, that no man is compelled to live against his will;" "quid ad hominem clausura, carcer, custodia? liberum ostium habet, death is always ready and at hand. Vides illum precipitam locum, illud flomen, dost thou see that steep place, that river, that pit, that tree, there's liberty at hand, effugia servitudinis et doloris sunt, as that Laconian lad cast himself headlong (non serviam, aiebat puer) to be freed of his misery: every pain in thy body, if these be nimis operosi exitus, will set thee free, quid tua referuntium iunctus ad accipiant? there's no necessity for a man to live in misery. "Malum est necessitati vivere; sed in necessitate vivere, necessitas nulla est. Ignarus qui sine causa mortur, et subitus qui cum dolore vivit, Idem epi. 58. Wherefore hath our mother the earth brought out poisons, saith "Pliny, in so great a quantity, but that men in distress might make away themselves? which kings of old had ever in a readiness, ad incerta fortune venenum sub custode promptum, Livy writes, and executioners always at hand. Speusippes being sick was met by Diogenes, and, carried on his slaves' shoulers, he made his noen to the philosopher; but I pity thee not, quoth Diogenes, "qui cum talis vivere sustineas, thou mayest be freed when thou wilt, meaning by death. "Seneca therefore commends Cato, Dido, and Lucretia, for their generous courage in so doing, and others that voluntarily die, to avoid a greater

---

9 Vit. Herculis. 9 Persius. 9 Quid est miserius in vita, quam velle mori? Seneca. 9 Tom. 2. Libellus, an graviores passiones, &c. 9 Ter. 9 Patet exitus; si pagan come non vitia, leet fugere; quis vos teten invitio? De provid. cap. 3. 9 Agamus Deo gratias, quod nemo invitio in vita teneri potest. 9 Epist. 36. Seneca et de sacra. 2. cap. 15. et Epist. 70. et 12. 9 Lib. 2. cap. 63. Terra mater nostri miseria. 9 Epist. 34. 71. 22.
mischief, to free themselves from misery, to save their honour, or vindicate their good name, as Cleopatra did, as Sophonisba, Syphax's wife did, Hannibal did, as Junius Brutus, as Vibius Virius, and those Campanian senators in Livy (Dec. 3. lib. 6.) to escape the Roman tyranny, that poisoned themselves. Themistocles drank bull's blood rather than he would fight against his country, and Demostenes chose rather to drink poison, Publius Crassus filius, Censorius and Plancus, those heroic Romans to make away themselves, than to fall into their enemies' hands. How many myriads besides in all ages might I remember, qui sibi istam Insontes peperere manus? & c. *Rhasis in the Macabees is magnified for it, Samson's death approved. So did Saul and Jonas sin, and many worthy men and women, quorum memoria celebratur in Ecclesia, saith *Leminechus, for killing themselves to save their chastity and honour, when Rome was taken, as Austin instances, l. 1. de Civit. Dei, cap. 16. Jerom vindicateth the same in Iunam; et Ambrose, l. 3. de virginitate commendeth Pelagia for so doing. Eusebius, lib. 8. cap. 15. admires a Roman matron for the same fact to save herself from the lust of Maxentius the Tyrant. Adelhelmus, abbot of Malmsbury, calls them Beatas virginum quae sici, &c. Titus Pomponius Atticus, that wise, discreet, renowned Roman senator, Tully's dear friend, when he had been long sick, as he supposed of an incurable disease, vitamque produceret ad augendos dolores, sini spe salutis, was resolved voluntarily by famine to despatch himself to be rid of his pain; and when as Agrippa, and the rest of his weeping friends earnestly besought him, osculataes abscondunt ne id quod natura coget, ipse acceleraret, not to offer violence to himself, "with a settled resolution he desired again they would approve of his good intent, and not seek to deprive him from it:" and so constantly died, precasse eorum tacturn suad obstinatae depessit. Even so did Corellius Rufus, another grave senator, by the relation of Plinius Secundus, epist. lib. 1. epist. 12. famish himself to death; pedibus corruptus cum incredibiles cruciatus et indignissimae tormenta patetur, a cibis omnino abstinent. "Neither he nor Hispila his wife could divert him, but destinatus mori obstinatae magis, &c., die he would, and die he did. So did Lycurgus, Aristotle, Zeno, Chrysippus, Empedocles, with myriads, &c. In wars, for a man to run rashly upon imminent danger, and present death, is accounted valour and magnanimity, "to be the cause of his own, and many a thousand's ruin besides, to commit wilful murder in a manner, of himself and others, is a glorious thing, and he shall be crowned for it. The *Massagetæ in former times, "Barbicicans, and I know not what nations besides, did stifle their old men after seventy years, to free them from those grievances incident to that age. So did the inhabitants of the island of Choa, because their air was pure and good, and the people generally long lived, antevertabant fatum suum, priusquam manci forent aut imbécillis accederent, propavere vel cicuit, with poppy or hemlock they prevented death. Sir Thomas More in his Utopia commends voluntary death, if he be sibi aut aliis molestus, troublesome to himself or others ("especially if to live be a torment to him), let him free himself with his own hands from this tedious life, as from a prison, or suffer himself to be freed by others." And 'tis the same tenet which Laertius relates of Zeno of old, Juste sapiens sibi mortem consciscit, si in acerbis dolobribus versetur, membrorum mutilatione aut morbus acere curandis, and which Plato 9. de legibus approves, if old age, poverty, ignominy, &c., oppress, and which Fabius expresseth in effect. (Proefut. 7. Institut.) Nemo nisi suà culpà diù dolet. It is an ordinary thing in

*a Mac. 14. 42. b Indicatius Apec. lib. b "Finding that he would be destined to endure excruciating pain of the feet, and additional tortures, he abstained from food altogether." c As amongst Turks and others. d Bohemen, de morbus gent. e Ethin. lib. 4. cap. 1. annus exrossa interiecunt. f Lib. 2. Præsentium quam tormentum et vita sit, bonâ spe fretum, acerbā vita velint à carceri si eximiat, vel ab aliis extim suæ voluntate pati dur. g Nam quisquam exsecutam facem exorberat, (Seneca, epist. 58.) quis in ponas et risum viviscet? stilus est maneri in vita cum sit miser.
China, (saith Mat. Riccius the jesuit,) "if they be in despair of better fortunes, or tired and tortured with misery, to bereave themselves of life, and many times, to spite their enemies the more, to hang at their door." Tacitus the historian, Plutarch the philosopher, much approve a voluntary departure, and Aust. de civ. Dei, l. 1. c. 29. defends a violent death, so that it be undertaken in a good cause, nemo sic mortuus, qui non fuerat aliquando mortiri; quid autem interest quo mortis generi vita est in finitimur, quando ille cui finitur, iterum mori non cogitur? &c., 'no man so voluntarily dies, but volens volens, he must die at last, and our life is subject to innumerable casualties, who knows when they may happen, utrum satius est unum morti mortendo, omnes timere vivendo," rather suffer one, than fear all. "Death is better than a bitter life," Ecclus. xxx. 17. and a harder choice to live in fear, than, by once dying, to be freed from all. Theobromus Ambriaciares persuaded I know not how many hundreds of his auditors, by a luculent oration he made of the miseries of this, and happiness of that other life, to precipitate themselves. And having read Plato's divine tract de anima, for example's sake led the way first. That neat epigram of Callimachus will tell you as much, "Jauque vale Solh cum diecit Ambriacotes, In Stygiis fertur desolus locutus, Morte nihil dignum passus: sed forte Platonis Divini eximium de nece legit opus." "

Calenus and his Indians hated of old to die a natural death: the Circumcellsians and Donatists, loathing life, compelled others to make them away, with many such: "but these are false and pagan positions, profane stoical paradoxes, wicked examples, it boots not what heathen philosophers determine in this kind, they are impious, abominable, and upon a wrong ground. "No evil is to be done that good may come of it;" reclamat Christus, reclamat Scriptura, God, and all good men are against it: He that stabs another can kill his body; but he that stabs himself, kills his own soul. Malè meretur qui dat mendico quod dat; nam et illud quod dat perit; et illi producit vitam ad miseriem: he that gives a beggar an alms (as that comical poet saith) doth ill, because he doth but prolong his miseries. But Lactantius, l. 6. c. 7. de vero cultu, calls it a detestable opinion, and fully confines it, lib. 3. de sop., cap. 18. and S. Austin, op. 52. ad Macedonium, cap. 61. ad Dulcium Tribunum: so doth Hiero to Marcella of Blesila's death, Non recipio tales animus, &c., he calls such men martyrres stultae Philosophiae: so doth Cyprian de duplici martyr; Si quic quor mortiatur, aut iurinratur, aut ambitio, aut domentia cogit eos; 'tis mere madness so to do, "facer est morire mori. To this effect writes Arist. 3. Ethic. Lipsius Manuduc. ad Stoicam Philosophiam lib. 3. dissertat. 23. but it needs no contutation. This only let me add, that in some cases, those 'hard censures of such as offer violence to their own persons, or in some desperate fit of pain, which sometimes they do, by stabbing, slashing, &c., are to be mitigated, as in such as are mad, beside themselves for the time, or found to have been long melancholy, and that in extremity, they know not what they do, deprived of reason, judgment, all, 'as a ship that is void of a pilot, most needs impinge upon the next rock or sands, and suffer shipwreck.

"Ep. Phil., ad Sina. 1. 1. c. 9. Vel honorum desperatam, vel malorum perspectam fructi et fatigati, vel manum violentas sibi infertum vel ut inimicius sub nigro faciunt, &c. "No one ever died in this way, who would not have died sooner or other; but what does it signify how life itself may be ended, since he who comes to the end is not obliged to die a second time?" "So did Anthony, Gaiba, Vitellius, Othe, Aristotle himself, &c. Ajax in despair; Cleopatra to save her honour. "Inertius deligitur diu vivere, quam in timore but morborum semel moriendo, nullum deinceps formulare. "And now when Ambriacotes was bleeding farewell to the light of day, and about to cast himself into the Stygian pool, although he had not been guilty of any crime that merited death: but, perhaps, he had read that divine work of Plato upon Death." "Curdius l. 16. "Laqueus praecipis, cont. l. 1. 5. quidam nausfato facto amissis tribus liberis, et uxore, suspenderi se; praeedit illi quidam ex praeterentibus laqueum; A liberato reus fit maietis. "See Lipsius Manuduc. ad Stoicam Philosophiam lib. 3. dissert. 22. D. Kings 14. Lect. on Jocas. D. Abbot's 9. Lect. on the same prophet. "Vale Plautus. "March 1. "As to be buried out of Christian burial with a stake. Idem. Plato §. de legibus, vult separatum sepeliri, qui siti ipsius mortem consciscat, &c., lose their goods, &c. "Navis destinata nauiculo, in terribilium alium sequendum impligit."
"P. Forestus hath a story of two melancholy brethren, that made away themselves, and for so foul a fact, were accordingly censured to be infamously buried, as in such cases they use: to terrify others, as it did the Milesian virgins of old, but upon farther examination of their misery and madness, the censure was revoked, and they were solemnly interred, as Saul was by David, 2 Sam. ii. 4. and Seneca well adviseth, Irascere interfectori, sed miserere interfeci; be justly offended with him as he was a murderer, but pity him now as a dead man. Thus of their goods and bodies we can dispose; but what shall become of their souls, God alone can tell; his mercy may come inter pontem et fontem, inter gladium et jugulum, betwixt the bridge and the brook, the knife and the throat. Quod cuiquam contigit, cuivis potest: Who knows how he may be tempted? It is his case, it may be thine: Quae sua sors hodie est, crus fore vestra potest. We ought not to be so rash and rigorous in our censures, as some are; charity will judge and hope the best: God be merciful unto us all.

THE

SYNOPSIS OF THE SECOND PARTITION.

Mem.
1. From the devil, magicians, witches, &c., by charms, spells, incantations, images, &c.

Quest. 1. Whether they can cure this, or other such like diseases?

Quest. 2. Whether, if they can so cure, it be lawful to seek to them for help?

2. Immediately from God, a *Jove principium*, by prayer, &c.

3. *Quest.* 1. Whether saints and their relics can help this infirmity?

*Quest.* 2. Whether it be lawful in this case to sue to them for aid?

Sect. 1. General to all, which contains

Unlawful means forbidden,

1. Unlawful means, which are

Lawful means, which are

or

or

2. Sect. 2. Dietetical, which consists in reforming those six non-natural things, as in

Particular to the three distinct species, &c., &c.


Memb.

Fish

{ Mountain birds, partridge, pheasant, quails, &c.

Hen, capon, mutton, veal, kid, rabbit, &c.

That live in gravelly waters, as pike, perch, trout, sea-fish, solid, white, &c.

Borage, bugloss, balm, succory, endive, violets in broth, not raw, &c.

Wind, oranges, &c., parsnips, potatoes, &c.

At seasonable and usual times of repast, in good order, not before the first be concocted, sparing, not overmuch of one dish.

4. Fish

Herbs

{ Raisins of the sun, apples corrected for and roots

{ Wind, oranges, &c., parsnips, potatoes, &c.

5. Fruits

Fruits

Diet rectified, with a digression of the air.

Naturally in the choice and site of our country dwelling-place, to be hot and moist, light, wholesome, pleasant, &c.

Artificially, by often change of air, avoiding winds, fogs, tempests, opening windows, perfumes, &c.

Of body and mind, but moderate, as hawking, hunting, riding, shooting, bowling, fishing, fowling, walking in fair fields, galleries, tennis, bar.

Of mind, as chess, cards, tables, &c., to see plays, masks, &c., serious studies, business, all honest recreations.

U
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sect. 4.</th>
<th>Pharmacutics, or physic which cureth with medicines, with a digression of this kind of physic, is either</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Subsect. 1.</td>
<td>From himself</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.</td>
<td>By using all good means of help, confessing to a friend, &amp;c.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Avoiding all occasions of his infirmity.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Not giving way to passions, but resisting to his utmost.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.</td>
<td>By fair and foul means, counsel, comfort, good persuasion, witty devices, fictions, and, if it be possible, to satisfy his mind.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.</td>
<td>Music of all sorts aptly applied.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.</td>
<td>Mirth and merry company.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sect. 3.</td>
<td>From his friends.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>A consolatory digression, containing remedies to all discontents and passions of the mind.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Subsect.</td>
<td>Mem.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.</td>
<td>General discontents and grievances satisfiéd.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.</td>
<td>Particular discontents, as deformity of body, sickness, baseness of birth, &amp;c.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.</td>
<td>Poverty and want, such calamities and adversities.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.</td>
<td>Against servitude, loss of liberty, imprisonment, banishment, &amp;c.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.</td>
<td>Against vain fears, sorrow for death of friends, or otherwise.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.</td>
<td>Against envy, livor, hatred, malice, emulation, ambition, and self-love, &amp;c.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.</td>
<td>Against repulses, abuses, injuries, contemptus, disgraces, contumelies, slander, and scoffs, &amp;c.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8.</td>
<td>Against all other grievances and ordinary symptoms of this disease of melancholy.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Simple of Altering Melancholy

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sect. 2.</th>
<th>Simples altering melancholy, with a digression of exotic simples.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Subs. 3.</td>
<td>Herbs.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To the heart; borage, bugloss, scorzonera, &amp;c.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To the head; balm, hops, nepherph, &amp;c.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Liver; eupatory, artemisia, &amp;c.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stomach; wormwood, centuary, pennyroyal.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spleen; ceterache, ash, tamarisk.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To purify the blood; endive, succory, &amp;c.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Against wind; origan, fennel, aniseed, &amp;c.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Precious stones, as smaragdes, chechadonis, &amp;c.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Minerals; as gold, &amp;c.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fluid or or or or or or or</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Wines; as of hellocbore, bugloss, tamarisk, &amp;c.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Syrups of borage, bugloss, hops,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>epithyme, endive, succory, &amp;c.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>To Conserves; tracule, mithridate,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>eclegmes or linctures.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### General to all

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subsect.</th>
<th>From his friends.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>8.</td>
<td>Sect. 4.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pharmacutics, or physic which cureth with medicines, with a digression of this kind of physic, is either</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mem. 1.</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Subsect. 1.</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Particular to the three distinct species, &c. &c. &c.
Synopsis of the Second Partition.

291

Simples purging melancholy.

1. Subs. Upward, as vomits, or Downward.

2. Subs.

Medicines purging melancholy, are either Memb. 2.


1. Subsect.

Phlebotomy, to all parts almost, and all the distinct species.

With knife, horseleeches.

Cupping-glasses.

Cauterities, and searing with hot irons, boring.

Dropax and sinapisms.

Issues to several parts, and upon several occasions.

II Chirurgical physic, which consists of Memb. 3.

1. Subsect.

Moderate diet, meat of good juice, moistening, easy of digestion.

Good air.

Sleep more than ordinary.

Excrements daily to be voided by art or nature.

Exercise of body and mind not too violent, or too remiss, passions of the mind, and perturbations to be avoided.

2. Blood-letting, if there be need, or that the blood be corrupt, in the arm, forehead, &c., or with cupping glasses.

3. Preparatives and purgers.

Purgers; as Montanus, and Matthiolus helleborismus, Quercetanus, syrup of hellebore, extract of hellebore, pulvis Hali, antimony prepared, Rutundii aqua mirabilis; which are used, if gentler medicines will not take place, with Arnoldus, vinum buglossatum, senna, cassia, myrobalanes, aurum potabile, or before Hamech, Pil. Indae, Ilicia, Pil. de lap. Armeo, lазuli.

Cardan's nettles, frictions, clysters, suppositories, sneezings, masticatories, nasals, cupping-glasses.

To open the haemorrhoids with horseleeches, to apply horseleeches to the forehead without scarification, to the shoulders, thighs.

Issues, boring, cauterities, hot irons in the suture of the crown.

4. Averters.

A cup of wine or strong drink.

Bezars stone, amber, spice.

Conserves of borage, bugloss, roses, fumitory.

Confection of alchemers.

Electuarium latifolium Galeni et Raisis, &c.

Diamargaritum frig, diaboraginatum, &c.

5. Cordials, resolvers, hinderers.
Synopsis of the Second Partition.

Oridments of roses, violets.
Irrigations of the head, with the decoctions of nymphae, lettuce, mallows, &c.
Epithymes, ointments, bags to the heart.
Fomentations of oil for the belly.
Baths of sweet water, in which were sod mallows, violets, roses, water-lilies, borage flowers, ramsheads, &c.

6. Correctors of accidents, as,

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Inwardly taken,</th>
<th>Outwardly used, as</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Simplex</td>
<td>Solid as requies Nicholai, Philitonium, Romanum, Laudanum Paracaeli.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>or</td>
<td>Oil of nymphae, poppy, violets, roses, mandrake, nutmegs.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

To procure sleep, and are

Agasth terrible dreams; not to sup late, or eat peas, cabbage, venison, meats heavy of digestion, use balm, hart's tongue, &c.

Against reddiness and blushing, inward and outward remedies.

Ω 2. Memb. Diet, preparatives, purges, averters, cordials, correctors, as before.

Cure of melancholy over the body.

Subsect. 1. Diet, preparatives, averters, cordials, purgers, as before, saving that they must not be so vehement.

Use of pennyroyal, wormwood, centaury sod, which alone hath cured many.

To provoke urine with aniseed, dancus, asarum, &c., and stools, if need be, by clysters and suppositories.

To respect the spleen, stomach, liver, hypochondries.

To use treacle now and then in winter.

To vomit after meals sometimes, if it be invertebrate.


Herbs, Pennyroyal, rue, calamint, bay leaves, and berrics, scordium, betany, lavender, dianisum, diacalaminthes, elecetarium de baccis lauri, benedicta laxativa, &c., pulvis carminativos, and pulvis descript. Antidotario florentino, aromaticum, rosatum, Mithridate.

Spices, Saffron, cinnamon, mace, nutmeg, pepper, musk, zedoary with wine, &c.

Seeds, Aniseed, feneg-seed, ammi, cary, cummin, nettle, bays, parsley, grana paradisi.

Outwardly used, as cupping-glasses to the hypochondries without scarification, oil of camomile, rue, aniseed, their decoctions, &c.
THE SECOND PARTITION.

THE CURE OF MELANCHOLY.

THE FIRST SECTION, MEMBER, SUBSECTION.

Unlawful Cures rejected.

INVETERATE Melancholy, howsoever it may seem to be a continuative, inexorable disease, hard to be cured, accompanying them to their graves, most part, as Montanus observes, yet many times it may be helped, even that which is most violent, or at least, according to the same author, "it may be mitigated and much eased." Nil desperandum. It may be hard to cure, but not impossible for him that is most grievously affected, if he be but willing to be helped. Upon this good hope I will proceed, using the same method in the cure, which I have formerly used in the rehearsing of the causes; first general, then particular; and those according to their several species. Of these cures some be lawful, some again unlawful, which though frequent, familiar, and often used, yet justly censured, and to be controverted. As first, whether by these diabolical means, which are commonly practised by the devil and his ministers, sorcerers, witches, magicians, &c., by spells, cabalistical words, charms, characters, images, amulets, ligatures, philters, incantations, &c., this disease and the like may be cured? and if they may, whether it be lawful to make use of them, those magnetic cures, or for our good to seek after such means in any case? The first, whether they can do any such cures, is questioned amongst many writers, some affirming, some denying. Valesius, cont. med. lib. 5. cap. 6, Malleus Maleficor. Heurnius, l. 3. pract. med. cap. 28, Calius, lib. 16. c. 16, Delrio, tom. 3, Wierus, lib. 2. de praestig. dem., Libanius Lavater, de spect. part. 2. cap. 7, Holbrenner the Lutheran in Pistorium, Polydor Virg., l. 1. de prodig., Tandlerus, Lemnius (Hippocrates and Avicenna amongst the rest), deny that spirits or devils have any power over us, and refer all with Pomponatus of Padua to natural causes and humours. Of the other opinion are Bodinus, Daemonomantia, lib. 3. cap. 2, Arnoldus, Marcellus Empiricus, I. Pistorius, Paracelsus, Apodix. Magic., Agrippa, lib. 2. de occult. Philos. cap. 36. 69. 71. 72. et l. 3. c. 23. et 10, Marcellus Ficinus, de vit. calit. compar. cap. 13. 15. 18. 21. &c., Galeottois, de promiscua doct. cap. 24, Jovianus Pontanus, tom. 2, Plin. lib. 28. c. 2, Strabo, lib. 15. Geog. Leo Suavius: Goclenius, de ung. armar., Oswoldus Crollius, Ernestus Burgavius, Dr. Flud, &c. Cardan de subit. brings many proofs out of Ars Notoria, and Solomon’s decayed works, old Hermes, Artefis, Costaben Luca, Picatrix, &c., that such cures may be done. They can make fire it shall not burn, fetch back thieves or stolen goods, shew their absent faces in a glass, make serpents lie still, stanch blood, salve gouts, epilepsies, biting of mad dogs, tooth-ache,
Cure of Melancholy.

Part. 2. Sec. 1.

melancholy, et omnia mundi mala, make men immortal, young again as the Spanish marquess is said to have done by one of his slaves, and some which jugglers in China maintain still (as Tragaltius writes) that they can do by their extraordinary skill in physick, and some of our modern chemists by their strange linbecks, by their spells, philosopher's stones and charms. "Mamy doubt," saith Nicholas Taurellus, "whether the devil can cure such diseases he hath not made, and some softly deny it, howsoever common experience confirms to our astonishment, that magicians can work such feats, and that the devil without impediment, can penetrate through all the parts of our bodies, and cure such maladies by means to us unknown." Daneus in his tract de Sortiaribus subscribes to this of Taurellus; Erastus de Lamiis, maintaineth as much, and so do most divines, out of their excellent knowledge and long experience they can commit agentes cum patientibus, colligere semina verum, eaque materia applicare, as Austin infers de Civ. Dei et de Trinit., lib. 3. cap. 7. et 8. they can work stupendous and admirable conclusions; we see the effects only, but not the causes of them. Nothing so familiar as to hear of such cures. Sorcerers are too common; cunning men, wizards, and white-witches, as they call them, in every village, which if they be sought unto, will help almost all infirmities of body and mind. Servat. in Latin, and they have commonly St. Catharine's wheel printed in the roof of their mouth, or in some other part about them, resistant incantatorum practigis (Boisardus writes), morbos a sagis motos propulsant, &c., that to doubt of it any longer, "or not to believe, were to run into that other sceptical extreme of incredulity," saith Taurellus. Leo Snavigius in his comment upon Paracelsus seems to make it an art, which ought to be approved; Pistorius and others softly maintain the use of charms, words, characters, &c. Ars vera est, sed pauci artifices reperintur; the art is true, but there be but a few that have skill in it. Marcellus Donatus, lib. 2. de hist. mir. cap. 1. proves out of Josephus' eight books of antiquities, that "Solomon so cured all the diseases of the mind by spells, charms, and drove away devils, and that Eleazar did as much before Vespasian." Langius in his med. epist. holds Jupiter Menecrates, that did so many stupendous cures in his time, to have used this art, and that he was no other than a magician. Many famous cures are daily done in this kind, the devil is an expert physician, as Godelman calls him, lib. 1. cap. 18. and God permits oftentimes these witches and magicians to produce such effects, as Lavater, cap. 3. lib. 8. part. 3. cap. 1. Polid. Virg., lib. 1. de prodigis, Delrio and others admit. Such cures may be done, and as Paracels., Tom. 4. de morb. ament. stiffly maintains, "they cannot otherwise be cured but by spells, seals, and spiritual physic." Arnoldus, lib. de sigillis, sets down the making of them, so doth Rulandus and many others.

Hoc positio, they can effect such cures, the main question is whether it be lawful in a desperate case to crave their help, or ask a wizard's advice. 'Tis a common practice of some men to go first to a witch and then to a physician, if one cannot the other shall, Flectere si nequeant superos Acherontia movebunt. "It matters not," saith Paracelsus, "whether it be God or the devil, angels, or unclean spirits cure him, so that he be eased." If a man fall into a ditch, as he prosecutes it, what matter is it whether a friend or an enemy help him out? and if I be troubled with such a malady, what care I whether the devil himself, or any of his ministers by God's permission, redeem me? He calls a

"magician God's minister and his vicar, applying that of vos estis dixi profanely to them, for which he is lashed by T. Erastus, part. 1. fol. 45. And elsewhere he encourageth his patients to have a good faith, "a strong imagination, and they shall find the effects: let divines say to the contrary what they will." He provest and contends that many diseases cannot otherwise be cured. *Incantatione orti incantatione curari debent;* if they be caused by incantation, "they must be cured by incantation. Constantinus, lib. 4. approves of such remedies: Bartolus the lawyer, Peter *Aprodius, verum Judic. lib. 3. tit. 7. Salicetus Godefridus, with others of that sect, allow of them; modo sint ad sanitatem, qua à magis fiunt, secús non, so they be for the parties' good, or not at all. But these men are confuted by Remigius, Bodinus, *dem. lib. 3. cap. 2, Godelmanus, lib. 1. cap. 8, Wierus, Delrio, lib. 6. quest. 2. tom. 3. mag. inquis., Erastus de Lamis; all our *divines, schoolmen, and such as write cases of conscience are against it, the scripture itself absolutely forbids it as a mortal sin, Levit. cap. xvii. x. xx, Deut. xviii. &c., Rom. viii. 19, "Evil is not to be done, that good may come of it." Much better it were for such patients that are so troubled, to endure a little misery in this life, than to hazard their souls' health for ever, and as Delrio counselleth, "much better die, than be so cured." Some take upon them to expel devils by natural remedies, and magical exorcisms, which they seem to approve out of the practice of the primitive church, as that above cited of Josephus, Eleazar, Irenneus, Tertullian, Austin. Eusebius makes mention of such, and magic itself hath been publicly professed in some universities, as of old in Salamanca in Spain, and Cracow in Poland: but condemned anno 1318, by the chancellor and university of *Paris. Our pontifical writers retain many of these adjurations and forms of exorcisms still in the church; besides those in baptism used, they exorcise meats, and such as are possessed, as they hold, in Christ's name. Read Hieron. Mengus cap. 3, Pet. Tyreus, part. 3. cap. 8. what exorcisms they prescribe, besides those ordinary means of "fire suffumigations, lights, cutting the air with swords," cap. 57. herbs, odours: of which Tostatus treats, 2 Reg. cap. 16. quest. 43. you shall find many vain and frivolous superstitious forms of exorcisms among them, not to be tolerated, or endured.

MEMBR. II.

Lawful Cures, first from God.

Being so clearly evinced, as it is, all unlawful cures are to be refused, it remains to treat of such as are to be admitted, and those are commonly such which God hath appointed, "by virtue of stones, herbs, plants, meats, &c., and the like, which are prepared and applied to our use, by art and industry of physicians, who are the dispensers of such treasures for our good, and to be "honoured for necessities' sake," God's intermediate ministers, to whom in our infirmities we are to seek for help. Yet not so that we rely too much, or wholly upon them: a *Jove principium, we must first begin with prayer, and then use physic; not one without the other, but both together. To pray alone, and reject ordinary means, is to do like him in *Aesop, that when his cart was
We must use our prayer and physic both together: and so no doubt but our prayers will be available, and our physic take effect. 'Tis that Hezekiah practised, 2 Kings xx, Luke the Evangelist: and which we are enjoined, Coloss. iv. not the patient only, but the physician himself. Hippocrates, a heathen, required this in a good practitioner, and so did Galen, lib. de Plat. et Hipp. dog. lib. 9. cap. 15. and in that tract of his, an mores sequuntur temp. cor. ca. 11. 'tis a rule which he doth inculcate, and many others. Hyperius in his first book de sacr. script. lect. speaking of that happiness and good success which all physicians desire and hope for in their cures, "tells them that "it is not to be expected, except with a true faith they call upon God, and teach their patients to do the like." The council of Lateran, Canon 22. decreed they should do so; the fathers of the church have still advised as much: "whatever thou takest in hand (saith "Gregory") let God be of thy counsel, consult with him; that healeth those that are broken in heart (Psal. cxvii. 3.), and bindeth up their sores." Otherwise as the prophet Jeremiah, cap. xlvii. 11. denounced to Egypt, In vain shalt thou use many medicines, for thou shalt have no health: It is the same counsel which "Comineus that politic historian gives to all christian princes, upon occasion of that unhappy overthrow of Charles Duke of Burgundy, by means of which he was extremely melancholy, and sick to death: insomuch that neither physic nor persuasion could do him any good, perceiving his preposterous error belike, advised all great men in such cases, "to pray first to God with all submission and penitency, to confess their sins, and then to use physic." The very same fault it was, which the prophet reprehends in Asa king of Judah, that he relied more on physic than on God, and by all means would have him to amend it. And 'tis a fit caution to be observed of all other sorts of men. The prophet David was so observant of this precept, that in his greatest misery and vexation of mind, he put this rule first in practice. Psal. lxxvii. 3, "When I am in heaviness, I will think on God." Psal. lxxxvi. 4, "Comfort the soul of thy servant, for unto thee I lift up my soul:" and verse 7, "In the day of trouble will I call upon thee, for thou art nearest me." Psal. liv. 1, "Save me, O God, by thy name," &c. Psal. lxxxii. psal. xx. And 'tis the common practice of all good men, Psal. cxvii. 13, "When their heart was humbled with heaviness, they cried to the Lord in their trouble, and he delivered them from their distress."
And they have found good success in so doing, as David confesseth, Psal. xxxi. 11, "Thou hast turned my mourning into joy, thou hast loosened my sackcloth, and girded me with gladness." Therefore he adviseth all others to do the like, Psal. xxxi. 24, "All ye that trust in the Lord, be strong, and he shall establish your heart." It is reported by *Suidas, speaking of Hezekiah, that there was a great book of old, of King Solomon's writing, which contained medicines for all manner of diseases, and lay open still as they came into the temple: but Hezekiah, king of Jerusalem, caused it to be taken away, because it made the people secure, to neglect their duty in calling and relying upon God, out of a confidence on those remedies. *Minutius that worthy consul of Rome, in an oration he made to his soldiers, was much offended with them, and taxed their ignorance, that in their misery called more on him than upon God. A general fault it is all over the world, and Minutius's speech concerns us all, we rely more on physic, and seek oftener to physicians, than to God himself. As much faulty are they that prescribe, as they that ask, respecting wholly their gain, and trusting more to their ordinary receipts and medicines many times, than to him that made them. I would wish all patients in this behalf, in the midst of their melancholy, to remember that of Siracides, Ecc. i. 11, and 12, "The fear of the Lord is glory and gladness, and rejoicing. The fear of the Lord maketh a merry heart, and giveth gladness, and joy, and long life:" and all such as prescribe physic, to begin in nomine Dei, as *Mesue did, to imitate Leelius à Fonte Eugubinus, that in all his consultations, still concludes with a prayer for the good success of his business; and to remember that of Creto one of their predecessors, *fuge avaritiam, et sine oratione et invocatione Dei nihil facias, avoid covetousness, and do nothing without invocation upon God.

MEMB. III.

Whether it be lawful to seek to Saints for Aid in this Disease.

That we must pray to God, no man doubts; but whether we should pray to saints in such cases, or whether they can do us any good, it may be lawfully controverted. Whether their images, shrines, relics, consecrated things, holy water, medals, benedictions, those divine amulets, holy exorcisms, and the sign of the cross, be available in this disease? The papists, on the one side, stiffly maintain how many melancholy, mad, demoniacal persons are daily cured at St. Anthony's Church in Padua, at St. Vitus' in Germany, by our Lady of Loretto in Italy, our Lady of Sichem in the Low Countries: *Quo et cecis lumen, aegris salutem, mortuis vitam, claudis gressum reddit, omnes morbos corporis, animi, curat, et in ipsos demons imperium exercet; she cures halt, lame, blind, all diseases of body and mind, and commands the devil himself, saith Lipsius, "twenty-five thousand in a day come thither," *quis nisi numerum in illum locum sic induxit; who brought them? in auribus, in ovulis onanism gesta, nova novitia; new news lately done, our eyes and ears are full of her cures, and who can relate them all? They have a proper saint almost for every peculiar infirmity: for poison, gouts, agues, Petronella: St. Romanus for such as are possessed; Valentine for the falling sickness; St. Vitus for madmen, &c. and as of old *Pliny reckons up gods for all diseases (Februm dicatum est), Lilius Giraldus repeats many of her ceremonies: all affec-
Cure of Melancholy. [Part. 2. Sec. 1.

tions of the mind were heretofore accounted gods, love, and sorrow, virtue, honour, liberty, contumely, impudency, had their temples, tempests, seasons, Crepusus Veniris, dea Vacuva, dea Cloacina, there was a goddess of idleness, a goddess of the draught, or jakes, Prena, Premunda, Priapus, bawdy gods, and gods for all offices. Varro reckons up 30,000 gods: Lucian makes Podagra the gout a goddess, and assigns her priests and ministers: and melancholy comes not behind; for as Austin mentioneth, lib. 4. de Civit. Dei, cap. 9. there was of old Angerona dea, and she had her chapel and feasts, to whom (saith Macrobius) they did offer sacrifice yearly, that she might be pacified as well as the rest. 'Tis no new thing, you see this of papists; and in my judgment, that old doting Lipsius might have fitter dedicated his open after all his labours, to this our goddess of melancholy, than to his Virgo Halesiatis, and been her chaplain, it would have become him better: but he, poor man, thought no harm in that which he did, and will not be persuaded but that he doth well, he hath so many patrons, and honourable precedents in the like kind, that justify as much, as eagerly, and more than he there saith of his lady and mistress; read but superstitious Coster and Gretser's Tract de Cruce, Lavor. Arcturus Fontes de Invoc. Sanct., Bellarmine, Delrio, dis. mag. tom. 3. l. 6. quaest. 2. sect. 3. Greg. Tolosanus, tom. 2. lib. 8. cap. 24. Syntax. Strozius Cicogna, lib. 4. cap. 9. Tyreus, Hieronymus Mengus, and you shall find infinite examples of cures done in this kind, by holy waters, relics, crosses, exorcisms, amulets, images, consecrated beads, &c. Barradius the jesuit boldly gives it out, that Christ's countenance, and the Virgin Mary's, would cure melancholy, if one had looked steadfastly on them. P. Morales the Spaniard, in his book de pulch. Jes. et Mar. confirms the same out of Carthusianus, and I know not whom, that it was a common proverb in those days, for such as were troubled in mind to say, eamus ad videndum filium Mariae, let us see the son of Mary, as they now do post to St. Anthony's in Padua, or to St. Hilary's at Poictiers in France. 'In a closet of that church, there is at this day St. Hilary's bed to be seen, to which they bring all the madmen in the country, and after some prayers and other ceremonies, they lay them down there to sleep, and so they recover.' It is an ordinary thing in those parts, to send all their madmen to St. Hilary's cradle. They say the like of St. Tubery in another place. Giraldus Cambrensis Itin. Comb. c. 1. tells strange stories of St. Ciricius' staff, that would cure this and all other diseases. Others say as much (as Hospinian observes) of the three kings of Cologne; their names written in parchment, and hung about a patient's neck, with the sign of the cross, will produce like effects. Read Lipomannus, or that golden legend of Jacobus de Voragine, you shall have infinite stories, or those new relations of our Jesuits in Japan and China, of Mat. Riccius, Acosta, Loyola, Xaverius's life, &c. Jasper Belga, a Jesuit, cured a mad woman by hanging St. John's gospel about her neck, and many such. Holy water did as much in Japan, &c. Nothing so familiar in their works, as such examples.

But we, on the other side, seek to God alone. We say with David, Psal. xli. 1, "God is our hope and strength, and help in trouble, ready to be found." For their catalogue of examples, we make no other answer, but that they are false fictions, or diabolical illusions, counterfeit miracles. We cannot deny but that it is an ordinary thing on St. Anthony's day in Padua, to bring diverse madmen and demoniacal persons to be cured: yet we make a doubt whether such parties be so affected indeed, but prepared by their priests, by


certain ointments and drams, to eозе the commonalty, as *Hildesheim well saith; the like is commonly practised in Bohemia as Mathiolius gives us to understand in his preface to his comment upon Dioscorides. But we need not run so far for examples in this kind, we have a just volume published at home to this purpose. "?A declaration of egregious popish impostures, to withdraw the hearts of religious men under pretence of casting out of devils, practised by Father Edmunds, alias Weston, a jesuit, and divers Romish priests, his wicked associates, with the several parties' names, confessions, examinations, &c. which were pretended to be possessed." But these are ordinary tricks only to get opinion and money, mere impostures. Æsculapius of old, that counterfeit god, did as many famous cures; his temple (as Strabo relates) was daily full of patients, and as many several tables, inscriptions, pendants, donories, &c. to be seen in his church, as at this day our Lady of Loretto's in Italy. It was a custom long since,

——— "suspendisse potenti
Vestimenta maris dco."---Hor. Od. 1. lib. 5. Od.

To do the like, in former times they were seduced and deluded as they are now. 'Tis the same devil still, called heretofore Apollo, Mars, Neptunue, Venus, Æsculapius, &c. as *Lactantius, lib. 2. de orig. erroris, c. 17. observes. The same Jupiter and those had angels are now worshipped and adored by the name of St. Sebastian, Barbara, &c. Christopher and George are come in their places. Our lady succeeds Venus (as they use her in many offices), the rest are otherwise supplied, as 'Lavater writes, and so they are deluded. "And God often wink at these impostures, because they forsake his word, and betake themselves to the devil, as they do that seek after holy water, crosses," &c. Wierus, lib. 4. cap. 3. What can these men plead for themselves more than those heathen gods, the same cures done by both, the same spirit that seduces; but read more of the pagan gods' effects in Austin de Civitate Dei, l. 10. cap. 6. and of Æsculapius especially in Cicogna, l. 3. cap. 8. or put case they could help, why should we rather seek to them, than to Christ himself, since that he so kindly invites us unto him, "Come unto me all ye that are heavy laden, and I will ease you," Mat. xi. and we know that "there is one God, one Mediator between God and man, Jesus Christ" (1 Tim. ii. 5.), who gave himself a ransom for all men. We know that "we have an 'advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ" (1 John ii. 1.), that "there is no other name under heaven, by which we can be saved, but by his," who is always ready to hear us, and sits at the right hand of God, and from whom we can have no repulse, solas vult, solas potest, curat universos tanquam singulos, et unumqueque nostrum ut solum, we are all as one to him, he cares for us all as one, and why should we then seek to any other but to him?

MEMB. IV.

SUBSECT. I.—Physician, Patient, Physic.

Of those diverse gifts which our apostle Paul saith God hath bestowed on man, this of physic is not the least, but most necessary, and especially conducing to the good of mankind. Next therefore to God in all our extremities ("for of the most high cometh healing," Ecclus. xxxviii. 2.) we must seek to,

---

* Spec. de morbis demoniacis, sic à sacrificiis parati magnumis Magieae corporis illitius, ut stulte plebeos persuasentur tales curari à Sancto Antonio. 2 Printed at London 4to, by J. Roberts, 1605. 3 Greg. lib. 8. Cupis anum adsagrotantium multitudine referunt, undiqueque et tabellis pendentibus, in quibus sancti lan-

gores erant inscripti. 4 "To offer the hair's garments to the deity of the deep." 5 Mali angelii sump-

serunt olim nomen Jovis, Jannonis, Apollinis, &c. quos Gentiles deos credebant, nunc S. Sebastiani, Barbare, &c. nomen habent, et afferunt. 6 Part. 2. cap. 8. de spect. Veneri substansVirgini Mariam. 7 Ad hoc ludibria Deus convivet frequenter, ubi relices verbo Dei, ad Satanam curritur, quales his sunt, qui aquam

australem, crucem, &c. inutrici fidem hominibus offerant. 8 Chioris est ipsis homo quam alii, Paul. 9 Bernard. 10 Austin.
and rely upon the Physician, "who is Manus Dei, saith Hierophilus, and to whom he hath given knowledge, that he might be glorified in his wondrous works. "With such doth he heal men, and take away their pains." Ecclus. xxxviii. 6, 7. "When thou hast need of him, let him not go from thee. The hour may come that their enterprises may have good success," ver. 13. It is not therefore to be doubted, that if we seek a physician as we ought, we may be eased of our infirmities, such a one I mean as is sufficient, and worthy so called; for there be many mountebanks, quacksalvers, empirics, in every street almost, and in every village, that take upon them this name, make this noble and profitable art to be evil spoken of and contemned, by reason of these base and illiterate artificers: but such a physician I speak of, as is approved, learned, skilful, honest, &c., of whose duty Wecker, Antid. cap. 2. et Syntaxis. med. Crato, Julius Alexandrinus medic. Heurnius, praec. med. lib. 3. cap. 1. &c., treat at large. For this particular disease, him that shall take upon him to cure it, Paracelsus will have to be a magician, a chemist, a philosopher, an astrologer; Thurnesserus, Severinus the Dane, and some other of his followers, require as much: "many of them cannot be cured but by magic." * Paracelsus is so stiff for those chemical medicines, that in his cures he will admit almost of no other physic, deriding in the mean time Hippocrates, Galen, and all their followers; but magic and all such remedies I have already censured, and shall speak of chemistry elsewhere. Astrology is required by many famous physicians, by Ficinus, Crato, Ferneiulus; "doubted of, and exploded by others: I will not take upon me to decide the controversy myself, Johannes Hossurtus, Thomas Boderius, and Maginus in the preface to his mathematical physic, shall determine for me. Many physicians explode astrology in physic (saith he), there is no use of it, unam artem ac quasi temerarium insectentur, ac gloriam sibi ab ejus imperita acuoperi: but I will reprove physicians by physi- cians, that defend and profess it, Hippocrates, Galen, Avicen., &c., that count them butchers without it, homicidas medicos Astrologie ignaros, &c. Paracelsus goes farther, and will have his physician "predestinated to this man's cure, this malady; and time of cure, the scheme of each geniture inspected, gathering of herbs, of administering astrologically observed; in which Thurnesserus and some intromatematical professors, are too superstitious in my judgment. "* Helleborus will help, but not alway, not given by every physician," &c., but these men are too peremptory and self-conceited as I think. But what do I do, interposing in that which is beyond my reach? A blind man cannot judge of colours, nor I peradventure of these things. Only thus much I would require, honesty in every physician, that he be not over-careless or covetous, harpy-like to make a prey of his patient; Carneficis namque est (as Wecker notes) inter ipsos cruciatum ingens precium exposcere, as a hungry chirurgeon often produces and wiredraws his cure, so long as there is any hope of pay, "Non missura cutem, nisi plena cruris hirudo."a Many of them, to get a fee, will give physic to every one that comes, when there is no cause, and they do so irritare silentem morbum, as Heurnius complains, stir up a silent disease, as it often falleth out, which by good counsel, good advice alone, might have been happily composed, or by rectification of those six non-natural things otherwise cured. This is Natura bellum inferre, to oppugna nature, and to make a strong body weak. Arnoldus in his 8 and 11 Aphorisms gives cautions against, and expressly forbiddeth it. * A wise phy-

---

sician will not give physic but upon necessity, and first try medicinal diet, before he proceed to medicinal cure.” ¹ In another place he laughs those men to scorn, that think longis syrupis expugnare demones et animi phantasmatas, they can purge phantastical imaginations and the devil by physic. Another caution is, that they proceed upon good grounds, if so be there be need of physic, and not mistake the disease; they are often deceived by the "similitude of symptoms, saith Heurnius, and I could give instance in many consultations, wherein they have prescribed opposite physic. Sometimes they go too perfunctorily to work, in not prescribing a just course of physic: To stir up the humour, and not to purge it, doth often more harm than good. Montanus, consil. 30. inveighs against such perturbations, “that purge to the halves, tire nature, and molest the body to no purpose.” ² "Tis a crabbed humour to purge, and as Laurentius calls this disease, the reproach of physicians: Bessardus, flagellum medicorum, their lash; and for that cause, more carefully to be respected. Though the patient be averse, saith Laurentius, desire help, and refuse it again, though he neglect his own health, it behoves a good physician not to leave him helpless. But most part they offend in that other extreme, they prescribe too much physic, and tire out their bodies with continual potions, to no purpo e. Aelius, tetrabib. 2. 2. ser. cap. 90. will have them by all means therefore "to give some respite to nature," to leave off now and then; and Laelius à Fonte Engubinus in his consultations, found it (as he there witnesseth) often verified by experience, "that after a deal of physic to no purpose, left to themselves, they have recovered.” ³ "Tis that which Nic. Piso, Donatus Altomarus, still inculcate, dare requiem naturae, to give nature rest.

SUBSECT. II.—Concerning the Patient.

When these precedent cautions are accurately kept, and that we have now got a skilful, an honest physician to our mind, if his patient will not be conformable, and content to be ruled by him, all his endeavours will come to no good end. Many things are necessarily to be observed and continued on the patient’s behalf: First that he be not too niggardly miserable of his purse, or think it too much he bestows upon himself, and to save charges endanger his health. The Aberdites, when they sent for “Hippocrates, promised him what reward he would, "all the gold they had, if all the city were gold he should have it.” Naaman the Syrian, when he went into Israel to Elisha to be cured of his leprosy, took with him ten talents of silver, six thousand pieces of gold, and ten change of raiments (2 Kings v. 5). Another thing is, that out of bashfulness he do not conceal his grief; if aught trouble his mind, let him freely disclose it, “Studiorum incurata pudor malus ulera edat;” by that means he procures to himself much mischief, and runs into a greater inconveni- nence; he must be willing to be cured, and earnestly desire it. Pars sanitatis velles sanari sui (Seneca). "Tis a part of his cure to wish his own health; and not to defer it too long.

¹ "Qui blandiendo dulce nutritiv malum, | "He that by cherishing a mischief doth provoke, | ber'ra recensis ferre quod subit jugum." | Too late at last refuseth to cast off his yoke."

² "Helleborum frustra cum jam cutis agrum tumebit; | "When the skin swells, to seek it to appease | Fossantes vides; vementi occurrite morbo." | With hellebore, is vain; meet your disease."

By this means many times, or through their ignorance in not taking notice of their grievances and danger of it, contempt, supine negligence, extinguation, wretchedness and peevishness; they undo themselves. The citizens, I know

---

not of what city now, when rumour was brought their enemies were coming, could not abide to hear it; and when the plague begins in many places and they certainly know it, they command silence and hush it up; but after they see their foes now marching to their gates, and ready to surprise them, they begin to fortify and resist when 'tis too late; when the sickness breaks out and can be no longer concealed, then they lament their supine negligence: 'tis no otherwise with these men. And often out of prejudice, a loathing and distaste of physic, they had rather die, or do worse, than take any of it.  "Barbarous immaturity (Melancthon terms it) and folly to be deplored, so to contum the precepts of health, good remedies, and voluntarily to pull death, and many maladies upon their own heads."  Though many again are in that other extreme too profuse, suspicious, and jealous of their health, too apt to take physic on every small occasion, to aggravate every slender passion, imperfection, impediment: if their finger do but ache, run, ride, send for a physician, as many gentlewomen do, that are sick, without a cause, even when they will themselves, upon every toy or small discontent, and when he comes, they make it worse than it is, by amplifying that which is not.  "Hier. Cappivaccius sets it down as a common fault of all "melancholy persons to say their symptoms are greater than they are, to help themselves."  And which "Mercurialis notes, consil. 53.  "to be more troublesome to their physicians, than other ordinary patients, that they may have change of physic."

A third thing to be required in a patient, is confidence, to be of good cheer, and have sure hope that his physician can help him.  Damaseen the Arabian requires likewise in the physician himself, that he be confident he can cure him, otherwise his physic will not be effectual, and promise withal that he will certainly help him, make him believe so at least.  "Galeottus gives this reason, because the form of health is contained in the physician's mind, and as Galen holds "'confidence and hope to be more good than physic," he cures most in whom most are confident.  Axiochus sick almost to death, at the very sight of Socrates recovered his former health.  Paracelsus assigns it for an only cause, why Hippocrates was so fortunate in his cures, not for any extraordinary skill he had; but "because the common people had a most strong conceit of his worth."  To this of confidence we may add perseverance, obedience, and constancy, not to change his physician, or dislike him upon every toy; for he that so doth (saith = Janus Damaseen) " or consults with many, falls into many errors; or that useth many medicines."  It was a chief caveat of "Senea to his friend Lucilius, that he should not alter his physician, or prescribed physic: "Nothing hinders health more; a wound can never be cured that hath several plasters."  Crato, consil. 186. taxeth all melancholy persons of this fault: "'Tis proper to them, if things fall not out to their mind, and that they have not present ease, to seek another and another;" (as they do commonly that have sore eyes) twenty one after another, and they still promise all to cure them, try a thousand remedies; and by this means they increase their malady, make it most dangerous and difficult to be cured.  "They try many (saith Montanus) and profit by none:" and for this cause, consil. 24. he enjoins his patient before he take him in hand, "perseverance and suffrance, for in such

---

* De anima. Barbarus tamen non statuit, ut deplorand inselitam contemnent precipue sanitatis, mortem et morbos ullo accussant.  1 Consil. 173. b Scholoi Melanch. Egoerum hoc fere proprium est, ut graviora dicant esse symptomata, quam revera sunt.  Melancholicf plerumque medicis sunt molesti, ut alia silia adjuvant.  Oportet insolito imprinere salutem, utique promitter; et ipsa desperat.  Nullum medicamentum effacit, nisi medicis atiam fuerit fortis imaginaciones.  1 De prouise. dot. cap. 16. Quomodo sunt aste formam animi medici continent.  2 Spec et confidentia plus valent quam medicum.  1 Faelicior in medicina ob sidem Libertinorum.  1 Aphor. 89. Eger qui plurimos consulent medicos, plerumque in errorem singularum cadit.  2 Nihil ita sanctae impedit, ac remediorum crebra mutatio, nec venit volunt ad celiacron in quo diversa medicamenta tentantur.  1 Melancholikorum præprium quum ex eorum arbitrio non fit subita mutatio in melius, alterare medicos qui quidvis, &c.  1 Consil. 31. Dumn ad varia so conforunt, nullo prorsunt.  1 Imprinus hoc statuere oportet, requiri perseverantiam, et tolerantiam. Exiguo cum tempore nihil ex, &c.
a small time no great matter can be effected, and upon that condition he will administer physic, otherwise all his endeavour and counsel would be to small purpose." And in his 31. counsel for a notable matron, he tells her, "if she will be cured, she must be of a most abiding patience, faithful obedience, and singular perseverance; if she remit, or despair, she can expect or hope for no good success." Consil. 230. for an Italian abbot, he makes it one of the greatest reasons why this disease is so incurable, "because the parties are so restless and impatient, and will therefore have him that intends to be eased, to take physic, not for a month, a year, but to apply himself to their prescriptions all the days of his life." Last of all, it is required that the patient be not too bold to practise upon himself, without an approved physician's consent, or to try conclusions, if he read a receipt in a book; for so, many grossly mistake, and do themselves more harm than good. That which is conducing to one man, in one case, the same time is opposite to another: "An ass and a mule went laden over a brook, the one with salt, the other with wool: the mule's pack was wet by chance, the salt melted, his burden the lighter, and he thereby much eased; he told the ass, who, thinking to speed as well, wet his pack likewise at the next water, but it was much the heavier, he quite tired. So one thing may be good and bad to several parties, upon diverse occasions. "Many things (saith "Penottus") are written in our books, which seem to the reader to be excellent remedies, but they that make use of them are often deceived, and take for physic poison." I remember in Valleriola's observations, a story of one John Baptist, a Neapolitan, that finding by chance a pamphlet in Italian, written in praise of hellebore, would needs adventure on himself, and took one dram for one scruple, and had not he been sent for, the poor fellow had poisoned himself. From whence he concludes out of Damascenus, 2 et 3 Aphorism. "that without exquisite knowledge, to work out of books is most dangerous: how unsavoury a thing it is to believe writers, and take upon trust, as this patient perceived by his own peril." I could recite such another example of mine own knowledge, of a friend of mine, that finding a receipt in Brassivola, would needs take hellebore in substance, and try it on his own person; but had not some of his familiars come to visit him by chance, he had by his indiscretion hazard himself; many such I have observed. These are those ordinary cautions, which I should think fit to be noted, and he that shall keep them, as "Montanus saith, shall surely be much eased, if not thoroughly cured.

SUBSECT. III.—Concerning Physic.

Physic itself in the last place is to be considered; "for the Lord hath created medicines of the earth, and he that is wise will not abhor them." Ecclus. xxxviii. 4. ver. 8. "of such doth the apothecary make a concoction," &c: Of these medicines there be diverse and infinite kinds, plants, metals, animals, &c, and those of several natures, some good for one, hurtful to another: some noxious in themselves, corrected by art, very wholesome and good, simples, mixed, &c, and therefore left to be managed by discreet and skilful physicians, and thence applied to man's use. To this purpose they have invented method, and several rules of art, to put these remedies in order, for their particular ends. Physic (as Hippocrates defines it) is nought else but "addition and subtraction;" and as it is required in all other diseases, so in this of melan-

*Si curari vult, opus est pertinaci perseverantia, fideli obedientia, et patientia singulari, si tadel ant desperet, nullum habet effectum. *Aegrinudinem amittat patientiam, et inde morbi incurabiles.  
*Non ad menses antiquum, sed aperit tota vitis curcinio curatoni operam dare. *Camerarius emb. 55. cent. 2.  
*Prefat. dc nar. med. In libellis que vulgo versantur apud literatos, incantatores multa legunt, a quibus decipinantur, eximia ilius, sed portentosum hauriunt venenum.  
*Operari ex libris, absque cognitione et solerti ingenio, periculoam est. Unde monemur, quam insipidum scriptis ascendaris credere, quod hic suo didicit periculo.  
*Fuchelus, cap. 2. lib. 1.
Cure of Melancholy. [Part. 2. Sec. 2.]

choly it ought to be most accurate, it being (as Mercurialis acknowledgeth) so common an affection in these our times, and therefore fit to be understood. Several prescripts and methods I find in several men, some take upon them to cure all maladies with one medicine, severally applied, as that Panacea Aurator potabile, so much controverted in these days, Herba solis, &c. Paracelsus reduceth all diseases to four principal heads, to whom Severinus, Ravelascus, Leo Suavins, and others adhere and imitate: those are leprous, gout, dropsy, falling-sickness. To which they reduce the rest; as to leprosy, ulcers, itch, furs, scabs, &c. To gout, stone, cholic, toothache, headache, &c. To dropsy, agues, jaundice, cachexia, &c. To the falling-sickness, belong palsy, vertigo, cramps, convulsions, incubus, apoplexy, &c. "If any of these four principal be cured (saith Ravelascus) all the inferior are cured," and the same remedies commonly serve: but this is too general, and by some contradicted: for this peculiar disease of melancholy, of which I am now to speak, I find several cures, several methods and prescripts. They that intend the practic cure of melancholy, saith Duretus in his notes to Hollerius, set down nine peculiar scopes or ends; Savanarola prescribes seven especial canons. Aelianus Montaltus, cap. 26, Faventinus in his empirica, Hercules de Saxonius, &c., have their several injunctions and rules, all tending to one end. The ordinary is threefold, which I mean to follow. \( \text{D\ae vir\text{-}ri\text{-}rai\text{-}ri\text{-}ri, Ph\text{-}arma\text{-}ce\text{-}utica, and Chirurgica, diet, or living, apothecary, chirurgery, which Wecker, Crato, Guianerius, &c., and most, prescribe; of which I will insist, and speak in their order.} \)

---

SECT. II. MEMB. I.

SUBSEC. I.—Diet rectified in Substance.

Diet, \( \text{D\ae vir\text{-}ri\text{-}ri\text{-}ri, vict\text{-}us, or living, according to Fuchsius and others, comprehend those six non-natural things, which I have before specified, are special causes, and being rectified, a sole or chief part of the cure.} \) Johannes Arculanus, cap. 16. in 9. Rasis, accounts the rectifying of these six a sufficient cure. Guianerius, tract. 15, cap. 9. calls them, \( \text{propriam et pr\text{-}ima\text{-}m curam,} \) the principal cure: so doth Montanus, Crato, Mercurialis, Altomarius, &c., first to be tried, Lemnius, instit. cap. 22. names them the hinges of our health, no hope of recovery without them. Reinerius Solenander, in his seventh consultation for a Spanish young gentlewoman, that was so melancholy she abhorred all company, and would not sit at table with her familiar friends, prescribes this physic above the rest, no good to be done without it. Areteus, lib. 1. cap. 7. an old physician, is of opinion, that this is enough of itself, if the party be not too far gone in sickness. Crato, in a consultation of his for a noble patient, tells him plainly, that if his highness will keep but a good diet, he will warrant him his former health. Montanus, consil. 27. for a nobleman of France, admonisheth his lordship to be most circumspect in his diet, or else all his other physic will be to small purpose. The same injunction I find verbatim in J. Cæsar Claudinus, Respon. 34. Scorza, consil. 183. Traulius, cap. 16, lib. 1. Lucius à fonte Eugubinus often brag, that he hath done more cures in this kind by rectification of diet, than all other physic besides. So that in a word I may say to most melancholy men, as the fox said to the weasel, that could

---

1 In pract. med. hæc affectio nostris temporibus frequentissima, ergo maxime pertinet ad nos hujus curationem intelligere.
2 Si aliquis horum morborum summae sumatur, sumatur omnes iniernores.
3 instit. cap. 8. sect. 1. Victas sonee non tam cibus et potus, sed aet, exercitatio, somnus, vigilis, et reliquus sex non-naturales continentur.
4 Si subjectus quae regimen regem sex non-naturalem.
5 Et in his potissima saecularia consistit.
6 Nihil hic agendum sine exquisita vivendi ratione, &c.
7 Si recens malum sit, ad pristinum habitum recuperandum alii mediex non est opus.
8 Consil. 27. si cum eius maxime sit, restant victis rationem, &c.
9 Novitas me plurique hic iubenter, victa potius quam medicamentis curasse.
not get out of the garner; *Macra cavum repetes, quem macra subisti,* "the six non-natural things caused it, and they must cure it. Which howsoever I treat of, as proper to the meridian of melancholy, yet nevertheless, that which is here said with him in "Tully, though writ especially for the good of his friends at Tarentum and Sicily, yet it will generally serve" most other diseases, and help them likewise, if it be observed.

Of these six non-natural things, the first is diet, properly so called, which consists in meat and drink, in which we must consider substance, quantity, quality, and that opposite to the precedent. In substance, such meats are generally commended, which are "*moist, easy of digestion, and not apt to engender wind, not fried, nor roasted, but sod (saith Valescens, Altomarus, Piso, &c.), hot and moist, and of good nourishment;"* Crato, *consil. 21. lib. 2. admits roast meat, "if the burned and scorched superficies, the brown we call it, be pared off." Salvianus, *lib. 2. cap. 1. eries out on cold and dry meats; "young flesh and tender is approved, as of kid, rabbits, chickens, veal, mutton, capons, hens, partridge, pheasant, quails, and all mountain birds, which are so familiar in some parts of Africa, and in Italy, and as *Dublinius reports, the common food of boors and clowns in Palestine. Galen takes exception at mutton, but without question he means that rammy mutton, which is in Turkey and Asia Minor, which have those great fleshly tails, of forty-eight pounds weight, as Vertomannus witnesseth, *navig. lib. 2. cap. 5.* The lean of fat meat is best, and all manner of broths, and pottage, with borage, lettuce, and such wholesome herbs, are excellent good, especially of a cock boiled; all spoon meat. Arabians commend brains, but *Laurentius, c. 8. excepts against them, and so do many others; "eggs are justified as a nutritive wholesome meat, butter and oil may pass, but with some limitation; so "Crato confines it, and "to some men sparingly at set times, or in sauce," and so sugar and honey are approved. "All sharp and sour sauces must be avoided, and spices, or at least seldom used; and so saffron sometimes in broth may be tolerated; but these things may be more freely used, as the temperature of the party is hot or cold, or as he shall find inconvenience by them. The thinnest, whitest, smallest wine is best, not thick, nor strong; and so of beer, the middling is fittest. Bread of good wheat, pure, well purged from the bran, is preferred; *Laurentius, cap. 8.* would have it kneaded with rain water, if it may be gotten.

Water.] Pure, thin, light water by all means use, of good smell and taste, like to the air in sight, such as is soon hot, soon cold, and which Hippocrates so much approves, if at least it may be had. Rain water is purest, so that it fall not down in great drops, and be used forthwith, for it quickly putrefies. Next to it, fountain water that riseth in the east, and runneth eastward, from a quick running spring, from flinty, chalky, gravelly grounds: and the longer a river runneth, it is commonly the purest, though many springs do yield the best water at their fountains. The waters in hotter countries, as in Turkey, Persia, India, within the tropics, are frequently purer than ours in the north, more subtle, thin, and lighter, as our merchants observe, by four ounces in a pound, pleasanter to drink, as good as our beer, and some of them, as Choasplis in Persia, preferred by the Persian kings before wine itself.

"*Clitorius quiangunque sitim de fonte i-vicat Vina fugit gaudetque meris abstinens unus.*"
Many rivers I deny not are muddy still, white, thick, like those in China, Nile in Egypt, Tiber at Rome, but after they be settled two or three days, defecate and clear, very commodious, useful and good. Many make use of deep wells, as of old in the Holy Land, lakes, cisterns, when they cannot be better provided; to fetch it in carts or gondolas, as in Venice, or camels' backs, as at Cairo in Egypt. *Radziwillius observed 8000 camels daily there, employed about that business; some keep it in trunks, as in the East Indies, made four square with descending steps, and 'tis not amiss: for I would not have any one so nice as that Grecian Calis, sister to Nicophorus, emperor of Constantinople, and married to Dominitus Silvius, duke of Venice, that out of incredible wantonness, communi aquâ vit nolebat, would use no vulgar water; but she died tantâ (saith mine author) fietudissimi puris copiâ, of so fulsome a disease, that no water could wash her clean. *Plato would not have a traveller lodge in a city that is not governed by laws, or hath not a quick stream running by it; illud enim animum, hoc corrumpit valetudinem, one corrupts the body, the other the mind. But this is more than needs, too much curiosity is naught, in time of necessity any water is allowed. Howsoever, pure water is best, and which (as Pindarus holds) is better than gold; an especial ornament it is, and "very commodious to a city (according to Vegetinus) when fresh springs are included within the walls," as at Corinth, in the midst of the town almost, there was arx altissima scatens fontibus, a goodly mount full of fresh water springs: "if nature afford them not they must be had by art." It is a wonder to read of those "stupend aqueducts, and infinite cost hath been bestowed in Rome of old, Constantinople, Carthage, Alexandria, and such populous cities, to convey good and wholesome waters: read 'Frontinus, Lipsius de admir. *Plinius, lib. 3. cap. 11, Strabo in his Geogr. That aqueduct of Claudius was most eminent, fetched upon arches fifteen miles, every arch 109 feet high: they had fourteen such other aqueducts, besides lakes and cisterns, 700 as I take it; *every house had private pipes and channels to serve them for their use. Peter Gillius, in his accurate description of Constantinople, speaks of an old cistern which he went down to sec, 336 feet long, 180 feet broad, built of marble, covered over with arch-work, and sustained by 336 pillars, 12 feet asunder, and in eleven rows, to contain sweet water. Infinite cost in channels and cisterns, from Nilus to Alexandria, hath been formerly bestowed, to the admiration of these times; their cisterns so curiously cemented and composed, that a beholder would take them to be all of one stone: when the foundation is laid, and cistern made, their house is half built. That Segovian aqueduct in Spain, is much wondered at in these days, upon three rows of pillars, one above another, conveying sweet water to every house: but each city almost is full of such aqueducts. Amongst the rest 1 he is eternally to be commended, that brought that new stream to the north side of London at his own charge: and Mr. Otho Nicholson, founder of our water-works and elegant conduit in Oxford. So much have all times attributed to this element, to be conveniently provided of it: although Galen hath taken exceptions at such waters, which run through leaden pipes, ob cussuum quae in ita generatur, for that unctuous ceruse, which causeth dysenteries and fluxes; *yet as Alsarius Crucius of Gennan well answers, it is opposite to common experience. If that were true, most of our Italian cities, Montpelier in France, with infinite others, would find this inconvenience, but there is no such matter. For private families, in what

---

sort they should furnish themselves, let them consult with P. Crescentius, de Agric. l. 1. c. 4, Pampilius Hircalens and the rest.

Amongst fishes, those are most allowed of, that live in gravelly or sandy waters, pikes, perch, trout, gudgeon, smelts, flounders, &c. Hippolitus Salvianus takes exception at carp; but I dare boldly say with Dubravius, it is an excellent meat, if it come not from muddy pools, that it retain not an unsavoury taste. Urinarius Marinus is much commended by Oribasius, Ætius, and most of our late writers.

Crato, consil. 21 lib. 2. censures all manner of fruits, as subject to putrefaction, yet tolerable at sometimes, after meals, at second course, they keep down vapours, and have their use. Sweet fruits are best, as sweet cherries, plums, sweet apples, pear-mains, and pippins, which Laurentius extols, as having a peculiar property against this disease, and Plater magnifies, omnibus modis appropriate convivium, but they must be corrected for their windiness: ripe grapes are good, and raisins of the sun, musk-melons well corrected, and sparingly used. Figs are allowed, and almonds blanched. Trallianus discommends figs, Salvianus olives and capers, which others especially like of, and so of pistick nuts. Montanus and Mercurialis out of Avenzoar, admit peaches, pears, and apples baked after meals, only corrected with sugar and anisseed, or fennel-seed, and so they may be profitably taken, because they strengthen the stomach, and keep down vapours. The like may be said of preserved cherries, plums, marmalade of plums, quinces, &c., but not to drink after them. Pomegranates, lemons, oranges are tolerated, if they be not too sharp.

Crato will admit of no herbs, but borage, bugloss, endive, fennel, anised, balm; Calleniius and Arnoldus tolerate lettuce, spinach, beets, &c. The same Crato will allow no roots at all to be eaten. Some approve of potatoes, parsnips, but all corrected for wind. No raw salads; but as Laurentius prescribes, in broths; and so Crato commends many of them: or to use borage, hops, balm, steeped in their ordinary drink. Avenzoar magnifies the juice of a pomegranate, if it be sweet, and especially rose water, which he would have to be used in every dish, which they put in practice in those hot countries about Damascos, where (if we may believe the relations of Vertomannus) many hogsheds of rose water are to be sold in the market at once, it is in so great request with them.

SUBJECT II.—Diet rectified in quantity.

MAN alone, saith Cardan, eats and drinks without appetite, and useth all his pleasure without necessity, animae vilio, and thence come many inconveniences unto him. For there is no meat whatsoever, though otherwise wholesome and good, but if unseasonably taken, or immoderately used, more than the stomach can well bear, it will engender crudity, and do much harm. Therefore Crato adviseth his patient to eat but twice a-day, and that at his set meals, by no means to eat without an appetite, or upon a full stomach, and to put seven hours' difference between dinner and supper. Which rule if we did observe in our colleges, it would be much better for our healths: but custom, that tyrant, so prevails, that, contrary to all good order and rules of physic, we scarce admit of five. If after seven hours' tarrying he shall have no stomach,
Cure of Melancholy.

[Part 2. Sec. 2.]

let him defer his meal, or eat very little at his ordinary time of repast. This very counsel was given by Prosper Calenus to Cardinal Cæsius, labouring of this disease; and * Platerus prescribes to it a patient of his, to be most severely kept. Guianerius admits of three meals a day, but Montanus, consil. 23. pro Abb. Italo, ties him precisely to two. And as he must not eat overmuch, so he may not absolutely fast; for as Cæsarius contends, lib. 1. Jaccobius, 15 in 9. Rhasis, 1 repletion and inanition may both do harm in two contrary extremes. Moreover, that he which doth eat must be well † chewed, and not hastily gobbled, for that causeth crudity and wind; and by all means to eat no more than he can well digest. "Some think (saith § Trincavellius, lib. 11. cap. 29. de curand. part. hum.) the more they eat the more they nourish themselves: eat and live, as the proverb is, "not knowing that only repairs man which is well concocted, not that which is devoured." Melancholy men most part have good * appetites, but ill digestion, and for that cause they must be sure to rise with an appetite: and that which Socrates and Disarius the physicians in

a Macrobius so much require, St. Hierom enjoins Rusticus to eat and drink no more than will satisfy hunger and thirst. "Lessius, the Jesuit, holds twelve, thirteen, or fourteen ounces, or in our northern countries, sixteen at most, for all students, weaklings, and such as lead an idle sedentary life, of meat, bread, &c., a fit proportion for a whole day, and as much or little more of drink. Nothing pesters the body and mind sooner than to be still fed, to eat and ingurgitate beyond all measure, as many do. * "By overmuch eating and continual feasts they stiffle nature, and choke up themselves; which, had they lived coarsely, or like galley slaves been tied to an oar, might have happily prolonged many fair years."

A great inconvenience comes by variety of dishes, which causeth the precedent distemperature, "than which (saith Avicenna) nothing is worse; to feed on diversity of meats, or overmuch," Sertorius-like, in lucem cucurra, and as commonly they do in Muscovy and Iceland, to prolong their meals all day long, or all night. Our northern countries offend especially in this, and we in this island (ampititer viventes in pranditis et cibus, as * Polydore notes) are most liberal feeders, but to our own hurt. a Persicos odi quer apparatus: "Excess of meat breedeth sickness, and gluttony causeth cholerick diseases: by surfeiting many perish, but he that dieteth himself prolongeth his life," Ecclus. xxxvii. 29, 30. We account it a great glory for a man to have his table daily furnished with variety of meats; but hear the physician, he pulls thee by the ear as thou sittest, and tellleth thee, "that nothing can be more noxious to thy health than such variety and plenty." Temperance is a bride of gold, and he that can use it aright, 9 ego non summis viris comparo, sed simulimum Deo judico, is like a god than a man: for as it will transform a beast to a man again, so will it make a man a god. To preserve thine honour, health, and to avoid therefore all those inflations, torments, obstructions, crudities, and diseases that come by a full diet, the best way is to feed sparingly of one or two dishes at most, to have ventrem bene moraturum, as Seneca calls it, "to choose one of many, and to feed on that alone," as Crato adviseth his patient. The same counsel a Prosper Calenus gives to Cardinal Cæsius, to use a moderate

* Observat. lib. 1. Assesseatur his in de ellis sumere, certi semper horai. † Ne plus ingerat caverandum quin ve ricularium fortes potest, semperque surgat a mensa non satur. ‡ Siquidem qui simulannum vehementer inguerit cibum, ventriculo laborum inferunt, et flatus maximos promoveunt, Crato. § Quidam maxime comedere muntatur, putantes ea ratione se virens refectare; ignotiores, non ea quae ingerunt posses virens reficere, sed quae proba consuetuant. a Multi appetunt, paqua digerunt. b Saturnali. lib. 7. cap. 4. c Medicus et temperantibus cibus et carnis et animae utilibus est. d Hygiacionem reg. Unciis 14 vel 19 per diem sufficiunt, computato pane, carne ovis, vel alios obsiosus, et totidem vel paulo piueae unicae pors. * Idem, reg. 32. Plures in domibus suis brevi tempore pascentes extinguuntur, qui ei triremibus vinici feliciss. aut gregario pace pasti, sunt et incolam in longam a laete vita prorsus. † Nihil determinet quin diversa nutrientia simul adjuvare, et comedendi tempus prorsus. a Lib. 1. hist. b Hor. ad Lib. 5. ode ult. c Ciborum varietate et copia in eadem messa nihil nocebat hominibus at salutem, Fr. Valerio, observ. 1. 2. cap. 6. d Tnu. orat. pro M. Marcell. e Nullius cibum sumere debet, nisi stomachus sit vacuos. Gordon. lib. med. 1. c. 11. * E multis edulis unum elige, relegetque easter, ex eo comede.
and simple diet: and, though his table be jovially furnished by reason of his state and guests, yet for his own part to single out some one savoury dish, and feed on it. The same is inculcated by Crato, consil. 9. l. 2. to a noble personage affected with this grievance; he would have his highness to dine or sup alone, without all his honourable attendance and courtly company, with a private friend or so, a dish or two, a cup of Rhenish wine, &c. Montanus, consil. 24. for a noble matron enjoins her one dish, and by no means to drink between meals. The like, consil. 229. or not to eat till he be an hungry, which rule Berengarius did most strictly observe, as Hilbertus, Cenomeneonis Episc. writes in his life.

...ca non fut unquam
   Auto stim potus, nec cibus ante famem;*

and which all temperate men do constantly keep. It is a frequent solemnity still used with us, when friends meet, to go to the alehouse or tavern, they are not sociable otherwise: and if they visit one another’s houses, they must both eat and drink. I reprehend it not, moderately used; but to some men nothing can be more offensive; they had better, I speak it with Saint Ambrose, pour so much water in their shoes.

It much avails likewise to keep good order in our diet, “to eat liquid things first, broths, fish, and such meats as are sooner corrupted in the stomach; harder meats of digestion must come last.” Crato would have the supper less than the dinner, which Cardan, Contradict. lib. 1. Tract. 5. contradict. 18. disallows, and that by the authority of Galen, 7. art. curat. cap. 6. and for four reasons he will have the supper biggest: I have read many treatises to this purpose, I know not how it may concern some few sick men, but for my part generally for all, I should subscribe to that custom of the Romans, to make a sparing dinner, and a liberal supper; all their preparation and invitation was still at supper, no mention of dinner. Many reasons I could give, but when all is said pro and con, Cardan’s rule is best, to keep that we are accustomed unto, though it be naught, and to follow our disposition and appetite in some things is not amiss; to eat sometimes of a dish which is hurtful, if we have an extraordinary liking to it. Alexander Severus loved hares and apples above all other meats, as ‘Lampridius relates in his life; one pope pork, another peacock, &c.; what harm came of it? I conclude our own experience is the best physician; that diet which is most propitious to one, is often pernicious to another; such is the variety of palates, humours, and temperatures, let every man observe, and be a law unto himself. Tiberius, in ‘Tacitus, did laugh at all such, that thirty years of age would ask counsel of others concerning matters of diet; I say the same.

These few rules of diet he that keeps, shall surely find great ease and speedy remedy by it. It is a wonder to relate that prodigious temperance of some hermits, anchorites, and fathers of the church: he that shall but read their lives, written by Hierom, Athanasius, &c., how abstemious heatheans have been in this kind, those Curii and Fabritii, those old philosophers, as Pliny records, lib. 11. Xenophon, lib. 1. devit. Socrat., emperors and kings, as Niecephorus relates, Eccles. hist., lib. 18. cap. 8. of Mauritius, Ludovicus Pius, &c., and that admirable example of Ludovicus Cornarius, a patrician of Venice, cannot but admire them. This have they done voluntarily and in health; what shall these private men do that are visited with sickness, and

* L. de atra bib. Simplex sit cibus et non varius; quod licet dignitatis tuae ob cornivas difficile videatur, &c.
* Celsitudo tua prandet sola, ab心思 apparatus alite, contentus sit illustreissimus princeps donibus tantum fructibus, inquo quae solus solus in mensa uratur. * Genera intra aedilitatem a mensa recedit, suo fructus contentus.
* Lib. de Heli et Jejuno. Multò melius in terram vina fullesse.
* Crato. Multum refer non ignorant qui cibis priscis, &c., liquida procedant carnium jura, piscis, fructus, &c. Cena brevior sit prando.
* Annales. Hridere soluunt eos, qui post 30 etatis annum, ad cognoscendum corporis suo usu vel utilia, alie quos consili indigentem.
* A Lesius edit. 1614.
necessarily enjoined to recover, and continue their health? It is a hard thing to observe a strict diet, et qui medici vivit, misere vivit, as the saying is, quale hoc ipsum erit vivere, his si privatus fueris? as good be buried, as so much debauched of his appetite; excessit medicina malum, the physic is more troublesome than the disease, so he complained in the poet, so thou thinkest: yet he that loves himself will easily endure this little misery, to avoid a greater inconvenience; est malis minimum, better do this than do worse. And as Tully holds, "better be a temperate old man than a lascivious youth." Tis the only sweet thing (which he adviseth) so to moderate ourselves, that we may have senectutem in juventute, et in juventute senectutem, be youthful in our old age, staid in our youth, discreet and temperate in both.

MEMB. II.
Retention and Evacuation rectified.

I HAVE declared in the causes what harm costiveness hath done in procuring this disease; if it be so noxious, the opposite must needs be good, or mean at least, as indeed it is, and to this cure necessarily required; maxime conductit, saith Montaltus, cap. 27. it very much avails. Altomarus, cap. 7. "commends walking in a morning into some fair green pleasant fields, but by all means first, by art or nature, he will have these ordinary excrements evacuated." Piso calls it Beneficium Ventris, the benefit, help or pleasure of the belly, for it doth much ease it. Laurentius, cap. 8, Crato, consil. 21. l. 2. prescribes it once a day at least: where nature is defective, art must supply, by those lenitive electuaries, suppositories, condite prunes, turpentine clysters, as shall be shown. Prosper Calenus, lib. de altra bile, commends clysters in hypochondriacal melancholy, still to be used as occasion serves; Peter Cnemander, in a consultation of his pro hypochondriaco, will have his patient continually loose, and to that end sets down there many forms of potions and clysters. Mercurialis, consil. 88. if this benefit come not of its own accord, prescribes clysters in the first place: so doth Montanus, consil. 24. consil. 31 et 229, he commends turpentine to that purpose: the same he ingenuates, consil. 230. for an Italian abbot. Tis very good to wash his hands and face often, to shift his clothes, to have fair linen about him, to be decently and comely attired, for sordes vultum, nastiness defiles and dejects any man that is so voluntarily, or compelled by want, it dulleth the spirits.

Baths are either artificial or natural, both have their special uses in this malady, and as Alexander supposeth, lib. 1. cap. 16. yield as speedy a remedy as any other physic whatsoever. Aetius would have them daily used, assidua balnea, Tetr. 2. sect. 2. cap. 9. Galen cracks how many several cures he hath performed in this kind by use of baths alone, and Rufus pills, moistening them which are otherwise dry. Rhabis makes it a principal cure, Totius cura sit in humectando, to bathe and afterwards anoint with oil. Jason Pratensis, Laurentius, cap. 8. and Montanus set down their peculiar forms of artificial baths. Crato, consil. 17. lib. 2. commends mallows, camomile, violets, borage to be boiled in it, and sometimes fair water alone, and in his following counsel, Balneum aquae dulcis solum sepississe profuisse commertum habemus. So doth Fuchius, lib. 1. cap. 33, Frisimelica, 2. consil. 42. in Trincavellius. Some

---

beside herbs prescribe a ram’s head and other things to be boiled. *Ferne-
lius, consil. 44. will have them used ten or twelve days together; to which he
must enter fasting, and so continue in a temperate heat, and after that frictions
all over the body. Ladius Æugubinus, consil. 142. and Christoph. Æreus, in a
consultation of his, hold once or twice a week sufficient to bathe, the “water
to be warm, not hot, for fear of sweating.” Felix Plater, observe. lib. 1. for a
melancholy lawyer, “will have lotions of the head still joined to these baths,
with a lee wherein capital herbs have been boiled.” *Laurentius speaks of
baths of milk, which I find approved by many others. And still after bath, the
body to be anointed with oil of bitter almonds, of violets, new or fresh butter,
capon’s grease, especially the backbone, and then lotions of the head, em-
brocations, &c. These kinds of baths have been in former times much fre-
quented, and diversely varied, and are still in general use in those eastern
countries. The Romans had their public baths very sumptuous and stupend,
as those of Antoninus and Dioclesian. Plin. 36. saith there were an infinite
number of them in Rome, and mightily frequented; some bathed seven times a
day, as Commodus the emperor is reported to have done: usually twice a
day, and they were after anointed with most costly ointments; rich women
bathed themselves in milk, some in the milk of five hundred she-asses at once:
we have many ruins of such baths found in this island, amongst those paretines
Rosinus, Scot of Antwerp, and other antiquaries, tell strange stories of their
baths. Gillius, l. 4. cap. ult. Topogr. Constant. reckons up 155 public baths
in Constantinople, of fair building; they are still frequented in that city by
the Turks of all sorts, men and women, and all over Greece and those hot
countries: to abisterge belike that fulsome ness of sweat, to which they are there
subject. *Busbequius, in his epistles, is very copious in describing the manner
of them, how their women go covered, a maid following with a box of ointment
to rub them. The richer sort have private baths in their houses; the poorer
go to the common, and are generally so curious in this behalf, that they will
not eat nor drink until they have bathed, before and after meals some, “and
will not make water (but they will wash their hands) or go to stool.” Leo
Afer, l. 3. makes mention of one hundred several baths at Fez in Africa,
most sumptuous, and such as have great revenues belonging to them. Bux-
in this kind; they are very superstitious in their baths, especially women.
Natural baths are praised by some, discommended by others; but it is in
adiverse respect. *Marcus, de Oidinis in Hip. affect. consulted about baths,
condemns them for the heat of the liver, because they dry too fast; and yet by and
by, in another counsel for the same disease, he approves them because they
cleanse by reason of the sulphur, and would have their water to be drunk.
Aretæus, c. 7. commends alum baths above the rest; and *Mercurialis, consil.
88. those of Lucca in that hypochondriac passion. *He would have his
patient tarry there fifteen days together, and drink the water of them, and to
be bucketed, or have the water poured on his head. John Baptist, Syruliacus
cont. 64. commends all the baths in Italy, and drinking of their water, whether
they be iron, alum, sulphur; so doth *Hercules de Saxoniâ. But in that they
cause sweat and dry so much, he confines himself to hypochondriac melancholy

* In quibus judicatur dia sedeat so tempore, ne suadem excidat aut manifestum teporem, sed quadam
fricacione hument. * Aqua non sit calida, sed tepida, ne suadem sequatur. * Lotiones capitis
Nymphæ. * Sandes, lib. 1. saith, that women go twice a week to the baths at least. * Epist. 3.
* Not scum excrement, quin aquam sequent portant qui pars obscuras iacent. Busbequius, ep. 3. Leg.
Tauris. * Hildesheim, specul. 2. de mel. Hypocen: si non adesse Jecoris calidissimas, Thêmias lhuadeant,
et al non sitia hauritis exspectato esset metuenda. * Fol. 141. * Thermas Lucenses adeat, ibique
aqua eis pers 13 dies potest, et calidarium aquarum stilllicidiis tum capitis tum ventriculo de more
subiecit. * In panith.
alone, excepting that of the head and the other. Trincavellius, consil.14. lib. 1.
prefers those Porrector baths before the rest, because of the mixture of brass, iron, alum, and consil. 35. l. 3. for a melancholy lawyer, and consil. 36. in that
hypochondriacal passion, the baths of Aquarias, and 36. consil. the drinking of
them. Frisimelica, consulted amongst the rest in Trincavellius, consil. 42.
lib. 2. prefers the waters of Apona before all artificial baths whatsoever in this
disease, and would have nine years affected with hypochondriacal passions fly
to them as to a holy anchor. Of the same mind is Trincavellius himself
there, and yet both put a hot liver in the same party for a cause, and send
him to the waters of St. Helen, which are much hotter. Montanus, consil.
230. magnifies the Chalderinian baths, and consil. 237. et 239. he extolst
to the same, but with this caution, that the liver be outwardly anointed
with some coolers that it be not overheated. But these baths must be warly
frequented by melancholy persons, or if used, to such as are very cold
of themselves, for as Gabelius concludes of all Dutch baths, and especially of those
of Baden, "they are good for all cold diseases, "naught for choleric, hot and
dry, and all infirmities proceeding of choler, inflammations of the spleen and
liver." Our English baths, as they are hot, must needs incur the same
censure: but D. Turner of old, and D. Jones have written at large of them.
Of cold baths I find little or no mention in any physician, some speak against
them: Cardan alone out of Agathinus "commends bathing in fresh rivers
and cold waters, and adviseth all such as mean to live long to use it, for it
agrees with all ages and complexion, and is most profitable for hot
temperatures." As for sweating, urine, blood-letting by hamrods, or otherwise,
I shall elsewhere more opportunely speak of them.

Immoderate Venus in excess, as it is a cause, or in defect; so moderately
used to some parties an only help, a present remedy. Peter Forestus calls it
aptissimum remedium, a most apposite remedy, "remitting anger, and reason,
that was otherwise bound." Avicenna, Fen. 3. 20, Oribasius, med. collect.
lib. 6. cap. 37. contend out of Rufus and others, "that many madmen,
melancholy, and labouring of the falling sickness, have been cured by this
alone." Montaltus, cap. 27. de melae. will have it drive away sorrow, and all
illusions of the brain, to purge the heart and brain from ill smokes and vapours
that offend them: "and if it be omitted," as Valesius supposest, "it makes
the mind sad, the body dull and heavy." Many other inconveniences are
reckoned up by Mercatus, and by Rodericus à Castro, in their tracts de melan-
cholia virginitum et montalium; ob seminis retentionem succinunt saxp montalae
et virgines, but as Platerus adds, si nubant, sanantur, they rave single, and
pine away, much discontent, but marriage mends all. Marcellus Donatus, lib.
2. med. hist. cap. 1. tells a story to confirm this out of Alexander Benedictus,
of a maid that was mad, ob menses inhibitos, cum in officinam meritorium inci-
disset, à quindecim viris edem nocte compressa, mensum largo profugio, quod
pluribus annis ante constiterit, non sine magno pudore mane menti restituta
discessit. But this must be warily understood, for as Arnoldus objects, lib. 1.
brevar. 18. cap. Quius coitus ad melancholico succum? What affinity have
these two? except it be manifest that superabundance of seed, or fulness of
blood be a cause, or that love, or an extraordinary desire of Venus, have gone
out, or that as Loid. Mercauts excepts, they be very flatuous, and have

melancholico morbos, mororum, fascinationem, abaque animi pathemata.
* Norunt calidis et siecis, cholericis, et ordinibus morbis ex cholera,
hepatid, splenicae affectionsibus.
* Lib. de aqua. Qui breue hoc visum curriculum captut sanat transit-
gere, frigidis aquis saxp inane debent, nullateli cum sit incongrua, calidis iprimsa utilis.
* Solvit Venus rationis vim impediment, ingentes irae remittit, &c.
* Multi comitales, melancholici, insanl,
hojas narrando sanant.
* Si omittatur coitus, contristas, et plurimum gravat corpus et animam.
* Nisi certo constet alium semen aut sanguinem causam esse, aut amor processerit, aut, &c.
been otherwise accustomed unto it. Montaltus, cap. 27. will not allow of moderate Venus to such as have the gout, palsy, epilepsy, melancholy, except they be very lusty, and full of blood. Lodovicus Antonius, lib. med. miscel. in his chapter of Venus, forbids it utterly to all wrestlers, ditchers, labouring men, &c. Ficinus and Marsiliius Cognatus put Venus one of the five mortal enemies of a student: "it consumes the spirits, and weakeneth the brain." Halyabbas the Arabian, 5. Theor. cap. 36. and Jason Pratensis make it the fountain of most diseases: "but most pernicious to them who are cold and dry." a melancholy man must not meddle with it, but in some cases. Plutarch in his book de san. tuend. accounts of it as one of the three principal signs and preservers of health, temperance in this kind: "to rise with an appetite, to be ready to work, and abstain from venery," tria saluberrima, are three most healthful things. We see their opposites how pernicious they are to mankind, as to all other creatures they bring death, and many feral diseases: Immodicas brevis est etas et rara sanectus. Aristotle gives instance in sparrows, which are parum vivaces ob salacitatem, short-lived because of their salacity, which is very frequent, as Scoppius in Priapiis will better inform you. The extremes being both bad, the medium is to be kept, which cannot easily be determined. Some are better able to sustain, such as are hot and moist, phlegmatic, as Hippocrates insinuateth, some strong and lusty, well fed like Hercules. Proculus the emperor, lusty Laurence, prostituhim femineae Messalina the empress, that by philters, and such kind of lascivious meats, use all means in enable themselves: and brag of it in the end, confusi multas simv, occidi vero paucas per ventrem vidisti, as that Spanish Celestina merryly said: others impotent, of a cold and dry constitution, cannot sustain those gymnics without great hurt done to their own bodies, of which number (though they be very prone to it) are melancholy men for the most part.

MEMB. III.

Air rectified. With a digression of the Air.

As a long-winged hawk, when he is first whistled off the fist, mounts aloft, and for his pleasure fetcheth many a circuit in the air, still soaring higher and higher till he come to his full pitch, and in the end, when the game is sprung, comes down amain, and stoops upon a sudden: so will I, having now come at last into these ample fields of air, wherein I may freely expatiate and exercise myself for my recreation, awhile rove, wander round about the world, mount aloft to those ethereal orbs and celestial spheres, and so descend to my former elements again. In which progress I will first see whether that relation of the friar of Oxford be true, concerning those northern parts under the Pole (if I meet obiter with the wandering Jew, Elias Artifex, or Lucian's Icaromenippus, they shall be my guides) whether there be such, 4. Euripes, and a great rock of loadstones, which may cause the needle in the compass still to tend that way, and what should be the true cause of the variation of the compass, is it a magnetic rock, or the pole-star, as Cardan will; or some other
star in the bear, as Marsilius Ficinus; or a magnetic meridian, as Maurolius; \textit{Vel situs in venä terræ}, as Agricola; or the nearness of the next continent, as Cabeus will; or some other cause, as Scaliger, Cortesius, Comini- bences, Peregrinus contend; why at the Azores it looks directly north, otherwise not? In the Mediterranean or Levant (as some observe) it varies 7. grad. by and by 12. and then 22. In the Baltic Seas, near Raseburg in Finland, the needle runs round, if any ships come that way, though Martin Ridley write otherwise, that the needle near the Pole will hardly be forced from his direction. "Tis fit to be inquired whether certain rules may be made of it, as 11. grad. \textit{Lond. variat. alibi} 36. \&c., and that which is more prodigious, the variation varies in the same place, now taken accurately, "tis so much after a few years quite altered from that it was: till we have better intelligence, let our Dr. Gilbert, and Nicholas Cabens the Jesuit, that have both written great volumes of this subject, satisfy these inquirers. Whether the sea be open and navigable by the Pole arctic, and which is the likeliest way, that of Bartson the Hollander, under the Pole itself, which for some reasons I hold best: or by Tretum Davis, or Nova Zembla. Whether Hudson's discovery be true of a new found ocean, any likelihood of Button's Bay in 50. degrees, Hubbard's Hope in 60. that of \textit{ut ultra}, near Sir Thomas Roe's welcome in Northwest Fox, being that the sea ebbs and flows constantly there 15 foot in 12 hours, as our new cards inform us that California is not a cape, but an island, and the west winds make the neap tides equal to the spring, or that there be any probability to pass by the straits of Anian to China, by the promontory of Tabin. If there be, I shall soon perceive whether Marcus Polus the Venetian's narration be true or false, of that great city of Quinsey and Cambalu; whether there be any such places, or that Math. Riccius the Jesuit hath written, China and Cataia be one and one, the great Cham of Tartary and the king of China be the same; Xuntain and Quinsey, and the city of Cambalu be that new Peking, or such a wall 400 leagues long to part China from Tartary: whether Presbyter John be in Asia or Africa; M. Polus Venetus puts him in Asia, the most received opinion is, that he is emperor of the Abyssines, which of old was Ethiopia, now Nubia, under the equator in Africa. Whether Guinea be an island or part of the continent, or that hungry Spaniards' discovery of \textit{Terra Australis Incognita}, or Magellanica, be as true as that of \textit{Mercurius Britannicus}, or his of \textit{Utopia}, or his of \textit{Luctinta}. And yet in likelihood it may be so, for without all question it being extended from the tropic of Capricorn to the circle Antarctic, and lying as it doth in the temperate zone, cannot choose but yield in time some flourishing kingdoms to succeeding ages, as America did unto the Spaniards. Shouten and Le Meir have done well in the discovery of the Straits of Magellan, in finding a more convenient passage to \textit{Maris pacificum}: methinks some of our modern argonauts should prosecute the rest. As I go by Madagascar, I would see that great bird, that can carry a man and horse or an elephant, with that Arabian phoenix described by Adricomius; see the pelicans of Egypt, those Scythian gryphes in Asia: and afterwards in Africa examine the fountains of Nile, whether Herodotus, Seneca, Plu., \textit{lib.} 5. \textit{cap.} 9. Strabo, \textit{lib.} 5. give a true cause of his annual flowing. Pagaphetta discourse rightly of it, or of Niger and Senegal; examine Cardan, Scaliger's reasons, and the rest. Is it from those Etesian winds, or melting of snow in the mountains under the equator (for Jordan yearly overflows when the snow melts in Mount Libanus,) or from those great

dropping perpetual showers which are so frequent to the inhabitants within the tropics, when the sun is vertical, and cause such vast inundations in Senegal, Maragnan, Oromoco and the rest of those great rivers in Zona Torrida, which have all commonly the same passions at set times: and by good husbandry and policy hereafter no doubt may come to be as populous, as well till'd, as fruitful, as Egypt itself or Cauchinthina! I would observe all those motions of the sea, and from what cause they proceed, from the moon (as the vulgar hold) or earth's motion, which Galilæus, in the fourth dialogue of his system of the world, so eagerly proves, and firmly demonstrates; or winds, as *some will. Why in that quiet ocean of Zur, *in mari pacifico*, it is scarce perceived, in our British seas most violent, in the Mediterranean and Red Sea so vehement, irregular, and diverse? Why the current in that Atlantic Ocean should still be in some places from, in some again towards the north, and why they come sooner than go? and so from Moabar to Madagascar in that Indian Ocean, the merchants come in three weeks, as *Scaliger* discuseth, they return scarce in three months, with the same or like winds: the continual current is from east to west. Whether Mount Athos, Pelion, Olympus, Ossa, Caucasus, Atlas, be so high as Pliney, Solinus, *Mela* relate, above clouds, meteors, *ubi nec auere nec venti spirant* (insomuch that they that ascend die suddenly very often, the air is so subtle), 1250 paces high, according to that measure of Dicearchus, or 78 miles perpendicularly high, as Jacobus Maiouiusius, *sec. 3.* et 4 expounding that place of Aristotle about Caucasus; and as *Blancanus* the Jesuit contends out of Clavius and Nonius demonstrations *de Crespusculis*: or rather 32 stadia, as the most received opinion is; or 4 miles, which the height of no mountain doth perpendicularly exceed, and is equal to the greatest depths of the sea, which is, as Scaliger holds, 15300 paces, *Exerc. 38.* others 100 paces. I would see those inner parts of America, whether there be any such great city of Mauoa, or Eldorado, in that golden empire, where the highways are as much beaten (one reports) as between Madrid and Valadolid in Spain; or any such Amazons as he relates, or gigantic Patagones in Chica; with that miraculous mountain *Ybouyapab* in the Northern Brazil, *cujus jugum sternatur in amensissimam plantaem, d.e.* or that of Pariaacacca so high elevated in Peru. The pike of Teneriffe how high it is? 70 miles, or 50* as Patricius holds, or 9 as Snellius demonstrates in his Fratosthenes: see that strange *Cirknickzersey* lake in Carniola, whose waters gush so fast out of the ground, that they will overtake a swift horseman, and by and by with as incredible celerity are supped up: which Lazius and Wernerus make an argument of the Argonauts sailing under ground. And that vast den or hole called *Esmellen* in Muscovia, *qua visitur horrendo hiatus, d.e.* which if any thing casually fall in, makes such a roaring noise, that no thunder, or ordinance, or warlike engine can make the like; such another is Gilber's Cave in Lapland, with many the like. I would examine the Caspian Sea, and see where and how it exonerates itself, after it hath taken in Volga, Jaxares, Oxus, and those great rivers; at the mouth of Oby, or where? What vent the Mexican lake hath, the Titiacan in Peru, or that circular pool in the vale of Terapeia, of which Acosta, *l. 3.* c. 16. hot in a cold country, the spring of which boils up in the middle twenty foot square, and hath no vent but exhalation: and that of *Marie mortuvm* in Palestine, of Thrasyveme, at Peruzium in Italy: the Mediterranean itself. For from the ocean, at the Straits of Gibraltar, there is a perpetual current into the Levant, and so likewise by the likewise the Bosphorus out of the

*See M. Carpenter's Geography, lib. 2. cap. 6. et Bern. Telestas, Lib. de mari.*
*Exercit. 52. de maris mora causae investigandae: prima reciprocationis, secunda varietatis, tertia elicitationis, quaeta cessationis, quinta privationis, sexta contrarietatis.*
*Patricius sith 32 miles in height.*
*Lib. de explicatione locorum Mathem. Aristot.*
*Last. Lib. 17. cap. 18. descript. occid. Ind.*
*Lugo alli vacat.*
*Geor. Wernerus. Aequa tanta celeritate erumpunt et absorbentur, ut expedito equili aditus interclaudant.*
*Boisardus de Magis, cap. de Pilapis.*
Cure of Melancholy. [Part 2. Sec. 2.

Euxine or Black Sea, besides all those great rivers of Nile, Po, Rhone, &c. how is this water consumed, by the sun or otherwise? I would find out with Trajan the fountains of Danube, of Ganges, Oxus, see those Egyptian pyramids, Trajan's bridge, Grotto de Sibilla, Lucullus's fish-ponds, the temple of Nidrose, &c. And, if I could, observe what becomes of swallows, storks, cranes, cuckoos, nightingales, redstarts, and many other kind of singing birds, water-fowls, hawks, &c. some of them are only seen in summer, some in winter; some are observed in the "snow, and at no other times, each having their seasons. In winter not a bird is in Muscovy to be found, but at the spring in an instant the woods and hedges are full of them, saith 2 Herbastine: how comes it to pass? Do they sleep in winter, like Gesner's Alpine mice; or do they lie hid (as 3 Olaus affirms) "in the bottom of lakes and rivers, spiritum continentis? often so found by fishermen in Poland and Scandia, two together, mouth to mouth, wing to wing; and when the spring comes they revive again, or if they be brought into a stove, or to the fire-side." Or do they follow the sun, as Peter Martyr, legat. Babylonicus l. 2. manifestly convicts, out of his own knowledge; for when he was ambassador in Egypt, he saw swallows, Spanish kites, 4 and many such other European birds, in December and January very familiarly flying, and in great abundance, about Alexandria, ubi floridæ tūna arbores ac viridaria. Or lie they hid in caves, rocks, and hollow trees, as most think, in deep tin-mines or sea-cliffs, as 5 Mr. Carew gives out? I conclude of them all, for my part, as 6 Munster doth of cranes and storks; whence they come, whither they go, incompertum adiutum, as yet we know not. We see them here, some in summer, some in winter; "their coming and going is sure in the night: in the plains of Asia (saith he) the storks meet on such a set day, he that comes last is torn in pieces, and so they get them gone." Many strange places, Isthmi, Eauripi, Chersonesi, creeks, havens, promontories, straits, lakes, baths, rocks, mountains, places, and fields, where cities have been ruined or swallowed, battles fought, creatures, sea-monsters, remora, &c. minerals, vegetals, Zoophytes were fit to be considered in such an expedition, and amongst the rest that of 7 Harbastein his Tartar lamb, 8 Hector Boethius' goose-bearing tree in the orchards, to which Cardan, lib. 7. cap. 36. de verum varietat. subscribes: "Vertomannus' wonderful palm, that 9 fly in Hispanicla, that shines like a torch in the night, that one may well see to write; those spherical stones in Cuba which nature bath so made, and those like birds, beasts, fishes, crowns, swords, saws, pots, &c. usually found in the metal mines in Saxony about Mansfield, and in Poland near Kow and Palunkie, as 10 Munster and others relate. Many rare creatures and novelties each part of the world affords: amongst the rest, I would know for a certain whether there be any such men, as Leo Suavius, in his comment on Paracelsus de sanit. tuaed. and 11 Gaguinus records in his description of Muscovy, "that in Lacomoria, a province in Russia, lie fast asleep as dead all winter, from the 27 of November, like frogs and swallows, benumbed with cold, but about the 24 of April in the spring they revive again, and go about their business." I would examine that demonstration of Alexander Picolomins, whether the earth's

*In campis Lovicen, solum visum aut nivis, et ubi nivem aut asetum, autumno se occultant. Hermes Polit. l. 1. l. Baldus. 7 Statim immane vere sylve strepunt eorum cantilens. Muscovit, comment. 7 Immanumque se flaminius, laebusque per hyacim totum, &c. 8 Cetaraque volutque Pontum hymen advenientes nonnisi regionibus Europæis transvolantes. 9 Survey of Cornwall. 10 Porro cicums, quaeum a loco vestigiat, quo se confederat, incompertum adiutum, agnem venientium, descendendum, ut grum venisse cerniunus, nocturnis aperire temporibus. In patentibus Asiae campis certa die congregant se, eae quaeque novissima adventi hancerrat, inde avortant. Cosmog. l. 4. c. 126. 11 Comment. Muscov. 13 Hist. Scott. l. 1. 1. 14 Vertomannus, l. 5. c. 16. mentioneth a tree that bears fruits to eat, wood to burn, bark to make ropes, wine and water to drink, oil and sugar, and leaves as tiles to cover houses, flowers, for clothes, &c. 15 Animal insectum Cusino, ut quis legere vel scribere posset sine alterius ope lumina. Cosmog. lib. 1. cap. 435 et lib. 3. cap. 1. habent ollas à natura formatas è terra extractas, similis illis à figulis factis, coronas, plates, aves, et omnes animantium species. 16 Ut solent hurundines et rane præ trigonis magnitudine mori, et postea reducunt se 24. Aprilis reviviscere.
superficies be bigger than the sea's: or that of Archimedes be true, the superficies of all water is even? Search the depth, and see that variety of sea-monsters and fishes, mermaids, sea-men, horses, &c. which it affords. Or whether that be true which Jordanus Brunus scoffs at, that if God did not detain it, the sea would overwhelm the earth by reason of his higher site, and which Josephus Blancanus the Jesuit in his interpretation on those mathematical places of Aristotle, foolishly fears, and in a just tract proves by many circumstances, that in time the sea will waste away the land, and all the globe of the earth shall be covered with waters; *visum tanatatis, amici* what the sea takes away in one place it adds in another. Methinks he might rather suspect the sea should in time be filled by land, trees grow up, carcases, &c. that all-devouring fire, *omnia devorans et consumens*, will sooner cover and dry up the vast ocean with sand and ashes. I would examine the true seat of that terrestrial 'paradise, and where Ophir was whence Solomon did fetch his gold: from Peruana, which some suppose, or that Aurea Chersonesus, as Dominicus Niger, Arias Montanus, Goropius, and others will. I would censure all Pliny's, Solinus', Strabo's, Sir John Mandeville's, Olaus Magnus', Marcus Polus' lies, correct those errors in navigation, reform cosmographical charts, and rectify longitudes, if it were possible; not by the compass, as some dream, with Mark Ridley in his treatise of magnetical bodies, *cap. 43.* for as Cabeus, *magnet. philos. lib. 3. cap. 4.* fully resolves, there is no hope thence, yet I would observe some better means to find them out.

I would have a convenient place to go down with Orpheus, Ulysses, Hercules, *Lucian's Menippus, at St. Patrick's purgatory, at Trophonius' den, Hecla in Iceland, Ætna in Sicily, to descend and see what is done in the bowels of the earth: do stones and metals grow there still? how come fir trees to be 'dugged out from tops of hills, as in our mosses, and marshes all over Europe? How come they to dig up fish bones, shells, beams, ironworks, many fathoms under ground, and anchors in mountains far remote from all seas.° Anno 1460 at Bern in Switzerland 50 fathom deep, a ship was dugged out of a mountain, where they got metal ore, in which were 48 carcases of men, with other merchandise. That such things are ordinarily found in tops of hills, Aristotle insinuates in his meteors, *Pomponius Mela in his first book, c. de Numidica*, and familiarly in the Alps, saith *Blancanus the Jesuit, the like is to be seen; came this from earthquakes, or from Noah's flood, as Christians suppose, or is there a vicissitude of sea and land, as Anaximenes held of old, the mountains of Thessaly would become seas, and seas again mountains? The whole world belike should be new moulded, when it seemed good to those all-commanding powers, and turned inside out, as we do haycocks in harvest, top to bottom, or bottom to top: or as we turn apples to the fire, move the world upon his centre; that which is under the poles now, should be translated to the equinoctial, and that which is under the torrid zone to the circle arctic and antarctic another while, and so be reciprocally warmed by the sun: or if the worlds be infinite, and every fixed star a sun, with his compassing planets (as Brunus and Campanella conclude) cast three or four worlds into one; or else of one world make three or four new, as it shall seem to them best. To proceed, if the earth be 21,500 miles in compass, its diameter is 7,000 from us to our antipodes, and what shall be comprehended in all that space? What is the centre of the earth? is it pure element only, as Aristotle decrees, inhabited (as Paracelsus thinks) with creatures, whose chaos is the earth: or with fairies,
as the woods and waters (according to him) are with nymphs, or as the air with spirits? Dionisiodorus, a mathematician in 'Pliny, that sent a letter ad superos after he was dead, from the centre of the earth, to signify what distance the same centre was from the superficies of the same, viz., 42,000 stadiums, might have done well to have satisfied all these doubts. Or is it the place of hell, as Virgil in his Æneides, Plato, Lucian, Dante, and others poetically describe it, and as many of our divines think? In good earnest, Anthony Rusca, one of the society of that Ambrosian College, in Milan, in his great volume de Inferno, lib. 1. cap. 47. is stiff in this tenet, 'tis a corporeal fire tow, cap. 5, l. 2. as he there disputes. "Whateover philosophers write (saith Surius), there be certain mouths of hell, and places appointed for the punishment of men's souls, as at Hecla in Iceland, where the ghosts of dead men are familiarly seen, and sometimes talk with the living: God would have such visible places, that mortal men might be certainly informed, that there be such punishments after death, and learn hence to fear God." Kranzius, Dan. hist. lib. 2. cap. 24. subscribes to this opinion of Surius, so doth Celerus, cap. 12. lib. de immortal. animae (out of the authority belike of St. Gregory, Durand, and the rest of the schoolmen, who derive as much from Ætna in Sicily, Lipari, Hiera, and those sulphureous vulcanian islands) making Terra del Fuego, and those frequent volcanoes in America, of which Acosta, lib. 3. cap. 24. that fearful mount Heckeberg in Norway, an especial argument to prove it, "where lamentable screeches and howlings are continually heard, which strike a terror to the auditors; fiery chariots are commonly seen to bring in the souls of men in the likeness of crows, and devils ordinarily go in and out." Such another proof is that place near the Pyramids in Egypt, by Cairo, as well to confirm this as the resurrection, mentioned by "Kornmannus, mirac. mort. lib. 1. cap. 38. Camerarius, oper. suc. cap. 37. Breedenbachius, pereg. terr. sanct. and some others, "where once a year dead bodies arise about March, and walk, after awhile hide themselves again: thousands of people come yearly to see them." But these and such like testimonies others reject, as fables, illusions of spirits, and they will have no such local known place, more than Styx or Phlegethon, Pluto's court, or that poetical Infernus, where Homer's soul was seen hanging on a tree, &c., to which they ferried over in Charen's boat, or went down at Hermione in Greece, compendiaria ad inferos via, which is the shortest cut, quia nullum à mortuis nullum ex loci expouent (saith Gerbelius), and besides there were no fees to be paid. Well then, is it hell, or purgatory, as Bellarmine: or Limbus patrum, as Gallusius will, and as Rusca will (for they have made maps of it), or Ignatius parlour? Virgil, sometime bishop of Saltburg (as Aventinus anno 745. relates) by Bonifacius bishop of Mentz was therefore called in question, because he held antipodes (which they made a doubt whether Christ died for), and so by that means took away the seat of hell, or so contracted it, that it could bear no proportion to heaven, and contradicted that opinion of Austin, Basil, Lectantius, that held the earth round as a trencher (whom Acosta and common experience more largely confute), but not as a ball; and Jerusalem where Christ died the middle of it; or Delos, as the fabulous Greeks feigned: because when Jupiter let two eagles loose, to fly from the world's ends east and west, they met at Delos. But that scruple of Bonifacius is now quite taken away by our latter divines: Francis Lucas Ribera, in cap. 14. Apo. alyp. will have hell a material and local fire in the centre of the earth, 200 Italian miles in diameter, as he defines it out of those words, Exivit sanguis de terrâ—per stadia mile sexcenta, &c. But Lissius
lib. 13. de mortibus divinis, cap. 24. will have this local hell far less, one Dutch mile in diameter; all filled with fire and brimstone: because, as he there demonstrates, that space, cubically multiplied, will make a sphere able to hold eight hundred thousand millions of damned bodies (allowing each body six foot square) which will abundantly suffice; Cùm certum sit, inquit, factâ subductione, non futuros centes mille milliones damnatorum. But if it be no material fire (as Sco-Thomas, Bonaventure, Soncinas, Vossius, and others argue) it may be there or elsewhere, as Keckerman disputes, System. Theol. for sure somewhere it is, certum est alienubi, esti definitus circulus non assignetur. I will end the controversy in *Austin’s words, “Better doubt of things concealed, than to contend about uncertainties, where Abraham’s bosom is, and hell fire.”

Vix à manusuetis, à contentiosis rumquam inventitur; scarce the meek, the contentious shall never find. If it be solid earth, ’tis the fountain of metals, waters, which by his innate temper turns air into water, which springs up in several chinks, to moisten the earth’s superficies, and that in a tenfold proportion (as Aristotle holds) or else these fountains come directly from the sea, by secret passages, and so made fresh again, by running through the bowels of the earth; and are either thick, thin, hot, cold, as the matter or minerals are by which they pass; or as Peter Martyr, Ocean. Decad. lib. 9. and some others hold, from abundance of rain that falls, or from that ambient heat and cold, which alters that inward heat, and so per consequens the generation of waters. Or else it may be full of wind, or a sulphurous innate fire, as our meteorologists inform us, which sometimes breaking out, causeth those horrible earthquakes, which are so frequent in these days in Japan, China, and oftentimes swallow up whole cities. Let Lucian’s Menippus consult with or ask of Tiresias, if you will not believe philosophers, he shall clear all your doubts when he makes a second voyage.

In the mean time let us consider of that which is sub dio, and find out a true cause, if it be possible, of such accidents, meteors, alterations, as happen above ground. Whence proceed that variety of manners, and a distinct character (as it were) to several nations? Some are wise, subtle, witty; others dull, sad and heavy; some big, some little, as Tully de Fato, Plato in Timæo, Vegetius and Bodîne prove at large, method. cap. 5. some soft, and some hardy, barbarous, civil, black, dun, white, is it from the air, from the soil, influence of stars, or some other secret cause? Why doth Africa breed so many venomous beasts, Ireland none? Athens owls, Crete none? Why hath Gaulis and Thebes no swallows (so Pausanias informeth us) as well as the rest of Greece, *Ithaca no hares, Pontus asses, Scythia swine? whence comes this variety of complexities, colours, plants, birds, beasts, *metals, peculiar almost to every place? Why so many thousand strange birds and beasts proper to America alone, as Acosta demands, lib. 4. cap. 36. were they created in the six days, or ever in Noah’s ark? if there, why are they not dispersed and found in other countries? It is a thing (saith he) hath long held me in suspense; no Greek, Latin, Hebrew ever heard of them before, and yet as differing from our European animals, as an egg and a chestnut; and which is more, kine, horses, sheep, &c., till the Spaniards brought them, were never heard of in those parts? How comes it to pass, that in the same site, in one latitude, to such as are Periæci, there should be such difference of soil, complexion, colour, metal, air, &c. The Spaniards are white, and so are the Italians, when as the inhabitants about *Caputt

* Mollus dubitare de occultis, quam l’igicare de incertis, ubi flamma inferni, &c.
* See Dr. Raynolds prelect. 55. in Apoc.
* As they come from the sea, so they return to the sea again by secret passages, as in all likelihood the Caspian sea vents itself into the Euxine or ocean.
* Seneca, quaest. lib. cap. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 16, 11, 13. de causis aquarum perpetuas.
* In his nec pullos hircundas exclusam, neque, &c.
* Th. Ravenus, lib. de vit. hom. praecog. ca. ult.; *At Quito in Peru. Plus augr quam terræ solitur in aurifodinis.
* Ad Caput hoiis specto, id est ait Algerinâ: si sol causâ, car non H spani et Italæ aquæ ngrl, in cadem latitudine, aquæ distantæ ab Equatore, illi ad Austrum, hui ad Boream? qui
bonae spei are blackamores, and yet both alike distant from the equator: may, that they dwell in the same parallel line with these negroes, as about the Straits of Magellan, are white coloured, and yet some in Presbyter John's country in Ethiopia are dun; they in Zeilan and Malabar parallel with them again black: Manamotaps in Africa, and St. Thomas Isle are extreme hot, both under the line, coal black their inhabitants, whereas in Peru they are quite opposite in colour, very temperate, or rather cold, and yet both alike elevated. Moscow in 53. degrees of latitude extreme cold, as those northern countries usually are, having one perpetual hard frost all winter long; and in 52. deg. lat. sometimes hard frost and snow all summer, as Button's Bay, &c. or by fits; and yet England near the same latitude, and Ireland very moist, warm, and more temperate in winter than Spain, Italy, or France. Is it the sea that causeth this difference, and the air that comes from it? Why then is

*Ister* so cold near the Euxine, Pontus, Bithynia, and all Thrace? *frigidas regiones* Maginus calls them, and yet their latitude is but 42. which should be hot: Quevira, or Nova Albion in America, bordering on the sea, was so cold in July, that our Englishmen could hardly endure it. At Norembegins in 45. lat. all the sea is frozen ice, and yet in a more southern latitude than ours. New England, and the island of Cambial Coelos, which that noble gentleman Mr. Vaughan, or Orpheus junior, describes in his Golden Fleece, is in the same latitude with Little Britain in France, and yet their winter begins not till January, their spring till May; which search he accounts worthy of an astronomer: is this from the easterly winds, or melting of ice and snow dissolved within the circle arctic; or that the air being thick, is longer before it be warm by the sunbeams, and once heated like an oven will keep itself from cold? Our climes breed lice, "Hungary and Ireland *male audiant* in this kind; come to the Azores, by a secret virtue of that air they are instantly consumed, and all our European vermin almost, saith Ortelius. Egypt is watered with Nilius not far from the sea, and yet there it seldom or never rains: Rhodes, an island of the same nature, yields not a cloud, and yet our islands ever dropping and inclining to rain. The Atlantic Ocean is still subject to storms, but in Del Zur, or *Mare pacifico*, seldom or never any. Is it from tropic stars, *aperto portarum*, in the dodecometers or constellations, the moon's mansions, such aspects of planets, such winds, or dissolving air, or thick air, which causeth this and the like differences of heat and cold? Bodine relates of a Portuguese ambassador, that coming from *Lisbon* to *Dantzic* in Spruce, found greater heat there than at any time at home. Don Garcia de Sylva, legate to Philip III., king of Spain, residing at Ispahan in Persia,16,19, in his letter to the Marquess of Edmar, makes mention of greater cold in Ispahan, whose latitude is 31. gr. than ever he felt in Spain, or any part of Europe. The torrid zone was by our predecessors held to be uninhabitable, but by our modern travellers found to be most temperate, bedewed with frequent rains, and moistening showers, the breeze and cooling blasts in some parts, as *Acosta describes, most pleasant and fertile. Arica in Chili is by report one of the sweetest places that ever the sun shined on, *Olympos terrae*, a heaven on earth: how incomparably do some extol Mexico in Nova Hispania, Peru, Brazil, &c., in some again hard, dry, sandy, barren, a very desert, and still in the same latitude. Many times we find great diversity of air in the same country, by reason of the site to seas,
hills or dales, want of water, nature of soil, and the like: as in Spain Arragon is aspera et sicca, harsh and evil inhabited; Estremadura is dry, sandy, barren most part, extreme hot by reason of his plains; Andalusia another paradise; Valencia a most pleasant air, and continually green; so is it about Granada, on the one side fertile plains, on the other, continual snow to be seen all summer long on the hill tops. That their houses in the Alps are three quarters of the year covered with snow, who knows not? That Teneriffe is so cold at the top, extreme hot at the bottom: Mons Atlas in Africa, Libanus in Palestine, with many such, tantos inter arbores fidos nivibus, *Tacitus calls them, and Radzivilus, epist. 2. fol. 27. yields it to be far hotter there than in any part of Italy: 'tis true; but they are highly elevated, near the middle region, and therefore cold, ob panem solumin radiorum refractionem, as Serrarius answers, com. in 3. cap. Josua quest. 5. Abulensis, quest. 37. In the heat of summer, in the king’s palace in Escurial, the air is most temperate, by reason of a cold blast which comes from the snowy mountains of Sierra de Cadarama hard by, when as in Toledo it is very hot: so in all other countries. The causes of these alterations are commonly by reason of their nearness (I say) to the middle region: but this diversity of air, in places equally situated, elevated and distant from the pole, can hardly be satisfied with that diversity of plants, birds, beasts, which is so familiar with us: with Indians, everywhere, the sun is equally distant, the same vertical stars, the same irradiations of planets, aspects like, the same nearness of seas, the same superficies, the same soil, or not much different. Under the equator itself, amongst the Sierras, Andes, Lanos, as Herrera, Laet, and Acosta contend, there is tam mirabilis et inopinata varietas, such variety of weather, ut merito exercat ingens, that no philosophy can yet find out the true cause of it. When I consider how temperate it is in one place, saith Acosta, within the tropic of Capricorn, as about Laplata, and yet hard by at Potosi, in that same altitude, mountainous alike, extreme cold; extreme hot in Brazil, &c. Hic ego, saith Acosta, philosophiam Aristotelis meteorologicam vehementer irrigi, can, &c., when the sun comes nearest to them, they have great tempests, storms, thunder and lightning, great store of rain, snow, and the foulest weather: when the sun is vertical, their rivers overflow, the morning fair and hot, noon-day cold and moist: all which is opposite to us. How comes it to pass? Scaliger, poetices, l. 3. c. 16. discurseth thus of this subject. How comes, or wherefore is this tene-raria siderum disposition, this rash placing of stars, or as Epicurus will, fortuita, or accidental? Why are some big, some little, why are they so confusedly, unequally situated in the heavens, and so set much out of order? In all other things nature is equal, proportionable, and constant; there be justa dimensiones, et prudens partium disposition, as in the fabric of man, his eyes, ears, nose, face, members are correspondent, cur non idem coelo opere omnium pulcherrimo? Why are the heavens so irregular, neque paribus molibus, neque paribus intervallis, whence is this difference? Diversos (he concludes) efficiere locorum Genios, to make diversity of countries, soils, manners, customs, characters, and constitutions among us, ut quantum vicinia ad charitatem addat, sidera distrahant ad pernicium, and so by this means flavio vel monte distincti sunt dissimiles, the same places almost shall be distinguished in manners. But this reason is weak and most insufficent. The fixed stars are removed since Ptolemy’s time 26 gr. from the first of Aries, and if the earth be immovable, as their site varies, soshould countrie vary, and diverse alterations would follow. But this we perceive not; as in Tully’s time with us in Britain, celum visum faciam, et in quo facilè generantur nubes, &c., 'tis so still. Wherefore Bodine,

---


---

* Digression of Air.*

Mem. 3.]
Theat. nat. lib. 2. and some others, will have all these alterations and effects immediately to proceed from those genii, spirits, angels, which rule and dominate in several places; they cause storms, thunder, lightning, earthquakes, rains, tempests, great winds, floods, &c., the philosophers of Conimbriga, will refer this diversity to the influence of that empyrean heaven: for some say the eccentricity of the sun is come nearer to the earth than in Ptolemy's time, the virtue therefore of all the vegetals is decayed, *men grow less, &c. There are that observe new motions of the heavens, new stars, polantia sidera, comets, clouds, call them what you will, like those Medicean, Burbonian, Austrian planets, lately detected, which do not decay, but come and go, rise higher and lower, hide and show themselves amongst the fixed stars, amongst the planets, above and beneath the moon, at set times, now nearer, now farther off, together, asunder; as he that plays upon a sackbut by pulling it up and down alters his tones and tunes, do they their stations and places, though to us undiscovered; and from those motions proceed (as they conceive) diverse alterations. Clavins conjectures otherwise, but they be but conjectures. About Damascus in Coeli-Syria, is a *Paradise, by reason of the plenty of waters, in promptu causa est, and the deserts of Arabia barren, because of rocks, rolling seas of sands, and dry mountains quod inaquosa (saith Adricomiun) montes habens asperos, saxosos, precipitias, horros et mortis speciem pro se ferentes, "uninhabitable therefore of men, birds, beasts, void of all green trees, plants, and fruits, a vast rocky horrid wilderness, which by no art can be manured, 'bis evident." Bohemia is cold, for that it lies all along to the north. But why should it be so hot in Egypt, or there never rain? Why should those *etesian and north-eastern winds blow continually and constantly so long together, in some places, at set times, one way still, in the dog-days only: here perpetual drought, there dropping showers; here foggy mists, there a pleasant air; here *terrible thunder and lightning at such set seasons, here frozen seas all the year, there open in the same latitude, to the rest no such thing, may quite opposite is to be found? Sometimes (as in *Peru) on the one side of the mountains it is hot, on the other cold, here snow, there wind, with infinite such. Fromundus in his Meteors will excuse or solve all this by the sun's motion, but when there is such diversity to such as Periacci, or very near site, how can that position hold?

Who can give a reason of this diversity of meteors, that it should rain *stones, frogs, mice, &c., rats, which they call Lemmer in Norway, and are manifestly observed (as Munster writes) by the inhabitants, to descend and fall with some facetul showers, and like so many locusts, consume all that is green. Leo Afer speaks as much of locusts, about Fez in Barbary there be infinite swarms in their fields upon a sudden: so at Arles in France, 1553, the like happened by the same mischief, all their grass and fruits were devoured, magna incolumum admirarien et consternation (as Vilerola, obser. med. lib. 1. obser. 1. relates) cellum subito obvmmbrabant, &c., he concludes, *it could not be from natural causes, they cannot imagine whence they come, but from heaven. Are these and such creatures, corn, wood, stones, worms, wool, blood, &c., lifted up into the middle region by the sunbeams, as Baracellus the physician disputes, and thence let fall with showers, or there engendered? *Cornelius Gemma is of that opinion, they are there conceived by celestial influences: others suppose they are immediately from God, or prodigies raised by art and illusions of spirits, which are princes of the air; to whom Bodin., lib. 2. Theat.

3 Terra molis homines tune edent acque pusillae. 7 Nav. 1. 1. c. 5. 9 Strabo. 4 As under the equator in many parts, shows here at such a time, winds at such a time, the Bres they call it. 5 Ferd. Cortesus, lib. Novus orbis inscript. 8 Lapidatam est. Livie. 6 Cosmog. lib. 4. cap. 22. Hae tempertus decidant et nubibus facillimem, depacemurque more locustera omnia virentia. 10 Hort. Genial. 11 An a terra susem explicantur a solo literumque eum pluvias precipitatam? &c. 1 Tam omnium pro- venius in naturales causas referri vix potest. 12 Cosmog. c. 6.
Digression of Air.

323

Nat. subscribes. In fine, of meteors in general, Aristotel’s reasons are exploded by Bernardinus Telesius, by Paracelsus his principles confuted, and other causes assigned, sal, sulphur, mercury, in which his disciples are so expert, that they can alter elements, and separate at their pleasure, make perpetual motions, not as Cardan, Tasneir, Peregrinus, by some magnetic virtue, but by mixture of elements; imitate thunder, like Salomeus, snow, hail, the sea’s ebbing and flowing, give life to creatures (as they say) without generation, and what not? P. Nonius Salociensis and Kepler take upon them to demonstrate that no meteors, clouds, fogs, vapours, arise higher than fifty or eighty miles, and all the rest to be purer air or element of fire: which Cardan, Tycho, and John Pena manifestly confute by refractions and many other arguments, there is no such element of fire at all. If, as Tycho proves, the moon be distant from us fifty and sixty semi-diameters of the earth: and as Peter Nonius will have it, the air be so angust, what proportion is there betwixt the other three elements and it? To what use serves it? Is it full of spirits which inhabit it, as the Paracelsians and Platonists hold, the higher the more noble, “full of birds, or a mere vacuum to no purpose?” It is much controverted between Tycho Brahé and Christopher Rotman, the landgrave of Hesse’s mathematician, in their astronomical epistles, whether it be the same Diaphanaum, clearness, matter of air and heavens, or two distinct essences? Christopher Rotman, John Pena, Jordanus Brunus, with many other late mathematicians, contend it is the same and one matter throughout, saving that the higher still the purer it is, and more subtle; as they find by experience in the top of some hills in America; if a man ascend, he faints instantly for want of thicker air to refrigerate the heart. Acosta, l. 3. c. 9. calls this mountain Periacacca in Peru; it makes men cast and vomit, he saith, that climb it, as some other of those Andes do in the deserts of Chili for five hundred miles together, and for extremity of cold to lose their fingers and toes. Tycho will have two distinct matters of heaven and air; but to say truth, with some small qualification, they have one and the self-same opinion about the essence and matter of heavens; that it is not hard and impenetrable, as peripatetics hold, transparent, of a quinta essentia, “but that it is penetrable and soft as the air itself is, and that the planets move in it, as birds in the air, fishes in the sea. This they prove by motion of comets, and otherwise (though Claremontius in his Antitycho stiffly opposes), which are not generated, as Aristotel teacheth, in the aerial region, of a hot and dry exhalation, and so consumed: but as Anaxagoras and Democritus held of old, of a celestial matter: and as Tycho, Eliseus, Reslin, Thaddeus, Hagggesius, Pena, Rotman, Fra- castorius, demonstrate by their progress, parallaxes, refractions, motions of the planets, which interfere and cut one another’s orbs, now higher, and then lower, as amongst the rest, which sometimes, as Kepler confirms by his own, and Tycho’s accurate observations, comes nearer the earth than the Sun, and is again off some afoft in Jupiter’s orb; and other sufficient reasons, far above the moon: exploding in the mean time that element of fire, those fictitious first watery movers, those heavens I mean above the firmament, which Delrio, Lodovicus Imola, Patricius, and many of the fathers affirm; those monstrous orbs of eccentric, and Eccentric Epicycles deserentes. Which howsoever Ptolomy, Alhasen, Vitello, Purbachius, Maginus, Clavius, and many of their associates, stiffly maintain to be real orbs, eccentric, concentric, circles aequant,  

\[\text{b} \text{Cardan saith vapours rise 288 miles from the earth, Erastosthenes 43 miles.} \text{c} \text{In Progymnass.} \text{d} \text{Fretili. ad Eucrid. Catep.} \text{e} \text{Manusciput, birds that live continually in the air, and are never seen on ground but dead: See Ulysses Alendorandi. Ornithol. Scal. exerc. cap. 229.} \text{f} \text{Lact. descript. Amer.} \text{g} \text{Epist. lib. 1. p. 83. Ex quibus constat nec diversa aedris et aetheris diaphana esse, nec refractiones aliunde quam in crasso aere causarum.—Non dura aut impervia, sed liquida, subtilia, mutaque Planetarum facile cedens.} \text{h} \text{In Progymn. lib. 2. exempl. quinque.} \text{i} \text{In Theor. nova Met. celestium 1078.} \text{j} \text{Epit. Astron. lib. 4.} \text{k} \text{Maiores minus hinc consequuntur absurdum, et si nihil aliud, tot Comete in aethere animadversi, qui nullius orbis ductum comitantur, id ipsum sufficienter refellunt.} \text{l} \text{Tycho, astr. epist. page 107.} \]
&c., are absurd and ridiculous. For who is so mad to think that there should be so many circles, like subordinate wheels in a clock, all impenetrable and hard, as they feign, add and subtract at their pleasure. \( ^1 \) Maginus makes eleven heavens, subdivided into their orbs and circles, and all too little to serve those particular appearances: Fracastorius, seventy-two homocentrics; Tycho Brahe, Nicholas Rauerus, Heliseus Rœslin, have peculiar hypotheses of their own inventions; and they be but inventions, as most of them acknowledge, as we admit of equators, tropics, colures, circles arctic and antarctic, for doctrine's sake (though Ramus thinks them all unnecessary), they will have them supposed only for method and order. Tycho hath feigned I know not how many subdivisions of epicycles in epicycles, &c., to calculate and express the moon's motion: but when all is done, as a supposition, and no otherwise; not (as he holds) hard, impenetrable, subtle, transparent, &c., or making music, as Pythagoras maintained of old, and Robert Constantine of late, but still, quiet, liquid, open, &c.

If the heavens then be penetrable, as these men deliver, and no lets, it were not amiss in this aerial progress to make wings and fly up, which that Turk in Busbesquius made his fellow-citizens in Constantinople believe he would perform: and some new-fangled wits, methinks, should some time or other find out: or if that may not be, yet with a Galileo's glass, or Icaromenippus' wings in Lucian, command the spheres and heavens, and see what is done amongst them. Whether there be generation and corruption, as some think, by reason of ethereal comets, that in Cassiopeia, 1572, that in Cygno, 1600, that in Sagittarius, 1604, and many like, which by no means Jul. Cæsar la Galla, that Italian philosopher, in his physical disputation with Galileus, de phenomenis in orbe hunc, cap. 9. will admit: or that they were created ab initio, and show themselves at set times: and as \( ^{Heliseus Rœslin contends, have poles, axle-trees, circles of their own, and regular motions. For, non pereunt, sed minuuntur et disparent,} \( ^{Blancanus holds they come and go by fits, casting their tails still from the sun: some of them, as a burning-glass projects the sunbeams from it; though not always neither: for sometimes a comet casts his tail from Venus, as Tycho observes. And as \( ^{Heliseus Rœslin} \) of some others, from the moon, with little stars about them ad stuporem astronomorum; cum multis alis in calo miraculis, all which argue with those Medicean, Austrian, and Burbonian stars, that the heaven of the planets is indistinct, pure, and open, in which the planets move certis legibus ac metis. Examine likewise, \( ^{An calum sit coloratum?} \) Whether the stars be of that bigness, distance, as astronomers relate, so many in \( ^{number, 1026, or 1725, as J. Bayerus;} \) or as some Rabbins, 29,000 myriads; or as Galileo discovers by his glasses, infinite, and that \( \text{via lactea, a confused light of small stars, like so many nails in a door: or all in a row, like those 12,000 isles of the Maldives in the Indian ocean? Whether the least visible star in the eighth sphere be eighteen times bigger than the earth;} \) and as Tycho calculates, 14,000 semi-diameters distant from it? Whether they be thicker parts of the orbs, as Aristotle delivers: or so many habitable worlds, as Democritus? Whether they have light of their own, or from the sun, or give light round, as Patritius discourseth? \( ^{An egué distent à centro mundi?} \) Whether light be of their essence; and that light be a substance or an accident? Whether they be hot by themselves, or by accident cause heat? Whether there be such a precession of the equinoxes as Copernicus holds, or that the eighth sphere move? \( ^{An bené philosophentur, R. Bacon and J. Dee, Aphorism. de multiplicationes species erum?} \) Whether there be any such images ascending with each degree of the zodiac in the east, as Aliacensis feigns? \( ^{An} \)

\( ^{1} \) In Theorieis planetarum, three above the firmament, which all wise men reject. \( ^{2} \) Theor. nova coelest. Meteor. \( ^{3} \) Lib. de fabricis mundi. \( ^{4} \) Lib de Cometes. \( ^{5} \) An sit crux et nubecula in coelis ad Polum Antarticum, quod ex Corpuslo refert Patritius.\n
\( \text{Cure of Melancholy.} \) [Part. 2. Sec. 2.]
aqua super calum? as Patritius and the schoolmen will, a crystalline "watery heaven, which is b certain to be understood of that in the middle region? for otherwise, if at Noah's flood the water came from thence, it must be above a hundred years falling down to us, as "some calculate. Besides, An terra sit animata? which some so confidently believe, with Orpheus, Hermes, Averroes, from which all other souls of men, beasts, devils, plants, fishes, &c., are derived, and into which again, after some revolutions, as Plato in his Timeus, Plotinus in his Enneades more largely discuss, they return (see Chalcidius and Ben- nius, Plato's commentators), as all philosophical matter, in materia primam. Keplerus, Patritius, and some other Neoterics, have in part revived this opinion. And that every star in heaven hath a soul, angel or intelligence to animate or move it, &c. Or to omit all smaller controversies, as matters of less moment, and examine that main paradox, of the earth's motion, now so much in question: Aristarchus Samius, Pythagoras maintained it of old, Democritus and many of their scholars, Didacus Astunica, Anthony Fascarinus, a Carmelite, and some other commentators, will have Job to insinuate as much, cap. 9. ver. 4. Qui commovet terram de loco suo, &c., and that this one place of scripture makes more for the earth's motion than all the other prove against it; whom Pineda confutes most contradict. Howsoever, it is re- viewed since by Copernicus, not as a truth, but a supposition, as he himself confesseth in the preface to pope Nicholas, but now maintained in good earnest by "Calegninus, Telesius, Kepler, Rotman, Gilbert, Digges, Galileo, Campanella, and especially by "Lansbergius, naturae, rationi, et veritati consenueum, by Origanus, and some "others of his followers. For if the earth be the centre of the world, stand still, and the heavens move, as the most received "opinion is, which they call inordinatum celli dispositionem, though stiffly maintained by Tycho, Ptolemeus, and their adherents, quis ille furor? &c., what fury is that, saith Dr. Gilbert, satis animosae, as Cabeus notes, that shall drive the heavens about with such incomprehensible celerity in twenty-four hours, when as every point of the firmament, and in the equator, must needs move (so "Clavius calculates) 176,660 in one 246th part of an hour: and an arrow out of a bow must go seven times about the earth whilst a man can say an Ave Maria, if it keep the same space, or compass the earth 1884 times in an hour, which is supra humanam cogitationem, beyond human conceit: ocyror et jaculo, et ventos aquante sugitta. A man could not ride so much ground, going 40 miles a day, in 2904 years, as the firmament goes in 23 hours: or so much in 2.03 years, as the firmament in one minute: quod incredibile videtur: and the "pole-star, which to our thinking, scarce moveth out of its place, goeth a bigger circuit than the sun, whose diameter is much larger than the diameter of the heaven of the sun, and 20,000 semi-diameters of the earth from us, with the rest of the fixed stars, as Tycho proves. To avoid therefore these impossibilities, they ascribe a triple motion to the earth, the sun immovable in the centre of the whole world, the earth centre of the moon, alone, above ε and ☼ beneath ω, δ₂, ω₂ (or as "Origanus and others will, one single motion to the earth, still placed in the centre of the world, which is more probable,) a single motion to the firmament, which moves in 30 or 26 thousand years: and so the planets, Saturn in 30 years absolvs his sole and proper motion, Jupiter in 12, Mars in 3, &c., and so solve all appearances better than any whatsoever: calculate all motions, be they in longum or latum, direct, stationary, retrograde, ascent or descent, without epicycles, intricate

*Gilbertus Origanus.  bSee this discussed in Sir Walter Raleigh's history, in Zanch. ad Casman.

"Vidit Fromandum de Meteoris, lib. 5. artio, 5. et Lansbergium.  dPeculiari libello.  Comment. in motum terrae, Middlebergt, 1636. 4.  ePeculiari libello.  See Mr. Carpenter's Geogr. cap. 4. lib. 1.  Fmpanella et Origanus pref. Ephemer. where Scripture places are answered.  fDe Magnete.  gComment. in 2 cap. sphær. Jo. de Sacr. Bose.  hDist. 3. gr. 1. a Polo.  iPref. Ephem.
eccentricis, &c., rectius commodiusque per unicum motum terrae, saith Lansbergius, much more certain than by those Alphonsine, or any such tables, which are grounded from those other suppositions. And 'tis true they say, according to optic principles, the visible appearances of the planets do so indeed answer to their magnitudes and orbs, and come nearest to mathematical observations and precedent calculations, there is no repugnancy to physical axioms, because no penetration of orbs; but then between the sphere of Saturn and the firmament, there is such an incredible and vast space or distance (7,000,000 semi-diameters of the earth, as Tycho calculates) void of stars: and besides, they do so enhance the bigness of the stars, enlarge their circuit, to solve those ordinary objections or parallaxes and retrogradations of the fixed stars, that alteration of the poles, elevation in several places or latitude of cities here on earth (for, say they, if a man's eye were in the firmament, he should not at all discern that great annual motion of the earth, but it would still appear punctum indivisible and seem to be fixed in one place, of the same bigness) that it is quite opposite to reason, to natural philosophy, and all out as absurd as disproportioned (so some will) as prodigious, as that of the sun's swift motion of heavens. But hoc posito, to grant this their tenet of the earth's motion: if the earth move, it is a planet, and shines to them in the moon, and to the other planetary inhabitants, as the moon and they do to us upon the earth: but shine she doth, as Galileo, * Kepler, and others prove, and then per consequens, the rest of the planets are inhabited, as well as the moon, which he grants in his dissertation with Galileo's Nuncius Sidereus 14 that there be Jovial and Saturn inhabitants,"&c., and those several planets have their several moons about them, as the earth hath hers, as Galileo hath already evinced by his glasses: four about Jupiter, two about Saturn (though Sitius the Florentine, Fortunius Licoetus, and Jul. Caesar la Galla cavil at it) yet Kepler, the emperor's mathematician, confirms out of his experience that he saw as much by the same help, and more about Mars, Venus, and the rest they hope to find out, peradventure even amongst the fixed stars, which Brunus and Brutius have already averred. Then (I say) the earth and they be planets alike, inhabited alike, moved about the sun, the common centre of the world alike, and it may be those two green children which Nubrigensis speaks of in his time, that fell from heaven, came from thence; and that famous stone that fell from heaven in Aristotle's time, olymp. 84, anno tertio, ad Caput Fluenta, recorded by Laertius and others, or Ancile or buckle in Numa's time, recorded by Festus. We may likewise insert with Campanela and Brunus, that which Pythagoras, Aristarchus, Samius, Heraclitus, Epicurus, Melissus, Democritus, Leucippos maintained in their ages, there be infinite worlds, and infinite earths or systems, in infinito æther, which * Eusebius collects out of their tenets, because infinite stars and planets like unto this of ours, which some stick not still to maintain and publicly defend, sperabundus exspecto innumeralibim mundorum in æternitatem per ambulationem, c. (Vic. Hill. Londinensis philos. Epicur.) For if the firmament be of such an incomparable bigness, as these Copernical giants will have it, infinitum, aut infinito proximum, so vast and full of innumerable stars, as being infinite in extent, one above another, some higher, some lower, some nearer, some farther off, and so far asunder, and those so huge and great, inso-

Digression of Air.

much that if the whole sphere of Saturn, and all that is included in it, "tum aggregatum (as Fromundus of Louvain in his tract, de immobilitate terrae argus) evolutur inter stellas, sideri à nobis non poterat, tum immensus est dis-

tantia inter tellurem et fixas, sed instar puncti, &c. 

If our world be small in respect, why may we not suppose a plurality of worlds, those infinite stars visible in the firmament to be so many suns, with particular fixed centres; to have likewise their subordinate planets, as the sun hath his dancing still round him? which Cardinal Cusanus, Walkarinus, Brunus, and some others have held, and some still maintain, Animi Aristotelismo innotrice, et minutis speculationibus assuetre, secus forsanc, &c. Though they seem close to us, they are infinitely distant, and so per consequens, they are infinite habitable worlds: what hindereth? Why should not an infinite cause (as God is) produce infinite effects? as Nic. Hill. Deocrinit. philos. disputes: Kepler (I confess) will by no means admit of Brunus's infinite worlds, or that the fixed stars should be so many suns, with their compassing planets, yet the said 1 Kepler between jest and earnest in his perspectives, lunar geography, "et somnio suo, dissertat. cum nuinc. sider. seems in part to agree with this, and partly to contradict; for the planets, he yields them to be inhabited, he doubts of the stars; and so doth Tycho in his astronomical epistles, out of a consideration of their vastity and greatness, break out into some such like speeches, that he will never believe those great and huge bodies were made to no other use than this that we perceive, to illuminate the earth, a point insensible in respect of the whole. But who shall dwell in these vast bodies, earths, worlds, "2 if they be inhabited? rational creatures?" as Kepler demands, "or have they souls to be saved? or do they inhabit a better part of the world than we do? Are we or they lords of the world? And how are all things made for man?" Difficile est nodum hunc expedire, eò quod nondum omnia quae huc pertinent explorata habemus: 'tis hard to determine: this only he proves, that we are præcipuo mundi sinu, in the best place, best world, nearest the heart of the sun. 3Thomas Campanella, a Calabrian monk, in his second book de sensu rerum, cap. 4, subscribes to this of Kepler; that they are inhabited he certainly supposeth, but with what kind of creatures he cannot say, he labours to prove it by all means: and that there are infinite worlds, having made an apology for Galileo, and dedicates this tenet of his to Cardinal Cajetanus. Others freely speak, mutter, and would persuade the world (as 4Marinus Marcellus complains) that our modern divines are too severe and rigid against mathematicians; ignorant and peevish, in not admitting their true demonstrations and certain observations, that they tyrannise over art, science, and all philosophy, in suppressing their labours (saith Pomponatius), forbidding them to write, to speak a truth, all to maintain their superstition, and for their profit's sake. As for those places of Scripture which oppugn it, they will have spoken ad captum vulgi, and if rightly understood, and favourably interpreted, not at all against it; and as Otho Casman, Astr. cap. 1. part. 1. notes, many great divines, besides Porphyrius, Proclus, Simplicius, and those heathen philosophers, doc-

trin et ætate venerandi, Moses Genesin mundanam popularis nescio cujus rudilitatis, qua longè absit à verü Philosophorum eruditione, insinulat: for Moses makes mention but of two planets, 5 and 6, no four elements, &c. Read more on him, in 7Grossius and Junius. But to proceed, these and such like

1 Kepler fol. 2. dissert. Quid impedit quin creadamus ex his initii, plures alios mundos detegendos, vel (ut Democriti placuit) infinitos? 2 Lege Somniati Keplcr, edit. 1655. 3 Quid intelligatur, si sit in cede plures globi, circules nostros telluris, quas similis certaminus, quis meliorum mundi planzam teneat? Si nobiliora illorum globi, nos non summus creatarum rationalium nobilissimi: quomodo intelligatur omnino propter hominem (quomodo nos domini operation Dei) Kepler. fel. 2. 4 Francfort, quart. 1630. fol. 4v. 1652. 5 Prefat. in Comment. in Genesis. Modo suadent Theologos, suam intelligantur versaci, veras scientias admittere nolle, et tyranniscm exercere, ut nos falsis dogmatibus, superstitionibus, et religione Catholica detineant. 6 Theat. Biblic.
insolent and bold attempts, prodigious paradoxes, inferences must needs follow, if it once be granted, which Rotman, Kepler, Gilbert, Diggens, Origanus, Galileo, and others, maintain of the earth’s motion, that ‘tis a planet, and shines as the moon doth, which contains in it “both land and sea as the moon doth;” for so they find by their glasses that Maculus in facie Lune, “the brighter parts are earth, the dusky sea,” which Thales, Plintarch, and Pythagoras formerly taught: and manifestly discern hills and dales, and such like concavities, if we may subscribe to, and believe Galileo’s observations. But to avoid these paradoxes of the earth’s motion (which the Church of Rome hath lately ‘condemned as heretical, as appears by Blancanus and Fromundus’s writings) our later mathematicians have rolled all the stones that may be stirred: and, to solve all appearances and objections, have invented new hypotheses, and fabricated new systems of the world, out of their own Dedalzean heads. Fracastorius will have the earth the centre of the world, but movable, and the eighth sphere immovable, the five other planets to move about the sun, the sun and moon about the earth. Of which orbs Tycho Brahe puts the earth the centre immovable, the stars immovable, the rest with Ramerus, the planets without orbs to wander in the air, keep time and distance, true motion, according to that virtue which God hath given them. *Heliusseus Roselin censureth both, with Copernicus (whose hypothesis de terra motu, Philippus Lansberghius hath lately vindicated, and demonstrated with solid arguments in a just volume, Jansonius Cæsins hath illustrated in a sphere). The said Johannes Lansberghius, 1633, hath since defended his assertion against all the cavils and calumnies of Fromundus his Anti-Aristarchus, Baptista Morinus, and Petrus Bartholinus: Fromundus, 1634, hath written against him again, J. Rossius of Aberdeen, &c. (sound drums and trumpets), whilst Roselin (I say) censurës all, and Ptolemeus himself as insufficient: one offends against natural philosophy, another against optic principles, a third against mathematical, as not answering to astronomical observations: one puts a great space between Saturn’s orb and the eighth sphere, another too narrow. In his own hypothesis he makes the earth as before the universal centre, the sun to the five upper planets, to the eighth sphere he ascribes diurnal motion, eccentricities, and epicycles to the seven planets, which hath been formerly exploded; and so, Dum vitant stulti vitia in contraria currunt, *as a tinker stops one hole and makes two, he corrects them, and doth worse himself: reforms some, and mars all. In the mean time, the world is tossed in a blanket amongst them, they hoist the earth up and down like a ball, make it stand and go at their pleasures: one saith the sun stands, another he moves; a third comes in, taking them all at rebound and lest there should any paradox be wanting, he finds certain spots and clouds in the sun, by the help of glasses, which multiply (saith Keplerus) a thing seen a thousand times bigger in plano, and makes it come thirty-two times nearer to the eye of the beholder: but see the demonstration of this glass in Tarde, by means of which, the sun must turn round upon his own centre, or they about the sun. Fabricius puts only three, and those in the sun: Apelles 15, and those without the sun, floating like the Cyanene Isles in the Euxine sea. *Tarde, the Frenchman, hath observed thirty-three, and those neither spots nor clouds, as Galileo, Epist. ad Valserum, supposed, but planets concentric with the sun, and not far from him with regular motions. *Christo-

---

b His arguments plane satisfactisti, do maculas in Luna esse maris, do lucidas partes esse terram. Kepler. fol. 16. 2 In Hypothes. de mundo. Edit. 1607. 3 Luçiani, 1633. 4 Whilst these blockheads avoid one fault, they fall into its opposite.” 5 Ju. Fabricius de maculis in sole, Witteb. 1611. 6 In carbonis sideribus. 7 Lib. de Carbonibus sid. Steile saur erratione, que proprii orbis fervatur, non longa Sole dixitis, sed juxta Solem. 8 Bracchi fol. 1630. lib. 4. cap. 52, 53, 59, &c.
pher Shemer, a German Suius Jesuit, Ursicæ Rosæ, divides them in maculas et faculas, and will have them to be fixed in Solis superficia: and to absolve their periodical and regular motion in twenty-seven or twenty-eight days, holding withal the rotation of the sun upon his centre; and all are so confident, that they have made schemes and tables of their motions. The Hollander, in his dissertatiusculi eum Apelle, censures all; and thus they disagree amongst themselves, old and new, irreconcilable in their opinions; thus Aristarchus, thus Hipparchus, thus Ptolemeus, thus Albategnius, thus Alfraganus, thus Tycho, thus Ramerus, thus Rælinus, thus Fracastorius, thus Copernicus and his adherents, thus Clavius and Maginus, &c., with their followers, vary and determine of these celestial orbs and bodies: and so whilst these men contend about the sun and moon, like the philosophers in Lucian, it is to be feared, the sun and moon will hide themselves, and be as much offended as she was with those, and send another messenger to Jupiter, by some new-fangled Icruomenippus, to make an end of all those curious controversies, and scatter them abroad.

But why should the sun and moon be angry, or take exceptions at mathematicians and philosophers? when as the like measure is offered unto God himself by a company of theologasters: they are not contented to see the sun and moon, measure their site and biggest distance in a glass, calculate their motions, or visit the moon in a poetical fiction, or a dream, as he saith, "Aude facinus et memorabile nume incipiam, neque hoc seculo usurpatum prius, quid in Luno regno hic nocte gestum sit exponam, et quo nemo v injusti visi somniando pervent," but he and Menippus: or as "Peter Cuneus, Bonâ fide agam, nihil eorum quae scripturas sum, verum esse scitote, &c., quæ nec facta, nec futura sunt, dicas, still tamam et ingenii causa, non in just, but in good earnest these gigantic Cyclops will transcend spheres, heaven, stars, into that empyean heaven; soar higher yet, and see what God himself doth. The Jewish Talmudists take upon them to determine how God spends his whole time, sometimes playing with Leviathan, sometimes overseeing the world, &c., like Lucian's Jupiter, that spent much of the year in painting butterflies' wings, and seeing who offered sacrifice; telling the hours when it should rain, how much snow should fall in such a place, which way the wind should stand in Greece, which way in Africa. In the Turks' Alcoran, Mahomet is taken up to heaven, upon a Pegasus sent on purpose for him, as he lay in bed with his wife, and after some conference with God is set on ground again. The pagans paint him and mangle him after a thousand fashions; our heretics, schismatics, and some schoolmen, come not far behind: some paint him in the habit of an old man, and make maps of heaven, number the angels, tell their several names, offices: some deny God and his providence, some take his office out of his hand, will bind and loose in heaven, release, pardon, forgive, and be quarrystemaker with him; some call his Godhead in question, his power, and attributes, his mercy, justice, providence: they will know with "Oecilius, why good and bad are punished together, war, fires, plagues, infest all alikye, why wicked men flourish, good are poor, in prison, sick, and ill at ease. Why doth he suffer so much mischief and evil to be done, if he be able to help? why doth he not assist good, or resist bad, reform our wills, if he be not the author of sin, and let such enormities be committed, unworthy of his knowledge, wisdom, govern-

k Lugdun. Bat. An. 1612. 2 Nec se subduant, et relleta statione decressum parent, ut cariostatis fimem faciant. m Heronie fam fœdem Satyre Menip. edit. 1609. n I shall now enter upon a bold and memorable exploit; one never before attempted in this age. I shall explain this night's transactions in the kingdom of the moon, a place where no one has yet arrived, save in his dreams." o Sardi versus Satyr. Menip. An. 1612. p Futunit Comus sic initit, or as Lipsius Satyre in a dream." q Triturnus l. d. 7. seconds. r They have fetchd Trajanus' soul out of hell, and cannonis for saints whom they list. s In Minutiss. sine dextre tempusstes tangant: locae saura et profana, bonorum et malorum fata juxta, nullæ arumæ res sunt, sed viatae fortunae dominatur. t Vel maiea vel impetus, qui jucundum permutit, &c. uade uoce superstitiō.
Cure of Melancholy

Part 2. Sec. 2.

moment, mercy, and providence, why lets he all things be done by fortune and chance? Others as prodigiously inquire after his omnipotency, an posit

plures similes creare deos? an ex sacrabeo deum? &c., et quo demum ruetis sacrifice? Some, by visions and revelations, take upon them to be familiar with God, and to be of privy council with him; they will tell how many, and who shall be saved, when the world shall come to an end, what year, what month, and whatsoever else God hath reserved unto himself, and to his angels. Some again, curious fantasies, will know more than this, and inquire with "Epicurus, what God did before the world was made? was it idle? Where did he hide? What did he make the world of? why did he then make it, and not before? If he made it new, or to have an end, how is he unchangeable, infinite, &c.

Some will dispute, cavil, and object, as Julian did of old, whom Cyril confutes, as Simon Magus is feigned to do, in that * dialogue betwixt him and Peter: and Ammonius the philosopher, in that dialogical disputation with Zacharias the Christian. If God be infinitely and only good, why should he alter or destroy the world? if he confound that which is good, how shall himself continue good? If he pull it down because evil, how shall he be free from the evil that made it evil? &c., with many such absurd and brain-sick questions, intricacies, froth of human wit, and excrements of curiosity, &c., which, as our Saviour told his inquisitive disciples, are not fit for them to know. But hoo! I am now gone quite out of sight, I am almost giddy with roving about: I could have ranged farther yet; but I am an infant, and not *able to dive into these profundities, or sound these depths; not able to understand, much less to discuss. I leave the contemplation of these things to stronger wits, that have better ability, and happier leisure to wade into such philosophical mysteries; for put case I were as able as willing, yet what can one man do? I will conclude with Scaliger, Nogensum nos homines sumus, sed partes hominis, ex omnibus aliquid fieri potest, idque non magnum; ex singulis ferò vitii. Besides (as Nazianzen hath it), Deus latere nos multa voluit: and with Seneca, cap. 35. de Comitis, Quid mirum tor tum rara mundi spectacula non teneri certis legibus, nondum intelligi? multae sunt gentes que tumtum de facie scient celum, veniet tempus fortesse, quo ista que nunc latent in lucem dies extrahat et longioris exu diligentia, una etas non sufficit, posteri, &c., when God sees his time, he will reveal these mysteries to mortal men, and show that to some few at last, which he hath concealed so long. For I am of *his mind, that Columbus did not find out America by chance, but God directed him at that time to discover it: it was contingent to him, but necessary to God; he reveals and conceals to whom and when he will. And which *one said of history and records of former times, "God in his providence, to check our presumptuous inquisition, wraps up all things in uncertainty, bars us from long antiquity, and bounds our search within the compass of some few ages;" many good things are lost, which our predecessors made use of, as Pancirola will better inform you; many new things are daily invented, to the public good; so kingdoms, men, and knowledge ebb and flow, are hid and revealed, and when you have all done, as the Preacher concluded, Nihil est sub sole novum (nothing new under the sun). But my melancholy spaniel's quest, my game is sprung, and I must suddenly come down and follow.

Jason Pratensis, in his book de morbis capitis, and chapter of melancholy, hath these words out of Galen, "Let them come to me to know what meat and drink they shall use, and besides that, I will teach them what temper of

* Quid fecit Deus ante mundum creatum? nih virtit otiums a sua subjecto, &c.  
* Lib. 3. reac. Pet. cap. 3. Peter answers by the simile of an egg-shell, which is cunningly made, yet of necessity to be broken; so is the world, &c., that the excellent state of heaven might be made manifest.  
* Ut me plums levad, sic grave margin osus.  
* Exercit. 184.  
* Lact. descript, occid. India.  
* Daniel principio historias.  
* Veniant ad me audiri qui esculent, quo item peculio uti debent, et prater almeatum ipsum potumque, ventos ipsoe docebo, item aetas ambigus temperum, insuper regiones quas oligere, quas vitare ex usu sit.
ambient air they shall make choice of, what wind, what countries they shall choose, and what avoid." Out of which lines of his, thus much we may gather, that to this cure of melancholy, amongst other things, the rectification of air is necessarily required. This is performed, either in reforming natural or artificial air. Natural is that which is in our election to choose or avoid: and 'tis either general, to countries, provinces; particular, to cities, towns, villages, or private houses. What harm those extremities of heat or cold do in this malady, I have formerly shown: the medium must needs be good, where the air is temperate, serene, quiet, free from bags, fens, mists, all manner of putrefaction, contagious and filthy noisome smells. The Egyptians by all geographers are commended to be hilaris, a conceited and merry nation: which I can ascribe to no other cause than the serenity of their air. They that live in the Oreades are registered by Hector Boethius and Cardan, to be of fair complexion, long-lived, most healthful, free from all manner of infirmities of body and mind, by reason of a sharp purifying air, which comes from the sea. The Boeotians in Greece were dull and heavy, crassi Beoti, by reason of a foggy air in which they lived, Boeotium in crasso jurava aere natum, Attica most acute, pleasant, and refined. The clime changes not so much customs, manners, wits (as Aristotle Polit. lib. 6. cap. 4. Vegetius, Plato, Bodine, method. hist. cap. 5. hath proved at large) as constitutions of their bodies, and temperate itself. In all particular provinces we see it confirmed by experience, as the air is, so are the inhabitants, dull, heavy, witty, subtle, neat, cleanly, clownish, sick, and sound. In Perigord in France the air is subtle, healthful, seldom any plague or contagious disease, but hilly and barren: the men sound, nimble, and lusty; but in some parts of Guienne, full of moors and marshes, the people dull, heavy, and subject to many infirmities. Who sees not a great difference between Surrey, Sussex, and Romney Marsh, the wolds in Lincolnshire and the fens. He therefore that loves his health, if his ability will give him leave, must often shift places, and make choice of such as are wholesome, pleasant, and convenient: there is nothing better than change of air in this malady, and generally for health to wander up and down, as those Tartari Zanolhenses, that live in hordes, and take opportunity of times, places, seasons. The kings of Persia had their summer and winter houses; in winter at Sardis, in summer at Susa; now at Persepolis, then at Pasargada. Cyrus lived seven cold months at Babylon, three at Susa, two at Ecbatana, saith Xenophon, and had by that means a perpetual spring. The great Turk sojourns sometimes at Constantinople, sometimes at Adrianople, &c. The kings of Spain have their Escorial in heat of summer, Madrid for a wholesome seat, Valladolid a pleasant site, &c., variety of secessus as all princes and great men have, and their several progresses to this purpose. Lucullus the Roman had his house at Rome, at Baiae, &c. When Cn. Pompeius, Marcus Cicero (saith Plutarch) and many noble men in the summer came to see him, at supper Pompeius jested with him, that it was an excellent and pleasant village, full of windows, galleries, and all offices fit for a summer house; but in his judgment very unfit for winter: Lucullus made answer that the lord of the house had wit like a crane, that changeth her country with the season; he had other houses furnished, and built for that purpose, all out as commodious as this. So Tully had his Tusculan, Plinius his Laurentian village, and every gentleman of any fashion in our times hath the like. The bishop of Exeter had fourteen several houses all furnished, in times past. In Italy, though they bide in cities in winter, which is more gentleman-
like, all the summer they come abroad to their country-houses, to recreate themselves. Our gentry in England live most part in the country (except it be some few castles) building still in bottoms (saith *Jovius) or near woods, *corona arborem virentium; you shall know a village by a tuft of trees at or about it, to avoid those strong winds wherewith the island is infested, and cold winter blasts. Some disappoint moated houses, as unwholesome; so Camden saith of *Ew-clime, that it was therefore unfrequented, *ob stagni vicina halitus, and all such places as be near lakes or rivers. But I am of opinion that these inconveniences will be mitigated, or easily corrected by good fires, as *one reports of Venice, that *graveolentia and fog of the moors is sufficiently qualified by those innumerable smokes. Nay more, *Thomas Philol. Ravennas, a great physician, contends that the Venetians are generally longer-lived than any city in Europe, and live many of them 120 years. But it is not water simply that so much offends, as the slime and noisome smells that accompany such overflowed places, which is but at some few seasons after a flood, and is sufficiently recompensed with sweet smells and aspects in summer, *Ver pinget variarum gemmantia prata colore, and many other commodities of pleasure and profit; or else may be corrected by the site, if it be somewhat remote from the water, as Lindley, *Orton super montem, *Drayton, or a little more elevated, though nearer, as *Caucut, *Amitting, *Polesworth, *Weddington (to insist in such places best to me known, upon the river of Anker, in Warwickshire, *Swarston, and *Drakesly upon Trent). Or howsoever they be unseasonable in winter, or at some times, they have their good use in summer. If so be that their means be so slender as they may not admit of any such variety, but must determine once for all, and make one house serve each season, I know no men that have given better rules in this behalf than our husbandry writers. *Cato and Columella prescribe a good house to stand by a navigable river, good highways, near some city, and in a good soil, but that is more for commodity than health.

The best soil commonly yields the worst air, a dry sandy plat is fittest to build upon, and such as is rather hilly than plain, full of downs, a Cotswold country, as being most commodions for hawking, hunting, wood, waters, and all manner of pleasures. Périgord in France is barren, yet by reason of the excellency of the air, and such pleasures that it affords, much inhabited by the nobility; as Nuremberg in Germany, Toledo in Spain. Our countryman Tusser will tell us so much, that the fieldone is for profit, the woodland for pleasure and health; the one commonly a deep clay, therefore noisome in winter, and subject to bad highways: the other a dry sand. Provision may be had elsewhere, and our towns are generally bigger in the woodland than the fieldone, more frequent and populous, and gentlemen more delight to dwell in such places. Sutton Coldfield in Warwickshire (where I was once a grammar scholar), may be a sufficient witness, which stands, as Camden notes, *locus ingrato et sterili, but in an excellent air, and full of all manner of pleasures.

*Wadley in Berkshire is situate in a vale, though not so fertile a soil as some vales afford, yet a most commodious sight, wholesome, in a delicious air, a rich and pleasant seat. So Segrave in Leicestershire (which town *I am now bound to remember) is situated in a champaign, at the edge of the wolds, and more barren than the villages about it, yet no place likely yields a better air. And he that built that fair house, *Wollerton in Nottinghamshire, is much to be commended (though the tract be sandy and barren about it) for making choice
of such a place. Constantine, lib. 2, cap. de Agricul. praiseth mountains, hilly, steep places, above the rest by the seaside, and such as look toward the north upon some great river, as Farmack in Derbyshire, on the Trent, environed with hills, open only to the north, like Mount Edgecombe in Cornwall, which Mr. Carew so much admires for an excellent seat; such is the general site of Bohemia: serenat Boreas, the north wind clarifies, "but near lakes or marshes, in holes, obscure places, or to the south and west, he utterly disproves." those winds are unwholesome, putrefying, and make men subject to diseases. The best building for health, according to him, is in "high places, and in an excellent prospect," like that of Cuddleston in Oxfordshire (which place I must honoris ergo mention) is lately and fairly "built in a good air, good prospect, good soil, both for profit and pleasure, not so easily to be matched." P. Crescentius, in his lib. 1. de Agric. cap. 5. is very copious in this subject, how a house should be wholesomely sited, in a good coast, good air, wind, &c., Varro de re rust. lib. 1. cap. 12. "forbids lakes and rivers, marshy and manured grounds, they cause a bad air, gross diseases, hard to be cured: ""if it be so that he cannot help it, better (as he adviseth) sell thy house and land than lose thine health." He that respects not this in choosing of his seat, or building his house, is mente captus, mad, "Cato saith, "and his dwelling next to hell itself," according to Columella: he commendis, in conclusion, the middle of a hill, upon a descent. Baptista Porta, Villa, lib. 1. cap. 22. censures Varro, Cato, Columella, and those ancient rustics, approving many things, disallowing some, and will by all means have the front of a house stand to the south, which how it may be good in Italy and hotter climates, I know not, in our northern countries I am sure it is best: Stephanus, a Frenchman, predio rustic. lib. 1. cap. 4. subscribes to this, approving especially the descent of a hill south or south-east, with trees to the north, so that it be well watered; a condition in all sites which must not be omitted, as Herbstain inculcates, lib. 1. Julius Caesar Claudinus, a physician, consult. 24, for a nobleman in Poland, melancholy given, adviseth him to dwell in a house inclining to the east, and "by all means to provide the air be clear and sweet;" which Montanus, consult. 229, counselleth the earl of Monfort, his patient, to inhabit a pleasant house, and in a good air. If it be so the natural site may not be altered of our city, town, village, yet by artificial means it may be helped. In hot countries, therefore, they make the streets of their cities very narrow, all over Spain, Africa, Italy, Greece, and many cities of France, in Languedoc especially, and Provence, those southern parts: Montpellier, the habitation and university of physicians, is so built, with high houses, narrow streets, to divert the sun's scalding rays, which Tacitus commendis, lib. 15. Annal., as most agreeing to their health, "because the height of building, and narrowness of streets, keep away the sunbeams." Some cities use galleries, or arched cloisters towards the street, as Damascus, Bologna, Padua, Berne in Switzerland, Westchester with us, as well to avoid tempests, as the sun's scorching heat. They build on high hills, in hot countries, for more air; or to the seaside, as Baise, Naples, &c. In our northern coasts we are opposite, we commend straight, broad, open, fair streets, as most befiting and agreeing to our clime. We build in bottoms for warmth: and that site of Mitylene in the island of Lesbos, in the ΑΕgean sea, which Vitruvius

- Montani et maritimi salubriores, aeclesiae, et ad Boream vergentes.
- The dwelling of Sir To. Burdet, Knight, Baronet.
- In his Survey of Cornwall, book 2.
- Propò paludes, stagna, et loca concava, vel ad Austrum, vel ad Occidentem inclinante, domus sunt morbosae.
- Operis legitur ad sanitatem domus in altitudine aedificare, et ad specificationem.
- By John Bancroft, Dr. of Divinity, my quondam tutor in Christ-church, Oxon. now the Right Reverend Lord Bishop Oxon. who built this house for himself and his successors.
- Vendas quòd assimilis possis, et al neques, relinquas.
- Lib. 1. cap. 2. in Oro habitus.
- Aurora magis amica, Vitruv. Ecles Orientem spectantes vir nobilissimia
- Monandiam angustia inermet et altitudine tectorum, non perinde sola calorem admittit.
so much discommends, magnificently built with fair houses, sed imprudenter posistam, unadvisedly sited, because it lay along to the south, and when the south wind blew, the people were all sick, would make an excellent site in our northern climes.

Of that artificial site of houses I have sufficiently discoursed: if the plan of the dwelling may not be altered, yet there is much in choice of such a chamber or room, in opportune opening and shutting of windows, excluding foreign air and winds, and walking abroad at convenient times. 1 Crato, a German, commends east and south site (disallowing cold air and northern winds in this case, rainy weather and misty days), free from putrefaction, fens, bogs, and muck-hills. If the air be such, open no windows, come not abroad. Montanus will have his patient not to "stir at all, if the wind be big or tempestuous, as most part in March it is with us; or in cloudy, lowering, dark days, as in November, which we commonly call the black month; or stormy, let the wind stand how it will, consil. 27. and 30. he must not "open a casement in bad weather," or in a boisterous season, consil. 299, he especially forbids us to open windows to a south wind. The best sites for chamber windows, in my judgment, are north, east, south, and which is the worst, west. Levinus Lemnius, lib. 3. cap. 3. de occult. nat. mir. attributes so much to air, and rectifying of wind and windows, that he holds it alone sufficient to make a man sick or well; to alter body and mind. 2 A clear air cheers up the spirits, exhilarates the mind; a thick, black, misty, tempestuous, contracts, overthrows. Great heed is therefore to be taken at what times we walk, how we place our windows, lights, and houses, how we let in or exclude this ambient air. The Egyptians, to avoid immoderate heat, make their windows on the top of the house like chimneys, with two tunnels to draw a thorough air. In Spain they commonly make great opposite windows without glass, still shutting those which are next to the sun: so likewise in Turkey and Italy (Venice excepted, which brags of her stately glazed palaces), they use paper windows to like purpose; and lie, sub dio, in the top of their flat-roofed houses, so sleeping under the canopy of heaven. In some parts of Italy they have windmills, to draw a cooling air out of hollow caves, and disperse the same through all the chambers of their palaces, to refresh them; as at Costoza, the house of Cassareo Trento, a gentleman of Vicenza, and elsewhere. Many excellent means are invented to correct nature by art. If none of these courses help, the best way is to make artificial air, which howsoever is profitable and good, still to be made hot and moist, and to be seasoned with sweet perfumes, pleasant and lightsome as it may be; to have roses, violets, and sweet-smelling flowers ever in their windows, posies in their hand. Laurentius commends water-lilies, a vessel of warm water to evaporate in the room, which will make a more delightful perfume, if there be added orange-flowers, pills of citrons, rosemary, cloves, bays, rosewater, rose-vinegar, benzoin, labdanum, styrrax, and such like gums, which make a pleasant and acceptable perfume. 3 Bessardus Bisantinus prefers the smoke of juniper to melancholy persons, which is in great request with us at Oxford, to sweeten our chambers. 4 Guianerius prescribes the air to be moistened with water, and sweet herbs boiled in it, vine, and sallow leaves, &c., to besprinkle the ground and posts with rose-water, rose-vinegar, which Avicenna much approves. Of colours it is good to behold green, red, yellow, and white, and by all means to have light

1 Consil. 21. li. 2. Frigidus ser, nubulos, densus, vitandus, squb ac venti septentrionales, &c. 2 Consil. 24. 3 Fenestra non aperiat. 4 Discutit Sol horrorem crassi spiritus, mentem exhiliant, non enim tam corpora, quam et animi mutationem inde subeunt, pro cell et ventorurn ratione, et sanil alteri affecto cedo nubilo, alter sereno. De natura ventorum, see Pline, lib. 2. cap. 26, 27, 28. Strabo, b. 7. &c. 5 Fines Morison parv. i. e. 4. 6 Altemarum car. 7. Brud. Aet sit lucidae, basi olea, humidas. Mentalus idem ca. 26. Officis rerum suavium. 7 Laurentius, c. 8. 8 Ant. Philos. cap. de melanch. 9 Tract. 15. c. 9. ex redolentianus herbis et follis vitis viniferae, salicis, &c. 10 Pavimentum acete et aqua rosacea irritare, Laurent. c. 8.
enough, with windows in the day, wax candles in the night, neat chambers, good fires in winter, merry companions; for though melancholy persons love to be dark and alone, yet darkness is a great increaser of the humour.

Although our ordinary air be good by nature or art, yet it is not amiss, as I have said, still to alter it; no better physic for a melancholy man than change of air, and variety of places, to travel abroad and see fashions. * Leo Afer speaks of many of his countrymen so cured, without all other physic: amongst the negroes, "there is such an excellent air, that if any of them be sick elsewhere, and brought thither, he is instantly recovered, of which he was often an eye-witness." * Lipsius, Zuinger, and some others, add as much of ordinary travel. No man, saith Lipsius, in an epistle to Phil. Lanois, a noble friend of his, now ready to make a voyage, "can be such a stock or stone, whom that pleasant speculation of countries, cities, towns, rivers, will not affect." ¹ Seneca the philosopher was infinitely taken with the sight of Scipio Africanus' house, near Linturnum, to view those old buildings, cisterns, baths, tombs, &c. And how was *Tully pleased with the sight of Athens, to behold those ancient and fair buildings, with a remembrance of their worthy inhabitants. Paulus Æmilius, that renowned Roman captain, after he had conquered Persesus, the last king of Macedonia, and now made an end of his tedious wars, though he had been long absent from Rome, and much there desired, about the beginning of autumn (as Livy describes it) made a pleasant peregrination all over Greece, accompanied with his son Scipio, and Athenæus the brother of king Eumenes, leaving the charge of his army with Sulpicius Gallus. By Thessaly he went to Delphos, thence to Megaris, Aulis, Athens, Argos, &c. He took great content, exceeding delight in that his voyage, as who doth not that shall attempt the like, though his travel be adjectationem magis quam ad usum reipub. (as 'one well observes) to crack, gaze, see fine sights and fashions, spend time, rather than for his own or public good? (as it is to many gallants that travel out their best days, together with their means, manners, honesty, religion) yet it availeth howsoever. For peregrination charms our senses with such unspeakable and sweet variety, * that some count him unhappy that never travelled, and pity his case, that from his cradle to his old age beholds the same still; still, still the same, the same. Insomuch that * Rhasis, cont. lib. 1. Tract. 2. doth not only commend, but enjoin travel, and such variety of objects to a melancholy man, "and to lie in diverse inns, to be drawn into several companies:" Montaltius, cap. 36. and many neoterics are of the same mind; Celsus adviseth him therefore that will continue his health, to have varium vitae genus, diversity of callings, occupations, to be busied about, "sometimes to live in the city, sometimes in the country; now to study or work, to be intent, then again to hawk or hunt, swim, run, ride, or exercise himself." A good prospect alone will ease melancholy, as Comesius contends, lib. 2. c. 7. de Sale. The citizens of *Barcino, saith he, otherwise penned in, melancholy, and stirring little abroad, are much delighted with that pleasant prospect their city hath into the sea, which like that of old Athens besides Ægina Salamina, and many pleasant islands, had all the variety of delicious objects: so are those Neapolitans and inhabitants of Genoa, to see the ships, boats, and passengers go by, out of their windows, their whole cities being situated on the side of a hill, like Pera by Constantinople, so that each house almost hath a free prospect to the sea, as some part of London to the Thames: or to have a

free prospect all over the city at once, as at Granada in Spain, and Fez in Africa, the river running betwixt two declining hills, the steepness causeth each house almost as well to oversee, as to be overseen of the rest. Every country is full of such delightsome prospects, as well within land, as by sea, as Hermon and *Rann in Palestina, Colalto in Italy, the top of Tagetius, or Acoronuthus, that old decayed castle in Corinth, from which Peloponnesus, Greece, the Ionian and Ægean seas were *semel et simul at one view to be taken. In Egypt the square top of the great pyramid, three hundred yards in height, and so the sultan's palace in Grand Cairo, the country being plain, hath a marvellous fair prospect as well over Nilus, as that great city, five Italian miles long, and two broad, by the river side: from mount Sion in Jerusalem, the Holy Land is of all sides to be seen: such high places are infinite; with us those of the best note are Glastonbury tower, Box Hill in Surrey, Bever Castle, Rodway Grange,* Walsby in Lincolnshire, where I lately received a real kindness, by the munificence of the right honourable my noble lady and patroness, the Lady Frances, countess dowager of Exeter: and two amongst the rest, which I may not omit for vicinity's sake, Oldbury in the confines of Warwickshire, where I have often looked about me with great delight, at the foot of which hill, 'I was born: and Hanbury in Staffordshire, contiguous to which is Falde, a pleasant village, and an ancient patrimony belonging to our family, now in the possession of mine elder brother, William Burton, Esquire. *Barclay the Scot commends that of Greenwich tower for one of the best prospects in Europe, to see London on the one side, the Thames, ships, and pleasant meadows on theother. There be those that say as much and more of St. Mark's steeple in Venice. Yet these are at too great a distance: some are especially affected with such objects as be near, to see passengers go by in some great road-way, or boats in a river, in *subjectum forum despicere, to oversee a fair, a market-place, or out of a pleasant windowinto some thoroughfare street, to behold a continual concourse, a promiscuous ront, coming and going, or a multitude of spectators at a theatre, a mask, or some such like show. But I rove: the sun is this, that variety of actions, objects, air; places, are excellent good in this infirmity, and all others, good for man, good for beast. *Constantine the emperor, *ib. 18. cap. 13. *ex Leontio, "holds it an only cure for rotten sheep, and any manner of sick cattle." Lelius à fonte Ængubinus, that great doctor, at the latter end of many of his consultations (as commonly he doth set down what success his physic had,) in melancholy most especially approves of this above all other remedies whatsoever, as appears consilt. 69, consult. 229. &c. "Many other things helped, but change of air was that which wrought the cure, and did most good."

MEMB. IV.

Exercise rectified of Body and Mind.

To that great inconvenience, which comes on the one side by immoderate and unseasonable exercise, too much solitariness and idleness on the other, must be opposed as an antidote, a moderate and seasonable use of it, and that both of body and mind, as a most material circumstance, much conducing to this cure, and to the general preservation of our health. The heavens themselves run continually round, the sun riseth and sets, the moon increaseth and decreasest, stars and planets keep their constant motions, the air is still tossed by the winds, the waters ebb and flow to their conservation no doubt, to
Exercise rectified.

Mem. 4.

teach us that we should ever be in action. For which cause Hieron prescribes
Rusticus the monk, that he be always occupied about some business or other,
"*that the devil do not find him idle." "Seneca would have a man do some-
thing, though it be to no purpose. b Xenophon wisheth one rather to play at
Tables, dice, or make a jester of himself (though he might be far better em-
ployed), than do nothing. The Egyptians of old, and many flourishing com-
monwealths since, have enjoined labour and exercise to all sorts of men, to
be of some vocation and calling, and to give an account of their time, to pre-
vent those grievous mischief that come by idleness; "for as fodder, whip, and
burthen belong to the ass: so meat, correction, and work unto the servant,"
Ecclus. xxxiii. 23. The Turks enjoin all men whatsoever, of what degree,
to be of some trade or other, the Grand Seignior himself is not excused. c In
our memory (saith Sabellicus), Mahomet the Turk, he that conquered Greece,
at that very time when he heard ambassadors of other princes, did either
carve or cut wooden spoons, or frame something upon a table." This present
sultan makes notches for bows. The Jews are most severe in this examination
of time. All well-governed places, towns, families, and every discreet person
will be a law unto himself. But amongst us the badge of gentry is idleness:
to be of no calling, not to labour, for that's derogatory to their birth, to be a
mere spectator, a drone, fruges consumere natum, to have no necessary employ-
tment to busy himself about in church and commonwealth (some few governors
exempted), "but to rise to eat," &c., to spend his days in hawking, hunting,
&c., and such like diversions and recreations ('which our casuists tax), are the
sole exercise almost, and ordinary actions of our nobility, and in which they
are too immoderate. And thence it comes to pass, that in city and country
so many grievances of body and mind, and this feral disease of melancholy so
frequently rageth, and now domineers almost all over Europe amongst our
great ones. They know not how to spend their time (disports excepted, which
are all their business), what to do, or otherwise how to bestow themselves:
like our modern Frenchmen, that had rather lose a pound of blood in a sin-
gle combat, than a drop of sweat in any honest labour. Every man almost
hath something or other to employ himself about, some vocation, some trade,
but they do all by ministers and servants, ad oitn duntavat se natos existimant,
imò ad sui ipsius plerunque et alienum pernicem, * as one freely taxeth such
kind of men, they are all for pastimes, 'tis all their study, all their invention
tends to this alone, to drive away time, as if they were born some of them to
no other ends. Therefore to correct and avoid these errors and inconveniences,
our divines, physicians, and politicians, so much labour, and so seriously ex-
hort; and for this disease in particular, "*there can be no better cure than
continual business," as Rphasis holds, "to have some employment or other,
which may set their mind a-wake, and distract their cogitations." Riches may
not easily be had without labour and industry, nor learning without study,
neither can our health be preserved without bodily exercise. If it be of the
body, Guianerius allows that exercise which is gentle, "*and still after those
ordinary frictions" which must be used every morning. Montaltus, cap. 26.
and Jason Pratensis use almost the same words, highly commending exercise
if it be moderate; "a wonderful help so used," Crato calls it, "and a great

every man once a year to tell how he lived.  *Nostra memoria Mahometus Othmannus qui trahas
Imperium subvertit, cum oratorum postulata adiret externarum gentium, coeptisque lignes subsidio esset,
auct aliquid in tabula adingebat.  *Sanda, cap. 37. of his voyage to Jerusalem.  *Perkins, Cases of
Consulence, l. 3. c. 4. q. 3.  *Luscinian Graeco.  *They seem to think they were born to idleness,
may more, for the destruction of themselves and others."  *Non et cura melior quam injungere intersesa
et opportunt; operam administratio lites magnam sanitatis incrementumq, et quae repleat animos
seorum, et incitant et diversae cogitationes. Con. 3. l. tract. 9.  *Ante exercitationem, leves tuto corporis
fractur causans. Ad hunc morum exercitationes, quos recte et suo tempore sustinet, mirifice condu-
cunt, et sanitatem sustinent, &c.
means to preserve our health, as adding strength to the whole body, increasing natural heat, by means of which the nutriment is well concocted in the stomach, liver, and veins, few or no crudities left, is happily distributed over all the body." Besides, it expels excrements by sweat and other insensible vapours; insomuch, that Galen prefers exercise before all physic, rectification of diet, or any regimen in what kind soever; 'tis nature's physician. 

1 Fulgentius, out of Gordonius de conserv. vit. hom. lib. 1. cap. 7. terms exercise, "a spur of a dull, sleepy nature, the comforter of the members, cure of infirmity, death of diseases, destruction of all mischiefs and vices." The fittest time for exercise is a little before dinner, a little before supper, or at any time when the body is empty. Montanus, consil. 31. prescribes it every morning to his patient, and that, as "Calenus adds, "after he hath done his ordinary needs, rubbed his body, washed his hands and face, combed his head, and gargarised." What kind of exercise he should use, Galen tells us, lib. 2. et 3. de sanit. tuend. and in what measure, "till the body be ready to sweat," and roused up; ad ruborem, some say, non ad sudorem, lest it should dry the body too much; others enjoin those wholesome businesses, as to dig so long in his garden, to hold the plough, and the like. Some prescribe frequent and violent labour and exercises, as sawing every day so long together (epist. 6. Hippocrates confounds them), but that is in some cases, to some peculiar men; the most forbid, and by no means will have it go farther than a beginning sweat, as being perilous if it exceed.

Of these labours, exercises, and recreations, which are likewise included, some properly belong to the body, some to the mind, some more easy, some hard, some with delight, some without, some within doors, some natural, some are artificial. Amongst bodily exercises, Galen commends ludum parce pilas, to play at ball, be it with the hand or racket, in tennis-courts or otherwise, it exerciseth each part of the body, and doth much good, so that they sweat not too much. It was in great request of old amongst the Greeks, Romans, Barbarians, mentioned by Homer, Herodotus, and Plinius. Some write, that Aganella, a fair maid of Corecyra, was the inventor of it, for she presented the first ball that ever was made to Nausica, the daughter of King Alcinous, and taught her how to use it.

The ordinary sports which are used abroad are hawking, hunting, hilares venandi labores, one calls them, because they recreate body and mind, another, the "best exercise that is, by which alone many have been freed from all feral diseases." Hegesippus, lib. 1. cap. 37, relates of Herod, that he was eased of a grievous melacony by that means. Plato, 7. de leg. highly magnifies it, dividing it into three parts, "by land, water, air." Xenophon, in Cyropæod. graces it with a great name, Deorum munus, the gift of the gods, a princely sport, which they have ever used, saith Langius, epist. 59. lib. 2. as well for health as pleasure, and do at this day, it being the sole almost and ordinary sport of our noblemen in Europe, and elsewhere all over the world. Bohemus, de mor. gent. lib. 3. cap. 12. styles it therefore, studium nobilium, communiter venantur, quod sibi solis licere contendunt, 'tis all their study, their exercise, ordinary business, all their talk: and indeed some do too much after it, they can do nothing else, discourse of nought else. Paulus Jovius, desc.
Exercise recti\textit{f}i\textit{d}. 339

Brit. doth in some sort tax our "*English nobility for it, for living in the country so much, and too frequent use of it, as if they had no other means but hawking and hunting to approve themselves gentlemen with."

Hawking comes near to hunting, the one in the air, as the other on the earth, a sport as much affected as the other, by some preferred. It was never heard of amongst the Romans, invented some twelve hundred years since, and first mentioned by Firmicus, \textit{ib.} 5. \textit{cap.} 8. The Greek emperors began it, and now nothing so frequent: he is nobody that in the season hath not a hawk on his fist. A great art, and many * books written of it. It is a wonder to hear * what is related of the Turks' officers in this behalf, how many thousand men are employed about it, how many hawks of all sorts, how much revenues consumed on that only disport, how much time is spent at Adrianople alone every year to that purpose. The * Persian kings hawk after butterflies with sparrows made to that use, and stores: lesser hawks for lesser games they have, and bigger for the rest, that they may produce their sport to all seasons. The Muscovian emperors reclaim eagles to fly at hinds, foxes, &c., and such a one was sent for a present to * Queen Elizabeth: some reclaim ravens, castri\textit{ls}, pies, &c., and man them for their pleasures.

Fowling is more troublesome, but all out as delightful some to some sorts of men, be it with guns, lime, nets, glades, gins, strings, baits, pitfalls, pipes, calls, stalking-horses, setting-dogs, decoy-ducks, &c., or otherwise. Some much delight to take larks with day-nets, small birds with chaff-nets, plovers, partridge, herons, snipe, &c. Henry the Third, king of Castile (as Mariana the Jesuit reports of him, \textit{ib.} 3. \textit{cap.} 7.) was much affected "* with catching of quails," and many gentlemen take a singular pleasure at morning and evening to go abroad with their quail-pipes, and will take any pains to satisfy their delight in that kind. The * Italians have gardens fitted to such use, with nets, bushes, glades, sparing no cost or industry, and are very much affected with the sport. Tycho Brahe, that great astronomer, in the choro\textit{graphy of his Isle of Hnena, and Castle of Uraniburgo, puts down his nets, and manner of catching small birds, as an ornament and a recreation, wherein he himself was sometimes employed.

Fishing is a kind of hunting by water, bo it with nets, wees, baits, angling, or otherwise, and yields all out as much pleasure to some men as dogs or hawks; "* When they draw their fish upon the bank," saith Nic. Henselius Silesiographiae, \textit{cap.} 3. speaking of that extraordinary delight his countrymen took in fishing, and in making of pools. James Dubravius, that Moravian, in his book \textit{de pise.} telleth, how travelling by the highway side in Silesia, he found a nobleman, "* booted up to the groins," wading himself, pulling the nets, and labouring as much as any fisherman of them all: and when some belike objected to him the baseness of his office, he excused himself, "* that if other men might hunt hares, why should not he hunt carps?" Many gentlemen in like sort with us will wade up to the arm-holes upon such occasions, and voluntarily undertake that to satisfy their pleasure, which a poor man for a good stipend would scarce be hired to undergo. Plutarch, in his book \textit{de soler. animal.} speaks against all fishing, "* as a filthy, base, illiberal employment, having neither wit nor perspicacity in it, nor worth the labour." But he that shall consider the variety of baits for all seasons, and pretty de-
vices which our anglers have invented, peculiar lines, false flies, several sleights, &c., will say, that it deserves like commendation, requires as much study and perspicacity as the rest, and is to be preferred before many of them. Because hawking and hunting are very laborious, much riding, and many dangers accompany them; but this is still and quiet: and if so be the angler catch no fish, yet he hath a wholesome walk to the brookside, pleasant shade by the sweet silver streams; he hath good air, and sweet smells of fine fresh meadow flowers, he hears the melodious harmony of birds, he sees the swans, herons, ducks, water-horns, coots, &c., and many other fowl, with their brood, which he thinketh better than the noise of hounds, or blast of horns, and all the sport that they can make.

Many other sports and recreations there be, much in use, as wringing, bowling, shooting, which Ascan commends in a just volume, and hath in former times been enjoined by statute as a defensive exercise, and an honour to our laud, as well may witness our victories in France. Keeplins, trunks, quoits, pitching bars, hurling; wrestling, leaping, running, fencing, mustring, swimming, wasters, foils, football, balouc, quintan, &c., and many such, which are the common recreations of the countryfols. Riding of great horses, running at rings, tilts and tournaments, horse-races, wild-goose chases, which are the disparities of greater men, and good in themselves, though many gentlemen by that means gallop quite out of their fortunes.

But the most pleasant of all outward pastimes is that of Aretaeus, deambulatio per amena loca, to make a petty progress, a merry journey now and then with some good companions, to visit friends, see cities, castles, towns, Deis, vides aequas amnes nitidos, per amenaque Tempe, et plaeidas summis sectari in montibus auras. To see the pleasant fields, the crystal fountains, and take the genial air amongst the mountains."

"To walk amongst orchards, gardens, bowers, mounts, and arbours, artificial wildernesses, green thickets, arches, groves, lawns, rivulets, fountains, and such like pleasant places, like that Antiochian Daphne, brooks, pools, fishponds, between wood and water, in a fair meadow, by a river side, ubi varie avium cantationes, florum colores, pratorum frutices, &c., to disport in some pleasant plain, park, run up a steep hill sometimes, or sit in a shady seat, must needs be a delectable recreation. Hortus principis et domus ad delectationem facta, cum sylva, monte et piscina, valdò la montagna: the prince's garden at Ferrara. Schottus highly magnifies, with the groves, mountains, ponds, for a delectable prospect, he was much affected with it; a Persian paradise, or pleasant park, could not be more delectable in his sight. St. Bernard, in the description of his monastery, is almost ravished with the pleasures of it. A sick man (saith he) sits upon a green bank, and when the dog-star parcheth the plains, and dries up rivers, he lies in a shady bower. Fronde sub arborea ferventia temperat astra, "and feeds his eyes with variety of objects, herbs, trees, to comfort his misery, he receives many delightful smells, and fills his ears with that sweet and various harmony of birds: good God (saith he), what a company of pleasures hast thou made for man?" He that should be admitted on a sudden to the sight of such a palace as that of Escurial in Spain, or to that which the Moors built at Grenada, Fontainbleau in France, the Turk's gardens in his seraglio, wherein all manner of birds and beasts are kept for pleasure; wolves, bears, lynxes, tigers, lions, elephants, &c., or upon the banks of that Thracian Bosphorus: the pope's Belvedere in Rome, as pleasing as those horti

[Cure of Melancholy. [Part. 2. Sec. 2.

---


**Exercise rectified.**

Mem. 4.]

Exercise in Babylon, or that Indian king's delightsome garden in Αelian: or those famous gardens of the Lord Cantelow in France, could not choose, though he were never so ill paid, but be much recreated for the time; or many of our noblemen's gardens at home. To take a boat in a pleasant evening, and with music "to row upon the waters, which Plutarch so much applauds, Elian admires, upon the river Pineus: in those Thessalian fields, beset with green bays, where birds so sweetly sing that passengers, enchanted as it were with their heavenly music, omnium laborum et curarum obliviscantur, forget forthwith all labours, care, and grief: or in a gondola through the Grand Canal in Venice, to see those goodly palaces, must needs refresh and give content to a melancholy dull spirit. Or to see the inner rooms of a fair-built and sumptuous edifice, as that of the Persian kings, so much renowned by Diodorus and Curtius, in which all was almost beaten gold, *chairs, stools, thrones, tabernacles, and pillars of gold, plane trees, and vines of gold, grapes of precious stones, all the other ornaments of pure gold,

"...Fulget gemma floris, et Jaspide fulva supplex,

Stratis micant Tyrio"——

With sweet odours and perfumes, generous wines, opiparous fare, &c., besides the gallantest young men, the fairest *virgins, puelae scitule ministrantes*, the rarest beanties the world could afford, and those set out with costly and curious attires, *ad stuporem usque spectantium*, with exquisite music, as in *Trimaltion's house, in every chamber sweet voices ever sounding day and night, incomparabilis luxus*, all delights and pleasures in each kind which to please the senses could possibly be devised or had, *convivo coronati, delitis ebriti, &c.* Telemachus, in Homer, is brought in as one ravished almost at the sight of that magnificent palace, and rich furniture of Menelaws, when he beheld

"Eris fulgorem et resonantia tecta corusc

Auro aetque electro nitido, sectaque elephanto,

Argentoque simul. Talis Jovis ardua sedes,

Aulaque cellulam stellans splendescit Olymus."

Such glittering of gold and brightest brass to shine,

Clear amber, silver pure, and ivory so fine:

Jupiter's lofty palace, where the gods do dwell,

Was even such a one, and did it not excel."

It will lascare animos, refresh the soul of man to see fair-built cities, streets, theatres, temples, obelisks, &c. The temple of Jerusalem was so fairly built of white marble, with so many pyramids covered with gold; *tectumque templi fulvo coruscans auro, nimio suo fulgore obscabat occultum iterumantium*, was so glorious, and so glistening afar off, that the spectators might not well abide the sight of it. But the inner parts were all so curiously set out with cedar, gold, jewels, &c., as he said of Cleopatra's palace in Egypt,—*Crassiumque trabes absconderat aurum*, that the beholders were amazed. What so pleasant as to see some pageant or sight go by, as at coronations, weddings, and such like solemnities, to see an ambassador or a prince met, received, entertained with masks, shows, fireworks, &c. To see two kings fight in single combat, as Porus and Alexander; Caunut and Edmund Ironside; Scanderbeg and Ferat Bassa the Turk; when not honour alone but life itself is at stake, as the *poet of Hector*

"nee enim pro tegore Tauri,

Pro bone nec certamen erat, quae praemia cura

Esso solent, sed pro magni vilaque animaque—Hectoris."

To behold a battle fought, like that of Cressy, or Agincourt, or Poictiers, *quod nescio* (saith Froissart) *an vetustas ullam proferre possit clariorem*. To see one of Caesar's triumphs in old Rome revived, or the like. To be present at an

---

Care of Melancholy. [Part. 2. Sec. 2.

interview, as that famous of Henry the Eighth and Francis the First, so much renowned all over Europe; ubi tanto apparatu (saith Hubertus Vellius) tamque triumphali pompa ambo reges cum eorum conjugibus coiere, ut nulla unquam etiam celebritas festa viderit aut audierit, no age ever saw the like. So infinitely pleasant are such shows, to the sight of which oftentimes they will come hundreds of miles, give any money for a place, and remember many years after with singular delight. Bodine, when he was ambassador in England, said he saw the noblemen go in their robes to the parliament house, summa cum ju- cunditate victimis, he was much affected with the sight of it. Pomponius Columna, saith Jovius in his life, saw thirteen Frenchmen, and so many Italians, once fight for a whole army: Quod juvendissimum spectaculum in vita dicit sud, the pleasanttest sight that ever he saw in his life. Who would not have been affected with such a spectacle? Or that single combat of ' Breauta the Frenchman, and Anthony Schets a Dutchman, before the walls of Sylva ncis in Brabant, anno 1600. They were twenty-two horse on the one side, as many on the other, which like Livy’s Horatii, Torquati and Corvini fought for their own glory and country’s honour, in the sight and view of their whole city and army. When Julius Cæsar warred about the banks of Rhone, there came a barbarian prince to see him and the Roman army, and when he had beheld Cæsar a good while, “I see the gods now (saith he) which before I heard of,” nec fodiorem ullam vitae meae aut optavi, aut sensi diem: it was the happiest day that ever he had in his life. Such a sight alone were able of itself to drive away melancholy; if not for ever, yet it must needs expel it for a time. Radzivilus was much taken with the pasha’s palace in Cairo, and amongst many other objects which that place afforded, with that solemnity of cutting the banks of the Nile by Imbram Pasha, when it overflowed, besides two or three hundred gilded galleys on the water, he saw two millions of men gathered together on the land, with turbans as white as snow; and ’twas a godly sight. The very reading of feasts, triumphs, interviews, nuptials, tilts, tournaments, combats, and monomachies, is most acceptable and pleasant. Francisca Modin’s hath made a large collection of such solemnities in two great tomes, which whose will may perse. The inspection alone of those curious iconographies of temples and palaces, that of the Lateran church in Albertus Durer, that of the temple of Jerusalem in *Josephus, Adricomius, and Villalpandus: that of the Escurial in Guadas, of Diana at Ephesus in Pliny, Nero’s golden palace in Rome, Justinian’s in Constantinople, that Peruvian Jugo’s in *Cusco, ut non ab hominibus, sed a daemonis constructum videatur; St. Mark’s in Venice, by Ignatius, with many such; priscorum artificium opera (saith that interpreter of Pausaniae), the rare workmanship of those ancient Greeks, in theatres, obelisks, temples, statues, gold, silver, ivory, marble images, non minus ferme quam leguntur, quam quum cernuntur, animum deletatione complent, affect one as much by reading almost as by sight.

The country hath his recreations, the city his several gymnics and exer-
cises, May games, feasts, wakes, and merry meetings, to solace themselves; the very being in the country; that life itself is a sufficient recreation to some men, to enjoy such pleasures, as those old patriarchs did. Dioscian, the emperor, was so much affected with it, that he gave over his sceptre, and turned gardener. Constantine wrote twenty books of husbandry. Lysander, when ambassadors came to see him, bragged of nothing more than of his orchard, hi sunt ordines mei. What shall I say of Cincinnatus, Cato, Tully, and many such how they have been pleased with it, to prun,

* Between Ardes and Guines, 1519. 1 Swertius in delitiis, fol. 457. vateri Horatiorum exemplo, virtute et successu admirabilis, casis hostium 17. In conspectu patris, etc. 2 Paterculus, vol. post. 3 Quos autem audivi, inquit, hodie vidi aces. 4 Pudentius Triumph. fol. 5 Lib. 6. cap. 14. de bello Jud. 6 Procopius. 7 Lact. lib. 10. Amor. descript. 8 Romulus Amorus praefat. Pausan.
"Nunc captare feras laqueo, nunc fallere visce, 
Atque etiam magno canibus circumdata salutis, 
Insidias avibus moliri, incendere repres."  
"Sometimes with traps decoy, with line and string 
To catch wild birds and beasts, encompassing 
The grove with dogs, and out of bushes firing." 
"Et nidos avium scrutari," &c.

Jucundus, in his Preface to Cato, Varro, Columella, &c., put out by him, confesseth of himself, that he was mightily delighted with these husbandry studies, and took extraordinary pleasure in them: if the theory or speculation can so much affect, what shall the place and exercise itself: the practical part do? The same confession I find in Herbastine, Porta, Camerarius, and many others, which have written of that subject. If my testimony were aught worth, I could say as much of myself; I am ver\' Saturnus; no man ever took more delight in springs, woods, groves, gardens, walks, fishponds, rivers, &c. But

"Tantalus & labris sitiens fugientia caprat
Flumina:"  

And so do I; Velle licet, potiri non licet."†

Every palace, every city almost hath his peculiar walks, cloisters, terraces, groves, theatres, pageants, games, and several recreations; every country, some professors of gymnastics to exhilarate their minds, and exercise their bodies. The Greeks had their Olympic, Pythian, Isthmian, Nemean games, in honour of Neptune, Jupiter, Apollo; Athens hers: some for honour, garlands, crowns; for beauty, dancing, running, leaping, like our silver games. The Romans had their feasts, as the Athenians, and Lacedemonians held their public banquets, in Prinianoe, Panathenaeis, Thesperiis, Phiditiis, plays, nautemachies, places for sea-fights, theatres, amphitheatres, able to contain 70,000 men, wherein they had several delightful shows to exhilarate the people; gladiators, combats of men with themselves, with wild beasts, and wild beasts one with another, like our bull-baitings, or bear-baitings (in which many countrymen and citizens amongst us so much delight, and so frequently use), dancers on ropes. Jugglers, wrestlers, comedies, tragedies, publicly exhibited at the emperor's and city's charge, and that with incredible cost and magnificence. In the Low Countries (as Metera relates), before these wars, they had many solemn feasts, plays, challenges, artillery gardens, colleges of rhymer, rhetoricians, poets: and to this day, such places are curiously maintained in Amsterdam, as appears by that description of Isaacus Pontanus, Rerum Amstelod. lib. 2. cap. 25. So likewise not long since at Friburgh, in Germany, as is evident by that relation of Neander, they had Ludus septennales, solemn plays every seven years, which Bocerus, one of their own poets, hath elegantly described:

"At nunc magnifico spectacula straeta paratu 
Quid memorem, veteri non concessura Quirino, 
Ludorum popna?" &c.

In Italy they have solemn declamations of certain select young gentlemen in Florence (like those reciters in old Rome), and public theatres in most of their cities, for stage-players and others, to exercise and recreate themselves. All seasons almost, all places have their several pastimes; some in summer, some in winter; some abroad, some within; some of the body, some of the mind: and diverse men have diverse recreations and exercises. Domitian,  

†Virg. 1. Georg.  
"The thirsting Tantalus gapes for the water that eludes his lips."  
"I may desire, but can't enjoy."  
††Jeterus, lib. 3. post. cap. 1.  
"See Athenaeus disgeo.  
Ludi volvi, 
1500 men at once, tigers, lions, elephants, horses, dogs, bears, &c.  
"See Lib. ult. et l. 1. ad fecum consuetudinem non minus laudabilis quam veteri contubernia Rhetorum, Bythornor in urbibus et municipiis, certisque debas exerexitur ad sagittarii, gladiatori, &c. Alia ingeni, animique exercitia, quorum praepriment studium, principem populorum tragodiam, comediam, fabulis scilicet, ad fies id genus ludis recreare.  
"Orbis terrae descript. part. 3.  
"What shall I say of their spectacles produced with the most magnificent decorations,—a degree of costliness never indulged in even by the Romans?"
the emperor, was much delighted with catching flies; Augustus to play with nuts amongst children; *Alexander Severus was often pleased to play with whelps and young pigs. *Adrian was so wholly enamoured with dogs and horses, that he bestowed monuments and tombs of them, and buried them in graves. In foul weather, or when they can use no other convenient sports, by reason of the time, as we do cock-fighting, to avoid idleness, I think (though some be more seriously taken with it, spend much time, cost and charges, and are too solicitous about it), *Severus used partridges and quails, as many Frenchmen do still, and to keep birds in cages, with which he was much pleased, when at any time he had leisure from public cares and businesses. He had (saith Lampridius), tame pheasants, ducks, partridges, peacocks, and some 20,000 ringdoves and pigeons. Busbequius, the emperor's orator, when he lay in Constantinople, and could not stir much abroad, kept for his recreation, busying himself to see them fed, almost all manner of strange birds and beasts; this was something, though not to exercise his body, yet to refresh his mind. Conradius Gesner, at Zurich in Switzerland, kept so likewise for his pleasure, a great company of wild beasts; and (as he saith) took great delight to see them eat their meat. Turkey gentlewomen, that are perpetual prisoners, still mewed up according to the custom of the place, have little else besides their household business, or to play with their children to drive away time, but to dally with their cats, which they have in delitias, as many of our ladies and gentlewomen use monkeys and little dogs. The ordinary recreations which we have in winter, and in most solitary times busy our minds with, are cards, tables, and dice, shovelboard, chess-play, the philosopher's game, small trunks, shuttlecock, billiards, music, masics, singing, dancing, ulegames, frolics, jests, riddles, catches, purposes, questions and commands, *merry tales of errant knights, queens, lovers, lords, ladies, giants, dwarfs, thieves, cheaters, witches, fairies, goblins, friars, &c., such as the old woman told Psyche in *Apuleius, Boccace novels, and the rest, *quarum auditione pueri delectantur, *senes narratione, which some delight to hear, some to tell; all are well pleased with. Amaranthus, the philosopher, met Hermocles, Diophantus, and Philolaus, his companions, one day busily discoursing about Epicurus and Democritus' tenets, very solicitous which was most probable and came nearest to truth: to put them out of that surly controversy, and to refresh their spirits, he told them a pleasant tale of Stratocles the physician's wedding, and of all the particulars, the company, the cheer, the music, &c., for he was new come from it; with which relation they were so much delighted, that Philolaus wished a blessing to his heart, and many a good wedding, *many such merry meetings might he be at, "to please himself with the sight, and others with the narration of it." News are generally welcome to all our ears, *avide audimus, *aurum enim hominum novitate betantur (as Pliny observes), we long after rumour to hear and listen to, *densum humeris bibit aure vulgus. We are most part too inquisitive and apt to hearken after news, which Cesar, in his *Commentaries, observes of the old Gauls, they would be inquiring of every carrier and passenger what they had heard or seen, what news abroad?

---

* Lampridius.  
* Spartan.  
* Delectatus Iulius catulatorum, porcellorum, ut perdes inter se magnum, aut ut aces parvula sursum et deorsum voluptae, his maxima delectatus, ut solutudines publicas sublevaret.  
* Prumalidace lute ut possint produce noctes.  
* Miles. 4.  
* Epist. lib. 8. Ruffino.  
* Hor.  
* Lib. 4. Gallicorum commenmiadis us ut viaetos etiam invite consistere cognoscit, et quid quisque corum audiret aut cognobit de qui re quernant.  
* Vitae quaest. lib. ut.
choly thoughts, was to hear news, and to listen after those ordinary occurrences, which were brought him cum primis, by letters or otherwise out of the remotest parts of Europe. Some men's whole delight is to take tobacco, and drink all day long in a tavern or alehouse, to discourse, sing, jest, roar, talk of a cock and bull over a pot, &c. Or when three or four good companions meet, tell old stories by the fireside, or in the sun, as old folks usually do, que aprici meminere senes, remembering afresh and with pleasure ancient matters, and such like accidents, which happened in their younger years: others' best past-time is to game, nothing to them so pleasant. *Hic Veneri indulget, haunc decoquit aleae—many too nicely take exceptions at cards, tables, and dice, and such mixed luxuriosus lots, whom Gataker well confutes. Which though they be honest recreations in themselves, yet may justly be otherwise excepted at, as they are often abused, and forbidden as things most pernicious; insanam rem et damnosam,* Lemnius calls it. “For most part in these kind of diversions *tis not art or skill, but subtilety, cunning, watching, knavery, chance and fortune carries all away:” *tis ambulatoria pecunia.

——*puncto mobili horae
Permutat deinos, et cedit in altera jura.*

They labour most part not to pass their time in honest sport, but for filthy lucrative, and covetousness of money. *In jussissimum lucrum et avaritiam hominum convertitur,* as Danes observes. *Fons fraudum et maleficiarum,* *tis the fountain of cozenage and villainy.* *A thing so common all over Europe at this day, and so generally abused, that many men are utterly undone by it,* their means spent, patrimonies consumed, they and their posterity beggared; besides swearing, wrangling, drinking, loss of time, and such inconveniences, which are ordinary concomitants: *For when once they have got a haunt of such companies, and habit of gaming, they can hardly be drawn from it, but as an itch it will tickle them, and as it is with whoremasters, once entered, they cannot easily leave it off:* *Vexat mentes insaniam cupidio,* they are mad upon their sport. And in conclusion (which Charles the Seventh, that good French king, published in an edict against gamblers) *unde pie et hilaris vitae sufragium sibi suisque liberas totique familiae,* &c. “That which was once their livelihood, should have maintained wife, children, family, is nowspent and gone;” *maeror et eyestas,* &c., sorrow and beggary succeeds. So good things may be abused, and that which was first invented to refresh men's weary spirits, when they come from other labours and studies to exhilarate the mind, to entertain time and company, tedious otherwise in those long solitary winter nights, and keep them from worse matters, an honest exercise is contrarily perverted.

Chess-play is a good and witty exercise of the mind for some kind of men, and fit for such melancholy, Rhasis holds, as are idle, and have extravagant impertinent thoughts, or troubled with cares, nothing better to distract their mind, and alter their meditations: invented (some say) by the general of an army in a famine, to keep soldiers from mutiny: but if it proceed from overmuch study, in such a case it may do more harm than good; it is a game too troublesome for some men's brains, too full of anxiety, all out as bad as study; besides it is a testy choleric game, and very offensive to him that loseth the mate. *William the Conqueror, in his younger years, playing at chess with

---

1 They account them unlawful because sortileges. 2 Instit. c. 44. In his indis plenumque non ara est peritia viget, sed frua, falcacia, dolos, ascutia, casus, fortuna, terrors, locum habent, non ratio, consilium, sapientia, &c. 3 *In a moment of fleeting time it changes masters and submits to new control.* 4 Abusus tamen frequentia hodie in Europa ut plerique crebro harum usus patrimonium profundant, exhaustis facultatibus, ad imponam redignatur. 5 *Qui semel prurigo ista animam occupat agere discuti potest, solicitantibus unique ejusdem farinae hominibus, damnosae illas voluptates repugnat, quod et socioribus inscitum, &c.* 6 Institutum etsi exercitato, non tueri, sed valeuthinis et oblectantem ratione, et quo animus desitigatius resipire, novassque vires ad subaudios labores denuo eocrpet. 7 Latrunculorum ludus inventus est & duc, ut cum miles intolerabili fames laboraret, altero die odous altero ludens, famis obfractionur. Bellonius. See more of this game in Daniel Souter's Palamedes, vel de variis ludis, l. 3. 8 *D. Hayward in vita quas.*
the Prince of France (Dauphiné was not annexed to that crown in those days) losing a mate, knocked the chess-board about his pate, which was a cause afterward of much enmity between them. For some such reason it is belike, that Patrizius, in his 3. book, tit. 12. de reg. instit. forbids his prince to play at chess; hawking and hunting, riding, &c. he will allow; and this to other men, but by no means to him. In Muscovy, where they live in stoves and hot houses all winter long, come seldom or little abroad, it is again very necessary, and therefore in those parts, (saith 'Herbastein) much used. At Fez in Africa, where the like inconvenience of keeping within doors is through heat, it is very laudable; and (as "Leo Afer relates) as much frequented. A sport fit for idle gentlewomen, soldiers in garrison, and courtiers that have nought but love matters to busy themselves about, but not altogether so convenient for such as are students. The like I may say of Col. Bruxer's philosophy game, D. Fulke's Metromachia and his Ouronomachia, with the rest of those intricate astrological and geometrical fictions, for such especially as are mathematically given; and the rest of those curious games.

Dancing, singing, masking, mumming, stage plays, howsoever they be heavily censured by some severe Catos, yet if opportunely and soberly used, may justly be approved. Melius est sodere, quam saltare, *saith Austin: but what is that if they delight in it? Nemo saltat sobrius. But in what kind of dance? I know these sports have many oppugners, whose volumes writ against them; when as all they say (if duly considered) is but ignoratio Elenchi; and some again, because they are now cold and wayward, past themselves, cavil at all such youthful sports in others, as he did in the comedy; they think them, ulico nasci sensu, &c. Some out of preposterous zeal object many times trivial arguments, and because of some abuse, will quite take away the good use, as if they should forbid wine because it makes men drunk; but in my judgment they are too stern: there "is a time for all things, a time to mourn, a time to dance," Eccles. iii. 4. "a time to embrace, a time not to embrace (verse 5), and nothing better than that a man should rejoice in his own works," verse 22; for my part, I will subscribe to the king's declaration, and was ever of that mind, those May games, wakes, and Whitsun ales, &c., if they be not at unseasonable hours, may justly be permitted. Let them freely feast, sing and dance; have their puppet-plays, hobby-horses, tabors, crowds, bagpipes, &c., play at ball, and barley-breaks, and what sports and recreations they like best. In Franconia, a province of Germany, (saith "Aubanus Bohemus) the old folks, after evening prayer, went to the alehouse, the younger sort to dance: and to say truth with "Salisburyensis, satius fuerat sic otari, quam turpissimus occupari, better do so than worse, as without question otherwise (such is the corruption of man's nature) many of them will do. For that cause, plays, masks, jesters, gladiators, tumblers, jugglers, &c., and all that crew is admitted and winked at: Tota jocularium scena procedit, et ideo spectacula admissa sunt, et infinita tyrrioria vanitatuma, ut his occupentur, qui perversissii otari solent: that they might be busied about such toys, that would otherwise more pernicious be idle. So that as 'Tacitus said of the astrologers in Rome, we may say of them, genus hominum est quod in civitate nostra et vitabitur semper et retinebitur, they are a debanched company most part, still spoken against, as well they deserve some of them (for I so relish and distinguish them as fiddlers, and musicians), and yet ever retained. "Evil is not to be done (I confess) that good may come of it:" but this is evil per accidens, and, in a qualified sense, to avoid a greater inconvenience, may justly be tolerated. Sir Thomas More, in

---

1 Muscovit. commentarium. 2 Inter cives Fessanum latruno clermum ludus est usitatissimus, lib. 3. de Africa. 3 "It is better to dig than to dance." 4 Plinius. "No sensible man dance." 5 De mor. gent. 6 Polycrat. 1. 1. cap. 8. 7 Idem Salisburyensis. 8 Hist. lib. 1.
Exercise rectified.

Mem. 4.

his Utopian Commonwealth, "as he will have none idle, so will he have no man labour over hard, to be toiled out like a horse, 'tis more than slavish infelicity, the life of most of our hired servants and tradesmen elsewhere (excepting his Utopians) but half the day allotted for work, and half for honest recreation, or whatsoever employment they shall think fit for themselves." If one half day in a week were allowed to our household servants for their merry-meetings, by their hard masters, or in a year some feasts, like those Roman Saturnals, I think they would labour harder all the rest of their time, and both parties be better pleased: but this needs not (you will say), for some of them do nought but loiter all the week long.

This which I am at, is for such as are fracti animis, troubled in mind, to ease them, over-toiled on the one part, to refresh: over idle on the other, to keep themselves busied. And to this purpose, as any labour or employment will serve to the one, any honest recreation will conduce to the other, so that it be moderate and sparing, as the use of meat and drink; not to spend all their life in gaming, playing, and pastimes, as too many gentlemen do; but to revive our bodies and recreate our souls with honest sports: of which as there be diverse sorts, and peculiar to several callings, ages, sexes, conditions, so there be proper for several seasons, and those of distinct natures, to fit that variety of humours which is amongst them, that if one will not, another may: some in summer, some in winter, some gentle, some more violent, some for the mind alone, some for the body and mind: (as to some it is both business and a pleasant recreation to oversee workmen of all sorts, husbandry, cattle, horse, &c. To build, plot, project, to make models, cast up accounts, &c.) some without, some within doors; new, old, &c., as the season serveth, and as men are inclined. It is reported of Philippus Borus, that good duke of Burgundy (by Lodovicus Vives, in Epist. and Pont. *Heuter in his history) that the said duke, at the marriage of Eleonora, sister to the king of Portugal, at Bruges in Flanders, which was solemnized in the deep of winter, when, as by reason of unseasonable weather, he could neither hawk nor hunt, and was now tired with cards, dice, &c., and such other domestic sports, or to see ladies dance, with some of his courtiers, he would in the evening walk disguised all about the town. It so fortuned, as he was walking late one night, he found a country fellow dead drunk, snorting on a bulk; he caused his followers to bring him to his palace, and there stripping him of his old clothes, and attiring him after the court fashion, when he waked, he and they were all ready to attend upon his excellency, persuading him he was some great duke. The poor fellow admiring how he came there, was served in state all the day long; after supper he saw them dance, heard music, and the rest of those court-like pleasures: but late at night, when he was well tipped, and again fast asleep, they put on his old robes, and so conveyed him to the place where they first found him. Now the fellow had not made them so good sport the day before as he did when he returned to himself; all the jest was, to see how he looked upon it. In conclusion, after some little admiration, the poor man told his friends he had seen a vision, constantly believed it, would not otherwise be persuaded, and so the jest ended.

Antiochus Epiphanes would often disguise himself, steal from his court, and go into merchants', goldsmiths', and other tradesmen's shops, sit and talk with them, and sometimes ride or walk alone, and fall aboard with any tinker, clown, serving man, carrier, or whomsoever he met first. Sometimes he did ex insperato give a poor fellow money, to see how he would look, or on set

4 Nemo desidet otiosus, ita nemo asinino more ad seram nocem laborat: nam cap plusquam servis serumpa, quae opificum vita est, exceptis Utopiis, qui diem in 24 horas dividunt, sed duarum operi depantur, relativum a somno et cibo eaque arsium permittitur. *Herorum Burgund. lib. 4. **It was hominem deleret ad palatum et lecto dulci collocom, &c. mirar homo ubi se loco videt. * Quid interest, inquit Lodovicus Vives, (epist. ad Francisc. Barducem) inter diem illius et nostras aliquot annos nihil penitus, mal quod, &c. **Hec, Stephan. præfaat. Herodoti.
purpose lose his purse as he went, to watch who found it, and withal how he would be affected, and with such objects he was much delighted. Many such tricks are ordinarily put in practice by great men, to exhilarate themselves and others, all which are harmless jests, and have their good uses.

But amongst those exercises, or recreations of the mind within doors, there is none so general, so aptly to be applied to all sorts of men, so fit and proper to expel idleness and melancholy, as that of study: Studia senectutem oblaccant, adolescentiam alunt, secundas res ornant, aduersis per fugiam et solutum praebent, domi delectant, &c., find the rest in Tully pro Archia Poeta. What so full of content, as to read, walk, and see maps, pictures, statues, jewels, marbles, which some so much magnify, as those that Phidias made of old so exquisite and pleasing to be beheld, that as Chrysostom thinketh, "if any man be sickly, troubled in mind, or that cannot sleep for grief, and shall but stand over against one of Phidias' images, he will forget all care, or whatsoever else may molest him, in an instant?" There be those as much taken with Michael Angelo's, Raphael de Urbino's, Francesco Francia's pieces, and many of those Italian and Dutch painters, which were excellent in their ages; and esteem of it as a most pleasing sight, to view those neat architectures, devices, escutcheons, coats of arms, read such books, to peruse old coins of several sorts in a fair gallery; artificial works, perspective glasses, old reliques, Roman antiquities, variety of colours. A good picture is falsa veritates, et muta poesis: and though (as Vives saith) artificialia delectant, sed max fustidimus, artificial toys please but for a time; yet who is he that will not be moved with them for the present? When Achilles was tormented and sad for the loss of his dear friend Patroclus, his mother Thetis brought him a most elaborate and curious buckler made by Vulcan, in which were engraved sun, moon, stars, planets, sea, land, men fighting, running, riding, women scolding, hills, dales, towns, castles, brooks, rivers, trees, &c., with many pretty landscapes, and perspective pieces: with sight of which he was infinitely delighted, and much eased of his grief.

"Who will not be affected so in like case, or to see those well-furnished cloisters and galleries of the Roman cardinals, so richly stored with all modern pictures, old statues and antiquities! Cum se spectando recreet simul et legendo, to see their pictures alone and read the description, as Boissardus well adds, whom will it not affect which Bozius, Pomponius Lætus, Marlianus, Schottus, Cavelerius, Ligorius, &c., and he himself hath well performed of late. Or in some prince's cabinets, like that of the great dukes in Florence, of Felix Platerus in Basil, or noblemen's houses, to see such variety of attires, faces, so many, so rare, and such exquisite pieces, of men, birds, beasts, &c., to see those excellent landscapes, Dutch works, and curious cuts of Sadlier of Prague, Albertus Durer, Golfzius Vrintes, &c., such pleasant pieces of perspective, Indian pictures made of feathers, China works, frames, thanatographical motions, exotic toys, &c. Who is he that is now wholly overcome with idleness, or otherwise involved in a labyrinth of worldly cares, troubles and discontentst, that will not be much lightened in his mind by reading of some enticing story, true or feigned, where as in a glass he shall observe what our forefathers have done, the beginnings, ruins, falls, periods of commonwealths, private men's actions displayed to the life, &c. Plutarch therefore calls them, secundas mensas et

\[1\] "Study is the delight of old age, the support of youth, the ornament of prosperity, the solace and refuge of adversity, the comfort of domestick life," &c. Orat. 12. signis anno furuit Augustus aut aeger, nec omnium admittert, in mundö videtur régione et natissimæ pollices, obsolécti divitiam possit. quæ humanae vitæ atrocia et difficilia accidere solent. De anima. Ilid. 10. Tòpògr. Rom. part. 1. Quod heroum convivius legi soluit.\]
bellaria, the second course and junkets, because they were usually read at
noblemen's feasts. Who is not earnestly affected with a passionate speech,
well penned, an elegant poem, or some pleasant bewitching discourse, like that of
'Heliodorus, ubi oblectatio quaedam placide fuit cum hilaritate conjuncta?'
Julian the Apostate was so taken with an oration of Libanius, the sophister,
that, as he confesseth, he could not be quiet till he had read it all out. "Legi
orationem tuam magna ex parte, hesterna die ante prandium, pransus vero, sine
ulla intermissione totam absolvit." O argumenta! O compositionem! I may
say the same of this or that pleasing tract, which will draw his attention
along with it. To most kind of men it is an extraordinary delight to study.
For what a world of books offers itself, in all subjects, arts, and sciences, to
the sweet content and capacity of the reader? In arithmetic, geometry, per-
spective, optics, astronomy, architecture, sculpture, painting, of which so many
and such elaborate treatises are of late written: in mechanics and their mys-
terics, military matters, navigation, *riding of horses, *fencing, swimming,
gardening, planting, great tomes of household, cookery, falconry, hunting,
fishing, foiling, &c., with exquisite pictures of all sports, games, and what not?
In music, metaphysics, natural and moral philosophy, philology, in policy,
heraldry, genealogy, chronology, &c., they afford great tomes, or those studies of
'antiquity, &c., et quid subtilius Arithmeticon inventionibus, quid jucundius
Musicis rationibus, quid divius Astronomicis, quid rectius Geometricis dem-
strationibus? What so sure, what so pleasant? He that shall but see that
geometrical tower of Garezenda at Bologna in Italy, the steeple and clock at
Strasburg, will admire the effects of art, or that engine of Archimedes, to
remove the earth itself, if he had but a place to fasten his instrument: Archi-
medis Cochlea, and rare devices to corrivate waters, musical instruments, and
tri-syllable echoes again, again, and again repeated, with myths of such. What
vast tomes are extant in law, physic, and divinity, for profit, pleasure, practice,
speculation, in verse or prose, &c! their names alone are the subject of
whole volumes, we have thousands of authors of all sorts, many great libraries
full well furnished, like so many dishes of meat, served out for several palates;
and he is a very block that is affected with none of them. Some take an in-
finite delight to study the very languages wherein these books are written,
Hebrew, Greek, Syriac, Chaldee, Arabic, &c. Methinks it would please any
man to look upon a geographical map, *suavi animum delectatione allicere, ob
incredibilem rerum varietatem et jucunditatem, et ad pleniorem sui cognitionem
excitare, chorographical, topographical delineations, to behold, as it were, all
the remote provinces, towns, cities of the world, and never to go forth of the
limits of his study, to measure by the scale and compass their extent, distance,
and distance of their site. Charles the Great, as Platina writes, had three fair silver
tables, in one of which superficies was a large map of Constantinople, in the
second Rome neatly engraved, in the third an exquisite description of the whole
world, and much delight he took in them. What greater pleasure can there
now be, than to view those elaborate maps of Ortelius, Mercator, Hondius, &c.
To peruse those books of cities, put out by Braunius and Hogenbergius? To
read those exquisite descriptions of Maginus, Munster, Herrera, Leet, Merula,
Boterus, Leander, Albertus, Camden, Leo Afer, Adricomius, Nic. Gerbelius,
&c! Those famous expeditions of Christoph. Columbus, Americus Vespucius,

---

1 Melanchton de Heliodoro. 2 I read a considerable part of your speech before dinner, but after I had
dined I finished it completely. Oh what arguments, what eloquence!
3 Plutarch. 4 As in travelling the rest go forward and look before them, an antiquary alone looks round about him.
5 Janus Bifrons. "Cardan. 'What is more subtle than mathematical conclusions; what more agreeable than musical harmonies; what more divine than astronomical, what more certain than geometrical demonstrations?"
6 Hondius, preface. Merca-
toires. "It shares the mind by its agreeable attraction, on account of the incredible variety and pleasant-
ness of the subjects, and excites to a further step in knowledge." 7 Atlas Geog.
Marcus Polus the Venetian, Lod. Vertomannus, Aloysius Cadamustus, &c. Those accurate diaries of Portugeuse, Hollander, of Bartison, Olivier a Nort, &c. Hakluyt's voyages, Pet. Martyr's Decades, Benzo, Lerius, Linschoten's relations, those Hodeporicon of Jod. a Meggen, Brocard the monk, BREDENBACHII, Jo. Dublinius, Sands, &c., to Jerusalem, Egypt, and other remote places of the world? those pleasant itineraries of Paulus Hentzerus, Jodocus Sincerus, Dux Polonus, &c., to read BELLONIUS's observations, P. Gillius his surveys; those parts of America, set out, and curiously cut in pictures, by Fratres a Bry. To see a well-cut herbal, herbs, trees, flowers, plants, all vegetables expressed in their proper colours to the life, as that of Matthiolus upon Dioscorides, Delacampius, LOBEL, BAHMINUS, and that last voluminous and mighty herbal of Beslar of Nuremburg, wherein almost every plant is to his own bigness. To see birds, beasts, and fishes of the sea, spiders, gnats, serpents, flies, &c., all creatures set out by the same art, and truly expressed in lively colours, with an exact description of their natures, virtues, qualities, &c., as hath been accurately performed by AElian, Gesner, Ulysses Aldrovandus, Bellonius, RONDOLETTUS, HIPPOLYTUS SALVIANUS, &c. * ARCA, * nature, secreta, ordinem universi * GRANUM, * scientia majus, felicitatis et dulcedinis est, quam cogitatione quis aseque possit, aut mortalis sperare. What more pleasing studies can there be than the mathematical, theoretical or practical parts? as to survey land, make maps, models, dials, &c., with which I was ever much delighted myself. * TALIS est Mathematum pulcritudo (saith * PLUTARCH) ut his indiguum sit divitiarum phaleras istas et bullas, et puellaria spectacula comparari; such is the excellency of these studies, that all those ornaments and childish bubbles of wealth, are not worthy to be compared to them: * credi mihi (saith one) extingui dulce erit * MATHEMATICAURUM artium studio, I could even live and die with such meditations, and take more delight, true content of mind in them, than thou hast in all thy wealth and sport, how rich soever thou art. And as * Cardan well seconds me, Honorabilarum magnis est et glorioso hues intelligere, quam provincis præesse, formosum aut dilem juvenem esse. * The like pleasure there is in all other studies, to such as are truly addicted to them, * ea saevis (one holds) ut cum quis ea degustaverit, quasi poculis Circeis captus, non possit usquam ob illis divelli; the like sweetness, which as Circe's cup bewitcheth a student, he cannot leave off, as well may witness those many laborious hours, days and nights, spent in the voluminous treatises written by them; the same content. * JULIUS Scaliger was so much affected with poetry, that he brake out into a pathetical protestation, he had rather be the author of twelve verses in Lucan, or such an ode in * Horace, than emperor of Germany. * Nicholas Gerbelius, that good old man, was so much ravished with a few Greek authors restored to light, with hope and desire of enjoying the rest, that he exclaims forthwith, * ARABIBUS atque INDIB omnibus erimus diöri, we shall be richer than all the Arabic or Indian princes; of such esteem they were with him, incomparable worth and value. Seneca prefers Zeno and Chrysippus, two doting stoics (he was so much enamoured of their works), before any prince or general of an army; and Orontius, the mathematician, so far admires Archimedes, that he calls him, * DIVINUM et homine majorem, a petty god, more than a man; and well he might, for aught I see, if you respect fame or worth. * Pindarus, of Thebes, is as much renowned for his poems, as Epaminondas, Pelopidas, Hercules or Bacchus, his fellow citizens, for their warlike actions; * et si famam respicias, non pauciores

* Cardan, "To learn the mysteries of the heavens, the secret workings of nature, the order of the universe, is a greater happiness and gratification than any mortal can think or expect to obtain." * Lib. de cupid. divitiarum. * Leon. Digges. præf. ad perpet. progyna. * Plus capio voluptati, &c. * In Hipperchen. civis. 3. "It is more honourable and glorious to understand these truths than to govern provinces, to be beautiful, or to be young." * Cardan, praent. rerum variet. * Poetica lib. * Lib. 2. Òde 9 Donec gratus eram tibi, &c. * De Pelopones. lib. 6. descript. Græc. * Quos si integros habeamus, Dil boni, quas opes, quas thesannos teneremus!
Mem. 4.]

Exercise rectified.

Aristotelis quam Alexandri mensinerat (as Cardan notes), Aristotle is more known than Alexander; for we have a bare relation of Alexander's deeds, but Aristotle, toto vivit in monumentis, is whole in his works: yet I stand not upon this; the delight is it, which I aim at, so great pleasure, such sweet content there is in study. 1 King James, 1605, when he came to see our University of Oxford, and amongst other edifices now went to view that famous library, renewed by Sir Thomas Bodley, in imitation of Alexander, at his departure brake out into that noble speech, If I were not a king, I would be a university man: "and if it were so that I must be a prisoner, if I might have my wish, I would desire to have no other prison than that library, and to be chained together with so many good authors et mortuis magistris." So sweet is the delight of study, the more learning they have (as he that hath a dropsy, the more he drinks the thirstier he is) the more they covet to learn, and the last day is prioris discipulis; harsh at first learning is, radices amare, but fructus dulces, according to that of Isocrates, pleasant at last; the longer they live, the more they are enamoured with the Muses. Heinsius, the keeper of the library at Leyden in Holland, was mewed up in it all the year long; and that which to thy thinking should have bred a loathing, caused in him a greater liking. "I no sooner (saith he) come into the library, but I bolt the door to me, excluding lust, ambition, avarice, and all such vices, whose nurse is idleness, the mother of ignorance, and melancholy herself, and in the very lap of eternity, amongst so many divine souls, I take my seat, with so lofty a spirit and sweet content, that I pity all our great ones, and rich men that know not this happiness." I am not ignorant in the meantime (notwithstanding this which I have said) how barbarously and basely, for the most part, our ruder gentry esteem of libraries and books, how they neglect and contemn so great a treasure, so inestimable a benefit, as Æsop's cock did the jewel he found in the dunghill; and all through error, ignorance, and want of education. And 'tis a wonder, withal, to observe how much they will vainly cast away in unnecessary expenses, quot modis peranteat (saith Erasmus) magnatibus pecuniae, quantum absuant alea, scortia, computatio, propinquiæ non necessarie, pompe, bella quæsia, ambitio, coæsæ, morio, ludio, &c., what in hawks, hounds, lawsuits, vain building, gormandising, drinking, sports, plays, pastimes, &c. If a well-minded man to the Muses would sue to some of them for an exhibition, to the farther maintenance or enlargement of such a work, be it college, lecture, library, or whatsoever else may tend to the advancement of learning, they are so unwilling, so averse, that they had rather see these which are already, with such cost and care erected, utterly ruined, demolished or otherwise employed; for they repine many and grudge at such gifts and revenues so bestowed: and therefore it were in vain, as Erasmus well notes, vel ab his, vel à negotiatoribus qui se Mammonae deliderunt, improbæm fortasse tale officium exigere, to solicit or ask any thing of such men that are likely damned to riches; to this purpose. For my part I pity these men, stultos jubeo esse libenter, let them go as they are, in the catalogue of Ignoramus. How much, on the other side, are all we bound that are scholars, to those munificent Ptolomies, bountiful Mæcenates, heroic patrons, divine spirits,
public academies in most cities, as in our private colleges! How shall I remember *Sir Thomas Bodley, amongst the rest, *Otho Nicholson, and the Right Reverend John Williams, Lord Bishop of Lincoln (with many other pious acts), who besides that at St. John's College in Cambridge, that in Westminster, is now likewise in *Fieri with a library at Lincoln (a noble precedent for all corporate towns and cities to imitate). O quam te memorem
(vir illustriissime), quibus elogis? But to my task again.

Whosoever he is therefore that is overrun with solitariness, or carried away with pleasing melancholy and vain conceits, and for want of employment knows not how to spend his time, or crucified with worldly care, I can prescribe him no better remedy than this of study, to compose himself to the learning of some art or science. Provided always that this malady proceed not from overmuch study; for in such case he adds fuel to the fire, and nothing can be more pernicious; let him take heed he do not overstretch his wits, and make a skeleton of himself; or such inaneratos as read nothing but play-books, idle poems, jests, Amadis de Gaul, the Knight of the Sun, the Seven Champions, Palmeria de Oliva, Hnôn of Bourdeaux, &c. Such many times prove in the end as mad as Don Quixote. Study is only prescribed to those who are otherwise idle, troubled in mind, or carried headlong with vain thoughts and imaginations, to distract their cogitations (although variety of study, or some serious subject, would do the former no harm), and divert their continual meditations another way. Nothing in this case better than study; *semper aliqua memoriter ediscant, saith Piso, let them learn something without book, transcribe, translate, &c. Read the Scriptures, which Hyperius, *lib. 1. de quotid. script. lect. fol. 77, holds available of itself, "the mind is erected thereby from all worldly cares, and hath much quiet and tranquillity." For as "Austin well hath it, "tis scientia scientiarum, omni melle dulcor, omni pane suavior, omni vino hilarior: 'tis the best nepenthe, surest cordial, sweetest alternative, presentest diverter: for neither as "Chrysostom well adds, "those boughs and leaves of trees which are plashed for cattle to stand under, in the heat of the day, in summer, so much refresh them with their acceptable shade, as the reading of the Scripture doth recreate and comfort a distressed soul, in sorrow and affliction." Paul bids "pray continually," *quod cibus corpori, lectio animae facit, saith Seneca, as meat is to the body, such is reading to the soul. "To be at leisure without books is another hell, and to be buried alive." *Cardan calls a library the physic of the soul; "divine authors forth the mind, make men bold and constant; and (as Hyperius adds) godly conference will not permit the mind to be tortured with absurd cogitations." Rhasis enjoins continual conference to such melancholy men, perpetual discourse of some history, tale, poem, news, &c., *alternos sermones edere ac bibere, aequum jucundum quam cibus, sive potus, which feeds the mind as meat and drink doth the body, and pleaseth as much: and therefore the said Rhasis, not without good cause, would have somebody still talk seriously, or dispute with them, and sometimes "to cavil and wrangle (so that it break not out to a violent perturbation, for such altercation is like stirring of a dead fire to make it burn afresh," it whets a dull spirit, "and will not suffer the mind to be drowned in those profound cogitations, which melancholy men are commonly troubled with." *Ferdinand and Alphonsus, kings of Arragon and Sicily, were both cured by reading the history, one of Curtius, the other of Livy, when no prescribed physic would take place. Cama-

---

4 Founder of our public library in Oxon. 6 Ours in Christ Church, Oxon. 7 Animus levatur inde a curis multa quietae et tranquillitatis fruens. 8 Ser. 38. ad Fratres Erem. 9 Hom. 4. de ponentia. Nam neque eorum num propeorem tyrpiris factice, meridie per astamum, optabilem exhibentes unibrum ovns eis rebeat, ascensuramiam lectio altius ascensuro animas solutur et recreatur. 10 Quum sine literis more est, et vivi hominis sepulcrum. Seneca. 11 Cap. 99. 1. 57. de rer. var. 12 Formam reddunt animum et constantem; et pluam colloquium non permititur animam abscondra cogitationes torquere. 13 Alterationibus utatur, quae non permittent animam submergi profundis cogitationibus, de quibus olcio cogitat et tristat tur in ils. 14 Bodin. prefat. ad math. hist.
Nay, what shall the Scripture itself? Which is like an apothecary’s shop, wherein are all remedies for all infirmities of mind, purgatives, cordials, alternatives, corrobatives, lenitives, &c. “Every disease of the soul,” saith austin, “hath a peculiar medicine in the Scripture; this only is required, that the sick man take the potion which God hath already tempered.” b Gregory calls it “a glass wherein we may see all our infirmities,” ignatum colloquent, Psalm cxix. 140. Origen a charm. And therefore Hierom prescribes justicus the monk, in continually to read the Scripture, and to meditate on that which he hath read; for as mastication is to meat, so is meditation on that which we read. I would for these causes wish him that is melancholy to use both human and divine authors, voluntarily to impose some task upon himself, to divert his melancholy thoughts: to study the art of memory, Cosmus Roscellius, Pet. Ravennas, Scencelius’ Detectus, or practise Brachygraphy, &c., that will ask a great deal of attention: or let him demonstrate a proposition in Euclid, in his five last books, extract a square root, or study algebra: than which, as clavius holds, “in all human disciplines nothing can be more excellent and pleasant, so abstruse and recondite, so bewitching, so miraculous, so ravishing, so easy withal and full of delight,” omnem humanum captum superare videtur. By this means you may define ex unque leonem, as the diverb, by his thumb alone the bigness of Hercules, or the true dimensions of the great colossus, Solomon’s temple, and Domitian’s amphitheatre out of a little part. By this art you may contemplate the variation of the twenty-three letters, which may be so infinitely varied, that the words complicated and deduced thence will not be contained within the compass of the firmament; ten words may be varied 40,320 several ways: by this art you may examine how many men may stand one by another in the whole superficies of the earth, some say 148,456,800,000,000, assignando singulis passum quadratum (assigning a square foot to each), how many men, supposing all the world as habitable as France, as fruitful and so long-lived, may be born in 60,000 years, and so may you demonstrate with “Archimedes how many sands the mass of the whole world might contain if all sandy, if you did but first know how much a small cube as big as a mustard-seed might hold, with infinite such. But in all nature what there is so stupendous as to examine and calculate the motion of the planets, their magnitudes, apogees, perigees, eccentricities, how far distant from the
earth, the bigness, thickness, compass of the firmament, each star, with their diameters and circumference, apparent area, superficies, by those curious helps of glasses, astrolabes, sextants, quadrants, of which Tycho Brahæ in his mechanics, optics ("divine optics), arithmetic, geometry, and such like arts and instruments? What so intricate and pleasing withal, as to peruse and practise Heron Alexandrinus's works, de spiritualibus, de machinis bellicis, de machinâ se movere, Jordanis Nemorâri de ponderibus proposit. 13, that pleasant tract of Machometes Bragledînus de superficiarium divisionibus, Apollonius's Conics, or Commandinæ's labours in that kind, de centro gravitatis, with many such geometrical theorems and problems? Those rare instruments and mechanical inventions of Jac. Bessonus, and Cardav to this purpose, with many such experiments intimated long since by Roger Bacon, in his tract de "Secretis artis et naturæ, as to make a chariot to move sine animali, diving boats, to walk on the water by art, and to fly in the air, to make several cranes and pulleys, qui- bus homo trahat ad se mille homines, lift up and remove great weights, mills to move themselves, Archita's dove, Albertus's brazen head, and such thea- turgical works. But especially to do strange miracles by glasses, of which Proculus and Bacon writ of old, burning glasses, multiplying glasses, perspec- tives, ut unus homo apparent exercitus, to see afar off, to represent solid bodies by cylinders and cones, to walk in the air, ut veracier vidant (saith Bacon) aurum et argentum et quicquid aliud volunt, et quum veniant ad locum visionis, nihil inveniant, which glasses are much perfected of late by Baptista Porta and Galileo, and much more is promised by Magninus and Midorgius, to be performed in this kind. Otoscopicae some speak of, to intend hearing, as the other do sight; Marcellius Vrencken, a Hollander, in his epistle to Burggravius, makes mention of a friend of his that is about an instrument, quo videbit quae in alto horizonte sint. But our alchemists, methinks, and Rosicrucians afford most rarities, and are fuller of experiments: they can make gold, separate and alter metals, extract oils, salts, lees, and do more strange works than Geber, Lullius, Bacon, or any of those ancients. Crollius hath made after his master Paracelsus, aurum fulminans, or aurum volatile, which shall imitate thunder and lightning, and crack louder than any gunpowder; Cornelius Drible a perpetual motion, inextinguishable lights, lumin non ardens, with many such facts; see his book de naturâ elementorum, besides hail, wind, snow, thunder, lightning, &c., those strange fire-works, devilish petards, and such like warlike machinations derived hence, of which read Tartalea and others. Ernestus Burggravius, a disciple of Paracelsus, hath published a discourse, in which he specifies a lamp to be made of man's blood, Lucerna vitae et mortis indeci, so he terms it, which chemically prepared forty days, and afterwards kept in a glass, shall show all the accidents of this life; si lâmpas hic clarus, tunc homo hilaris et sanus cor- porâ et animo; si nebulosus et depressus, malâ officiâtur, et sic pro statu hominis variatur, unde sumptus sanguis; "and which is most wonderful, it dies with the party, cum homine petit, et evanescit, the lamp and the man whence the blood was taken, are extinguished together. The same author hath another tract of Muniæ (all out as vain and prodigious as the first) by which he will cure most diseases, and transfer them from a man to a beast, by drawing blood from one, and applying it to the other, vel in plantam derivare, and an Alexi- pharmacum, of which Roger Bacon of old in his Tract. de retardanda senectute, to make a man young again, live three or four hundred years. Besides panaceas, martial amulets, unguentum armarium, balsams, strange extracts, elixirs, and such like magico-magical cures. Now what so pleasing can there be as the speculation of these things, to read and examine such experiments, or

* Distianus colorum sola Optica diuinit.

† Cap. 4. et 5.

* "If the lamp burn brightly, then the man is cheerful and healthy in mind and body; if, on the other hand, he from whom the blood is taken be melancholick or a spendthrift, then it will burn dimly, and flicker in the socket."
Exercise rectified.

if a man be more mathematically given, to calculate, or puruse Napier's Logarithms, or those tables of artificial sines and tangents, not long since set out by mine old collegiate, good friend, and late fellow-student of Christ-church in Oxford, *Mr. Edmund Gunter, which will perform that by addition and subtraction only, which heretofore Regiomontanus's tables did by multiplication and division, or those elaborate conclusions of his sector, quadrant, and cross-staff. Or let him that is melancholy calculate spherical triangles, square a circle, cast a nativity, which howsoever some tax, I say with "Garceus, dabinus hoc petulantibus ingenii, we will in some cases allow: or let him make an ephemerides, read Suisset, the calculator's works, Scaliger de emendatione temporum, and Petavius his adversary, till he understand them, peruse subtle Scotia and Suarez's metaphysics, or school divinity, Occam, Thomas, Eutisberus, Durand, &c. If those other do not affect him, and his means be great, to employ his purse and fill his head, he may go find the philosopher's stone; he may apply his mind, I say, to heraldry, antiquity, invent impresses, emblems; make epithalamiums, epitaphs, elegies, epigrams, palindromia epigrammata, anagramas, chronograms, acrostics, upon his friends' names; or write a comment on Martianus Capella, Tertullian de pallio, the Nubian geography, or upon Aelia Laelia Crispis, as many idle fellows have essayed; and rather than do nothing, vary a verse a thousand ways with Putean, so torturing his wits, or as Rainerus of Lanecburgh, *2150 times in his Proteus Poetices, or Scaliger, Chrysolithus, Cleppissius, and others, have in like sort done. If such voluntary tasks, pleasure and delight, or crabbledness of these studies, will not yet divert their idle thoughts, and alienate their imaginations, they must be compelled, saith Christophorus à Vega, cogi debent, l. 5. c. 14, upon some mulet, if they perform it not, quod ex officio incumbat, loss of credit or disgrace, such as our public University exercises. For, as he that plays for nothing will not heed his game; no more will voluntary employment so thoroughly affect a student, except he be very intent of himself, and take an extraordinary delight in the study, about which he is conversant. It should be of that nature his business, which volens nolens he must necessarily undergo, and without great loss, mulet, shame, or hinderance, he may not omit.

Now for women, instead of laborious studies, they have curious needle-works, cut-works, spinning, bone-lace, and many pretty devices of their own making, to adorn their houses, cushions, carpets, chairs, stools ("for she eats not the bread of idleness," Prov. xxxi. 27. quesivit lanam et linum), confections, conserves, distillations, &c., which they show to strangers.

"Ipsa comes presseque operis lentissimus alte Hospitibus monstrare solet, non segetar horas Contestata suas, sed nec alid deperitis si."  

"Which to her guests she shows, with all her pelf,  
Thus from my maids, but this I did myself."

This they have to busy themselves about, household offices, &c., "neat gardens, full of exotic, versicolour, diversely varied, sweet-smelling flowers, and plants in all kinds, which they are most ambitious to get, curious to preserve and keep, proud to possess, and much many times brag of. Their merry meetings and frequent visitations, mutual invitations in good towns, I voluntarily omit, which are so much in use, gossiping among the meaner sort, &c., old folks have their heads; an excellent invention to keep them from idleness, that are by nature melancholy, and past all affairs, to say so many paternosters, avemaries, creeds, if it were not profane and superstitious. In a word, body and mind must be exercised, not one, but both, and that in a mediocrity; otherwise it

---

will cause a great inconvenience. If the body be overtired, it tires the mind. The mind oppresseth the body, as with students it oftentimes falls out, who (as Plutarch observes) have no care of the body, "but compel that which is mortal to do as much as that which is immortal: that which is earthly, as that which is ethereal. But as the ox tired, told the camel (both serving one master), that refused to carry some part of his burden, before it was long he should be compelled to carry all his pack, and skin to boot (which by and by, the ox being dead, fell out), the body may say to the soul, that will give him no respite or remission: a little after, an ague, vertigo, consumption, seizeth on them both, all his study is omitted, and they must be compelled to be sick together:" he that tenders his own good estate, and health, must let them draw with equal yoke, both alike, "that so they may happily enjoy their wished health."

Memb. V.

Waking and terrible Dreams rectified.

As waking that hurts, by all means must be avoided, so sleep, which so much helps, by like ways, "must be procured, by nature or art, inward or outward medicines, and be protracted longer than ordinary, if it may be, as being an especial help." It moistens and fattens the body, concocts, and helps digestion (as we see in dormice, and those Alpiue mice that sleep all winter), which Gesner speaks of, when they are so found sleeping under the snow in the dead of winter, as fat as butter. It expels cares, pacifies the mind, refresheth the weary limbs after long work:

*Somnia, quies rerum, placidissime somme deorum, Pax amans, quem cura fugit, qui corpora duris Fessa ministeritis nulles reparasse laboris."

"Sleep, rest of things, O pleasing deity, Peace of the soul, which cares dost cruelty, Weary bodies refresh and mollify."

The chiefest thing in all physic, Paracelsus calls it, omnia arcane gemmarum superans et metallorum. The fittest time is "two or three hours after supper, when as the meat is now settled at the bottom of the stomach, and 'tis good to lie on the right side first, because at that side the liver doth rest under the stomach, not molesting any way, but heating him as a fire doth a kettle, that is put to it. After the first sleep 'tis not amiss to lie on the left side, that the meat may the better descend," and sometimes again on the belly, but never on the back. Seven or eight hours is a competent time for a melancholy man to rest, as Crato thinks; but as some do, to lie in bed and not sleep, a day, or half a day together, to give assent to pleasing conceits and vain imaginations, is many ways pernicious.

To procure this sweet moistening sleep, it's best to take away the occasions (if it be possible) that hinder it, and then to use such inward or outward remedies, which may cause it. *Constat hothe (saith Boissardus in his tract de magi, cap. 4.) multos ita fascinari ut noctes integras exigat insomnes, somnus inquiétude animorum et corporum; many cannot sleep for witches and fascinations, which are too familiar in some places; they call it, dare alicui malum nocet. But the ordinary causes are heat and dryness, which must first be removed: a hot and dry brain never sleeps well; grief, fears, cares, expectations, anxieties, great businesses, In aurem utranque

*Tom. 1. de sanit. tacto. Qui rationem corporis non habent, sed cogitant mortalem immortali, terrestre adeoque egenam praestare industria: Ceterum ut Camelum asu venit, quod ei hos praedicatur, cum idem serviret domino et parte oneris lavare illum Camelum recusasset, paulo post et ipsius ceteris, et totum omne cogestaret gestare (quod mortuo bove implatum), Ira animo quoque contingit, dum desistendo corpori, &c. ut fulbrem illum et amabiliter sanitatem praestaret.


*Crato, cons. 31. Lib. 2. diabas aut tribus horis post occasam, quam jam elubus ad fundum ventriculi resedissent, primum super latere extero quiescendum, quod in tali delectu jecur sub ventriculo quiescat, non gravans sed elam sileat, perinde ac igitur lebetem qui illi admovetur; post primum somnum quiescendum latere sinistro, Sc.

*Scipius ascidit melancholicis, ut minimum excidite curere vigilis attentiretur. Ficinus, lib. 1. cap. 29.

*Ter. "That you may sleep calmly on either ear."
otiose ut dormias, and all violent perturbations of the mind, must in some sort be qualified, before we can hope for any good repose. He that sleeps in the day time, or is in suspense, fear, any way troubled in mind, or goes to bed upon a full stomach, may never hope for quiet rest in the night; non enim mereturia somnus admittatur, as the poet saith; innis and such like troublesome places are not for sleep; one calls ostler, another tapster, one cries and shouts, another sings, whoops, halloos,

"Quod ninus erunt placida composita quide: and if that will not serve, or may not be obtained, to seek then such means as are requisite. To lie in clean linen and sweet; before he goes to bed, or in bed, to hear "sweet music," which Ficinus commends, lib. 1. cap. 24. or as Jobertus, med. pract. lib. 3. cap. 10, "to read some pleasant author till he be asleep, to have a bason of water still dropping by his bedside" or to lie near that pleasant murmur, lenis somnantis aquis. Some flood-gates, arches, falls of water, like London Bridge, or some continuain noise which may benumb the senses, lenis motus, silentium et tendra, tum et ipse voluntas somnos faciant; as a gentle noise to some procures sleep, so, which Bernardino Tiseus, lib. de somno, well observes, silence, in a dark room, and the will itself, is most available to others. Piso commends frications, Andrew Borde a good draught of strong drink before one goes to bed; I say, a nutmeg and ale, or a good draught of muscadine, with a toast and nutmeg, or a posset of the same, which many use in a morning, but methinks, for such as have dry brains, are much more proper at night; some prescribe a sup of vinegar as they go to bed, a spoonful, saith Aelius Tetrabib. lib. 2. ser. 2. cap. 10. lib. 6. cap. 10. Eugineta, lib. 3. cap. 14, Piso, "a little after meat, because it rare- fies melancholy, and procures an appetite to sleep." Donat. ab Allinmar. cap. 7. and Mercurialis approve of it, if the malady proceed from the spleen. Saullust. Salvian. lib. 2. cap. 1. de remed., Hercules de Saxonii in Pan. Elinus., Montaltus de morb. capitis, cap. 28. de melan. are altogether against it. Lod. Mercatus, de inter. Morb. cau. lib. 1. cap. 17. in some cases doth allow it. 'Rasis seems to deliberate of it, though Simeon commend it (in sauce peradventure) he makes a question of it: as for baths, fomentations, oils, potions, simples or compounds, inwards taken to this purpose, 'I shall speak of them elsewhere. If, in the midst of the night, when they lie awake, which is usual to toss and tumble, and not sleep, 'Hanzovius would have them, if it be in warm weather, to rise and walk three or four turns (till they be cold) about the chamber, and then go to bed again.

Against fearful and troublesome dreams, Jacobus and such inconveniences, wherewith melancholy men are molested, the best remedy is to eat a light supper, and of such meats as are easy of digestion, no hare, venison, beef, &c., not to lie on his back, not to meditate or think in the day-time of any terrible objects, or especially talk of them before he goes to bed. For, as he said in Lucian after such conference, Iecates somniare mili visor, I can think of nothing but hobgoblins: and as Tully notes, "for the most part our
speeches in the day-time cause our fantasy to work upon the like in our sleep," which Ennius writes of Homer: *Et canis in somnis leporis vestigia latrat: as a dog dreams of a hare, so do men on such subjects they thought on last.*

"Somnia quae mentes luant volitantibus umbis, 
Nec delubra deum, nec ab at theere numina mittant, 
Sed siul quisque facit," &c.

For that cause when Ptolemy, king of Egypt, had posed the seventy interpreters in order, and asked the nineteenth man what would make one sleep quietly in the night, he told him, "the best way was to have divine and celestial meditations, and to use honest actions in the day-time." 6 Lod. Vives wonders how schoolmen could sleep quietly, and were not terrified in the night, or walk in the dark, they had such monstrous questions, and thought of such terrible matters all day long." They had need, amongst the rest, to sacrifice to god Morpheus, whom "Philostratus paints in a white and black coat, with a horn and ivory box full of dreams, of the same colours, to signify good and bad. If you will now how to interpret them, read Artemidorus, Sambucus and Cardan; but how to help them, "I must refer you to a more convenient place.

MEMB. VI.

SUBSECT. I.—Perturbations of the mind rectified. From himself, by resisting to the utmost, confessing his grief to a friend, &c.

Whosoever he is that shall hope to cure this malady in himself or any other, must first rectify these passions and perturbations of the mind: the chiefest cure consists in them. A quiet mind is that voluptas, or sumnum bonum of Epicurus; non dolore, curis vacare, animo tranquillo esse, not to grieve, but to want cares, and to have a quiet soul, is the only pleasure of the world, as Seneca truly recites his opinion, not that of eating and drinking, which injurious Aristotle maliciously puts upon him, and for which he is still mistaken, malé audite et culpate, slandered without a cause, and lashed by all posterity. "Fear and sorrow, therefore, are especially to be avoided, and the mind to be mitigated with mirth, constancy, good hope; vain terror, bad objects are to be removed, and all such persons in whose companies they be not well pleased." Gualter Bruel, Fernelius, consil. 43, Mercenialis, consil. 6, Piso, Jacchinius, cap. 15. in 9. Rhasius, Capivaccius, Hildesheim, &c., all inculcate this as an especial means of their cure, that their "minds be quiet ptly pacified, vain conceits diverted, if it be possible, with terrors, cares, "fixed studies, cogitations, and whatsoever it is that shall any way molest or trouble the soul," because that otherwise there is no good to be done. "The body's mischiefs," as Plato proves, "proceed from the soul: and if the mind be not first satisfied, the body can never be cured." Alcidibades raves (saith "Maximus Tyrius) and is sick, his furious desires carry him from Lyceus to the pleading place, thence to the sea, so into Sicily, thence to Lacedaemon, thence to Persia, thence to Samos, then again to Athens; Critias tyrannieth over all the city; Sardana-palus is love-sick; these men are ill-affected all, and can never be cured, till their minds be otherwise qualified. Crato, therefore, in that often-cited Counsel

1 Aristotle hist. "Neither the shrines of the gods, nor the deities themselves, send down from the heavens those dreams which mock our minds with those flattering shadows,—we cause them to ourselves."

2 Optimum de celestibus et honestis meditari, et en facile.

3 Lib. 3. de causis corr. aut. tam mira monstra questionum esse nascantur inter eos, ut aliar eos interardum in somnis non terriat, aut de falsis in toto ejusque partes verba facile, aliar ejus spectant monstrosa.

4 Iom. ib. 1.


6 Animi perturbationes summe fugiendas, metus potissimum et tristitia: coramque loco animi demum condemnali hiatant, animi constantis, bona spe; removendae terres, et eorum consortium quas non probant.

7 Plautus seum placidum subventi, terres ab animo renovendi.

8 Ab omen, fia cogitatione quo-visimodo avertantur.

9 Cuncta mala corporis ab animo procedunt, quae nisi curantur, corpus curatur animo potest, Charmid. 

10 Disputat. An morbi graviores corporis an ani. Renobio interpret, ut parum ab illo, raptur in Lyceum in conciliou, a concione ad mare, a mari in Siciliam, &c.
of his for a nobleman his patient, when he had sufficiently informed him in diet, air, exercise, Venus, sleep, concludes with these as matters of greatest moment, Quod reliquum est, animae accidentia corrigatur, from which alone proceeds melancholy; they are the fountain, the subject, the hinges whereon it turns, and must necessarily be reformed. "For anger stirs choler, heats the blood and vital spirits; sorrow on the other side refrigerates the body, and extinguisheth natural heat, overthrows appetite, hinders concoction, dries up the temperature, and perverts the understanding:" fear dissolves the spirits, infects the heart, attenuates the soul: and for these causes all passions and perturbations must, to the utmost of our power and most seriously, be removed. Ælianus Montaltus attributes so much to them, "that he holds the rectification of them alone to be sufficient to the cure of melancholy in most patients." Many are fully cured when they have seen or heard, &c., enjoy their desires, or be secured and satisfied in their minds; Galen, the common master of them all, from whose fountain they fetch water, brags, lib. 1. de san. tuend., that he, for his part, hath cured divers of this infirmity, solum animis ad rectum institutis, by right settling alone of their minds.

Yea, but you will here infer, that this is excellent good indeed if it could be done; but how shall it be effected, by whom, what art, what means? hic labor, loc opus est. 'Tis a natural infirmity, a most powerful adversary, all men are subject to passions, and melancholy above all others, as being distempered by their innate humours, abundance of choler adust, weakness of parts, outward occurrences; and how shall they be avoided? the wisest men, greatest philosophers of most excellent wit, reason, judgment, divine spirits, cannot moderate themselves in this behalf; such as are sound in body and mind, Stoics, heroes, Homer's gods, all are passionate, and furiously carried sometimes; and how shall we that are already crazed, fracti animis, sick in body, sick in mind, resist? we cannot perform it. You may advise and give good precepts, as who cannot? But how shall they be put in practice? I may not deny but our passions are violent, and tyrannise of us, yet there be means to curb them; though they be headstrong, they may be tamed, they may be qualified, if he himself or his friends will but use their honest endeavours, or make use of such ordinary helps as are commonly prescribed.

He himself (I say); from the patient himself the first and chiefest remedy must be had; for if he be averse, peevish, waspish, give way wholly to his passions, will not seek to be helped, or be ruled by his friends, how is it possible he should be cured? But if he be willing, at least, gentle, tractable, and desire his own good, no doubt but he may magnam morbi deponere partem, be eased at least, if not cured. He himself must do his utmost endeavour to resist and withstand the beginnings. Principis obsta, "Give not water passage, no not a little," Ecclus. xxv. 27. If they open a little, they will make a greater breach at length. Whatsoever it is that runneth in his mind, vain conceit, be it pleasing or displeasing, which so much affects or troubleth him, "by all possible means he must withstand it, expel those vain, false, frivolous imaginations, absurd conceits, feigned fears and sorrows; from which," saith Piso, "this disease primarily proceeds, and takes his first occasion or beginning, by doing something or other that shall be opposite unto them, thinking of something else, persuading by reason, or howsoever to make a sudden alteration of them." Though he have hitherto run in a full career, and precipitated himself, following his passions, giving reins to his appetite, let him

* * *
now stop upon a sudden, curb himself in; and as "Lemnius adviseth, "strive against with all his power, to the utmost of his endeavour, and not cherish those fond imaginations, which so covertly creep into his mind, most pleasing and amiable at first, but bitter as gall at last, and so headstrong, that by no reason, art, counsel, or persuasion, they may be shaken off." Though he be far gone, and habituated unto such fantastical imaginations, yet as "Tully and Plutarch advise, let him oppose, fortify, or prepare himself against them, by premeditation, reason, or as we do by a crooked staff, bend himself another way.

"Tu tamen interea effugio quae irrita mentem Solicitud, procul esse labe curasque metuens, Pallentem, utrices iras, sunt emula leta."  
"In the meantime expel them from thy mind, Pale fears, sad cares, and griefs which it grind,  
Revengeful anger, pain and discontent,  
Let all thy soul be set on remission."

_Curas tollis graves, irasci crede profanum._ If it be idleness hath caused this infirmity, or that he perceive himself given to solitaryness, to walk alone, and please his mind with fond imaginings, let him by all means avoid it; 'tis a bosom enemy, 'tis delightful melancholy, a friend in show, but a secret devil, a sweet poison, it will in the end be his undoing; let him go presently, task or set himself a work, get some good company. If he proceed, as a gnat flies about a candle so long till at length he burn his body, so in the end he will undo himself: if it be any harsh object, ill company, let him presently go from it. If by his own default, through ill diet, bad air, want of exercise, &c., let him now begin to reform himself. "It would be a perfect remedy against all corruption, if," as "Roger Bacon hath it, "we could but moderate ourselves in these six non-natural things." "If it be any disgrace, abuse, temporal loss, calamity, death of friends, imprisonment, banishment, be not troubled with it, do not fear, be not angry, grieve not at it, but with all courage sustain it." (Gordonius, _lib. 1. c. 15. de conser. vit._) _Tu contra audentior ito._ "If it be sickness, ill success, or any adversity that hath caused it, oppose an invincible courage, "fortify thyself by God's word, or otherwise," _malum bonis persuadenda._ set prosperity against adversity, as we refresh our eyes by seeing some pleasant meadow, fountain, picture, or the like: recreate thy mind by some contrary object, with some more pleasing meditation divert thy thoughts.

Yea, but you infer again, _facile consilium damus aliis,_ we can easily give counsel to others; every man, as the saying is, can tame a shrew but he that liath her; _si hic esses, aliter sentives_; if you were in our misery, you would find it otherwise, 'tis not so easily performed. We know this to be true; we should moderate ourselves, but we are furiously carried, we cannot make use of such precepts, we are overcome, sick, _malè saus,_ discomposed and habituated to these courses, we can make no resistance; you may as well bid him that is diseased not to feel pain, as a melancholy man not to fear, not to be said: 'tis within his blood, his brains, his whole temperature, it cannot be removed. But he may choose whether he will give way too far unto it, he may in some sort correct himself. A philosopher was bitten with a mad dog, and as the nature of that disease is to abhor all waters, and liquid things, and to think still they see the picture of a dog before them: he went for all this, _rebutante se,_ to the bath, and seeing there (as he thought) in the water the picture of a dog, with reason overcame this conceit, _quid canis cum balneo?_ what should a dog do in a bath? a mere conceit. Thou thinkest thou hearest and seest devils, black men, &c.,

---

1. Lib. 2. c. 16. de occult. nat. Quisquibus huc male obnoxius est, scribere obstat, et summa cura oblitetur, nec ullo modo fuerat imaginatio tacite erogata animo, blandas ab initio et amabiles, sed quod adaequaverat, ut nulla ratione excelleret.  
2. Tusc. ad Apollonium.  
4. Epist. de secretis artis et naturae cap. 7. de retard. sum.  
5. Remedium eest contra corruptionem propriam, si quilibet exerceret regimen sanitatis, quod consistat in rebus sex non naturalibus.  
6. Pro aliquo vitium non indigentem, nec pro omissione alienus rel., nec pro morte alienus, nec pro carceri, nec pro exilio, nec pro alia re, nec sub versibus, nec tempus, nec dolore, sed cum summa praesutura, he sustineas.  
7. Quodsi immocondam adversitas invidiosae hoc malum lavavertit, hic infraest rei oppositiscem, del verbo ejusque fiducia te sufflictas, &c. Lemnius, _lib. 1. c. 16._
Passions rectified.

'tis not so, 'tis thy corrupt fantasy; settle thine imagination, thou art well. Thou thinkest thou hast a great nose, thou art sick, every man observes thee, laughs thee to scorn; persuade thyself 'tis no such matter: this is fear only, and vain suspicion. Thou art discontent, thou art sad and heavy; but why? upon what ground? consider of it: thou art jealous, timorous, suspicious; for what cause? examine it thoroughly, thou shalt find none at all, or such as is to be contemned, such as thou wilt surely deride, and contemn in thyself, when it is past. Rule thyself then with reason, satisfy thyself, accustom thyself, wear thyself from such fond conceits, vain fears, strong imaginations, restless thoughts. Thou mayest do it; Est in nobis assuessa (as Plutarch saith), we may frame ourselves as we will. As he that useth an upright shoe, may correct the obliquity, or crookedness, by wearing it on the other side; we may overcome passions if we will. Quicquid sibi imperavit animus obtinuit (as 1 Seneca saith) nulli tam feri affectus, ut non disciplina perdementur; whatsoever the will desires, she may command: no such cruel affections, but by discipline they may be tamed; voluntarily thou wilt not do this or that, which thou oughtest to do, or refrain, &c., but when thou art lashed like a dull jade, thou wilt reform it; fear of a whip will make thee do, or not do. Do that voluntarily then which thou causest to do, and must do by compulsion: thou mayest refrain if thou wilt, and master thine affections. 2 As in a city (saith Melancthon) they do by stubborn rebellions rogues, that will not submit themselves to political judgment, compel them by force; so must we do by our affections. If the heart will not lay aside those vicious motions, and the fantasy those fond imaginations, we have another form of government to enforce and refrain our outward members, that they be not led by our passions. If appetite will not obey, let the moving faculty overrule her, let her resist and compel her to do otherwise." In an ague the appetite would drink; sore eyes that itch would be rubbed; but reason saith no, and therefore the moving faculty will not do it. Our fantasy would intrude a thousand fears, suspicions, chimerae upon us, but we have reason to resist, yet we let it be overborne by our appetite; " 3 imagination enforcest spirits, which, by an admirable league of nature, compel the nerves to obey, and they our several limbs:" we give too much way to our passions. And as to him that is sick of an ague, all things are distasteful and unpleasant, non ex sibi vixit, saith Plutarch, not in the meat, but in our taste: so many things are offensive to us, not of themselves, but out of our corrupt judgment, jealousy, suspicion, and the like; we pull these mischiefs upon our own heads.

If then our judgment be so depraved, our reason overruled, will precipitated, that we cannot seek our own good, or moderate ourselves, as in this disease commonly it is, the best way for ease is to impart our misery to some friend, not to smother it up in our own breast; aliur vitium crescitque tangendo, &c.; and that which was most offensive to us, a cause of fear and grief, quod nunc te coguit, another hell; for 4 strangulat inclusus dolor atque exaequati titus, grief concealed strangles the soul; but when as we shall but impart it to some discreet, trusty, loving friend, it is 5 instantly removed, by his counsel happily, wisdom, persuasion, advice, his good means, which we could not otherwise apply unto ourselves. A friend's counsel is a charm, like mandrake wine, curas sopit; and as a 6 bull that is tied to a fig-tree becomes gentle on a sudden (which some, saith 7 Plutarch, interpret of good words),

1 Lib. 2. de Irr.
2 Cap. 3. de aeffect. anim. Ut in civitates contumaces qui non edeat politico imperio vi coercedes sunt; ita Deus nobis indit alternam imperio formam; si non deponent viuum affectum, membros fors coereceda sunt, ne rem in quod affectus impedit; et locomotiva, qua heril imperio obtenteerat, alteri resistat.
3 Imaginat; impellit spiritus, et inde nervo movetur, &c. et obtentam imaginacioni et appellat mirabilis fideles, ad exequandum quod jurent. Ovid. Trist. lib. 5.
5 Camerarius, Euth. 27. capt. 2.
6 Sympos. lib. 6. cap. 10.
so is a savage, obdurate heart mollified by fair speeches. "All adversity finds ease in complaining (as Isidore holds), and "tis a solace to relate it," 2. Αγαθή δὲ παραίτησις είσιν ἵπποι. Friends' confabulations are comfortable at all times, as fire in winter, shade in summer, quae sopor fessis in gramine, meat and drink to him that is hungry or athirst; Democritus's collyrium is not so sovereign to the eyes as this is to the heart; good words are cheerful and powerful of themselves, but much more from friends, as so many props, mutually sustaining each other like ivy and a wall, which Camerarius hath well illustrated in an emblem. Lenti animum simplex vel sepé narrativa, the simple narration many times easeth our distressed mind, and in the midst of greatest extremities; so diverse have been relieved, by exonerating themselves to a faithful friend: he sees that which we cannot see for passion and discontent, he pacifies our minds, he will ease our pain, assuage our anger; quanta tuto voluptas, quanta securitas, Chrysostom adds, what pleasure, what security by that means! "Nothing so available, or that so much refresheth the soul of man." Tully, as I remember, in an epistle to his dear friend Atticus, much concedes the defect of such a friend. "If I live here (saith he) in a great city, where I have a multitude of acquaintance, but not a man of all that company with whom I dare familiarly breathe, or freely jest. Wherefore I expect thee, I desire thee, I send for thee; for there be many things which trouble and molest me, which had I but thee in presence, I could quickly disburden myself of in a walking discourse." The like, peradventure, may he and he say with that old man in the comedy,

"Nemo est meorum amicorum hodie, Apud quem exprimere occultis mea anima," a

and much inconvenience may both he and he suffer in the meantime by it. He or he, or whosoever then labours of this malady, by all means let him get some trusty friend, b Semper habens Pyladenque aliquem qui euret Orestam, a Pylades, to whom freely and securely he may open himself. For as in all other occurrences, so it is in this, Sì quis in caelum ascenderat, &c., as he said in a Tully, if a man had gone to heaven, "seen the beauty of the skies," stars errant, fixed, &c., insanavis erit admiratio, it will do him no pleasure, except he have somebody to impart to what he hath seen. It is the best thing in the world, as Seneca therefore adviseth in such a case, "to get a trusty friend, to whom we may freely and sincerely pour out our secrets; nothing so delighteth and easeth the mind, as when we have a prepared bosom, to which our secrets may descend, of whose conscience we are assured as our own, whose speech may ease our successor estate, counsel relieve, mirth expel our mourning, and whose very sight may be acceptable unto us." It was the counsel which that politic c Comminus gave to all princes, and others distressed in mind, by occasion of Charles Duke of Burgundy, that was much perplexed, "first to pray to God, and lay himself open to him, and then to some special friend, whom we hold most dear, to tell all our grievances to him; nothing so forcible to strengthen, recreate, and heal the wounded soul of a miserable man."

---

6 Epist. 8, lib. 3. Adversa fortuna habebat in quereulis levamentum: et malorum relatio, &c. 7 Allegoriam charitatem, et solam amicitia. Emblem. 54. cent. 1. 8 As David did to Jonathan, 1 Sam. xx. 9 Seneca, Epist. 67. 10 Hic in civitate magna et turba magna neminem repersisse possumus quemque suspirare familiariter aut jucari liberis possumus. Quae to expectamus, te desideramus, te accessimur. Multa sunt enim quae me sollicitant et angunt, quae multum videre aures suas nactus, utius ambulatio sermo exhaeret posse. 11 "I have not a single friend this day to whom I dare disclose my secrets." 12 Ovid. De amicitia. 13 De tranquilit. c. 7. Optimum est amicum fidalem nasci in quem secreta nostra infanda- mus; nihil sequitur obiectum animum, quam ubi silet preparata pectora, in qua tuos secreta descendunt, quorum consciousia aequo ac tacus: quorum senee solitudinem lenit, sententia consilium expedit, hilarium tristiam dissipet, conspectuque ipsa detectet. 14 Comment. 1. 7. Ad Deum confugiamus, et pecuniam veniam precemur, inde ad amicos, et cul plurimum tribuimus, nos patfactamus toto et animi valus quo affligimus: nihil ad rediremum animus efficacius.
SUBSECT. II.—Help from friends by counsel, comfort, fair and foul means, witty devices, satisfaction, alteration of his course of life, removing objects, &c.

When the patient of himself is not able to resist, or overcome these heart-eating passions, his friends or physician must be ready to supply that which is wanting. Suec erit humanitarianis et sapientiae (which *Tully enjoined in like case) liquido erratum, curare, aut improvisum, sui diligentia corrigeres. They must all join; nec satis medico, saith *Hippocrates, suam fecisse officium, nisi suam quoque aegrotus, suum astantes, &c. First, they must especially beware, a melancholy discontented person (be it in what kind of melancholy soever) never be left alone or idle: but as physicians prescribe physic, cum custodiā, let them not be left unto themselves, but with some company or other, lest by that means they aggravate and increase their disease; non oparet aegros hujusmodi esse solos vel inter ignotos, vel inter eos quos non amant aut negligentant, as Rod. à Fonseca, tom. 1. consil. 35. prescribes. Lugenās custodire solēnas (saith *Seneca) ne solituline mali wantur; we watch a sorrowful person, lest he abuse his solitariness, and so should we do a melancholy man; set him about some business, exercise or recreation, which may divert his thoughts, and still keep him otherwise intent; for his fantasy is so restless, operative and quick, that if it be not in perpetual action, ever employed, it will work upon itself, melancholise, and be carried away instantly, with some fear, jealousy, discontent, suspicion, some vain conceit or other. If his weakness be such that he cannot discern what is amiss, correct, or satisfy, it behoves them by counsel, comfort, or persuasion, by fair or foul means, to alienate his mind, by some artificial invention, or some contrary persuasion, to remove all objects, causes, companies, occasions, as may any ways molest him, to humour him, please him, divert him, and if it be possible, by altering his course of life, to give him security and satisfaction. If he conceal his grievances, and will not be known of them, "they must observe by his looks, gestures, motions, fantasy, what it is that offends," and then to apply remedies unto him: many are instantly cured, when their minds are satisfied. *Alexander makes mention of a woman, "that by reason of her husband's long absence in travel, was exceeding peevish and melancholy, but when she heard her husband was returned, beyond all expectation, at the first sight of him, she was freed from all fear, without help of any other physic restored to her former health." Trinacellius, consil. 12. lib. 1. hath such a story of a Venetian, that being much troubled with melancholy, "and ready to die for grief, when he heard his wife was brought to bed of a son, instantly recovered." As Alexander concludes, "If our imaginations be not ineterate, by this art they may be cured, especially if they proceed from such a cause." No better way to satisfy, than to remove the object, cause, occasion, if by any art or means possible we may find it out. If he grieve, stand in fear, be in suspicion, suspense, or any way molested, secure him, Solvitur malem, give him satisfaction, the cure is ended; alter his course of life, there needs no other physic. If the party be sad, or otherwise affected, "consider (saith *Trallianus) the manner of it, all circumstances, and forthwith make a sudden alteration," by removing the occasions, avoid all terrible objects, heard or seen, "monstrous and prodigious aspects," tales of devils, spirits, ghosts, tragical stories; to such as are in fear they strike a great impression, renewed many times, and recall such chimeras

---


Cure of Melancholy. [Part. 2. Sec. 2.

and terrible fictions into their minds. "Make not so much as mention of them in private talk, or a dumb show tending to that purpose; such things (saith Galateus) are offensive to their imaginations." And to those that are now in sorrow, "Seneca "forbids all sad companions, and such as lament; a groaning companion is an enemy to quietness." Or if there be any such party, at whose presence the patient is not well pleased, he must be removed: gentle speeches, and fair means, must first be tried; no harsh language used, or uncomfortable words; and not expel, as some do, one madness with another; he that so doth, is madder than the patient himself; " all things must be quietly composed; etsa non evertenda, sed exigenda, things down must not be rejected, but reared, as Crato counselleth; "he must be quietly and gently used," and we should not do any thing against his mind, but by little and little effect it. As a horse that starts at a drum or trumpet, and will not endure the shooting of a piece, may be so manned by art, and animated, that he can not only endure, but is much more generous at the hearing of such things, much more courageous than before, and much delighted in it: they must not be reformed, _ex abrupto_, but by all art and insinuation, made to such companies, aspects, objects they could not formerly away with. Many at first cannot endure the sight of a green wound, a sick man, which afterward become good chirurgeons, bold empires; a horse starts at a rotten post afar off, which coming near he quietly passeth. "Tis much in the manner of making such kind of persons, be they never so averse from company, bashful, solitary, timorous, they may be made at last with those Roman matrons, to desire nothing more than in a public show, to see a full company of gladiators breathe out their last. If they may not otherwise be accustomed to brook such distasteful and displeasing objects, the best way then is generally to avoid them. Montanus, _consil._ 229. to the Earl of Montfort, a courtier, and his melancholy patient, adviseth him to leave the court, by reason of those continual discontents, crosses, abuses, "cures, suspicious, emulations, ambition, anger, jealousy, which that place afforded, and which surely caused him to be so melancholy at the first.

_Maxima quaecumque domus servis est plena superbis_; a company of scoffers and proud jacks are commonly conversant and attendant in such places, and able to make any man that is of a soft, quiet disposition (as many times they do) _ex stone insanum_, if once they humour him, a very idiot, or stark mad. A thing too much practised in all common societies, and they have no better sport than to make themselves merry by abusing some silly fellow, or to take advantage of another man's weakness. In such cases as in a plague, the best remedy is _citó, longé, tardé_: (for to such a party, especially if he be apprehensive, there can be no greater misery) to get him quickly gone fare enough off, and not to be over-hasty in his return. If he be so stupid that he do not apprehend it, his friends should take some order, and by their discretion supply that which is wanting in him, as in all other cases they ought to do. If they see a man melancholy given, solitary, averse from company, please himself with such private and vain meditations, though he delight in it, they ought by all means seek to divert him, to dehort him, to tell him of the event and danger that may come of it. If they see a man idle, that by reason of his means otherwise will betake himself to no course of life, they ought seriously to admonish him, he makes a nose to entangle himself, his want of employment will be his undoing. If he has sustained any great loss, suffered a repulse, disgrace, &c., if it be possible,
Mind rectified.

relieve him. If he desire aught, let him be satisfied; if in suspense, fear, suspicion, let him be secured; and if it may conveniently be, give him his heart's content; for the body cannot be cured till the mind be satisfied. 4 Socrates, in Plato, would prescribe no physic for Charmides' headache, "till first he had eased his troubled mind; body and soul must be cured together, as head and eyes."

"Oculum non curabis sine toto capit.;
Nec caput sine corpore,
Nec totum corpus sine anima."

If that may not be hoped or expected, yet ease him with comfort, cheerful speeches, fair promises, and good words, persuade him, advise him. "Many," saith Galen, "have been cured by good counsel and persuasion alone." "Heaviness of the heart of man doth bring it down, but a good word rejoiceth it," Prov. xii. 25. "And there is he that speaketh words like the pricking of a sword, but the tongue of a wise man is health," ver. 18. Oratio namque saucii animi est remedium, a gentle speech is the true cure of a wounded soul, as Plutarch contends out of Æschylus and Euripides: "if it be wisely administered it easeth grief and pain, as diverse remedies do many other diseases." "Tis incantations instar, a charm, estuans animi refrigerium, that true Nepenthe of Homer, which was no Indian plant, or feigned medicine, which Epidamnas, Thonis' wife, sent Helena for a token, as Macrobius, 7. Sat. nud., Goropius Hermat. lib. 9., Greg. Nazianzen, and others suppose, but opportunity of speech: for Helena's bowl, Madea'sunction, Venus's girdle, Circe's cup, cannot so enchant, so forcibly move or alter as it doth. A letter sent or read will do as much; multum alior quum tuis literas lego, I am much cased, as Tully wrote to Pomponius Atticus, when I read thy letters, and as Julianus the Apostle once signified to Maximus the philosopher; as Alexander slept with Homer's works, so do I with thine epistles, tanquam Pecuonis medicamentis, easque assidue tanquam recubetes et novas iteranates; scribe ergo, et instidui scribe, or else come thyself; amicus ad amicum venies. Assuredly a wise and well-spoken man may do what he will in such a case; a good orator alone, as Tully holds, can alter affections by power of his eloquence, "comfort such as are afflicted, erect such as are depressed, expel and mitigate fear, lust, anger," &c. And how powerful is the charm of a discreet and dear friend? Ille regit dictis animos et temperat iros. What may not he effect? As Chremes told Menedemus, "Fear not, conceal it not, O friend! but tell me what it is that troubles thee, and I shall surely help thee by comfort, counsel, or in the matter itself." Arnoldus, lib. 1. breviae. cap. 18. speaks of a usurer in his time, that upon a loss, much melancholy and discontent, was so cured. As imagination, fear, grief, cause such passions, so conceits alone, rectified by good hope, counsel, &c., are able again to help: and 'tis incredible how much they can do in such a case, as Trincavellius illustrates by an example of a patient of his; Porphyrus, the philosopher, in Plotinus's life (written by him), relates, that being in a discontented humour through insufferable anguish of mind, he was going to make away himself: but meeting by chance his master Plotinus, who perceiving by his distracted looks all was not well, urged him to confess his grief: which when he had heard, he used such comfortable speeches, that he redeemed him è fauvibus Erebi, pacified his unquiet mind, insomuch that he

4 Nisi prius animum turbatissimum currat; oculi sine capite, nec corpus sine anima curari potest.
5 R. Graeco. "You shall not cure the eye, unless you cure the whole head also; nor the head, unless the whole body; nor the whole body, unless the soul besides." 6 Et eos non paenius sanaminus, animus motibus ad debibilitatem revocatis, lib. 1. de sanat. tuend. 7 Consil. ad Apolliniem. Si quis sapienter et suo tempore adhibeat, remedia morbis diversis diversa sunt; dolentem sermo beniguis sublevat. 8 Lib. 12. Epist. 9 De nat. deorum consolatur afflagto, destruct perterritos it timore, cupidiast imprimit, et traciumbol com- primit. 10 Hes. 1. Ser. 1. Ne matra, ne verbera, crede laquam nihil, aut consolando, aut considendi, aut rejuvendo. 11 Novi famatarorum avorum apud meos sic curatum, qui multam pecuniam amiserat. 12 Lib. 1. consil. 12. Incredibile dictu quantum juvert.
Cure of Melancholy.

was easily reconciled to himself, and much abashed to think afterwards that he should ever entertain so vile a motion. By all means, therefore, fair promises, good words, gentle persuasions, are to be used, not to be too rigorous at first, "or to insult over them, not to deride, neglect, or contemn, but rather," as Lemnius exhorteth, "to pity, and by all plausible means to seek to redress them;"

but if satisfaction may not be had, mild courses, promises, comfortable speeches, and good counsel will not take place; then as Christopherus a Vega determines, lib. 3. cap. 14. de Malt. to handle them more roughly, to threaten and chide, saith *Altomarus, terrify sometimes, or as Salvianus will have them, to be lashed and whipped, as we do by a starting horse, *that is affrighted without a cause, or as *Rhasis adviseth, "one while to speak fair and flatter, another while to terrify and chide, as they shall see cause."

When none of these precedent remedies will avail, it will not be amiss, which Savanarola and *Aelian Montaltus so much commend, clavum claro pellere, "to drive out one passion with another, or by some contrary passion," as they do bleeding at nose by letting blood in the arm, to expel one fear with another, one grief with another. *Christopherus a Vega accounts it rational physic, non alienum a ratione: and Lemnius much approves it, "to use a hard wedge to a hard knot," to drive out one disease with another, to pull out a tooth, or wound him, to geld him, saith *Platerus, as they did epileptical patients of old, because it quite alters the temperature, that the pain of the one may mitigate the grief of the other; "and I knew one that was so cured of a quartan ague, by the sudden coming of his enemies upon him." If we may believe *Pliny, whom Scaliger calls mendacio rum patrem, the father of lies, Q. Fabius Maximus, that renowned consul of Rome, in a battle fought with the king of the Allobroges, at the river Isaurus, was so rid of a quartan ague, Valesius, in his controversies, holds this an excellent remedy, and if it be discreetly used in this malady, better than any physic.

Sometimes again by some *feigned lie, strange news, witty device, artificial invention, it is not amiss to deceive them. "*As they hate those," saith Alexander, "that neglect or deride, so they will give ear to such as will soothe them up. If they say they have swallowed frogs or a snake, by all means grant it, and tell them you can easily cure it; *'tis an ordinary thing. Philodotus, the physician, cured a melancholy king, that thought his head was off, by putting a leaden cap thereon; the weight made him perceive it, and freed him of his fond imagination. A woman, in the said Alexander, swallowed a serpent as she thought; he gave her a vomit, and conveyed a serpent, such as she conceived, into the basin; upon the sight of it she was amende d. The pleasant dotage that ever I read, saith *Laurentius, was of a gentleman at Senea in Italy, who was afraid to piss, lest all the town should be drowned; the physicians caused the bells to be rung backward, and told him the town was on fire, whereupon he made water, and was immediately cured. Another supposed his nose so big, that he should dash it against the wall if he stirred; his physician took a great piece of flesh, and holding it in his hand, pinched him by the nose, making him believe that flesh was cut from it. Forestus, obs. lib. 1. had a melancholy patient, who thought he was dead, ・・・he put a fellow in a

*Nemo istissimae conditionis hominis insulter, ant in illos sit seuator, verum miseriae pultis indis- levat, vicemque dediplor. lib. 2. cap. 16.


*Una vice blandiatur, una vice tesiem terrorem ineuntiant.

*Si vero fuerit ex novo male audito, vel ex animi accidente, aut de amissione mercium, aut morte amici, introductione nova coniuravit his qua ipsam ad gaudia movereat; de hoc semper nulli debemus, &c.

*Lib. 3. cap. 14.


*Cap. 8. de mel.

*Custum posuit ex Medicorum consilio prope eum, in quem alium se mortuum fingentem posuit; hic in icta jacens, &c.
chest, like a dead man, by his bedside, and made him rear himself a little, and eat: the melancholy man asked the counterfeit, whether dead men use to eat meat? He told him yea; whereupon he did eat likewise and was cured." Lemiuis, lib. 2. cap. 6. de 4. complex. hath many such instances, and Jovianus Pontanus, lib. 4. cap. 2. of Wisd. of the like: but amongst the rest I find one most memorable, registered in the "French chronicles of an advocate of Paris before mentioned, who believed verily he was dead, &c. I read a multitude of examples of melancholy men cured by such artificial inventions.

SUBSECT. III.—Music a remedy.

Many and sundry are the means which philosophers and physicians have prescribed to exhilarate a sorrowful heart, to divert those fixed and intent cares and meditations, which in this malady so much offend; but in my judgment none so present, none so powerful, none so apposite as a cup of strong drink, mirth, music, and merry company. Eclesiu. xl. 20. "Wine and music rejoice the heart." Rhasius, cont. 9. Tract. 15. Altomarus, cap. 7. AElianus Montaltus, c. 26. Ficinus, Bened. Victor. Faventinus are almost immoderate in the commendation of it; a most forcible medicine "Jachinns calls it: Jason Pratensis, "a most admirable thing, and worthy of consideration, that can so mollify the mind, and stay those tempestuous affections of it." "Musicus est mentis medicina maxime, a roaring-meg against melancholy, to rear and revive the languishing soul; "affecting not only the ears, but the very arteries, the vital and animal spirits, it cures the mind, and makes it nimble." Lemnius, instlt. cap. 44. This it will effect in the most dull, severe and sorrowful souls, "expel grief with mirth, and if there be any clouds, dust, or drops of cares yet lurking in our thoughts, most powerfully it wipes them all away," Salisbur. polit. lib. 1. cap. 6, and that which is more, it will perform all this in an instant: "Cheer up the countenance, expel austerity, bring in hilarity (Giral. Cymb. cap. 12. Topog. Hiber.), inform our manners, mitigate anger;" Athenaeus (Dipnosoplist. lib. 14. cap. 10.), calleth it an infinite treasure to such as are endowed with it: Dulcitomum reficit tristia corde melos, Eobanus Hessus. Many other properties "Cassiodorus, epist. 4. reckons up of this our divine music, not only to expel the greatest griefs, but "it doth extenuate fears and furies, appeaseth cruelty, abateth heaviness, and to such as are watchful it causeth quiet rest; it takes away spleen and hatred," be it instrumental, vocal, with strings, wind, "Quae à spiritu, sine maximum dexteraet guberetur, &c. it cures all irksomeness and heaviness of the soul." Labouring men that sing to their work, can tell as much, and so can soldiers when they go to fight, whom terror of death cannot so much affright, as the sound of trumpet, drum, fife, and such like music animates; natus enim mortis, as "Censorinus informeth us, musicae depellitur. "It makes a child quiet," the nurse's song, and many times the sound of a trumpet on a sudden, bells ringing, a carman's whistle, a boy singing some ballad tune early in the street, alters, revives, recreates a restless patient that cannot sleep in the night, &c. In a word, it is so powerful a thing that it ravisheth the soul, regina sensuum, the queen of the senses, by sweet pleasure (which is a happy cure), and corporal tunes pacify our incorporeal soul, sine ore loquos, dominant in animam exercet, and carries it beyond itself, helps,
Cure of Melancholy. [Part. 2. Sec. 2.

Cure is yake Harts, Jovis Scaliger, Who in Elephants, convivio. soveine Sam. I'liemius i*

But Arion made fishes follow him, which, as common experience evinoeth, are much affected with music. All singing birds are much pleased with it, especially nightingales, if we may believe Calcinagnius; and bees amongst the rest, though they be flying away, when they hear any tingling sound, will tarry behind. "Harts, hinds, horses, dogs, bears, are exceedingly delighted with it." Scal. exerc. 302. Elephants, Agrippa adds, lib. 2. cap. 24, and in Lydia in the midst of a lake there be certain floating islands (if ye will believe it), that after music will dance.

But to leave all declamatory speeches in praise of divine music, I will confine myself to my proper subject: besides that excellent power it hath to expel many other diseases, it is a sovereign remedy against despair and melancholy, and will drive away the devil himself. Canon, a Rhodian fiddler, in Philostratus, when Apolloius was inquisitive to know what he could do with his pipe, told him, "That he would make a melancholy man merry, and him that was merry much merrier than before, a lover more enamoured, a religious man more devout." Ismenias the Theban, "Chiron the centaur, is said to have cured this and many other diseases by music alone: as now they do those, saith Bodin that are troubled with St. Vitus's Bedlam dance.

Tinnotheus, the musician, compelled Alexander to skip up and down, and leave his dinner (like the tale of the Friar and the Boy), whom Austin, de civ. Dei, lib. 17. cap. 14. so much commends for it. Who hath not heard how David's harmony drove away the evil spirits from king Saul, 1 Sam. xvi. and Elisha when he was much troubled by importunate kings, called for a minstrel, "and when he played, the hand of the Lord came upon him," 2 Kings iii?

Censorinus de natali, cap. 12. reports how Asclepiades the physician helped many frantic persons by this means, phreneticonum mentes morbo turbatvm—Juson Pratensis, cap. de Maniâ, hath many examples, how Clinias and Empedocles cured some desperately melancholy, and some mad, by this our music. Which because it hath such excellent virtues, belike Homer brings in Phœmis playing, and the Muses singing at the banquet of the gods. Aristotle, Polit. l. 8. c. 5, Plato 2. de legishtis, highly approve it, and so do all politicians. The Greeks, Romans, have graced music, and made it one of the liberal sciences, though it be now become mercenary. All civil Common-wealths allow it: Cneius Manlius (as Livius relates) anno ab urb. cond. 557. brought first out of Asia to Rome singing wenches, players, jesters, and all

1. Quod spiritus qui in corde agitant tremulum et absaltantem recipiunt aerem in pectus, et inde excitantur, a spiritum musculi movuntur, &c.
2. Arborres radicibus avulse, &c.
3. M. Carew of Anthony, in descrip. Cornwall, saith of whales, that they will come and show themselves dancing at the sound of a trumpet, fol. 53. l. et fol. 164. 2. book.
5. Sepe graves morbos modulatum carmen abnegat, Et desperatis conciliavit opem.
7. Lib. 5. de rep. Curat Musicas farorem Sancti Viti.
8. Exilire s convivie, Cardian, sublt. lib. 11.
9. Ibid. 1.
kind of music to their feasts. Your princes, emperors, and persons of any quality, maintain it in their courts; no mirth without music. Sir Thomas More, in his absolute Utopian commounwealth, allows music as an appendix to every meal, and that throughout, to all sorts. Epictetus calls mensam mutam præsepe, a table without music a manger; for “the concert of musicians at a banquet, is a carbuncle set in gold; and as the signet of an emerald well trimmed with gold, so is the melody of music in a pleasant banquet.” Ecclus. xxxii. 5, 6. Louis the Eleventh, when he invited Edward the Fourth to come to Paris, told him that as a principal part of his entertainment, he should hear sweet voices of children, Ionic and Lydian tunes, exquisite music, he should have a——, and the cardinal of Bourbon to be his confessor, which he used as a most plausible argument: as to a sensual man indeed it is, “Lucian in his book, de satellitio, is not ashamed to confess that he took infinite delight in singing, dancing, music, women’s company, and such like pleasures: “and if thou (saith he) didst but hear them play and dance, I know thou wouldst be so well pleased with the object, that thou wouldst dance for company thyself, without doubt thou wilt be taken with it.” So Scaliger ingeniously confessest, exercit. 274. “I am beyond all measure affected with music, I do most willingly beheld them dance, I am mightily detained and allureth with that grace and comeliness of fair women, I am well pleased to be idle amongst them.” And what young man is not? As it is acceptable and conducing to most, so especially to a melancholy man. Provided always, his disease proceed not originally from it, that he be not some light inanorato, some idle phantastic, who capers in conceit all the day long, and thinks of nothing else, but how to make jigs, sonnets, madrigals, in commendation of his mistress. In such cases music is most pernicious, as a spur to a free horse will make him run himself blind, or break his wind; Ineitamentum enim amoris musica, for music enchantas, as Menander holds, it will make such melancholy persons mad, and the sound of those jigs and hornpipes will not be removed out of the ears a week after. *Plato for this reason forbids music and wine to all young men, because they are most part amorous, ne ignis addatur igni, lest one fire increase another. Many men are melancholy by hearing music, but it is a pleasing melancholy that it causeth; and therefore to such as are discontent, in woe, fear, sorrow, or dejected, it is a most present remedy; it expels cares, alters their grieved minds, and easeth in an instant. Otherwise, saith *Plutarch, Musica magis dementat quam vinum; music makes some men mad as a tiger; like Astolphos’ horn in Ariosto; or Mercury’s golden wand in Homer, that made some wake, others sleep, it hath divers effects: and *Theophrastus right well prophesied, that diseases were either procured by music or mitigated.

Subsect. IV.—Mirth and merry company, fair objects, remedies.

Mirth and merry company may not be separated from music, both concerning and necessarily required in this business. “Mirth” (saith *Vives) “purgeth the blood, confirms health, causeth a fresh, pleasing and fine colour, prorogues life, whets the wit, makes the body young, lively and fit for every manner of employment. The merrier the heart the longer the life; “A merry heart is the life of the flesh,” Prov. xiv. 30. “Gladness prolongs his days,” Ecclus. xxx. 22; and this is one of the three Salernitan doctors, Dr.
Cure of Melancholy.  

Merryman, Dr. Diet, Dr. Quiet, * which cure all diseases — Mens hilaris, requies, moderata dieta. * Gomaeus, prefut. lib. 3. de sal. gen. is a great magnifier of honest mirth, by which (saith he) * we cure many passions of the mind in ourselves, and in our friends; * which * Galatenus assigns for a cause why we love merry companions; and well they deserve it, being that as * Magninus hol is, a merry companion is better than any music, and as the saying is, comes jucundus in viu pro veliculo, as a waggon to him that is weary on the way. Jucunda confabulatio, sales, joci, pleasant discourse, jests, conceits, merry tales, mellicit verborum globuli, as Petronius, * Pliny, * Sponadus, * Cellius, and many good authors plead, are that sole Nepenthes of Homer, Helena’s bowl, Venus’s girdle, so renowned of old to expel grief and care, to cause mirth and gladness of heart, if they be rightly understood, or seasonably applied. In a word, * Amor voluptat, Venus, gaudium, Jocus, ludus, sermo suavis, suavitas. * Gratification, pleasure, love, joy, Mirth, sport, pleasant words and no alley, * are the true Nepenthes. For these causes our physicians generally prescribe this as a principal engine to batter the walls of melancholy, a chief antidote, and a sufficient cure of itself. * By all means (saith * Mesue) procure mirth to these men in such things as are heard, seen, tasted or smelled, or in any way perceived, and let them have all entertainments and fair promises, the sight of excellent beauties, attires, ornaments, delightful passages to distract their minds from fear and sorrow, and such things on which they are so fixed and intent. Benedictus Victorius Faventinus, in his empirics, accounts it an especial remedy against melancholy, * to hear and see singing, dancing, maskers, mummers, to converse with such merry fellows and fair maids. * For the beauty of a woman cheereeth the countenance, * Ecclus. xxxvi. 22. * Beauty alone is a sovereign remedy against fear, grief, and all melancholy fits; a charm, as Peter de la Seine and many other writers affirm, a banquet itself; he gives instance in discontented Menelans, that was so often freed by Helena’s fair face: and * Tully 3 Tusci. cites Epicurus as a chief patron of this tenet. To expel grief, and procure pleasure, sweet smells, good diet, touch, taste, embroidery, singing, dancing, sports, plays, and above the rest, exquisite beauties, quibus oculi jucundè noventur et animi, are most powerful means, obvia forma, to meet or see fair maid pass by, or to be in company with her. He found it by experience, and made good use of it in his own person, if Platarch bele him not; for he reckons up the names of some more elegant pieces; * Leontia, Boedina, Hedieina, Niedia, that were frequently seen in Epicurus’ garden, and very familiar in his house. Neither did he try it himself alone, but if we may give credit to * Athenesius, he practised it upon others. For when a sad and sick patient was brought unto him to be cured, “he laid him on a down bed,
crowned him with a garland of sweet-smelling flowers, in a fair perfumed closet delicately set out, and after a portion or two of good drink, which he administered, he brought in a beautiful young wench that could play upon a lute, sing, and dance," &c., Tully, 3 Tus. scots. at Epicurus, for this his profane physic (as well he deserved), and yet Phavorinus and Stobeus highly approve of it; most of our looser physicians in some cases, to such parties especially, allow of this; and all of them will have a melancholy, sad, and discontented person, make frequent use of honest sports, companies, and recreations, et vacitandos ad Venerem, as Rodericus de Fonseca will, aspectu et contactu pulcherrimarum seminatarum, to be drawn to such consorts whether they will or no. Not to be an auditor only, or a spectator, but sometimes an actor himself. *Dulce est desipere in loco, to play the fool now and then is not amiss, there is a time for all things. Great Socrates would be merry by fits, sing, dance, and take his liquor too, or else Theodoret belies him; so would old Cato, *Tully by his own confession, and the rest. Xenophon, in his Sympos. brings in Socrates as a principal actor, no man merrier than himself, and sometimes he would "ride a cockhorse with his children," — equitare in arundine longâ (though Alciabades scoffed at him for it), and well he might; for now and then (saith Plutarch) the most virtuous, honest, and gravest men will use feasts, jests, and toys, as we do sauce to our meats. So did Scipio and Lelius, f "Qui ubi se a vulgo et scena in scurrae ramnât, Virtus scipiiadet et mites sapientia Lati, Nugari cum illo, et disciellâ ludere, donec Decoqueretur olis, soluri—"

Machiavel, in the eighth book of his Florentine history, gives this note of Cosmo de' Medici, the wisest and gravest man of his time in Italy, that he would "now and then play the most egregious fool in his carriage, and was so much given to jesters, players and childish sports, to make himself merry, that he that should but consider his gravity on the one part, his folly and lightness on the other, would surely say, there were two distinct persons in him." Now methinks he did well in it, though Salisburianensis be of opinion, that magistrates, senators, and grave men, should not descend to lighter sports, *ne publica ludere videatur: but as Themistocles, still keep a stern and constant carriage. I commend Cosmo de' Medici and Castruccius Castruccianus, than whom Italy never knew a worthier captain, another Alexander, if *Machiavel do not deceive us in his life: "when a friend of his reprehended him for dancing beside his dignity" (belike at some cushion dance), he told him again, qui sapit interdiu, *vix unquam noctu desipit, he that is wise in the day may dote a little in the night. Paulus Jovius relates as much of Pope Leo Decimus, that he was a grave, discreet, staid man, yet sometimes most free, and too open in his sports. And 'tis not altogether *unfit or misbecoming the gravity of such a man, if that decorum of time, place, and such circumstances be observed.

*Misce stultitiam consilîis brevem;" and as he said in an epigram to his wife, I would have every man say to himself, or to his friend,

"Moll, once in pleasant company by chance, I wished that you for company would dance: Which you refused, and said, your years require, Now, matron-like, both manners and attire. Well, Moll, if needs you will be matron-like, Then trust to this, I will thee matron-like: Yet so to you my love may never lessen, As you for church, house, bed, observe this lesson; Sit in the church as solemn as a saint, No deed, word, thought, your due devotion taint.

"Yell, if you will, your head, your soul reveal To him that only wounded souls can heal: Be in my house as busy as a bee, Having a singing for every one but me; Buzzing in every corner, gathering honey: Let nothing waste, that costs or yields money, And when thou seest my heart to mirth incline, Thy tongue, wit, blood, warm with good cheer & wine: Then of sweet sports let no occasion 'scape, But be as wanton, toying as an ape."
Those old Greeks had their Lubentiam Deam, goddess of pleasure, and the Lacedemonians, instructed from Lycurgus, did Deo Risus sacrificare, after their wars especially, and in times of peace, which was used in Thessaly, as it appears by that of Apuleius, who was made an instrument of their laughter himself: "Because laughter and merriment was to season their labours and modester life." Risus enim divum atque hominum est extera voluptas. Princes use jesters, players, and have those masters of revels in their courts. The Romans at every supper (for they had no solemn dinner) used music, gladiators, jesters, &c., as Suetonius relates of Tiberius, Dion of Commodus, and so did the Greeks. Besides music, in Xenophon's Symposium, Philipus ridendi artifex, Philip, a jester, was brought to make sport. Paulus Jovins, in the eleventh book of his history, hath a pretty digression of our English customs, which howsoever some may misconstrue, I, for my part, will interpret to the best. "The whole nation beyond all other mortal men, is most given to banquetting and feasts; for they prolong them many hours together, with dainty cheer, exquisite music, and facade jesters, and afterwards they fell a dancing and courting their mistresses, till it be late in the night." Volaterrae gives the same testimony of this island, commending our jovial manner of entertainment and good mirth, and methinks he saith well, there is no harm in it; long may they use it, and all such modest sports. Ctesias reports of a Persian king, that had 150 maids attending at his table, to play, sing, and dance by turns; and Lil. Geraldus of an Egyptian prince, that kept nine virgins still to wait upon him, and those of most excellent feature, and sweet voices, which afterwards gave occasion to the Greeks of that fiction of the nine Muses. The king of Ethiopia in Africa, most of our Asiatic princes have done so and do; those Sophies, Mogors, Turks, &c., solace themselves after supper amongst their queens and concubines, quae jucundioris oblivienti causa ('saith mine author) coram rege paludere et saltare consueverant, taking great pleasure to see and hear them sing and dance. This and many such means to exhilarate the heart of men, have been still practised in all ages, as knowing there is no better thing to the preservation of man's life. What shall I say then, but to every melancholy man, Utne convivis, non tristibus utere amica Quae sugis et risus, et jocae salus juvant. "Feast often, and use friends not still so sad, Whose jests and merriments may make thee glad." Use honest and chaste sports, scenical shows, plays, games; Accedant juvenunque Chori, mistagae puerae. And as Marsilius Ficinus concludes an epistle to Bernard Canisianus, and some other of his friends, will I this tract to all good students, "Live merrily, O my friends, free from cares, perplexity, anguish, grief of mind, live merrily," letitiae celum vos creavit: "Again and again I request you to be merry, if any thing trouble your hearts, or vex your souls, neglect and contritum, let it pass. And this I enjoin you, not as a divine alone, but as a physician; for without this mirth, which is the life and quintessence of physic, medicines, and whatsoever is used and applied to prolong the life of man, is dull, dead, and of no force." Dum fata sinunt, vivite leti (Seneca), I say be merry.

"Nec lusibus virentem Videmeus hanc juventam." It was Tiresias the prophet's counsel to Menippus, that travelled all the

---

Part 2. Sec. 2.

Cure of Melancholy.
world over, even down to hell itself to seek content, and his last farewell to
Menippus, to be merry. "Conteann the world (saith he), and count that is in it
vainy and toys; this only covet all thy life long; be not curious, or
over solicitous in any thing, but with a well composed and contested estate
to enjoy thyself, and above all things to be merry."

"Si Numerus ni eisset sine amore jocisque,
Nil est jucundum, vivas in amore jocisque."

Nothing better (to conclude with Solomon, Eccles. iii. 22), "Than that a
man should rejoice in his affairs." 'Tis the same advice which every phy-
sician in this case rings to his patient, as Capivaccius to his, "avoid over-
much study and perturbations of the mind, and as much as in thee lies, live
at heart's-ease:" Prosper Calenus to that melancholy Cardinal Cesius,
"amidst thy serious studies and business, use jests and conceits, plays and
toys, and whatsoever else may recreate thy mind." Nothing better than mirth
and merry company in this malady. "It begins with sorrow (saith Mont-
tanus), it must be expelled with bolarity."

But see the mischief; many men, knowing that merry company is the only
medicine against melancholy, will therefore neglect their business; and in
another extreme, spend all their days among good fellows in a tavern or an
ale-house, and know not otherwise how to bestow their time but in drinking;
malt-worms, men-fishes, or water-snakes, "qui bibunt solum ranarum more,
nihil comedentes, like so many frogs in a puddle. 'Tis their sole exercise to
eat, and drink; to sacrifice to Volupia, Rumina, Edulica, Potina, Mellona, is
all their religion. They wish for Philocres' nose, Jupiter's trinocium,
and that the sun would stand still as in Joshua's time, to satisfy their lust,
that they might dies noctesque pergrecari et bibere. Flourishing wits, and
men of good parts, good fashion, and good worth, basely prostitute themselves
to every rogue's company, to take tobacco and drink, to roar and sing scur-
rilous songs in base places.

"Invenies aliquem cum percussore jacentem,
Permittas unius, ac turbis, ac fugitivis."

Which Thomas Erastus objects to Paracelsus, that he would lie drinking
all day long with carmen and tapsters in a brothel-house, is too frequent
amongst us, with men of better note: like Timeocres of Rhodes, multa bibens,
et multa volens, &c. They drown their wits, seethe their brains in ale, con-
sume their fortunes, lose their time, weaken their temperatures, contract filthy
diseases, rheums, dropsies, calentures, tremor, get swolln jugulars, pimpled red
faces, sore eyes, &c.; heat their livers, alter their complexions, spoil their
stomachs, overthrow their bodies; for drink drowns more than the sea and all
the rivers that fall into it (more fuses and casks), confound their souls,
suppress reason, go from Scylla to Charybdis, and use that which is a help
to their undoing. "Quid referat morbo an ferro peraneave ruina? When the
Black Prince went to set the exiled king of Castile into his kingdom, there
was a terrible battle fought between the English and the Spanish: at last
the Spanish fled, the English followed them to the river side, where some
drowned themselves to avoid their enemies, the rest were killed. Now tell
me what difference is between drowning and killing! As good be melancholy

---

1 Omnia mundana angas estima. Hoc solam tota vita persequer, ut presensibus bene compositia,
minime curiosus, ant unia in re sollicitus, quam plurimum potes vitam bilarem traducas. 2 If the world
think that nothing can be happy without love and mirth, then live in love and jollity."
3 Hildesheim,
spec. 2. de Man. fol. 161. Statuta literarum et animi perturbationes fugiat, et quantum potes jucunde
vivat. 4 Lib. de atra bibe. Graviorum curis laudes et facetias aliquando interponere, feces, et que solent
animum relaxare. 5 Cond. 56. maius valentudo unius et contracta est tristitia ac propterea exhalatione
animi removenda. 6 Athen. dysonop. lib. 1. 7 Juven. sat. 8. "You will find him besides some
cut-throat, along with sailors, or thieve, or runaways."
8 Hor. "What does it signify whether I perish
by disease or by the sword!"
still, as drunken beasts and beggars. Company a sole comfort, and an only remedy to all kind of discontent, is their sole misery and cause of perdition. As Hermione lamented in Euripides, *malum malorum me fecerunt malum.* Evil company marred her, may they justly complain, bad companions have been their bane. For, *malus malum vult ut sit sui similis*; one drunkard in a company, one thief, one whoremaster, will by his goodwill make all the rest as bad as himself.

Nocturnos jures te formidare vapores.

be of what complexion you will, inclination, love or hate, be it good or bad, if you come amongst them, you must do as they do: yea, ‘though it be to the prejudice of your health, you must drink *venenum pro vino.* And so like grasshoppers, whilst they sing over their cups all summer, they starve in winter; and for a little vain Merriment shall find a sorrowful reckoning in the end.

SECT. III. MEMB. I.

SUBSECT. I.—A Consolatory Digression, containing the Remedies of all manner of Discontents.

Because in the preceding section I have made mention of good counsel, comfortable speeches, persuasion, how necessarily they are required to the cure of a discontented or troubled mind, how present a remedy they yield, and many times a sole sufficient cure of themselves; I have thought fit in this following section, a little to digress (if at least it be to digress in this subject), to collect and glean a few remedies, and comfortable speeches out of our best orators, philosophers, divines, and fathers of the church, tending to this purpose. I confess, many have copiously written of this subject, Plato, Seneca, Plutarch, Xenophon, Epictetus, Theophrastus, Xenocrates, Cantor, Lucian, Boethius: and some of late, Sadoleus, Cardan, Budæus, Stella, Petrarck, Erasmus, besides Austin, Cyprian, Bernard, &c. And they so well, that as Hierome in like case said, *si nostrum aroret ingenium, de illorum possent fortibus irrigari,* if our barren wits were dried up, they might be copiously irrigated from those well-springs: and I shall but *actum agere,* yet because these tracts are not so obvious and common, I will epitomise, and briefly insert some of their divine precepts, reducing their voluminous and vast treatises to my small scale; for it were otherwise impossible to bring so great vessels into so little a creek. And although (as Cardan said of his book de consol.) "I know beforehand, this tract of mine many will condemn and reject; they that are fortunate, happy, and in flourishing estate, have no need of such consolatory speeches; they that are miserable and unhappy, think them insufficient to ease their grieved minds, and comfort their misery; yet I will go on; for this must needs do some good to such as are happy, to bring them to a moderation, and make them reflect and know themselves, by seeing the inconstancy of human felicity, others’ misery: and to such as are distressed, if they will but attend and consider of this, it cannot choose but give some content and comfort.”

"'Tis true, no medicine can cure all discases, some affections of the mind are altogether incurable; yet these helps of art, physic, and philosophy must not be condemned." Arrianus and Plotinus are still in the contrary opinion, that such precepts can do little good. Boethius himself cannot comfort in some cases, they will reject such speeches like bread of stones, *Insana stultus mentis haec solatia.*

*Ter. *Hor. *Although you swear that you dread the night air;* "Hic ubi est non ubi est; "either drink or depart." *Lib. de lib. propriis. Nos libros sedurosospere, nem felices his se non indicere putant, infelices ad solam omnem misere non sufficerem. Et tanum feliabius moderationem, dum inconstantiis humanae felicitatis docent praeasti; infelices omnia recte estimare velint, felices reddere possum. *Sullam medicamentum cumque sanare potest; sunt afferens animi qui promisit sunt insanabiles; non tamenatis opus sperna debet, aut medicinae, aut philosophiae. *"The humane consolations of a foolish mind."

* "The humane consolations of a foolish mind."
Words add no courage, which Catiline once said to his soldiers, "a captain's oration doth not make a coward a valiant man"; and as Job "feelingly said to his friends, "you are but miserable comforters all." "Tis to no purpose in that vulgar phrase to use a company of obsolete sentences, and familiar sayings: as Plinyus Secundus, being now sorrowful and heavy for the departure of his dear friend Cornelius Rufus, a Roman senator, wrote to his fellow Tiro in like case, adhibe solutia, sed nova aliqua, sed fortiia, que audierim nunquam, legerim nunquam: nam que audivi, que legi omnia, tanto dolore superantur, either say something that I never read nor heard of before, or else hold thy peace. Most men will here except trivial consolations, ordinary speeches, and known persuasions in this behalf will be of small force; what can any man say that hath not been said? To what end are such panegorical discourses? you may as soon remove Mount Caucasus, as alter some men's affections. Yet sure I think they cannot choose but do some good, and comfort and ease a little, though it be the same again, I will say it, and upon that hope I will adventure.

Discontents and grievances are either general or particular; general are wars, plagues, dearths, famine, fires, inundations, unseasonable weather, epidemical diseases which afflict whole kingdoms, territories, cities: or peculiar to private men, as cares, crosses, losses, death of friends, poverty, want, sickness, orbitics, injuries, abuses, &c. Generally all discontent, homines quattuor fortunae sano. No condition free, quique suas potius manes. Even in the midst of our mirth and jollity, there is some grudging, some complaint, as the saith, our whole life is a glaucupricon, a bitter-sweet passion, honey and gall mixed together, we are all miserable and discontent, who can deny it? If all, and that it be a common calamity, an inevitable necessity, all distressed, then as Cardan infers, who art thou that hopest to go free? Why dost thou not grieve thou art a mortal man, and not governor of the world? Ferra quam sortem patiantur omnes, Nemo recuset, if it be common to all, why should one man be more disquieted than another? If thou alone wert distressed, it was indeed more irksome, and less to be endured; but when the calamity is common, comfort thyself with this, thou hast more fellows, Solamen miseris socios habuisse doloris; 'tis not thy sole case, and why shouldst thou be so impatient? "Ay, but alas we are more miserable than others, what shall we do? Besides private miseries, we live in perpetual fear and danger of common enemies: we have Bellona's whips, and pitiful outcries, for epithalami; for pleasant music, that fearful noise of ordnance, drums, and warlike trumpets still sounding in our ears; instead of nuptial torches, we have firing of towns and cities; for triumphs, lamentations; for joy, tears. So it is.
Cure of Melancholy. [Part. 2. Sec. 3.

and so it was, and so it ever will be. He that refuseth to see and hear, to suffer this, is not fit to live in this world, and knows not the common condition of all men, to whom so long as they live, with a reciprocal course, joys and sorrows are annexed, and succeed one another." It is inevitable, it may not be avoided, and why then shouldst thou be so much troubled? *Grave nihil est hominum quod fort necessitatis, as Tully deems out of an old poet, "that which is necessary cannot be grievous." If it be so, then comfort thyself in this, "that whether thou wilt or no, it must be endured;" make a virtue of necessity, and conform thyself to undergo it. *"Si longa est, levius est; si gravis est, brevis est." If it be long, 'tis light; if grievous, it cannot last. It will away, dies dolore munuit, and if nought else, time will wear it out; custom will ease it; "oblivion is a common medicine for all losses, injuries, griefs, and detriments whatsoever, "and when they are once past, this commodity comes of infelicity, it makes the rest of our life sweeter unto us;" "Atque hoc olim meminisse juvabit, "recollection of the past is pleasant;" "the privation and want of a thing many times makes it more pleasant and delightful than before it was." We must not think, the happiest of us all, to escape here without some misfortunes,

"---Usque adeo nulla est sincer voluptas. Solutumque aliqndi latis interveilet."---

Heaven and earth are much unlike: "Those heavenly bodies indeed are freely carried in their orbs without any impediment or interruption, to continue their course for innumerable ages, and make their conversions: but men are urged with many difficulties, and have diverse hindrances, oppositions still crossing, interrupting their endeavours and desires, and no mortal man is free from this law of nature." We must not therefore hope to have all things answer our own expectation, to have a continuance of good success and fortunes, *Fortuna nunquam perpetuam est bona. And as Minutius Felix, the Roman consul, told that insulting Coriolanus, drunk with his good fortunes, look not for that success thou hast hitherto had; "It never yet happened to any man since the beginning of the world, nor ever will, to have all things according to his desire, or to whom fortune was never opposite and adverse." Even so it fell out to him as be foretold. And so to others, even to that happiness of Augustus: though he were Jupiter's almoner, Pluto's treasurer, Neptune's admiral, it could not secure him. Such was Aleibiades' fortune, Narsetes, that great Gonsalves, and most famous men's, that as "Jovius concludes, "it is almost fatal to great princes, through their own default or otherwise circumvented with envy and malice, to lose their honours, and die contumeliously." Tis so, still hath been, and ever will be, *Nihil est ab omni parte beatum, "There's no perfection is so absolute, That some impurity doth not pollute." Whatsoever is under the moon is subject to corruption, alteration; and so long as thou livest upon earth look not for other: "Thou shalt not here find peaceable and cheerful days, quiet times, but rather clouds, storms, calamities; such is our fate." And as those errant planets in their distinct orbs have their several motions, sometimes direct, stationary, retrograde, in apogee, perige,

1 In Tusco, & vetece poeta. 2 Cardan, lib. 1. de consol. Est consolationis genus non levum, quod & necessitate sit; sive feras, sive non feras, serendimm est tamen. 3 Senex. 4 Omi Golori tempus est medicina; ipsum lactum extinguit, injuries deiet, omnis mali obvionem adfert. 5 Habet hoc quoque consuetudinem omnis infelicitas, auxiorem vitam cum aliquo relinquit. 6 Virg. 7 Ovid. "For there is no pleasure perfect, some anxiety always intervenes." 8 Lorrach. Sunt namque infera superis, humana terrenis longe disparia. Etenim beat menes feruntur libere, et sine ulla impedimento, stiata, aleataeque arbore carnes et conversiones suas jam secures innumerabilibus constantissime commutant; verum homines magnis angustiis. Neque hae nature lege est quisquam mortalium somnus. 9 Dimypsum Halicar. lib. 8. non omni uinforme contigit, nec post homines natos invincuum quacunque, cui omni ex aeterni sententia successerint, ial ut nulla in re fortuna sit: ei adversas. 10 Vit. Gonsalvi lib. ult. Ut ductibus fatalis sit clarissimis a calpis superos, secus circumveniunt cortex malitiae et invidi, huminaque dignitatem per contumeliarum mort. 11 In terris purum illum atherem non inventi, et venes aereus; nimbos putus, procubili, calumniar. Lips. cont. misc. ep. 8.
Remedies against Discontents.

oriental, occidental, combust, feral, free, and as our astrologers will, have their fortitudes and debilities, by reason of those good and bad irradiations, conferred to each other's site in the heavens, in their terms, houses, case, detriments, &c. So we rise and fall in this world, ebb and flow, in and out, reared and dejected, lead a troublesome life, subject to many accidents and casualties of fortunes, variety of passions, infirmities as well from ourselves as others.

Yea, but thou thinkest thou art more miserable than the rest, other men are happy but in respect of thee, their miseries are but flea-bittings to thine, thou alone art unhappy, none so bad as thyself. Yet if, as Socrates said, "All men in the world should come and bring their grievances together, of body, mind, fortune, sores, ulcers, madness, epilepsies, agues, and all those common calamities of beggary, want, servitude, imprisonment, and lay them on a heap to be equally divided, wouldst thou share alike, and take thy portion? or be as thou art?" Without question thou wouldst be as thou art.

If some Jupiter should say, to give us all content,

"Jam faciam quod velitis; eris tu, qui modo miles, Mercator; tu consulus modo, rusticus; hinc vos, Vos hinc munia discipite partibus; et
Quid stais? nihilunt." "Well be't so then: you master soldier
Shall be a merchant; you sir lawyer,
A country gentlemen; go you to this,
| That side you; why stand ye? It's well as 'tis." "Every man knows his own, but not others' defects and miseries; and 'tis the nature of all men still to reflect upon themselves, their own misfortunes," not to examine or consider other men's, not to compare themselves with others: To recount their miseries, but not their good gifts, fortunes, benefits, which they have, or ruminate on their adversity, but not once to think on their prosperity, not what they have, but what they want: to look still on them that go before, but not on those infinite numbers that come after. "Wheras many a man would think himself in heaven, a petty prince, if he had but the least part of that fortune which thou so much repinest at, abhorrest, and accountest a most vile and wretched estate." How many thousands want that which thou hast? how many myriads of poor slaves, captives, of such as work day and night in coal-pits, tin-mines, with sore toil to maintain a poor living, of such as labour in body and mind, live in extreme anguish and pain, all which thou art free from? O fortunatus nimium bona si sua nörint! Thou art most happy if thou couldst be content, and acknowledge thy happiness; be silent then, 'rest satisfied, desire, intuenques in aliorum infortunia solare mentem, comfort thyself with other men's misfortunes, and as the moldiwparp in Æsop told the fox, complaining for want of a tail, and the rest of his companions, tace, quando me oculis captam videtis, you complain of toys, but I am blind, be quiet. I say to thee, be thou satisfied. It is recorded of the hares, that with a general consent they went to drown themselves, out of a feeling of their misery; but when they saw a company of frogs more fearful than they were, they began to take courage and comfort again. Compare thine estate with others. Similes aliorum respice casus, milites ista feres. Be content and rest satisfied, for thou art well in respect to others: be thankful for that thou hast, that God hath done for thee, he hath not made thee a monster, a beast, a base creature, as

*Siomenes haece suae mala suaeque curae in namum cumulam conferrent, equis divisura portionibus, &c.
*Fir. ser. lib. 1.
*Quod unaquaque proprium mala novit, aliorum necat, in causis est, ut se inter alios misanum putet. Cardan, lib. 3. de consol. Plutarch. de consol. ad Apolloniam.
*Quam multos pestes qui se caelo proximos putarent, totidem regulos, si de fortuna tua reliquis pars e minima contingat. Buech. de consol. lib. 2. pros. 4.
*You know the value of a thing from wanting more than from enjoying it.

*Heciod. Esto quod es; quod sunt aliis, sine quilibet case; Quod non es, voles; quod potes esse, velis. 4. Exopii fab.
he might, but a man, a Christian, such a man; consider aught of it, thou art.

"Quicquid vult, habes nemo potest, no man can have what he will, nihil potest volle qual non habet, he may choose whether he will desire that which he hath not. Thy lot is fallen, make the best of it. "If we should all sleep at all times (as Endymion is said to have done), who then were happier than his fellow? " Our life is but short, a very dream, and while we look about, "immortalitas adest, eternity is at hand: "our life is a pilgrimage on earth, which wise men pass with great alacrity. "If thou be in woe, sorrow, want, distress, in pain, or sickness, think of that of our apostle, "God chastiseth them whom he loveth: they that sow in tears shall reap in joy," Psal. cxxvi. 5. "As the furnace proveth the potter's vessel, so doth temptation try men's thoughts," Exclus. xxv. 5, 'tis for 'thy good, Periisses nisi periisses: hadst thou not been so visited, thou hast been utterly undone: "as gold in the fire," so men are tried in adversity. Tribulatio dilat: and which Came- rarius hath well shadowed in an emblem of a thresher and corn.

"Si tritura abis paleis sunt abita grana,
Non erit mundanis separat a paleis;" "As threshing separates from straw the corn,
By crosses from the world's chaff are we born."

'Tis the very same which Chrysostom comments, hom. 2, in 3 Mat. "Corn is not separated but by threshing, nor men from worldly impediments but by tribulation." 'Tis that which Cyprian ingeminates, Sêr. 4. de immort. 'Tis that which Hierom, which all the fathers insinuates, "so we are catechised for eternity. "Tis that which the proverb insinuates. Novamentum documentum; 'tis that which all the world rings in our ears. Deus unicum habet filium sine peccato, nullum sine flagello: God, saith Austin, hath one son without sin, none without correction. "An expert seaman is tried in a tempest, a runner in a race, a captain in a battle, a valiant man in adversity, a Christian in tentation and misery." Basil. hom. 8. We are sent as so many soldiers into this world, to strive with it, the flesh, the devil; our life is a warfare, and who knows it not? Non est ad astra mollis è terris via: "and therefore peradventure this world here is made troublesome unto us, that, as Gregory notes, "we should not be delighted by the way, and forget whither we are going."

Go on then merrily to heaven. If the way be troublesome, and you in misery, in many grievances: on the other side you have many pleasant sports, objects, sweet smells, delightsome tastes, music, meats, herbs, flowers, &c. to recreate your senses. Or put case thou art now forsaken of the world, dejected, contemned, yet comfort thyself, as it was said to Agar in the wilderness, "God sees thee, he takes notice of thee:" there is a God above that can vindicate thy cause, that can relieve thee. And surely Seneca thinks he takes delight in seeing thee. "The gods are well pleased when they see great men contending with adversity," as we are to see men fight, or a man with a beast. But these are toys in respect, "Behold," saith he, "a spectacle worthy of God; a good man contented with his estate." A tyrant is the best sacrifice

to Jupiter, as the ancients held, and his best object "a contented mind." For thy part then rest satisfied, "cast all thy care on him, thy burthen on him, rely on him, trust on him, and he shall nourish thee, care for thee, give thee thine heart's desire;" say with David, "God is our hope and strength, in troubles ready to be found," Psal. lxi. 1. "for they that trust in the Lord shall be as Mount Zion, which cannot be removed," Psal. cxv. 1, 2. "as the mountains are about Jerusalem, so is the Lord about his people, from henceforth and for ever."

MEMB. II.

Deformity of body, sickness, baseness of birth, peculiar discontents.

PARTICULAR discontents and grievances, are either of body, mind, or fortune, which as they wound the soul of man, produce this melancholy, and many great inconveniences, by that antidote of good counsel and persuasion may be eased or expelled. Deformities and imperfections of our bodies, as lameness, crookedness, deafness, blindness, be they innate or accidental, trouble many men: yet this may comfort them, that those imperfections of the body do not a whit blemish the soul, or hinder the operations of it, but rather help and much increase it. Thou art lame of body, deformed to the eye, yet this hinders not but that thou mayest be a good, a wise, upright, honest man. "Seldom," saith Plutarch, "honesty and beauty dwell together," and oftentimes under a threadbare coat lies an excellent understanding, sapē sub attrītī latitat sapientīa vestē. *Cornelius Massus, that famous preacher in Italy, when he came first into the pulpit in Venice, was so much contemned by reason of his outside, a little, lean, poor, dejected person, *they were all ready to leave the church; but when they heard his voice they did admire him, and happy was that senator could enjoy his company, or invite him first to his house. A silly fellow to look to, may have more wit, learning, honesty, than he that strutts it out Ampullis jactans, &c., grandia gradiens, and is admired in the world's opinion: Vītis sapē cadus nobile nectar habet, the best wine comes out of an old vessel. How many deformed princes, kings, emperors, could I reckon up, philosophers, orators? Hannibal had but one eye, Appius Claudius, Timoleon, blind, Muleasse, king of Tunis, John, king of Bohemia, and Tiresias the prophet. *The night hath his pleasure;" and for the loss of that one sense such men are commonly recompensed in the rest; they have excellent memories, other good parts, music, and many recreations; much happiness, great wisdom, as Tully well discourseth in his *Tusculan questions: Homer was blind, yet who (saith he) made more accurate, lively, or better descriptions, with both his eyes? Democritus was blind, yet as Laertius writes of him, he saw more than all Greece besides, *Plato concludes, Tum sanē mentis oculus acutē incipit cernere, quam primium corporis oculus deforescit, when our bodily eyes are at worst, generally the eyes of our soul see best. Some philosophers and divines have evirated themselves, and put out their eyes voluntarily, the better to contemplate. Angelus Politianus had a tetter in his nose continually running, fulsome in company, yet no man so eloquent and pleasing in his works. *Esop was crooked, Socrates purblind, long-legged, hairy; Democritus withered; Seneca lean and harsh, ugly to behold, yet shew me so many flourishing wits, such divine spirits: Horace, a little bare-eyed contemptible fellow, yet who so sententious and wise! Marcellus Ficinus, Faber Stapulensis, a couple of dwarfs; *Melancthon a short

hard-favoured man, parvus erat, sed magnus erat, &c., yet of incomparable parts all three. Ignatius Loyola, the founder of the Jesuits, by reason of a hurt he received in his leg, at the siege of Pampluna, the chief town of Navarre in Spain, unfit for wars, and less serviceable at court, upon that accident betook himself to his beads, and by those means got more honour than ever he should have done with the use of his limbs, and properness of person; Vulnus non penetrat animam, a wound hurts not the soul. Galba the emperor was crook-backed, Epictetus lame: that great Alexander a little man of stature; Augustus Cæsar of the same pitch; Agesilaus despicabili formâ: Boccharis a most deformed prince as ever Egypt had, yet as Didorius Siculus records of him, in wisdom and knowledge far beyond his predecessors. A. Dom. 1306. Uladeslaus Cubitalis that pigmy king of Poland reigned and fought more victorious battles than any of his long-shanked predecessors. Nullam virtus respit sloturam, virtue refuseth no stature, and commonly the great vest bodies, and fine features, are sottish, dull, and leaden spirits. What's in them? Quid nisi pondus stolidique ferocia mentis, What in Osus and Ephialtes (Neptune’s sons in Homer), nine acres long?

Quo ut magnus Oriam, Cum pedes incudit, medi per maxima Nerei Stagna, viam findens humerum supereminent undas. *Emile tall Orion stalking oer the flood: When with his brawny beast he cuts the waves, His shoulder scarce the topmost bellow laves.*

What in Maximinus, Ajax, Caligula, and the rest of those great Zanzuminis, or gigantical Anakims, heavy, vast, barbarous lubbers? *si membra tibi dant grandia Parem, Mentis aegra?*

Their body, saith a Lemnian, *is a burden to them, and their spirits not so lively, nor they so erect and merry:* Non est in magno corpore mica salis: a little diamond is more worth than a rocky mountain: which made Alexander Aphrodisios positively conclude, *The lesser, the wiser, because the soul was more contracted in such a body.* Let Bodine in his 5. c. method, hist. plead the rest: the lesser they are, as in Asia, Greece, they have generally the finest wits. And for bodily stature which some so much admire, and goodly presence, ‘tis true, to say the best of them, great men are proper, and tall, I grant; caput inter nubila condunt (hide their heads in the clouds); but belli pusilli, little men are pretty: *Sed si bellus homo est Cotta, pusillus homo est.* Sickness, diseases, trouble many, but without a cause; *It may be ’tis for the good of their souls:* Pars fatis futur, the flesh rebels against the spirit; that which hurts the one, must needs help the other. Sickness is the mother of modesty, putteth us in mind of our mortality; and when we are in the full career of worldly pomp and jollity, she pulleth us by the ear, and maketh us know ourselves. Pliny calls it, the sum of philosophy, *If we could but perform that in our health, which we promise in our sickness.* Quum infirmi sumus, optimi sumus; for *what sick man* (as Secundus expostulates with Rufus) was ever lascivious, covetous, or ambitious? he envies no man, admires no man, flatters no man, despiseth no man, listens not after lies and tales, &c. And were it not for such gentle remembrances, men would have no moderation of themselves, they would be worse than tigers, wolves, and lions: who should keep them in awe? *princes, masters, parents, magistrates, judges, friends, enemies, fair or foul means cannot contain us, but a little sickness* (as Chrysostom observes), *will correct and amend us.* And therefore

---

Remedies against Discontents.

with good discretion, "Jovianus Pontanus caused this short sentence to be engraoven on his tomb in Naples: "Labour, sorrow, grief, sickness, want and woe, to serve proud masters, bear that superstitious yoke, and bury your dearest friends, &c., are the sauces of our life." If thy disease be continuative and painful to thee, it will not surely last: "and a light affliction which is but for a moment, causeth unto us a far more excellent and eternal weight of glory." 2 Cor. iv. 17. bear it with patience; women endure much sorrow in childbirth, and yet they will not contain; and those that are barren, wish for this pain; "be courageous, there is as much valour to be shewn in thy bed, as in an army, or at a sea fight:" and vincetur, and vincit, thou shalt be rid at last. In the mean time, let it take its course, thy mind is not any way disabled. Bilibaldus Pirkimerus, senator to Charles the Fifth, ruled all Germany, lying most part of his days sick of the gout upon his bed. The more violent thy torture is, the less it will continue: and though it be severe and hideous for the time, comfort thyself as martyrs do, with honour and immortality. 7That famous philosopher Epicurus, being in as miserable pain of stone and cholie, as a man might endure, solaced himself with a conceit of immortality; "the joy of his soul for his rare inventions repelled the pain of his bodily torments."

Baseness of birth is a great disapparage to some men, especially if they be wealthy, bear office, and come to promotion in a commonwealth; then (as he observes), if their birth be not answerable to their calling, and to their fellows, they are much abashed and ashamed of themselves. Some scorn their own father and mother, deny brothers and sisters, with the rest of their kindred and friends, and will not suffer them to come near them, when they are in their pomp, accounting it a scandal to their greatness to have such beggarly beginnings. Simon in Lucian, having now got a little wealth, changed his name from Simon to Simonides, for that there were so many beggars of his kin, and set the house on fire where he was born, because nobody should point at it. Others buy titles, coats of arms, and by all means screw themselves into ancient families, falsifying pedigrees, usurping scutcheons, and all because they would not seem to be base. The reason is, for that this gentility is so much admired by a company of outsiders, and such honour attributed unto it, as amongst *Germans, Frenchmen, and Venetians, the gentry scorn the commonalty, and will not suffer them to match with them; they depress, and make them as so many asses, to carry burdens. In our ordinary talk and fallings out, the most opprobrious and scurrile name we can fasten upon a man, or first give, is to call him base rogue, beggarly rascal, and the like: whereas in my judgment, this ought of all other grievances to trouble men least. Of all vanities and fopperies, to brag of gentility is the greatest; for what is it they crack so much of, and challenge such superiority, as if they were demi-gods? Birth? Tantane vos generis teuuit fulcicia vestri? 7 It is non ens, a mere flash, a ceremony, a toy, a thing of nought. Consider the beginning, present estate, progress, ending of gentry, and then tell me what it is. 7Oppression, fraud, cozening, usury, knavery, bawdry, murder, and tyranny, are the beginning of many ancient families: 4one hath been a blood-sucker, a parricide, the death of many a silly soul in some unjust quarrels, seditions, made many an orphan and poor widow, and for that he is made

* Nat. Chytræus Europ. deliciss. Labor, dolor, ægregudo, lucent, servire superbis dominis, jugum ferre superstitionis, quasi habet charos speculæ, &c. condimenta vita sunt. 7 Non tam mari quam prelo virtus, eiam lecto exhibetur: vincetur aut vincit; aut tu uerba relinques, aut ipsa te sequas. 7 Tullius lib. 7. fam. ep. Vesicae morbo laborans, et urinae mittente difficilatatem tanta, ut vir incrementum apereret; repellebat haec omnium animal gaudium ob memoriam inventorum. 7 Beoth. lib. 2. pr. 4. flere sensum exasperat, sed est puderi degener sanguis. * Gaspar. Ena petit thes. * "Does such presumption in your origin possess you?" 7 Alli pro pecunia cuncti nobilitatem, alli illam lenovici, alli vencëlés, alli particlides; multa pertido nobilitate conciliat, plérique adulatiunc, detractiones, calumnias, &c. Agrip. de vanit. scient. 4 Ex homicidio sepe orto nobilitas et strenua carnificina.
a lord or an earl, and his posterity gentlemen for ever after. Another hath been a bawd, a pander to some great men, a para-ite, a slave, "prostituted himself, his wife, daughter," to some lascivious prince, and for that he is exalted. Tiberius preferred many to honours in his time, because they were famous whore-masters and sturdy drinkers; many come into this parchment-row (so one calls it), by flattery or cozening; search your old families, and you shall scarce find of a multitude (as Æneas Sylvius observes), qui sceletarum non habent ortum, that have not a wicked beginning; aut qui vi et dolceo fastigii non ascendant, as that plebeian in "Machiavel in a set oration proved to his fellows, that do not rise by knavery, force, foolery, villainy, or such indirect means. "They are commonly able that are wealthy; virtue and riches seldom settle on one man: who then sees not the beginning of nobility? spoils enrich one, usury another, treason a third, witchcraft a fourth, flattery a fifth, lying, stealing, bearing false witness a sixth, adultery the seventh," &c. One makes a fool of himself to make his lord merry, another dandies my young master, bestows a little nag on him, a third marries a cracked piece, &c. Now may it please your good worship, your lordship, who was the first founder of your family? The poet answers, "Aut Pastor fuit, aut illud quod dicere nolo." Are he or you the better gentleman? If he, then we have traced him to his form. If you, what is it of which thou boastest so much? That thou art his son. It may be his heir, his reputed son, and yet indeed a priest or a serving man may be the true father of him; but we will not controvert that now; married women are all honest; thou art his son's son, begotten and born infra quatuor maria, &c. Thy great great great grandfather was a rich citizen, and then in all likelihood a usurer, a lawyer, and then a —— a courtier, and then a —— a country gentleman, and then he scraped it out of sheep, &c. And you are the heir of all his virtues, fortunes, titles; so then, what is your gentry, but as Hierom saith, Opes antique, investrate divitiae, ancient wealth? that is the definition of gentility. The father goes often to the devil, to make his son a gentleman. For the present, what is it? "It began (saith Agrippa), with strong impiety, with tyranny, oppression," &c., and so it is maintained: wealth began it (no matter how got), wealth continueth and increaseth it. Those Roman knights were so called, if they could dispense per annum so much. In the kingdom of Naples and France, he that buys such lands, buys the honour, title, barony together with it; and they that can dispense so much amongst us, must be called to bear office, to be knights, or fine for it, as one observes, nobiliorum ex censeu judicant, our nobles are measured by their means. And what now is the object of honour? What maintains our gentry but wealth? "Nobilitas sine re projecta vilior alga. Without means gentry is naught worth, nothing so contemptible and base. A Disputare de nobilitate generis, sine divitiae, est disputare de nobilitate stercoris, saith Nevisanus the lawyer, to dispute of gentry without wealth, is (saving your reverence), to discuss the original of a mand. So that it is wealth alone that denominates, money which maintains it, gives esse to it, for which every man may have it. And what is their ordinary exercise? "A sit to eat, drink, lie down to sleep, and rise to play:" wherein lies their worth and sufficiency? in a few coats of arms, eagles, lions, serpents, bears, tigers, dogs, crosses, bends, fesses, &c., and such like bantles, which they commonly set up in their gal-

6 Plures ob prostitutatas fillas, uxorcs, nobilcs facti; multas venationes, rapinas, eades, prestigia, &c.
7 Sat. Menip. "Cum enim hos didi nobles videmus, qui divitiii abundant, divitiei vero rarci virtutis sunt conuotes, quis non videat orium nobilitatis degenerem? Hunc usum citatum, illum spoliam, proditiones; hic veneant obstritiam, ille adulationibus, hunc adulatorum prævenerit, non mullis mendaciam, quidam ex coniuge quasam faciant, pleique ex natii, &c. Florent. hist. lib. 3.
8 Juven. "A shepherd, or something that 1 should rather not tell." 1 Robusta improbitas a tyrannico incepta, &c.
9 Caesar. "A shepherd, or something that 1 should rather not tell.
10 SyL nup. lib. 4. num. 111. "Exod. xxiii.
Remedies against Discontents.

...eries, porches, windows, on bowls, platters, coaches, in tombs, churches, men’s sleeves, &c. “If he can hawk and hunt, ride a horse, play at cards and dice, swagger, drink, swear,” take tobacco with a grace, sing, dance, wear his clothes in fashion, court and please his mistress, talk big fustian, “insult, scorn, strut, contemn others, and use a little mimical and aspish compliment above the rest, he is a complete, (Egregium verò inaudem) a well-qualified gentleman; these are most of their employments, this their greatest commendation. What is gentry, this parchment nobility then, but as ‘Agrippa defines it, “a sanctuary of knavery and naughtiness, a cloak for wickedness and execrable vices, of pride, fraud, contempt, boasting, oppression, dissimulation, lust, gluttony, malice, fornication, adultery, ignorance, impiety?” A nobleman therefore, in some likelihood, as he concludes, is an “atheist, an oppressor, an epicure, a “gull, a dizzard, an illiterate idiot, an outside, a glow-worm, a proud fool, an arrant ass,” Ventris et turguinus mancipium, a slave to his lust and belly, solaque libidine fortis. And as Salvians observed of his countrymen the Aquitanes in France, sicut titulus primi fuere, sic et vitiss (as they were the first in rank so also in rottenness); and Cabinet du Roy, their own writer, distinctly of the rest. “The nobles of Berry are most part lechers, they of Touraine thieves, they of Narbonne covetous, they of Guienne coiners, they of Provence atheists, they of Rheims superstitions, they of Lyons treacherous, of Normandy proud, of Picardy insolent,” &c. We may generally conclude, the greater men, the more vicious. In fine, as ‘Æneas Sylvius adds, “they are most part miserable, sottish, and filthy fellows, like the walls of their houses, fair without, foul within.” What dost thou vaunt of now? “What dost thou gape and wonder at? I admire him for his brave apparel, horses, dogs, fine houses, manors, orchards, gardens, walks? Why? a fool may be possessor of this as well as he; and he that accounts him a better man, a nobleman for having of it, he is a fool himself.” Now go and brag of thy gentility. This is it belike which makes the ‘Turks at this day scorn nobility, and all those huffing bombast titles, which so much elevate their poles: except it be such as have got it at first, maintain it by some supereminent quality, or excellent worth. And for this cause, the Ragusan commonwealth, Switzers, and the united provinces, in all their aristocracies, or democratical monarchies (if I may so call them), exclude all these degrees of hereditary honours, and will admit of none to bear office, but such as are learned, like those Athenian Areopagites, wise, discreet, and well brought up. The ‘Chinese observe the same customs, no man amongst them noble by birth; out of their philosophers and doctors they choose magistrates: their politic nobles are taken from such as be mortaliter nobiles, virtuous noble; nobilitas ut olim ab officio, non à naturâ, as in Israel of old, and their office was to defend and govern their country in war and peace, not to hawk, hunt, eat, drink, game alone, as too many do. Their Loyss, Mandarini, literati, licentiati, and such as have raised themselves by their worth, are their noblemeu only, though fit to govern a state; and why then should any that is otherwise of worth be ashamed of his birth? why should not he be as much respected that leaves a noble posterity, as he that had noble ancestors? nay, why not more? for phures solem orientem, we adore the sun rising most part; and how much better is it to say, Ego meus majoribus virtute prevulxi (I have outshone my ancestors in virtues), to boast...
Cure of Melancholy. [Part 2. Sec. 5.

himself of his virtues, than of his birth? Cathesbeius, sultan of Egypt and Syria, was by his condition a slave, but for worth, valour, and manhood second to no king, and for that cause (as Jovinus writes) elected emperor of the Mamelukes. That poor Spanish Fizarro for his valour made by Charles the Fifth Marquess of Anaillo: the Turkey Pashas are all such. Pentinax, Philippus Arabs, Maximinus, Probus, Aurelius, &c., from common soldiers became emperors, Cato, Cincinnatus, &c., consuls. Pius Secundus, Sixtus Quintus. Johan Secundus, Nicholas Quintus, &c., popes. Socrates, Virgil, Horace, libertina parte natus. a The kings of Denmark fetch their pedigree, as some say, from one Ulfo, that was the son of a bear. b E tenui casa sepe vir magnus exit, many a worthy man comes out of a poor cottage. Hercules, Romulus, Alexander (by Olympia’s confession), Themistocles, Jugurtha, King Arthur, William the Conqueror, Homer, Demosthenes, P. Lumbard, P. Comes- tor, Bartholus, Adrian the fourth Pope, &c., bastards; and almost in every kingdom, the most ancient families have been at first princes’ bastards: their worthiest captains, best wits, greatest scholars, bravest spirits in all our annals, have been base. c Cardan, in his Subtleties, gives a reason why they are most part better able than others in body and mind, and so, per consequen.s, more fortunate. Castruccius Castracanus, a poor child, found in the field, exposed to misery, became prince of Lucca and Senes in Italy, a most complete soldier and worthy captain; Machiavel compares him to Scipio or Alexander. “And tis a wonderful thing (saith he) to him that shall consider of it, that all those, or the greatest part of them, that have done the greatest exploits here upon earth, and excelled the rest of the nobles of their time, have been still born in some abject, obscure place, or of base and obscure abject parents.” A most memorable observation, d Scaliger accounts it, et non pretiendandum, maxima vivorum plerisque patres ignoratos, matres impudicos suisse. e “I could recite a great catalogue of them.” every kingdom, every province will yield innumerable examples; and why then should baseness of birth be objected to any man? Who thinks worse of Tully for being Arpinas, an upstart? Or Agathocles, that Sicilian king, for being a potter’s son? Iphicrates and Marius were meanly born. What wise man thinks better of any person for his nobility? as he said in Machiavel, omnes odo.m patre nati, A dau’s sons, conceived all and born in sin, &c. “We are by nature all as one, all alike, if you see us naked; let us wear theirs and they our clothes, and what is the difference?” To speak truth, as Bale did of P. Schalichins, “I more esteem thy worth, learning, honesty, than thy nobility; honour thee more that thou art a writer, a doctor of divinity, than Earl of the Huns, Baron of Skradine, or hast title to such and such provinces,” &c. “Thou art more fortunate and great” (so Jovinus writes to Cosmo de’ Medici, then Duke of Florence) “for thy virtues, than for thy lovely wife, and happy children, friends, fortunes, or great duchy of Tuscany.” So I account thee; and who doth not so indeed? e Abdol- minus was a gardener, and yet by Alexander for his virtues made king of Syria. How much better is it to be born of mean parentage, and to excel in

---

a Lib. 1. hist. conditione servus, ceterum acer bello, et animi magnitudine maxinorum regnum nemini secundum: ob hanc a Mamedelicis in regem electus. b Osias Magnus, lib. 18. Saxo Grammaticus, a quo rex scepio et cetera Denarum regnum remanunt. c Seneca de Contro. Philos. epist. xxv. Phys. corpore sunt et anima fortiores spirit, plerunque ob amores vehementissimn, semelius erat, &c. d Vita Castruccii. Nec proter rationem minum videri debet, si quis rem considerare velit, omnes eos vel saltem maximum partem, qui in hoc terrarum orb eo re prastantiores agressit sunt, atque inter eorum avii et heroes extendo-lunt, aut elseem, aut objects loco editis, et prognoes fuisse alia parentibus. Eorum ego Cato, ut infinitum recensere possem. e Exercit. 263. f It is a thing deserving of our notice, that most great men were born in obscurity, and unchaste mothers.”


k Curtius.
worth, to be morally noble, which is preferred before that natural nobility, by
divines, philosophers, and ‘politicians, to be learned, honest, discreet, well-
qualified, to be fit for any manner of employment, in country and common-
wealth, war and peace, than to be *Degeneris Neoptolemi, as many brave nobles are,
only wise because rich, otherwise idiots, illiterate, unfit for any manner of
service? *Udalrichs, Earl of Cilia, upbraided John Humiades with the base-
ness of his birth, but he replied, in *Cilienis combatus turpiter extinguitur, in
me gloriosa Bistricensis exoritur, thine earldom is consumed with riot, mine
begins with honour and renown. Thou hast had so many noble ancestors;
what is that to thee? *Vice ea nostra voco, *when thou art a dizzard thyself:
*quod prodest, Pontice, longo stemmate censi? & c. I conclude, hast thou a
sound body, and a good soul, good bringing up? Art thou virtuous, honest,
learned, well-qualified, religious, are thy conditions good?—thou art a true
nobleman, perfectly noble, although born of Thersites—*dum modo tu sis—
*Excede similis, non natus, sed factus, noble xar*? *εξογγωγων, ‘*for neither sword,
nor fire, nor water, nor sickness, nor outward violence, nor the devil himself
can take thy good parts from thee." Be not ashamed of thy birth then, thou
art a gentleman all the world over, and shalt be honoured, when as he, strip
him of his fine clothes, *dispossess him of his wealth, is a funge (which *Poly-
nices in his banishment found true byexperience, gentry was not esteemed) like
a piece of coin in another country, that no man will take, and shall be con-
temned. Once more, though thou be a barbarian, born at Tontonece, a villain,
a slave, a Saldanian negro, or a rude Virginian in Dasamonquepec, he a French
monsieur, a Spanish don, a seignor of Italy, I care not how descended, of
what family, of what order, baron, count, prince, if thou be well qualified, and
he is not, but a degenerate Neoptolemus, I tell thee in a word, thou art a man,
and he is a beast.

Let no *terre filius, or upstart, insult at this which I have said, no worthy
gentleman take offence. I speak it not to detract from such as are well
deserving, truly virtuous and noble: I do much respect and honour true gentry
and nobility; I was born of worshipful parents myself, in an ancient family,
but I am a younger brother, it concerns me not: or had I been some great
heir, richly endowed, so minded as I am, I should not have been elevated at
all, but so esteemed of it, as of all other human happiness, honours, &c., they
have their period, are brittle and inconstant. As *he said of that great
river Danube, it riseth from a small fountain, a little brook at first, sometimes
broad, sometimes narrow, now slow, then swift, increased at last to an incredible
greatness by the confluence of sixty navigable rivers, it vanisheth in conclusion,
loseth his name, and is suddenly swallowed up of the Euxine sea: I may say
of our greatest families, they were mean at first, augmented by rich marriages,
purchases, offices, they continue for some ages, with some little alteration of
circumstances, fortunes, places, &c., by some prodigal son, for some default, or
for want of issue they are defaced in an instant, and their memory blotted out.

So much in the meantime I do attribute to Gentility, that if he be well-
descended, of worshipful or noble parentage, he will express it in his conditions,

*——— nec enim foedos
Progenator aquae columbas."*

And although the nobility of our times be much like our coins, more in number
and value, but less in weight and goodness, with finer stamps, cuts, or outsiders

1 Bodine de rep. lib. 3. cap. 8.
2 Enneas Silvius, lib. 2. cap. 29.
3 *If children be proud, haughty, foolish, they defile the nobility of their kindred," Eccl. xxii. 9.
4 *Ouius possesso nec ferto eripit, nec incinde absunt, nec aquam voragine absorbit, vel vi morui destruct potest.*
5 *Send them both to some strange place naked, ad ignotos, as Aristippus said, you shall see the difference. Bacon’s
Essays.*
6 *Familiae splendor nihil opis attulta, &c.*
7 *Fluvius hic illustris, humanarum rerum imago, que parvis ductce sub inititis, in humensum crescent, et subito evanescent. *Exilii hic primo fluvius, in ad-
8 *For fierce eagles do not procreate timid ring-doves."*
than of old; yet if he retain those ancient characters of true gentry, he will be more affable, courteous, gently disposed, of fairer carriage, better temper, or a more magnanimous, heroic, and generous spirit, than that vulgus hominum, those ordinary boors and peasants, qui adeo improbi, agrestes, et inculti plerunque sunt, ne dicam malignos, ut nominis ulum humanitatis officium present, ne ipsis Deo si adverterit, as one observes of them, a rude, brutish, uncivil, wild, a curious generation, cruel and malicious, incapable of discipline, and such as have scarce common sense. And it may be generally spoken of all, which Lemnius the physician said of his travel into England, the common people were silly, sullen, dogged clowns, sed mitior nobilitatis, ad omne humanitatis officium paratissima, the gentlemen were courteous and civil. If it so fall out (as often it doth) that such peasants are preferred by reason of their wealth, chance, error, &c., or otherwise, yet as the cat in the fable, when she was turned to a fair maid, would play with mice; a cur will be a cur, a clown will be a clown, he will likely savour of the stock whence he came, and that innate rusticity can hardly be shaken off.

"Liet sungurus ambalet perennis,
Fortuna non mutat genos."

And though by their education such men may be better qualified, and more refined; yet there be many symptoms by which they may likely be described, an affected fantastical carriage, a tailor-like spruceness, a peculiar garb in all their proceedings; quicker than ordinary in his diet, and as Hierome well describes such a one to his Nepotian; "An upstart born in a base cottage, that scarce at first had coarse bread to fill his hungry guts, must now feed on kibeksaws and nude dishes, will have all variety of flesh and fish, the best oysters," &c. A beggar's brat will be commonly more scornful, imperious, insulting, insolent, than another man of his rank: "Nothing so intolerable as a fortunate fool," as Tully found out long since out of his experience; Asperius nihil est humili cum surgit in altum, set a beggar on horseback, and he will ride a gallop, a gallop, &c.

"----- desavit in omnes
Dum so posse putat, nec bella savior ella est,
Quam serva ruribus in libera collo parentis;"

he forgets what he was, domineers, &c., and many such other symptoms he hath, by which you may know him from a true gentleman. Many errors and obliquities are on both sides, noble, ignoble, factis, natis; yet still in all callings, as some degenerate, some are well deserving, and most worthy of their honours. And as Bosbequius said of Solyman the Magnificent, he was tanta dignus imperio, worthy of that great empire. Many meanly descended are most worthy of their honour, politiè nobles, and well deserve it. Many of our nobility so born (which one said of Hephæstion, Ptolemeus, Selencus, Anti-gonus, &c., and the rest of Alexander's followers, they were all worthy to be monarchs and generals of armies) deserve to be princes. And I am so far forth of "Sessilii's mind, that they ought to be preferred (if capable) before others, "as being nobly born, ingeniously brought up, and from their infancy trained to all manner of civility." For learning and virtue in a nobleman is more eminent, and, as a jewel set in gold is more precious, and much to be respected, such a man deserves better than others, and is as great an honour to his family as his noble family to him. In a word, many noblemen are an ornament to their order: many poor men's sons are singularly well endowed, most eminent, and well deserving for their worth, wisdom, learning, virtue, valour, integrity;

Sabinus in 6. Ovid. Met. fab 4
Hor. ep. Od. 2. "And although he boast of his wealth, Fortune has not changed his nature."
Lib. 2. ep. 15. "Natas secunde taguendo et pauperes domos, qui vix milia rugulentem ventrem, &c., Nil nihil fortunato Inipliente intolerabilitus."
Claud. 1. 9. in Extrap. "Lib. 1. de Rep. vulg. Quantum et commodiores sunt, et commerci
loci nati, num inde a parvulis ad morum civilissimam educati sunt, et num facti"
excellent members and pillars of a commonwealth. And therefore to conclude that which I first intended, to be base by birth, meanly born, is no such disparagement. Et sic demonstratur, quod erat demonstrandum.

MEMB. III.

Against Poverty and Want, with such other Adversities.

One of the greatest miseries that can befall a man, in the world's esteem, is poverty or want, which makes men steal, bear false witness, swear, forswear, contend, murder and rebel, which breaketh sleep, and causeth death itself. Nullum pauperitate gravis onus. * Ne quis irl divine judicium putaret, ant paupertas e Oxos fercet. Guis. in cap. 2. ver. 18. Lacte. 4 Inter proceres Thebanos nominatus, lectum habuit genus, frequens familiatarum, domus amplius; etc. Aurelii Florid. 1. 4. t P. Biesenius, ep. 72. et 232. obitae respu honores ex honore matris; motus amabilissimo regatus non est, si. * Suidat pauper foras in opera, diven in cogitationes; hic os apta obstigationes, hinc rectationes; gravibus ille fastidio, quam hic inedia crualitatem. Do. ser. * In Hesperichen. Natura aqua est, racerosid videros mendicorum uilia e parte regum filla dissimilis, pluernum samores.

* Nullum pauperitate gravis onus.
* Ne quis ira divine judicium putaret, ant paupertas exors foret.
* Guis. in cap. 2. ver. 18. Lacte. 4 Inter proceres Thebanos nominatus, lectum habuit genus, frequens familiatarum, domus amplius; etc. Aurelii Florid. 1. 4. 
* P. Biesenius, ep. 72. et 232. obitae respu honores ex honor matris; motus amabilissimo regatus non est, si. * Suidat pauper foras in opera, diven in cogitationes; hic os apta obstigationes, hinc rectationes; gravibus ille fastidio, quam hic inedia crualitatem. Do. ser. * In Hesperichen. Natura aqua est, racerosid videros mendicorum uilia e parte regum filla dissimilis, pluernum samores.
variety of dishes, better fare, sweet wine, pleasant sauce, dainty music, gay clothes, lords it bravely out, &c., and all that which Misillus admired in a Lucian; but with them he hath the gout, dropsies, apoplexies, palsy's, stone, pox, rheums, catarrhs, crudities, opipilations, melancholy, &c., lust enters in, anger, ambition, according to k Chrysostom, “the sequel of riches is pride, riot, intemperance, arrogancy, fury, and all irrational courses.”

"— turpi fregentur sancta luxu
Divitie molest," —

with their variety of dishes, many such maladies of body and mind get in, which the poor man knows not of. As Saturn in m Lucian answered the discontented commonalty (which, because of their neglected Saturnal feasts in Rome, made a grievous complaint and exclamation against rich men), that they were much mistaken in supposing such happiness in riches; “you see the best (said he) but you know not their several gripings and discontents:” they are like painted walls, fair without, rotten within: diseased, filthy, crazy, full of intemperance’s effects; “and who can reckon half if you but knew their fears, cares, anguish of mind and vexation, to which they are subject, you would hereafter renounce all riches.”

"O si patant pectora divitum, 
Quantas intras sublinus agit
Fortuna metus / Brutia Coro
Pulsante fretum militia unda est."

"O that their breasts were but conspicuous,
How full of fear within, how furious!
The narrow seas are not so boisterous."

Yea, but he hath the world at will that is rich, the good things of the earth: suave est de magno tollere acervo (it is sweet to draw from a great heap), he is a happy man, adored like a god, a prince, every man seeks to him, applauds, honours, admires him. He hath honours indeed, abundance of all things; but (as I said) withal “pride, lust, anger, faction, emulation, fears, cares, suspicion enter with his wealth,” for his intemperance he hath aches, crudities, gouts, and as fruits of his idleness, and fulness, lust, surfeiting and drunkenness, all manner of diseases: pecuniaris angustur improbitas, the wealthier, the more dishonest. “He is exposed to hatred, envy, peril and treason, fear of death, degradation,” &c., ‘tis labrica statio et proxima praecipitio, and the higher he climbs, the greater is his fall.

"Cielo graviore casu
Decidunt turros, feruntque summos
Felenga montes.”

the lightning commonly sets on fire the highest towers; “in the more eminent place he is, the more subject to fall.

"Rumpitur innumeris arbor uberrima pomis,
Et subita nimia precipitans oper.”

As a tree that is heavy laden with fruit breaks her own boughs, with their own greatness they ruin themselves: which Joachimus Camerarius hath elegantly expressed in his 13 Emblem, cent. 1. Inopem se copia facit. Their means is their misery, though they do apply themselves to the times, to lie, disembale, colleque and flatter their lieges, obey, second his will and commands, as much as may be, yet too frequently they miscarry, they fat themselves like so many hogs, as Aeneas Sylvius observes, that when they are full fed, they may be devoured by their princes, as Seneca by Nero was served, Sejanus by Tiberius, and Haman by Ahasuerus: I resolve with Gregory, postetas culminis, est tempestas mentis; et quo dignitas altior, casus gravior,

a Gallo Tom. 2. 1 Et bi contubernio fœdiique olida ventris mora tandem educti. Seneca, ep. 103.

honour is a tempest, the higher they are elevated, the more grievously depressed. For the rest of his prerogatives which wealth affords, as he hath more his expenses are the greater. “When goods increase, they are increased that eat them; and what good cometh to the owners, but the beholding thereof with the eyes?” Eccles. iv. 10.

“n an evil sickness,” Solomon calls it, “and reserved to them for an evil,” 12 verse. “They that will be rich fall into many fears and temptations, into many foolish and noisome lusts, which drown men in perdition.” 1 Tim. vi. 9. “Gold and silver hath destroyed many,” Exclus. viii. 2. divites saculi sunt laquei diaboli: so writes Bernard; worldly wealth is the devil’s bait: and as the Moon when she is fuller of light is still farthest from the Sun, the more wealth they have, the farther they are commonly from God. (If I had said this of myself, rich men would have pulled me to pieces; but hear who saith, and who seconds it, an Apostle) therefore St. James bids them “weep and howl for the miseries that shall come upon them; their gold shall rust and canker, and eat their flesh as fire,” James v. 1, 2, 3. I may then boldly conclude with Theodoret, quotiesunque divitias affluentem, &c. “As often as you shall see a man abounding in wealth,” qui gemmis bibit et Serrano dormit in ostro, “and naught withal, I beseech you call him not happy, but esteem him unfortunate, because he hath many occasions offered to live unjustly; on the other side, a poor man is not miserable, if he be good, but therefore happy, that those evil occasions are taken from him.”

Wherein now consists his happiness? what privileges hath he more than other men? or rather what miseries, what cares and discontents hath he not more than other men?

"Non enim gaud, neque consularis
Summevct licior minoris tumultus
Menti, et cursa laequare circum
Tecta volantes."

"Nor treasures, nor majors officers remove
The miserable tumults of the mind:
Or cares that lie about, or fly above
Their high- roofed houses, with huge beams coming"

"Tis not his wealth can vindicate him, let him have Job’s inventory, sicut Cresti et Crassii licer, non hos Pactolus aureas undas agens, e rijat vixqnam miseriis, Creusus or rich Crassus cannot now command health, or get himself a stomach.

"His worship," as Apuleius describes him, in all his plenty and great provision, is forbidden to eat, or else hath no appetite (sick in bed, can take no rest, sore [grewed with some chronic disease, contracted with full diet and ease, or troubled in mind), when as, in the meantime, all his household are merry, and the poorest servant that he keeps doth continually feast.” “Tis Bracteata felicitas, as Seneca terms it, tinsuited happiness, infelix felicitas, an unhappy kind of happiness, if it be happiness at all. His gold, guard, clattering of harness, and fortifications against outward enemies, cannot free him from inward fears and cares.

"Reverque metus hominem, eureque sequaces
Nor metuunt fremitus armorum, aut fores, tecta,
Andaterque inter reges, rogamque potentes
Versantur, nongulorum reverenter ab auro."

"Indeed men still attending fears and cares
Nor armours clashing, nor fierce weapons fears:
With kings versus they boldly, and kings’ peirs
Fearing no flashing that from gold appears.”

Hor. “Although a hundred thousand bushels of wheat may have been threshed in your granaries, your stomach will not contain more than mine.” Cap. 6. de curial, grace. affect. rap. de providentia; quotiesunque divitis affluentem hominem videmus, eureque sequaces, non quos have beatissimum potuerit, sed infelicem consessam, &c. a Hor. 1. 2. Od. 2. b Hor. lib. 2. c Florid. lib. 4. Dives illa, qui interdent, et in omni copia sua cibus non accept, cum interea totum eae servitium hircar sit, aqque ope. 4 Epist. 110.
Look how many servants he hath, and so many enemies he suspects; for liberty he entertains ambition; his pleasures are no pleasures; and that which is worst, he cannot be private or enjoy himself as other men do, his state is a servitude. *A countryman may travel from kingdom to kingdom, province to province, city to city, and glint his eyes with delightful objects, hawk, hunt, and use those ordinary disports, without any notice taken, all which a prince or a great man cannot do.* He keeps in for state, ne majestatis dignitas evideat, as our China kings, of Borneo, and Tartarian Chams, those aurum mancipia, are said to do, seldom or never seen abroad, ut major sit hominum erga se observantia, which the *Persian kings so precisely observed of old. A poor man takes more delight in an ordinary meal's meat, which he hath but seldom, than they do with all their exotic dainties and continual viands; *Quippe voluptatem commendat varior usus,* 'tis the rarity and necessity that makes a thing acceptable and pleasant. Darius, put to flight by Alexander, drank puddled water to quench his thirst, and it was pleasanter, he swore, than any wine or mead. All excess, as *Epictetus* argues, will cause a dislike; sweet will be sour, which made the* tepetare Epicurus sometimes voluntarily fast. But they being always accustomed to the same *dishes* (which are nastily dressed by slovenly cooks, that after their obscenities never wash their bawdy hands), be they fish, flesh, compounded, made dishes, or whatsoever else, are therefore cloyed; nectar's self grows loathsome to them, they are weary of all their fine palaces, they are to them but as so many prisons. A poor man drinks in a wooden dish, and eats his meat in wooden spoons, wooden platters, earthen vessels, and such homely stuff: the other in gold, silver, and precious stones; but with what success? *in aurum bidit venenum,* fear of poison in the one, security in the other. A poor man is able to write, to speak his mind, to do his own business himself; *locuples mitit parasitum,* saith *Philostratus,* a rich man employs a parasite, and as the major of the city, speaks by the town clerk, or by Mr. Recorder, when he cannot express himself. *Nomius the senator hath a purple coat as stiff with jewels as his mind is full of vices; rings on his fingers worth 20,000 sesterces, and as Porox the Persian king, an imion in his ear worth one hundred pounds weight of gold:* *m* Cleopatra hath whole boars and sheep served up to her table at once, drinks jewels dissolved, 40,000 sesterces in value; but to what end?

"*Nam tibi cum facaces urit sitia, aurca queris Focala?*"

Doth a man that is adry desire to drink in gold? Doth not a cloth suit become him as well, and keep him as warm, as all their silks, satins, damasks, taffeties and tissues? Is not homespun cloth as great a preservative against cold, as a coat of Tartar lambs'-wool, dyed in grain, or a gown of giants' beards? Nero, saith *Sueton., never put on one garment twice, and thou hast scarce one to put on! what's the difference? one's sick, the other sound; such is the whole tenor of their lives, and that which is the consummation and upshot of all, death itself makes the greatest difference. One like a hen feeds on the dunghill all his days, but is served up at last to his Lord's table; the other as a falcon is fed with partridge and pigeons, and carried on his master's fist, but when he dies is flung to the muckhill, and there lies. The rich man lives like Dives jovially here on earth, *tenualitus divitiis,* make the best of it; and *boasts himself in the multitude of his riches;* Psalm xlix. 6, 11. he thinks his house *called after his own name, shall continue for ever;"* but he

---

*Hor. et mihi curto Icric licet mule vel si libet usque Tarentum. *Brisonius.  
*sI medium excesseris, suscussiona sunt molostas.*  
*Et in cupidiss gale, coquas et pueri floris manibus ab exoneratione ventris omnia tractant, &c.* Cardan. 1. 8. cap. 46. de rerum varietate.  
*Epict.*  
*Zontas 3. annal.*  
*Cap. 36. nilmum vestem his induit.*
Remedies against Discontents. 391

perisheth like a beast," verse 20, "his way uttereth his folly," verse 13. makè parta nàde dilabentur; "like sheep they lie in the grave," verse 14. Puncto descendent ad infernum, "they spend their days in wealth, and go suddenly down to hell," Job xxii. 13. For all physicians and medicines enforcing nature, a sowning wife, families' complaints, friends' tears, dirges, masses, neniae, funerals, for all orations, counterfeit hired acclamations, eulogiums, epitaphs, hearses, heralds, black mourners, solemnities, obelisks, and Mausoleum tombs, if he have them, at least, he, like a hog, goes to hell with a guilty conscience (propter hos dilabent infernum os saum), and a poor man's curse: his memory stinks like the snuff of a candle when it is put out; scurrilous libels, and infamous obloquiies accompany him. When as poor Lazarus is Dei sacrarium, the temple of God, lives and dies in true devotion, hath no more attendants but his own innocence, the heaven a tomb, desires to be dissolved, buried in his mother's lap, and hath a company of 8 Angels ready to convey his soul into Abraham's bosom, he leaves an everlasting and a sweet memory behind him. Crassus and Sylla are indeed still recorded, but not so much for their wealth as for their victories: Crotus for his end, Solomon for his wisdom. In a word, "to get wealth is a great trouble, anxiety to keep, grief to lose it."

But consider all those other unknown, concealed happinesses, which a poor man hath (I call them unknown, because they be not acknowledged in the world's esteem, or so taken). O fortunatos némium bona si sua nörìnt: happy they are in the meantime if they would take notice of it, make use, or apply it to themselves. "A poor man wise is better than a foolish king," Eccles. ii. 13. "Poverty is the way to heaven, "the mistress of philosophy," the mother of religion, virtue, sobriety, sister of innocence, and an upright mind." How many such encomiums might I add out of the fathers, philosophers, orators? It troubles many that are poor, they account of it as a great plague, curse, a sign of God's hatred, ipsum scelus, damned villainy itself, a disgrace, shame and reproach; but to whom, or why? "If fortune hath envied me wealth, thieves have robbed me, my father hath not left me such revenues as others have, that I am a younger brother, basely born,—cei sine luce genus, surdumque parentum,—women, of mean parentage, a dirt-dauber's son, am I therefore to be blamed? an eagle, a bull, a lion is not rejected for his poverty, and why should a man?" Tis "fortune telum, non culpa, fortune's fault, not mine. (Good Sir, I am a servant (to use "Seneca's words), howsoever your poor friend; a servant, and yet your chamber-fellow, and if you consider better of it, your fellow-servant." I am thy drudge in the world's eyes, yet in God's sight peradventure thy better, my soul is more precious, and I dearer unto him. Etiam servì diis curve sunt, as Evangelus at large proves in Macrobius, the meanest servant is most precious in his sight. Thou art an epicure, I am a good Christian; thou art many parasangs before me in means, favour, wealth, honour, Claudius's Narcissus, Nero's Massa, Domitian's Parthenis, a favourite, a golden slave; thou coverest thy floors with marble, thy roofs with gold, thy walls with statues, fine pictures, curious hangings, &c.,

"Quid dignum stabitis mentibus imprecare? Oppes, honoris ambitus:
Et cùm falsa gravi mole paraverint,
Tum vera cognoessent bonis."

*Ad generum Ceresis sine ende et sanguine paece descendent reges, et sEceo morte tyranni.

* God shall deliver his soul from the power of the grave," Psal. xlix. 15. * Contempl. Idiot. Cap. 37. divitation acquisitio maggi laboris, possibit magis timoris, ansiose magis doloris. * Horatius de consol. phil. i. 3. * "How contemptible stolid minds! They covet riches and titles, and when they have obtained these commodities of false weight and measures, then, and not before, they understand what is truly valuable." * Absinio in Ps. lxxvi. omnis Philosophus maestus, ad causam vit. * Bone mentis servò paupertes. * Pseudo-gogus pictasis sobria, pia matre, cultu simplex, habitûs secoius, consilio beneusius. Apol. * Cardian. Opprobrium non est paupertas: quod latro orís, aut pater non reliquit, cur miri vit o daritur, si fortunæ divinitas invicit? non aquila, non, &c. * Tully. * Epist. 74. servus, summe homo; servus sum, imòe consuetudem, servus sam, ut humilitis amicus, imòe conservus si cogitaret. 
what of all this? *calcus opus*, &c., what's all this to true happiness? I live and breathe under that glorious heaven, that august capitol of nature, enjoy the brightness of stars, that clear light of sun and moon, those infinite creatures, plants, birds, beasts, fishes, herbs; all that sea and land afford, far surpassing all that art and opulentia can give. I am free, and which *Seneca* said of Rome, *culmen liberos textit, sub marmore et auro postea servitus habuit*, thou hast *Amaltheae cornu*, plenty, pleasure, the world at will, I am despicable and poor; but a word overshot, a blow in choler, a game at tables, a loss at sea, a sudden fire, the prince's dislike, a little sickness, &c., may make us equal in an instant; howsoever take thy time, triumph and insult awhile, *cenis equat*, as *Alphonus* said, death will equalise us all at last. I live sparingly, in the mean time, am clad homely, fare hardly; is this a reproach? am I the worse for it? am I contemptible for it? am I to be reprehended? A learned man in *Nevisanu* was taken down for sitting amongst gentlemen, but he replied, "my nobility is about the head, yours declines to the tail," and they were silent. Let them mock, scoff, and revile, "tis not thy scorn, but his that made thee so; "he that mocketh the poor, reproacheth him that made him," *Prov. xi*. 5. "and he that rejoiceth at affliction, shall not be unpunished." For the rest, the poorer thou art, the happier thou art, *divor est, at non melior, siath *Epicetus*, he is richer, not better than thou art, not so free from lust, envy, hatred, ambition.

"*Beatus ille qui procid negotitis Patera rura bobus exercet suis.*"

Happy he, in that he is freed from the tumults of the world, he seeks no honours, gapes after no preferrment, flatters not, envies not, temporiseth not, but lives privately, and well contented with his estate;

"*Nec spes corda avidas, nec curam pascat inamem Securus quib fata cadant.*"

He is not troubled with state matters, whether kingdoms thrive better by succession or election; whether monarchies should be mixed, temperate, or absolute; the house of Ottoman's and Austria is all one to him; he inquires not after colonies or new discoveries; whether Peter were at Rome, or Constantine's donation be of force; what comets or new stars signify, whether the earth stand or move, there be a new world in the moon, or infinite worlds, &c. He is not touched with fear of invasions, factions or emulations;

"*Felix ille animi, divinique simillima ipsa, quen non incredae reapleandae gloria face Subscript, igitur insita mala causa humi Sed tacitos nitit tre dies, et pamere cultu *Exigit innocens tranquilla silentia vitae.""

A quiet, blissful state he hath, if he could acknowledge it. But here is the misery, that he will not take notice of it; he repines at rich men's wealth, brave hangings, dainty fare, as *Simonides* objecteth to Hiero, he hath all the pleasures of the world, *in lectis eburneis dormit, vinum phialis bibit, optimus ugentius debitterat*, "he knows not the affliction of Joseph, stretching himself on ivory beds, and singing to the sound of the viol." And it troubleth him that he hath not the like; there is a difference (he grumbles) between Laplolly and Pheasants, to tumble i' th' straw and lie in a down bed, betwixt wine and water, a cottage and a palace.

"He hates nature (as *Pliny* characteriseth him) that she hath made him lower than a god, and is angry

---

*a* Epist. 66 et 90.  
*b* Panormitan. rebus gentis Alph.  
*c* Lib. 4. num. 218. quidam deprehensus quod soleret loco nobilium, mea nobilitas, sit, et cecises expul, vestra declinat ad clandestam.  
*d* Tauto beator e quoque collection.  
*e* Non amoribus inservit, non appettit honores, et qualiterque reliqua vestra sat sit, hominem me esse meminit, invidet principem, neinimum despiciat, neminem miratur, sermonibus malignis non attendat aut ait utur. Phinas.  
*f* Politianus in rustic.  
*g* Gyges, regno Lydico infinitus, seclitatum misit.  
*h* Apollinem, quin mortuus sit idoneus esset. Agamum Aecidum juxtaxitrem Apollo præstitut, qui terminus agri sui hinculmum excersat, rare suo contentus. Val. lib. 1. c. 7.  
*i* Hor. hae est Visa solutum insera ambitione, gravique.  
*j* Amos vi.  
*k* Præst. lib. 7. Ordit naturam quod infra des et; irascitur diis quod quis illi antecedat.
with the gods that any man goes before him;" and although he hath received much, yet (as Seneca follows it) "he thinks it an injury that he hath no more, and is so far from giving thanks for his tribuneship, that he complains he is not praetor, neither doth that please him, except he may be consul." Why is he not a prince, why not a monarch, why not an emperor? Why should one man have so much more than his fellows, one have all, another nothing? Why should one man be a slave or drudge to another? One surfeit, another starve, one live at ease, another labour, without any hope of better fortune? Thus they grumble, mutter, and repine; not considering that inconstancy of human affairs, judicially conferring one condition with another, or well weighing their own present estate. What they are now, thou mayest shortly be; and what thou art they shall likely be. Expect a little, compare future and times past with the present, see the event, and comfort thyself with it. It is as well to be discerned in commonwealths, cities, families, as in private men's estates. Italy was once lord of the world, Rome the queen of cities, vaunted herself of two "myriads of inhabitants; now that all-commanding country is possessed by petty princes, "Rome a small village in respect. Greece of old the seat of civility, mother of sciences and humanity; now forlorn, the nurse of barbarism, a den of thieves. Germany then, saith Tacitus, was inept and horrid, now full of magnificent cities: Athens, Corinth, Carthage, how flourishing cities, now buried in their own ruins! Corioli, ferumus, aprorum et bestiarum lastra, like so many wildernesses, a receptacle of wild beasts. Venice, a poor fisher-town; Paris, London, small cottages in Caesar's time, now most noble emporiums. Valois, Plantagenet, and Scaliger how fortunate families, how likely to continue! now quite extinguished and rootout. He stands aloft to-day, full of favour, wealth, honour, and prosperity, in the top of fortune's wheel: to-morrow in prison, worse than nothing, his son's a beggar. Thou art a poor servile drudge, Fexx populi, a very slave, thy son may come to be a prince, with Maximinus, Agathocles, &c., a senator, a general of an army; thou standest bare to him now, workest for him, drudgest for him and his, takest an alms of him: stay but a little, and his next heir peradventure shall consume all with riot, be degraded, thou exalted, and he shall beg of thee. Thou shalt be his most honourable patron, he thy devout servant, his posterity shall run, ride, and do as much for thine, as it was with Frisgobald and Cromwell, it may be for thee. Citizens devour country gentlemen, and settle in their seats; after two or three descents, they consume all in riot, it returns to the city again.

A lawyer buys out his poor client, after a while his client's posterity buy out him and his; so things go round, ebb and flow.

"Nunc ager Umbreni sub nomine, nuper Ofelli
Dictus erat, nulli proprius, sed eedit in usum
Nunc mihi, nunc alii;" —

"The farm, once mine, now bears Umbrenus' name;
The use alone, not property, we claim;
Then be not with your present lot deprest,
And meet the future with undaunted breast;"

as he said then, ager cujus, quot habes Dominos? So say I of land, houses, moveables and money, mine to-day, his anown, whose to-morrow? In fine (as Machiavel observes), "virtue and prosperity beget rest; rest idleness; idleness riot; riot destruction; from which we come again to good laws: good laws

Mem. 3.] Remedies against Discontents.

"have we liv'd at a more fragile rate
Since this new stranger seiz'd on our estate?
Nature will no perpetual heir assign,
Or make the farm his property or mine.
He turn'd us out; but follies all his own,
Or law-suits and their knavery yet unknown,
Or, all his follies and his law-suits part,
Some long-lived heir shall turn him out at last."

"-—-Nunc incedo venit; —- Num prorsus talibus herem natura, neque illum,
Nec me, nec quenquam stultut; nos expulit ille;
Ilia aut nequitiae, aut variis inscitia juris,"
Cure of Melancholy.

engender virtuous actions; virtue, glory, and prosperity: and 'tis no dis honour then (as Guicciardine adds) for a flourishing man, city, or state to come to ruin, "nor infelicity to be subject to the law of nature." Ergo terrena calenda, attenda coelestia, therefore (I say) scorn this transitory state, look up to heaven, think not what others are, but what thou art: 'Qua quae locatur es in re: and what thou shalt be, what thou mayest be. Do (I say) as Christ himself did, when he lived here on earth, imitate him as much as in thee lies. How many great Caesars, mighty monarchs, tetrarchs, dynasties, princes lived in his days, in what plenty, what delicacy, how bravely attended, what a deal of gold and silver, what treasure, how many sumptuous palaces had they, what provinces and cities, ample territories, fields, rivers, fountains, parks, forests, lawns, woods, cells, &c.? Yet Christ had none of all this, he would have none of this, he voluntarily rejected all this, he could not be ignorant, he could not err in his choice, he contemned all this, he chose that which was safer, better, and more certain, and less to be repented, a mean estate, even poverty itself; and why dost thou then doubt to follow him, to imitate him, and his apostles, to imitate all good men: so do thou tread in his divine steps, and thou shalt not err eternally, as too many worldlings do, that run on in their own dissolve courses, to their confusion and ruin, thou shalt not do amiss. Whatsoever thy fortune be, be contented with it, trust in him, rely on him, refer thyself wholly to him. For know this, in conclusion, Non est voluntas nec currentia, sed miserentis Dei, 'tis not as men, but as God will. "The Lord maketh poor and maketh rich, bringeth low, and exalteth (1 Sam. ii. ver. 7, 8), he lifteth the poor from the dust, and raiseth the beggar from the dunghill, to set them amongst princes, and make them inherit the seat of glory; 'tis all as he pleaseth, how, and when, and whom; he that appoints the end (though to us unknown) appoints the means likewise subordinate to the end.

Yea, but their present estate crucifies and torments most mortal men, they have no such forecast, to see what may be, what shall likely be, but what is, though not wherefore, or from whom; hoc angit, their present misfortunes grind their souls, and an envious eye which they cast upon other men's prosperities, Victimque pecus grandius uber habet, what rich, how rich, how fortunate, how happy is he? But in the meantime he cloth not consider the other miseries, his infirmities of body and mind, that accompany his estate, but still reflects upon his own false conceived woes and wants, whereas if the matter were duly examined "he is in no distress at all, he hath no cause to complain."

"He is not poor, he is not in need. "*Nature is content with bread and water; and he that can rest satisfied with that, may contend with Jupiter himself for happiness." In that golden age,* omnes debit umbra tubae salubres, potum quoque, lubricus annuis, the tree gave wholesome shade to sleep under, and the clear rivers drink. The Israelites drank water in the wilderness; Samson, David, Saul, Abraham's servant when he went for Isaac's wife, the Samaritan woman, and how many besides might I reckon up, Egypt, Palestine, whole countries in the Indies, that drank pure water all their lives. *The Persian kings themselves drank no other drink than the water of Chaospis, that runs by Susa, which was carried in bottles after them, whithersoever they went. Jacob desired no more of God, but bread to eat, and clothes to put on in his journey: Gen. xxviii. 20. Bene est cui Deus obtulit Parca quod satiis est manu; bread is enough "to strengthen the heart." And if you study philosophy aright,

And if thou canst be content, thou hast abundance, nihil est, nihil desist, thou hast little, thou wantest nothing. "Tis all one to be hanged in a chain of gold, or in a rope; to be filled with dainties or coarser meat.

Socrates in a fair, seeing so many things bought and sold, such a multitude of people contented to that purpose, exclaimed forthwith, "O ye gods what a sight of things do not I want? 'Tis thy want alone that keeps thee in health of body and mind, and that thou persecutest and abhorrest as a feral plague is thy physician and 'chiefest friend, which makes thee a good man, a healthful, a sound, a virtuous, an honest and happy man." For when virtue came from heaven (as the poet feigns), rich men kicked her np, wicked men abhorred her, couriers scoffed at her, citizens hated her, and that she was thrust out of doors in every place, she came at last to her sister Poverty, where she had found good entertainment. Poverty and Virtue dwell together.

How happy art thou if thou couldst be content. "Godliness is a great gain, if a man can be content with that which he hath," 1 Tim. vi. 6. And all true happiness is in a mean estate. I have a little wealth, as he said, "sed quas animus magnas facit, a kingdom in conceit:

I have enough and desire no more.

'tis very well, and to my content.  "Pestem et fortunam concinnavit potius quam luxam probo, let my fortune and my garments be both alike fit for me. And which "Sebastian Foscarinus, sometime Duke of Venise, caused to be engraved on his tomb in St. Mark's Church, "Hear, O ye Venetians, and I will tell you which is the best thing in the world: to content it." I will engrave it in my heart, it shall be my whole study to content it. Let them take wealth, Stercora stercus amet, so that I may have security: bene qui latuit, bene vivit: though I live obscure, yet I live clean and honest; and when as the lofty oak is blown down, the silly reed may stand. Let them take glory, for that's their misery; let them take honour, so that I may have heart's ease.

4 Si recte philosophemini, quiocual optat moderationem supercedes, oneri potius quin nisi est. 4 Lib. 7. 16. Ceresibus munus et aequo poenam mortales quarrant habere, et quorum saties multa quam est, luxus americanum, sunt cetera, non epule. res sunt divae qui pane non indigent; nimium potens qui servire non cogitat. Ambizione non eti est, Deus. 6 Euripides, Medeia. O fii, medittere divitias hominis conveniunt, nimia vero moles perniciosa. 6 Hor. 10 Genet. non correct. deum. 8 Per mille fraudes docetque dolos ejiciunt, apud socios diemque divitias, in eoros minas et tabulas delictum. 1 Lucan. "O protecting quality of a poor man's life, frugal means, gifts scarce yet understood by the gods themselves," 6 Lib. misicell. ep. 46. 6 Sat. 6. lib. 2. 6 Hor. Sat. 4. 8 Apuleius. 8 Glycyns in Europea deliciae. Accipite, vivi Veneti, quod est optimum in rebus humanis, re humanum commum: "Vah, vivere ciam nunc lubeat, as Deines said, Adolph. Act. 4. 9 Quam multa non ego, quam multa non desidero, ut socrates in pompa, ille in modulis.
Duc me, O Jupiter, et tu fatum, &c. Lead me, O God, whither thou wilt, I am ready to follow; command, I will obey. I do not envy at their wealth, titles, offices;

"Stet quicunque volet potens
Anno calamite lubrico,
Me gudicis sataret quibus,"

let me live quiet and at ease. "Erimus fortasse (as he comforted himself) quando illi non erunt, when they are dead and gone, and all their pomp vanished, our memory may flourish:

\[ \text{Stemmata non peritura Muse.} \]

Let him be my lord, patron, baron, earl, and possess so many goodly castles, 'tis well for me' that I have a poor house, and a little wood, and a well by it, &c.

"His me consoler victarum suavis, ae st [sent.] | "With which I feel myself more truly blest
Quaestor avus pater atque meus, patramque fuis-

I live, I thank God, as merrily as he, and triumph as much in this my mean estate, as if my father and uncle had been lord treasurer, or my lord mayor. He feeds of many dishes, I of one: "qui Christum curat, non multum curat quam de preciosis obis stercus confricat," what care I of what stuff my excrements be made? "He that lives according to nature cannot be poor, and he that exceeds can never have enough." totus non sufficit orbis, the whole world cannot give him content. "A small thing that the righteous hath, is better than the riches of the ungodly," Psal. xxxvii. 16; "and better is a poor morsel with quietness, than abundance with strife," Prov. xvi. 1.

Be content then, enjoy thyself, and as "Chrysostom adviseth, 'be not angry for what thou hast not, but give God heartly thanks for what thou hast received.'"

Ne pete grandia,
Lacteae prandia
litre repleta.

But what wantest thou, to expostulate the matter? or what hast thou not better than a rich man? "4 health, competent wealth, children, security, sleep, friends, liberty, diet, apparel, and what not," or at least mayest have (the means being so obvious, easy, and well known), for as he inculcated to himself,

"Vitam quae facient beatorum,
Jucundissime Mortalis, hae sunt;
Res non parta laborc, sed relict.a
Lis muniquam," &c.

I say again thou hast, or at least mayest have it, if thou wilt thyself, and that which I am sure he wants, a merry heart. "Passing by a village in the territory of Milan," saith 'St. Austin, "I saw a poor beggar that had got belike his bellyful of meat, jesting and merry; I sighed, and said to some of my friends that were then with me, What a deal of trouble, madness, pain, and grief do we sustain and exaggerate unto ourselves, to get that secure happiness which this poor beggar hath prevented us of, and which we peradventure shall never have? For that which he hath now attained with the begging of some small pieces of silver, a temporal happiness, and present heart's case, I cannot com-

---

*Pietenus, 77. cap quo sum destinatus, et sequor alaciter.
* Pietsanm. ep. 92.
* Marullus.
* The immortal Musae conter imperishable pride of origin.
* Hoy erit in vetis, medine agri non nis purus.
* Hortus ubi et testo vicientis jugis aqua fons, et paulum sylva, &c.
* Hor. Sat. 6. lib. 2. Ser.
* Hieronymus.
* Seneca, consil. ad Athenam c. 11. qui contract ac intra naturalis limites, paupehtatem non sentit; qui excedit, sum lae olimus paupertas sequitur.
* Hom. 12. Pro fot que accepta gratias age, nulli indignare pro his que non acceptis.
* If your table afford frugal fare with peace, seek not, in stirs, to load it lavishly.
* Quid non habet melius pauper quam dures vitam, valudinem, eburn, somnium, libertatem, &c. Card.
* Martial. 1. 10. epig. 47. read it out thyself in the author.
* Concell. lib. 6. Transierunt pro vicem quendam Mediolaneum. animadverti pauperem quendam mendium, jam credo satutum, jocantem atque rideuntam, et ingeniui et locutus sum amnis qui mecum erant, &c.
pass with all my careful windings, and running in and out. * And surely the beggar was very merry, but I was heavy; he was secure, but I timorous. And if any man should ask me now, whether I had rather be merry, or still so solicitous and sad, I should say, merry. If he should ask me again, whether I had rather be as I am, or as this beggar was, I should sure choose to be as I am, tortured still with cares and fears; but out of peevishness, and not out of truth." That which St. Austin said of himself here in this place, I may truly say to thee, thou discontented wretch, thou covetous niggar, thou churl, thou ambitious and swelling toad, 'tis not want but peevishness which is the cause of thy woes; settle thine affection, thou hast enough.

---

Tis at hand, at home already, which thou so earnestly seekest. But

---

O that I had but that one nook of ground, that field there, that pasture, O si venam argenti fors quis mihi monstret—O that I could but find a pot of money now, to purchase, &c., to build me a new house, to marry my daughter, place my son! &c. "O if I might but live a while longer to see all things settled, some two or three years, I would pay my debts," make all my reckonings even! but they are come and past, and thou hast more business than before. "O madness, to think to settle that in thine old age when thou hast more, which in thy youth thou couldst not compose having but a little."

Pyrrhus would first conquer Africa, and then Asia, et tum suavitatem aere, and then live merrily and take his case: but when Cynes the orator told him he might do that already, id jam posse fieri, rested satisfied, condemning his own folly. Si parva licet componere magnis, thou mayest do the like, and therefore be composed in thy fortune. Thou hast enough: he that is wet in a bath, can be no more wet if he be flung into Tiber, or into the ocean itself: and if thou hastad all the world, or a solid mass of gold as big as the world, thou canst not have more than enough; enjoy thyself at length, and that which thou hast; the mind is all; he content, thou art not poor, but rich, and so much the richer, as Censorinus well writ to Cereillus, quarto pascuaro opus, non quo plura possides, in wishing less, not having more. I say then, Non adijce opes, sed minus cupiditatis (tis Epicurus' advice), add no more wealth, but diminish thy desires; and as Chrysostom well seconds him, Si vis diut, contente divitis; that's true plenty, not to have, but not to want riches, non habere, sed non indigere, vera abundancia: 'tis more glory to content, than to possess; et nihil egere, est deorum, "and to want nothing is divine." How many deaf, dumb, halt, lame, blind, miserable persons could I reckon up that are poor, and withal distressed, in imprisonment, banishment, galley slaves, condemned to the mines, quarries, to gyves, in dungeons, perpetual thralldom, than all which thou art richer, thou art more happy, to whom thou art able to give

---

* Et certe ille iatustatur, ego axinas; secernas ille, ego trepidus. Et si perceparit me quispiam an extulisse malam, an metuero, responderem, extulisse: et si rursus interrogaret ego taliss essum, an quals sume sum, me ipsis curis confectum eligerem; sed perseveratas non vertae. a Hor. b Hor. ep. lib. I. c O si nunc meritor, inquit, quanta et qualia mild imperfecta manerent; sed si mensibus deserent vel etsupervivere, omnia redigam ab libellum, ab omni debito creditoque me expliceo; pretenderam tempor mensae decem, et octo, et cum illis sumi, et adnec restand quae pluram quam prius; quid igitur speras, O insanum, finem quem rebus tuis non inveneras in jurente, in senecta imposturum! O deminutum, quam ob eum et nescis tuo juculate sis infelix, quid putas faturem quum plura superent? Car. "Lib. 6. cap. 48. de var. 1 Plutarch. 2 Lib. de natall. cap. 1. 3 Apud Sibeuem ser. 17. 4 Hom. 12. in 2.
an alms, a lord, in respect, a petty prince! *be contented then I say, repine and mutter no more, "for thou art not poor indeed but in opinion."

Yea, but this is very good counsel, and rightly applied to such as have it, and will not use it, that have a competency, that are able to work and get their living by the sweat of their brows, by their trade, that have something yet; he that hath birds, may catch birds; but what shall we do that are slaves by nature, impotent, and unable to help ourselves, mere beggars, that languish and pine away, that have no means at all, no hope of means, no trust of delivery, or of better success? as those old Britons complained to their lords and masters the Romans, oppressed by the Picts, mare ad barbaros, barbari ad mare, the barbarians drove them to the sea, the sea drove them back to the barbarians: our present misery compels us to cry out and howl, to make our moan to rich men: they turn us back with a scornful answer to our misfortune again, and will take no pity of us; they commonly overlook their poor friends in adversity; if they chance to meet them, they voluntarily forget and will take no notice of them; they will not, they cannot help us. Instead of comfort they threaten us, miscal, scoff at us, to aggravate our misery, give us bad language, or if they do give good words, what's that to relieve us? According to that of Thales, Facile est alios monere; who cannot give good counsel? 'tis cheap, it costs them nothing. It is an easy matter when one's belly is full to declaim against fasting, Qui satiatur pleno laudat jujuria ventre; "Doth the wild ass bray when he hath grass, or loweth the ox when he hath fodder?" Job vi. 5. *Neque enim populo, Romano quidquam potest esse latius, no man living so jocund, so merry as the people of Rome when they had plenty; but when they came to want, to be hunger-starved, "neither shame, nor laws, nor arms, nor magistrates, could keep them in obedience." Seneca pleadeth hard for poverty, and so did those lazy philosophers: but in the meantime he was rich, they had wherewithal to maintain themselves; but doth any poor man extol it? There "are those (saith *Bernard), that approve of a mean estate, but on that condition they never want themselves: and some again are meek so long as they may say or do what they list; but if occasion be offered, how far are they from all patience?" I would to God (as he said), "No man should commend poverty, but he that is poor," or he that so much admires it, would relieve, help, or ease others.

a Nunc si nos audis, atque e divinis Apollo, 
Die mihi, qui nummos non habet, unde petat; | Now if thou hear'st us, and art a good man, 
Tell him that wants, to get means, if you can. 

But no man hears us, we are most miserably dejected, the scum of the world. *Vix habet in nobis jam nova plagae locum. We can get no relief, no comfort, no succour, Et nihil inveni quod mihi forret opem. We have tried all means, yet find no remedy: no man living can express the anguish and bitterness of our souls, but we that endure it; we are distracted, forsaken, in torture of body and mind, in another hell: and what shall we do? When *Crassus the Roman consul warred against the Parthians, after an unlucky battle fought, he fled away in the night, and left four thousand men, sore, sick, and wounded in his tents, to the fury of the enemy, which, when the poor men perceived, clamoribus et tumultibus omnia complerent, they made lamentable moan, and roared downright, as loud as Homer's Mars when he was hurt, which the noise of 10,000 men could not drown, and all for fear of present death. But our estate is far more tragical and miserable, much more to be deplored, and far greater cause have we to lament; the devil and the world persecutes us all,
good fortune hath forsaken us, we are left to the rage of beggary, cold, hunger, thirst, nastiness, sickness, irksomeness, to continue all torment, labour and pain, to derision, and contempt, bitter enemies all, and far worse than any death; death alone we desire, death we seek, yet cannot have it, and what shall we do? *Quod malé fers, assucesserit; ferae bene*—acquaint thyself to it, and it will be tolerable at last. Yea, but I may not, I cannot, *In me consumpsit vires fortuna nocendo*, I am in the extremity of human adversity; and as a shadow leaves the body when the sun is gone, I am now left and lost, and quite forsaken of the world. *Qui jacet in terra, non habet unde cadat:* comfort thyself with this yet, thou art at the worst, and before it be long it will either overcome thee or thou it. If it be violent, it cannot endure, *aut sulla, aut solvet:* let the devil himself and all the plagues of Egypt come upon thee at once, *Ne te calis malis, sed contra audientior do*, be of good courage; misery is virtue's whetstone.

> Dulce virtutis.

as Cato told his soldiers marching in the deserts of Lybia, "Thirst, heat, sands, serpents, were pleasant to a valiant man;" honourable enterprises are accompanied with dangers and damages, as experience evinced; they will make the rest of thy life relish the better. But put case they continue; thou art not so poor as thou wast born, and as some hold, much better to be pitied than envied. But he it so thou hast lost all, poor thou art, dejected, in pain of body, grief of mind, thine enemies insult over thee, thou art as bad as Job; yet tell me (saith Chrysostom), "was Job or the devil the greater conqueror?" surely Job; the devil had his goods, he sat on the muck-hill and kept his good name; he lost his children, health, friends, but he kept his innocence; he lost his money, but he kept his confidence in God, which was better than any treasure." Do thou then as Job did, triumph as Job did, "and be not molested as every fool is. *Sed quâ ratione potero?* How shall this be done? Chrysostom answers, *facile si coelestis cogitationes*, with great facility, if thou shalt but meditate on heaven. *"Hannah wept sore, and troubled in mind, could not eat;* "but why weepest thou," said Elkanah her husband, "and why eatest thou not? why is thine heart troubled? am not I better to thee than ten sons?" and she was quiet. Thou art here vexed in this world; but say to thyself, "Why art thou troubled, O my soul?" Is not God better to thee than all temporalities, and momentary pleasures of the world? be then pacified. And though thou best now peradventure in extreme want, "it may be 'tis for thy further good, to try thy patience, as it did Job's, and exercise thee in this life: trust in God, and rely upon him, and thou shalt be crowned in the end. What's this life to eternity? The world hath forsaken thee, thy friends and fortunes all are gone: yet know this, that the very hairs of thine head are numbered, that God is a spectator of all thy miseries, he sees thy wrongs, woes, and wants. "*Tis his good-will and pleasure it should be so, and he knows better what is for thy good than thou thyself. His providence is over all, at all times; he hath set a guard of angels over us, and keeps us as the apple of his eye," Ps. xvii. 8. Some he doth exalt, prefer, bless with worldly riches, honours, offices, and preferments, as so many glistening stars he makes to shine above the rest: some he doth miraculously protect from thieves, incursions, sword, fire, and all violent mischances, and as the "poet feigns of
that Lycian Paularus, Lycaon's son, when he shot at Menelaus the Grecian with a strong arm, and deadly arrow, Pallas, as a good mother keeps flies from her child's face asleep, turned by the shaft, and made it hit on the buckle of his girdle; so some he solicitously defends, others he exposeth to danger, poverty, sickness; want, misery, he chastiseth and corrects, as to him seems best, in his deep, unsearchable and secret judgment, and all for our good.

"The tyrant took the city (saith Chrysostom), God did not hinder it; led them away captives, so God would have it; he bound them, God yielded to it: flung them into the furnace, God permitted it: heat the oven hotter, it was granted: and when the tyrant had done his worst, God showed his power, and the children's patience; he freed them:" so can he thee, and can help in an instant, when it seems to him good. "Rejoice not against me, O my enemy; for though I fall, I shall rise: when I sit in darkness, the Lord shall lighten me." Remember all those martyrs what they have endured, the utmost that human rage and fury could invent, with what "patience they have borne, with what willingness embraced it. "Though he kill me," saith Job, "I will trust in him."

"Perhaps, you mean, My cattle, money, moveables, or land, Then take them all.—But, slave, if I command, A cruel jailor shall thy freedom seize."

"Take away his money, his treasure is in heaven: banish him his country, he is an inhabitant of that heavenly Jerusalem: cast him into bands, his conscience is free; kill his body, it shall rise again; he fights with a shadow that contends with an upright man:" he will not be moved.

"Take away his money, his treasure is in heaven: banish him his country, he is an inhabitant of that heavenly Jerusalem: cast him into bands, his conscience is free; kill his body, it shall rise again; he fights with a shadow that contends with an upright man:" he will not be moved.

"Lame was Epictetus, and poor Irus, Yet to them both God was propitious."

"Servus Epictetus, mutiati corpus, Irus, Pauper: at huc inter charus est superius."
Yea, but this expectation is it which tortures me in the mean time; "futura expectans presentibus angor, whilst the grass grows the horse starves: 
*despair not, but hope well,*

"Spera, Batte, tibi melius lax Crastina ducet: 
Dum spiras spera"—

Cheer up, I say, be not dismayed; *Spes alit agricolas;* "he that sows in tears, shall reap in joy," Psal. cxxvi. 5.

"Si fortunae me tormentae, 
Esperant me contente,"

Hope refresheth, as much as misery depresseth; hard beginnings have many times prosperous events, and that may happen at last which never was yet. "A desire accomplished delights the soul," Prov. xiii. 19.

"Grata supranenata non sperat horae;" | "Which makes me enjoy my joys long wish'd at last, 
Welcome that hour shall come when hope is past:"

a lowering morning may turn to a fair afternoon, a Nube solet pulsâ candidus iris dies. "The hope that is deferred, is the fainting of the heart, but when the desire cometh, it is a tree of life," Prov. xiii. 12, ; *saevissimum est viti compos fieri.* Many men are both wretched and miserable at first, but afterwards most happy; and oftentimes it so falls out, as Machiavel relates of Cosmo de' Medici, that fortunate and renowned citizen of Europe, that all his youth was full of perplexity, danger, and misery, till forty years were past, and then upon a sudden the sun of his honour broke out as through a cloud. Hanniades was fetched out of prison, and Henry the Third of Portugal out of a poor monastery, to be crowned kings.

*Malta cadunt inter calicem supranesque labras;" | "Many things happen between the cup and the lip." beyond all hope and expectation many things fall out, and who knows what may happen? *Nondum omnium dierum Soles occidunt,* as Philippus said, all the suns are not yet set, a day may come to make amends for all.

"Though my father and mother forsake me, yet the Lord will gather me up," Psal. xxvii. 10. "Wait patiently on the Lord, and hope in him," Psal. xxxvii. 7. "Be strong, hope and trust in the Lord, and he will comfort thee, and give thee thine heart's desire," Psal. xxvii. 14.

"Sperate et vamnet rebus servate secundis." | "Hope, and reserve yourself for prosperity."

Fret not thyself because thou art poor, contemplated, or not so well for the present as thou wouldst be, not respected as thou oughtest to be, by birth, place, worth; or that which is a double corrosive, thou hast been happy, honourable, and rich, art now distressed and poor, a scorn of men, a burden to the world, irksome to thyself and others, thou hast lost all: *Misera est fuisse felicem,* and as Boethius calls it, *Infelicissimum genus infortunii,* this made Timon half mad with melancholy, to think of his former fortunes and present misfortunes: this alone makes many miserable wretches discontent. I confess it is a great misery to have been happy, the quintessence of infelicity, to have been honourable and rich, but yet easily to be endured; *security succeeds, and to a judicious man a far better estate. The loss of thy goods and money is no loss; *thou hast lost them, they would otherwise have lost thee." If thy money be gone, "thou art so much the lighter," and as Saint Hierome persuades Rusticus the monk, to forsake all and follow Christ; "Gold and silver are too heavy metals for him to carry that seeks heaven."

"Et Vel nos in maris proximum, 
Gemmam et lapides, aurum et Fautillo, | Summi materiam maill 
Mittamus, secernum al bene paenulis."
Cure of Melancholy.

[Part. 2. Sec. 3.]

Zeno the philosopher lost all his goods by shipwreck, 3 he might like of it, fortune had done him a good turn: *Opes à me dnumim afferre non potest: she can take away my means, but not my mind. * He set her at defiance ever after, for she could not rob him that had nought to lose; for he was able to contend more than they could possess or desire. Alexander sent a hundred talents of gold to Phocion of Athens for a present, because he heard he was a good man: but Phocion returned his talents back again with a *permittet mi in posterum vivum bonum esse to be a good man still; let me be as I am: *Non nisi aurum posco, nec mi precium*—That Theban Crates flung of his own accord his money into the sea, *obit, unumni, ego vos mergam ne mergar a vobis, I had rather drown you, than you should drown me. Can stoics and epicures thus content wealth, and shall not we that are Christians? It was *masculu vox et precoclara, a generous speech of Cotta in *Sallust, "Many miseries have happened unto me at home, and in the wars abroad, of which by the help of God some I have endured, some I have repelled, and by mine own valour overcome: courage was never wanting to my designs, nor industry to my intents: prosperity nor adversity could never alter my disposition." "A wise man's mind," as Seneca holds, "is like the state of the world above the moon, ever serene." Come then what can come, befall what may befall, *infractum invictumque animum opponas: Rebus angustius animosis atque fortissim appare.* (Hor. Od. 11. lib. 2.)

Hope and patience are two sovereign remedies for all, the surest repossals, the softest cushions to lean on in adversity:

* "Ita vita est hominum, quasi cum ludus tesseris, Si illud quod est maxime opus jacta non cadit, Illud quod cedit fortis, id arct ut corrigas;"

If it cannot be helped, or amended, *make the best of it; necessitati qui se accommodat, scipit, he is wise that suits himself to the time. As at a game at tables, so do by all such inevitable accidents.

* "Ea Durum sed levius fit patientia, Quicquid corrigere est nefas." |

"What can't be cured must be endured."

If thou canst not fling what thou wouldst, play thy cast as well as thou canst. Everything, saith *Epictetus, hath two handles, the one to be held by, the other not: 'tis in our choice to take and leave whether we will (all which Simplicius's commentator hath illustrated by many examples), and 'tis in our power, as they say, to make or mar ourselves. Conform thyself then to thy present fortune, and cut thy coat according to thy cloth, *'Ut quimon (quod aiant) quando quod volumus non licet, "Be contented with thy loss, state, and calling, whatsoever it is, and rest as well satisfied with thy present condition in this life."

* "Fato quod es; quod sunt ali, sine quemlibet esse; quod non es, nonis; quod potes esse, velis." |

"Be as thou art; and as they are, so let Others be still; what is and may be covet."

And as he that is 'invited to a feast eats what is set before him, and looks for no other, enjoy that thou hast, and ask no more of God than what he thinks fit to bestow upon thee. *Non cursiv contingit adire Corinthum, we may not be all the gentleman, all Catos, or Lelii, as Tully telleth us, all honourable, illustrious, and serene, all rich; but because mortal men want many things, "a therefore, saith Theodoret, "hath God diversely distributed his gifts, wealth to one, skill to another, that rich men might encourage and set poor men at work, poor men

3 *Jubet me posthae fortuna expeditius Philo, "I do not desire riches, nor that a price should be set upon me."
4 *In frag. Quiritis, multa mibi perieulam domi, militiae multa adversa fure, quorum alia toleravi, alia decrnat anxio repulit et virtute mear; namquam animus neglecto, nee decretis labor; multa res nec prope nec adversae ingenium mutavit.
might learn several trades to the common good. As a piece of arras is composed of several parcels, some wrought of silk, some of gold, silver, crewel of diverse colours, all to serve for the exonerated of the whole: music is made of diverse discords and keys, a total sum of many small numbers, so is a commonwealth of several unequal trades and callings. *If all should be Creesian and Daria, all idle, all in fortunes equal, who should till the land? As *Mene

nus Agrippa well satisfied the tumultuous rout of Rome, in his elegant apologue of the belly and the rest of the members. Who should build houses, make our several stuffs for raiments? We should all be starved for company, as Poverty declared at large in Aristophanes' Plutus, and sue at last to be as we were at first. And therefore God hath appointed this inequality of states, orders, and degrees, a subordination, as in all other things. The earth yields nourishment to vegetables, sensible creatures feed on vegetables, both are substitutes to reasonable souls, and men are subject amongst themselves, and all to higher powers, so God would have it. All things then being rightly examined and duly considered as they ought, there is no such cause of so general discontent, *tis not in the matter itself, but in our mind, as we moderate our passions and esteem of things. *Nihil abiuus necessarium ut sis miser (saith *Cardan), quam ut te miserum credas, let thy fortune be what it will, *tis thy mind alone that makes thee poor or rich, miserable or happy. *Vidi ego (saith divine Seneca), in villâ hileri et ammnâ mostost, et mediâ soliditudine occupatos; non locus sed animus facit ad tranquilitatem. I have seen men miserably dejected in a pleasant village, and some again well occupied and at good ease in a solitary desert. *Tis the mind not the place that causeth tranquillity, and that gives true content. I will yet add a word or two for a corollary. Many rich men, I dare boldly say it, that lie on down beds, with delicacies pampered every day, in their well-furnished houses, live at less heart's ease, with more anguish, more bodily pain, and through their intemperance, more bitter hours, than many a prisoner or galley-slave; *Mecenas in plumâ aegu vigilit ac Regulus in dolio: those poor starved Hollanders, whom *Bartison their captain left in Nova Zembia, anno 1506, or those *eight miserable Englishmen that were lately left behind to winter in a stove in Greenland, in 77 deg. of lat. 1630, so pitifully forsaken, and forced to shift for themselves in a vast, dark, and desert place, to strive and struggle with hunger, cold, desperation, and death itself. *Tis a patient and quiet mind (I say it again and again), gives true peace and content. So for all other things, they are, as old *Chremes told us, as we use them.

*Parentes, patriam, amicos, genos, cognatos, divitias, Hece periinde sunt ac illius animus qui ea possidet; Qui uti sit, et bona; qui utitur non recte, mala.*

*Parentes, friends, fortunes, country, birth, alliance, &c., ebb and flow with our conceit; please or displease, as we accept and construe them, or apply them to ourselves. *Faber quisque fortunae sue, and in some sort I may truly say, prosperity and adversity are in our own hands. *Nemo luditur nisi à seipso, and which Seneca confirms out of his judgment and experience. *Every man's mind is stronger than fortune, and leads him to what side he will; a cause to himself each one is of his good or bad life." But will we, or will we, make the worst of it, and suppose a man in the greatest extremity, *tis a fortune which some indefinitely prefer before prosperity; of two extremes it is the best. *Luxuriant animi rebus plerunque secundis, men in prosperity forget

---

Cure of Melancholy.

[Part. 2. Soc. 3.]

404

God and themselves, they are besotted with their wealth, as birds with honey: *miserable if fortune forsake them, but more miserable if she tarry and overwhelm them: for when they come to be in great place, rich, they that were most temperate, sober, and discreet in their private fortunes, as Nero, Otho, Vitellius, Heliogabalus (optimi imperatores nisi imperassent) degenerate on a sudden into brute beasts, so prodigious in lust, such tyrannical oppressors, &c., they cannot moderate themselves, they become monsters, odious, harpies, what not? Cum triumphos, opes, honores adepti sunt, ad voluptatem et odium deinceps se convertunt: 'twas *Cato's note, "they cannot contain." For that cause belike.

*Eutrapelus, when he would hurt a knave, Gave him gay clothes and wealth to make him brave; Because now rich he would quite change his mind, Keep wores, fly out, set himself behind."  

On the other side, in adversity many mutter and repine, despair, &c., both bad, I confess,  

—"at calcus olim
Si pede major est, subvert et: si minu, uestet.
"As a shoe too big or too little, one pincheth, the other sets the foot awry," sed è multis minimum. If adversity hath killed his thousand, prosperity hath killed his ten thousand: therefore adversity is to be preferred; ^hac femeo
indiget, illa solatio: illa fallit, hac instruit: the one deceives, the other instructs; the one miserably happy, the other happily miserable; and therefore many philosophers have voluntarily sought adversity, and so much commend it in their precepts. Demetrius, in Seneca, esteemed it a great infelicity, that in his lifetime he had no misfortune, miserrit cui nihil unquam accidisset adversi. Adversity then is not so heavily to be taken, and we ought not in such cases so much to macerate ourselves: there is no such odds in poverty and riches. To conclude in *Hierom's words, "I will ask our magnificos that build with marble, and bestow a whole manor on a thread, what difference between them and Paul the Eremites, that bare old man? They drink in jewels, he in his hand: he is poor and goes to heaven, they are rich and go to hell."

MEMB. IV.

Against Servitude, Loss of Liberty, Imprisonment, Banishment.

SERVITUDE, loss of liberty, imprisonment, are no such miseries as they are held to be: we are slaves and servants the best of us all: as we do reverence our masters, so do our masters their superiors: gentlemen serve nobles, and nobles subordinate to kings, omne sub regno graviore regnum, princes themselves are God's servants, reges in ipsos imperium est Jovis. They are subject to their own laws, and as the kings of China endure more than slavish imprisonment, to maintain their state and greatness, they never come abroad. Alexander was a slave to fear, Caesar of pride, Vespasian to his money (nihil enim refer verum sis servus an hominum*), Heliogabalus to his gut, and so of the rest. Lovers are slaves to their mistresses, rich men to their gold, courtiers generally to lust and ambition, and all slaves to our affections, as Evangelus well discourse in *Macrobius, and *Seneca the philosopher, assiduum servitutem extremam et ineluctabilem he calls it, a continual slavery, to be so captivated by vices; and who is free? Why then dost thou repine?

*Seneca de beat. vit. cap. 14. miseri si deserantur ab ea, misericordes si ebruantur.  *
Plutarch. vit. elius. 1 Hor. epist. lib. 1. ep. 18.  2 Hor. 1 Boeth. 2.  3 Epist. lib. 3. vit. Paul. Errmt. Libret eos nunc interrogere qui dominus marmortus vestivit, qui uno illo villarum ponunt prceca, hunc semel modo quid unqum default? vos gemma bibitis, ile concavis maribus naturse satisfaciet; ile pauper paradisum capit, vos avares gehena suscitpet.

*"It matters little whether we are enslaved by men or things."  

*Satur. l. 11. Alius liniidini servit, alias ambitio, omnes opes, omnes timori.  *Nat. lib. 3.
Satis est potens, Hierom saith, qui servire non cogitatur. Thou carriest no burdens, thou art no prisoner, no drudge, and thousands want that liberty, those pleasures which thou hast. Thou art not sick, and what wouldst thou have? But nihilum in vetitum, we must all eat of the forbidden fruit. Were we enjoined to go to such and such places, we would not willingly go: but being barred of our liberty, this alone torments our wandering soul that we may not go. A citizen of ours, saith 3Cardan, was sixty years of age, and had never been forth of the walls of the city of Milan; the prince hearing of it, commanded him not to stir out; being now forbidden that which all his life he had neglected, he earnestly desired, and being denied, dolore confectus mortem obiit, he died for grief.

What I have said of servitude, I again say of imprisonment, we are all prisoners. 'What is our life but a prison? We are all imprisoned in an island. The world itself to some men is a prison, our narrow seas as so many ditches, and when they have compassed the globe of the earth, they would fain go see what is done in the moon. In Museov, and many other northern parts, all over Scandia, they are imprisoned half the year in stoves, they dare not peep out for cold. At 5Aden in Arabia, they are penned in all day long with that other extreme of heat, and keep their markets in the night. What is a ship but a prison? And so many cities are but as so many hives of bees, ant-hills; but that which thou abhorrest, many seek: women keep in all winter, and most part of summer, to preserve their beauties; some for love of study: Demosthenes shaved his beard because he would cut off all occasions from going abroad: how many monks and friars, anchorites, abandon the world! Monachus in urbe, piscis in arido. Art in prison? Make right use of it, and mortify thyself; "Where may a man contemplate better than in solitude," or study more than in quietness? Many worthy men have been imprisoned all their lives, and it hath been occasion of great honour and glory to them, much public good by their excellent meditation. 5Ptolemaeus king of Egypt, cum viribus attenuatis infirma valetudine laboraret, miro discendi studio affectus, &c., now being taken with a grievous infirmity of body that he could not stir abroad, became Strato’s scholar, fell hard to his book, and gave himself wholly to contemplation, and upon that occasion (as mine author adds), pulcherrimum regiæ opulentiae monumentum, &c., to his great honour built that renowned library at Alexandria, wherein were 400,000 volumes. Severinus Boethius never writ so elegantly as in prison, Paul so devoutly, for most of his epistles were dictated in his bands: “Joseph,” saith 7Austin, “got more credit in prison, than when he distributed corn, and was lord of Pharaoh’s house.” It brings many a lewd riotous fellow home, many wandering rogues it settles, that would otherwise have been like raving tigers, ruined themselves and others.

Bani-hment is no grievance at all, Omne solum fortis patria, &c., et patria est ubicunque bene est, that’s a man’s country where he is well at ease. Many travel for pleasure to that city, saith Seneca, to which thou art banished, and what a part of the citizens are strangers born in other places! 5Incolentibus patria, ‘tis their country that are born in it, and they would think themselves banished to go to the place which thou leavest, and from which thou art so loth to depart. ‘Tis no disparagement to be a stranger, or so irksome to be an exile, "The rain is a stranger to the earth, rivers to the sea, Jupiter in Egypt, the sun to us all. The soul is an alien to the body, a nightingale to the air, a swallow in a house, and Ganymede in heaven, an elephant at
Rome, a Ἐλεονία in India;" and such things commonly please us best, which are most strange and come the farthest off. Those old Hebrews esteemed the whole world Gentiles; the Greeks held all barbarians but themselves; our modern Italians account of us as dull Transalpines by way of reproach, they scorn thee and thy country which thou so much admirest. "Tis a childish humour to hone after home, to be discontent at that which others seek; to prefer, as base islanders and Norweigians do, their own ragged island before Italy or Greece, the gardens of the world. There is a base nation in the north, saith *Pliny, called Chauci, that live amongst rocks and sands by the seaside, feed on fish, drink water: and yet these base people account themselves slaves in respect, when they come to Rome. Ita est profecto (as he concludes), nullis fortuna parcit in pænam, so it is, fortune favours some to live at home, to their further punishment: 'tis want of judgment. All places are distant from heaven alike, the sun shines happily as warm in one city as in another, and to a wise man there is no difference of climates; friends are everywhere to him that behaves himself well, and a prophet is not esteemed in his own country. Alexander, Caesar, Trajan, Adrian, were as so many land-leapers, now in the east, now in the west, little at home, and Polus Venetus, Lod. Vertomannus, Pinzonus, Cadamustus, Columbus, Americans Vespuicus, Vascon Gama, Drake, Candish, Oliver Anort, Schoutien, got all their honour by voluntary expeditions. But you say such men's travel is voluntary; we are compelled, and as malefactors must depart: yet know this of *Plato to be true, utorti Deo summa cura peregrinus est, God hath an especial care of strangers, "and when he wants friends and allies, he shall deserve better and find more favour with God and men." Besides the pleasure of peregrination, variety of objects will make amends; and so many nobles, Tully, Aristides, Themistocles, Theseus, Codrus, &c., as have been banished, will give sufficient credit unto it. Read Pet. Alcionius his two books of this subject.

MEMB. V.

Against Sorrow for Death of Friends or otherwise, vain Fear, &c.

DEATH and departure of friends are things generally grievous, *Omnium que in humana vitâ contingunt, luctus atque mors sunt acerbissima, the most austere and bitter accidents that can happen to a man in this life, in externum veledicere, to part for ever, to forsake the world and all our friends, 'tis ultimum terribilium, the last and the greatest terror, most irksome and troublesome unto us, *Homo quoties moritur, toties omittit suos. And though we hope for a better life, eternal happiness, after these painful and miserable days, yet we cannot compose ourselves willingly to die; the remembrance of it is most grievous unto us, especially to such who are fortunate and rich: they start at the name of death, as a horse at a rotten post. Say what you can of that other world, *Montezuma that Indian prince, Bonum est esse hic, they had rather be here. Nay, many generous spirits, and grave staid men otherwise, are so tender in this, that at the loss of a dear friend they will cry out, roar, and tear their hair, lamenting some mouths after, howling "O Home," as those Irish women and *Greeks at their graves, commit many indecent actions, and almost go beside themselves. My dear father, my sweet husband, mine only brother's dead, to whom shall I make my moan? O me miserum! Quis dubit in lachrymos fontem, &c. What shall I do?

* Sod totum hoc studium luctu fraterra mihi mors Abstulit, sui misero frater adempio mihi!"

"My brother's death my study hath undone, Wife's my alas, my brother he is gone!"

Mem. 5. ] Remedies against Discontents.

407

Mezentius would not live after his son:

"b Nunc vivo, nec adeo homines luxetique reliquus,
Sed linquam——"

And Pompey's wife cried out at the news of her husband's death,

"a Turpe morte post te sole non posse dolores,
Violenta lectus etias nec tamen toleranda;"

as Tacitus of Agrippina, not able to moderate her passions. So when she heard her son was slain, she abruptly broke off her work, changed countenance and colour, tore her hair, and fell a roaring downright.

Another would needs run up on the sword's point after Euryalus' departure,

"c Flete me, signa est pietas, in me omnina teda
Conjicit, ó Rutil;——"

O let me die, some good man or other make an end of me. How did Achilles take on for Patroclus' departure! A black cloud of sorrows overshadowed him, saith Homer. Jacob rent his clothes, put sackcloth about his loins, sorrowed for his son a long season, and could not be comforted, but would needs go down into the grave unto his son, Gen. xxxvii. 37. Many years after, the remembrance of such friends, of such accidents, is most grievous unto us, to see or hear of it, though it concern not ourselves but others. Sculler saith of himself, that he never read Socrates' death, in Plato's Phaedon, but he wept:

a Austin shed tears when he read the destruction of Troy. But howsoever this passion of sorrow be violent, bitter, and seizeth familiarly on wise, valiant, discreet men, yet it may surely be withstood, it may be diverted. For what is there in this life, that it should be so dear unto us? or that we should so much deplore the departure of a friend? The greatest pleasures are common society, to enjoy one another's presence, feasting, hawkings, hunting, brooks, woods, hills, music, dancing, &c., all this is but vanity and loss of time, as I have sufficiently declared.

"a — dum bibimus, dum serra, uingentes,
pucias
Posseimus, obrepit non intellecta seneatus."

"b Whilst we drink, prank ourselves, with wench's daily
Old age upon's at unawares doth sally."

As alchemists spend that small modicum they have to get gold, and never find it, we lose and neglect eternity for a little momentary pleasure which we cannot enjoy, nor shall ever attain to in this life. We abhor death, pain, and grief, all, yet we will do nothing of that which should vindicate us from, but rather voluntarily thrust ourselves upon it. "a The lascivious prefers his whore before his life, or good estate; an angry man his revenge; a parasite his gut; ambitious, honours; covetous, wealth; a thief his booty; a soldier his spoil; we abhor diseases, and yet we pull them upon us." We are never better or freer from cares than when we sleep, and yet, which we so much avoid and lament, death is but a perpetual sleep; and why should it, as Epicurus argues, so much affright us? When we are, death is not: but when death is, then we are not: our life is tedious and troublesome unto him that lives best; "b tis a misery to be born, a pain to live, a trouble to die:" death makes an end of our miseries, and yet we cannot consider of it; a little before Socrates drank his portion of cicuta, he bid the citizens of Athens cheerfully farewell, and con-

b Virgil. "I live now, nor as yet relinquish society and life, but I shall resign them."

1 Lucan. "Come come by grief, and unable to endure it, she exclaimed, 'Not to be able to die through sorrow for they were base.' " k 3. Annal.

b The colour suddenly fled her cheek, the distast forsook her hand, the red revoked, and with dishevelled locks she broke away, wailing as a woman." ii Virg. Æn. 10.

a Transfix me, O Rutilus, if you have any pley; pierce me with your thousand arrows.

b Confess. l. 1. a Amator soortum vix peponent, iracundus vindictam, parasitus gulan, ambitious honors, avurus open, miles rapinam, far prudent; meheos odoribus et ascessimus. Card. b Sentec; quum nos sumus, mori non adec; cum vero mori aedest, tum nos non sumus. g Bernard. c. 3. med. Nasl miserum vivere poen, angustia mori. f Plato. Apol. Socratas. Sed jam bona est hine ablire, &c.
cluded his speech with this short sentence; "My time is now come to be gone. I to my death, you to live on; but which of these is best, God alone knows." For there is no pleasure here but sorrow is annexed to it, repentance follows it. "If I feed liberally, I am likely sick or surfeit; if I live sparingly, my hunger and thirst is not allayed; I am well neither full nor fasting; if I live honest, I burn in lust; if I take my pleasure, I tire and starve myself, and do injury to my body and soul." "Of so small a quantity of mirth, how much sorrow! after so little pleasure, how great misery!" "Tis both ways troublesome to me, to rise and go to bed, to eat and provide my meat; cares and contentions attend me all day long, fears and suspicions all my life. I am discontented, and why should I desire so much to live? But a happy death will make an end of all our woes and miseries; omnibus una mei certa medela mala; why shouldst not thou then say with old Simeon, since thou art so well affected, "Lord, now let thy servant depart in peace:" or with Paul, "I desire to be dissolved, and to be with Christ!" Beatamore quese ad beatam vitam aditum aperit, 'tis a blessed hour that leads us to a "blessed life, and blessed are they that die in the Lord. But life is sweet, and death is not so terrible in itself as the concomitants of it, a loathsome disease, pain, horror, &c., and many times the manner of it, to be hanged, to be broken on the wheel, to be burned alive. "Servatibus the heretic, that suffered in Geneva, when he was brought to the stake, and saw the executioner come with fire in his hand, homo viso ignem horrendum exclamavit, ut universum populum perterrefecerit, roared so loud, that he terrified the people. An old stoic would have scorned this. It troubles some to be unburied, or so:

"Thy gentle parents shall not bury thee, Amongst thine ancestors entomb'd to be, But formal thy carcass shall devour, Or drowned corpse hungry fish maws shall sour."

As Socrates told Crito, it concerns me not what is done with me when I am dead; Facilis jactura sepulchri: I care not so long as I feel it not; let them set mine head on the pike of Teneriffe, and my quarters in the four parts of the world, — pascam licet in cruce coreos, let wolves or bears devour me; — Caelo tegitur qui non habet vnmanum, the canopy of heaven covers him that hath no tomb. So likewise for our friends, why should their departure so much trouble us? They are better, as we hope, and for what then dost thou lament, as those do whom Paul taxed in his time, 1 Thes. iv. 13, "that have no hope?" 'Tis fit there should be some solemnity.

"Sec sepellire decet defunctum, pereor fortis, Constantes, ununque diem ietui indulgentes." 2

Job's friends said not a word to him the first seven days, but let sorrow and discontent take their course, themselves sitting sad and silent by him. When Jupiter himself wept for Sarpedon, what else did the poet insinuate, but that some sorrow is good.

"Qua solus mens, nisi mentis loque, in funere nati Fiere vetat?" 3

who can blame a tender mother if she weep for her children? Beside, as Plutarch holds, 'tis not in our power not to lament, Indolentia non cuiris contingit, it takes away mercy and pity, not to be sad; 'tis a natural passion to weep for our friends, an irresistible passion to lament and grieve. "I know

1 Comedii satiatacem, gravitas me offendid; parcus est, non est expletum desiderium; venereas delicias sequor, hinc morbus, lasitudine, &c. 2 Bern. c. 3. med. De tanti libellus, quanta tristitia; post tantam voluptatem quam gravis miseria! 3 Est enim mori piorem felix transitus de labore ad refrigerium, de expectatione an premium, de agone ad bravium. 2 Vaticanus vita ejus. 2 Luc. 3 II. 9. Homer. 'It is proper that, having indulged in becoming grief for one whole day, you should commit the dead to the sepulchre." 4 Ovid. 5 Consol. ad Apolon. non est liberate nostra posuit non dolore, miscer cordium abolest, &c.
Mem. 5.]
Remedies against Discontents. 409

not how (saith Seneca) but sometimes 'tis good to be miserable in misery:
and for the most part all grief evacuates itself by tears,"

"yet after a day's mourning or two, comfort thyself for thy heaviness,"
Eccles. xxxviii. 17. *Von decet defunctum ignavo questu prosequi; 'twas Germanicus' advice of old, that we should not dwell too long upon our passions,
to be desperately sad, immoderate grievers, to let them tyrannise, there's indolentia ars, a medium to be kept: we do not (said *Austin) forbid men to grieve,
but to grieve overmuch. "I forbid not a man to be angry, but I ask for what cause he is so? Not to be sad, but why is he sad? Not to fear, but wherefore is he afraid?" I require a moderation as well as a just reason. 'The Romans and most civil commonwealths have set a time to such solemnities; they must not mourn after a set day, "or if in a family a child be born, a daughter or son married, some state or honour be conferred, a brother be redeemed from his bands, a friend from his enemies," or the like, they must lament no more. And 'tis fit it should be so; to what end is all their funeral pomp, complaints, and tears? When Socrates was dying, his friends Apollodorus and Órito, with some others, were weeping by him, which he perceiving, asked them what they meant: "'for that very cause he put all the women out of the room, upon which words of his they were abashed, and ceased from their tears." Lodovicus Cortesius, a rich lawyer of Padua (as *Bernardinus Sca
deminius relates), commanded by his last will, and a great mulct if otherwise to his heir, that no funeral should be kept for him, no man should lament: but as at a wedding, music and minstrels to be provided; and instead of black mourners, he took order, "that twelve virgins clad in green should carry him to the church." His will and testament was accordingly performed, and he buried in St. Sophia's church. *Tully was much grieved for his daughter Tulliola's death at first, until such time that he had confirmed his mind with some philosophical precepts, "then he began to triumph over fortune and grief, and for her reception into heaven to be much more joyed than before he was troubled for her loss." If a heathen man could so fortify himself from philosophy, what shall a Christian from divinity? Why dost thou so mace
rate thyself? 'Tis an inevitable chance, the first statute in Magna Charta, an everlasting Act of Parliament, all must 'tis die.

"Constat aeterni postumque legis est,
Ut constet geniturum nihil."

It cannot be revoked, we are all mortal, and these all commanding gods and princes "die like men:" —*involvit humile pariter et causal caput, aequatque summis iminina. "O weak condition of human estate," Sylvius exclaims: *Ladislaus, king of Bohemia, eighteen years of age, in the flower of his youth, so potent, rich, fortunate and happy, in the midst of all his friends, amongst so many physicians, now ready to be 'married, in thirty-six hours sickened and died. "We must so be go sooner or later all, and as Calloipeus in the comedy took his leave of his spectators and auditors, *Vos valete et plaudite, Calloipeus recensui, we must bid the world farewell (Exit Calloipeus), and having now played our parts, for ever be gone. Tombs and monuments have

*Ovid, 4. Trist. 2Tacitus, lib. 4. *Lib. 9. cap. 9. de civitate Dei. Non quorum cum
frasatur sed eur, non utrum sit triuus sed unde, non utrum timiret sed quid timiret.

"Festus verbo
minutatur. Lucatii dies indicabatur cum liber: nascentur, cum frater ubiit, amicos ab hospite captivus domum redate, puella desponetur. "Ob banc causam multarum ablegarum ne talaria facerent; nos hac audienciae
Inanpete puellae amices vvidulias pannis, &c. *Lib. de consel. 4Francippe philosophia confirmatur
adversus omnum fortuna vim, et te consecutat in colonumque recepta, tanta affectus letitia sum ac voluptate,
quantum animo capere possit, ac exsultare plane milii videor, victorique deum olote et fortuna trium-
*Nic. Hensei. Breslagr. fol. 47. 17Twenty then present. *To Magdalen, the daughter of Charles the
Seventh of France. Obsequiar noctisque diesque, &c.
the like fate, data sunt ipsis quoque data sepulchris, kingdoms, provinces, towns, and cities, have their periods, and are consumed. In those flourishing times of Troy, Mycene was the fairest city in Greece, Greciae cunctae imperilat, but it, alas, and that "Assyrian Nineveh are quite overthrown": the like fate hath that Egyptian and Boeotian Thebes, Delos commune Greciae conciliobu, the common council-house of Greece, and Babylon, the greatest city that ever the sun shone on, hath now nothing but walls and rubbish left. "Quid Pandioniae restat nisi nomen Athene?" Thus Pausanias complained in his times. And where is Troy itself now, Persopolis, Carthage, Cizecum, Sparta, Argos, and all those Grecian cities? Syracuse and Agrigentum, the fairest towns in Sicily, which had sometimes 700,000 inhabitants, are now decayed: the names of Hiero, Empedocles, &c., of those mighty numbers of people, only left. One Anacharsis is remembered amongst the Scythians; the world itself must have an end; and every part of it. Cae severa igitur urbes sunt mortales, as Peter Gillius concludes of Constantinople, hae sanc quamdiu erunt homines, futura mihi videtur immortalis; but 'tis not so: nor site, nor strength, nor sea, nor land, can vindicate a city, but it and all must vanish at last. And as to a traveller, great mountains seem plains afar off, at last are not discerned at all; cities, men, monuments decay,—nee solidis prodest sua machina terris, the names are only left, those at length forgotten, and are involved in perpetual night.

"Returning out of Asia, when I sailed from Aegina towards Megara, I began (saith Servius Sulpicius, in a consolatory epistle of his to Tully) to view the country round about. Aegina was behind me, Megara before, Piraeus on the right hand, Corinth on the left, what flourishing towns heretofore, now prostrate and overwhelmed before mine eyes, I began to think with myself, alas, why are we men so much disquieted with the departure of a friend, whose life is much shorter, "when so many goodly cities lie buried before us? Remember, O Servius, thou art a man; and with that I was much confirmed, and corrected myself." Correct then likewise, and comfort thyself in this, that we must necessarily die, and all die, that we shall rise again: as Tully held; Jucundiorque multo congressus noster futurus, quam insuavis et acerbis digressus, our second meeting shall be much more pleasant than our departure was grievous.

Ay, but he was my most dear and loving friend, my sole friend,

Thou mayest be ashamed, I say with Seneca, to confess it, "in such a tempest as this to have but one anchor." go seek another: and for his part thou dost him great injury to desire his longer life. "Wilt thou have him crazed and sickly still," like a tired traveller that comes weary to his inn, begin his journey afresh, "or to be freed from his miseries: thou hast more need rejoice that he is gone." Another complains of a most sweet wife, a young wife, Nonnum sustulerae flumen Proserpina crimen, such a wife as no mortal man ever had, so good a wife, but she is now dead and gone, lethamoque jacet conditain sarcofago. I reply to him in Seneca's words, if such a woman at least ever was to be had, "He did either so find or make her; if he found her, he may as happen find another; if he made her," as Critobulus in Xenophon did by his, he may as good cheap inform another, et bona tam sequitur, quam bona

Remedies against Discontents

prima fuit; "he need not despair, so long as the same master is to be had." But was she good? Had she been so tried peradventure as that Ephesian widow in Petronius, by some swaggering soldier, she might not have held out. Many a man would have been willingly rid of his: before thou was bound, now thou art free; "and 'tis but a folly to love thy feterers though they be of gold." Come into a third place, thou shall have an aged father sighing for a son, a pretty child;

"He now lies asleep, would make an impious Thracian weep."

Or some fine daughter that died young, Nondum experta novi gaudia prima tori. Or a forlorn son for his deceased father. But why? Prior exilis, prior intravi, he came first, and he must go first. "Tu frustra pius, heu, &c. What, wouldst thou have the laws of nature altered, and him to live always? Juliius Caesar, Augustus, Alcibiades, Galen, Aristotele, lost their fathers young. And why on the other side shouldst thou so heavily take the death of thy little son?"

he died before his time, perhaps, not yet come to the solstice of his age, yet was he not mortal? "Hear that divine 'Epictetus, "If thou covet thy wife, friends, children should live always, thou art a fool." He was a fine child indeed, dignus Apollineis lacrymis, a sweet, a loving, a fair, a witty child, of great hope, another Eteoneus, whom Pindaros the poet and Aristides the rhetorician so much lament; but who can tell whether he would have been an honest man? He might have proved a thief, a rogue, a spendthrift, a disobedient son, vexed and galled thee more than all the world beside; he might have wrangled with thee and disagreed, or with his brothers, as Eteocles and Polyneices, and broke thy heart; he is now gone to eternity, as another Ganymede, in the "flower of his youth, "as if he had risen," saith "Plutarch, "from the midst of a feast," before he was drunk, "the longer he had lived, the worse he would have been," et quo vita longior (Ambrose thinks), culpis numerosior, more sinful, more to answer he would have had. If he was naught, thou mayest be glad he is gone; if good, be glad thou hadst such a son. Or art thou sure he was good? It may be he was an hypocrite, as many are, and howsoever he spake thee fair, peradventure he prayed, amongst the rest that Icaro Menippus heard at Jupi-
ter's whispering-place in Lucian, for his father's death, because he now kept him short, he was to inherit much goods, and many fair manors after his decease. Or put case he was very good, suppose the best, may not thy dead son expostulate with thee, as he did in the same. "Lucian, "why dost thou lament my death, or call me miserable that am much more happy than thyself? what misfortune is befallen me? Is it because I am not so hald, crooked, old, rotten, as thou art? What have I lost, some of your good cheer, gay clothes, music, singing, dancing, kissing, merry-meetings, \textit{thalami lubentias}, &c., is that it? Is it not much better not to hunger at all than to eat: not to thirst than to drink to satisfy thirst: not to be cold than to put on clothes to drive away cold? You had more need rejoice that I am freed from diseases, agues, cares, anxieties, livor, love, covetousness, hatred, envy, malice, that I fear no more thieves, tyrants, enemies, as you do."
dead?" Condone not others then overmuch, "wish not or fear thy death."

"Summum nec optes diem nec undas; 'tis to no purpose.

"Excessi à vite aramnia faellique lubunque  
Ne pejora morti dormine videam."  
"I left this irksome life with all mine heart,  
Lest worse than death should happen to my part."

Cardinal Brundusinus caused this epitaph in Rome to be inscribed on histomb,  
to show his willingness to die, and tax those that were so loth to depart.  
Weep and howl no more then, 'tis to small purpose; and as Tully adviseth us in the like case, Non quos amissimus, sed quantum lugere par sit cogitamus;  
think what we do, not whom we have lost. So David did, 2 Sam. xxii.,  
"While the child was yet alive, I fasted and wept; but being now dead, why should I fast? Can I bring him again? I shall go to him, but he cannot return to me." He that doth otherwise is an intemperate, a weak, a silly, and indiscreet man. Though Aristotle deny any part of intemperance to be conversant about sorrow, I am of "Seneca's mind," "he that is wise is temperate, and he that is temperate is constant, free from passion, and he that is such a one, is without sorrow," as all wise men should be. The Thracians wept still when a child was born, feasted and made nirth when any man was buried; and so should we rather be glad for such as die well, that they are so happily freed from the miseries of this life. When Eteoneus, that noble young Greek, was so generally lamented by his friends, Pindarthus the poet feigns some god saying, Silete, homines, non avem miser est, &c., be quiet good folks, this young man is not so miserable as you think; he is neither gone to Styx nor Acheron, sed gloriosis et senti expers heros, he lives for ever in the Elysian fields. He now enjoys that happiness which your great kings so earnestly seek, and wears that garment for which ye contend. If our present weakness is such, we cannot moderate our passions in this behalf, we must divert them by all means, by doing something else, thinking of another subject. The Italians most part sleep away care and grief, if it unseasonably seize upon them, Danes, Dutchmen, Polanders and Bohemians drink it down, our countrymen go to play: something or other, let it not transpose thee, or by "premeditation make such accidents familiar," as Ulysses that wept for his dog, but not for his wife, quod paratus esset animo obsfirmato, (Plut. de anim. transq.) "accustom thyself, and harden beforehand by seeing other men's calamities, and applying them to thy present estate;" Previsium est levius quod fuit ante malum. I will conclude with "Epictetus, "If thou lovest a pot, remember 'tis but a pot thou lovest, and thou wilt not be troubled when 'tis broken: if thou lovest a son or wife, remember they were mortal, and thou wilt not be so impatient." And for false fears and all other fortuitous inconveniences, mischances, calamities, to resist and prepare ourselves, not to be faint is best: Stultum est timere quod vitari non potest, 'tis a folly to fear that which cannot be avoided, or to be discouraged at all.

"Nam quisquis trepidus pavet vel optat,  
Abjiciat styphnum, locoque motus  
Nec sit qui valeat trahe cœtanum.

"For he that so faints or fears, and yields to his passion, flings away his own weapons, makes a cord to bind himself, and pulls a beam upon his own head."

MEMB. VI.

Against Envy, Livor, Emulation, Hatred, Ambition, Self-love, and all other Afections.

Against those other passions and affections, there is no better remedy than as mariners when they go to sea, provide all things necessary to resist a tem-

* Her  
Chytræus dellis Europa.  
Epist. 85.  
Sarcrus de mor. gen.  
Cap. 8. Si olim diligere, momento te olim diligere, non perturbabis ci contractis; si nilo aut aurorem, momento hominem at te diligis, &c.  
Senecæ.  
Boeth. lib. 1. pros. 4.  
Qui invidiam ferre non potest, ferre contemptum cogit.
Remedies against Discontents.

413

pest: to furnish ourselves with philosophical and Divine precepts, other men's examples, 'Periculum ex aliis facere, sibi quod ex usu sit.' To balance our hearts with love, charity, meekness, patience, and counterpoise those irregular motions of envy, livor, spleen, hatred, with their opposite virtues, as we bend a crooked staff another way, to oppose 'suffrance to labour, patience to reproach,' bounty to covetousness, fortitude to pusillanimity, meekness to anger, humility to pride, to examine ourselves for what cause we are so much disquieted, on what ground, what occasion is it just or feigned? And then either to pacify ourselves by reason, to divert by some other object, contrary passion, or premeditation. 'Meditari secum oportet quo pacto adversam aerumnam ferat, Pericla, damna, exilia peregré rediens semper coignet, aut filii peccatum, aut uxoris mortem, aut morbum filiae, communia esse hæc: fieri posse, ut ne quid animo sit novum. To make them familiar, even all kind of calamities, that when they happen they may be less troublesome unto us. In secundis meditare, quo pacto feras adversa: or out of mature judgment to avoid the effect, or disannul the cause, as they do that are troubled with toothache, pull them quite out.

"Ut vivat castor, sibi testes amputat ipsa;"  
"Tu quoque aliqua nocent, abjicio, tutus oris."

"The boater bites off its stones to save the rest: Do thou the like with that thou art oppressed."

Or as they that play at wasters, exercise themselves by a few cudgels how to avoid an enemy's blows: let us arm ourselves against all such violent incursions, which may invade our minds. A little experience and practice will inure us to it; 'vetula vulpes, as the proverb saith, laqueo hand capitur, an old fox is not so easily taken in a snare; an old soldier in the world methinks should not be disquieted, but ready to receive all fortunes, encounters, and with that resolute captain, come what may come, to make answer,

---

"O virgo nova mi facies ineptaque surgit,
Omnia percepi atque animo mecum ante pereg."  

The commonwealth of 5 Venice in their armoury have this inscription, "Happy is that city which, in time of peace, thinks of war," a fit motto for every man's private house; happy is the man that provides for a future assault. But many times we complain, repine, and mutter without a cause, we give way to passions we may resist, and will not. Socrates was bad by nature, envious, as he confessed to Zopirus the physiognomer, accusing him of it, froward and lascivious: but as he was Socrates, he did correct and amend himself. Thou art malicious, envious, covetous, impatient, no doubt, and lascivious, yet as thou art a Christian, correct and moderate thyself. 'Tis something, I confess, and able to move any man, to see himself contemned, obscure, neglected, disgraced, undervalued, "left behind," some cannot endure it, no, not constant Lipsius, a man discreet otherwise, yet too weak and passionate in this, as his words express, 'collegas olim, quos ego sine fremitu non intueor, nuper terrae filios, nunc Mecenates et Agrippas habeo,—summo jam monte potitos. But he was much to blame for it: to a wise staid man this is nothing, we cannot all be honoured and rich, all Caesars; if we will be content, our present state is good; and in some men's opinion to be preferred. Let them go on, get wealth, offices, titles, honours, preferments, and what they will themselves, by chance, fraud, imposture, simony, and indirect means, as too many do, by bribery, flattery, and parasitical insinuation, by impudence and time-serving, let them climb up to advancement in despite of virtue, let them "go before, cross me on every

3 Ter. Heautont. 4 Epictetus, c. 14. Si labor objectus fuerit tolerantiae, convulsion patientiae, &c., et ea consensuerit, vitium non obtemperable. 5 Ter. Phoc. 6 Alcist Enni. 7 Virg. Æn. 8 "My breast was not conscious of this first wound, for I have endured still greater." 9 Nat. Chrysus deliciis Europe, Felix civitas quae tempore pacis de bello cogitavit. 10 Occupet extremum scabiei; mihi turpe reliquum est. Hor. 11 Lipsius, epist. quest. l. 1. ep. 7.
side;" me non offendunt modo non in oculos incumbant, as he said, correcting his former error, they do not offend me so long as they run not into mine eyes. I am inglorious and poor, composita paupertate, but I live secure and quiet: they are dignified, have great means, pomp, and state, they are glorious; but what have they with it? "Envy, trouble, anxiety, as much labour to maintain their place with credit, as to get it at first." I am contented with my fortunes, spectator e longinquo, and love Neptunum procuc a terrâ spectare forentem: he is ambitious, and not satisfied with his: "but what "gets he by it? to have all his life laid open, his reproaches seen: not one of a thousand but he hath done more worthy of dispraise and animadversion than commendation; no better means to help this than to be private." Let them run, ride, strive as so many fishes for a crumb, scrape, climb, catch, snatch, cozen, colloque, temporise and fleire, take all amongst them, wealth, honour, and get what they can, it offends me not:

"Pro me mea tellus
Lare secreto tutoque tegat."

"I am well pleased with my fortunes," Vivo et regno simul ista reliquens.

I have learned "in what state soever I am, therewith to be contented," Philip. iv. 11. Come what can come, I am prepared. Nave ferar magna an parvi, ferar unus et idem. I am the same. I was once so mad to bundle abroad, and seek about for preferment, tire myself, and trouble all my friends, sed nihil labor tantus profectit; nam dum alios amicorum mors avocat, alios ignotus sum, his invisus, alii largè promittunt, intercedunt illi mecum solliciti, hi vanâ spe lactuant; dum alios ambo, hos capto, illis innotescat, atas perit, anni defluunt, amici fatigantur, ego deferar, et jam, mundi tessus, humanaque satyr infidelitatis, acquiesco. "And so I say still; although I may not deny, but that I have had some bountifull patrons and noble benefactors, ne sim interim ingratus, and I do thankfully acknowledge it, I have received some kindness, quod Deus illis beneficium reipendet, si non pro notis, fortasse pro meritis, more peradventure than I deserve, though not to my desire, more of them than I did expect, yet not of others to my desert; neither am I ambitious or covetous, for this while, or a Saffenus to myself; what I have said, without prejudice or alteration shall stand. And now as a mired horse that struggles at first with all his might and main to get out, but when he sees no remedy, that his beating will not serve, lies still, I have laboured in vain, rest satisfied, and if I may usurp that of Prudentius,

"Inveni portum; spee et fortunae vatele,
Nil nihil robiscum, ludite nunc alios."

"Mine haven's found, fortune and hope alien,
Mock others now, for I have done with you."

---

MEMB. VII.

Against Repulse, Abuses, Injuries, Contempts, Disgraces, Contumelies, Slanders, Scolds, &c.

Repulse.] I MAY not yet conclude, think to appease passions, or quiet the mind, till such time as I have likewise removed some other of their more eminent and ordinary causes, which produce so grievous tortures and discontent: to divert all, I cannot hope; to point alone at some few of the chiefest, is that which I aim at.

1 Lipsius, epist. lib. 1. epist. 7. = Gloria comitem habet inviolam, patrie premiter retinendo ae acquirendo.
2 Quod alius ambiciosi sibi parat quam ut probara ejus patent? nemo vivens qui non habet in vitâ plura vitae operatione quam haud digna; his mals non nuncius occurritur, quam si hunc lustrati. Et omnes fura per urbem garrula laudet.
3 Sen. libr. Eur. 1. Hor. "I live like a king without any of these acquisitions."
4 But all my labour was unprofitable; for while death took off some of my friends, to others I remain unknown, or little liked, and these deceive me with false promises. Whilst I am encompassing one party, captivating another, making myself known to a third, my age increases, years glide away, I am put off, and now tired of the world, and satirized with human worthlessness, I rest content."
5 The right honourable Lady Frances Countess Dowager of Exeter. The Lord Berkeley.
Repulse and disgrace are two main causes of discontent, but to an understanding man not so hardly to be taken. Caesar himself hath been denied, and when two stand equal in fortune, birth, and all other qualities alike, one of necessity must lose. Why shouldst thou take it so grievously? It hath a familiar thing for thee thyself to deny others. If every man might have what he would, we should all be defied, emperors, kings, princes; if whatsoever vain hope suggests, insatiable appetite affects, our preposterous judgment thinks fit were granted, we should have another chaos in an instant, a mere confusion. It is some satisfaction to him that is repelled, that dignities, honours, offices, are not always given by desert or worth, but for love, affinity, friendship, affection, great men's letters, or as commonly they are bought and sold. "Honours in court are bestowed not according to men's virtues and good conditions (as an old courtier observes), but as every man hath means, or more potent friends, so he is preferred." With us in France (for so their own countryman relates) "most part the matter is carried by favour and grace; he that can get a great man to be his mediator, runs away with all the preferment." Indignissimus plerunque prefertur, Vatinius Catoni, illaudatus laudatissimo;

---Servi dominantur; nelli Omnantar phalteris, dephaleratur equi.---

An illiterate fool sits in a man's seat, and the common people hold him learned, grave and wise. "One professeth (Cardan well notes) for a thousand crowns, but he deserves not ten, when as he that deserves a thousand cannot get ten." Salarium non dat multis salam. As good horses draw in carts as coaches. And oftentimes, which Machiavel seconds, Principes non sunt qui ob insignem virtutem principatu digni sunt, he that is most worthy wants employment; he that hath skill to be a pilot wants a ship, and he that could govern a commonwealth, a world itself, a king in conceit, wants means to exercise his worth, hath not a poor office to manage, and yet all this while he is a better man that is fit to reign, etsi careat regno, though he want a kingdom, ad that he hath one, and knows not how to rule it: a lion serves not always his keeper, but oftentimes the keeper the lion, and as Polydore Virgil hath it, multi reges ut pupilli ob insigniam non regunt sed reguntur. Hiero of Syracuse was a brave king, but wanted a kingdom; Perses of Macedon had nothing of a king, but the bare name and title, for he could not govern it: so great places are often ill bestowed, worthy persons unrespected. Many times too, the servants have more means than the masters whom they serve, which Epicetius counts an eye-sore and inconvenient. But who can help it? It is an ordinary thing in these days to see a base impudent ass, illiterate, unworthy, insufficient, to be preferred before his betters, because he can put himself forward, because he looks big, can bustle in the world, hath a fair outside, can temporise, colleague, insinuate, or hath good store of friends or money; whereas a more discreet, modest, and better-deserving man shall lie hid or have a repulse. "Twas so of old, and ever will be, and which Thiresias adviseth Ulysses in the poet,——"Aeicpe qua rationeque quesae dicesere," dc. is still in use; lie, flatter and disseme: if not, as he concludes,——" Ergo pauper eris," then go like a beggar as thou art. Erasmus, Melancthon, Lipsius, Budæus, Cardan,

---Pederatus in 200 Lacedemonorum numerum non electus sit, graturi se decem citatem habere 200 cives se meliores. 1 Rissus goes by favour. 2 Anes Syl. de misier. curial. Dantur honores in urbis non secundum honores et virtutes, sed ut quisque ditor est atque potenter, eo magis honoratur. 3 Selcin, lib. 2. de repab. Gallorum. Favere apud nos et gratia plerique res agitur; et qui commendatio slightem noti sunt interesscorem, adiunit fore habent ad omnes praefecturas. 4 Slaves govern: asses are decked with trappings; horses are deprived of them,---

---Imperius periti munus occupat, et sic apud vulgaris habetur. Hie pretiatur milie coronatis, cum nec decem mereatur; etius et diverso milie dignis, vix decem consequi potest. 5 Epist. dedic. disput. Zacuboeo Bendemontia, et Cosmo Inceili, 6 Qnon is qui regnat, et, regnandi sit imperiti. 7 Lib. 22. hist. 8 Minstiri locupletiora sunt in quislib ministratur. 9 Hilar. lib. 2. Sat. 5. "Learn how to grow rich."
lived and died poor. Gesner was a silly old man, baculo innixus, amongst all those buffing cardinals, swelling bishops that flourished in his time, and rode on foot-clothes. It is not honesty, learning, worth, wisdom, that prefers men, "The race is not to the swift, nor the battle to the strong," but as the wise man said, 6 Chance, and sometimes a ridiculous chance. 1 Casus plerumque ridiculius multos elevavit. 'Tis fortune's doings as they say, which made Brutus now dying exclaim, O misera virtus, ergo nihil quam verba eras, atqui ego te tangquam rem exercebam, sed tu serviebas fortune. 5 Believe it hereafter, O my friends! virtue serves fortune. Yet be not discouraged (O my well deserving spirits) with this which I have said, it may be otherwise, though seldom I confess, yet sometimes it is. But to your farther content, I'll tell you a tale. In Moronia pin, or Moronia felix, I know not whether, nor how long since, nor in what cathedral church, a fat prebend fell void. The carcass scarce cold, many suitors were up in an instant. The first had rich friends, a good purse, and he was resolved to outbid any man before he would lose it, every man supposed he should carry it. The second was my lord Bishop's chaplain (in whose gift it was), and he thought it his due to have it. The third was nobly born, and he meant to get it by his great parents, patrons, and allies. The fourth stood upon his worth, he had newly found out strange mysteries in chemistry, and other rare inventions, which he would detect to the public good. The fifth was a painful preacher, and he was commended by the whole parish where he dwelt, he had all their hands to his certificate. The sixth was the prebendary's son lately deceased, his father died in debt (for it, as they say), left a wife and many poor children. The seventh stood upon fair promises, which to him and his noble friends had been formerly made for the next place in his lordship's gift. The eighth pretended great losses, and what he had suffered for the church, what pains he had taken at home and abroad, and besides he brought noblemen's letters. The ninth had married a kinswoman, and he sent his wife to sue for him. The tenth was a foreign doctor, a late convert, and wanted means. The eleventh would exchange for another, he did not like the former's site, could not agree with his neighbours and fellows upon any terms, he would be gone. The twelfth and last was (a suitor in conceal) a right honest, civil, sober man, an excellent scholar, and such a one as lived private in the university, but he had neither means nor money to compass it; besides he hated all such courses, he could not speak for himself, neither had he any friends to solicit his cause, and therefore made no suit, could not expect, neither did he hope for, or look after it. The good bishop, amongst a jury of competitors thus perplexed, and not yet resolved what to do, or on whom to bestow it, at the last, of his own accord, mere motion and bountiful nature, gave it freely to the university student, altogether unknown to him but by fame; and to be brief, the academic scholar had the prebend sent him for a present. The news was no sooner published abroad, but all good students rejoiced, and were much cheered up with it, though some would not believe it; others, as men amazed, said it was a miracle; but one amongst the rest thanked God for it, and said Nunc juvat tandem studiosum esse, et Deo integro corde servire. You have heard my tale: but alas it is but a tale, a mere fiction, 'twas never so, never like to be, and so let it rest. Well, be it so then, they have wealth and honour, fortune and preferment, every man (there's no remedy) must scramble as he may, and shift as he can; yet Cardan comforted himself with this, "*the star Fomahnant would make him immortal," and that after his decease his books should

b Solomon, Eccles ix. 11. 1 Sat. Menlp. k "O wretched virtue! you are therefore nothing but words, and I have all this time been looking upon you as a reality, while you are yourself the slave of fortune." 1 Tale quid est apud Valens Andream Apolog. manlp. 5. apol. 30. 2 Stella Fomahnant immortaletatem dabit. 2 Lib. de lib. prprocess.
be found in ladies’ studies: *Dignum laude virum Musa vetat mori.* But why shouldest thou take thy neglect, thy canvas so to heart? It may be thou art not fit; but a *child that puts on his father’s shoes, hat, headpiece, breastplate, breeches, or holds his spear, but is neither able to wield the one, or wear the other; so wouldst thou do by such an office, place, or magistracy: thou art unfit: “And what is dignity to an unworthy man, but” (*as Salvinius holds), “a gold ring in a swine’s snout?” Thou art a brute. Like a bad actor (so *Plutarch compares such men in a tragedy), diadema fort, at vox non auditur: Thou wouldst play a king’s part, but actest a clown, speakest like an ass. *Magnus petis, Phaëton, et quae non viribus istis, &c., as James and John the sons of Zebedee, did ask they knew not what: nescis, temerarie, nescis; thou dost, as another Suffenus, overween thyself; thou art wise in thine own conceit, but in other more mature judgment altogether unfit to manage such a business. Or be it thou art more deserving than any of thy rank, God in his providence hath reserved thee for some other fortunes, sic superis visum. Thou art humble as thou art, it may be; hadst thou been preferred, thou wouldst have forgotten God and thyself, insulted over others, contemned thy friends, “been a block, a tyrant, or a demi-god, sequiturque superbia formam: “Therefore,” saith Chrysostom, “good men do not always find grace and favour, lest they should be puffed up with turgid titles, grow insolent and proud.”

Injuries, abuses, are very offensive, and so much the more in that they think *veterem ferendo invitant novam,* “by taking one they provoke another;” but it is an erroneous opinion, for if that were true, there would be no end of abusing each other; *tis litem general;* ‘tis much better with patience to bear, or quietly to put it up. If an ass kick me, saith Socrates, shall I strike him again? And when *his wife Xantippe struck and misused him,* to some friends that would have had him strike her again, he replied, that he would not make them sport, or that they should stand by and say, *Eia Socrates, eia Xantippe,* as we do when dogs fight, animate them the more by clapping of hands. Many men spend themselves, their goods, friends, fortunes, upon small quarrels, and sometimes at other men’s procurements, with much vexation of spirit and anguish of mind, all which with good advice, or mediation of friends, might have been happily composed, or if patience had taken place. Patience in such cases is a most sovereign remedy, to put up, conceal, or dismiss it, to “forget and forgive, “’not seven, but seventy-seven times, as often as he repents forgive him;” Luke xvii. 3. as our Saviour enjoins us, stricken, “to turn the other side:” as our *Apostle persuades us,* “to recompense no man evil for evil, but as much as is possible to have peace with all men: not to avenge ourselves, and we shall heap burning coals upon our adversary’s head.” “For if you put up wrong (as Chrysostom comments), you get the victory; he that loseth his money, loseth not the conquest in this our philosophy.” If he contend with thee, submit thyself unto him first, yield to him. *Durum et durum non facient murum,* as the diervb is, two refractory spirits will never agree, the only means to overcome is to relent, *obsequio vices.* Euclid in Plutarch, when his brother had angered him, swore he would be revenged; but he gently replied, “Let me not live if I do not make thee to love me again,” upon which meek answer he was pacified.

**Mem. 7.** Remedies against Discontents. 417

---

*Flectitur obsequio curvatus ab arbore ramus,*

Frangis si viros experire inas.*

* A branch if easily bended yields to thee,

Pullhard it breaks; the difference you see.*

---

* Hor. “The muse forbids the praiseworthy man to die.”
* Qui induit thoracem aut galeam, &c.
* Rom. xii. 17. * Si toleras injuriam, victor evadis; qui enim pecunias privatus est, non est privatus victoriâ in hac philosophia. *

**Dispeream nisi tu uitus fuero; dispeream nisi ut me dein ecepas ames effeceris.**

*Joach. Camerarius, Embl. 21. cent. 1.*
The noble family of the Colonni in Rome, when they were expelled the city by that furious Alexander the Sixth, gave the bending branch therefore as an impress, with this motto, Flecti potest, frangi non potest, to signify that he might break them by force, but so never make them stoop, for they fled in the midst of their hard usage to the kingdom of Naples, and were honourably entertained by Frederick the king, according to their callings. Gentleness in this case might have done much more, and let thine adversary be never so perverse, it may be by that means thou mayest win him; "favo re et benevolentiam etiam immannis animus mansuetit," soft words pacify wrath, and the fiercest spirits are so soonest overcome; "a generous lion will not hurt a beast that lies prostrate, nor an elephant an innocuous creature, but is infestus infestis, a terror and scourge alone to such as are stubborn, and make resistance. It was the symbol of Emanuel Philibert, Duke of Savoy, and he was not mistaken in it, for

"Quo quisque est major, magis est placabilis irae, Et faciles motus mens genus capere."

"A greater man is sooner pacified, A noble spirit quickly satisfied."
If there be any religion, any God, and that God be just, it shall be so; if thou believest the one, believe the other: Erit, erit, it shall be so. Nemesis comes after, serò sed serò, stay but a little and thou shalt see God's just judgment overcome him.

"X Raro antecedentem sedelestum
Descripit pede peius claudio."

"Yet with sure steps, though lame and slow,
Vengeance o'ertakes the trembling villain's speed."

Thou shalt perceive that verified of Samuel to Agag, 1 Sam. xv. 33. "Thy sword hath made many women childless, so shall thy mother be childless among other women." It shall be done to them as they have done to others. Conradinus, that brave Suvian prince, came with a well-prepared army into the kingdom of Naples, was taken prisoner by King Charles, and put to death in the flower of his youth; a little after (ulterior Conradini mortis, Pandolphus Collinitus, Hist. Neap. lib. 5. calls it), King Charles's own son, with two hundred nobles, was so taken prisoner, and beheaded in like sort. Not in this only, but in all other offences, quo quisque peccat in eo punitur, they shall be punished in the same kind, in the same part, like nature, eye with or in the eye, head with or in the head, persecution with persecution, lust with effects of lust; let them march on with ensigns displayed, let drums beat on, trumpets sound tarantantarra, let them sack cities, take the spoil of countries, murder infants, deflower virgins, destroy, burn, persecute, and tyrannise, they shall be fully rewarded at last in the same measure, they and theirs, and that to their desert.

"Ad generum Ceresis sine caede et sanguine pauci
Descendunt reges et sicca morte tyrann."  

"Few tyrants in their beds do die,
But stab'd or maim'd to hell they hie."

Oftentimes too a base contemptible fellow is the instrument of God's justice to punish, to torture, and vex them, as an ichneumon doth a crocodile. They shall be recompensed according to the works of their hands, as Haman was hanged on the gallows he provided for Mordecai; "They shall have sorrow of heart, and be destroyed from under the heaven," Thren. iii. 64, 65, 66. Only be thou patient: vincit qui patitur: and in the end thou shalt be crowned. Yea, but 'tis a hard matter to do this, flesh and blood may not abide it; 'tis grave, grave! no (Chrysostom replies), non est grave, ô homo! 'tis not so grievous, neither had God commanded it, if it had been so difficult. But how shall it be done? "Easily," as he follows it, "if thou shalt look to heaven, behold the beauty of it, and what God hath promised to such as put up injuries." But if thou resist and go about vim vi repellere, as the custom of the world is, to right thyself, or hast given just cause of offence, 'tis no injury then, but a condign punishment; thou hast deserved as much: A te principium, in te recidit crimen quod à te fuit; peccasti, qui esse, as Ambrose expostulates with Cain, lib. 3. de Abel et Cain.  Dionysius of Syracuse, in his exile, was made to stand without door, patienter ferendum, fortasse nos tale quid fecimus, quum in honore essesmus, he wisely put it up, and laid the fault where it was, on his own pride and scorn, which in his prosperity he had formerly showed others. 'Tis Tully's axiom, ferre ea molestissimé homines non debent, quae ipsorum culpá contracta sunt, self do, self have, as the saying is, they may thank themselves. For he that doth wrong must look to be wronged again; habet et musca splenem, et fornicace sua bilis inest. The least fly hath a spleen, and a little bee a sting. An ass overwhelmed a thistlewarps's nest, the little bird pecked his galled back in revenge; and the humble-bee in the fable flung down the eagle's eggs out of Jupiter's lap. Bracides, in Plutarch, put his hand into a mouse's nest and hurt her young ones, she bit him by the finger: 'I see now (saith he) there is no creature so contemptible, that will not be revenged. 'Tis

[9] Apud Christianos non qui patitur, sed qui fact
injuriam miser est. Leo ser.  [b] Neque preceptiss t Deo si gravi fulset; sed qua ratione patet? facili
colium suspexeri; et ejus pulchritudine, et quod polluitur Deus, &c.
[10] Cameraus, Emb. 75. cent. 2.  [d] Paps, inquit: nullum animal tam pulsilium
quod non cupiat ulcisci.
Cure of Melancholy. [Part. 2. Sec. 3.

lex talionis, and the nature of all things so to do: if thou wilt live quietly thyself, * do no wrong to others; if any be done thee, put it up, with patience endure it, for "this is thankworthy," saith our apostle, "if any man for conscience towards God endure grief, and suffer wrong undeserved; for what praise is it if when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye take it patiently? But if when you do well, ye suffer wrong and take it patiently, there is thanks with God; for hereunto verily we are called." *Qui mala non fert, ipse sibi testis est per impatientiam quod bonus non est, "he that cannot bear injuries, witnesseth against himself that he is no good man," as Gregory holds. **"Tis the nature of wicked men to do injuries, as it is the property of all honest men patiently to bear them." *Improbitas nullo flectitur obsquo. The wolf in the *emblem sucked the goat (so the shepherd would have it), but he kept nevertheless a wolf's nature; *a knave will be a knave. Injury is on the other side a good man's footboy, his *fides Achates, and as a lackey follows him wheresoever he goes. Besides, *misera est fortuna qua caret invinco, he is in a miserable estate that wants enemies; * it is a thing not to be avoided, and therefore with more patience to be endured. Catò Censorius, that upright Catò of whom Paterculus gives that honourable eulogium, bene fecit quod aliter facere non potuit, was "fifty times indicted and accused by his fellow citizens, and as *Ammianus well hath it, Quis crid innocens si clam velit palam accusisse sufficiat? if it be sufficient to accuse a man openly or in private, who shall be free? If there were no other respect than that of Christianity, religion and the like, to induce men to be long-suffering and patient, yet methinks the nature of injury itself is sufficient to keep them quiet, the tumults, uproars, miseries, discontents, anguish, loss, dangers that attend upon it might restrain the calamities of contention: for as it is with ordinary gamsters, the games go to the box, so falls it out to such as contend; the lawyers get all; and therefore if they would consider of it, *aliena pericula causos, other men's misfortunes in this kind, and common experience might detain them. *The more they contend, the more they are involved in a labyrinth of woes, and the catastrophe is to consume one another, like the elephant and dragon's conflict in Pliny; *the dragon got under the elephant's belly, and sucked his blood so long, till he fell down dead upon the dragon, and killed him with the fall, so both were ruined. *Tis a hydra's head, contention; the more they strive, the more they may: and as Praxiteles did by his glass, when he saw a scurry face in it, brake it in pieces: but for that one he saw many more as bad in a moment: for one injury done they provoke another cum favore, and twenty enemies for one. *Noth irritare crabrones, oppose not thyself to a multitude: but if thou hast received a wrong, wisely consider of it, and if thou canst possibly, compose thyself with patience to bear it. This is the safest course, and thou shalt find greatest ease to be quiet.

*I say the same of scoffs, slanders, contumelies, obloquies, defamation, detractions, pasquilling libels, and the like, which may tend any way to our disgrace; *tis but opinion; if we could neglect, contemn, or with patience digest them, they would reflect on them that offered them at first. A wise citizen, I know not whence, had a scold to his wife: when she brawled, he played on his drum, and by that means madded her more, because she saw that he would not be moved. Diogenes in a crowd when one called him back, and told him how the boys laughed him to scorn, Ego, *inquit, *non rideor, took no notice of it. Socrates was brought upon the stage by Aristophanes, and

* Quod tibi fieri non vis, alteri ne feceris. h 1 Pet. ii.
* Splendide malorum proprium est informa damna, et odium potissima est injuria. k Alciat. amb.
* Naturam expellas farce licet, usque recurreat. l By many indignities we come to dignities. Tibi subjicio quia sunt alias, fortunam, convivis, &c. et in his in te admixture non excedant. Epictetus.
* Putrarch, quinqueages Catoni dies dicta ab intimis. m Lib. 18.
* Hoc scio pro certo quod si cum stercore cerno, vincit suus vincer, suum ego masculor.
* Lib. 8. cap. 2.
* Obliquatus est, probrumque tibi intullit quisipiam, alve vera is dixit, alve falsa, maximum tibi coronam tueeris si manuscol alvium tuleris. Chrys. in 6. cap. ad Rom. ser. 10.
misused to his face, but he laughed as if it concerned him not: and as Ælian relates of him, whatsoever good or bad accident or fortune befell him, going in or coming out, Socrates still kept the same countenance; even so should a Christian do, as Hierom describes him, *per infaminam et bonam famam grassari ad immortalitatem*, march on through good and bad reports to immortality, 'not to be moved: for honesty is a sufficient reward, *probitas sibi premiendum*; and in our times the sole recompense to do well, is, to do well: but naughtiness will punish itself at last, *Improbis ipsa nequitas supplicium*. As the dverb is,

"Qui bené fecerunt, illi sua fæcta sequentur;"  
"Qui mala fecerunt, fæta sequentur se:"

"They that do well, shall have reward at last;"  
"But they that ill, shall suffer for that past."

Yea, but I am ashamed, disgraced, dishonoured, degraded, exploded: my notorious crimes and villainies are come to light (*deprendi miserum est*), my filthy lust, abominable oppression and avarice lies open, my good name's lost, my fortune's gone. I have been stigmatised, whipt at post, arraigned and condemned, I am a common obloqui, I have lost my ears, odious, execrable, abhorred of God and men. Be content, 'tis but a nine days' wonder, and as one sorrow drives out another, one passion another, one cloud another, one rumour is expelled by another; every day almost come new news unto our cars, as how the sun was eclipsed, meteors seen in the air, monsters born, prodigies, how the Turks were overthrown in Persia, an earthquake in Helvetia, Calabria, Japan, or China, an inundation in Holland, a great plague in Constantinople, a fire at Prague, a dearth in Germany, such a man is made a lord, a bishop, another hanged, deposed, pressed to death, for some murder, treason, rape, theft, oppression, all which we do hear at first with a kind of admiration, detestation, consternation, but by and by they are buried in silence: thy father's dead, thy brother robbed, wife runs mad, neighbour hath killed himself; 'tis heavy, ghastly, fearful news at first, in every man's mouth, table talk; but after a while who speaks or thinks of it? It will be so with thee and thine offence, it will be forgotten in an instant, be it theft, rape, sodomy, murder, incest, treason, &c., thou art not the first offender, nor shalt not be the last, 'tis no wonder, every hour such malefactors are called in question, nothing so common, *Quocunque in populo, quocunque sub aere*. Comfort thyself, thou art not the sole man. If he that were guiltless himself should fling the first stone at thee, and he alone should accuse thee that were faultless, how many executioners, how many accusers wouldst thou have? If every man's sins were written in his forehead, and secret faults known, how many thousands would parallel, if not exceed thine offence? It may be the judge that gave sentence, the jury that condemned thee, the spectators that gazed on thee, desired much more, and were far more guilty than thou thyself. But it is thine infelicity to be taken, to be made a public example of justice, to be a terror to the rest; yet should every man have his desert, thou wouldest peradventure be a saint in comparison; *vexat censuris columbas*, poor souls are punished; the great ones do twenty thousand times worse, and are not so much as spoken of.

*Non rete accepisti tenditur neque milvio,  
Qui male faciant nobis; illi qui nolit faciant tenditur.*  
*The net's not laid for kites or birds of prey,  
but for the harmless still our guns we lay.*

Be not dismayed then, *humanum est errare*, we are all sinners, daily and hourly subject to temptations, the best of us is a hypocrite, a grievous offender in God's sight, Noah, Lot, David, Peter, &c., how many mortal sins do we commit? Shall I say, be penitent, ask forgiveness, and make amends by the sequel of thy life, for that foul offence thou hast committed? recover thy
credit by some noble exploit, as Themistocles did, for he was a most debauched and vicious youth, sed juventia maculas proclaris factis delevit, but made the world amends by brave exploits; at last become a new man, and seek to be reformed. He that runs away in a battle, as Demosthenes said, may fight again; and he that hath a fall may stand as upright as ever he did before. Nemo desperet meliora lapsus, a wicked liver may be reclaimed, and prove an honest man; be that is odious in present, hissed out, an exile, may be received again with all men's favours, and singular applause; so Tully was in Rome, Alcibiades in Athens. Let thy disgrace then be what it will, quod fit, infectum non potest esse, that which is past cannot be recalled; trouble not thyself, vex and grieve thyself no more, be it obloquy, disgrace, &c. No better way, than to neglect, contemn, or seem not to regard it, to make no reckoning of it, Deesse robur arguit divicias: if thou be guiltless it concerns thee not:—

"Irrita vanilloquus quid curas spicula lingus, Latrantan curatane alta Diana canem!"  

Doth the moon care for the barking of a dog? They detrac, scoff and rail, saith one, 1 and bark at me on every side; but I, like that Albanian dog sometimes given to Alexander for a present, vindico me ab illis solo contemptu, I lie still and sleep, vindicate myself by contempt alone. 2 Expertis terroris Achilles armatus: as a tortoise in his shell, virtute mea involvo, or an urchin round, nihil moror itus, 3 a lizard in camomile, I decline their fury and am safe.

"Integritas virtusque suo nominine tua, Non patet adversae morbis invideo:" 4 | "Virtue and integrity are their own force, Care not for envy or what comes from thence."

Let them rail then, scoff, and slander, sapiens contumelia non afficit, a wise man, Seneca thinks, is not moved because he knows, contra Sycophantae morsum non est remedium, there is no remedy for it: kings and princes, wise, grave, prudent, holy, good men, divine, all are so served alike. 5 O Jana ut ergo quem nulla ciconia pinsit, Antevorta and Postvorta, Jupiter's guardian, may not help in this case, they cannot protect; Moses had a Dathan, a Corath, David a Shimei, God himself is blasphemed: nondum felix es si te nondum turba deridet. It is an ordinary thing so to be misused. 6 Regivm est cum bene ferocis malè audire, the chiefest men and most understanding are so viliified; let him take his course. And as that lusty courser in Æsop, that contemned the poor ass, came by and by after with his bowels burst, a pack on his back, and was derided of the same ass: contemnentur ab his quos ipsi prius contempsere, et irredeuntur ab his quos ipsi prius irrisses, they shall be contemned and laughed to scorn of those whom they have formerly derided. Let them contemn, defame, or undervalue, insult, oppress, scoff, slander, abuse, wrong, curse and swear, feign and lie, do thou comfort thyself with a good conscience, in sine gaudia, when they have all done, 7 for a good conscience is a continual feast, innocency will vindicate itself: and which the poet gave out of Hercules, diis fructus iratis, enjoy thyself, though all the world be set against thee, contemn and say with him, Elogium mihi pro foribus, my posy is, 8 not to be moved, that my palladium, my breastplate, my buckler, with which I ward all injuries, offences, lies, slanders; I lean upon that stake of modesty, so receive and break asunder all that foolish force of liver and spleen. And whoseover he is that shall observe these short instructions, without all question he shall much ease and benefit himself.

[Part. 2. Sec. 3.]

422 Cure of Melancholy.

* Camerar. Emb. 61. cent. 3. "Why should you regard the harmless shafts of a vain-speaking tongue—does the exalted Diana care for the barking of a dog?"  
* Lipsius elect. lib. 3. ult. Latrant me, Jaceo, ac taceo, &c.  
* Catalh.  
* The symbol of Gongaza, duke of Mantua.  
* Quid turpius quam sapientis vitam ex insipientis sermente pendor? Tullius 2. de finibus.  
* Tua te conscientia salvare, in cubiculo ingredere, ubi secure requiescas. Minuit se quodammodo proba bonitas conscientiae secretarum, Boethius, l. 1. pros. 4.  
* Ringens liceat et mediocriter; Palladium illud pectori oppono, non merori; consisto modoque veluti sedibus virtutis, excips et frango stilus insignium imperia livoris. Putat., lib. 2. epist. 56.
In fine, if princes would do justice, judges be upright, clergymen truly devout, and so live as they teach, if great men would not be so insolent, if soldiers would quietly defend us, the poor would be patient, rich men would be liberal and humble, citizens honest, magistrates meek, superiors would give good example, subjects peaceable, young men would stand in awe: if parents would be kind to their children, and they again obedient to their parents, brethren agree amongst themselves, enemies be reconciled, servants trusty to their masters, virgins chaste, wives modest, husbands would be loving and less jealous: if we could imitate Christ and his apostles, live after God's laws, these mischiefs would not so frequently happen amongst us; but being most part so irreconcilable as we are, perverse, proud, insolent, factious, and malicious, prone to contention, anger and revenge, of such fiery spirits, so captious, impious, irreligious, so opposite to virtue, void of grace, how should it otherwise be? Many men are very testy by nature, apt to mistake, apt to quarrel, apt to provoke and misconstrue anything that is said or done, and thereof heap unto themselves a great deal of trouble, and disquietness to others, smatterers in other men's matters, tale-bearers, whisperers, liars, they cannot speak in season, or hold their tongues when they should, *Et suam partem itidem tacere, cum aliena est oratio:* they will speak more than comes to their shares, in all companies, and by those bad courses accumulate much evil to their own souls (*qui contendit, sibi convicium facit*), their life is a perpetual brawl, they snarl like so many dogs, with their wives, children, servants, neighbours, and all the rest of their friends, they can agree with nobody. But to such as are judicious, meek, submissive, and quiet, these matters are easily remedied: they will forbear upon all such occasions, neglect, contemn, or take no notice of them, dissemble, or wisely turn it off. If it be a natural impediment, as a red nose, squint eyes, crooked legs, or any such imperfection, infirmity, disgrace, reproach, the best way is to speak of it first thyself, 1 and so thou shalt surely take away all occasions from others to jest at, or contemn, that they may perceive thee to be careless of it. Vatinius was wont to scoff at his own deformed feet, to prevent his enemies' obloqui and sarcasms in that kind; or else by prevention, as Cotys, king of Thrace, that brake a company of fine glasses presented to him, with his own hands, lest he should be overmuch moved when they were broken by chance. And sometimes again, so that it be discreetly and moderately done, it shall not be amiss to make resistance, to take down such a saucy companion, no better means to vindicate himself to purchase final peace: for he that suffers himself to be ridden, or through pusillanimity or sottishness will let every man baffle him, shall be a common laughing stock to flout at. As a cur that goes through a village, if he clap his tail between his legs, and run away, every cur will insult over him: but if he bristle up himself, and stand to it, give but a counter-snarl, there's not a dog dares meddle with him: much is in a man's courage and discreet carriage of himself.

Many other grievances there are, which happen to mortals in this life, from friends, wives, children, servants, masters, companions, neighbours, our own defaults, ignorance, errors, intemperance, indiscretion, infirmities, &c., and many good remedies to mitigate and oppose them, many divine precepts to counterpoise our hearts, special antidotes both in Scripture and human authors, which, whose will observe, shall purchase much ease and quietness unto himself: I will point out a few. Those prophetical, apostolical admonitions are well known to all; what Solomon, Siracides, our Saviour Christ himself hath said tending to this purpose, as "Fear God: obey the prince;  

1 Mil. glor. Act. 3. Plautus. 1 Then said his father was a rogue, his mother a whore, to prevent obloquy, and to show that ought belonged to him but goods of the mind.
be sober and watch: pray continually: be angry but sin not: remember thy last: fashion not yourselves to this world, &c., apply yourselves to the times: strive not with a mighty man: recompense good for evil, let nothing be done through contention or vain-glory, but with meekness of mind, every man esteeming of others better than himself: love one another; or that epitome of the law and the prophets, which our Saviour inculcates, "love God above all, thy neighbour as thyself," and "whatsoever you would that men should unto you, so do unto them," which Alexander Severus writ in letters of gold, and used as a motto, Hierom commends to Celantia as an excellent way, amongst so many enticements and worldly provocations, to rectify her life. Out of human authors take these few cautions, 1 Know thyself. Be contented with thy lot. Trust not wealth, beauty, nor parasites, they will bring thee to destruction. Have peace with all men, war with vice. Be not idle. Look before you leap. Beware of, Had I wist. Honour thy parents, speak well of friends. Be temperate in four things, lingua, locis, oculis, et pocus: Watch thine eye. Moderate thine expenses. Hear much, speak little, suspense and abstine. If thou seest aught amiss in another, mend it in thyself. Keep thine own counsel, reveal not thy secrets, be silent in thine intentions. Give not ear to tale-tellers, babbler, be not scurrilous in conversation: jest without bitterness: give no man cause of offence: set thine house in order: take heed of suretyship. Fide et diffide, as a fox on the ice, take heed whom you trust. Live not beyond thy means. Give cheerfully. Pay thy dues willingly. Be not a slave to thy money; omit not occasion, embrace opportunity, lose no time. Be humble to thy superiors, respective to thine equals, affable to all, but not familiar. Flatter no man. Lie not, dissemble not. Keep thy word and promise, be constant in a good resolution. Speak truth, Be not opiniative, maintain no factions. Lay no wages, make no comparisons. Find na faults, meddle not with other men's matters. Admire not thyself. Be not proud or popular. Insult not. Fortunam reverenter habe. Fear not that which cannot be avoided. Grieve not for that which cannot be recalled. Undervalue not thyself. Accuse no man, commend no man rashly. Go not to law without great cause. Strive not with a greater man. Cast not off an old friend, take heed of a reconciled enemy. If thou come as a guest stay not too long. Be not unthankful. Be meek, merciful, and patient. Do good to all. Be not fond of fair words. Be not a neater in a faction; moderate thy passions. Think no place without a witness. Admonish thy friend in secret, commend him in public. Keep good company. Love others to be beloved thyself. Ama tanquam osurus. Amicus tardo fias. Provide for a tempest. Noli irritare crudrones. Do not prostitute thy soul for gain. Make not a fool of thyself to make others merry. Marry not an old crony or a fool for money. Be not over solicitous or curious. Seek that which may be found. Seem not greater than thou art. Take thy pleasure soberly. Oxyyna ne terito. Live merrily as thou canst. Take heed by other men's examples. Go as thou wouldest be seen, as thou wouldest be.

1 Lib. 2. cp. 25. 2 Nosce teipsum. 3 Continent abib. 4 Ne fallas opinibus, neque paraEritis, trahunt in praecipium. 5 Pacem cum hominibus habe, bellum cum vitris. 6 Othon. 2. imperat. symeb. 7 Demon te nunquam ut omnes lavant. Hieron. 8 Dint deliberandum quod stiutam en sem. 9 Insipientis est diem non putem. 10 Deus parentem, sibi quinam; aliter, feras; presces parentibus piacem, amicis dileccionem. 11 Comprime linguam. Quod de quoque vino et cui deas sepe caveto. Libertas audias quan loquaris; vive ut vivas. 12 Epictetus: optime feceris si ea fugiers que in alio reprehendis. Neminem dixeris que sola effort. 13 Fuge summares. Percontatem facio, &c. 14 Sint salis sine vilecta. Sem sponde, presto nona. 15 Cameram, emb. 55. cent. 2. cave quia crudas, vel nemini fidas Epicorunon. 16 Tecum habita. 17 Bis dat qui citato dat. 18 Post est occasio calva. 19 Nimia familiaritas parit contemptum. 20 Mencadum servile vitrum. 21 Areanum neque inscribaturis oslius unquam, commissunque te. 22 Hor. lib. 1. cp. 12. 23 Nec tua laudabilis studia aut aliquae reperdec. 24 Hor. ep. lib. 12. 25 Ut ne quaiessera extra. 26 Stultum est timere, quod vitari non potest. 27 De re amissae irreparabil ne doles. 28 Tanti eris alias quam tibi fueris. 29 Neminem vel landus vel accursum. 30 Nullius hosptias grata est mora longa. 31 Soloni lex apud Aristotelem; Galus, lib. 2. cap. 12. 32 Nullius locum putes sine testo, semper adesse Deum cogita. 33 Secreta amicas admoni, lauda palam. 34 Ut amice, amabilis ego. 35 Hoc fata situate. vivite latæ, Seneca. 36 Id apprim te vita utile, ex aliis observare abib quod ex u siet. Ter.
found, "yield to the time, follow the stream. Wilt thou live free from fears and cares? "Live innocently, keep thyself upright, thou needest no other keeper," &c. Look for more in Isocrates, Seneca, Plutarch, Epictetus, &c., and for defect, consult with cheese-trenchers and painted cloths.

MEMB. VIII.
Against Melancholy itself.

"Every man," saith Seneca, "thinks his own burthen the heaviest," and a melancholy man above all others complains most; weariness of life, abhorring all company and light, fear, sorrow, suspicion, anguish of mind, bashfulness, and those other dread symptoms of body and mind, must needs aggravate this misery; yet compared to other maladies, they are not so heinous as they be taken. For first this disease is either in habit or disposition, curable or incurable. If new and in disposition, 'tis commonly pleasant, and it may be helped. If inveterate, or a habit, yet they have lucida intervalla, sometimes well, and sometimes ill; or if more continue, as the Vejentes were to the Romans, 'tis hostis magis assiduus quam gravis, a more durable enemy than dangerous: and amongst many inconveniences, some comforts are annexed to it. First it is not catching, and as Erasmus comforted himself, when he was grievously sick of the stone, though it was most troublesome, and an intolerable pain to him, yet it was no whit offensive to others, not loathsome to the spectators, ghastly, fulsome, terrible, as plagues, apoplexies, leprosies, wounds, sores, tetter, pox, pestilent agues are, which either admit of no company, terrify or offend those that are present. In this malady, that which is, is wholly to themselves: and those symptoms not so dreadful, if they be compared to the opposite extremes. They are most part bashful, suspicious, solitary, &c., therefore no such ambitious, impudent intruders as some are, no shockers, no conycatchers, no prowlers, no smell-feasts, praters, panders, parasites, bawds, drunkards, whoremasters; necessity and defect compel them to be honest; as Mitio told Demea in the 'comedy,

"Haec si neque ego neque tu facimus,
Non sinit egestas facere nos."

"If we be honest 'twas poverty made us so:" if we melancholy men be not as bad as he that is worst, 'tis our dame melancholy kept us so: Non decret voluntas sed facultas. b

Besides they are freed in this from many other infirmities, solitariness makes them more apt to contemplate, suspicion wary, which is a necessary humour in these times, Nam pol qui maximè caveat, is sospic autor captus est, "he that takes most heed, is often circumvented and overtaken." Fear and sorrow keep them temperate and sober, and free them from any dissolve acts, which jollity and boldness thrust men upon: they are therefore no sicarii, roaring boys, thieves or assassins. As they are soon dejected, so they are as soon, by soft words and good persuasions reared. Wearisomeness of life makes them they are not so besotted on the transitory vain pleasures of the world. If they dote in one thing, they are wise and well understanding in most other. If it be inveterate, they are insensati, most part doting, or quite mad, insensible of any wrongs, ridiculous to others, but most happy and secure to themselves. Dotage is a state which many much magnify and commend: so is simplicity and folly, as he said, hic furor, ó superi, sit mihi perpetuus. Some think fools and dizzards live the merriest lives, as Ajax in Sophocles, Nihil

a Dunn furor in cursu currenti cede furori. Cretitandum cum Crete. Temporibus servi, nec contra flamina fato. b Nulla certior custodia innocentia: inexpugnabile immaculatum munimentum non egere. c Unicique summi omnis intolerabile videtur. d Livius. e Ter. Scen. 2. Adeplus. f "Twas not the will but the way was wanting." g Plantas. h Petronius Carol.
Sect. IV. Membr. I.

Subsect. I.—Of Physic which cureth with Medicines.

After a long and tedious discourse of these six non-natural things and their several rectifications, all which are comprehended in diet, I am come now at last to Pharmacoeutice, or that kind of physic which cureth by medicines, which apothecaries most part make, mingle, or sell in their shops. Many cavil at this kind of physic, and hold it unnecessary, unprofitable to this or any other disease, because those countries which use it least, live longest, and are best in health, as Hector Boethius relates of the isles of Orcades, the people are still sound of body and mind, without any use of physic, they live commonly 120 years, and Ortelius in his itinerary of the inhabitants of the Forest of Arden, "they are very painful, long-lived, sound, &c. Martianus Capella, speaking of the Indians of his time, saith, they were (much like our western Indians now) "bigger than ordinary men, bred coarsely, very long-lived, insomuch, that he that died at a hundred years of age, went before his time," &c. Damianus A-Goes, Saxo-Grammaticus, Aubanus Bohemus, say the like of them that live in Norway, Lapland, Finmark, Corelia, and all over Scandia, and those northern countries, they are most healthful, and very long-lived, in which places there is no use at all of physic, the name of it is not once heard. Dithmarus Bleskenius in his accurate description of Iceland, 1607, makes mention, amongst other matters, of the inhabitants, and their manner of living, "which is dried fish instead of bread, butter, cheese, and salt meats, most part they drink water and whey, and yet without physic or physician, they live many of them 250 years." I find the same relation by Liberius, and some other writers, of Indians in America. Paulus Jovius in his description of Britain, and Levinus Lemnius, observe as much of this our island, that there was of old no use of physic amongst us, and but little at this day, except it be for a few nice idle citizens, surfeiting courtiers, and stall-fed gentlemen lubbers. The country people use kitchen physic, and common experience tells us, that they live freest from all manner of infirmities, that make least use of apothecaries' physic. Many are overthrown by preposterous use of it, and

---


---

*Victus eorum casco et lacte consistit, potus aqua et serum; plantae loco pane habent; ita multos annos saepe 200 abaque modico et medicina vivunt, *Lib. de 4. complex.
Medicinal Physic.

thereby get their bane, that might otherwise have escaped: "some think physicians kill as many as they save, and who can tell, " Quot Themisone agros autumno occiderint uno ?" "How many murders they make in a year," quibus imputi licet hominem occidere, "that may freely kill folks," and have a reward for it, and according to the Dutch proverb, a new physician must have a new church-yard; and who daily observes it not? Many that did ill under physicians' hands, have happily escaped, when they have been given over by them, left to God and nature, and, themselves; 'twas Pliny's dilemma of old, 1 every disease is either curable or incurable, a man recovers of it or is killed by it; both ways physic is to be rejected. If it be deadly it cannot be cured; if it may be helped, it requires no physician, nature will expel it of itself." Plato made it a great sign of an impertemperate and corrupt commonwealth, where lawyers and physicians did abound; and the Romans distastedit them so much that they were often banished out of their city, as Pliny and Celsus relate, for 600 years not admitted. It is no art at all, as some hold, no not worthy the name of a liberal science (nor law neither), as Pet. And. Canonherius, a patrician of Rome and a great doctor himself, "one of their own tribe," proves by sixteen arguments, because it is mercenary as now used, base, and as fiddlers play for a reward. Juridijcits, medicitcjs, fisco fas vivere rapto, 'tis a corrupt trade, no science, art, no profession; the beginning, practice, and progress of it, all is nought, full of imposture, uncertainty, and doth generally more harm than good. The devil himself was the first inventor of it: Inventum est medicina meum, said Apollo, and what was Apollo, but the devil? The Greeks first made an art of it, and they were all deluded by Apollo's sons, priests, oracles. If we may believe Varro, Pliny, Columella, most of their best medicines were derived from his oracles. Æsculapius his son had his temples erected to his deity, and did many famous cures; but, as Lactantius holds, he was a magician, a mere impostor, and as his successors, Phaon, Podalirius, Melampius, Menecrates (another god), by charms, spells, and ministry of bad spirits, performed most of their cures. The first that ever wrote in physic to any purpose, was Hippocrates, and his disciple and commentator Galen, whom Scaliger calls Fimbriam Hippocratis; but as Cardan censures them, both inmethodical and obscure, as all those old ones are, their precepts confused, their medicines obsolete, and now most part rejected. Those cures which they did, Paracelsus holds, were rather done out of their patients' confidence, and good opinion they had of them, than out of any skill of theirs, which was very small, he saith, they themselves idiots and infants, as are all their academical followers. The Arabian received it from the Greeks, and so the Latins, adding new precepts and medicines of their own, but so imperfect still, that through ignorance of professors, impostors, mountebanks, empirics, disagreeing of sectaries (which are as many almost as there be diseases), envy, covetousness, and the like, they do much harm amongst us. They are so different in their consultations, prescriptions, mistake many times the parties' constitution, of disease, and causes of it, they give quite contrary physic; " one saith this, another that," out of singularity or opposition, as he said of Adrian, multitudo medicorum principem interficit, "a multitude of physicians hath killed the emperor;" plus à medico quam à morbo periculi, "more danger there is from the physician, than from the disease." Besides, there is much imposture and malice amongst them. All arts (saith Cardan)
admit of cozening, physic, amongst the rest, doth appropriate it to herself;" and tells a story of one Curtius, a physician in Venice; because he was a stranger, and practised amongst them, the rest of the physicians did still cross him in all his precepts. If he prescribed hot medicines they would prescribe cold, miscentes pro calidis frigida, pro frigidis humida, pro purgantibus astringentia, binders for purgatives, omnia perturbabunt. If the party miscarried, Curtius damned him, that disagreed from them: if he recovered, then they cured him themselves. Much emulation, imposture, malice, there is amongst them: if they be honest and mean well, yet a knave apothecary that administers the physic, and makes the medicine, may do infinite harm, by his old obsolete doses, adulterine drugs, bad mixtures, quid pro quo, &c. See Fuchsius, lib. 1. sect. 1. cap. 8, Cordus' Dispensatory, and Brassivola's Examen simpl. &c., But it is their ignorance that doth more harm than rashness, their art is wholly conjectural, if it be an art, uncertain, imperfect, and got by killing of men, they are a kind of butchers, leeches, men-slayers; chirurgeons and apothecaries especially, that are indeed the physicians' hangmen, curmifices, and common executioners; though to say truth, physicians themselves come not far behind; for according to that facete epigram of Maximilianus Urentius, what's the difference?

*a Chirurgiens medico quo dixit? silect isto, Ezcze hic suscit, omnis physice Carnifex hoc ambo tantum differre videntur, Tarditis hic factum, quod fact ille citat.*

But I return to their skill; many diseases they cannot cure at all, as apoplexy, epilepsy, stone, strangury, gout, Tollere nodosam nescit medicina Podagram; a quartan agues, a common ague sometimes stumbles them all, they cannot so much as ease, they know not how to judge of it. If by pulses, that doctrine, some hold, is wholly superstitious, and I dare boldly say with b Andrew Dudeth, "that variety of pulses, described by Galen, is neither observed nor understood of any." And for urine, that is meretric medicorum, the most deceitful thing of all, as Forestus and some other physicians have proved at large: I say nothing of critic days, errors in indications, &c. The most rational of them, and skilful, are so often deceived, that as c Tholosamus infers, "I had rather believe and commit myself to a mere empiric, than to a mere doctor, and I cannot sufficiently commend that custom of the Babylonians, that have no professed physicians, but bring all their patients to the market to be cured." which Herodotus relates of the Egyptians: Strabo, Sardus, and Aubanus Bohemos of many other nations. And those that prescribed physic, amongst them, did not so arrogantly take upon them to cure all diseases, as our professors do, but some one, some another, as their skill and experience did serve; d one cured the eyes, a second the teeth, a third the head, another the lower parts, &c., not for gain, but in charity to do good, they made neither art, profession, nor trade of it, which in other places was accustomed: and therefore Cambyses in e Xenophon told Cyrus, that to his thinking physicians "were like tailors and cobblers, the one mended our sick bodies, as the other did our clothes." But I will urge these cavilling and contumelious arguments no further, lest some physician should mistake me, and deny me physic when I am sick: for my part, I am well persuaded of physic: I can distinguish the abuse from the use, in this and many other arts and sciences;

---

"Omnis agrotus propriä culpä perit, sed nemo nisi medici benefice restituitur. Agripes. "


"Cyrip. lib. 1. Vel uti vacat fruetarum resarculatorum, &c."
Medicinal Physic. 429

1 Aliud vinum, aliud ebrietas, wine and drunkenness are two distinct things. I acknowledge it a most noble and divine science, in so much that Apollo, Æsculapius, and the first founders of it, merito pro diis habit, were worthy counted gods by succeeding ages, for the excellency of their invention. And whereas Apollo at Delos, Venus at Cyprus, Diana at Ephesus, and those other gods were confined and adored alone in some peculiar places: Æsculapius had his temple and altars every where, in Corinth, Lacedæmon, Athens, Thebes, Epidaurus, &c. Pausanius records, for the latitude of his art, diety, worth, and necessity. With all virtuous and wise men therefore I honour the name and calling, as I am enjoined "to honour the physician for necessity's sake. The knowledge of the physician lifteth up his head, and in the sight of great men he shall be admired. The Lord hath created medicines of the earth, and he that is wise will not abhor them," Ecclus. lviii. 1. But of this noble subject how many panegyrists are worthily written? For my part, as Sellust said of Carthage, præstet silere quam pauca dicere; I have said, yet one thing I will add, that this kind of physic is very moderately and advisedly to be used, upon good occasion, when the former of diet will not take place. And 'tis no other which I say, then that which Arnoldus prescribes in his 8. Aphorism. 

6 A discreet and goodly physician doth first endeavour to expel a disease by medicinal diet, then by pure medicine: and in his ninth, "he that may be cured by diet, must not meddle with physic." So in 11. Aphorism. "A modest and wise physician will never hasten to use medicines, but upon urgent necessity, and that sparingly too:" because (as he adds in his 13. Aphorism.), 

k Whosoever takes much physic in his youth, shall soon bewail it in his old age: "purging physic especially, which doth much debilitate nature. For which causes some physicians refrain from the use of purgatives, or else sparingly use them. 1 Henricus Ayrurus in a consultation for a melancholy person, would have him take as few purges as he could, "because there be no such medicines, which do not steal away some of our strength, and rob the parts of our body, weaken nature, and cause that cacochymia," which 2 Celsus and others observe, or ill digestion, and bad juice through all the parts of it. Galen himself confesseth, "that purgative physic is contrary to nature, takes away some of our best spirits, and consumes the very substance of our bodies:" But this, without question, is to be understood of such purges as are unseasonably or immoderately taken: they have their excellent use in this, as well as most other infirmities. Of alteratives and cordials, no man doubts, they simples or compunds. I will amongst that infinite variety of medicines, which I find in every pharmacopœia, every physician, herbalist, &c., single out some of the chiefest.

Subsect. II.—Simples proper to Melancholy, against Exotic Simples.

Simples properly applied to melancholy, are either simple or compound. Simples are alterative or purgative. Alternatives are such as correct, strengthen nature, alter, any way hinder or resist the disease; and they be herbs, stones, minerals, &c., all proper to this humour. For as there be diverse distinct infirmities continually vexing us,

So there be several remedies, as he saith, "each disease a medicine, for every

1 Chrys. hom. 
2 Prudens et plus medicus, morbum ante expellere satagit, cibis medicinalibus, quam puris medicihibus. 
3 Cuiusque potest per alimenta restraint sanitas, fugiendi est penitus usus medicamentorum. 
4 Modestus et sapiens medicus, nunquam properabit al pharmaciam, nisi cogente necessitate. 
5 Quicunque pharmacarum in juventute, deficiat in senectute. 
6 Hippocr. sp. 2, de med. fol. 276. Nullis est femina medicina purgans, que non aliquam de viribus et partibus corporis depravat.
7 Lib. 1, et Bart. lib. 8, cap. 12. 
8 De vict. sect. Omine purgans medicamentum, corpori purgato contrariam, &c. succes et spiritus abscindat, substantialm corpus sustinet. 
9 Resed. op. 
10 Henricus, pref. pra. med. Quot morborum sunt ideos, tot remediorum genera varius potentissim decorata.
humour; and as some hold, every clime, every country, and more than that, every private place hath his proper remedies growing in it, peculiar almost to the domineering and most frequent maladies of it. As "one discourseth, "wormwood groweth sparingly in Italy, because most part there they be misaffected with hot diseases: but henbane, poppy, and such cold herbs: with us in Germany and Poland, great store of it in every waste." Baraccellus *Horto geniali,* and Baptista Porta *Physiognomica* lib. 6. cap. 23, give many instances and examples of it, and bring many other proofs. For that cause beileike that learned Fuchsius of Nuremburg, "when he came into a village, considered always what herbs did grow most frequently about it, and those he distilled in a silver alembic, making use of others amongst them as occasion served." I know that many are of opinion, our northern simples are weak, imperfect, not so well concocted, of such force, as those in the southern parts, not so fit to be used in physic, and will therefore fetch their drugs afar off: senna, cassia out of Egypt, rhubarb from Barbary, aloes from Socotra: turbithe, agaric, myrobalanes, hermodactils, from the East Indies, tobacco from the West, and some as far as China, hellebore from the Anticire, or that of Austria which bears the purple flower, which Matthiolus so much approves, and so of the rest. In the kingdom of Valencia in Spain, *a* Magnus commends two mountains, Mariola and Renagolosa, famous for simples; *b* Leander Albertus, "Baldus a mountain near the Lake Venacus in the territory of Verona, to which all the herbalists in the country continually flock; Ortelius one in Apulia, Munster, Mons major in Istria: others Montpelier in France; Prosper Altinus prefers Egyptian simples, Garcies ab Horto Indian before the rest, another those of Italy, Crete, &c. Many times they are over-curios in this kind, whom Fuchsius taxeth, *Instit.* l. 1. sec. 1. cap. 1. "*that think they do nothing, except they rake all over India, Arabia, Ethiopia, for remedies, and fetch their physic from the three quarters of the world, and from beyond the Garamantes. Many an old wife or country woman doth often more good with a few known and common garden herbs, than our bombast physicians, with all their prodigious, sumptuous, far-fetched, rare, conjectural medicines;" without all question if we have not these rare exotic simples, we hold that at home which is in virtue equivalent unto them, ours will serve as well as theirs, if they be taken in proportionable quantity, fitted and qualifie, aright, if not much better, and more proper to our constitutions. But so 'tis for the most part, as Pliny writes to Gallus, "*We are careless of that which is near us, and follow that which is afar off, to know which we will travel and sail beyond the seas, wholly neglecting that which is under our eyes." Opium in Turkey doth scarce offend, with us in a small quantity it stupifies: cicutra or hemlock is a strong poison in Greece, but with us it hath no such violent effects: I conclude with I. Voschins, who as he much inveighs against those exotic medicines, so he promiseth by our European, a full cure and absolute of all diseases; *à capite ad calculus, nostre regionis herbas nostri corporibus magis conducive, our own simples agree best with us. It was a thing that Fernelius much laboured in his French practice, to reduce all his cure to our proper and domestic physic: so did *Janus Cornarius, and Martin Rulandus in Germany, T. B. with us, as appeareth by a treatise of his divulged in our tongue 1615, to prove the suffi-

9*Penottus denar. med. Quacanquae regio product simplex, pro morbis regionis; cresit rare absynthium in Italia, quod ibi puerumque morbi calidai, sed cicutra, papaver, et herbas frigidae, apud nos Germanos et Polones ubique provenit absynthium.*

10Quam in villam venit, consideravit quas ibi crescebant medicamenta, simplicia frequensiora, et ibi puerumque nause distillator, et aliter, alinbam circa argenteum circumferens.*

11*Herbas medicinae utilem omnium in Apulia praelatissimae.*

12*Gag. ad quos magnus herbaceorum numerus undique confluit. Sincerus Itiner. Gallia.*

13Baldus mons proprie Bennuem herbeles maxime notus.*

14Qui se nihil efficace arbitraturs, nisi Indianam, Ethipliam, Arabram, et ultra Garamantes, tribus mundi partibus exquisita remedia corredant. Tutius sepe medicet rusticam animam us, &c.*

15*Ep. lib. 8. Proximorum incurreri longinquus sectarum, et ad es cognoscenda iter ingredi et mare transittere solemus; at quae sub occulte posita nigilibus.*

16*Exotic a reiciet, domesticis solut eis concitare eos voluit. Michel. Adams vit. qus.*
ciency of English medicines, to the cure of all manner of diseases. If our simples be not altogether of such force, or so apposite, it may be, if like industry were used, those far-fetched drugs would prosper as well with us, as in those countries whence now we have them, as well as cherries, artichokes, tobacco, and many such. There have been diverse worthy physicians, which have tried excellent conclusions in this kind, and many diligent, painful apothecaries, as Gesner, Besler, Gerard, &c., but amongst the rest those famous public gardens of Padua in Italy, Nuremburg in Germany, Leyden in Holland, Montpelier in France (and ours in Oxford now in fieri, at the cost and charges of the Right Honourable the Lord Danvers, Earl of Danby), are much to be commended, wherein all exotic plants almost are to be seen, and liberal allowance yearly made for their better maintenance, that young students may be the sooner informed in the knowledge of them: which as "Fuchsius holds, "is most necessary for that exquisite manner of curing," and as great a shame for a physician not to observe them, as for a workman not to know his axe, saw, square, or any other tool which he must of necessity use.

**SUBSECT. III.—Alternatives, Herbs, other Vegetables, &c.**

Among these 800 simples, which Galeottus reckons up, *lib. 3. de promisc. doctor. cap. 3*, and many exquisite herbalists have written of, these few following alone I find appropriated to this humour: of which some be alternatives; "which by a secret force," saith Renodeus, "and special quality expel future diseases, perfectly cure those which are, and many such incurable effects." This is as well observed in other plants, stones, minerals, and creatures, as in herbs, in other maladies as in this. How many things are related of a man's skull? What several virtues of corns in a horse-leg, "of a wolf's liver, &c. Of diverse excrements of beasts, all good against several diseases? What extraordinary virtues are ascribed unto plants? "Satyrion et eruca penem erigunt, vitae et nymphea semen exinguunt," some herbs provoke lust, some again, as agnus castus, water-lily, quite extinguished seed; poppy causeth sleep, cabbage resisteth drunkenness, &c., and that which is more to be admired, that such and such plants should have a peculiar virtue to such particular parts, "as to the head, aniseds, foalfoot, betony, calamint, eye-bright, lavender, bays, roses, rue, sage, marjoram, peony, &c. For the lungs, calamint, liquorice, enula canauda, hyssop, horehound, water germander, &c. For the heart, borage, bugloss, saffron, balms, basil, rosemary, violet, roses, &c. For the stomach, wormwood, mints, betony, balm, centaury, sorrel, purslain. For the liver, dartsipine or camaepitis, germander, agrimony, feuille, endive, succory, liverwort, barberries. For the spleen, maidenhair, fingerfern, dodder of thyme, hop, the rind of ash, betony. For the kidneys, grumel, parsley, safixfrage, plantain, mallow. For the womb, mugwort, pennyroyal, fetherfew, savine, &c. For the joints, camomile, St. John's wort, organ, rue, cowlips, centaury the less, &c. And so to peculiar diseases. To this of melancholy you shall find a catalogue of herbs proper, and that in every part. See more in Wecker, Renodeus, Heurnius, *lib. 2. cap. 19*, &c. I will briefly speak of them, as first of alternatives, which Galen in his third book of diseased parts, prefers before diminutives, and Trallianus brags, that he hath done more cures on melancholy men by moistening, than by purging of them.

*Borage.* In this catalogue, borage and bugloss may challenge the chiefest place, whether in substance, juice, roots, seeds, flowers, leaves, decoctions, &c. See [footnote].

---


*licuius partii cuique convenientibus. Idem Laurentius, cap. 9.*
distilled waters, extracts, oils, &c., for such kind of herbs be diversely varied. Bugloss is hot and moist, and therefore worthily reckoned up amongst those herbs which expel melancholy, and its exhilarating power is acknowledged. Dioscorides, lib. 4. cap. 123. Pliny much magnifies this plant. It may be diversely used; as in broth, in wine, in conserves, syrups, &c. It is an excellent cordial, and against this malady most frequently prescribed; a herb indeed of such sovereignty, that as Diodorus, lib. 7. bibl. Plinius, lib. 25. cap. 2. et lib. 21. cap. 22. Plutarch, sympos. lib. 1. cap. 1. Dioscorides, lib. 5. cap. 40. Calvis, lib. 19. c. 3. suppose it was that famous Nepenthes of Homer, which Polydamna, Thonis's wife (then king of Thebes in Egypt), sent Helena for a token of such rare virtue, "that if taken steeped in wine, if wife and children, father and mother, brother and sister, and all thy dearest friends should die before thy face, thou couldst not grieve or shed a tear for them."

"Qui semel id patera mistum Nepenthes Iaecho Hauserit, hic incryman, non al suavisima proles, Si germanus el charmns, materque paterque Opposat, ante oculos ferro confossos atroci."

Helena's commended bowl to exhilarate the heart, had no other ingredient as most of our critics conjecture, than this of borage.

Balm.] Melissa balm hath an admirable virtue to alter melancholy, be it steeped in our ordinary drink, extracted, or otherwise taken. Cardan, lib. 8. much admires this herb. It heats and dries, saith Heurnius, in the second degree, with a wonderful virtue comforts the heart, and purgeth all melancholy vapours from the spirits, Matthiol. in lib. 3. cap. 10. in Dioscoridem. Besides they ascribe other virtues to it, "as to help concoction, to cleanse the brain, expel all careful thoughts, and anxious imaginations;" the same words in effect are in Avicenna, Pliny, Simon Sethi, Fuchsius, Leobel, Delacampius, and every herbalist. Nothing better for him that is melancholy than to steep this and borage in his ordinary drink.

Matthiolius, in his fifth book of Medicinal Epistles, reckons up scorzonera, "not against poison only, falling sickness, and such as are vertiginous, but to this malady; the root of it taken by itself expels sorrow, causeth mirth and lightness of heart."

Antonius Musa, that renowned physician to Caesar Augustus, in his book which he writ of the virtues of betony, cap. 6. wonderfully commends that herb, animas hominum et corpora custodit, securas de metu reddit, it preserves both body and mind, from fears, cares, griefs; cures falling sickness, this and many other diseases, to whom Galen subscribes, lib. 7. simpl. med. Dioscorides, lib. 4. cap. 1. &c.

Marigold is much approved against melancholy, and often used therefore in our ordinary broth, as good against this and many other diseases.

Hop.] Lupulus, hop, is a sovereign remedy; Fuchsius, cap. 58. Plant. hist. much extols it; "Pit purges all choler, and purifies the blood. Matthiol. cap. 140. in 4. Dioscor. wonders the physicians of his time made no more use of it, because it rarifies and cleanseth: we use it to this purpose in our ordinary beer, which before was thick and fulsome.

Wormwood, centuary, pennyroyal, are likewise magnified and much prescribed (as I shall after show), especially in hypochondriac melancholy, daily to be used, sod in whey: and as Ruffus Ephesias, Arateus relate, by breaking wind, helping concoction, many melancholy men have been cured with the frequent use of them alone.
And because the spleen and blood are often misaffected in melancholy, I may not omit endive, succory, dandelion, fumitory, &c., which cleanse the blood. Scolopendria, cuscuta, ceteranche, mugwort, liverwort, ash, tamarisk, genist, maidenhair, &c., which must help and ease the spleen.

To these I may add roses, violets, capers, featherfew, scordium, steechas, rosemary, ros solis, saffron, ochnyme, sweet apples, wine, tobacco, sanders, &c. That Peruvian chamoio, monstrosi juculato; &c. Linschoeteo Datura; and to such as are cold, the decoction of guaiacum, China, saracapilla, sassafras, the flowers of carduus benedict, which I find much used by Montanus in his Consultations, Julius Alexandrinus, Leelius Engubinus, and others. Bernardus Penottus prefers his herba solis, or Dutch sandlew, before all the rest in this disease, “and will admit of no herb upon the earth to be comparable to it.”

It excels Homer’s moly, cures this, falling sickness, and almost all other infirmities. The same Penottus speaks of an excellent balm out of Aponensis, which, taken to the quantity of three drops in a cup of wine, “will cause a sudden alteration, drive away dumps, and cheer up the heart.” Ant. Guianerius, in his Antidotary, hath many such. Jacobus de Dondis the aggregator, repeats ambergrease, nutmegs, and allspice amongst the rest. But that cannot be general. Amber and spice will make a hot brain mad, good for cold and moist. Garcia ab Horto hath many Indian plants, whose virtues he much magnifies in this disease. Lemnius, instil. cap. 68, admires rue, and commends it to have excellent virtue, “to expel vain imaginations, devils, and to ease afflicted souls.” Other things are much magnified by writers, as an old cock, a ram’s head, a wolf’s heart borne or eaten, which Mercurialis approves; Prosper Altinus, the water of Nilus; Gomesius all sea-water, and at seasonable times to be sea-sick: goat’s milk, whey, &c.


Precious stones are diversely censured; many explode the use of them or any mineral in physic, of whom Thomas Erastus is the chief, in his tract against Paracelsus, and in an epistle of his to Peter Monarius: “That stones can work any wonders, let them believe that list, no man shall persuade me; for my part, I have found by experience there is no virtue in them.” But Matthiolus, in his comment upon Dioscorides, is as profuse on the other side, in their commendation; so is Cardan, Renodeus, Alardus, Rues, Encelius, Marbodeus, &c. Matthiolus specifies in coral: and Oswaldus Crollius, Basil. Chym. prefers the salt of coral. Christoph. Encelius, lib. 3, cap. 131, will have them to be as so many several medicines against melancholy, sorrow, fear, dulness, and the like; Renodeus admires them, “besides they adorn kings’ crowns, grace the fingers, enrich our household stuff, defend us from enchantments, preserve health, cure diseases, they drive away grief, cares, and exhalate the mind.” The particulars be these.

Granatus, a precious stone so called, because it is like the kernels of a pomegranate, and imperfect kind of ruby, it comes from Calecut; “if hung about the neck, or taken in drink, it much resisteth sorrow, and recreates the heart.”

The same properties I find ascribed to the hyacinth and topaz. They allay

* * *
anger, grief, diminish madness, much delight and exhilarate the mind. "If it be either carried about, or taken in a potion, it will increase wisdom," saith Cardan, "expel fear; he brags that he hath cured many madmen with it, which, when they laid by the stone, were as mad again as ever they were at first." Petrus Bayerus, lib. 2. cap. 13. veni mecum, Fran. Ruesc, cap. 19. de gemmis, say as much of the chrysolite, a friend of wisdom, an enemy to folly. Pliny, lib. 37, Solinus, cap. 52, Albertus de Lapid., Cardan., Encelius, lib. 3. cap. 66, highly magnifies the virtue of the beryl, "it much avails to a good understanding, represseth vain conceits, evil thoughts, causeth mirth," &c. In the belly of a swallow there is a stone found called chelidonius, "which if it be lapped in a fair cloth, and tied to the right arm, will cure lunatics, madmen, make them amiable and merry."

There is a kind of onyx called a chalcedony, which hath the same qualities, "avails much against fantastic illusions which proceed from melancholy," preserve the vigour and good estate of the whole body.

The Eban stone, which goldsmiths use to sleeken their gold with, borne about or given to drink, hath the same properties, or not much unlike.

Levinus Lemnius, Institut. ad vit. cap. 58. amongst other jewels, makes mention of two more notable; carbuncle and coral, "which drive away childish fears, devils, overcome sorrow, and hang about the neck repress troublesome dreams," which properties almost Cardan gives to that green-coloured emmetris if it be carried about, or worn in a ring; Ruesc to the diamond.

Nicholas Cabeus, a Jesuit of Ferrara, in the first book of his Magneticall Philosophy, cap. 3. speaking of the virtues of a loadstone, recites many several opinions; some say that if it be taken in parcels inward, nisi quis per frusta voret, juventutem restituet, it will, like viper's wine, restore one to his youth; and yet, if carried about them, others will have it to cause melancholy; let experience determine.
434 Cure of Melancholy. [Part 2. Sec. 4.

Mercurialis admires the emerald for its virtues in pacifying all affections of the mind; others the sapphire, which is "the fairest of all precious stones, of sky colour, and a great enemy to black choler, frees the mind, mends manners," &c. Jacobus de Dondis, in his catalogue of simples, hath ambergraise, os in corde cerve, the bone in a stag's heart, a monocerot's horn, bezoar's stone (of which elsewhere), it is found in the belly of a little beast in the East Indies, brought into Europe by Hollanders, and our countrymen merchants. Renodeus, cap. 22. lib. 3. de ment. med. saith he saw two of these beasts alive, in the castle of the Lord of Vitry at Coubert.

Lapis lazuli and armenus, because they purge, shall be mentioned in their place.

Of the rest in brief thus much I will add out of Cardan, Renodeus, cap. 23. lib. 3. Rondoletius, lib. 1. de Testat. c. 15, &c. "That almost all jewels and precious stones have excellent virtues to pacify the affections of the mind, for which cause rich men so much covet to have them: and those smaller unions which are found in shells amongst the Persians and Indians, by the consent of all writers, are very cordial, and most part avail to the exhilaration of the heart."

8 Lapis hic gestatus aut ebitthus prudentiam auget, nocturnos timores pellit; insanac haec sanavi, et quum lapidem abjecerant, erupit iterum stultitia. 9 Induces sapientiam, fugat stultitiam. Idem Cardana, lunateis juvat. 10 Confert ad bonum intellectum, comprimit malas cogitationes, &c. Alacres reddat. 11 Albertus, Encelius, cap. 44. lib. 3. Pirin. lib. 37. cap. 10. Jacobus de Dondis; dextro bracho alligatus sunt lunatios, insanos, factum amabilis, juventus. 12 Valet contra phantasticas illusiones ex melancholia. 13 Amentes sanat, tristitiam pellit, irritam, &c. 14 Valet ad fugandum timorem et devilia, turulentia somnia aligit, et nocturnos puerorum timores composit. 15 Somnia lata fact argenteo annulo gestatus. 16 Atrae bill adversatur, omnium germanum pelliceriam, eum colorum refert, animum et errore liberat, mores in malum mutat. 17 Longis mareuribus feliciter medetur, delequas, &c. 18 Sec. 5. Membr. 1. Subs. 5. 19 Gestamen lapidum et gemmarum maximum fort axillium et jussamen; unde qui dixit sunt gemmarum securum formam studios. 20 Margarite et uniones quis a conchis et piscibus sunt Pericas et Indos, valde cordiales sunt, &c.
Mem. 1. Subs. 4.] Medicinal Physic. 435

Minerals.] Most men say as much of gold and some other minerals, as these have done of precious stones. Erastus still maintains the opposite part. Dis- 
put. in Paracelsum, cap. 4. fol. 196. he confesseth of gold, "that it makes
the heart merry, but in no other sense but as it is in a miser's chest: at
miki plando simul ac nummos contemptor in arcâ, as he said in the poet, it so 
revives the spirits, and is an excellent recipe against melancholy,

Aurum potabile, he discemnns and inveighs against it, by reason of the 
corrosive waters which are used in it: which argument our Dr. Guin urgeoth 
against D. Antonius. 2 Erastus concludes their philosophical stones and pot-
able gold, &c., "to be ro better than poison," a mere imposture, a non ens; 
dug out of that broody hill belike this golden stone is, ubi nasceitur ridiculus
murus. Paracelsus and his chemistical followers, as so many Promethei, will
fetch fire from heaven, will cure all manner of diseases with minerals, account-
ning them the only physic on the other side. 3 Paracelsus calls Galen, Hippo-
crates, and all their adherents, infants, idiots, sophisters, &c. Apagisis 
istas qui Vulcanias istos metamorphoses sugillant, insitice soboles, supinae pertinacie 
alumnas, &c., not worthy the name of physicians, for want of these remedies:
and brags that by them he can make a man live 160 years, or to the world's 
end, with their 5 Alexipharmacunc, Panaceas, Mummias, unguentum Arna-
rum, and such magnetic cures, Lampas vite et mortis, Balneum Diana, 
Balsamum, Electrum Magico-physicum, Anulela Martialis, &c. What will not he 
and his followers effect? He brags, moreover, that he was primus medi-
corum, and did more famous cures than all the physicians in Europe besides,
"a drop of his preparations should go farther than a drachm, or ounce of 
theirs," those loathsame and fulsome filthy potions, heteroclitical pills (so he 
calls them), horse medicines, ad quorum aspectum Cyclops Polyphemus echor-
rescet. And though some condemn their skill and magnetic cures as tend-
ing to magical superstition, witchery, charms, &c., yet they admire, stilly 
vindicte nevertheless, and infinitely prefer them. But those are both in 
extremes, the middle sort approve of minerals, though not in so high a degree.
Leminius, lib. 3. cap. 6. de occult. nat. mir. commends gold inwardly and out-
wardly used, as in rings, excellent good in medicines, and such mixtures as 
are made for melancholy men, saith Wecker, antid. spec. lib. 1. to whom 
lib. 5. cap. 21. de Cardiacis. Daniel Semertus, lib. 1. part. 2. cap. 9. Ander-
nacus, Libavius, Quercetanus, Oswaldus Crollius, Euvonymus, Rubens, and 
Matthiolius in the fourth book of his Epistles, Andreas à Blaven épist. ad 
Matthiolum, as commended and formerly used by Avicenna, Arnoldus, and 
many others: Matthiolius in the same place approves of potable gold, mer-
cury, with many such chemical confactions, and goes so far in approbation of 
them, that he holds "no man can be an excellent physician that hath not 
some skill in chemical distillations, and that chronic diseases can hardly be 
cured without mineral medicines:" look for antimony among purgers.

Aurum iudicium general, non in corde, sed in arcâ vivorum. 2 Chancer. 
Aurum non aurum. Noxiam ob aquas rodentes. 2 Ep. ad Monavium. Metallica omnia in universum quoqusum modo portata, nec 
tuto nec commode intra corpus sumi. 4 In parag. Statistissimus plus occipitis mei plus sed quam omnes 
vestri doctores, et calcemorium meorum annuili doctores sunt quam vester Galenus et Avicenna, barba mea 
plus exporta est quam vestre omnes Academia. 
Aurum diurem medium medium, qui non in hac distillatione chymica sit versus. Morbi chronici 
divinci citra metallica vix possint, aut ubi saugius corruptrit.
SUBSECT. V.—Compound alternatives; censure of compounds, and mixed physic.

Pliny, lib. 24. c. 1, bitterly taxeth all compound medicines, "[Men's knavery, imposture, and captious wits, have invented these shops, in which every man's life is set to sale: and by and by came in those compositions and inexplicable mixtures, far-fetched out of India and Arabia; a medicine for a botech must be had as far as the Red Sea." And "tis not without cause which he saith; for out of question they are much to blame in their compositions, whilst they make infinite variety of mixtures, as Fuchsius notes. "They think they get themselves great credit, excel others, and to be more learned than the rest, because they make many variations; but he accounts them fools, and whilst they brag of their skill, and think to get themselves a name, they become ridiculous, betray their ignorance and error." A few simples well prepared and understood, are better than such a heap of nonsense, confused compounds, which are in apothecaries' shops ordinarily sold. "In which many vain, superfluous, corrupt, exolute, things out of date are to be had (saith Cornarius); a company of barbarous names given to syrups, juleps, an unnecessary company of mixed medicines; rudis indigestaque mokes. Many times (as Agrippa taxeth), there is by this means "nmore danger from the medicine than from the disease," when they put together they know not what, or leave it to an illiterate apothecary to be made, they cause death and horror for health. Those old physicians had no such mixtures; a simple potion of hellebore in Hippocrates' time was the ordinary purge; and at this day, saith Mat. Riccius, in that flourishing commonwealth of China, "their physicians give precepts quite opposite to ours, not unhappy in their physic; they use altogether roots, herbs, and simples in their medicines, and all their physic in a manner is comprehended in a herbal: no science, no school, no art, no degree, but like a trade, every man in private is instructed of his master." 1 Cardan cracks that he can cure all diseases with water alone, as Hippocrates of old did most infirmities with one medicine. Let the best of our rational physicians demonstrate and give a sufficient reason for those intricate mixtures, why just so many simples in mitridate or treacle, why such and such quantity; may they not be reduced to half or a quarter? Frusta fit per plurra (as the saying is) quod fieri potest per pauciora; 300 simples in a julep, potion, or a little pill, to what end or purpose? I know not what Alkindus, Capivacius, Montagna, and Simon Eitover, the best of them all and most rational, have said in this kind; but neither he, they, nor any one of them, gives his reader, to my judgment, that satisfaction which he ought; why such, so many simples? Rog. Bacon hath taxed many errors in his tract de graduatonibus, explained some things, but not cleared. Mercurialis, in his book de composite medicinis, gives instance in Hamech, and Philonium Romanum, which Hamech an Arabian, and Philonius a Roman, long since composed, but crassæ as the rest. If they be so exact, as by him it seems they were, and those mixtures so perfect, why doth Fernelius alter the one, and why is the other obsolete? 2 Cardan taxeth Galen for presuming out of his ambition to correct Theriacum Andromachi, and we as justly may carp at all the rest. Galen's medicines are now exploded and rejected; what Nicholas Meripsa, Messe, Celsius, Scribanus,

Footnotes:
1 Frades hominum et ingeniorum capture, officinæ invendæ istas, in quibus sua quique venalis promittent via; statim compositiones et mixtures inexplicable ex Arabia et India, nescii parvo medicinis ab auro Mari importantur.
Actuarius, &c. writ of old, are most part contemned. Mellichius, Cordus, Wecker, Queretan Renodeus, the Venetian, Florentine states have their several receipts and magistralis: they of Nuremberg have theirs; and Augastana Pharmacopeia, peculiar medicines to the meridian of the city: London hers, every city, every town, almost every private man hath his own mixtures, compositions, receipts, magistralis, precepts, as he scorned antiquity, and all others in respect of himself. But each man must correct and alter to show his skill, every opinionate fellow must maintain his own paradox, be it what it will; Delirant reges, plectuntur Activi: they dote, and in the meantime the poor patients pay for their new experiments, the commonalty rue it.

Thus others object, thus I may conceive out of the weakness of my apprehension; but to say truth, there is no such fault, no such ambition, no novelty, or ostentation, as some suppose; but as one answers, this of compound medicines, "is a most noble and profitable invention found out, and brought into physic with great judgment, wisdom, counsel and discretion." Mixed diseases must have mixed remedies, and such simples are commonly mixed as have reference to the part affected, some to qualify, the rest to comfort, some one part, some another. Cardan and Brassiavola both hold that Nalhnum simplicem medicamentum sine noxi, no simple medicine is without hurt or offence; and although Hippocrates, Erasistratus, Dicole of old, in the infancy of this art, were content with ordinary simples: yet now, saith Augustinus, necessity compelleth to seek for new remedies, and to make compounds of simples, as well to correct their harms if cold, dry, hot, thick, thin, insipid, noisome to smell, to make them savoury to the palate, pleasant to taste and take, and to preserve them for continuance, by admixture of sugar, honey, to make them last months and years for several uses." In such cases, compound medicines may be approved, and Arnoldus, in his 18. aphorism, doth allow of it. "If simples cannot, necessity compels us to use compounds," so for receipts and magistralis, dies diem doci, one day teacheth another, and they are as so many words or phrases, Quae nunc sunt in honore vocabula si volet usus, ebb and flow with the season, and as wits vary, so they may be infinitely varied. "Quisque suum plurimum, quo capiatur, habet." "Every man as he likes, so many men so many minds," and yet all tending to good purpose, though not the same way. As arts and sciences, so physic is still perfected amongst the rest; Horae maturarum naturis, and experience teacheth us every day many things which our predecessors knew not of. Nature is not effete, as he saith, or so lavish, to bestow all her gifts upon an age, but hath reserved some for posterity, to show her power; that she is still the same, and not old or consumed. Birds and beasts can care themselves by nature, natura usu ea plerunque cognoscunt, quae homines vix longo labore et doctrinâ assequuntur, but "men must use much labour and industry to find it out." But I digress.

Compound medicines are inwardly taken or outwardly applied. Inwardly taken, be either liquid or solid: liquid, are fluid or consisting. Fluid, as wines, and syrups. The wines ordinarily used to this disease are wormwood wine, tamarisk, and buglossatum, wine made of borage and bugloss, the composition of which is specified in Arnoldus Villanovanus, lib. de vinis, of borage, balm, bugloss, cinnamon, &c., and highly commended for its virtues: "it drives

---

away leprosy, scabs, clears the blood, recreates the spirits, exhilarates the mind, purgeth the brain of those anxious black melancholy fumes, and cleanseth the whole body of that black humour by urine. To which I add," saith Villanovanus, "that it will bring madmen, and such raging bedlamites as are tied in chains, to the use of their reason again. My conscience bears me witness, that I do not lie, I saw a grave matron helped by this means; she was so choleric, and so furious sometimes, that she was almost mad, and beside herself; she said and did she knew not what, scolded, beat her maids, and was now ready to be bound till she drank of this borage wine, and by this excellent remedy was cured, which a poor foreigner, a silly beggar, taught her by chance, that came to crave an alms from door to door." The juice of borage, if it be clarified, and drunk in wine, will do as much, the roots sliced and steeped, &c. saith Ant. Mizaldus, art. med. who cites this story verbatim out of Villanovanus, and so doth Magninus, a physician of Milan, in his regimen of health. Such another excellent compound water I find in Rubens de distil. sec. 3, which he highly magnifies out of Savanarola, "as such as are solitary, dull, heavy, or sad without a cause, or be troubled with trembling of heart." Other excellent compound waters for melancholy, he cites in the same place, "if their melancholy be not inflamed, or their temperature over-hot." Evonimus hath a precious *aqua vitæ* to this purpose, for such as are cold. But he and most commend *aurum potabile*, and every writer prescribes clarified whey, with borage, bugloss, endive, succory, &c. of goat's milk especially, some indefinitely at all times, some thirty days together in the spring, every morning fasting, a good draught. Syrups are very good, and often used to digest this humour in the heart, spleen, liver, &c. As syrup of borage (there is a famous syrup of borage highly commended by Laurentius to this purpose in his tract of melancholy), *de pomis* of king Sabor, now obsolete, of thyme and epithyme, hops, sceleopendria, fumitory, maidenhair, bizantine, &c. These are most used for preparatives to other physic, mixed with distilled waters of like nature, or in juleps otherwise.

Consisting, are conserves or confectons; conserves of borage, bugloss, balm, fumitory, succory, maidenhair, violets, roses, wormwood, &c. Confections, treacle, mirthruithe, ecleums, or linctures, &c. Solid, as aromatical confections: hot, *diambræ*, *diamargaritæ calidum*, *dianthus*, *diamoschum dulce*, *electuarium de gemmis*, *latifolius Galeni Et Rhaïs*, *diagalinga*, *diacimynæm*, *diamium*, *diatrin piperion*, *diacinciber*, *diaoæper*, *diacimynænum*: Cold, *as diamargaritæ frigidum*, *diacoriolli*, *diarrhodon abatæ*, *diacodion*, &c. as every *pharmacæa* will show you, with their tables or losings that are made out of them; with condites and the like.

Outwardly used as occasion serves, as amuletts, oils hot and cold, as of camomile, stæchados, violets, roses, almonds, poppy, nymphæa, mandrake, &c. to be used after bathing, or to procure sleep.

Ointments composed of the said species, oils and wax, &c. as *Alablas trium Populeum*, some hot, some cold, to moisten, procure sleep, and correct other accidents.

Liniments are made of the same matter to the like purpose: emplasters of herbs, flowers, roots, &c. with oils, and other liquors mixed and boiled together.

Cataplasms, salves, or poultices made of green herbs, pounded or sod in water till they be soft, which are applied to the hypochondries, and other parts when the body is empty.

Cerotes are applied to several parts and frontals, to take away pain, grief,
heat, procure sleep. Fomentations or sponges, wet in some decoctions, &c., epithemata, or those moist medicines, laid on linen, to bathe and cool several parts misaffected.

Sacculi, or little bags of herbs, flowers, seeds, roots, and the like, applied to the head, heart, stomach, &c., odoramors, balls, perfumes, posies to smell to, all which have their several uses in melancholy, as shall be shown, when I treat of the cure of the distinct species by themselves.

MEMB. II.

SUBJECT. I.—Purging Simples upward.

MELANAGOGA, or melancholy purging medicines, are either simple or compound, and that gently, or violently, purging upward or downward. These following purge upward. 7 Asarum or Assarabaceae, which, as Mesue saith, is hot in the second degree, and dry in the third, "it is commonly taken in wine, whey," or as with us, the juice of two or three leaves, or more sometimes, pounded in posset drink qualified with a little liquorice, or aniseed, to avoid the fulnessomeness of the taste, or as Diaserum Fernali. 8 Brasivola, in Catert, reckons it up amongst those simples that only purge melancholy, and Ruellius confirms as much out of his experience, that it purgeth 9 black choler, like hellebore itself. Galen, lib. 6. simpic. and 10 Matthiolus ascribe other virtues to it, and will have it purge other humours as well as this.

Laurel, by Heurnius's method, ad prax. lib. 2. cap. 24. is put amongst the strong purgers of melancholy; it is hot and dry in the fourth degree. Dioscorides, lib. 11. cap. 114. adds other effects to it. 11 Pliny sets down fifteen berries in drink for a sufficient potion: it is commonly corrected with his opposites, cold and moist, as juice of endive, purslane, and is taken in a potion to seven grains and a half. But this and assarabaceae, every gentlewoman in the country knows how to give; they are two common vomits.

Scilla, or sea-onion, is hot and dry in the third degree. Brasivola in Catert. out of Mesue, others, and his own experience, will have this simple to purge "melancholy alone. It is an ordinary vomit, vinum scilliticum, mixed with rubel in a little white wine.

White hellebore, which some call sneezing-powder, a strong purger upward, which many reject, as being too violent: Mesue and Averroes will not admit of it, "by reason of danger of suffocation," "great pain and trouble it puts the poor patient to," saith Dodoneus. Yet Galen, lib. 6. simp. med. and Dioscorides, cap. 145. allow of it. It was indeed "terrible in former times," as Pliny notes, but now familiar, insomuch that many took it in those days, "that were students, to quicken their wits," which Persius, Sat. 1. objects to Accius the poet, Ilias Acci ebria veratro. 12 It helps melancholy, the falling sickness, madness, gout, &c., but not to be taken of old men, youths, such as are weaklings, nice, or effeminate, troubled with headache, high-coloured, or fear strangling," saith Dioscorides. 13 Oribasius, an old physician, hath written very copiously, and approves of it, "in such affections which can otherwise hardly be cured." Heurnius, lib. 2. prax. med. de vomitoribus, will not have it used "but with great caution by reason of its strength, and then when antimony will do no good," which caused Hermophilus to compare it to a stout

7 Heurnius: datur in sero lactis, aut vino. 8 Veratri modo expurgat cerebrum, roborat memoram. Fuchsius. 9 Crassos et biliosos humores per vomitum educt. 10 Vomitum et menues cit; valuit ad hydroprop. &c. 11 Materiae astras educit. 12 Ab arte idee rejicendam, ob periculum suffocations. 13 Cap. 16. magna vi educt, et molestia cum summa. 14 Quamdam terribile. 15 Nulli studiorum gratia ad providencia acris quae commentabantur. 16 Medectur comitibus, melancholici, pedagogiis; vetatur senibus, pueros, melibus et effeminatis. 17 Collect. 8. cap. 3. in affectibus illa quae difflicued curantur, Helleborum damnum. 18 Non sine simia curante nec remedio utemur; est enim validissimum, et quam vires Antimoni contemnit morbus, in auxilium erocarat; modo valde viros efflorescant.
Cure of Melancholy.

[Part. 2. Sec. 4.

captain (as Codronchus observes, cap. 7. comment. de Helleb.) that will see all his soldiers go before him and come post principia, like the bragging soldier, last himself; 1 when other helps fail in inveterate melancholy, in a desperate case, this vomit is to be taken. And yet for all this, if it be well prepared, it may be 2 securely give at first. 3 Matthiolius brags, that he hath often, to the good of many, made use of it, and Heurnius, "that he hath happily used it, prepared after his own prescription," and with good success. Christophorus a Vega, lib. 3. c. 41, is of the same opinion, that it may be lawfully given; and our country gentlewomen find it by their common practice, that there is no such great danger in it. Dr. Turner, speaking of this plant in his Herbal, telleth us, that in his time it was an ordinary receipt among good wives, to give heliobore in powder to ii4 weight, and he is not much against it. But they do commonly exceed, for who so bold as blind Bayard, and prescribe it by pennyworths, and such irrational ways, as I have heard myself market folks ask for it in an apothecary's shop: but with what success God knows; they smart often for their rash boldness and folly, break a vein, make their eyes ready to start out of their heads, or kill themselves. So that the fault is not in the physic, but in the rude and indiscreet handling of it. He that will know, therefore, when to use, how to prepare it aright, and in what dose, let him read Heurnius, lib. 2. prax. med., Brassivola de Catart., Godefridus Stegius, the emperor Rudolphus physician, cap. 16. Matthiolius in Dioscor, and that excellent commentary of Baptista Codronchus, which is instar omnium de Helleb. alb, where we shall find great diversity of examples and receipts.

Antimony or stibium, which our chemists so much magnify, is either taken in substance or infusion, &c., and frequently prescribed in this disease. "It helps all infirmities," saith 4 Matthiolius, "which proceed from black choler, falling sickness, and hypochondriacal passions;" and for farther proof of his assertion, he gives several instances of such as have been freed with it: 5 one of Andrew Gallus, a physician of Trent, that after many other essays, "imputes the recovery of his health, next after God, to this remedy alone." Another of George Handshius, that in like sort, when other medicines failed, 6 "was by this restored to his former health, and which of his knowledge others have likewise tried, and by the help of this admirable medicine, been recovered." A third of a parish priest at Prague in Bohemia, 7 that was so far gone with melancholy that he doted, and spake he knew not what; but after he had taken twelve grains of stibium (as I myself saw, and can witness, for I was called to see this miraculous accident), he was purged of a deal of black choler, like little gobbets of flesh, and all his excrements were as black blood (a medicine fitter for a horse than a man), yet it did him so much good, that the next day he was perfectly cured." This very story of the Bohemian priest, Skenkius relates verbatim, Exoter. experiment. ad var. morb. cent. 6. observe. 6. with great approbation of it. Hercules de Saxonii calls it a profitable medicine, if it be taken after meat to six or eight grains, of such as are apt to vomit. Rodericus a Fonseca the Spaniard, and late professor of Padua in Italy, extolls it to this disease, Tom. 2. consult. 83. so doth Lod. Mercatus de inter. morb. cur. lib. 1. cap. 17. with many others. Jacobus Gervinus a French physician, on the other side, lib. 2. de venenis confut. explodes all this, and saith he took three grains only upon Matthiolius and some others' com-

1 Ethis tetrab. cap. 1. ser. 2. 2 Is solum dari vult Helleborum album, qui secum sper non habent, non it qui Syneopem timent, &c. 3 Cum salutem multorum. 4 Nos facile sine utinam nostro preparato Hellebores albo. 5 In lib. 5. Dioscor. cap. 3. Omnibus opulatulus morbis, quo astraebat excited, comitialibus, ilisque prescribit qui hypochondriae obstante passiose. 6 Andreas Gallus, Tridentini medici, salutem hui medicamento post Deum debet. 7 Integra sustitit, nevo vestrutus. 8 Id quod alius accidisse solo, qui hoc mirabilis medicamento uti sunt. 9 Qui melancholicius factus planius desiplabat, multaque stulte lequabatur, hui exibitum 12. gr. sanitatis, quo paulo post astraebam ex alvo eductus (at ego vidi, qui vocatur tanquam ad miraculam uti testati possunt), et fariet a tanquam carnis dissecta in partes totum excremenum tanquam saeculentum nigerinam pigmentum representaret.
Compound Purgers.

Polypondy and epithyme are, without all exceptions, gentle purgers of melancholy. Dioscorides will have them void phlegm; but Brassivola out of his experience avereth, that they purge this humour; they are used in decoction, infusion, &c., simple, mixed, &c.

Myrobalanes, all five kinds, are happily prescribed against melancholy and quartan agues; Brassivola speaks out of a thousand experiences, he gave them in pills, decoctions, &c., look for peculiar receipts in him.

Stocchas, fumitory, dodder, herb mercury, roots of capers, genista or broom, pennyroyal and half boiled cabbage, I find in this catalogue of purgers of black choler, origin, featherfew, ammoniac salt, saltpetre. But these are very gentle; alpyrus, dragon root, centaury, dittany, colutea, which Fuchsius, cap. 168, and others take for senna, but most distinguish. Senna is in the middle of violent and gentle purgers downward, hot in the second degree, dry in the first. Brassivola calls it "a wonderful herb against melancholy, it scourcs the blood, lightens the spirits, shakes off sorrow, a most profitable medicine," as Dodoneus terms it, invented by the Arabians, and not heard of before. It is taken diverse ways, in powder, infusion, but most commonly in the infusion, with ginger, or some cordial flowers added to correct it. Actuarius commends it sodden in broth, with an old cock, or in whey, which is the common conveyer of all such things as purge black choler; or steeped in wine, which Heurnius accounts sufficient without any farther correction.

Aloes by most is said to purge choler, but Aurelianus, lib. 2, c. 6. de morb. chron., Aurelianus, cap. 6. in 9, Rhais, Julius Alexandrinus, consul. 185. Scotttz., Crato, consul. 189. Scotttz. prescribe it to this disease; as good for the stomach and to open the haemorrhoids, out of Mesue, Rhasis, Serapio, Avicenna; Menardus, ep. lib. 1. epist. 1. opposeth it, aloes, "doth not open the veins," or move the haemorrhoids, which Leonhartus Fuchsius, paradox. lib. 1. likewise affirms; but Brassivola and Dodoneus defend Mesue out of their experience; let Valesius end the controversy.

Lapis armenus and lazuli are much magnified by Alexander, lib. 1. cap. 16, Avicenna, Ælius, and Actuarius, if they be well washed, that the water

---

mendation, but it almost killed him, whereupon he concludes, "antimony is rather poison than a medicine." Th. Erastus conurs with him in his opinion, and so doth Ælian Montaltus, cap. 30. de melan. But what do I talk? 'tis the subject of whole books; I might cite a century of authors pro and con. I will conclude with "Zuinger, antimony is like Scanderbeg's sword, which is either good or bad, strong or weak, as the party is that prescribes, or useth it: "a worthy medicine if it be rightly applied to a strong man, otherwise poison." For the preparing of it, look in Evonini thesaurus, Querctetan, Oswaldus Crollius, Basal. Chim. Basal. Valentinus, &c.

[Continued on page 442]
be no more coloured, fifty times, some say. "\(^1\) That good Alexander (saith Guianeriust) puts such confidence in this one medicine, that he thought all melancholy passions might be cured by it; and I for my part have oftentimes happily used it, and was never deceived in the operation of it." The like may be said of lapis lazuli, though it be somewhat weaker than the other. Garcia ab Horto, hist. lib. 1. cap. 65. relates, that the \(^2\) physicians of the Moors familiarly prescribe it to all melancholy passions, and Matthiolus, \(^3\) lib. 3. 

\(^1\) Tract. 15. c. 6. Bonus Alexander, tantam lapide Armeno confidemtiam habuit, ut omnes melancholici passiones ab eo curari posses erederet, et ego inde empirissime usus sum, et in ejus exhibitione nuquam fraudatus fui. 

\(^2\) Mitterius medici hoc lapide plerique purganti melancholiam, &c. 

\(^3\) Qno ego sese feliciter usus sum, ut magno cum auriculo. 

\(^4\) Multa corpora vidi gravissimam hinc agitatis, et stomaco mutuam obdiss. 

\(^5\) Scull. 

\(^6\) Cum visisset ab eo curari capras furentes, &c. 

\(^7\) Hist. lib. 6. simplic. med. 

\(^8\) Pseudo., act. 4. 

\(^9\) C. u. ]

\(^1\) Cure of Melancholy. [Part 2. Sec. 4.

\(^2\) bafrags of that happy success which he still had in the administration of it. Nicholas Merippus puts it amongst the best remedies, sect. 1. cap. 12. in Antidotis; "\(^1\) and if this will not serve (saith Rhasis), then there remains nothing but lapis armenus and hellebore itself." Valescens and Jason Pratensis much commend pulvis hali, which is made of it. James Damascen. \(^2\) cap. 12. Hercules de Saxonii, &c., speaks well of it. Crato will not approve this; it and both hellebore, he saith, are no better than poison. Victor Trincavellius, \(^3\) lib. 2. cap. 14. found it in his experience, "\(^4\) to be very noisome, to trouble the stomach, and hurt their bodies that take it overmuch."

Black hellebore, that most renowned plant, and famous purger of melancholy, which all antiquity so much used and admired, was first found out by Melanpodius a shepherd, as Pliny records, \(^4\) lib. 25. cap. 5. \(^5\) who, seeing it to purge his goats when they raved, practised it upon Elige and Calene, King Prætus' daughters, that ruled in Arcadia, near the fountain Clitorius, and restored them to their former health. In Hippocrates' time it was in only request, insomuch that he writ a book of it, a fragment of which remains yet. Theophrastus, \(^6\) Galen, Pliny, Cælius Aurelianus, as ancient as Galen, \(^7\) lib. 1. cap. 6, Aretus, \(^8\) lib. 1. cap. 5, Oribasius, \(^9\) lib. 7. collect. a famous Greek, \(^10\) Aëtius, \(^11\) ser. 3. cap. 112 & 113 p. \(^12\) Aëgineta, Galen's Ape, \(^13\) lib. 7. cap. 4, Actuarius, \(^14\) Trallianus, \(^15\) lib. 5. cap. 15, Cornelius Celsius only remaining of the old Latins, \(^16\) lib. 3. cap. 23. extol and admire this excellent plant; and it was generally so much esteemed of the ancients for this disease amongst the rest, that they sent all such as were crazed, or that doted, to the Anticyre, or to Phocis in Achaia, to be purged, where this plant was in abundance to be had. In Strabo's time it was an ordinary voyage, \(^17\) Naviget Anticyras; a common proverb among the Greeks and Latins, to bid a dizzard or a mad man go take hellebore; as in Lucian, Meippus to Tantalus, \(^18\) Tantala, desipis, hellebo qua epoto tibi opusset, coque sune meraco, thou art out of thy little wit, O Tantalus, and must needs drink hellebore, and that without mixture. Aristophanes in \(^19\) Vespis, drink hellebore, &c., and Harpax in the \(^20\) Comedian, told Simo and Ballio, two doting fellows, that they had need to be purged with this plant. When that proud Mena- 

\(^1\) Qui non nisi potus ad arma—prosluit dicanda, and as our poets drink sack to improve their inventions (I find it so registered by Agellius, \(^21\) lib. 17, cap. 15.) Carneades the academic, when he was set to write against Zeno the stoic, purged himself with hellebore first, which Petronius puts upon Chrysippus. In such esteem it continued for many ages,
Compound Purgers.

443
till at length Mesue and some other Arabians began to reject and reprehend it, upon whose authority for many following lustres, it was much debased and quite out of request, held to be poison and no medicine; and is still oppugned to this day by Crato and some junior physicians. Their reasons are, because Aristotle, l. 1. de plant. c. 3. said, henbane and hellebore were poison; and Alexander Aphrodisius, in the preface of his problems, gave out, that (speaking of hellebore) "Quails fed on that which was poison to men." Galen, l. 6. Epid. com. 5. Text. 35. confirms as much: "Constantine the emperor in his Geoponicks, attributes no other virtue to it, than to kill mice and rats, flies and mouldwarps, and so Mizaldus, Nicander of old, Gervinus, Sckenkious, and some other Neoterics that have written of poisons, speak of hellebore in a chief place. 

Nicholas Leonicus hath a story of Solon, that besieging, I know not what city, steeped hellebore in a spring of water, which by pipes was conveyed into the middle of the town, and so either poisoned, or else made them so feeble and weak by purging, that they were not able to bear arms. Nothwithstanding all these cavils and objections, most of our late writers do much approve of it.

Gariopontus, lib. 1. cap. 13, Codrouchus, com. de helleb., Fallopia, lib. de. med. purg. simp. cap. 69. et consil. 15. Trincavelli, Montanus 239, Prisemelica consil. 14, Hercules de Saxoniâ, so that it be opportunely given. Jacobus de Dondiis, Agg. Amatus, Lucet. cent. 66, Godef. Stegius, cap. 13, Hollerius, and all our herbalists subscribe. Fernelius, meth. med. lib. 5. cap. 16, "confesseth it to be a terrible purge and hard to take, yet well given to strong men, and such as have able bodies." P. Forestus and Capivaccius forbid it to be taken in substance, but allow it in decoction or infusion, both which ways, P. Monavius approves above all others, Epist. 231. Scolttzi; Jacchinus in 9. Rhasis commends a receipt of his own preparing; Penottus another of his chemically prepared, Evonimns another. Hildesheim, spicil. 2. de mel. hath many examples how it should be used, with diversity of receipts. Heurnius, lib. 7. prax. med. cap. 14, "calls it an innocent medicine howsoever, if it be well prepared." The root of it is only in use, which may be kept many years, and by some given in substance, as by Fallopia and Brassiiola amongst the rest, who brags that he was the first that restored it again to its use, and tells a story how he cured one Melatasta, a madman, that was thought to be possessed, in the Duke Ferrara's court, with one purge of black hellebore in substance: the receipt is there to be seen; his excrements were like ink, he perfectly healed at once; Vidas Vidius, a Dutch physician, will not admit of it in substance, to whom most subscribe, but as before in the decoction, infusion, or which is all in all, in the extract, which he prefers before the rest, and calls suave medicamentum, a sweet medicine, an easy, that may be securely given to women, children, and weaklings. Paracelsus, horto geniadi, terms it maximus praeservative medicamentum, a medicine of great worth and note. Quercetan in his Spagyir. Phar. and many others, tell wonders of the extract. Paracelsus, above all the rest, is the greatest admirer of this plant; and especially the extract, he calls it theriacum, terrestre balsamum, another treacle, a terresstial balm, instar omnium, "all in all, the sole and last refuge to cure this malady, the gout, epilepsy, lepsory," &c. If this will not help, no physic in the world can but mineral, it is the upshot of all. Matthiolus laughs at those that except against it, and though some abhor it out of the authority of Mesue,
and dare not adventure to prescribe it, "yet I, (saith he) have happily used it six hundred times without offence, and communicated it to divers worthy physicians, who have given me great thanks for it." Look for receipts, dose, preparation, and other cautions concerning this simple, in him, Brassivola, Paracelsus, Codronchus, and the rest.

**SUBSECT. III.—Compound Purgers.**

Compound medicines which purge melancholy, are either taken in the superior or inferior parts: superior at mouth or nostrils. At the mouth swallowed or not swallowed: If swallowed liquid or solid: liquid, as compound wine of hellebore, scilla or sea-onion, senna, *Vinum Scilliticum, Helleboratum*, which *Quercetan* so much applauds "for melancholy and madness, either inwardly taken, or outwardly applied to the head, with little pieces of linen dipped warm in it." *Oxymel Scilliticum, Syrupus Helleboratus* major and minor in Quercetan, and *Syrupus Genista* for hypochondriacal melancholy in the same author, compound syrup ofsuccory, of fumitory, polyody, &c. Heurnius his purging cockbroth. Some except against these syrups, as appears by Udalarinus Leonorus his epistle to Matthiolus, as most pernicious, and that out of Hippocrates, *costa movere, et medicari*, non cruda, no raw things to be used in physic; but this in the following epistle is exploded and soundly confuted by Matthiolus: many juleps, potions, receipts, are composed of these, as you shall find in Hil- de-heim, *spic. 2.*, Heurnius, lib. 2. cap. 14. George Sckenkiius, *Ital. med. prac.* &c.

Solid purges are confections, electuaries, pills by themselves, or compound with others, as de lapide lato rugoso, armeno, *pil. indec.*, of fumitory, &c. Confection of Hacem, which though most approbe, Solaneder, sec. 5. *consil. 22.* bitterly inveighs against, so doth Rondoletius Pharmacop. officina, Fernelius and others; diaesena, diapolypodium, diacassia, diacatholicon, Wecker's electuaries de Ephthymo, Ptleomy's hieroglagodium, of which divers receipts are daily made.

Aetius, 22. 23. commends Hieraa Rustf. Trincavellius, *consil. 12.*, *lib. 4.* approves of Hiera; non, inquit, *invenio medicamentum* I find no better medicine, he saith. Heurnius adds *pil. aggregat.*, pills de Ephthymo, *pil. Ind.* Mesae describes in the *Florentine Antidotary*, Pilulae sine quibus esse nolo, Pilulae Chochii cum Helleboro, *Pil. Arabico, Feticidae, de quine generis mirabolanorum*, &c. More proper to melancholy, not excluding in the meantime, turbith, manna, rhubarb, aegaric, elescape, &c., which are not so proper to this humour. For, as Montaltus holds cap. 30. and Montanus, *cholera etiam purganda quod actual sit palatum*, cholere is to be purged because it feeds the other: and some are of an opinion, as Erasistratus and Aesoipiades maintained of old, against whom Galen disputes, "that no physic doth purge one humour alone, but all alike or what is next." Most therefore in their receipts and magistrals which are coined here, make a mixture of several simples and compounds to purge all humors in general as well as this. Some rather use potions than pills to purge this humour, because that as Heurnius and Crato observe, *hic sucus ad sicco remedio aeger trahitur*, this juice is not so easily drawn by dry remedies, and as Montanus adviseth 25 cons. "All *dry* drying medicines are to be repelled, as aloe, hiera," and all pills whatsoever, because the disease is dry of itself.

I might here insert many receipts of prescribed potions, boles, &c. The doses of these, but that they are common in every good physician, and that I am loth to incur the censure of Forestus, *lib. 3.*, *cap. 6.*, *de urinis*, "*aghast against

those that divulge and publish medicines in their mother-tongue," and lest I should give occasion thereby to some ignorant reader to practise on himself, without the consent of a good physician.

Such as are not swallowed, but only kept in the mouth, are gargarisms used commonly after a purge, when the body is soluble and loose. Or apoplecticisms, masticators, to be held and chewed in the mouth, which are gentle, as hyssop, origan, pennyroyal, thyme, mustard; strong, as pellitory, pepper, ginger, &c.

Such as are taken into the nostrils, errhina are liquid or dry, juice of pimpernel, onions, &c., castor, pepper, white hellebore, &c. To these you may add odoraments, perfumes, and suffumigations, &c.

Taken into the inferior parts are clysters strong or weak, suppositorys of Castiliansoap, honeyboiled to a consistence; or stronger of scammony, hellebore, &c.

These are all used, and prescribed to this malady upon several occasions, as shall be shown in its place.

MEMB. III.

Chirurgical Remedies.

In letting of blood three main circumstances are to be considered, "Who, how much, when." That is, that it be done to such a one as may endure it, or to whom it may belong, that he be of a competent age, not too young, nor too old, overweak, fat, or lean, sore laboured, but to such as have need, are full of bad blood, noxious humours, and may be eased by it.

The quantity depends upon the party's habit of body, as he is strong or weak, full or empty, may spare more or less.

In the morning is the fittest time: some doubt whether it be best fasting, or full, whether the moon's motion or aspect of planets be to be observed; some affirm, some deny, some grant in acute, but not in chronic diseases, whether before or after physic. 'Tis Heurnius' aphorism à phlebotomia auspicandum esse curationem, non à phar-macia, you must begin with blood-letting and not physic; some except this peculiar malady. But what do I? Horatius Augenius, a physician of Padua, hath lately writ 17 books of this subject, Jobertus, &c.

Particular kinds of blood-letting in use are three, first is that opening a vein in the arm with a sharp knife, or in the head, knees, or any other parts, as shall be thought fit.

Cupping-glasses with or without scarification, ocysissè compescunt, saith Fernelius, they work presently, and are applied to several parts, to divert humours, aches, winds, &c.

Horse-leeches are much used in melancholy, applied especially to the hemorrhoids. Horatius Augenius, lib. 10. cap. 10. Platerus, de mentis alienat. cap. 3. Altomarus, Piso, and many others, prefer them before any evacuations in this kind.

1Cauteries or searing with hot irons, combustions, borings, lancings, which, because they are terrible, Dropax and Sinapismus are invented by plasters to raise blisters, and heating medicines of pitch, mustard-seed, and the like.

Issues still to be kept open, made as the former, and applied in and to several parts, have their use here on divers occasions, as shall be shown.

\[1\] Quis, quantum, quando.  
\[k\] Fernelius, lib. 2. cap. 19.  
\[1\] Remdeus, lib. 5. cap. 21. de his Mercavialis lib. 3. de composit. medic. cap. 21.  
\[k\] Younians, lib. 1. prax. medic. Wecker, &c.
SECT. V. MEMB. I.

SUBSECT. I.—Particular Cure of the three several Kinds; of Head-Melancholy.

The general cures thus briefly examined and discussed, it remains now to apply these medicines to the three particular species or kinds, that, according to the several parts affected, each man may tell in some sort how to help or ease himself. I will treat of head-melancholy first, in which, as in all other good cures, we must begin with diet, as a matter of most moment, able oftentimes of itself to work this effect. I have read, saith Laurentius, cap. 8. de Melanch. that in old diseases which have gotten the upper hand or a habit, the manner of living is to more purpose, than whatsoever can be drawn out of the most precious boxes of the apothecaries. This diet, as I have said, is not only in choice of meat and drink, but of all those other non-natural things. Let air be clear and moist most part: diet moistening, of good juice, easy of digestion, and not windy: drink clear, and well brewed, not too strong, nor too small. "Make a melancholy man fat," as 2Rhasis saith, "and thou hast finished the cure." Exercise not too remiss, nor too violent. Sleep a little more than ordinary. 3Excrements daily to be voided by art or nature; and which Fernelius enjoins his patient, consil. 44. above the rest, to avoid all passions and perturbations of the mind. Let him not be alone or idle (in any kind of melancholy), but still accompanied with such friends and familiars he most affects, neatly dressed, washed, and combed, according to his ability at least, in clean sweet linen, spruce, handsome, decent, and good apparel; for nothing sooner dejects a man than want, squarol, and nastiness, foul or old clothes out of fashion. Concerning the medicinal part, he that will satisfy himself at large (in this precedent of diet) and see all at once, the whole cure and manner of it in every distinct species, let him consult with Gordonius, Valescus, with Prosper Calenus, lib. de atra bile ad Card. Cæsim, Laurentius, cap. 8. et 9. de melan. Ælian Montaltus, de mel. cap. 26, 27, 28, 29, 30. Donat. ab Altomari, cap. 7. artis med. Hercules de Saxoniâ, in Panth. cap. 7. et Tract. ejus peculiar. de melan. per Bolzetam, edit. Venetiis, 1620. cap. 17, 18, 19. Savanarola, Rub. 82. Tract. 8. cap. 1. Scenknius, in prax. curat. Ital. med. Heurnius, cap. 12. de morb. Victorius Favourinus, pract. Magn. et Empir. Hildesheim, Spicel. 2. de man. et mel. Fel. Platter, Stockerus, Bruel, P. Bayers, Forestus, Fuchsius, Cappavaccius, Rondoletius, Jason Pratensis, Sallust. Salvian. de remedi. lib. 2. cap. 1. Jacchinus, in 9. Rhasis, Lod. Mercatus, de Inter. morb. cur. lib. 1. cap. 17. Alexan. Messaria, pract. med. lib. 1. cap. 21. de mel. Piso, Hollerius, &c. that have culled out of those old Greeks, Arabians, and Latins, whatsoever is observable or fit to be, used. Or let him read those counsels and consultations of Hugo Senensis, consil. 13. et 14. Renerus Solinander, consil. 6. sec. 1. et consil. 3. sec. 3. Crato, consil. 16. lib. 1. Montanus, 20, 22. and his following counsels. Lælius à Fonte Engubinus, consult. 44. 69, 77, 120, 129, 142. Fernelius, consil. 44. 45. 46. Jul. Caesar Claudinus, Mercurialis, Frambesarius, Sennertus, &c. Wherein he shall find particular receipts, the whole method, preparatives, purgers, correctors, averters, cordials in great variety and abundance: out of which, because every man cannot attend to read or peruse them, I will collect for the benefit of the reader, some few more notable medicines.

SUBSECT. II.—Blood-letting.

Phlebotomy is promiscuously used before and after physic, commonly before, and upon occasion is often reiterated, if there be any need at least of it. For

\[\text{Cont. lib. 1. u. 9. festines ad impinguationem. et cum impinguanatur, removetur malum.}\]

\[\text{Beneficiul ventris.}\]
Galen, and many others, make a doubt of bleeding at all in this kind of melancholy. If the malady, saith Piso, cap. 23. and Altomarus, cap. 7. Fuchsius, cap. 33. "shall proceed primarily from the misaffected brain, the patient in such case shall not need at all to bleed, except the blood otherwise abound, the veins be full, inflamed blood, and the party ready to run mad." In immantrue melancholy, which especially comes from a cold distemper of spirits, Hercules de Saxoniæ, cap. 17. will not admit of phlebotomy; Laurentius, cap. 9, approves it out of the authority of the Arabians; but as Mesue, Rhasis, Alexander appoint, "especially in the head," to open the veins in the forehead, nose and ears is good. They commonly set cupping-glasses on the party's shoulders, having first scarified the place, they apply horse-leeches on the head, and in all melancholy diseases, whether essential or accidental, they cause the haemorrhoids to be opened, having the eleventh aphorism of the sixth book of Hippocrates for their ground and warrant, which saith, "That in melancholy and mad men, the variegate tumour or haemorrhoids appearing doth heal the same." Yalesius prescribes blood-letting in all three kinds, whom Sallust. Salvian follows. "If the blood abound, which is discerned by the fulness of the veins, his precedent diet, the party's laughter, age, &c. begin with the median or middle vein of the arm: if the blood be ruddy and clear, stop it, but if black in the spring time, or a good season, or thick, let it run, according to the party's strength: and some eight or twelve days after, open the head vein, and the veins in the forehead, or provoke it out of the nostrils, or cupping glasses," &c. Trallianus allows of this, "if there have been any suppression or stopping of blood at nose, or haemorrhoids, or women's months, then to open a vein in the head or about the ankles." Yet he doth hardly approve of this course, if melancholy be situated in the head alone, or in any other dotage, "except it primarily proceed from blood, or that the malady be increased by it; for blood-letting refrigerates and dries up, except the body be very full of blood, and a kind of ruddines in the face." Therefore I conclude with Areteus, "before you let blood, deliberate of it," and well consider all circumstances belonging to it.

SUBSECT. III.—Preparatives and Purgers.

After blood-letting we must proceed to other medicines; first prepare, and then purge, Augeee stabulum purgare, make the body clean before we hope to do any good. Walter Bruel would have a practitioner begin first with a elysier of his, which he prescribes before blood-letting; the common sort, as Mercurialis, Montaltus, cap. 30. &c. proceed from lenitives to preparatives, and so to purgers. Lenitives are well known, electuarium lenitivum, diaphenicum, diaeatholicon, &c. Preparatives are usually syrups of borage, bugloss, apples, fumitory, thyme and epymthyme, with double as much of the same decoction or distilled water, or of the waters of bugloss, balm, hops, endive, scolopendry, fumitory, &c. or these sodden in whey, which must be reiterated and used for many days together. Purges come last, "which must not be used at all, if the malady may be otherwise helped," because they weaken nature and dry so much; and in giving of them, "we must begin with the gentlest first." Some forbid all hot medicines, as Alexander, and Salvianus, &c. Ne inacc...

6 Si ex primario cerebri affectu melancholici easerint, sanguis transactio non indiget, nisi ob alias causas sanguis mittatur, si mutus in vasis, &c. frustra enim fituratur corpus, &c. 5 Competit hic phlebotomia frontis. 4 Si sanguis abundat, quod sitar ex venarium repletione, vicis ratione precedentem, ris agri, stator et allis, tandem mediana; et si sanguis apparat clarus et ruber, supprimatur; aut si sie, siber ut camas permittatur sine pro viribus aegri, dein post 8 vel 12 die aperiatur cephalica partis magis affecta, et vena frontis, aut sanguis provocetur setis de pares, &c. 7 Si quibus connexa ut sanguis sunt mensae, &c. talis, &c. si sanguis peccet cerebro. 4 Nisi orum fucat a sanguine, ne morbus inde augeratur: phlebotomia refrigeret et exsecraci, nisi corpus sit valde sanguineum, rubicandum. 1 Cum sanguinem detrahere operet, deliberatione indiget. Areteus, lib. 7. c. 5. 8 A leniortibus auspicandum. (Yalesius, Piso, Bruel) rarissima medicamenta purgantibus utendum, ni sit opus.
Cure of Melancholy.

[Part. 2. Sec. 5.]

niores inde fiant, hot medicines increase the disease *x by drying too much.

Purge downward rather than upward, use potions rather than pills, and when you begin physic, persevere and continue in a course; for as one observes, y movere et non educere in omnibus malum est; to stir up the humour (as one purge commonly doth) and not to prosecute, doth more harm than good. They must continue in a course of physic, yet not so that they tire and oppress nature, danda quies nature, they must now and then remit, and let nature have some rest. The most gentle purges to begin with, are *senna, cassia, epithyme, myrobalanes, catholicum: if these prevail not, we may proceed to stronger, as the confection of hamech, pil. Inde, fumitorium, de assaieret, of laps armenus and lazuli, diasena. Or if pills be too dry; *some prescribe both hellebores in the last place, amongst the rest Aretus, *b because this disease will resist a gentle medicine." Laurentius and Hercules de Saxonìa would have antimony tried last, *a if the "party be strong, and it warily given." Trincavelius prefers hierologidum, to whom Francis Alexander in his Apol. rad. 5. subscribes, a very good medicine they account it. But Crato in a counsel of his, for the Duke of Bavaria's chancellor, wholly rejects it.

I find a vast chaos of medicines, a confusion of receipts and magistrals, amongst writers, appropriated to this disease; some of the chiefest I will rehearse. *To be sea-sick first, is very good at seasonable times. Helleborismus Matthioli, with which he vaunts and boasts he did so many several cures, *f I never gave it (saith he), but after once or twice, by the help of God, they were happily cured. The manner of making it he sets down at large in his third book of Epist. to George Hankshius a physician. Walter Bruel, and Herurnius, make mention of it with great approbation; so doth Skenkius in his memorable cures, and experimental medicines, cen. 6. obser. 37. That famous Helleborimus of Montanus, which he so often repeats in his consultations and counsels, as 28. pro melan. succedote, et consil. 148. pro hypochon- driaco, and cracks, *u to be a most sovereign remedy for all melancholy persons, which he hath often given without offence, and found by long experience and observations to be such.

Quercetan prefers a syrup of hellebore in his Spagirica Pharmac, and Hellebore's extract cap. 5. of his invention likewise ("a most safe medicine *b and not unfit to be given children") before all remedies whatsoever.

Paracelsus, in his book of black hellebore, admits this medicine, but as it is prepared by him. *i It is most certain (saith he) that the virtue of this herb is great, and admirable in effect, and little differing from balm itself; and he that knows well how to make use of it, hath more art than all their books contain, or all the doctors in Germany can show. *Aelianus Montaltus in his exquisit work de morb. capitis, cap. 31. de mel. sets a special receipt of his own, which in his practice *k he fortunately used; because it is but short I will set it down.

"B Syrupi de pemis 3ij, aquae borac. 3ij. Eliebori nigri per noctem infus in ligatura 6 vel 8 gr. manco facta collutoria elixe.

Other receipts of the same to this purpose you shall find in him. Valescus admires pulvis Hali, and Jason Pratensis after him: the confection of which

our new London Pharmacopoeia hath lately revived. "1 Put case (saith he), all other medicines fail, by the help of God this alone shall do it, and 'tis a crowned medicine which must be kept in secret."

"B. Ephthymi semanc., lapidis lazuli, agarici ana 3f. Scammonii, 3f. Chariephiolum numara 29; pulverisunt Omnia, et Ipsius pulveris scrup. 4. singulis septimannis assumat."

To these I may add Arnolli vinum Buglossatrum, or borage wine before mentioned, which 2 Mizaldus calls vinum mirabile, a wonderful wine, and Stockerus vouches to repeat verbatim amongst other receipts. Rubeus his "compound water out of Suvanarola: Pinetus his balm; Cardan's Pulvis Hyacinthi, with which, in his book de euris admirandis, he boasts that he had cured many melancholy persons in eight days, which "Sckenkius puts amongst his observa-

All these yet are nothing to those 'chemical preparatives of Aqua Chalidonia, quintessence of hellebore, salts, extracts, distillations, oils, Aurum potabile, &c. Dr. Anthony in his book de auro potab., edit. 1600, is all and all for it. "2 And though all the schools of Galenists, with a wicked and unthankful pride and scorn, detest it in their practice, yet in more grievous diseases, when their veget-

Rhenanus, a Dutch chemist, in his book de Sole è puteo emergente, takes upon him to apologise for Anthony, and sets light by all that speak against him. But what do I meddle with this great controversy, which is the subject of many volumes? Let Paracelsus, Quercetan, Crollius, and the brethren of the rosy cross, defend themselves as they may. Crato, Erastus, and the Galenists oppugn. Paracelsus, he brags on the other side, he did more famous cures by this means, than all the Galenists in Europe, and calls himself a monarch; Galen, Hippo-

The Sthiourus of old railed against those ancient Asclepiadean writers, "1 he condemns others, insults, triumphs, overcomes all antiquity (saith Galen as if he spake to him), declares himself a conqueror, and crowns his own doings. "2 Onedrop of their chemical preparatives shall do more good than all their fulsome potions. Erastus, and the rest of the Galenists vilify them on the other side, as heretics in physic; "3 Paracelsus did that in physic, which Luther in divinity." "4 A drunken rogue he was, a base fellow, a magician, he had the devil for his master, devils his familiar companions, and
what he did, was done by the help of the devil." Thus they contend and rail, and every mart write books pro and con, et adhuc sub judice lis est: let them agree as they will, I proceed.

SUBJECT. IV.—Averters.

Averters and purgers must go together, as tending all to the same purpose, to divert this rebellious humour, and turn it another way. In this range, clysters and suppositors challenge a chief place, to draw this humour from the brain and heart, to the more ignoble parts. Some would have them still used a few days between, and those to be made with the boiled seeds of anise, fennel, and bastard saffron, hops, thyme, epithyme, mallows, fumitory, bugloss, polyphagy, senna, diasse, hamech, cassia, diacathelic, hierogodum, oil of violets, sweet almonds, &c. For without question, a clyster opportunely used, cannot choose in this, as most other maladies, but to do very much good; Clysters nutriunt, sometimes clysters nourish, as they may be prepared, as I was informed not long since by a learned lecture of our natural philosophy "reader, which he handled by way of discourse, out of some other noted physicians. Such things as provoke urine most commend, but not sweat. Trincavelius, consil. 16. cap. 1. in head-melancholy forbid st. P. Bayerus and others approve frictions of the outward parts, and to bathe them with warm water. Instead of ordinary frictions, Cardan prescribes rubbing with nettles till they blister the skin, which likewise Basardus Visontinus so much magnifies.

Sneezing, masticatories, and nasals are generally received. Montaltus, c. 31. Hildesheim, spicel. 3. fol. 136 and 238 give several receipts of all three. Hercules de Saxoniâ relates of an empiric in Venice "that had a strong water to purge by the mouth and nostrils, which he still used in head-melancholy, and would sell for no gold."

To open months and haemorrhoids is very good physic, "if they have been formerly stopped." Pevinentus would have them opened with horse-leeches, so would Hercul. de Sax.; Julius Alexandrinus, consil. 185. Sclatzi thinks aloes fitter: most approve horse-leeches in this case, to be applied to the forehead, nostrils, and other places.

Montaltus, cap. 29. out of Alexander and others, prescribes "cupping-glasses, and issues in the left thigh." Aretus, lib. 7. cap. 5. Paulus Regolinus, Sylvius will have them without scarification, "applied to the shoulders and back, thighs and feet." b Montaltus, cap. 34. "bids open an issue in the arm, or hinder part of the head." 1 Piso enjoins ligatures, frictions, suppositories, and cupping-glasses, still without scarification, and the rest.

Cauteries and hot irons are to be used "in the suture of the crown, and the seared or ulcerated place suffered to run a good while. Tis not amiss to bore the skull with an instrument, to let out the fuliginous vapours." Sallust. Salvi anus, de re medic, lib. 2. cap. 1. "because this humour hardly yields to other physic, would have the leg cauterised, or the left leg, below the knee, and the head bored in two or three places," for that it much avails to the exhalation of the vapours: "I saw (saith he) a melancholy man at Rome, that by no remedies could be healed, but when by chance he was wounded in the head, and the skull broken, he was excellently cured." Another, to the admiration

2 Master D. Lapworth.
3 Ant. Philos. cap. de melanc. frictio verticis, &c.
4 Mercureal., consil. 6. et 39. haemorroidum et monstum provocatio jurat, modo ex corne suppressione ornito habuerit.
5 Laurentius, Brazil, &c.
6 F. Bayerus, 1. 2. cap. 13. maribus, &c.
7 Cercubitalia sicue, et fontanelane crure sinistro. 8 Hildesheim, spicel. 2. Vapores a cerurola trahendi sunt frictiofibas universi, cercubitalia sicie, humerus ac dorso ad axilas, circa pedes et crura.
8 Fontanelam aperti juxta acceptionem, aut brachium.
9 Balani, ligatures, frictions, &c.
10 Cauterium fiat satura coronali, duum foedere permitterunt loca ulcerosa. Trepone etiam crani dianil densitatis immensae potest, ut vaportium fuliginosissimis exitus patent.
11 Quoniam difficulter edist allis medicamentis,ideo fat in vertice cauterium, aut crure sinistro infra gnum.
12 Plant duo aut tria cauteria, cum ossis perforatione.
13 Vidit Rome melancholeum qui, exhibitus multis remediis, sanari non poterat, sed cum cranium gladium fractum exact, optime sanatus est.
of the beholders, "...breaking his head with a fall from on high, was instantly recovered of his dotage." Gordonius, cap. 13. part. 2. would have these cauteries tried last, when no other physic will serve. "...The head to be shaved and bored to let out fumes, which without doubt will do much good. I saw a melancholy man wounded in the head with a sword, his brain-pan broken; so long as the wound was open he was well, but when his wound was healed, his dotage returned again." But Alexander Messaria, a professor in Padua, lib. 1. pract. med. cap. 21. de melanchol, will allow no cauteries at all, 'tis too stiff a humour and too thick as he holds, to be so evaporated.

Guianerius, c. 8. Tract. 15. cured a nobleman in Savoy, by boring alone, "...leaving the hole open a month together," by means of which, after two years' melancholy and madness, he was delivered. All approve of this remedy in the sature of the crown; but Arculanus would have the canteury to be made with gold. In many other parts, these cauteries are prescribed for melancholy men, as in the thighs, (Mercurialis, consul. 86.) arms, legs. Idem, consul. 6. and 19 and 25. Montanus, 86. Rodericus à Fonseca, tom. 2. consult. 84. pro hypo-chond. coxa dextrà, &c., but most in the head, "if other physic will do no good."

SUBSECT. V.—Alteratives and Cordials, corroborating, resolving the Reliques, and mending the Temperament.

Because this humour is so malign of itself, and so hard to be removed, the relics are to be cleansed, by alteratives, cordials, and such means: the temper is to be altered and amended, with such things as fortify and strengthen the heart and brain, "...which are commonly both affected in this malady, and do mutually misaffect one another: which are still to be given every other day, or some few days inserted after a purge, or like physic, as occasion serves, and are of such force, that many times they help alone, and as Arnoldus holds in his Aphorisms, are to be 'preferred before all other medicines, in what kind soever.'

Amongst this number of cordials and alteratives, I do not find a more present remedy, than a cup of wine or strong drink, if it be soberly and opportunely used. It makes a man bold, hardy, courageous, "...whettest the wit," if moderately taken, (and as Plutarch "saith, Symp. 7. quaest. 12.) "it makes those which are otherwise dull, to exhale and evaporate like frankincense, or quicken, (Xenophon adds) "as oil doth fire." "...A famous cordial," Matthiolius in Dioscoridem calls it, "an excellent nutriment to refresh the body, it makes a good colour, a flourishing age, helps concoction, fortifies the stomach, takes away obstructions, provokes urine, drives out excrements, procures sleep, clears the blood, expels wind and cold poisons, attenuates, concocts, dissipates all thick vapours, and fuliginous humours." And that which is all in all to my purpose, it takes away fear and sorrow. *Curos edaces dissipat Evius. "It glads the heart of man," Psal. civ. 15. hilaritatis dulce seminairum. Helena's bowl, the sole nectar of the gods, or that true nepenthés in *Homer, which puts away care and grief, as Orisipus, 5. Collect. cap. 7. and some others will, was nought else but a cup of good wine. It makes the mind of the king and of the fatherless both one, of the bond and free man, poor and rich; it turneth all his thoughts to joy and mirth, makes him remember no sorrow or debt, but

---

* Et alterum vidi melancholeum, qui ex alto cadens non sine astantium admirations, liberatus est.
* Filiatur caput et flat cauterynum in capite; procuc dubio ista facult ad fumorum exhalationem; vidii melancholeum à favina gaudio valoratum, et crurum fracturam, quamvis supina aperut, curatus opime; at cum vulnus sanarum, reversa est mania.
* Usque ad duram matrem trepanari faci, et per mensam spertire est.
* Cordis ratio semper habenda quod cerebro communitur, et esse invicem officient.
* Aphor. 34. Medicina Theriacae prae cetera eligenda.
* Galen. de temp. Lib. 3. c. 3. moderate vinum sumptum acut ingenium.
* Tardos alter et tristes thasis in modum exhalare facit.
* Viribus retinendi cardiacum eximum, nutriendo corpori alimentum, optimum, atrem floridam facit, calorem inmutum fovet, concoctionem jurar, stomachum roborat, excre- mentum vitam parat, urinum movet, somnum conciliat, venena, frigidos boas dissipat, crassos humores attuatu, equit, discret, &c.
* Hor. lib. 2. od. 11. "Facaces dissipates corrodendo carce." * Odysseus. A.
enricheth his heart, and makes him speak by talents," Eedras iii. 19, 20, 21. It gives life itself, spirits, wit, &c. For which cause the ancients called Bacchus, Liber pater à liberando, and sacrificed to Bacchus and Pallas still upon an altar. "Wine measureably drunk, and in time, brings gladness and cheerful-ness of mind, it cheereth God and men," Judges ix. 13. letitice Bacchus dator, it makes an old wife dance, and such as are in misery to forget evil, and be merry. "Bacchus et affilietis requiem mortalibus afferat, Curae hiee duro compede vineta forest." 

Demetrius in Plutarch, when he fell into Seleucus's hands, and was prisoner in Syria, "spent his time with dice and drink that he might so ease his discontented mind, and avoid those continual cogitations of his present condition wherewith he was tormented." Therefore Solomon, Prov. xxxi. 6, bids "wine be given to him that is ready to perish, and to him that hath grief of heart, let him drink that he forget his poverty, and remember his misery no more." Solicitit animis onus eximii, it caseth a burdened soul, nothing speeder, nothing better; which the prophet Zachariah perceived, when he said, "that in the time of Messias, they of Ephraim should be glad, and their heart should rejoice as through wine." All which makes me very well approve of that pretty description of a feast in Bartholomeus Anglicus, when grace was said, their hands washed, and the guests sufficiently exhilarated, with good discourse, sweet music, dainty fare, exhilarationis gratid, pocula iterum atque iterum offervatur, as a corollary to conclude the feast, and continue their mirth, a grace cup came in to cheer their hearts, and they drank healths to one another again and again. Which as I. Fredericus Matencius, Crit. Christ. lib. 2. cap. 5, 6, & 7, was an old custom in all ages in every commonwealth, so as they be not enforced, bibere per violentiam, but as in that royal feast of Ahasuerus, which lasted 180 days, "without compulsion they drank by order in golden vessels," when and what they would themselves. This of drink is a most easy and parable remedy, a common, a cheap, still ready against fear, sorrow, and such troublesome thoughts, that molest the mind; as brimstone with fire, the spirits on a sudden are enlightened by it. "No better physic" (saith Rhasis) "for a melancholy man: and he that can keep company, and carouse, needs no other medicines," tis enough. His countryman Avicenna, 31. doct. 2. cap. 8. proceeds farther yet, and will have him that is troubled in mind, or melancholy, not to drink only, but now and then to be drunk: excellent good physic it is for this and many other diseases. Magninus, Reg. san. part. 3. c. 31. will have them to be so once a month at least, and gives his reasons for it, "because it scourz the body by vomit, urine, sweat, of all manner of superfluities, and keeps it clean." Of the same mind is Seneca the Philosopher; in his book de tranquil. lib. 1. c. 15. nominuimus ut in aliis morbis ad obrietatem usque venientium; Curas deprimit, tristitiae medatur, it is good sometimes to be drunk, it helps sorrow, depresses cares, and so concludes this tract with a cup of wine: Hales, Serene charissime, que ad tranquillitatem animae pertinet. But these are epicurean tenets, tending to looseness of life, luxury and atheism, maintained alone by some heathens, disolute Arabsians, profane Christians, and are exploded by Rabbi Moses, tract. 4. Guliel. Placentius, lib. 1. cap. 8. Valecuss de Taranta, and most accurately ventilated by Jo. Sylvacius, a late writer and physician of Milan, med. cont. cap. 14. where you shall find this tenet copiously confuted.

b Pausanias. 0 Syracides, xxxi. 28. d Legitur et prisci Catonis Sexpe meru caluisse virtus. * In pocaia et alocum se precipitavit, et is facile tempus traduxit, ut agrum erupat montem levaret, et conditionis presentis cogitationes quibus agitabatur sobrians vitaret. 1 Soc did the Athenians of old, as Suidas relates, and so do the Germans at this day. \ Lib. 6. cap. 23. et 24. de rerum proprietat. \ Esther. i. 8. \ Tract. 1. cap. 1. 1. Non estra inferam vinum, quam metis melior; qui melancholiches, utatur societa hominae et biberae; et qui petest sustinere usum vini, non indiget alla medicina, quod se sunt cunia ad usum necessaria hujus passionis. k Tum quo sequarur inde sudor, vomito, urina, & quibus superfluitates ad corpore removentur et remanunt corpus mundum.
Howsoever you say, if this be true, that wine and strong drink have such virtue to expel fear and sorrow, and to exhilarate the mind, ever hitherafter let's drink and be merry.

“Come, lusty Lyda, fill's a cup of sack,
And, sirrah drawer, bigger pots we lack,
And Scio wines that have so good a smack.”

I say with him in A. Gallius, “let's maintain the vigour of our souls with a moderate cup of wine,” Natis in usum leetitiae scyphis, “and drink to refresh our mind; if there be any cold sorrow in it, or torpid bashfulness, let's wash it all away.”—Nunc vino pellite curas; so saith Horace, so saith Anacreon, Μεθυνών ταΐς με κεφαλής
Πολυ κρισσιον η θυσία.

Let's drive down care with a cup of wine: and so say I too (though I drink none myself), for all this may be done, so that it be modestly, soberly, opportune used: so that “they be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess,” which our Apostle forewarns; for as Chrysostom well comments on that place, ad leetitiam datum est vinum, non ad ebrietatem, “tis for mirth wine, but not for madness: and will you know where, when, and how that is to be understood? V'is diceb ubi bonum sit vinum? Audi quid dicat Scriptura, hear the Scriptures, “Give wine to them that are in sorrow,” or as Paul bid Timothy drink wine for his stomach’s sake, for concoction, health, or some such honest occasion. Otherwise, as Pliny tells us; if singular moderation be not had, “nothing so pernicious, 'tis mere vinegar, blandus daemon, poison itself.”

But hear a more fearful doom, Habac. ii. 15. & 16. “Woe be to him that makes his neighbour drunk, shameful speaking shall be upon his glory.” Let not good fellows triumph therefore (saith Mattheiulus), that I have so much commended wine; if it be immoderately taken, “instead of making glad, it confounds both body and soul, it makes a giddily head, a sorrowful heart.”

And twas well said of the poet of old, “Wine causeth mirth and grief, "nothing so good for some, so bad for others, especially as one observes, qui a causa calida malæ habent, that are hot or inflamed. And so of spices, they alone, as I have showed, cause head-melancholy themselves, they must not use wine as an ordinary drink, or in their diet. But to determine with Laurentius, c. 8. de melan. wine is bad for madmen, and such as are troubled with heat in their inner parts or brains; but to melancholy which is cold (as most is), wine, soberly used, may be very good.

I may say the same of the decoction of China roots, sassafras, sarsaparilla, guaiacum: China, saith Manardus, makes a good colour in the face, takes away melancholy, and all innervations proceeding from cold, even so sarsaparilla provokes sweat mightily, guaiacum dries, Claudinus, consult. 89. & 46. Montanus, Capivaccius, consult. 188. Scottii, make frequent and good use of guaiacum and China, “so that the liver be not incensed,” good for such as are cold, as most melancholy men are, but by no means to be mentioned in hot.

The Turks have a drink called coffee (for they use no wine), so named of a berry as black as soot, and as bitter (like that black drink which was in use amongst the Lacedemonians, and perhaps the same), which they sip still of, and sup as warm as they can suffer; they spend much time in those coffee-houses, which are somewhat like our alehouses or taverns, and there they sit chatting and drinking to drive away the time, and to be merry together,
Cure of Melancholy. [Part. 2. Sec. 5.

because they find by experience that kind of drink, so used, helpeth digestion, and procureth alacrity. Some of them take opium to this purpose.

Borage, balm, saffron, gold, I have spoken of; Montaltus, c. 23. commends scorzonera roots condite. Garcias ab Horto, plant. hist. lib. 2. cap. 25. makes mention of an herb called datura, "which, if it be eaten, for twenty-four hours following takes away all sense of grief, makes them incline to laughter and mirth;" and another called bauge, like in effect to opium, "which puts them for a time into a kind of ecstasy," and makes them gently to laugh. One of the Roman emperors had a seed, which he did ordinarily eat to exhilarate himself. 7 Christoperus Ayerus prefers bezoar stone, and the confection of alkermes, before other cordials, and amber in some cases. 8 Alkermes comforts the inner parts;" and bezoar stone hath an especial virtue against all melancholy affections, "it refresheth the heart, and corrodibates the whole body." b Amber provokes urine, helps the body, breaks wind, &c. After a purge, 3 or 4 grains of bezoar stone, and 3 grains of amber-grease, drunk or taken in borage or bugloss water, in which gold hot hath been quenched, will do much good, and the purge will diminish less (the heart so refreshed) of the strength and substance of the body.

To bezoar stone most subscribe, Manardus, and 6 many others; "it takes away sadness, and makes him merry that useth it; I have seen some that have been much diseased with faintness, swooning, and melancholy, that taking the weight of three grains of this stone, in the water of oxtongue, have been cured." Garcias ab Horto brags how many desperate cures he hath done upon melancholy men by this alone, when all physicians had forsaken them. But alkermes many except against; in some cases it may help, if it be good and of the best, such as that of Montpelier in France, which 4 Iodocus Sincerus, Itineraio Galliae, so much magnifies, and would have no traveller omit to see it made. But it is not so general a medicine as the other. Fernelius, consil. 49, suspects alkermes by reason of its heat, "nothing (saith he), sooner exasperates this disease, than the use of hot working meats and medicines, and would have them for that cause warily taken." I conclude, therefore, of this and all other medicines, as Thucydides of the plague at Athens, no remedy could be prescribed for it, Nam quod non proflavit, hoc aliis erat exibo: there is no catholic medicine to be had: that which helps one is pernicious to another.

Diamargarum frigidum, diambra, diaboroginatum, electuarium letificans Galeni et Rhabis, de gemmis, dianthos, damoschum dulce et amarum, electuarium conciliatoris, syrip. Citoniorum, de pomis, conserves of roses, violets, fumitory, enula campana, satyrion, lemons, orange-pils condite, &c., have their good use.

"S R. Diamochi dulcis et amari, ana 3ij.
Diabuglossati, Dibaboraginati, sacchari violacci,
anaj. miscæ cum syripo de pomis."

Every physician is full of such receipts: one only I will add for the bareness of it, which I find recorded by many learned authors, as an approved medicine

2 Per 24 horas sensum doloris omnem tollit, et ridere facit. 7 Hildeguir, speciea 2. 8 Alkermes omnia vitalia viscerà mire confortat. A contra omnes melancholici affectus confort, ac certam est ipsius omnium cordis et corporis viros mirum in modum retic. 9 Succinum vero alibismum confortat ventriculam, fiatam discutiit, urinam movet, &c. 10 Garcias ab Horto, aromata riso, cap. 1, cap. 16, adversus omnes morbos melancholicos,Americi, et venenum. Ego (inquit) utero in morbis melancholicis, &c., et deplorabatur inasus ad pratisanum sauitatem restituiri. See more in Banhunts book de lap. Bezoar e. 45. 4 Edit. 1617. Monspetii ele-cnamium fit predecissimum Alchem., &c. 5 Nihil morbus hunc sequa exacerbat, ac alimentorum vel calidiorum usus. Alkermes ideo suspeeta, et quod semel momenten, caute adhibenda obedientia medica. 6 Schenkinis, t. 1. Observat. de Mania, ad metnias alienatioem, et despicientiam villo cerebi obtortum, in manuscrito codice dionaeo, tale medicamentum report.
against dogate, head-melancholy, and such diseases of the brain. Take a 
ram's head that never meddled with an ewe, cut off at a blow, and the horns 
only take away, boil it well, skin and wool together; after it is well sod, take 
out the brains, and put these spices to it, cinnamon, ginger, nutmeg; mace, 
cloves, ana 5 g, mingle the powder of these spices with it, and heat them in 
a platter upon a chafing-dish of coals together, stirring them well, that they 
do not burn; take heed it be not overmuch dried, or drier than a calf's brains 
ready to be eaten. Keep it so prepared, and for three days give it the patient 
fasting, so that he fast two hours after it. It may be eaten with bread, in an 
egg or broth, or any way, so it be taken. For fourteen days let him use this 
diet, drink no wine, &c. Gesner, hist. animal. lib. 1. pag. 917, Cariciterius, 
pract. 13. in N.icht. de metri. pag. 129. Iatros : Witenberg. edit. Tubing. pag. 62, 
mention this medicine, though with some variation; he that list may try it, 
*and many such.

Odoraments to smell to, of rose-water, violet flowers, balm, rose-cakes, 
vinegar, &c., do much recreate the brains and spirits, according to Solomon. 
Prov. xxvii. 9. "They rejoice the heart," and, as some say, nourish: 'tis a 
question commonly controverted in our schools, odors nutriment: let Ficinus, 
lib. 2. cap. 18. decide it; *many arguments he brings to prove it; as of Demo-
critus, that lived by the smell of bread alone, applied to his nostrils, for some
few days, when for old age he could eat no meat. Ferrerius, lib. 2. meth. 
speaks of an excellent confection of his making, of wine, saffron, &c., which 
he prescribed to dull, weak, fleable, and dying men to smell to, and by it to 
have done very much good, aequé ferè profusius objectu et potu, as if he had 
given them drink. Our noble and learned Lord † Verulam, in his book de vitâ 
et morte, commends, therefore, all such smells as any way serve to refrig-
erate the spirits. Montanus, consil. 31, prescribes a form which he would 
have his melancholy patient never to have out of his hands. If you will have 
them spagirically prepared, look in Oswaldus Crollius, Basil. Gymnica.

Irrigations of the head shaven, "of the flowers of water-lilies, lettuce, 
violets, camomile, wild mallows, wether's-head," &c., must be used many 
mornings together. Montan., consil. 31, would have the head so washed once 
a week. Lælius à fonte Engubinus, consulti. 44, for an Italian count, troubled 
with head-melancholy, repeats many medicines which he tried, "kbut two 
alone which did the cure; use of whey made of goats' milk, with the extract 
of hellebore, and irrigations of the head with water-lilies, lettuce, violets, 
camomile, &c., upon the suture of the crown." Piso commends a ram's lungs 
applied hot to the fore part of the head, "or a young lamb divided in the back, 
exteruter, &c.; all acknowledge the chief cure in moistening throughout. 
Some, saith Laurentius, use powders and caps to the brain; but forasmuch as 
such aromatical things are hot and dry, they must be sparingly administered. 

Unto the heart we may do well to apply bags, epithemes, ointments, of 
which Laurentius, c. 9. de melan, gives examples. Bruel prescribes an epi-
theme for the heart, of bugloss, borage, water-lily, violet waters, sweet wine, 
balm leaves, nutmegs, cloves, &c.

For the belly, make a fomentation of oil, **in which the seeds of cummin, 
rue, carrots, dill, have been boiled.

Baths are of wonderful great force in this malady, much admired by † Galen,

* Caput arietis nondum experti vulnerem, uno dict. amputatum, cornibus tundens demotis, integrum cum 
  lana et pello bene exalbâ, sum apto cerebrum exines, et addens aromata, &c.  
* Culis kristallinis 
  usus, et vino potus melancholiam curat, et rasura corni lichineseris, &c. Sekenkius. 
\[2.\] Instat in 
  matrice, quod sarsum et desures ad odoris sensum praepositur.  
† Viscount St. Alban's. 
\[1.\] Ex 
  decocto færum uynphes, lactues, viueoram, chamomilia, stirecum, capitis veurecum, &c.  
\[1.\] Inter auxilia multa adhibitis, duo visa sunt remedium adferre, usus ser caprini cum extracto Hellebori, et irrigatio ex 
  lacte Uynphes, viuleam, &c. sutura coronal adhibita; his remedis santius pristini adeptus es.  
\[1.\] Confert et palmo arietis, calulius agus per doursam divisus, exenteratus, adnutos sinus.  
\[1.\] Semina 
  cummini, rute, dacti, aorist cocta.  
\[1.\] Lib. 3. de locis affect.
Aetius, Rhasis, &c., of sweet water, in which are boiled the leaves of mallow, roses, violets, water-lilies, wether’s-head, flowers of bugloss, camomile, melilot, &c. Guianer. cap. 8. tract. 15, would have them used twice a day, and when they come forth of the baths, their back bones to be anointed with oil of almonds, violets, nymphaea, fresh capon grease, &c.

Amulets and things to be borne about, I find prescribed, taxed by some, approved by Renodius, Platerus (amuletā inquit non negligenda), and others; look for them in Mizaldus, Porta, Albertus, &c. Bassardus Viscontinus, ant. phils. commends hypericum, or St. John’s wort gathered on a 7 Friday in the hour of “Jupiter, when it comes to his effectual operation (that is, about the full moon in July); so gathered and borne, or hung about the neck, it mightily helps this affection, and drives away all fantastical things.” *Philes, a Greek author that flourished in the time of Michael Paleologus, writes that a sheep or kid’s skin, whom a wolf worried, Ἰαδευς ἰνήνυμα ράπτος ὁ ὅρε λυπή, ought not at all to be worn about a man, “because it causeth palpitation of the heart,” not for any fear, but a secret virtue which amulets have. A ring made of the hoof of an ass’s right fore foot carried about, &c. I say with *Renodius, they are not altogether to be rejected. Peony doth cure epilepsy; precious stones, most diseases; 7 a wolf’s dung borne with one helps the colic, 7 a spider an ague, &c. Being in the country in the vacation time not many years since, at Lindley in Leicestershire, my father’s house, I first observed this amulet of a spider in a nut-shell lapped in silk, &c., so applied for an ague by *my mother; whom, although I knew to have excellent skill in chirurgery, sore eyes, aches, &c., and such experimental medicines, as all the country where she dwelt can witness, to have done many famous and good cures upon diverse poor folks, that were otherwise destitute of help: yet among all other experiments, this methought was most absurd and ridiculous, I could see no warrant for it. Quid aranea cum fēbre? For what antipathy? till at length rambling amongst authors (as often I do) I found this very medicine in Dioscorides, approved by Matthiolus, repeated by Alderovandus, cap. de Aranea, lib. de insectis, I began to have a better opinion of it, and to give more credit to amulets, when I saw it in some parties answer to experience. Some medicines are to be exploded, that consist of words, characters, spells, and charms, which can do no good at all, but out of a strong conceit, as Pomponatus proves; or the devil’s policy, who is the first founder and teacher of them.

SUBSECT. VI.—Correctors of Accidents to procure Sleep. Against fearful Dreams, Redness, &c.

When you have used all good means and helps of alternatives, averters, diminutives, yet there will be still certain accidents to be corrected and amended, as waking, fearful dreams, flushing in the face to some ruddiness, &c.

Waking, by reason of their continual cares, fears, sorrows, dry brains, is a symptom that much crucifies melancholy men, and must therefore be speedily helped, and sleep by all means procured, which sometimes is a sufficient remedy of itself without any other physic. Sekenius, in his Observations, hath an example of a woman that was so cured. The means to procure it, are inward or outward. Inwardly taken, are simples, or compounds; simples, as poppy, nymphaea, violets, roses, lettuce, mandrake, henbane, nightshade or solanum, saffron, hemp-seed, nutmegs, willows, with their seeds, juice, decoctions, dis-
tilled waters, &c. Compounds are syrups, or opiates, syrup of poppy, violets, verbascoc, which are commonly taken with distilled waters.

Requiæ Nicholai, Philetum Romanum, Tripæra magna, píkula de Cynoglossa, Diæcordium, Laudanum Paracelsi, Opium, are in use, &c. Country folks commonly make a posset of hemp-seed, which Fuchsins in his herbal so much discommends; yet I have seen the good effect, and it may be used where better medicines are not to be had.

Laudanum Paracelsi is prescribed in two or three grains, with a drachm of Diæcordium, which Oswald, Crollius commends. Opium itself is most part used outwardly, to smell to in a ball, though commonly so taken by the Turks to the same quantity for a cordial, and at Goa in the Indies; the dose 40 or 50 grains.

Rulandus calls Requiæ Nicholai, ultimum refugium, the last refuge; but of this and the rest look for peculiar receipts in Victorius Favitensus, cap. de phæesi, Hierimius, cap. de mania, Hildeshaim, spicel. 4. de somno et vigili, &c. Outwardly used, as oil of nutmegs by extraction, or expression with rosewater to anoint the temples, oils of poppy, nenuphar, mandrake, purslain, violets, all to the same purpose.

Montan. consil. 24 and 25. much commends odoraments of opium, vinegar, and rosewater. Laurentius, cap. 9. prescribes pomanders and nodules; see the receipts in him; Codronchus, a wormwood to smell to.

Unguentum Alabastritum, populeum, are used to anoint the temples, nostrils, or if they be too weak, they mix saffron and opium. Take a grain or two of opium, and dissolve it with three or four drops of rosewater in a spoon, and after mingle with it as much Unguentum populeum as a nut, use it as before; or else take half a drachm of opium, Unguentum populeum, oil of nenuphar, rosewater, rose-vinegar, of each half an ounce, with as much virgin wax as a nut, anoint your temples with some of it, ad horam somni.

Sacks of wormwood, mandrake, henbane, roses made like pillows and laid under the patient's head, are mentioned by Cardan and Mızaldus, "to anoint the soles of the feet with the fat of a dormouse, the teeth with ear wax of a dog, swine's gall, hare's ears."

Frontlets are well known to every good wife, rosewater and vinegar, with a little woman's milk, and nutmegs grated upon a rose-cake applied to both temples.

For an emplaster, take of castorium a drachm and a half, of opium half a scruple, mixed both together with a little water of life, make two small plasters thereof, and apply them to the temples.

Rulandus, cent. 1. cur. 17. cent. 3. cur. 94. prescribes epithemes and lotions of the head, with the decoction of flowers of nymphæa, violet-leaves, mandrake roots, henbane, white poppy. Here de Saxonia, stillicidia, or droppings, &c. Lotions of the feet do much avail of the said herbs; by these means, saith Laurentius, I think you may procure sleep to the most melancholy man in the world. Some use horseleeches behind the ears, and apply opium to the place.

Bayerus, lib. 2. c. 13. sets down some remedies against fearful dreams, and such as walk and talk in their sleep. Baptista Porta, Mag. nat. l. 2. c. 6. to procure pleasant dreams and quiet rest, would have you take hippoglossa, or the herb horsetongue, balm, to use them or their distilled waters after

---

5 Bellonis, observat. lib. 3. cap. 15. lassitudinem et labores animi tolliunt; Inde Gardas ab Horte, lib. 1. cap. 4. simp. med. 6 Abysinthium somnos allicit oculatu, 7 Read Lenius, lib. her. bib. cap. 2. of Mandrake. 8 Hysoyamus sub cervicis viridis. 9 Plantains pods inuagere pingue crine gliris dicunt efficacissimun, et quod viix credi potest, dantes inunctos ex excudit aurium canis somnum profundum conciliaris, &c. Cardans de rerum varietas. 10 Veni nuncem lib.
Cure of Melancholy. [Part. 2. Sec. 5.

supper, &c. Such men must not eat beans, peas, garlic, onions, cabbage, venison, hare, use black wines, or any meat hard of digestion at supper, or lie on their backs, &c.

Rusticus pudor, bashfulness, flushing in the face, high colour,uddiness, are common grievances, which much torture many melancholy men, when they meet a man, or come in company of their better, strangers, after a meal, or if they drink a cup of wine or strong drink, they are as red and flæct, and sweat as if they had been at a mayor's feast, presertim si mebus accesserit, it exceeds, a they think every man observes, takes notice of it: and fear alone will effect it, suspicion without any other cause. Skenkius, observ. med. lib. 1. speaks of a waiting gentlewoman in the Duke of Savoy's court, that was so much offended with it, that she kneeled down to him, and offered Beatus, a physician, all that she had to be cured of it. And 'tis most true, that A Antony Ludovicus saith in his book de Pudore, "bashfulness either hurts or helps," such men I am sure it hurts. If it proceed from suspicion or fear, B Plater prescribes no other remedy but to reject and content: Id populus curat salicet, as a worthy physician in our town said to a friend of mine in like case, complaining without a cause, suppose one look red, what matter is it, make light of it, who observes it?

If it trouble at or after meals (as A Jobertus observes, med. pract. l. 1. c. 7.), after a little exercise or stirring, for many are then hot and red in the face, or if they do nothing at all, especially women; he would have them let blood in both arms, first one, then another, two or three days between, if blood abound; to use frictions of the other parts, feet especially, and washing of them, because of that consent which is between the head and the feet. m And withal to refrigerate the face, by washing it often with rose, violet, nurnphar, lettuce, loyage waters, and the like: but the best of all is that lac virginalis, or strained liquor of liturgy: it is diversely prepared; by Jobertus thus: B, litarar. argent. unc. j. cerussae candidissimae, 5ij. capilli, 9ij. dissoletur aquarum solani, lactuce, et nurnpharis unus unc. iiij. aceti onii, unc. iiij. alipnot horas resident, deinde transmittatur per philt. aqua servetur in vaso vitreo, ac eis terve facies quotidie irrotetur. n Quercetan sapagir, phar. cap. 6. commends the water of frogs' spawn foruddiness in the face. o Crato, consil. 283. Sealtzii would fain have them use all summer the condite flowers of succory, strawberry water, roses (cupping-glasses are good for the time), consil. 285. et 286, and to defecate impure blood with the infusion of senna, savory, balm water. p Hollerius knew one cured alone with the use of succory boiled, and drank for five months, every morning in the summer. q It is good overnight to anoint the face with hare's blood, and in the morning to wash it with strawberry and cowslip water, the juice of distilled lemons, juice of cucumbers, or to use the seeds of melons, or kernels of peaches beaten small, or the roots of Aron, and mixed with wheat bran to bake it in an oven, and to crumble it in strawberry water; r or to put fresh cheese curds to a red face.

If it trouble them at meal times that flushing, as oft it doth, with sweating orthe like, they must avoid all violent passions and actions, as laughing, &c., strong drink, and drink very little, s one draught, saith Crato, and that about the midst of their meal; avoid at all times indurate salt, and especially spice and windy meat.

Crato prescribes the condite fruit of wild rose, to a nobleman his patient, to be taken before dinner or supper, to the quantity of a chestnut. It is made of sugar, as that of quinces. The decoction of the roots of sowthistle before meat, by the same author is much approved. To eat of a baked apple some advise, or of a preserved quince, cuminseed prepared with meat instead of salt, to keep down fumes: not to study or to be intentive after meals.

"R. Nucleum peric. semina melonum, ana unc. 96
+ aquare frugorum l. 1. miscite, nat. mane."

"To apply cupping glasses to the shoulders is very good. For the other kind of ruiness which is settled in the face with pimples, &c., because it pertains not to my subject, I will not meddle with it. I refer you to Crato's counsels, Arnoldus, lib. 1. breviar. cap. 39. 1. Rulande, Peter Forestus de Fuco, lib. 31. obscr. 2. To Platerus, Mercemialis, Ulmus, Rondoletius, Heurnius, Menadous, and others that have written largely of it.

Those other grievances and symptoms of headache, palpitation of heart, Vertigo, deliquium, &c., which trouble many melancholy men, because they are copiously handled apart in every physician, I do voluntarily omit.

MEMB. II.

Cure of Melancholy over all the Body.

Where the melancholy blood possesseth the whole body with the brain, it is best to begin with blood-letting. The Greeks prescribe the median or middle vein to be opened, and so much blood to be taken away as the patient may well spare, and the cut that is made must be wide enough. The Arabians hold it fittest to be taken from that arm on which side there is more pain and heaviness in the head: if black blood issue forth, bleed on; if it be clear and good, let it be instantly suppressed, "because the malice of melancholy is much corrected by the goodness of the blood." If the party's strength will not admit much evacuation in this kind at once, it must be assayed again and again: if it may not be conveniently taken from the arm, it must be taken from the knees and ankles, especially to such men or women whose haemorrhoids or months have been stopped. "If the malady continue, it is not amiss to evacuate in a part in the forehead, and to virgins in the ankles, who are melancholy for love matters; so to widows that are much grieved and troubled with sorrow and cares; for bad blood flows in the heart, and so crucifies the mind. The haemorrhoids are to be opened with an instrument or horse-leeches, &c. See more in Montaltus, cap. 29. b Sckenkius hath an example of one that was cured by an accidental wound in his thigh, much bleeding freed him from melancholy. Diet, diminutives, alteratives, cordials, correctors as before, intermixed as occasion serves, "all their study must be to make a melancholy man fat, and then the cure is ended." Diuretica, or medicines to procure urine, are prescribed by some in this kind, hot and cold: hot, where the heat of the liver doth not forbid; cold, where the heat of the liver is very great: amongst hot are parsley roots, lovage, fennel, &c.: cold, melon seeds, &c., with whey of goats' milk, which is the common conveyer.

To purge and purify the blood, use sowthistle, succory, senna, endive, carduus benedictus, dandelion, hop, maidenhair, fumitory, bugloss, borago, &c., with their juice, decoctions, distilled waters, syrups, &c.

1 idem consil. 238. Scolzi. landatae conditae rose caunas fructus ante prandium et comam ad magnitudinem casam esse. Decoctum radicum Sonchi. ut ante cibus sumatur, valet plurimum. 2 Cucurbit. ad sepalas apposite. 3 Pesc. Mesilana praeter ceteras. 4 Sucea melancholici malattia a sanguinis balsata corrigitur. 5 Perserrante male ex quacunque parte sanguis detrahit debet. 6 Observat. fol. 154. curatus ex vulnere in crure ob crumrum amissum. 7 Studio; sit omne ut melancolici impinguerit: ex quo enim pimpres et carnalis, ille sanat. 8 Hilleheime, spiced. 2. Inter calda radix petroelum, spri, fenuscum, inter frigida semina melonum cum aere capsro quod est comum vehiculam. 9 hoc unam praecominem, domine, ut sine diligencs circa victum, sine quo mortua remota frusta abhuriet.
Oswaldus Crollius, *Basil. Chym.* much admires salt of corals in this case, and *Æclius, tetrabib. ser. 2. cap. 114. Hieram Archigenis, which is an excellent medicine to purify the blood, "for all melancholy affections, falling sickness, none to be compared to it."

MEMB. III.

SUBSEC. I.—Cure of Hypochondriacal Melancholy.

In this cure, as in the rest, is especially required the rectification of those six non-natural things above all, as good diet, which Montanus, *consil. 27.* enjoins a French nobleman, "to have an especial care of it, without which all other remedies are in vain." Blood-letting is not to be used, except the patient's body be very full of blood, and that it be derived from the liver and spleen to the stomach and his vessels, then "to draw it back, to cut the inner vein of either arm, some say the *salvatella,* and if the malady be continue, *to open a vein in the forehead."

Preparatives and alteratives may be used as before, saving that there must be respect had as well to the liver, spleen, stomach, hypochondries, as to the heart and brain. To comfort the stomach and inner parts against wind and obstructions, by Areteus, Galen, *Æclius, Augelianus,* &c. and many latter writers, are still prescribed the decoctions of wormwood, centaury, pennyroyal, betony sodden in whey, and daily drunk; many have been cured by this medicine alone.

Prosper Altinus and some others as much magnify the water of Nile against this malady, an especial good remedy for windy-melancholy. For which reason belike Ptolemeus Philadelphus, when he married his daughter Berenice to the king of Assyria (as Celsus, *lib. 2.* records), *magnis impulsis Nili aquam afferti jussit,* to his great charge caused the water of Nile to be carried with her, and gave command that during her life she should use no other drink. I find those that commend use of apples, in splenetic and this kind of melancholy (lamb's wool, some call it), which howsoever approved must certainly be corrected of cold rawness and wind.

Codronchus in his book *de sale abyssuli,* magnifies the oil and salt of wormwood above all other remedies, "which works better and speedier than any simple whatsoever, and much to be preferred before all those fulsome decoctions and infusions, which must offend by reason of their quantity; this alone in a small measure taken, expels wind, and that most forcibly, moves urine, cleanseth the stomach of all gross humours, crudities, helps appetite," &c. Arnoldus hath a wormwood wine which he would have used, which every pharmacopæia speaks of.

Diminutives and purges may be taken as before, of hiera, manna, cassia, which Moutanus, *consil. 230.* for an Italian abbot, in this kind prefers before all other simples, "and these must be often used, still abstaining from those which are more violent, lest they do exasperate the stomach, &c., and the mischief by that means be increased." Though in some physicians I find very strong purgers, hellebore itself prescribed in this affection. If it long continue, vomits may be taken after meat, or otherwise gently procured with warm water, oxymel, &c., now and then. Fuchsius, *cap. 33.* prescribes hellebore; but still take heed in this malady, which I have often warned, of hot

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Footnote</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>5 Laurentius, cap. 15.</td>
<td><em>evuloninis gratia venam intermam alterius brachii secamus.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6 Si peribrax morbus, venam frontale secavist.</td>
<td><em>Bruel.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7 Ego maximum curam stomacho delegabo.</td>
<td><em>Octa.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8 Citri et officinalis sus vives exercet quam solutum decoctum a quibus in quantitate multa, et magna cura assumunt molestias desumptas.</td>
<td><em>Fustus his sal taller adissat, urinam movet, humores crassos alit, stomachum egregie confortat, cruditatem, nauseam, appetitiam mirum in modum renovat.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9 Piss, Aulomarus, Laurentius, c. 15.</td>
<td><em>illis utendum sapillus hortatis: a vehementioribus semper abstineendum ne vestrum exasperent.</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Cure quomodo against Soloque Lib. hypochondriacal

"The stomach most part in this infirmity is cold, the liver hot; scarce therefore (which Montanus insinuates, consil. 224. for the Earl of Manfort) can you help the one and not hurt the other:” much discretion must be used; take no physic at all he concludes without great need. Lælius Æugubinus, consil. for an hypochondriacal German prince, used many medicines; but it was after signified to him in letters, that the decoction of China and sassafras, and salt of sassafras, wrought him an incredible good. In his 108 consil. he used as happily the same remedies; this to a third might have been poison, by overheating his liver and blood.

For the other parts look for remedies in Savanarola, Gordonius, Massaria, Mercatus, Johnson, &c. One for the spleen, amongst many other, I will not omit, cited by Hildesheim, spiec. 2, prescribed by Mat. Flaccus, and out of the authority of Benevenius. Anthony Benevenius in a hypochondriacal passion, “a cured an exceeding great swelling of the spleen with capers alone, a meat befitting that infirmity, and frequent use of the water of a smith’s forge; by this physic he helped a sick man, whom all other physicians had forsaken, that for seven years had been splenetic.” And of such force is this water, “that those creatures as drink of it, have commonly little or no spleen.” See more excellent medicines for the spleen in him, and Lod. Mercatus, who is a great magnifier of this medicine. This Chalybs preparatus, or steel-drink, is much likewise commended to this disease by Daniel Sennertus, l. 1. part 2. cap. 12. and admired by J. Cesar Claudinus, Respons. 29. he calls steel the proper alexipharmacum of this malady, and much magnifies it; look for receipts in them. Averters must be used to the liver and spleen, and to scour the meseraic veins; and they are either too open or provoke urine. You can open no place better than the haemorrhoids, “which if by horse-leeches they be made to flow, “there may not be again such an excellent remedy,” as Plater holds. Sallust. Salvian, will admit no other phlebotomy but this; and by his experience in an hospital which he kept, he found all mad and melancholy men worse for other bloodletting. Laurentius, cap. 15. calls this of horse-leeches a sure remedy to empty the spleen and meseraic membrane. Only Montans, consil. 241. is against it; “to other men (saith he) this opening of the haemorrhoids seems to be a profitable remedy; for my part I do not approve of it, because it draws away the thinnest blood, and leaves the thickest behind.”

Ælius, Vidus Vidius, Mercurialis, Fuchsius, recommend diuretics, or such things as provoke urine, as aniseeds, dill, fennel, germander, ground pine, sodden in water, or drunk in powder; and yet P. Bayerus is against them; and so is Hollerius: “All melancholy men (saith he) must avoid such things as provoke urine, because by them the subtle or thinnest is evacuated, the thicker matter remains.”

Clysters are in good request. Trincavellius, lib. 3. cap. 38. for a young nobleman, esteems of them in the first place, and Hercules de Saxonii, Panth.
Cure of Melancholy. [Part. 2. Sec. 5.

lib. 1. cap. 16. is a great approver of them. "I have found (saith he) by experience, that many hypochondriacal melancholy men have been cured by the sole use of clysters," receipts are to be had in him.

Besides those fomentations, irrigations, inunctions, odoraments, prescribed for the head, there must be the like used for the liver, spleen, stomach, hypochondries, &c. "In crudity (saith Piso) 'tis good to bind the stomach hard" to hinder wind, and to help concoction.

Of inward medicines I need not speak; use the same cordials as before. In this kind of melancholy, some prescribe treacle in winter, especially before or after purges, or in the spring, as Avicenna, Trincavellius mithridate, Montaltus peony seeds, unicorn's horn; os de corde cervi, &c.

Amongst topics or outward medicines, none are more precious than baths, but of them I have spoken. Fomentations to the hypochondriac are very good, of wine and water in which are sodden southernwood, melilot, epithyme, mugwort, senna, polypody, as also cerotes, plaisters, liniments, ointments for the spleen, liver, and hypochondriac, of which look for examples in Laurentius, Jobertus, lib. 3. c. 1. pra. med., Montanus, consil. 231. Montaltus, cap. 33. Hercules de Saxoniâ, Faventinus. And so of epiphemes, digestive powders, bags, oils, Octavius Horatianus, lib. 2. c. 5. prescribes calastic cataplasm, or dry purging medicines, Piso dropaces of pitch, and oil of rue, applied at certain times to the stomach, to the metaphrene, or part of the back which is over against the heart; &c. Sinapisms; Montaltus, cap. 35. would have the thighs to be cauterised, Mercurialis prescribes beneath the knees; Lelius &c. consil. 34. for a hypochondriacal Dutchman, will have the century made in the right thigh, and so Montanus, consil. 55. The same Montanus, consil. 34. approves of issues in the arms or hinder part of the head. Bernardus Paternus in Hildesheim, spicel. 2. would have issues made in both the thighs; &c. Lod. Mercatus prescribes them near the spleen, aut prope ventriculi regionem, or in either of the thighs. Ligatures, frictions, and cupping-glasses above or about the belly, without scarification, which Felix Platerus so much approves, may be used as before.

SUBJECT. II.—Correctors to expel Wind. Against Costiveness, &c.

In this kind of melancholy one of the most offensive symptoms is wind, which, as in the other species, so in this, hath great need to be corrected and expelled.

The medicines to expel it are either inwardly taken, or outwardly. Inwardly to expel wind, are simples or compounds: simples are herbs, roots, &c., as galanga, gentian, angelica, enula, calamus aromaticus, valerian, zeodoti, iris, condite ginger, aristolochy, cicliminus, Chins, dittander, pennyroyal, rue, calamint, bay-berrics, and bay-leaves, betony, rosemary, hyssop, sabine, centaury, mint, cananile, stecchas, agnus castus, broom-flowers, orange, origin pills, &c.; spices, as salicorn, cinnamon, bezoar stone, myrrh, mace, nutmegs, pepper, cloves, ginger, seeds of anise, fennel, amni, cari, nettle, rue, &c., juniper berries, grana paradisi; compounds, dianium, diagalanga, diacinimum, diacalaminth, electuarium de baccis lauri, beneclia laxativa, pulvis ad status, antid. floront. pulvis carminativos, aromaticum rosatium, treacle, mithridate, &c.

This one canadix of Guater Bruell is to be observed in the administering of

---

2 Ego experientia probavi, multos Hypochondriacos solo uv Cysternum falsae senates. a In cruralitate optimum, ventriculorum arcuatis aliasgari.

b 21. i. Theriacae, vere praebent et amabile.

c Cons. 12. 1. 1. 4 Cap. 33. e Trincavellius, consil. 15. cerotum pro sone melancholicus ad jejun. optimum. f Emplasteria pro spinae, Fernali. consil. 45.

d Dropez à ple navali, et oleo raiaco aflagatur ventricido, et tot metaphreni. b Cautes a crubus insta. f Fontanæliæ siut in utroque crete. b Lib. 1. c. 17. 10 De mentis alienat. c. 3. status agrecis discutiant materiastramuentes evocant. 10 Cavendum hic diligenter & multum caudacentibus, atque eavissimis, sive alimenta fuentis hic, sive medicamenta: nunquam enim ut vento-
these hot medicines and dry, "that whilst they covet to expel wind, they do not inflame the blood, and increase the disease; sometimes (as he saith) medicines must more decline to heat, sometimes more to cold, as the circumstances require, and as the parties are inclined to heat or cold."

Outwardly taken to expel wind, are oils, as of camomile, rue, bay, &c.; fomentations of the hypochondries, with the decoctions of dill, pennyroyal, rue, bay leaves, cummin, &c., bags of camomile flowers, anised, cummin, bays, rue, wormwood, ointments of the oil of spikenard, wormwood, rue, &c. 

Aretius prescribes cataplasm of camomile flowers, fennel, anised, cummin, rosemary, wormwood-leaves, &c.

Cupping-glasses applied to the hypochondries, without scarification, do wonderfully resolve wind. Fernelius, consil. 43. much approves of them at the lower end of the belly; Lod. Mercatus calls them a powerful remedy, and testifies moreover out of his own knowledge, how many he hath seen suddenly eased by them. Julius Caesar Claudinus, Responses. med. resp. 33. admires these cupping-glasses, which he calls out of Galen, "a kind of enchantment, they cause such present help."

Empyries have a myriad of medicines, as to swallow a bullet of lead, &c., which I voluntarily omit. Amatus Lusitanus, cent. 4. curat. 54, for a hypochondriacal person, that was extremely tormented with wind, prescribes a strange remedy. Put a pair of bellows' end into a clyster pipe, and applying it into the fundament, open the bowels, so draw forth the wind, natura non admittit vacuum. He vaunts he was the first invented this remedy, and by means of it speedily eased a melancholy man. Of the cure of this flatuous melancholy, read more in Fienus, de flatibus, cap. 26. et passim alias.

Against headache, vertigo, vapours which ascend forth of the stomach to molest the head, read Hercules de Saxonit, and others.

If costiveness offend in this, or any other of the three species, it is to be corrected with suppositories, clysters or lotions, powder of senna, condite prunes, &c. Elect. bot. è succo rosar. ana j. niisce. Take as much as a nutmeg at a time, half an hour before dinner or supper, or pil. mastichin. j. in six pills, a pill or two at a time. See more in Montan., consil. 229.

Hildesheim, spice. 2. P. Cnemander, and Montanus, commend Cyprian turpentine, which they would have familiarly taken, to the quantity of a small nut, two or three hours before dinner and supper, twice or thrice a week if need be; for besides that it keeps the belly soluble, it clears the stomach, opens obstructions, cleanseth the liver, provokes urines.”

These in brief are the ordinary medicines which belong to the cure of melancholy, which if they be used aright, no doubt may do much good; Si non levando, saltam leniendo valent peculiaria benè selecta, saith Dessardus, a good choice of particular receipts must needs ease, if not quite cure, not one, but all or most, as occasion serves. Et que non prosunt singula, multa juvant.

states et rugitut compesaeat, haurusmodi utentes medicamenti, plurimum peccant, morbus sic augentes: debent enim medicamente declinare ad calidum vel frigidi secundum exigentiam circumstantiarum, vel ut patientis inclinat ad et frigid. Cap. 5. libr. 7. Piso Bruel. mire fatus resolvit. Lib. 1. c. 17. nonnulla pro tensione ventris deplorares et hic resitutus nisi vidimus. Velut incantamentum quodam, ex fatuso spiritu dolorem orum levant. Terebinthinam Cyprian habeant familiariter, ad quantitatem deplures mucas parvus, tribus horas ante prandium vel comum, ter singulis septimannis prope expediem videbitur; nam praeterquam quod alium mollem efficit, obstructions aerit, ventriculum purget, urinam provocat, hopar munditat.
The

Synopsis of the Third Partition.

Preface or Introduction. Subsect. 1.
Love's definition, pedigree, object, fair, amiable, gracious, and pleasant, from which comes beauty, grace, which all desire and love, parts affected.

Natural, in things without life, as love and hatred of elements; and with life, as vegetable, vine and clim, sympathy, antipathy, &c.

Sensible, as of beasts, for pleasure, preservation of kind, mutual agreement, custom, bringing up together, &c.

Pro[fit-]able, Subs. 1.

Health, wealth, honour, we love our benefactors: nothing so amiable as profit, or that which hath a show of commodity.

Things without life, made by art, pictures, sports, games, sensible objects, as hawks, hounds, horses; or men themselves, for similitude of manners, natural affection, as to friends, children, kinsmen, &c., for glory such as commend us.

Simple, Subs. 2.

Before marriage, as Heroical M.3.

Of women, as Or after marriage, as Jealousy, Sect. 3, vide φ.

Honest, Subs. 3.

Fucate in show, by some error or hypocrisy; some seem and are not; or truly for virtue, honesty, good parts, learning, eloquence, &c.

Mixed of Common good, our neighbour, country, friends, which, which extends to M. 3.

In excess, vide Π.

God, Sect. 4. In ćeck, vide ζσ.

His pedigree, power, extent to vegetables and sensible creatures, as well as men, to spirits, devils, &c.

His name, definition, object, part affected, tyranny.

Stars, temperature, full diet, place, country, climate, condition, idleness, &c.

Natural allurements, and causes of love, as beauty, its praise, how it allureth.

Comeliness, grace, resulting from the whole or some parts, as face, eyes, hair, hands, &c. Subs. 2.

Artificial allurements, and provocations of lust and love, gestures, apparel, dowry, money, &c.

Quest. Whether beauty owe more to Art or Nature? Subs. 3.

Opportunity of time and place, conference, discourse, music, singing, dancing, amorous tales, lascivious objects, familiarity, gifts, promises, &c. Subs. 4.

Bawds and Philters. Subs. 5.

Heroical or Love-Melancholy, in which consider,

Causes, Memb. 2.

Syrumptoms or signs, Memb. 3.

Of body {Dryness, paleness, leanness, waking, sighing, &c.

Of mind. or {Fear, sorrow, suspicion, anxiety, &c.

Bad, as {A hell, torment, fire, blindness, &c.

Spruceness, neatness, courage, uprightness to learn music, singing, dancing, poetry, &c.

Prognostics; despair, madness, phrensy, death, Memb. 4.

By labour, diet, physic, abstinenence, Subs. 1.

To withstand the beginnings, avoid occasions, fair and foul means, change of place, contrary passion, witty inventions, recommend the former, bring in another, Subs. 2.

Cures, Memb. 5.

By good counsel, persuasion, from future miseries, inconveniences, &c., Subs. 3.

By philters, magical, and poetical cures, Subs. 4.

To let them have their desire disputed pro and con. Impediments removed, reasons for it, Subs. 5.
Synopsis of the Third Partition.

465

I. Religious melancholy, Sect. 4.

II. Religious melancholy, Sect. 3.

His name, definition, extent, power, tyranny, Membr. 1.

Division, Improper

Equiva- or
cations, Proper

kinds, Subs. 1.

In the parties themselves,

Causés, Sect. 2.

Symptoms, Membr. 2.

Prognostics, Membr. 3.

Cures, Membr. 4.

By avoiding occasions, always busy, never to be idle.

By good counsel, advice of friends, to condemn or dissemble it. Subs. 1.

To marry such as are equal in years, birth, fortunes, beauty, of like conditions, &c.

Of a good family, good education. To use them well.

A proof that there is such a species of melancholy, name, object God, what his beauty is, how it allureth, part and parties affected, superstitious, idolaters, prophets, heretics, &c., Subs. 1.

From others, Subs. 2.

Simplicity, fear, ignorance, solitariness, melancholy, curiosity, pride, vain-glory, decayed image of God.

In excess of such as do that which is not required. Membr. 1.

General

Zeal without knowledge, obstinacy, superstition, strange devotion, stupidity, confidence, still defiance of their sects, mutual love & hate of other sects, belief of incredibilities, impossibilities.

Particular.

Of heretics, pride, contumacy, contempt of others, wilfulness, vain-glory, singularity, prodigious paradoxes.

In superstitious blind zeal, obedience, strange works, fasting, sacrifices, obligations, prayers, vows, pseudo-martyrdom, mad and ridiculous customs, ceremonies, observations.

In pseudo-prophets, visions, revelations, dreams, prophecies, new doctrines, &c., of Jews, Gentiles, Mahometans, &c.

Prognostics, Subs. 4.

New doctrines, paradoxes, blasphemies, madness, stupidity, despair, damnation.

Secure, void of grace and fears.

Cures, Subs. 5.

Epicures, atheists, magicians, hypocrites, such as have cushioned consciences, or else are in a reprovable sense, worldly-secure, some philosophers, impertinent sinners, Subs. 1.

The devil and his allurements, rigid preachers, that wound their consciences, melancholy, contemplation, solitariness.

or

In defect, Subs. 2.

Distrustful, or too timorous, as desperate.

In despair consider;

Causes, Symptoms, Prognostics, Cures, S. 5.

How melancholy and despair differ. Distrust, weakness of faith. Guilty conscience for offence committed, misunderstanding Ser.

Fear, sorrow, anguish of mind, extreme tortures and horror of conscience, fearful dreams, conceits, visions, &c.

Blasphemy, violent death, Subs. 4.

Physic, as occasion serves, conference, not to be idle or alone. Good counsel, good company, all comforts and contents, &c.
THE THIRD PARTITION.

LOVE-MELANCHOLY.

THE FIRST SECTION, MEMBER, SUBSECTION.

The Preface.

There will not be wanting, I presume, one or other that will much recommend some part of this treatise of love-melancholy, and object (which a Erasmus in his preface to Sir Thomas More suspects of his) "that it is too light for a divine, too comical a subject to speak of love symptoms, too fantastical, and fit alone for a wanton poet, a feeling young love-sick gallant, an effeminate courtier, or some such idle person." And 'tis true they say: for by the naughtiness of men it is so come to pass, as b Caussinus observes, ut castis auribus vox amoris suspecta sit, et invisa, the very name of love is odious to chaster ears; and therefore some again, out of an affected gravity, will dislike all for the name's sake before they read a word; dissembling with him in c Petronius, and seem to be angry that their ears are violated with such obscene speeches, that so they may be admired for grave philosophers and staid carriage. They cannot abide to hear talk of love toys, or amorous discourses, vultu, gestu, oculis in their outward actions averse, and yet in their cogitations they are all out as bad, if not worse than others.

a Erasmi, posuitque meum Lucretia librum, Sed corum Bruto, Bruto roceo, legit.

But let these cavaliers and counterfeit Catos know, that as the Lord John answered the queen in that Italian "Guazzo, an old, a grave discreet man is fittest to discourse of love matters, because he hath likely more experience, observed more, hath a more staid judgment, can better discern, resolve, discuss, advise, give better cautions, and more solid precepts, better inform his auditors in such a subject, and by reason of his riper years sooner divert. Besides, nihil in hac amoris voce sublimandum, there is nothing here to be excepted at; love is a science of melancholy, and a necessary part of this my treatise, which I may not omit; operi suscepto inserviendum factum: so Jacobus Mysillius pleadeth for himself in his translation of Lucian's dialogues, and so do I; I must and will perform my task. And that short excuse of Mercerus for his edition of Aristaeutus shall be mine, "f If I have spent my time ill to write, let not them be so idle as to read." But I am persuaded it is not so ill spent, I ought not to excuse or repent myself of this subject, on which many grave and worthy men have written whole volumes, Plato, Plutarch,

a Encom. Moris. leviores esse nugas quam ut Theologum decent. b Lib. 8. Elloquent. cap. 14. de affectibus mortuorum vittae fit qui prescideraque in pravos usus vertunt. c Quotede amatoris mentio facta est, tam vehemens excudere, tam severa tristitia violati aures meae obsenso sermone nolui, ut me tanquam unum ex Philosophis intuererunt. d Martial. "In Brutos' presence Lucullus blushed and laid my book aside; when he retired, she took it up again and read." e Lib. 4. of civil conversation. f Si male locata est opera scribere, ut ipsi locent in legendo.
Mem. 1. Subs. 1.]  

Preface.

Plotinus, Maximus Tyrius, Alcinous, Avicenna, Leon Hebreus in three large dialogues, Xenophon, sympos. Theophrastus, if we may believe Athenæus, lib. 13. cap. 9. Piens Mirandula, Marius Aëquicola, both in Italian, Kornmannus, de lineis Amoris, lib. 3. Petrus Godefrius hath handled in three books, P. Hadus, and which almost every physician, as Arnoldus, Villanovanus, Valeriola, Observat. med. lib. 2. observe. 7. Älian Montaltus and Laurentius in their treatises of melancholy, Jason Pratensis, de morb. cap. Valescous de Taranta, Gordonius, Hercules de Saxonia, Savanaroa, Langius, &c., have treated of apart, and in their works. I excuse myself therefore with Peter Godefrius, Valeriola, Ficinus, and in "Langius" words: "Cadmus Milesius writ fourteen books of love, and why should I be ashamed to write an epistle in favour of young men, of this subject?" A company of stern readers dislike the second of the Æneids, and Virgil's gravity, for inserting such amorous passions in an heroic subject; but "Servius, his commentator, justly vindicates the poet's worth, wisdom, and discretion in doing as he did. Castalio would not have young men read the Canticles, because to his thinking it was too light and amorous a tract, a ballad of ballads, as our old English translation bath it. He might as well forbid the reading of Genesis, because of the loves of Jacob and Rachael, the stories of Sichem and Dinah, Judah and Thamar; reject the Book of Numbers, for the fornications of the people of Israel with the Moabites; that of Judges, for Sampson and Dalilah's embraces; that of the Kings, for David and Bersheba's adulteries, the incest of Ammon and Thamar, Solomon's concubines, &c., the stories of Esther, Judith, Susanna, and many such. Dicearchus, and some other, carp at Plato's majesty, that he would vouchsafe to indulge such love toys: amongst the rest, for that dalliance with Agatho,

"Savia dans Agathoni, animam ipsa in labora tenebam;  
Æegra etenim propteran tanquam abitura fuit."

For my part, saith Maximus Tyrius, a great platonist himself, me non tuntum admiratio habet, sed etiam stygor, I do not only admire but stand amazed to read, that Plato and Socrates both should expel Homer from their city, because he writ of such light and wanton subjects, Quod Junonem cum Jove in Ida concumbentes induct, ab immortalii nube contectos, Vulcan's net, Mars and Venus' fopperies before all the gods, because Apollo fled when he was persecuted by Achilles, the gods were wounded and ran whining away, as Mars that roared louder than Stentor, and covered nine acres of ground with his fall, Vulcan was a summer's day falling down from heaven, and in Lemnos Isle brake his leg, &c., with such ridiculous passages; when as both Socrates and Plato by his testimony writ lighter themselves: quid enim tam distat (as he follows it quam amans à temperante, formarum admirator à demente, what can be more absurd than for grave philosophers to treat of such fooleries, to admire Antiloquus, Alcibiades, for their beauties as they did, to run after, to gaze, to dote on fair Phædrus, delicate Agatho, young Lysis, fine Charmides, hecchina Philosophum decent? Both this become grave philosophers? Thus peradventure Callias, Thrasimachus, Polus, Aristophanes, or some of his adversaries and emulators might object; but neither they nor Anytus and Melitus his bitter enemies, that condemned him for teaching Critias to tyrannise, his impiety for swearing by dogs and plain trees, for his juggling sophistry, &c., never so much as upbraided him with impure love, writing or speaking of that subject; and therefore without question, as he concludes, both Socrates and Plato in this are justly to be excused. But suppose they had been a little

8 Comment. in 2. Æncid.  
14 Quod rumin et eorum amore commorant.  
18 Quam multa ei objectisse quod Critias tyrannidem doceisset, quod Platonem juravit loquaces sophistam, &c. aseussionem amans nullam fecerunt. Idoque honestus amor, &c.
overseen, should divine Plato be defamed? no, rather as he said of Cato's drunkenness, if Cato were drunk, it should be no vice at all to be drunk. They reprove Plato then, but without cause (as "Ficinus pleads") "for all love is honest and good, and they are worthy to be loved that speak well of love." "Being to speak of this admirable affection of love" (saith 6 Valleriola) "there lies open a vast and philosophical field to my discourse, by which many lovers become mad, let me leave my more serious meditations, wander in these philosophical fields, and look into those pleasant groves of the Muses, where with unspeakable variety of flowers, we may make garlands to ourselves, not to adorn us only, but with their pleasant smell and juice to nourish our souls, and fill our minds desirous of knowledge," &c. After a hard and unpleasing discourse of melancholy, which hath hitherto molested your patience and tired the author, give him leave with. 1 Godefridus the lawyer, and Laurentius (cap. 3.) to recreate himself in this kind after his laborious studies, "since so many grave divines and worthy men have without offence to manners, to help themselves and others, voluntarily written of it." Heliodorus, a bishop, penned a love story of Theagines and Chariclea, and when some Catos of his time reprehended him for it, chose rather, saith 1 Necephorus, to leave his bishopric than his book. Æneas Sylvius, an ancient divine, and past forty years of age (as he confesseth himself, after Pope Pius Secundus), indited that wanton history of Euryalus and Lucretia. And how many superintendents of learning could I reckon up that have written of light fantastical subjects? Beroaldus, Erasmus, Alpharetus, twenty-four times printed in Spanish, &c. Give me leave then to refresh my muse a little, and my weary readers, to expatiate in this delightful subject, hoc deliciarum campo, as Fonseca terms it, to "season a surly discourse with a more pleasing aspersion of love matters; Educarum vitam convenit, as the poet invites us, curas nugas, &c., 'tis good to sweeten our life with some pleasing toys to relish it, and as Pliny tells us, magnas paris studiosorum amoenitates querimus, most of our students love such pleasant subjects. Though Macrobius teach us otherwise, "that those old sages banished all such light tracts from their studies to nurse's cradles, to please only the ear;" yet out of Apuleius I will oppose as honourable patrons, Solon, Plato, 8 Xenophon, Adrian, &c. that as highly approve of these treatises. On the other side methinks they are not to be disliked, they are not so unfit. I will not peremptorily say as one did, 7 tam suaviam dicam, fascinora, ut male sit ei qui talibus non delectetur, I will tell you such pretty stories, that foul befalhim that is not pleased with them; Nèque dicam ex quo vobis usui sit audivisse, et voluptati maminisse, with that confidence as Beroaldus doth his enarrations on Propertius. I will not expect or hope for that approbation which Lipsius gives to his Epictetus; pluris facio quam relege; semper ut novum, et quum repetiti, repetendum, the more I read, the more shall I covet to read. I will not press you with my pamphlets, or beg attention, but if you like them you may. Pliny holds it expedient, and most fit, severitatem juvanditatem etiam in scriptis condire, to season our works with some pleasant discourse; Synesius approves it, licet in ludicris ludere, the 9 poet admires it, Omne tibi punctum qui miscuit

1 Carpunt alii Platonem majestatem quod amorit niunam indulserit, Dicarchus et alii; sed male. Omnis amor honestus et bonus, et amor dignus qui bene dilectum de Amore. 2 Med. obser. lib. I. cap. 7. de admiranda amoriis aucta dicuntur, ingenios patris campos et philosophicos, quod hanc hominum iuncturur ad insaniam, libeat modo vagari, &c. quod non oritur modo, sed fragraria ut suauatur juventia plenius alant, &c.

3 Lib. I. praefat. de amoribus agens relaxandui animi causas laboriosissimis studios fatigat; quando et Theologi se his iuvari et iuvare illiis moribus velant. 4 Hist. lib. I. cap. 34. 5 Praefat. quid quadrangulare convenit cum amore? Ego vero agnosco amatorium scriptum mihi non convenire, qui jam meridem praestregressum in vesperum f. cor. Æneas Sylvius, praefat. 6 Ut seviora studia lis amantissimae lector condire possit. Aecinus. 7 Discessum quin philosophum audire noluit. 8 In Som. cap. sacrario suo tum ad causas anticum sapientiam eliminantem, solas autiam delitiis profundas. 9 Hamilton et Ephesius, qui de Amore scripturatur, utique amore Myrrhae, Cyrenae, et Adonis. Suldas. 10 Pet. Artesius, dial. Ital. 11 Hor. "He has accomplished every point who has joined the useful to the agreeable."
made this his only care and sole study to please the people, tickle the ear, and to delight; but mine earnest intent is as much to profit as to please; non tam ut populo placerr, quam ut populum iuvarem, and these my writings, I hope, shall take like gilded pills, which are so composed as well to tempt the appetite, and deceive the palate, as to help and medicinally work upon the whole body; my lines shall not only recreate, but rectify the mind. I think I have said enough; if not, let him that is otherwise minded, remember that of Maudarensis, "he was in his life a philosopher (as Ausonius apologizeth for him), in his epigrams a lover, in his precepts most severe; in his epistle to Cærellia, a wanton." Aunianus, Sulpicius, Evenmus, Menander, and many old poets besides, did in scriptis pravire, write Fessomnines, Attolanes, and lascivious songs; lactam material; yet they had in moribus censuram, et severitatem, they were chaste, severe, and upright livers.

"Castum esse decet pum poetam
Ipsum, versiculos nihil necesse est,
Qui tam deinde habenti salum et leporem."* 

I am of Catullus’s opinion, and make the same apology in mine own behalf; Hoc etiam quod scribo, pendaet plerunque ex aiorum sententia et auctoritate; nec ipse forsan insanius, sed insanientes sequor. Atqui detur hoc insanire me; semel insanivimus omnes, et tute ipse opinor insanius aliquando, et is, et ille, et ego, silecit. Homo sum, humani à me nihil alienum puto;* And which he urgeth for himself, accused of the like fault, I as justly plead, lasciva est nobis pagina, vita pro Tara est. Howsoever my lives; my life is honest, vita verecunda est, nusa jocosa mihi. But I presume I need no such apologies, I need not, as Socrates in Plato, cover his face when he spake of love, or blush and hide mine eyes, as Pallas did in her hood, when she was consulted by Jupiter about Mercury’s marriage, quod super nuptiis virgo consultatur, it is no such lascivious, obscene or wanton discourse; I have not offended your chaster ears with anything that is here written, as many French and Italian authors in their modern language of late have done, nay some of our Latin pontificial writers, Zauches, Asorius, Abulensis, Burchardus, &c., whom Rivet accuseth to be more lascivious than Virgil in Priapois, Petronius in Catelecis, Aristophanes in Lycistrata, Martialis, or any other pagan profane writer, qui tam atrociter (one notes) hoc genere pecécavunt ut multa ingeniosissimae scriptae obscenitatem gratia castae mentes adhorreant. ‘Tis not scourrile this, but chaste, honest, most part serious, and even of religion itself. * Incensed (as he said) with the love of finding love, we have sought it, and found it." More yet, I have augmented

* Legendi copulatores, quam ego scribendi, saith Lucian. b Plus capio voluptatis inde, quam spectantium in theatro ludis. c Proeemo In Isiarn. Muto major pars Millas fabulas revovendum quam Platonis libros.

* d "This he took to be his only business, that the plays which he wrote should please the people." e In vita philosophorum, in Epigram, auctor, in Epistolis petuliam, in preceptis savens. f "The poet himself should be chaste and pious, but his verses need not imitate him in these respects; they may therefore contain wit and humour." g "This that I write depends sometimes upon the opinion and authority of others: nor perhaps am I fraticile. I only follow madness: But thus far I may be denounced: we have all been so at some one time, and yourself, I think, art sometimes insane, and this man, and that man, and I also."

h "I am mortal, and think no humane action unsuited to me." i Mart. Ovid. j Isag. ad sacr. scrip. cap. 13. k Barthius, note in Celestinam, Isadum Hist. l Ficinus, Comment c. 17. Amore incendii

inveniendi amoris, amoreque quidem et invenienses.
and added something to this light treatise (if light) which was not in the former editions, I am not ashamed to confess it, with a good \(^2\) author, quod 

destendi et locupletari hoc subjectum plerique postulabant, et surum importundate victus, 

animum utcunque renitentem eò adeyi, ut jam sexta vice calamin in manum sumerem, scriptionis longè et à studiis et professione med alienæ me accingem, 

horas aliquas à seris meis occupationibus interim suffuratus, easque veluti ludo cuidam ac recreativi destinans;

\[\begin{align*}
\text{"\textit{Cogor\textemdash}\textit{retororum}\\ Veia dare, atque iterare careus\\ Olim relictos\textemdash}^2\text{"}
\end{align*}\]

\[\text{\textit{etsi non ignorarem novos fortasse detractores novis hisce interpolationibus meis ministè defuturos}.}^3\]

And thus much have I thought good to say by way of preface, lest any man (which \(^4\) Godefridus feared in his book) should blame in me lightness, wantonness, rashness, in speaking of love’s causes, enticements, symptoms, remedies, lawful and unlawful loves, and lust itself, \(^1\) I speak it only to tax and deter others from it, not to teach, but to show the vanities and forgeries of this heroic or herculean love, \(^4\) and to apply remedies unto it. I will treat of this with like liberty as of the rest.

\[\text{\textit{Sed dieum vobis, vos porro diete mulitis\\ Millibus, et factore hinc charria loquatur ans.}}\]

Condemn me not, good reader, then, or censure me hardly, if some part of this treatise to thy thinking as yet be too light; but consider better of it; \textit{Omnia mundi mundis}, \(^4\) a naked man to a modest woman is no otherwise than a picture, as Augusta Livia truly said, and \(^x\) \textit{mala mens, malus animus}, ‘tis as ‘tis taken. If in thy censure it be too light, I advise thee as Lipsius did his reader for some places of Plautus, \textit{istos quasi Sirenum scopulos pretenderave}, if they like thee not, let them pass; or oppose that which is good to that which is bad, and reject not therefore all. For to invert that verse of Martial, and with Hierom Wolfius to apply it to my present purpose, \textit{sum mala, sum quaedam mediocria, sum bona plura}; some is good, some bad, some is indifferent. I say further with him yet, I have inserted \(^3\) \textit{(levicia quaedam et ridicula ascribere non sum gravatus, circumferentique quaedam et theatris, et plateis, etiam et popinis)} some things more homely, light, or comical, \textit{titanis gratias}, &c. which I would request every man to interpret to the best, and as Julius Caesar Scaliger besought Cardan \textit{(siquid urbiusiusculè lusum à nobis, per deos immortales te oror, Hieronyme Cardane, ne me malè capias)}. I beseech thee, good reader, not to mistake me, or misconstrue what is here written; \textit{Per Musas et Charites, et omnia Poètarum numina, benignè lector, oro te ne me malè capias}. ‘Tis a comical subject; in sober sadness I crave pardon of what is amiss, and desire thee to suspend thy judgment, wink at small faults, or to be silent at least; but if thou likest, speak well of it, and wish me good success. \textit{Extremum hunc, Arethusa, mihi concede laborum.}\]

I am resolved howsoever, \textit{velis, nobis, audacter studium intrare}, in the Olympics, with those Ælians wrestlers in Philostrato, boldly to show myself in

\(^2\) Author Celestine, Barth. Interprete. “That, overcome by the solicitations of friends, who requested me to enlarge and improve my volumes, I have devoted my otherwise reluctant mind to the labour; and now for the sixth time have I taken up my pen, and applied myself to literature very foreign indeed to my studies and professional occupations, stealing a few hours from serious pursuits, and devoting them, as it were, to recreation.”

\(^3\) Hor. lib. 1. ode 34. “I am compelled to reverse my sails, and retrieve my former course.”

\(^4\) Although I was by no means ignorant that new colunnators would not be wanting to ensue my new introductions. I have predixi ne quis temere nos scriptipserit: carmen amorum lenocinla, de praxi, fornacionibus, adulteriis, &c.

\(^1\) Tacit, &c. “What I tell thee, do you tell to the multitude, and make this treatise gossip like an old woman.”

\(^x\) Virgo nuda caelo femine cubita statuae distant. “Honi soit qui mal y pense.”

\(^2\) Frac Suid. “O Arethusa, smile on this my last labour.”
this common stage, and in this tragi-comedy of love, to act several parts, some satirically, some comically, some in a mixed tone, as the subject I have in hand gives occasion, and present scene shall require, or offer itself.

SUBSECT. II.—Love's Beginning, Object, Definition, Division.

"Love's limits are ample and great, and a spacious walk it hath, beset with thorns," and for that cause, which Scaliger reprehends in Cardan, "not lightly to be passed over." Lest I incur the same censure, I will examine all the kinds of love, his nature, beginning, difference, objects, how it is honest or dishonest, a virtue or vice, a natural passion, or a disease, his power and effects, how far it extends: of which, although something has been said in the first partition, in those sections of perturbations ("for love and hatred are the first and most common passions, from which all the rest arise, and are attendant," as Picolomineus holds, or as Nich. Caesarinus, the primum mobile of all other affections, which carry them all about them), I will now more copiously dilate, through all his parts and several branches, that so it may better appear what love is, and how it varies with the objects, how in defect, or (which is most ordinary and common) immoderate, and in excess, causeth melancholy.

Love universally taken is defined to be a desire, as a word of more ample signification: and though Leon Hebreus, the most copious writer of this subject, in his third dialogue make no difference, yet in his first he distinguisheth them again, and defines love by desire. "^a^ Love is a voluntary affection, and desire to enjoy that which is good. "^b^ Desire wisheth, love enjoys; the end of the one is the beginning of the other; that which we love is present; that which we desire is absent." "^c^ It is worth the labour," saith Plotinus, "to consider well of love, whether it be a god or a devil, or passion of the mind, or partly god, partly devil, partly passion." He concludes love to participate of all three, to arise from desire of that which is beautiful and fair, and defines it to be "an action of the mind desiring that which is good." "^d^ Plato calls it the great devil, for its vehemency, and sovereignty over all other passions, and defines it an appetite, "^e^ by which we desire some good to be present." Ficinus in his comment adds the word fair to this definition. Love is a desire of enjoying that which is good and fair. Austin dilates this common definition, and will have love to be a delectation of the heart, "^f^ for something which we seek to win, or joy to have, coveting by desire, resting in joy." "^g^ Scaliger, Exerc. 301. taxeth these former definitions, and will not have love to be defined by desire or appetite; "^h^ for when we enjoy the things we desire, there remains no more appetite:" as he defines it. "Love is an affection by which we are either united to the thing we love, or perpetuate our union;" which agrees in part with Leon Hebreus.

Now this love varies as its object varies, which is always good, amiable, fair, gracious, and pleasant. "^i^ All things desire that which is good," as we are taught in the Ethics, or at least that which to them seems to be good; quid enim vis mali (as Austin well infers) dic mihi? pute nihil in omnibus actionibus; thou wilt wish no harm, I suppose, no ill in all thine actions, thoughts or desires, nihil mali vis; ^k^ thou wilt not have bad corn, bad soil, a naughty tree,

---

2 Exerc. 301. Campus amoris maximus et spinae obstas, nec levissimo pede transvolandus. 3 Grad. I. cap. 23. Ex Platone. princeps et communiquee perturbationes ex quibus extern orientat et eorum sunt pedes sequae. 4 Amor est voluntarius affectus et desiderium re bona fruendi. 5 Desiderium optantis, amor eorum quibus fruimur; amoris principium, desiderii finis, amantum adest. 6 Principium I. de amore. Opera pridem est de amore considerata, utram Deus, ut Dæmon, ut passio quamdam animae, ut partim Deus, partim Dæmon, passio partim, &c. Amor est actus voluntarias bonarum desideriorum. 7 Magnus Dæmon convivit, Boni pulchrique fruendi desiderium. 8 Godefroicius, I. I. cap. 2. Amor est desidetatis cordis, aliquid ad aliquid, propius aliquod desiderium in appetendo, et gaudium pertraendo per desiderium currens, requiescens per gaudium. 9 Non est amor desiderium aut appetitus ut ab omnibus hucesse traditum; nam cum possidem amata re, non maner appetitus: est inquiri affectus quo cum re amata aut unam, aut unam, quoniam perpetuam. 10 Omnis appetitus bonum. 11 Terram non vis mala, malam semetem, sed bonum arborem, equum bonum, &c.
but all good; a good servant, a good horse, a good son, a good friend, a good neighbour, a good wife. From this goodness comes beauty; from beauty, grace, and comeliness, which result as so many rays from their good parts, make us to love, and so to covet it: for were it not pleasing and gracious in our eyes, we should not seek. "No man loves (saith Aristotle 9. mor. cap. 5.) but he that was first delighted with comeliness and beauty." As this fair object varies, so doth our love; for as Proclus holds, Omne pulchrum amabile, every fair thing is amiable, and what we love is fair and gracious in our eyes, or at least we do so apprehend and still esteem of it. "Amiableness is the object of love, the scope and end is to obtain it, for whose sake we love, and which our mind covets to enjoy." And it seems to us especially fair and good; for good, fair, and unity, cannot be separated. Beauty shines, Plato saith, and by reason of its splendour and shining causeth admiration; and the fairer the object is, the more eagerly it is sought. For as the same Plato defines it, "Beauty is a lively, shining or glittering brightness, resulting from effused good, by ideas, seeds, reasons, shadows, stirring up our minds, that by this good they may be united and made one." Others will have beauty to be the perfection of the whole composition, "caused out of the congruous symmetry, measure, order and manner of parts, and that comeliness which proceeds from this beauty is called grace, and from thence all fair things are gracious." For grace and beauty are so wonderfully annexed, "so sweetly and gently win our souls, and strongly allure, that they confound our judgment and cannot be distinguished. Beauty and grace are like those beams and shinings that come from the glorious and divine sun," which are diverse, as they proceed from the diverse objects, to please and affect our several senses. "As the species of beauty, are taken at our eyes, ears, or conceived in our inner soul," as Plato disputes at large in his Dialogue de pulchro, Phaedro, Hippis, and after many sophistical errors confuted, concludes that beauty is a grace in all things, delighting the eyes, ears, and soul itself; so that, as Valesius infers hence, whatsoever pleaseth our eyes, ears, and soul, must needs be beautiful, fair, and delightful to us. "And nothing can more please our ears than music, or pacify our minds." Fair houses, pictures, orchards, gardens, fields a fair hawk, a fair horse is most acceptable unto us; whatsoever pleaseth our eyes and ears, we call beautiful and fair; "Pleasure belongeth to the rest of the senses, but beauty and beauty to these two alone." As the objects vary and are diverse, so they diversely affect our eyes, ears, and soul itself. Which gives occasion to some to make so many several kinds of love as there be objects. One beauty ariseth from God, of which and divine love S. Dionysius, with many fathers and Neoterios, have written just volumes, De amore Dei, as they term it, many paranetical discourses; another from his creatures; there is a beauty of the body, a beauty of the soul, a beauty from virtue, formam martymy, Austin calls it, quanam videmus occulte animi, which we see with the eyes of our mind; which beauty, as Tully saith, if we could discern with these corporeal eyes, admirabiles sui amores excitaret, would cause admirable affections, and ravish our souls. This other beauty which ariseth from those extreme parts, and graces which proceed from gestures, speeches, several motions, and proportions of creatures, men and women (especially from women,
which made those old poets put the three graces still in Venus' company, as attending on her, and holding up her train) are infinite almost, and vary their names with their objects, as love of money, covetousness, love of beauty, lust, immoderate desire of any pleasure, concupiscence, friendship, love, good-will, &c. and is either virtue or vice, honest, dishonest, in excess, defect, as shall be showed in his place. Heroical love, religious love, &c. which may be reduced to a twofold division, according to the principal parts which are affected, the brain and liver. Amor et amicitia, which Scaliger, Exercit. 301. Valesius and Melanthon warrant out of Plato φίλαυ & εἰκός from that speech of Pausanias belike, that makes two Venerees and two loves. ""One Venus is ancient without a mother, and descended from heaven, whom we call celestial; the younger, begotten of Jupiter and Dione, whom commonly we call Venus." Ficinus, in his comment upon this place, cap. 8, following Plato, calls these two loves, two devils, or good and bad angels according to us, which are still hovering about our souls. ""The one rears to heaven, the other depresseth us to hell; the one good, which stirs us up to the contemplation of that divine beauty for whose sake we perform justice and all godly offices, study philosophy, &c.; the other base, and though bad yet to be respected; for indeed both are good in their own natures: procreation of children is as necessary as that finding out of truth, but therefore called bad, because it is abused, and withdraws our soul from the speculation of that other to viler objects,"" so far Ficinus. S. Austin, lib. 15. de civ. Dei et sup. Psal. lxiv., hath delivered as much in effect. ""Every creature is good, and may be loved well or ill:" and ""Two cities make two loves, Jerusalem and Babylon, the love of God the one, the love of the world the other; of these two cities we all are citizens, as, by examination of ourselves, we may soon find, and of which."" The one love is the root of all mischief, the other of all good. So, in his 15. cap. lib. de amor. Ecclesie, he will have those four cardinal virtues to be sought else but love rightly composed; in his 15. book de civ. Dei, cap. 22. he calls virtue the order of love, whom Thomas following 1. port. 2. quest. 55. art. 1. and quest. 56. 3. quest. 62. art. 2. confirms as much, and amplifies in many words. b Lucian, to the same purpose, hath a division of his own, ""One love was born in the sea, which is as various and raging in young men's breasts as the sea itself, and causeth burning lust: the other is that golden chain which was let down from heaven, and with a divine fury ravisheth our souls, made to the image of God, and stirs us up to comprehend the innate and incorruptible beauty to which we were once created."" Beroaldus hath expressed all this in an epigram of his:—

"Dogmata divini memorant si vera Platonis, Sunt gemina Venerees, et geminatis amor. Coelestis Venus est nullo generata parente, Quae casto sanctos necit amore virus. Altera sed Venere est totum vulgata per orbem, Quae divinum mentis illigat, atque hominum; Imprompa, seductrix, petalans," &c. | "If divine Plato's tenets they be true, Two Veneres, two loves there be; The one from heaven, unbegotten still, Which knits our souls in unlife. The other famous over all the world, Binding the hearts of gods and men; Dishonest, wanton, and seducing she, Rules whom she will, both where and when."

This twofold division of love, Origen likewise follows, in his Comment on the Canticles, one from God, the other from the devil, as he holds (understanding in the worse sense), which many others repeat and imitate. Both which (to omit all subdivisions) in excess or defect, as they are abused, or degenerate, cause melancholy in a particular kind, as shall be shown in his place. Austin,
in another Tract, makes a threefold division of this love, which we may use well or ill: ""God, our neighbour, and the world: God above us, our neighbour next us, the world beneath us. In the course of our desires, God hath three things, the world one, our neighbour two. Our desire to God, is either from God, with God, or to God, and ordinarily so runs. From God, when it receives from him, whence, and for which it should love him: with God, when it contradicts his will in nothing: to God, when it seeks to him, and rests itself in him. Our love to our neighbour may proceed from him, and run with him, not to him: from him, as when we rejoice of his good safety, and well doing: with him, when we desire to have him a fellow and companion of our journey in the way of the Lord: not in him, because there is no aid, hope, or confidence in man. From the world our love comes, when we begin to admire the Creator in his works, and glorify God in his creatures: with the world it should run, if, according to the mutability of all temporalities, it should be rejected in adversity, or over elevated in prosperity: to the world, if it would settle itself in its vain delights and studies." Many such partitions of love I could repeat, and subdivisions, but lest (which Scaliger objects to Cardan, Exercit. 501.)

"1 I confound filthy burning lust with pure and divine love," I will follow that accurate division of Leon Hebreus, dial. 2. betwixt Sophia and Philo, where he speaks of natural, sensible, and rational love, and handeth each apart. Natural love or hatred, is that sympathy or antipathy which is to be seen in animate and inanimate creatures, in the four elements, metals, stones, gravia tendant deorsum, as a stone to his centre, fire upward, and rivers to the sea. The sun, moon, and stars go still round, "Amantes nature debita exercere, for love of perfection. This love is manifest, I say, in inanimate creatures. How comes a loadstone to draw iron to it? jet chaff? the ground to covet showers, but for love? No creature, S. Hieron concludes, is to be found, quod non aliquid amat, no stock, no stone, that hath not some feeling of love. "Tis more eminent in plants, herbs, and is especially observed in vegetables; as between the vine and elm a great sympathy, between the vine and the cabbage, between the vine and the olive, "Virgo fugit Bromium, between the vine and the olive bays a great antipathy, the vine loves not the bay, "et nor his smell, and will kill him, if he grow near him:" the bur and the lentil cannot endure one another, the olive and the myrtle embrace each other, in roots and branches if they grow near. Read more of this in Picolomineus, grad. 7, cap. 1. Crescentius, lib. 5. de agric., Baptista Porta de mag. lib. 1. cap. de plant. odio et element. sym., Fracastorius de sym. et anh. of the love and hatred of planets, consult with every astrologer. Leon Hebreus gives many fabulous reasons, and moraliseth them withheld.

Sensible love is that of brute beasts, of which the same Leon Hebreus, dial. 2. assigns these causes. First, for the pleasure they take in the act of generation, male and female love one another. Secondly, for the preservation of the species, and desire of young brood. Thirdly, for the mutual agreement, as being of the same kind: "Sus sui, canis cani, bos bovi, et asinus asino pulcherrimus videtur, as Epicarmus held, and according to that adage of Diogenianus, Adsidet usque graculus apud graculum, they much delight in one another's company, "Formicse grata est formice, ecada ecadae, and birds of a feather will gather together. Fourthly, for custom, use, and familiarity, as if a dog be trained up with a lion and a bear, contrary to their natures, they will

---

love each other. Hawks, dogs, horses, love their masters and keepers: many stories I could relate in this kind, but see Gillius de hist. anim. lib. 3, cap 14, those two Epistles of Lipsius, of dogs and horses, Aegellius, &c. Fifthly for bringing up, as if a bitch bring up a kid, a hen ducklings, a hedge-sparrow a cuckoo, &c.

The third kind is Amor cognitionis, as Leon calls it, rational love, Intellectus amor, and is proper to men, on which I must insist. This appears in God, angels, men. God is love itself, the fountain of love, the disciple of love, as: Plato styles him; the servant of peace, the God of love and peace; have peace with all men and God is with you.

"By this love (saith Gerson) we purchase heaven, and buy the kingdom of God." This m love is either in the Trinity itself (for the Holy Ghost is the love of the Father and the Son, &c., John iii. 35, and v. 20, and xiv. 31), or towards us His creatures, as in making the world. Amor mundum fecit, love built cities, mundi anima, invented arts, sciences, and all 

"Strangum quaeris merit quis finis et ortus,
Desine; nam causa est unica solus amor." | "If first and last of any thing you wit,
Cease; love's the sole and only cause of it."

Love, saith P. Leo, made the world, and afterwards in redeeming it, "God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten son for it," John iii. 16.

"Behold what love the Father hath showed on us, that we should be called the sons of God," 1 John iii. 1. Or by His sweet providence, in protecting of it; either all in general, or His saints elect and church in particular, whom He keeps as the apple of His eye, whom He loves freely, as Hosea xiv. 5, speaks, and dearly respects, 4Charior est ipis homo quam sibi. Not that we are fair, nor for any merit or grace of ours, for we are most vile and base; but out of His incomparable love and goodness, out of His Divine Nature. And this is that Homer's golden chain, which reacheth down from heaven to earth, by which every creature is annexed, and depends on his Creator. He made all, saith 7Moses, "and it was good;" He loves it as good.

The love of angels and living souls is mutual amongst themselves, towards us militant in the church, and all such as love God; as the sunbeams irradiate the earth from those celestial thrones, they by their well wishes reflect on us, "in salute hominum promovendâ alacres, et constantes administrî, there is joy in heaven for every sinner that repenteth; they pray for us, are solicitous for our good, 8 Casti genii.

"Ubi regnat charitas, suave desiderium,
Lectitique et amor Deo conjunctus." 9

Love proper to mortal men is the third member of this subdivision, and the subject of my following discourse.

9 Mantuan. 4 Charitas munificus, qua mercatum de Deo regnum Dei. 7 Pelam. partit. Zanchius de natura Dei, c. 3, copioso de hoc amore Dei agit. 10 Nich. Belins, discurso. 28, de amatoribus, virtutem provocat, conservat pacem in terrâ, tranquillianim in aere, sanitatis &c. 11 Cameraarius, Enph, 100, cen. 2. 12 Dial. 3. 13 Juven. 3 Gen. 1. 14 Cassinianus. 15 Theorect et Plotino. 16 "Where charity prevails, sweet desire, joy, and love towards God are also present."
MEMB. II.

SUBSECT. I.—Love of Men, which varies as his Objects, Profitable, Pleasant, Honest.

VALESIUS, lib. 3. contr. 13. defines this love which is in men, "to be "an affection of both powers, appetite, and reason." The rational resides in the brain, the other in the liver (as before hath been said out of Plato and others); the heart is diversely affected of both, and carried a thousand ways by consent. The sensitive faculty most part overrules reason, the soul is carried hoodwinked, and the understanding captive like a beast. *x The heart is variously inclined, sometimes they are merry, sometimes sad, and from love arise hope, and fear, jealousy, fury, desperation." Now this love of men is diverse, and varies as the object varies, by which they are enticed, as virtue, wisdom, eloquence, profit, wealth, money, fame, honour, or comeliness of person, &c. Leon Hebreus, in his first dialogue, reduceth them all to these three, utiles, juovandum, honestum, profitable, pleasant, honest (out of Aristotle belike 8. moral.); of which he discourseth at large, and whatsoever is beautiful and fair is referred to them, or any way to be desired. *y To profitable is ascribed health, wealth, honour, &c., which is rather ambition, desire, covetousness, than love;" friends, children, love of women, "all delightful and pleasant objects, are referred to the second. The love of honest things consists in virtue and wisdom, and is preferred before that which is profitable and pleasant: intellectual about that which is honest. *z St. Austin calls "profitable, worldly; pleasant, carnal; honest, spiritual." b Of and from all three, result charity, friendship, and true love, which respects God and our neighbour." Of each of these I will briefly dilate, and show in what sort they cause melancholy.

Amongst all these fair enticing objects, which procure love, and bewitch the soul of man, there is none so moving, so forcible as profit; and that which carrieth with it a show of commodity. Health indeed is a precious thing, to recover and preserve which we will undergo any misery, drink bitter potions, freely give our goods: restore a man to his health, his purse lies open to thee, bountiful he is, thankful and beholding to thee; but give him wealth and honour, give him gold, or what shall be for his advantage and preferment, and thou shalt command his affections, oblige him eternally to thee; heart, hand, life, and all is at thy service, thou art his dear and loving friend, good and gracious lord and master, his Mecenas; he is thy slave, thy vassal, most devote, affectioned, and bound in all duty: tell him good tidings in this kind, there spoke an angel, a blessed hour that brings in gain, he is thy creature, and thou his creator, he hugs and admires thee; he is thine for ever. No loadstone so attractive as that of profit, none so fair an object as this of gold; c nothing wins a man sooner than a good turn, bounty and liberality command body and soul:

"Monera (creae minori) placat hominesque desque; | "Good turns doth pacify both God and men, Placatur donis Jupiter ipsa datas." And Jupiter himself is won by them."

Gold of all other is a most delicious object; a sweet light, a goodly lustre it hath: gratiis aurum quam solem intuemur; saith Austin, and we had rather see it than the sun. Sweet and pleasant in getting, in keeping; it seasons all our labours, intolerable pains we take for it, base employments, endure bitter flouts and taunts, long journeys, heavy burdens, all are made light and easy by

1 Affectus nunc appetitivo potestate, nunc rationalis, alter cerebro re-osit, alter hepate, corde, &c. 2 Cor varie inclinatur, nunc gradiens, nunc morreus; statim ex amore nasetur Zelotida, timor, furor, supcr, desperatio. 3 Ad utile sanitas referitur; utilitatem ambitios, cupido, desideriam, potius quam amor; excessit, avaritia. 4 Vlccom. crmd. 1. cap. 1. 5 Lib. de amic. titse mundandum, carmen jucundum, multitudine honestum. 6 Ex singulis tribus fit charitas et amicitia, qua respeti deus et proximum. 7 Benefactores prindipet animas. Vives 3. de anima.
this hope of gain; *At mibi plaudit ipsa domi, simul ac nummos contemplor in arca.* The sight of gold refresheth our spirits, and ravisheth our hearts, as that Babylonian garment and *golden wedge* did Achan in the camp, the very sight and hearing sets on fire his soul with desire of it. It will make a man run to the antipodes, or tarry at home and turn parasite, lie, flatter, prostitute himself, swear and bear false witness; he will venture his body, kill a king, murder his father, and damn his soul to come at it. *Formosior auris massa,* as *he* well observed, the mass of gold is fairer than all your Grecian pictures, that Apelles, Phidias, or any doting painter could ever make: we are enamoured with it,

"Plura proris vota, et cunctis notissima templis,
Divitis ut crescant." —

All our labours, studies, endeavours, vows, prayers and wishes, are to get, how to compass it.

"Hae est illa cum famulatur maximus orbis,
Diva potens rerum, dominique pecunia sat." 

"This is the great goddess we adore and worship; this is the sole object of our desire." If we have it, as we think, we are made for ever, thrice happy, princes, lords, &c. If we lose it, we are dull, heavy, dejected, discontent, miserable, desperate, and mad. Our estate and *bean esse ebbs* and flows with our commodity; and as we are endowed or enriched, so are we beloved and esteemed: it lasts no longer than our wealth; when that is gone, and the object removed, farewell friendship: as long as bounty, good cheer, and rewards were to be hoped, friends enough; they were tied to thee by the teeth, and would follow thee as crows do a carcass: but when thy goods are gone and spent, the lamp of their love is out, and thou shalt be contemned, scorned, hated, injured. a Lucian's Timon, when he lived in prosperity, was the sole spectacle of Greece, only admired; who but Timon? Every body loved, honoured, applauded him, each man offered him his service, and sought to be kin to him; but when his gold was spent, his fair possessions gone, farewell Timon: none so ugly, none so deformed, so odious an object as Timon, no man so ridiculous on a sudden, they gave him a penny to buy a rope, no man would know him.

'Tis the general humour of the world, commodity steers our affections throughout, we love those that are fortunate and rich, that thrive, or by whom we may receive mutual kindness, hope for like courtesies, get any good, gain, or profit; hate those, and abhor on the other side, which are poor and miserable, or by whom we may sustain loss or inconvenience. And even those that were now familiar and dear unto us, our loving and long friends, neighbours, kinsmen, allies, with whom we have conversed, and lived as so many Geryons for some years past, striving still to give one another all good content and entertainment, with mutual invitations, feastings, disports, offices, for whom we would ride, run, spend ourselves, and of whom we have so freely and honourably spoken, to whom we have given all those urgent titles, and magnificent eulogisms, most excellent and most noble, worthy, wise, grave, learned, valiant, &c., and magnified beyond measure: if any controversy arise between us, some trespass, injury, abuse, some part of our goods be detained, a piece of land come to be litigious, if they cross us in our suit, or touch the string of our commodity, we detest and depress them upon a sudden: neither affnity, consanguinity, or old acquaintance can contain us, but *rupto je core exterit Caprici f icus.* A golden apple sets altogether by the ears, as if a narrowbone or honeycomb were flung amongst bears: father and son, brother and sister, kinsmen are at odds: and look what malice, deadly hatred can invent, that shall be

a *Jas. 7.* b *Lucianus.*

done, Terrible, dirum, pestilens, atroc, ferum, mutual injuries, desire of revenge, and how to hurt them, him and his, are all our studies. If our pleasures be interrupt, we can tolerate it: our bodies hurt, we can put it up and be reconciled: but touch our commodities, we are most impatient: fair becomes foul, the graces are turned to harpies, friendly salutations to bitter imprecations, mutual feasting to plotting villainies, minings and counterminings; good words to satires and invectives, we revile e contra, nought but his imperfections are in our eyes, he is a base knave, a devil, a monster, a caterpillar, a viper, a hogrubber, &c. Desinit in piscem mulier formosam suprern; *k the scene is altered on a sudden, love is turned to hate, mirth to melancholy: so furiously are we most part bent, our affections fixed upon this object of commodity, and upon money, the desire of which in excess is covetousness: ambition tyranniseth over our souls, as I have shown, and in defect crucifies as much, as if a man by negligence, ill husbandry, improvidence, prodigality, waste and consume his goods and fortunes, beggary follows, and melancholy, he becomes an abject, odious and worse than an infidel, in not providing for his family."

**SUBSECT. II. — Pleasant Objects of Love.**

Pleasant objects are infinite, whether they be such as have life, or be without life; inanimate are countries, provinces, towers, towns, cities, as he said, *Pulcherrimam insulam videmus, etiam cum non videmus, we see a fair island by description, when we see it not. The sun never saw a fairer city, Thessala Tempe, orchards, gardens, pleasant walks, groves, fountains, &c. The heaven itself is said to be fair or foul: fair buildings, fair pictures, all artificial, elaborate and curious works, clothes, give an admirable lustre: we admire, and gaze upon them, ut puert Junonis ovem, as children do on a peacock: a fair dog, a fair horse and hawk, &c. *Thessalus amat equum pul- linum, buculum Aegyptiu, Lacedemonius Catulum, &c., such things we love, are most gracious in our sight, acceptable unto us, and whatsoever else may cause this passion, if it be superfluous or immoderately loved, as Guianeriues observes. These things in themselves are pleasing and good, singular ornaments, necessary, comely, and fit to be had; but when we fix an immoderate eye, and dote on them over much, this pleasure may turn to pain, bring much sorrow, and discontent unto us, work our final overthrow, and cause melancholy in the end. Many are carried away with those bewitching sports of gaming, hawking, hunting, and such vain pleasures, as I have said: some with immoderate desire of fame, to be crowned in the Olympics, knighted in the field, &c., and by these means ruinate themselves. The lascivious dotes on his fair mistress, the glutton on his dishes, which are infinitely varied to please the palate, the epicure on his several pleasures, the superstitious on his idol, and fats himself with future joys, as Turks feed themselves with an imaginary persuasion of a sensual paradise: so several pleasant objects diversely affect diverse men. But the fairest objects and enticings proceed from men themselves, which most frequently captivate, allure, and make them dote beyond all measure upon one another, and that for many respects: first, as some suppose, by that secret force of stars, (quod me tibi temporal astrum f?) They do singularly dote on such a man, hate such again, and can give no reason for it. Non amo te Sabidi, &c. Alexander admired Ephestion, Adrian Antinious, Nero Sporus, &c. The physicians refer this to their temperaments, astrologers to trine and sextile aspects, or opposite of their several ascendants, lords of

---

*k “The best of a beautiful woman with the tail of a fish.”
1 Part. 1. sec. 2. memb. sub. 12.
2 Tim. i. 8. 3 Lips. epist. Camden.
3 Pulcherrimam insulam videmus, etiam cum non videmus, we see a fair island by description, when we see it not. The sun never saw a fairer city, Thessala Tempe, orchards, gardens, pleasant walks, groves, fountains, &c. The heaven itself is said to be fair or foul: fair buildings, fair pictures, all artificial, elaborate and curious works, clothes, give an admirable lustre: we admire, and gaze upon them, ut puert Junonis ovem, as children do on a peacock: a fair dog, a fair horse and hawk, &c. *Thessalus amat equum pullinum, buculum Aegyptius, Lacedemonius Catulum, &c., such things we love, are most gracious in our sight, acceptable unto us, and whatsoever else may cause this passion, if it be superfluous or immoderately loved, as Guianeriues observes. These things in themselves are pleasing and good, singular ornaments, necessary, comely, and fit to be had; but when we fix an immoderate eye, and dote on them over much, this pleasure may turn to pain, bring much sorrow, and discontent unto us, work our final overthrow, and cause melancholy in the end. Many are carried away with those bewitching sports of gaming, hawking, hunting, and such vain pleasures, as I have said: some with immoderate desire of fame, to be crowned in the Olympics, knighted in the field, &c., and by these means ruinate themselves. The lascivious dotes on his fair mistress, the glutton on his dishes, which are infinitely varied to please the palate, the epicure on his several pleasures, the superstitious on his idol, and fats himself with future joys, as Turks feed themselves with an imaginary persuasion of a sensual paradise: so several pleasant objects diversely affect diverse men. But the fairest objects and enticings proceed from men themselves, which most frequently captivate, allure, and make them dote beyond all measure upon one another, and that for many respects: first, as some suppose, by that secret force of stars, (quod me tibi temporal astrum f?) They do singularly dote on such a man, hate such again, and can give no reason for it. Non amo te Sabidi, &c. Alexander admired Ephestion, Adrian Antinious, Nero Sporus, &c. The physicians refer this to their temperaments, astrologers to trine and sextile aspects, or opposite of their several ascendants, lords of
their genitures, love and hatred of planets; "Cicogna, to concord and discord of spirits; but most to outward graces. A merry companion is welcome and acceptable to all men, and therefore saith Gomesius, princes and great men entertain jesters and players commonly in their courts. But Pares cum paribus facillime congregatur, 'tis that similitude of manners which ties most men in an inseparable link, as if they were addicted to the same studies or disports, they delight in one another's companies, "birds of a feather will gather together:" if they be of divers inclinations, or opposite in manners, they can seldom agree. Secondly, affability, custom, and familiarity, may convert nature many times, though they be different in manners, as if they be countrymen, fellow-students, colleagues, or have been fellow-soldiers, brethren in affliction ("acerba calamitatum societas, diversi etiam ingenii homines conjunxit), affinity, or some such accidental occasion, though they cannot agree amongst themselves, they will stick together like burrs, and hold against a third; so after some discontinuance, or death, enmity ceaseth; or in a foreign place;

"Pascetur in viris iuvens, post fata qvescit:
Et cedde colla, et triscas moris orbuit iras."

A third cause of love and hate, may be mutual offices, acceptum beneficium, commend him, use him kindly, take his part in a quarrel, relieve him in his misery, thou winnest him for ever; do the opposite, and be sure of a perpetual enemy. Praise and dispaise of each other, do as much, though unknown, as Schoppius by Scaliger and Casaubonus: mulus mutul scabii; who but Scaliger with him? what encomiums, epithets, eulogiums? Antistes sapientissimur, perpetuaus dictior, literarum ornamentum, Europeae miraculum, noble Scaliger, incredibili ingenii præstantium, &c., dies potius quam hominibus per omniam comparandus, scripta ejus aurea anecydia de calo delapsa poplibus venerarum flexis, &c., but when they began to vary, none so absurd as Scaliger, so vile and base, as his books de Burdonum familia; and other satirical invectives may witness. Ovid, in ibiin, Archilocus himself was not so bitter. Another great tie or cause of love, is consanguinity: parents are dear to their children, children to their parents, brothers and sisters, cousins of all sorts, as a hen and chickens, all of a knot: every crow thinks her own bird fairest. Many memorable examples are in this kind, and 'tis portentis simile, if they do not: "a mother cannot forget her child:" Solomon so found out the true owner: love of parents may not be concealed, 'tis natural, descends, and they that are inhuman in this kind, are unworthy of that air they breathe, and of the four elements; yet many unnatural examples we have in this rank, of hard-hearted parents, disobedient children, of disagreeing brothers, nothing so common. The love of kinsmen is grown cold, "many kinsmen (as the saying is) few friends;" if thine estate be good, and thou able, par pari referre, to requisite their kindness, there will be mutual correspondence, otherwise thou art a burden, most odious to them above all others. The last object that ties man and man, is comeliness of person, and beauty alone, as men love women with a wanton eye: which xenos εξωχίον is termed herocal, or love-melancholy. Other loves (saith Picolomineus) are so called with some contraction, as the love of wine, gold, &c., but this of women is predominant in a higher strain, whose part affected is the liver, and this love deserves a longer explanation, and shall be dilated apart in the next section.

1 Omnif. mag. lib. 12. cap. 3. 2 De sale geniali. 1. 3. c. 15. 3 Theod. Prodestorum, amor. lib. 3. 4 similitudo morum part sanitatem. 5 Vivax, 3 de animo. 6 Quí simul fecero narratum, est una perululre vincula vel consilii conjuratione soeociate junguntur, invicem amant: Brutum et Cassium invicem infensus Cassarianus dominatus conciliavit. Aemilii Lepidii et Juliani Flaccus, quum essent inimicissimi censures rursus simulatis illicipe deperduere. 7 Scal. et cap. 4. de causa amor. 8 Papianus. 9 Iserates demonice præceptis ut quam alecscan amicitia velit, illum landet, quod Iius initium amoris sit, vitae peradvenit simulatum. 10 Suspect. lect. lib. 1. cap. 2. 11 "The priest of wisdom, perpetual dictator, ornament of literature, wonder of Europe." 12 "O incredible excellence of genius, &c., more comparable to gods" than man's in every respect we venerate your writings on bearded knees, as we do the shield that fell from heaven." 13 Isa. xlix. 14 Hara est concordis fratrum. 15 Grad. lib. cap. 22.
SUBJECT. III.—Honest objects of Love.

Beauty is the common object of all love, "as jet draws a straw, so doth beauty love;" virtue and honesty are great motives and give as fair a lustre as the rest, especially if they be sincere and right, not false, but proceeding from true form, and an incorrupt judgment; those two Venus' twins, Eros and Anteros, are then most firm and fast. For many times otherwise men are deceived by their flattering gnathos, dissembling camelions, outsides, hypocrites, that make a show of great love, learning, pretend honesty, virtue, zeal, modesty, with affected looks and counterfeit gestures: feigned protestations often steal away the hearts and favours of men, and deceive them, *specie vir- tuitis et umbra*, when as reverès and indeed, there is no worth or honesty at all in them, no truth, but mere hypocrisy, subtility, knavery, and the like. As true friends they are, as he that Cælius Secundus met by the highway side; and hard it is in this temporising age to distinguish such companions, or to find them out. Such gnathos as these for the most part belong to great men, and by this glozing flattery, affability, and such like philters, so dive and insinuate into their favours, that they are taken for men of excellent worth, wisdom, learning, demi-gods, and so screw themselves into dignities, honours, offices; but these men cause harsh confusion often, and as many times stirs as Rehoboam's counsellors in a commonwealth overthrew themselves and others. Tandlerus and some authors make a doubt, whether love and hatred may be compelled by philters or characters; Cardan and Marbodius, by precious stones and amulets; astrologers by election of times, &c. as I shall elsewhere discuss. The true object of this honest love is virtue, wisdom, honesty, "real worth, Interna forma, and this love cannot deceive or be compelled, ut amoris amabilis esto, love itself is the most potent philtirum, virtue and wisdom, gratia gratum faciunt, the sole and only grace, not counterfeit but open, honest, simple, naked, "descending from heaven," as our apostle hath it, an infused habit from God, which hath given several gifts, as wit, learning, tongues, for which they shall be amiable and gracious, Eph. iv. 11. as to Saul stature and a goodly presence, 1 Sam. ix. 1. Joseph found favour in Pharaoh's court, Gen. xxxix, for his person; and Daniel with the princes of the eunuchs, Dan. xix. 19. Christ was gracions with God and men, Luke ii. 52. There is still some peculiar grace, as of good discourse, eloquence, wit, honesty, which is the *primum mobile*, first mover, and a most forcible loadstone to draw the favours and good wills of men's eyes, ears, and affections unto them. When "Jesus spake, they were all astonished at his answers (Luke ii. 47.), and wondered at his gracious words which proceeded from his mouth." An orator steals away the hearts of men, and as another Orpheus, quo vult, unde vult, he pulls them to him by speech alone: a sweet voice causeth admiration; and he that can utter himself in good words, in our ordinary phrase, is called a proper man, a divine spirit. For which cause belike, our old poets, Senatus popu- lusque populum, made Mercury the gentleman-usher to the Graces, captain of eloquence, and those charities to be Jupiter's and Eurymone's daughters descended from above. Though they be otherwise deformed, crooked, ugly to behold, those good parts of the mind denominate them fair. Plato commends the beauty of Socrates: yet who was more grim of countenance, stern, and ghastly to look upon? So are and have been many great philosophers, as Gregory Nazianzen observes, "deformed most part in that which is to be seen with the eyes, but most elegant in that which is not to be seen." *Szce sub attribut habitat sapientia vestae.* Æsop, Democritus, Aristotle, Politianus, Melanchthon,
Honest Objects of Love.

Mem. 2. Subs. 3.

481

Gesner, &c. withered old men, *Sileni* Alcibiades, very harsh and impolite to the eye; but who were so terse, polite, eloquent, generally learned, temperate and modest? No man then living was so fair as Alcibiades, so lovely *quod ad superbiam*, to the eye, as *Boethius* observes, but he had *Corpsa turpissimnm interie*, a most deformed soul; honesty, virtue, fair conditions, are great enforcers to such as are well given, and much avail to get the favour and goodwill of men. Abdolominus in Curtius, a poor man (but which mine author notes "the cause of his poverty was his honesty"), for his modesty and continency from a private person (for they found him digging in his garden) was saluted king, and preferred before all the magnificoes of his time, *injecet ovestis purpurea avroque distincta*, "a purple embroidered garment was put upon him," and they bade him wash himself, and, as he was worthy, take upon him the style and spirit of a king," continues his continency and the rest of his good parts. Titus Pomponius Atticus, that noble citizen of Rome, was so fair conditioned, of so sweet a carriage, that he was generally beloved of all good men, of Caesar, Pompey, Antony, Tully, of divers sects, *mutilas hereditates* ("Cornelius Nepos writes*) *solid bonitate consequatns*. *Operae pretium audire*, &c. It is worthy of your attention, Livy cries, "you that scorn all but riches, and give no esteem to virtue, except they be wealthy withal, Q. Cincinnatus had but four acres, and by the consent of the senate was chosen dictator of Rome. Of such account were Cato, Fabricius, Aristides, Antonius, Probus, for their eminent worth: so Caesar, Trajan, Alexander, admired for valour, *Hephæstion* loved Alexander, but Parmenie the king: *Titus delicie humani generis*, and which Aurelius Victor hath of Vespatian, the darling of his time, as *Edgar Etheling* was in England, for his "excellent virtues: their memory is yet fresh, sweet, and we love them many ages after, though they be dead: *Suum memoriam sui reliquit*, saith Lipsius of his friend, living and dead they are all one. *I* have ever loved as thou knowest (so Tully wrote to Dolabella) Marcus Brutus for his great wit, singular honesty, constancy, sweet conditions; and believe it there is nothing so amiable and fair as virtue." I do mightily love Calvisinus, (so Pliny writes to Sossius,) a most industrious, eloquent, upright man, which is all in all with me: *the affection came from his good parts. And as St. Austin comments on the 84th Psalm,* *there is a peculiar beauty of justice, and inward beauty, which we see with the eyes of our hearts, love, and are enamoured with, as in martyrs, though their bodies be torn in pieces with wild beasts, yet this beauty shines, and we love their virtues.* The stoics are of opinion that a wise man is only fair; and Cato in Tully *3 de Finibus* contends the same, that the lineaments of the mind are far fairer than those of the body, incomparably beyond them: wisdom and valour according to *Xenophon*, especially deserves the name of beauty, and denominate one fair, *et incomparabiliter pulchrrior est* (as Austin holds) *veritas Christianorum quam Helena Greccorum*. *Wine is strong, the king is strong, women are strong, but truth overcometh all things*; Esd. 1, 3, 10, 11, 12. "Blessed is the man that findeth wisdom, and getteth understanding; for the merchandise thereof is better than silver, and the gain thereof better than gold; it is more precious than pearls, and all the things

---

2 43 de consol. 4 Cases of panpartatitis, philosophus, sicut plerique probatas fuit. 7 Ablue corpus et cape regis animum, et in ea fortunam, qua dignum es continentiam istam prof. 6 Vita ejus. 9 Quil pra dividitus humana spectatum, nec virtuti locum patens nisi opes affinit. Q. Cincinnatus consensum patrum in dictatorum Romanae electum. 9 Curtius. 8 Edgar Etheling, England's darling; 3 Morum aavitas, obvia comitas, prompta officia mortuum animus demerunt. 8 Epist. lib. 8. Somper emavi ut tu scias, M. Brutum propter ejus suumnum ingenium, suavitissima mores, singularum probabilum et constantiam; nihil est, mihi crede, virtute formosiss. nihil amabilis. 9 Ardentis amores excitaret, si simulacrum ejus ad ocus penetraret. Plato Phidone. 7 Epist. lib. 4. Valudissime dilego virum rectum, dictum, quod sapit mere potestissimum est. 6 Est quidam pulchridude justinae quam vidimus oculus coevis, amorum, et excurresiis, ut in martyribus, quum seruerum iuvenis laceraretur, et vis aliquis deformes, &c. 11 Lipsius manuduc. ad Phys. Stoic. lib. 3. diff. 17. solus sapiens pulcher. 8 Fortutnd te prudentia pulchritudinis laudem praepice merentur. 2 1
thou causeth desire are not to be compared to her,” Prov. ii. 13, 14, 15, a wise, true, just, upright, and good man, I say it again, is only fair: it is reported of Magdalene Queen of France, and wife to Lewis XI., a Scottish woman by birth, that walking forth in an evening with her ladies, she spied M. Alanus, one of the king’s chaplains, a silly, old, hard-favoured man fast asleep in a bower, and kissed him sweetly; when the young ladies laughed at her for it, she replied, that it was not his person that she did embrace and reverence, but, with a platonic love, the divine beauty of his soul. Thus in all ages virtue hath been adored, admired, a singular lustre hath proceeded from it: and the more virtuous he is, the more gracious, the more admired. No man so much followed upon earth as Christ himself; and as the Psalmist saith, xlv. 2, “He was fairer than the sons of men.” Chrysostom, Hom. 8 in Mat. Bernard, Ser. 1, de omnibus sanctis; Austin Cassiodore, Hier. in 9 Mat. interpret it of the beauty of his person; there was a divine majesty in his looks, it shined like lightning and drew all men to it: but Basil, Cyril. lib. 6. super. 55. Esay. Theodoret, Arnobius, &c. of the beauty of his divinity, justice, grace, eloquence, &c. Thomas in Psal. xlv. of both; and so doth Baradius and Peter Morales, lib. de pulchritud. Jesu et Mariae, adding as much of Joseph and the Virgin Mary,—hoc alios formâ praecesserit omnes, according to that prediction of Sibylla Cumae. Be they present or absent, near us, or afar off, this beauty shines, and will attract men many miles to come and visit it. Plato and Pythagoras left their country, to see those wise Egyptian priests: Apollonius travelled into Ethiopia, Persia, to consult with the Magi, Bracchmanni, gymnosophists. The Queen of Sheba came to visit Solomon; and “many,” saith Hierom, “went out of Spain and remote places a thousand miles, to behold that eloquent Livy.” 2 Multis Romam non ut urbem pulcherrimam, aut orbis et orbis dominum Octavianum, sed ut hinc unum inviserint audirentque, à Gadibus profecti sunt. No beauty leaves such an impression, strikes so deep, or links the souls of men closer than virtue.

“4 Non per deos aut pictor possit, Aut staturius ulius fingere
Tamen pulchritudinem quem virtus habet;”

“no painter, no graver, no carver can express virtue’s lustre, or those admirable rays that come from it, those enchanting rays that enamour posterity, those everlasting rays that continue to the world’s end.” Many, saith Phavorinus, that loved and admired Alcibiades in his youth, knew not, cared not for Alcibiades a man, nunc intuentes querebant Alcibiadem; but the beauty of Socrates is still the same; virtue’s lustre never fades, is ever fresh and green, se per vita to all succeeding ages, and a most attractive loadstone, to draw and combine such as are present. For that reason belike, Homer feigns the three Graces to be linked and tied hand in hand, because the hearts of men are so firmly united with such graces. “5 O sweet bands (Seneca exclaims), which so happily combine, that those which are bound by them love their binders, desiring withal much more harder to be bound,” and as so many Ceryons to be united into one. For the nature of true friendship is to combine, to be like affected of one mind,

“6 Veile et tolle ambobas idem, satiatque toto
Mens aequo”

as the poet saith, still to continue one and the same. And where this love takes place there is peace and quietness, a true correspondence, perfect

---

1 Franc. Beilorst in hist. an. 1430. 2 Erat autem fade deformis, et ea forma, qua’citat poetae terreri possent, quam invitari ad osculum puella. 3 Deformis iste est videoetur senex, divinum animam habet. 4 Pulchra vultu suo fovebunt et divina majestas hominem ad se trahentes. 5 “She excelled all others in beauty.” 6 Praetulit. bib. vulgar. 7 Patavii, quin solius meritoriae. 8 Novi fidei servavit. 9 Socius, pulchrui nulla est facies. 10 Solum, pulchris nulla est facies. 11 Oculos qui, quom accipit devincentur, ut etiam a vincis diligentiam, qui a gratia vincit sunt, cupiam arcubus deligantur et in unum redigil. 12 Statius.
amity, a diapason of vows and wishes, the same opinions, as between "David and Jonathan, Damon and Pythias, Pylades and Orestes, Nysus and Euryalus, Theseus and Pirithous, they will live and die together, and prosecute one another with good turns. Nam vinci in amore turpisissinum putant, not only living, but when their friends are dead, with tombs and monuments, Neniais, epitaphs, elegies, inscriptions, pyramids, obelisks, statues, images, pictures, histories, poems, annals, feasts, anniversaries, many ages after (as Plato's scholars did) they will parentare still, omit no good office that may tend to the preservation of their names, honours, and eternal memory.

He did express his friends in colours, in wax, in brass, in ivory, marble, gold, and silver (as Pliny reports of a citizen in Rome), and in a great auditory not long since recited a just volume of his life." In another place, "speaking of an epigram which Martial had composed in praise of him, "He gave me as much as he might, and would have done more if he could: though what can a man give more than honour, glory, and eternity? But that which he wrote peradventure, will not continue, yet he wrote it to continue." Tis all the recompense a poor scholar can make his well-deserving patron, Mecenas, friend, to mention him in his works, to dedicate a book to his name, to write his life, &c., as all our poets, orators, historiographers have ever done, and the greatest revenge such men take of their adversaries, to persecute them with satires, invectives, &c., and 'tis both ways of great moment, as Plato gives us to understand.

Paulus Jovius, in the fourth book of the life and deeds of Pope Leo Decimus, his noble patron, concludes in these words, "Because I cannot honour him as other rich men do, with like endeavour, affection, and piety, I have undertaken to write his life; since my fortunes will not give me leave to make a more sumptuous monument, I will perform those rites to his sacred ashes, which a small, perhaps, but a liberal wit can afford." But I rove. Where this true love is wanting, there can be no firm peace, friendship from teeth outward, counterfeited, or for some by-respects, so long dissembled, till they have satisfied their own ends, which, upon every small occasion, breaks out into enmity, open war, defiance, heart-burnings, whispering, calumnies, contentions, and all manner of bitter melancholy discontent.

And those men which have no other object of their love, than greatness, wealth, authority, &c., are rather feared than beloved; nec amant quemquam, nec amantur ab ulla: and howsoever borne with for a time, yet for their tyranny and oppression, griping, covetousness, currish hardness, folly, intemperance, impiety, and such like vices, they are generally odious, abhorred of all, both God and men.

"Non uxor salvum te vult, non filius, otantes
Victini odorum,"—

"wife and children, friends, neighbours, all the world forsakes them, would beget to be rid of them," and are compelled many times to lay violent hands on them, or else God's judgments overtake them: instead of graces, come furies. So when fair Abigail, a woman of singular wisdom, was acceptable to David, Nabai was churlish and evil-conditioned; and therefore Mordecai was received, when Haman was executed, Haman the favourite, "that had his seat above the other princes, to whom all the king's servants that stood in the

gates, bowed their knees and reverenced." Though they flourish many times, such hypocrites, such temporising foxes, and blear the world's eyes by flattery, bribery, dissembling their natures, or other men's weakness, that cannot so apprehend their tricks, yet in the end they will be discerned, and precipitated, in a moment: "surely," saith David, "thou hast set them in slippery places," Ps. xxxvii. 5. as so many Sejani, they will come down to the Gemonian scales; and as Eusebius in b Ammianus, that was in such authority, ad judendorum Imperatorem, be cast down headlong on a sudden. Or put case they escape, and rest unmasked to their lives' end, yet after their death their memory stinks as a snuff of a candle put out, and those that durst not so much as mutter against them in their lives, will prosecute their name with satires, libels, and bitter imprecations, they shall malè audire in all succeeding ages, and be odious to the world's end.

MEMB. III.

Charity composed of all three Kinds, Pleasant, Profitable, Honest.

BESIDES this love that comes from profit, pleasant, honest (for one good turn asks another in equity), that which proceeds from the law of nature, or from discipline and philosophy, there is yet another love compounded of all these three, which is charity, and includes piety, dilention, benevolence, friendship, even all those virtuous habits; for love is the circle equant of all other affections, of which Aristotle dilates at large in his Ethics, and is commanded by God, which no man can well perform, but he that is a Christian, and a true regenerate man; this is, "To love God above all, and our neighbour as ourself," for this love is lychnus condens et accessus, a communicating light, apt to illuminate itself as well as others. All other objects are fair, and very beautiful, I confess; kindred, alliance, friendship, the love that we owe to our country, nature, wealth, pleasure, honour, and such moral respects, &c., of which read copious Aristotle in his morals; a man is beloved of a man, in that he is a man; but all these are far more eminent and great, when they shall proceed from a sanctified spirit, that hath a true touch of religion, and a reference to God. Nature binds all creatures to love their young ones; a hen to preserve her brood will run upon a lion, a hind will fight with a bull, a sow with a bear, a silly sheep with a wolf. So the same nature urgeth a man to love his parents, ('dei me pater omnes oderint, ni te magis quam oculos ammemos!') and this love cannot be dissolved, as Tully holds, "without detestable offence:" but much more God's commandment, which enjoins a filial love, and an obedience in this kind.

"The love of brethren is great, and like an arch of stones, where if one be displaced, all comes down," no love so forcible and strong, honest, to the combination of which, nature, fortune, virtue, happily concur; yet this love comes short of it. "Dulce et decorum pro patria morti," it cannot be expressed, what a deal of charity that one name of country contains. Amor laudis et patriae pro stipendio est; the Deci did se devovere, Horatii, Curii, Scevola, Regulus, Codrus, sacrifice themselves for their country's peace and good.

"Una dies Fabiae ad bellum missae omnes, Ad bellum missae perdidit una dies." "One day the Fabii stoutly warred, One day the Fabii were destroyed." Fifty thousand Englishmen lost their lives willingly near Battle Abbey, in defence of their country. P. Æmilius, l. 6. speaks of six senators of Calais, that came with halters in their hands to the king of England, to die for the


\[1\] Amm. Marcellinus, l. 14. \[1\] Ut mundus duobus pollis sustentatur: ita lex Dei, amore Dei et proximis; duobus his fundamentis vincitur: machina mundi corrupt, si una de pollis sustatur: lex pert divina si una ex his. 1. 8 et 9 libro. \[1\] Ter. Adelph. 4. 5. \[1\] De amicitia. \[1\] Charis parentum dili néi destabilib sciend non potest, lapidum formibus similium, causa, nisi se invicer sustentaret. Seneca. \[1\] It is sweet to die for one's country." Dii immortales, dixi non potest quantum caritas semem illud habet. \[1\] Ovid. Fast. \[1\] Anno 1347. Jacob Mayer. Annal. Fland. lib. 12.
Division of Love.

rest. This love makes so many writers take such pains, so many historiographers, physicians, &c., or at least, as they pretend, for common safety, and their country's benefit. Sanctum nomen amicitiae, sociorum communio sacra; friendship is a holy name, and a sacred communion of friends. "As the sun is in the firmament, so is friendship in the world," a most divine and heavenly band. As nuptial love makes, this perfects mankind, and is to be preferred (if you will stand to the judgment of Cornelius Nepos) before affinity or consanguinity; plus in amicitia valet similitudo morum quam affinitas, &c. the cords of love bind faster than any other wreath whatsoever. Take this away, and take all pleasure, joy, comfort, happiness, and true content out of the world; 'tis the greatest tie, the surest indention, strongest band, and, as our modern Maro decides it, is much to be preferred before the rest.

"Hard is the doubt, and difficult to deem, When all three kinds of love together meet; And do dispart the heart with power extreme, Whether shall weigh the balance down; to wit, The dear affection unto kindred sweet, Or raging fire of love to woman kind, Or real friends, combind by virtues meet; But of them all the band of virtuous mind, Methinks the gentle heart should most assured bind."  

A faithful friend is better than "gold, a medicine of misery, an only possession; yet this love of friends, nuptial, heroic, profitable, pleasant, honest, all three loves put together, are little worth, if they proceed not from a true Christian illuminated soul, if it be not done in ordine ad Deum, for God's sake. "Though I had the gift of prophecy, spake with tongues of men and angels, though I feed the poor with all my goods, give my body to be burned, and have not this love, it profiteth me nothing," 1 Cor. xiii. 1, 3. "tis splendidum peccatum, without charity. This is an all-apprehending love, a defying love, a refined, pure, divine love, the quintessence of all love, the true philosopher's stone, Non potest enim, as Austin infers, veraciter amicus esse hominis, nisi fuerit ipsius primitus veritatis, He is no true friend that loves not God's truth. And therefore this is true love indeed, the cause of all good to mortal men, that reconciles all creatures, and glues them together in perpetual amity and firm league; and can no more abide bitterness, hate, malice, than fair and foul weather, light and darkness, sterility and plenty may be together; as the sun in the firmament (I say), so is love in the world; and for this cause, 'tis love without an addition, love, love of God, and love of men. "The love of God begets the love of men; and by this love of our neighbour, the love of God is nourished and increased." By this happy union of love, "all well governed families and cities are combined, the heavens annexed, and divine souls complicated, the world itself composed, and all that is in it conjoined in God, and reduced to one. This love causeth true and absolute virtues, the life, spirit, and root of every virtuous action, it finiseth prosperity, easeth adversity, corrects all natural incumbrances, inconveniences, sustained by faith and hope, which with this our love make an indissoluble twist, a Gordian knot, an equilaterial triangle, and yet the greatest of them is love," 1 Cor. xiii. 13, "I which inflames our souls with a divine heat, and being so inflamed, purged, and so purgeth, elevates to God, makes an atonement, and reconciles us unto him." That other love infects the soul of man, this cleansing; that depresses, this rears; that causeth cares and troubles, this quietness of mind; this

---
*Tully. t Lucianus Tzaxri. Amicitia ut sol in mundo, &c. U Vit. Pompon. Attick. x Spenser. Fabrie Queens, lib. 9 cant. 9 staff. 1, 2. y Syracides. z Plutarch, preclusio numisma. z Xenophon, versus amicus praestantissima possesso. b Epist. 32. b Greg. Per amorem Del, proximii gignitur; et per hanc amorem proximii, Del nutritur. d Pico de la Rette, grad. order. 17. e Lovelace, the eight amours of the licentious families, civitates, &c. f Verus absolutus habe partis virtutes, radix omnium virtutum, mens et spiritus. g Divino calore animos incendit, incensos purgat: purgatos elevat ad Deum, Deum placat, hominem Deo conciliat. Bernard. h Siles inferit, hic perdit, hic Deprimit, hic elevat; hic tranquillitatem, hic curas parit; hic visum route informat, ille deformat, &c.
Love-Melancholy.

[Part. 3. Sec. 1.]

informs, that deforms our life; that leads to repentance, this to heaven.” For if once we be truly linked and touched with this charity, we shall love God above all, our neighbour as ourself, as we are enjoined, Mark xii. 31. Matt. xix. 19. perform those duties and exercises, even all the operations of a good Christian.

“This love suffereth long, it is bountiful, envieth not, boasteth not itself, is not puffed up, it deceiveth not, it seeketh not his own things, is not provoked to anger, it thinketh not evil, it rejoiceth not in iniquity, but in truth. It suffereth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things,” 1 Cor. xiii. 4, 5, 6, 7; “it covereth all trespasses,” Prov. x. 12; “a multitude of sins,” 1 Pet. iv. 8, as our Saviour told the woman in the Gospel, that washed his feet, “many sins were forgiven her, for she loved much,” Luke vii. 47; “it will defend the fatherless and the widow,” Isa. i. 17; “will seek no revenge, or be mindful of wrong,” Levit. xix. 18; “will bring home his brother’s ox if he go astray, as it is commanded,” Deut. xxii. 1; “will resist evil, give to him that asketh, and not turn from him that borroweth, bless them that curse him, love his enemy,” Matt. v; “bear his brother’s burthen,” Gal. vi. 7. He that so loves will be hospitable, and distribute to the necessities of the saints; he will, if it be possible, have peace with all men, “feed his enemy if he be hungry, if he be athirst give him drink;” he will perform those seven works of mercy, “he will make himself equal to them of the lower sort, rejoice with them that rejoice, weep with them that weep,” Rom. xii.; he will speak truth to his neighbour, be courteous and tender-hearted, “forgiving others for Christ’s sake, as God forgave him,” Eph. iv. 32; “he will be like minded,” Phil. ii. 2. “Of one judgment; be humble, meek, long-suffering,” Colos. iii. “Forbear, forget and forgive,” xii. 13. 23. and what he doth shall be heartily done to God, and not to men. “Be pitiful and courteous,” 1 Pet. iii. “Seek peace and follow it.” He will love his brother, not in word and tongue, but in deed and truth, John iii. 18. “and he that loves God, Christ will love him that is begotten of him,” John v. 1, &c. Thus should we willingly do, if we had a true touch of this charity, of this divine love, if we could perform this which we are enjoined, forget and forgive, and compose ourselves to those Christian laws of love.

1 Boethius, lib. 2. met. 8. k Deliquium patitur charitas, odium ejus loco succedit. Basil. 1. ser. de
instit. mon. 1 Nodum in scorpo querentes.

"O felix hominum genus,
Si vestros animos amor
Quo cunctum regitur regat!"

"Angelical souls, how blessed, how happy should we be, so loving, how might we triumph over the devil, and have another heaven upon earth!"

But this we cannot do; and which is the cause of all our woes, miseries, discontent, melancholy, k want of this charity. We do invece angariare, content, consult, vex, torture, molest, and hold one another’s noses to the grindstone hard, provoke, rail, scoff, calumniate, challenge, hate, abuse, hearted, implacable, malicious, peevish, inexorable as we are), to satisfy our lust or private spleen, for toys, trifles, and importunate occasions, spend ourselves, goods, friends, fortunes, to be revenged on our adversary, to ruin him and his. ’Tis all our study, practice, and business how to plot mischief; mine, counterfeit, defend and offend, ward ourselves, injure others, hurt all; as if we were born to do mischief, and that with such eagerness and bitterness, with such rancour, malice, rage, and fury, we prosecute our intended designs, that neither affinity or consanguinity, love or fear of God or men can contain us: no satisfaction, no composition will be accepted, no offices will serve, no submission; though he shall upon his knees, as Sarpedon did to Glauce in Homer, acknowledging his error, yield himself with tears in his eyes, beg his pardon, we will not relent, forgive, or forget, till we have conformed him and
his, "made dice of his bones," as they say, see him rot in prison, banish his friends, followers, et onera invisum genus, rooted him out and all his posterity. Monsters of men as we are, dogs, wolves, "tigers, fiends, incarnate devils, we do not only contend, oppress, and tyrannise ourselves, but as so many fire-brands, we set on, and animate others: our whole life is a perpetual combat, a conflict, a set battle, a snarling fit. Eris dea is settled in our tents, "Omnia de lite, opposing wit to wit, wealth to wealth, strength to strength, fortunes to fortunes, friends to friends, as at a sea-fight, we turn our broadsides, or two millstones with continual attrition, we fire ourselves, or break another's backs, and both are ruined and consumed in the end. Miserable wretches, to fat and enrich ourselves, we care not how we get it, Quocunque modo rem; how many thousands we undo, whom we oppress, by whose ruin and downfall we arise, whom we injure, fatherless children, widows, common societies, to satisfy our own private lust. Though we have myriads, abundance of wealth and treasure (pitiless, merciless, remorseless, and uncharitable in the highest degree), and our poor brother in need, sickness, in great extremity, and now ready to be starved for want of food, we had rather, as the fox told the ape, his tail should sweep the ground still, than cover his buttocks; rather spend it idly, consume it with dogs, hawks, hounds, unnecessary buildings, in riotous apparel, ingurgitate, or let it be lost, than he should have part of it; "rather take from him that little which he hath, than relieve him.

Like the dog in the manger, we neither use it ourselves, let others make use of or enjoy it; part with nothing while we live: for want of disposing our household, and setting things in order, sell all the world together by the ears after our death. Poor Lazarus lies howling at his gates for a few crumbs, he only seeks chippings, offals; let him roar and howl, famish, and eat his own flesh, he respects him not. A poor decayed kinsman of his sets upon him by the way in all his jollity, and runs begging bareheaded by him, conjuring by those former bonds of friendship, alliance, consanguinity, &c., uncle, cousin, brother, father,

"Per ego has inachryman, dextranque tuam te, Si quidquam de te meruist, fiat aut tibi quidquam
Deluea mens, miscre unde."  

"Show some pity for Christ's sake, pity a sick man, an old man," &c., he cares not, ride ou: pretend sickness, inevitable loss of limbs, goods, plead suretyship, or shipwreck, fires, common calamities, show thy wants and imperfections,

"Et si per sanctum juratus dicit Osrin,
Credite, non ludo, crudelis tollite claudam."  

"Swear, protest, take God and all his angels to witness, quere peregrinum, thou art a counterfeit crank, a cheater, he is not touched with it, pauper ubique jacet, ride on, he takes no notice of it." Put up a supplication to him in the name of a thousand orphans, a hospital, a spittle, a prison, as he goes by, they cry out to him for aid, ride on, surdo narras, he cares not, let them eat stones, devour themselves with vermin, rot in their own dung, he cares not. Show him a decayed haven, a bridge, a school, a fortification, &c., or some public work, ride on; good your worship, your honour, for God's sake, your country's sake, ride on. But show him a roll wherein his name shall be registered in golden letters, and commended to all posterity, his arms set up, with his devices to be seen, then peradventure he will stay and contribute; or if thou canst thunder upon him, as Papists do, with satisfactory and meritorious works, or persuade him by this means he shall save his soul out of hell, and free it from purgatory (if he be of any religion), then in all likelihood he will

[Note: "Hicraneues admobrant ubera tigres."

[Note: "Hierachitus.

[Note: "Si in gehennam abit, pauperem qui non alat: quid de eo dicit qui pauperem denudat? Austin.

487 Mem. 3.] Charity.
listen and stay; or that he have no children, no near kinsman, heir, he cares for, at least, or cannot well tell otherwise how or where to bestow his possessions (for carry them with him he cannot), it may be then he will build some school or hospital in his life, or be induced to give liberally to pious uses after his death. For I dare boldly say, vain-glory, that opinion of merit, and this enforced necessity, when they know not otherwise how to leave, or what better to do with them, is the main cause of most of our good works. I will not urge this to derogate from any man's charitable devotion, or bounty in this kind to censure any good work; no doubt there be many sanctified, heroical and worthy-minded men, that in true zeal, and for virtue's sake (divine spirits), that out of commiseration and pity extend their liberality, and as much as in them lies do good to all men, clothe the naked, feed the hungry, comfort the sick and needy, relieve all, forget and forgive injuries, as true charity requires; yet most part there is simulatum quod, a deal of hypocrisy in this kind, much default and defect. Cosmo de Medici, that rich citizen of Florence, ingenuously confessed to a near friend of his, that would know of him why he built so many public and magnificent palaces, and bestowed so liberally on scholars, not that he loved learning more than others, "but to eternise his own name, to be immortal by the benefit of scholars; for when his friends were dead, walls decayed, and all inscriptions gone, books would remain to the world's end." The lanthorn in Athens was built by Zenocles, the theatre by Pericles, the famous port Pyræum by Muscles, Pallas Palladium by Phidias, the Pantheon by Callicratidas; but these brave monuments are decayed all, and ruined long since, their builders' names alone flourish by meditation of writers. And as he said of that Marian oak, now cut down and dead, nullius Agricolae manu culta stirps tam diurna quam quaer polite versus seminari potest, no plant can grow so long as that which is ingenio sata, set and manured by those ever-living wits. Allon Backuth, that weeping oak, under which Deborah, Rebecca's nurse, died, and was buried, may not survive the memory of such everlasting monuments. Vain glory and emulation (as to most men) was the cause efficient, and to be a trumpet of his own fame, Cosmo's sole intent so to do good, that all the world might take notice of it. Such for the most part is the charity of our times, such our benefactors, Mecenas and patrons. Show me amongst so many myriads, a truly devout, a right, honest, upright, meek, humble, a patient, innocuous, innocent, a merciful, a loving, a charitable man! Probis quis nobiscum vivit? Show me a Caleb or a Joshua! Dixi mihi Musa vivum—show a virtuous woman, a constant wife, a good neighbour, a trusty servant, an obedient child, a true friend, &c. Crows in Africa are not so scant. He that shall examine this iron age wherein we live, where love is cold, et jam terras Astrea reliquit, justice fled with her assistants, virtue expelled,

---7 Justitiae soror, Incorrupta filius, munda veritas,---

all goodness gone, where vice abounds, the devil is loose, and see one man vilify and insult over his brother, as if he were an innocent, or a block, oppress, tyrannise, prey upon, torture him, vex, gall, torment and crucify him, starve him, where is charity? He that shall see men swear and forswear, lie and bear false witness, to advantage themselves, prejudice others, hazard goods, lives, fortunes, credit, all, to be revenged on their enemies, men so unspeakable in their lusts, unnatural in malice, such bloody designments,

7Jovius, vita elius. 9Immortalitatem beneficio literarum, immortal gloriae quadam cunctitate conspexit. Quod elves quibus beneficetam permit, manea ruatula, etiam regum sapientia instituta, non libr. 7Thurarch, Pericle. 8Tullius, libr. 1. de legibus. 4Gen. xxxv. 8. 6Hor. 5Durum genus sumus. 7The sister of justice, honoe inolata, and naked truth." 2Tail. pro Rorc. Mensil vis causa mea? ego vere cupide et libenter mentari tua causa; et si quando me vis perjurare, ut paliadium tu compendii facias, paratum fore soito.
Italian blaspheming, Spanish renouncing, &c., may well ask where is charity? He that shall observe so many lawsuits, such endless contentions, such plotting, undermining, so much money spent with such eagerness and fury, every man for himself, his own ends, the devil for all: so many distressed souls, such lamentable complaints, so many factions, conspiracies, seditions, oppressions, abuses, injuries, such grudging, repining, discontent, so much emulation, envy, so many brawls, quarrels, monomachies, &c., may well require what is become of charity? when we see and read of such cruel wars, tumults, uproars, bloody battles, so many "men slain, so many cities ruined, &c. (for what else is the subject of all our stories almost, but bills, bows, and guns!) so many murders and massacres, &c., where is charity? Or see men wholly devote to God, churchmen, professed divines, holy men, "to make the trumpet of the gospel the trumpet of war," a company of hell-born Jesuits, and fiery-spirited friars, facem proferre to all seditions: as so many firebrands set all the world by the ears (I say nothing of their contentious and railing books, whole ages spent in writing one against another, and that with such virulence and bitterness, Bio- nevis sermonibus et sole negro), and by their bloody inquisitions, that in thirty years, Bala saith, consumed 39 princes, 148 earls, 235 barons, 14,755 commons; worse than those ten persecutions, may justly doubt where is charity! Observe vos quales hi demum Christiani? Are these Christians? I beseech you tell me: he that shall observe and see these things, may say to them as Cato to Caesar, credo quae de inferis dicentur falsa existimas, "sure I think thou art of opinion there is neither heaven nor hell." Let them pretend religion, zeal, make what shows they will, give alms, peace-makers, frequent sermons, if we may guess at the tree by the fruit they are no better than hypocrites, epicures, atheists, with the "fool in their hearts they say there is no God." 'Tis no marvel then if being so uncharitable, hard-hearted as we are, we have so frequent and so many discontents, such melancholy fits, so many bitter pangs, mutual discords, all in a combustion, often complaints, so common grievances, general mischiefs, si tantus in terris tragediae, quibus labefactatur et miseré laceratur humanum genus, so many pestilences, wars, uproars, losses, deluges, fires, inquisitions, God's vengeance and all the plagues of Egypt, come upon us, since we are so currish one towards another, so respectless of God, and our neighbours, and by our crying sins pull these miseries upon our own heads. Nay more, 'tis justly to be feared, which Josephus once said of his countrymen Jews, "if the Romans had not come when they did to sack their city, surely it had been swallowed up with some earthquake, deluge, or fired from heaven as Sodom and Gomorrah; their desperate malice, wickedness and peevishness was such." 'Tis to be suspected, if we continue these wretched ways, we may look for the like heavy visitations to come upon us. If we had any sense or feeling of these things, surely we should not go on as we do, in such irregular courses, practise all manner of impieties; our whole carriage would not be so averse from God. If a man would but consider, when he is in the midst and full career of such prodigious and uncharitable actions, how displeasing they are in God's sight, how noxious to himself, as Solomon told Joab, 1 Kings. ii. "The Lord shall bring this blood upon their heads." Prov. i. 27, "sudden desolation and destruction shall come like a whirlwind upon them: affliction, anguish, the reward of his hand shall be given him." Isa. iii. 11, &c., "they shall fall into the pit they have digged for others," and when they are scraping, tyrannising, getting, wallowing in their wealth,

9 Evagrius tubam bellum tubam fletum; in palpis pacem, in colloquibus bellum suadent. 
10 Psal. xiii. 1. 
11 Is. bello Judaico, lib. 6, c. 16. Futo si Romani contra pas venere tantum-ent, aut hatia terras devourandas fines civilitatem, aut diluvio perturam, aut fulmina se Sodomam cum incendio passarum, ab desperatum populi, &c.
"this night, O fool, I will take away thy soul," what a severe account they must make; and how \(^6\) gracious on the other side a charitable man is in God's eyes, \textit{haurit sibi gratiam}. Matt. v. 7, "Blessed are the merciful, for they shall obtain mercy: he that lendeth to the poor, gives to God," and how it shall be restored to them again; "how by their patience and long-suffering they shall heap coals on their enemies' heads," Rom. xii. "and he that followeth after righteousness and mercy, shall find righteousness and glory;" surely they would check their desires, curb in their unnatural, inordinate affections, agree amongst themselves, abstain from doing evil, amend their lives, and learn to do well. "Behold how comely and good a thing it is for brethren to live together in union: it is like the precious ointment, &c. How odious to contend one with the other!" \(^7\) \textit{Miserae quid luctatiuneculis hisce volumus I.ece mors supra caput est, et supremum illud tribunal, ubi et dicta et facta nostra examinanda sunt: Sapiamus!} "Why do we contend and vex one another? behold death is over our heads, and we must shortly give an account of all our uncharitable words and actions: think upon it: and be wise."

---

SECT. II. MEMB. I.

SUBSECT. I.—Heroical love causeth Melancholy. His Pedigree, Power, and Extent.

In the preceding section mention was made, amongst other pleasant objects, of this comeliness and beauty which proceeds from women, that causeth heroical, or love-melancholy, is more eminent above the rest, and properly called love. The part affected in men is the liver, and therefore called heroical, because commonly gallants. Noblemen, and the most generous spirits are possessed with it. His power and extent is very large, \(^8\) and in that twofold division of love \(p^l^a^s^i^v\) and \(i^g^a^v\) \(^1\) those two veneries which Plato and some other make mention of, it is most eminent, and \(x^a^r^r^t^\) \(i^g^o^v^i^v^o^i^v\) called Venus, as I have said, or love itself. Which although it be denominated from men, and most evident in them, yet it extends and shows itself in vegetal and sensible creatures, those incorporeal substances (as shall be specified), and hath a large dominion of sovereignty over them. His pedigree is very ancient, derived from the beginning of the world, as \(^9\) Phaedrus contends, and his \(^1\) parentage of such antiquity, that no poet could ever find it out. Hesiod makes \(^10\) Terra and Chaos to be Love's parents, before the gods were born: \textit{Ante deos omnes primum generavit amorem.} Some think it is the selfsame fire Prometheus fetched from heaven. Plutarch \textit{amator. libello}, will have Love to be the son of Iris and Favonius; but Socrates in that pleasant dialogue of Plato, when it came to his turn to speak of love (of which subject Agatho the rhetorician, \textit{magnificus Agatho}, that chantor Agatho, had newly given occasion), in a poetical strain, telleth this tale: when Venus was born, all the gods were invited to a banquet, and amongst the rest, \(^11\) Porus the god of bounty and wealth; Penia or Poverty came a begging to the door; Porus well whittled with nectar (for there was no wine in those days) walking in Jupiter's garden, in a bower met with Penia, and in his drink got her with child, of whom was born Love; and because he was begotten on Venus's birthday, Venus still attends upon him. The moral of this is in \(^12\) Elicius. Another tale is there borrowed out of Aristophanes: \(^13\) in the beginning of the world, men had four

---

\(^6\) Beneficat animae suas vir misericors.  
\(^7\) Concordia parva res crescent, discordia maxima dilabuntur.  
\(^8\) Lipsius.  
\(^9\) Membr. I. Subs. 2.  
\(^1\) Amor et amicitia.  
\(^11\) \textit{Vide Bocca. de Genial. deorum.}  
\(^12\) \textit{Phaedrus orat. in laudam amoris Platoni convivio.}  
\(^13\) \textit{Cap. 7. Comment. in Plat. convivium.}  
\(^1\) \textit{See more in Valesius, lib. 3. cont. med. et cont. 13.}  

\(^{10}\) See more in Valesius, lib. 3. cont. med. et cont. 13.
arms and four feet, but for their pride, because they compared themselves with the gods, were parted into halves, and now peradventure by love they hope to be united again and made one. Otherwise thus, 9 Vulcan met two lovers, and bid them ask what they would and they should have it; but they made answer, O Vulcane Faber Deorum, &c. "O Vulcan the gods' great smith, we beseech thee to work us anew in thy furnace, and of two make us one; which he presently did, and ever since true lovers are either all one, or else desire to be united." Many such tales you shall find in Leon Hebreus, dial. 3. and their moral to them. The reason why Love was still painted young (as Phornactus 10 and others will), "is because young men are most apt to love; soft, fair, and fat, because such folks are soonest taken: naked, because all true affection is simple and open: he smiles, because merry and given to delights: hath a quiver, to show his power, none can escape: is blind, because he sees not where he strikes, whom he hits," &c. His power and sovereignty is expressed by the poets, in that he is held to be a god, and a great commanding god, above Jupiter himself; Magnus Daemon, as Plato calls him, the strongest and merriest of all the gods according to Alcinous and "Athenæus. Amor virorum rez, amor rex et deum, as Euripides, the god of gods and governor of men; for we must all do homage to him, keep a holiday for his deity, adore in his temples, worship his image (nomen enim hoc non est nudum nomen), and sacrifice to his altar, that conquers all, and rules all:

"2 Mallem cam iconne, servo et apro Eelico,
Cum Anteo et Stymphalcis avibus lactari
Quam cum amore? — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — —

"I had rather contend with bulls, lions, bears, and giants, than with Love;" he is so powerful, enforce the all to pay tribute to him, domineers over all, and can make mad and sober whom he list; insomuch that Cæcius in Tully's Tusculans, holds him to be no better than a fool or an idiot, that doth not acknowledge Love to be a great god.

"3 Cut in manu sit quam esse dementem velit,
Quem sapere, quam in moribus iniet," &c.

That can make sick, and cure whom he list. Homer and Stesichorus were both made blind, if you will believe Leon Hebreus, for speaking against his godhead; and though Aristophanes degrade him, and say that he was scornfully rejected from the council of the gods, had his wings clipped besides, that he might come no more amongst them, and to his farther disgrace banished heaven for ever, and confined to dwell on earth, yet he is of that power, majesty, omnipotency, and dominion, that no creature can withstand him.

"d Imperat Cupido etiam diis pro arbitrio,
Et ipsum arcere ne arripuat potest Jupiter."

He is more than quarter-master with the gods.

--Tenet
Thetide regor, umbraæ Æcas, column Jove: 8

and hath not so much possession as dominion. Jupiter himself was turned into a satyr, shepherd, a bull, a swan, a golden shower, and what not, for love; that as 'Lucian's Juno right well objected to him, ludus amoris tu es, thou art Cupid's whirligig: how did he insult over all the other gods, Mars, Neptune, Pan, Mercury, Bacchus, and the rest? 8 Lucian brings in Jupiter complaining of Cupid that he could not be quiet for him; and the moon

10 Vives 3. de anima; oramus ut ut suis aribus et caminis nos refingas, et ex duobus unum facias; quod et fact, et extinde amatores unum sunt et unum esse petant.
11 See more in Natalis Comes Imag. Deorum, Philestratus de Imaginibus. Lillis Gildas Syntag. de diis. amore plurumque juvenes expolantr; sic et mollis, òrareos, ridet quod obiectamentum præ se ferat, cum pharetra, &c. Inferorum, as Orpheus, &c. 
13 Plantas. 
14 Selden pro leq. 3. cap. de dis syris, et ad majorum ejus ignominiam, &c. 
15 Fulmine conclutur. 
16 A petty Pope claves habet superorum et Rex Regnat et in superos jus habet illæ deesse. 
17 Dial. 3. 
18 A concilis Deorum reuocat d Sophocles. 
19 He divides the empire of the sea with Theris,—of the Shades, with Æcas,—of the Heaven, with Jove." f Tom. 4. 
20 Dial. deorum. tom. 3.
lamenting that she was so impotently besotted on Endymion, even Venus herself confessing as much, how rudely and in what sort her own son Cupid had used her being his § mother, "now drawing her to Mount Ida, for the love of that Trojan Anchises, now to Libanus for that Assyrian youth's sake. And although she threatened to break his bow and arrows, to clip his wings, h and whipped him besides on the bare buttocks with her phantophyle, yet all would not serve, he was too headstrong and unruly." That monster-conquering Hercules was tamed by him:

"Quem non mille ferc, quem non Sitendijas hostis, | Whom neither beasts nor enemies could tame,  
Nec possit Junio vinceo, victit amor."  
Your bravest soldiers and most generous spirits are enervated with it, ubi mulieribus blanditiis permittunt se, et inquinantur amplexibus. Apollo, that took upon him to cure all diseases, k could not help himself of this; and therefore 1 Socrates calls Love a tyrant, and brings him triumphing in a chariot, whom Petrarch imitates in his triumph of Love, and Fracastorius, in an elegant poem expresseth at large, Cupid riding, Mars and Apollo following his chariot, Psyche weeping, &c.

In vegetal creatures what sovereignty love hath, by many pregnant proofs and familiar examples may be proved, especially of palm-trees, which are both he and she, and express not only a love-passion but a love-passion, and by many observations have been confirmed.

"m Vivunt in venereum frondes, omnisque viisim  
Felix arbor amat, nutant et mutas palmas  
Fidera, populus suspirat populus fuit,  
Et platam platamn, abhinc assimilat alius."  
Constantine de Agric. lib. 10. cap. 4. gives an instance out of Florentius his Georgics, of a palm-tree that loved most fervently, "3 and would not be comforted until such time her love applied herself unto her; you might see the two trees bend, and of their own accord stretch out their boughs to embrace and kiss each other: they will give manifest signs of mutual love." Ammianus Marcellinus, lib. 24, reports that they marry one another, and fall in love if they grow in sight; and when the wind brings the smell to them they are marvellously affected. Philostratus in Imaginibus, observes as much, and Galen, lib. 6. de locis affectis, cap. 5. they will be sick for love; ready to die and pine away, which the husbandmen perceiving, saith 6 Constantine, "strove many palms that grow together, and so stroking again the palm that is enamoured, they carry kisses from one to the other:" or tying the leaves and branches of the one to the stem of the other, will make them both flourish and prosper a great deal better: "4 which are enamoured, they can perceive by the bending of boughs, and inclination of their bodies." If any man think this which I say to be a tale, let him read that story of two palm-trees in Italy, the male growing at Brundusium, the female at Otranto (related by Jovianus Pontanus in an excellent poem, sometimes tutor to Alphonsus junior, King of Naples, his secretary of state, and a great philosopher) "which were barren, and so continued a long time," till they came to see one another growing up higher, though many stadiums asunder. Pierius in his Hieroglyphics, and Melchior Guillaudinus, Mem. 3. tract. de papypor, cites this story of Pontanus for a truth. S c loc. in Salmuth Comment. in Panci-

§ Quippe matrem jpsius quibus modis me affict, nunc in idam adigelis Anchisea causa, &c.

h Jampredem et placas iped in mares incules antiquo.

i Allopus, fol. 79.

k Nullis amor est medicebils herbis.

b Fluctarch in Amatirio. Dictatoque creare cessant reliqui magistratus.

m Claudian. descript. vener. natur. "Trees are inflamed by love, and every flourishing tree in turn feels the passion: palms nod mutual vows, poplar signs to poplar, plane to plane, and alder heaves to alder." 10 Neque prius in is de siderum cessat dum dejectus consolater; videre eum est ipsum arborum inueniaretm, utroque ab utrique viessim ad osculum exprerectis. Manifesta sunt mutuì desiderii signa.

10 Multiis palmas contingensque simul crescent, rurusque ad amantem regrediant, canque manu attingens, quasque osculatur mutuo mihiared amorem, videtur, expediet exemplum gratiam fact.

10 Quam vero ipsa desideret auctio ramorum signifiit, et adulam spes...amanti, &c.
Mem. 1. Subs. 1.] Love's Power and Extent. 493

rol. de Nova repert. Tit. 1. de novo orbe, Mizaldus Arcanorum, lib. 2. Sand's Voyages, lib. 2. fol. 103. &c.

If such fury be in vegetals, what shall we think of sensible creatures, how much more violent and apparent shall it be in them!

"Omne adeo genus in terris hominumque ferasum,
Et genus equorum, pecudes, pictaque volucres
In varias igneque ruunt; amor omnibus idem."

"All kinds of creatures in the earth,
And fishes of the sea,
And painted birds do rage alike;
This love bears equal sway."

"Hic deus et terras et maria alta donavit."

Common experience and our sense will inform us how violently brute beasts are carried away with this passion, horses above the rest—*fuvor est insignis equarum.* 

*Cupid in Lucian bids Venus his mother be of good cheer, for he was now familiar with lions, and oftentimes did get on their backs, hold them by the mane, and ride them about like horses, and they would fawn upon him with their tails."

Bulls, bears, and boars are so furious in this kind they kill one another: but especially cocks, *lions*, and *harts*, which are so fierce that you may hear them fight half a mile off, saith *Turbervile*, and many times kill each other, or compel them to abandon the rut, that they may remain masters in their places; and when one hath driven his co-rival away, he raiseth his nose up into the air, and looks aloft, as though he gave thanks to nature,” which affords him such great delight. How birds are affected in this kind, appears out of Aristotle, he will have them to sing *ob futuram venenam*, for joy or in hope of their venery which is to come.

"*Eries primum volucres to Diva. tunuego
Significant initiam, peculares confite tua vi.*

"Fishes pine away for love and wax lean," if *Gomestas's* authority may be taken, and are rampant too, some of them: Peter Gellius, *lib. 10. de hist. animal.* tells wonders of a triton in Epirus: there was a well not far from the shore, where the country wenchens fetched water, they, *tritons*, *stupri causa* would set upon them and carry them to the sea, and there drown them, if they would not yield; so love tyranniseth in dumb creatures. Yet this is natural for one beast to dote upon another of the same kind; but what strange fury is that, when a beast shall dote upon a man? *Saxo Grammaticus, lib. 10. Dav. hist.* hath a story of a bear that loved a woman, kept her in his den a long time and begot a son of her, out of whose loins proceeded many northern kings: this is the original belike of that common tale of Valentine and Orson: *Elian, Pliny, Peter Gellius* are full of such relations. A peacock in Lucadia loved a maid, and when she died, the peacock pined. 

"A dolphin loved a boy called Hernias, and when he died the fish came on land, and so perished." The like adds Gellius, *lib. 10. cap. 22. out of Appion, *Egypt. lib. 15.* a dolphin at Puteoli loved a child, would come often to him, let him get on his back, and carry him about, "*and when by sickness the child was taken away, the dolphin died.*"—

*Every book is full (saith Busbequius, the emperor's orator with the grand signior, not long since, *ep. 3. legat. Turc.* and yield such instances, to believe which I was always afraid lest I should be thought to give credit to fables, until I saw a lynx which I had from Assyria, so affected towards one of my men, that it cannot be denied but that he was in love with him. When my man was present, the beast would use many notable enticements and pleasant motions, and when he was going, hold him back, and

1 Virg. 3. Georg. 2 Properius. 3 Dial. deorum. Confide, mater, leonibus ipsis familiae jam factus sum. 4 And scipe conscendit corum terga et apprehendi jutus: equorum more suscides eos agito. 5 Lucianus. 6 Lesene pra amore furunt. Plin. l. 8. c. 16. Arist. l. 6. hist. anim al. 7 Cap. 17. of his book of hunting. 8 Huetius. 9 De sale lib. l. c. 91. Peices ob amorem marcescent, pallescunt. 10 Hareinele aqve causa venentes quie insidiae a Tritone comprehensis, &c. 11 Plin. l. 10. c. 5. quamque aborta tempestatibus urit Hernias in aecro pi-eis expravari. 12 Postquam puer mora habuit et ipse delphinus perit. 13 Plini sunt libri quibus fera in homines inflammatas fuerunt, in quibus ego euidem temper assensum sustinui. veritatis ne fabulosa crediderim: donec vis lyncem quem habui ab Assyria, sic affectum ura unum de meis hominibus, &c.
look after him when he was gone, very sad in his absence, but most jocund when he returned: and when my man went from me, the beast expressed his love with continual sickness, and after he had pined away some few days, died." Such another story he hath of a crane of Majorca, that loved a Spaniard, that would walk any way with him, and in his absence seek about for him, make a noise that he might hear her, and knock at his door, "and when he took his last farewell, famished herself." Such pretty pranks can love play with birds, fishes, beasts:

"(" Celestis aetheris, pondi, terrae claves habet Venus, Solaque sterum omnium imperium obtinet.""

and if all be certain that is credibly reported, with the spirits of the air, and devils of hell themselves who are as much enamoured and dote (if I may use that word) as any other creatures whatsoever. For if those stories be true that are written of incubus and succubus, of nymphs, lascivious fauns, satyrs, and those heathen gods which were devils, those lascivious Telchines, of whom the Platonists tell so many fables; or those familiar meetings in our days, and company of witches and devils, there is some probability for it. I know that Biarmannus, Wierus, lib. 1. cap. 19. et 24. and some others stoutly deny it, that the devil hath any carnal copulation with women, that the devil takes no pleasure in such facts, they be mere fantasies, all such relations of incubi, succubi, lies and tales; but Austin. lib. 15. de civit. Dei, doth acknowledge it: Erastus, de Lamiis, Jacobus Sprenger and his colleagues, &c. Zanchius, cap. 16. lib. 4. de oper. Dei. Dandinus, in Arist. de Anima, lib. 2. text. 29. com. 30. Bodin, lib. 2. cap. 7. and Paracelsus, a great champion of this tenet amongst the rest, which give sundry peculiar instances, by many testimonies, proofs, and confessions evince it. Hector Boethius, in his Scottish history, hath three or four such examples, which Cardan confirms out of him, lib. 16. cap. 43. of such as have had familiar company many years with them, and that in the habit of men and women. Philostratus in his fourth book de vita Apollonii, hath a memorable instance in this kind, which I may not omit, of one Menippus Lycius, a young man twenty-five years of age, that going between Cenchreas and Corinth, met such a phantasm in the habit of a fair gentlewoman, he tarryed by the hand carried him home to her house in the suburbs of Corinth, and told him she was a Phaenician by birth, and if he would tarry with her, "he would hear her sing and play, and drink such wine as never any drank, and no man should molest him; but she being fair and lovely would live and die with him that was fair and lovely to behold." The young man, a philosopher, otherwise staid and discreet, able to moderate his passions, though not this of love, tarried with her awhile to his great content, and at last married her, to whose wedding amongst other guests, came Apollonius, who, by some probable conjectures, found her out to be a serpent, a lamia, and that all her furniture was like Tantalus's gold described by Homer, no substance, but mere illusions. When she saw herself described, she wept, and desired Apollonius to be silent, but he would not be moved, and thereupon she, plate, house, and all that was in it, vanished in an instant: "a many thousands took notice of this fact, for it was done in the midst of Greece." Sabine in his Comment on the tenth of Ovid's Metamorphoses, at the tale of Orpheus, tells us of a gentleman of Bavaria, that for many months together bewailed the loss of his dear wife; at length the devil in her habit came and comforted him, and told him, because he was so importunate for her, that she

4 Desiderium suum testatus post Incedam aliquot cleros interit. 6 Orpheus hymno Ven. "Venus keeps the keys of the air, earth, sea, and she alone retains the command of all." Quis hic in astris habet Imaginacionis vim referre conatus sunt, nihil factunt. 8 Cum tantum audies et vinum situs, quale amas, quaumam bibisti; te rivalis turbabit nullus; pulchra autem pulchro contente vivam, et morti. b Multi factum hoc cognovit; quod in media Graecia gestum sit.
would come and live with him again, on that condition he would be new married, never swear and blaspheme as he used formerly to do; for if he did, she should be gone: "he vowed it, married, and lived with her, she brought him children, and governed his house, but was still pale and sad, and so continued, till one day falling out with him, he fell a swearing; she vanished thereof, and was never after seen. *This I have heard," saith Sabine, "from persons of good credit, which told me that the Duke of Bavaria did tell it for certainty to the Duke of Saxyon." One more I will relate out of Florilegus, ad annum 1058, an honest historian of our nation, because he telleth it so confidently, as a thing in those days talked of all over Europe: a young gentleman of Rome, the same day, after dinner with the bride and his friends went a walking into the fields, and towards evening to the tennis-court, to recreate himself; whilst he played, he put his ring upon the finger of Venus statua, which was thereby made in brass; after he had sufficiently played, and now made an end of his sport, he came to fetch his ring, but Venus had bowed her finger in, and he could not get it off. Whereupon loth to make his company tarry at present, there left it, intending to fetch it the next day, or at some more convenient time, went thence to supper, and so to bed. In the night, when he should come to perform those nuptial rites, Venus steps between him and his wife (unseen or felt of her), and told her that she was his wife, that he had betrothed himself unto her by that ring, which he put upon her finger: she troubled him for some following nights. He not knowing how to help himself, made his moon to one Palmibus, a learned magician in those days, who gave him a letter, and bid him at such a time of the night, in such a cross-way, at the town's end, where old Saturn would pass by with his associates in procession, as commonly he did, deliver that script with his own hands to Saturn himself; the young man of a bold spirit, accordingly did it; and when the old fiend had read it, he called Venus to him, who rode before him, and commanded her to deliver his ring, which withthwithstanding she did, and so the gentleman was freed. Many such stories I find in several 1authors to confirm this which I have said; as that more notable amongst the rest, of Philinum and Machates in Phlegon's Tract, de rebus mirabilibus, and though many be against it, yet I, for my part, will subscribe to Lactantius, lib. 14. cap. 15. "God sent angels to the tuition of men; but whilst they lived amongst us, that mischievous all-commander of the earth, and hot in lust, enticed them by little and little to this vice, and defiled them with the company of women: and Anaxagoras, de resurrect. "Many of those spiritual bodies, overcome by the love of maids, and lust, failed, of whom those were born we call giants." Justin Martyr, Clemens Alexandrinus, Sulpitius Severus, Eusebins, &c., to this sense make a twofold fall of angels, one from the beginning of the world, another a little before the deluge, as Moses teacheth us, openly professing that these genii can beget, and have carnal copulation with women. At Japan in the East Indies, at this present (if we may believe the relation of travellers), there is an idol called Teuchedy, to whom one of the fairest virgins in the country is monthly brought, and left in a private room, in the fotoqui, or church, where she sits alone to be deflowered. At certain times the Teuchedy (which is thought to be the devil) appears to her, and knoweth her carnally. Every month a fair virgin is taken in; but what becomes of the old, no man can tell. In that godly temple of Jupiter Belus in

1 Item curans domesticam, ut ante, peperit aliquot liberos, semper tamen triatis et pallidas.
2 Etiam andivi ad multis fide dignis qui assererant quam Bavariae etiam retulisse Ducem Saxonum veri.
3 Fabulae Damian et Ariadne in Herodoto lib. 6. Erato.
5 Deus Angelos mist ad tutelam cultumque generis humani; sed illas cum hominibus commorantes, dominator illae terre salutis patrum ad vitia pellexit, et mulierum congressus impingavit.
6 Quidam ex illo capite sunt amore virginitatis, et libidine victi dejecturum, ex quibus gigantes quia vocantur, nati sunt. 
7 Purchas Hack posth. par. 1. lib. 4. cap. 1. S. 7. 
8 In Clio.
Babylon, there was a fair chapel, * saith Herodotus, an eye-witness of it, in which was splendide stratus lectus et opposita mensa aurea, a brave bed, a table of gold, &c., into which no creature came but one only woman, which their god made choice of, as the Chaldean priests told him, and that their god lay with her himself, as at Thebes in *Egypt was the like done of old. So that you see this is no news, the devils themselves, or their juggling priests, have played such pranks in all ages. Many divines stiffly contradict this; but I will conclude with 1 Lipsius, that since "examples, testimonies, and confessions, of those unhappy women are so manifest on the other side, and many even in this our town of Louvain, that it is likely to be so. "One thing I will add, that I suppose that in no age past, I know not by what destiny of this unhappy time, have there ever appeared or showed themselves so many lecherous devils, satyrs, and genii, as in this of ours, as appears by the daily narrations, and judicial sentences upon record." Read more of this question in Plutarch, vit. *Numne, Austin. de civ. Dei, lib. 15. Wierus, lib. 3. de praestig. Deo. Giralde Cambrensis, itinerar. Camb. lib. 1. Malles, malefic. quest. 5. part. 1. Jacobus Reussus, lib. 5. cap. 6. fol. 54. Godelman, lib. 2. cap. 4. Erastus, Valesius de sacra philo. cap. 40. John Nider, Fornicar. lib. 5. cap. 9. Stroz. Cicogna, lib. 3. cap. 3. Delrio, Lipsius Bodine, demoniol. lib. 2. cap. 7. Pererius in Gen. lib. 8. in 6. cap. ver. 2. King James, &c.

SUBSECT. II.—How Love tyranniseth over men. Love, or Heroical Melancholy, his definition, part affected.

You have heard how this tyrant Love rageth with brute beasts and spirits; now let us consider what passions it causeth amongst men. 

* Improbe amor, quid non mortalia pectora cogis? How it tickles th' hearts of mortal men, Horroresco referens,—— I am almost afraid to relate, amazed, and ashamed, it hath wrought such stupendous and prodigious effects, such foul offences. Love indeed (I may not deny) first united provinces, built cities, and by a perpetual generation makes and preserves mankind, propagates the church; but if it rage it is no more love, but burning lust, a disease, frenzy, madness, hell. 2 "E't est orus ille, vis est immedicabilis, est rabies insana; 'tis no virtuous habit this, but a vehement perturbation of the mind, a monster of nature, wit, and art, as Alexis in *Atheneus sets it out, viriliter audax, multierbiier timidum, furio praceps, labore infrastructum, mel felleum, blanda percussio, &c. It subverts kingdoms, overthrows cities, towns, families, wars, corrupts, and makes a massacre of men, thunder and lightning, wars, fires, plagues, have not done that mischief to mankind, as this burning lust, this brutish passion, Let Sodom and Gomorrah, Troy (which Dares Phrygium, and Dictys Cretensis will make good), and I know not how many cities bear record, —— et fuit ante Helenam, &c., all succeeding ages will subscribe: Joanna of Naples in Italy, Frederunde and Brunhalt in France, all histories are full of these basilisks. Besides these daily monomachies, murders, effusion of blood, rapes, riot, and immoderate expense, to satisfy their lusts, beggary, shame, loss, torture, punishment, disgrace, loathsome diseases that proceed from thence, worse than calentures and pestilential fevers, those often gouts, pox, arthritis, palsy, cramps, sciatica, convulsions, aches, combustions, &c., which torment the body, that feral melancholy which crucifies the soul in this life, and everlasting torments in the world to come.

Notwithstanding they know these and many such miseries, threats, tortures,
will surely come upon them, rewards, exhortations, & contra; yet either out of their own weakness, a depraved nature, or love's tyranny, which so furiously regeth, they suffer themselves to be led like an ox to the slaughter: (Facilis descensus Averni) they go down headlong to their own perdition, they will commit folly with beasts, men "leaving the natural use of women," as Paul saith, "burned in lust one towards another, and man with man wrought filthiness."


b Rom. 1. 27.  
6 Lilius Giralbus, vita djs.  
7 Pueres amare solis Philosophis reliquiendum vult  
8 Lucianus dial. Amorun.  
8 Busbequins.  
9 Achilleis Tatinis, lib. 2.  
10 Lucianus Chardemo.  
11 Non est hanc notulae demens Mart.  
12 Iovius Muso.  
13 Pracit lectori lib. de vita pontic.  
14 Mercu- 
16 Galenus 6. de locis aef.  
2 De morb. multer.  
1. cap. 16.  

2 K
Love-Melancholy.

mirere, feminam feminam Constantinopoli non ita pridem deperit, ausa rem planè incredibilem, mutato cultu mentita virum de nuptiis sermonem initi, et brevi nupta est: sed authorem ipsum consule Busbequium. Omitto "Salamarios illos Egyptianos, qui cum formasram cadaveribus concumbunt; et eorum vesanam libidinem, qui etiam idola et imaginibus deperunt. Nota est fabula Pygmalionis apud Ovidium; Mundi et Paulini apud Ægesippum belli Jud. lib. 2. cap. 4. Pontius C. Caesaris legatus, referente Plinio, lib. 35. cap. 3. quem suspicor eum esse qui Christum crucificavit, picturis Atalante et Helenae adei libidinem incensa, ut tollere eam vellet si natura tectorii permississet; alius statuam bonæ Fortune deperit; (Ælianus, lib. 9. cap. 57.) alius Boxe deæ, et ne qua pars prohibro vocet, Ρ Raptus ad stupra (quod ait ille) et ne * os quidem a libidinem exceptum. Heliogabalus, per omnia cava corporate libidinem recepit, Lamprid. vita ejus. Ψ Hostius quidam speculam fecit, et ita disposuit, ut quium virum ipse patetetur, aversus omnes admissarii motus in speculo videat, ac deinde falsa magnitudine ipsius membris tanguam verò gaudent, simul virum et libidinem passus, quod dictu fecund et abominandum. Ut verum plane sit, quod apud Plutarchum Gryllus Ulyssi object. Ad hunc usque diem apud nos neque mas maren, neque feminam amavit, qualia multa apud vos memorabiles et praecari viri feecerunt: ut viles missos faciam, Hercules imberbe sectans socium, amicos deseruit, &c. Vestra libidines intra suos naturae fines coerceris non possunt, quin instar fluvii exundantis atroce feditatem, tumultum, confusionemque naturae gigan tum in re Venusæ: nam et capras, porcos, equos inierunt viri et feminæ, insano bestiarum amore exarseunt, unde Minotaures, Centaures, Sylvani, Sphinxes, &c. Sed ne confutandoeoceum, aut ea foras efferrum quæ non omnes scire convenient (hæc enim docidis sublimmode, quod causa non absimit) Rodericus, scripta velim), ne levissimis ingentis et depravatis mentibus foedissimi sceleris notiam, &c., nolo quem divitiis hisce sordibus inquinare.

I come at last to that heroical love which is proper to men and women, is a frequent cause of melancholy, and deserves much rather to be called burning lust, than by such an honourable title. There is an honest love, I confess, which is natural, laqueus occultus captivans corda hominum, ut à mulieribus non possint separari, "a secret snare to captivate the hearts of men," as Christopher Fonseca proves, a strong allurement, of a most attractive, occult, adamanntine property, and powerful virtue, and no man living can avoid it. Et gut vim non sensib amoris, aut lapis est, aut bellua. He is not a man but a block, a very stone, aut aut Numen, aut Nebuchadnezzar, he hath a gourd for his head, a pepon for his heart, that hath not felt the power of it, and a rare creature to be found, one in an age, Qui manum visum flagravit amore puella, for semel insamvinimus omnes, dote we either young or old, as he said, and none are excepted but Minerva and the Muses: so Cupid in Lucian complains to his mother Venus, that amongst all the rest his arrows could not pierce. But this nuptial love is a common passion, an honest, for men to love in the way of marriage; ut materia appetit formam, sic mulier virum. You know marriage is honourable, a blessed calling, appointed by God himself in Paradise; it breeds true peace, tranquillity, content, and happiness, quod nullus est aut fuit unquam sanctior conjunctio, as Daphnaeus in Plutarch could well

---

3 Herodotus 1. 2. Euterpe: uoxes insignium virorum non statim vitæ functas tradunt comendias, æ ne eis quidem feminas quæ formasram sunt, quæ quàdquae ante defunctas, ne eum ille salutari concumbat, &c. 4 Medicine. 12. 5 Séneca de ira, lib. 11. c. 18. 6 Séneca 1. nat. quest. 7 Tom. P. Gryll. 8 De moribus mulierum, lib. 1. c. 15. 9 Amphitheat. amor, c. 4. interpret. Curti. 10 Æneas et Sylvii Juvenal. 11 "And he who has not felt the influence of love is either a stone or a beast." 12 Tertul. prover. lib. 4. adversus Man. cap. 40. 13 * One whom no maiden's beauty had ever affected." 14 Chaucer. 15 Tom. 1. dial. deorum Lucianus. Amore non ardent Muses. 16 "As matter seeks form, so woman turns towards man." 17 In amator. dialog.
prove, et quae generi humano immortalitatem parat, when they live without jarring, scolding, lovingly as they should do.

"d Ferrier ter et amplius
Ques irrep a fenet copula, nec uilla
Divulsus querimoniis
Suprema citius solvit amor die."  

"Thrice happy they, and more than that,
Whom bond of love so firmly ties.
That without brawls till death them part,
'Tis undissolved and never dies.

As Seneca lived with his Paulina, Abraham and Sarah, Orpheus and Eurydice, Arria and Petrus, Artemisia and Mausolus, Rubenius Celer, that would needs have it engraven on his tomb, he had led his life with Enea, his dear wife, forty-three years eight months, and never fell out. There is no pleasure in this world comparable to it, 'tis summum mortalitatis bonum——

Sororum divinumque voluptas, Alma Venus——laster enim in muliere a liquid majus potentissimé omnibus aliis humanis voluptatibus, as 'one holds, there's something in a woman beyond all human delight; a magnetic virtue, a charming quality, an occult and powerful motive. The husband rules her as head, but she again commands his heart, he is her servant, she his only joy and content; no happiness is like unto it, no love so great as this of man and wife, no such comfort as placens uxor, a sweet wife: Omnis amor magnus, sed aperto in conjuge major.

When they love at last as fresh as they did at first, Charaque charo consensescit conjugi, as Homer brings Paris kissing Helen, after they had been married ten years, protesting withal that he loved her as dear as he did the first hour that he was betrothed. And in their old age, when they make much of one another, saying, as he did to his wife in the poet,

"uxor vivamnus quod visimis, et moriamur,
Sarrantes nomen suum ipsimum in thalamo:
Nec forsit uilla dies ut communem in amv,
Quia ilia sim juvenis, tuque polda meus."

"Dear wife, let's live in love and die together,
As bitherto we have in all god will
Let no day change or alter our affections,
But let's be young to one another still."

Such should conjugal love be, still the same, and as they are one flesh, so should they be of one mind, as in an aristocratical government, one consent, Geron-like, coalescere in unum, have one heart in two bodies, will and nil the same. A good wife, according to Plutarch, should be as a looking-glass to represent her husband's face and passion: if he be pleasant, she should be merry: if he laugh, she should smile: if he look sad, she should participate of his sorrow, and bear a part with him, and so they should continue in mutual love one towards another.

"Et me ab amore tuo deducet nulla secentus,
Sive ego Tythonem, sive ego Nestor eram."

"No age shall part my love from thee, sweet wife,
Though I live Nestor or Tithonus' life."

And she again to him, as the Bride saluted the Bridegroom of old in Rome, ubi tu Caius, ego semper Caius, be thou still Caius, I'll be Caius.

'Tis a happy state this indeed, when the fountain is blessed (saith Solomon, Prov. v. 17.) and he rejoiceth with the wife of his youth, and she is to him as the loving kind and pleasant roe, and he delights in her continually. But this love of ours is immediate, inordinate, and not to be comprehended in any bounds. It will not contain itself within the union of marriage, or apply to one object, but is a wandering, extravagant, a domineering, a boundless, an irrefrangible, a destructive passion: sometimes this burning lust rages after marriage, and then it is properly called jealousy; sometimes before, and then it is called heroic melancholy; it extends sometimes to co-rivals, &c., begets rapes, incests, murders: Marcus Antonius compressit Faustinam sororem, Caracalla Julian novercam, Nero matrem, Caligula sorores, Cyneras Myrham filiam, &c. But it is confined within no terms of blood, years, sex, or whatsoever else. Some furiously rage before they come to discretion or age.

d Hor. * Laconetius. s Fonseca. 9 Hor. h Propert. a Simenides, grce. "She grows old in love and in years together." s I Anasonius. 1 Geryon amictis symbolum. m Propert. 1. 2.

Plutarch. c. 30. Rom. hist.
Quartilla in Petronius never remembered she was a maid; and the wife of Bath, in Chaucer, cracks,

Since I was twelve years o'ld, belike,
Husband at Kirk-wor hest I so.

P. Aratine Lucretia sold her maidenhead a thousand times before she was twenty-four years old, plus millies vendiderat virginitatem, &c. neque te celado, non deereant quí ut integrum ambirent. Rahab, that harlot, began to be a professed queen at ten years of age, and was but fifteen when she hid the spies, as 9 Hugh Broughton proves, to whom Serrarius the Jesuit, quaest. 6. in cap. 2. Josue, subscribes. Generally women begin pubescere, as they call it, or caulicire, as Julius Pollux cites, lib. 2. cap. 3. onomastr. out of Aristophanes, at fourteen years old, then they do offer themselves, and some plainly rage. 9 Leo Afer saith, that in Africa a man shall scarce find a maid at fourteen years of age, they are so forward, and many amongst us after they come into the teens do not live without husbands, but linger. What pranks in this kind the middle ages have played is not to be recorded. Si multi sint centum lingua, sint orque centum, no tongue can sufficiently declare, every story is full of men and women's insatiable lust, Nero's, Heliogabali, Bonosi, &c. Calius Amphelnum, sed Quintius Amphelinum depereunt, &c. They neigh after other men's wives (as Jeremia cap. v. 8. complaineth) like fed horses, or range like town bulls, raptiores virginum et viduarum, as many of our great ones do. Solomon's wisdom was extinguished in this fire of lust, Samson's strength enervated, piety in Lot's daughters quite forgot, gravity of priesthood in Eli's sons, reverend old age in the Elders that would violate Susanna, filial duty in Absalom to his step-mother, brotherly love in Ammon towards his sister. Human, divine laws, precepts, exhortations, fear of God and men, fair, foul means, fame, fortune, shame, disgrace, honour cannot oppose, stave off, or withstand the fury of it, omnia vincit amor, &c. No cord nor cable can so forcibly draw, or hold so fast, as love can do with a twined thread. The scorching beams under the equinoctial, or extremity of cold within the circle arctic, where the very seas are frozen, cold or torrid zone, cannot avoid or expel this heat, fury, and rage of mortal men.

" Quo fugis ut demens, nulla est fugis, tu licet usque Ad Tanaim fugias, usque sequetur amor." 

Of women's unnatural, insatiable lust, what country, what village doth not complain? Mother and daughter sometimes dote on the same man, father and son, master and servant, on one woman.

" Sed amor, sed inessefrenata libido,
Qvod castum in terris intentatunque reliquit? "

What breach of vows and oaths, fury, dotage, madness, might I reckon up! Yet this is more tolerable in youth, and such as are still in their hot blood, but for an old fool to dote, to see an old lecher, what more odious, what can be more absurd? And yet what so common? Who so furious? 2 Amare ea auta si oceperint, mullo insanient acrisc. Some dote then more than ever they did in their youth. How many decrepit, hoary, harsh, withren, burthen-bellied, crooked, toothless, bald, blare-eyed, impotent, rotten old men shall you see flickering still in every place? One gets him a young wife, another a courtezan, and when he can scarce lift his leg over a sill, and hath one foot already in Charon's boat, when he hath the trembling in his joints, the gout in

14. uhat have lust and unrestrained desire left chaste or inviolate upon earth?" 2 Plautus.
his feet, a perpetual rheum in his head, "a continuare cough," a sight fail him, thick of hearing, his breath stinks, all his moisture is dried up and gone, may not spit from him, a very child again, that cannot dress himself, or cut his own meat, yet he will be dreaming of, and honing after wenches, what can be more unseemly? Worse it is in women than in men, when she is setate declivis, diu vidua, mater olim, parum decorum matrimonium sequi videtur, an old widow, a mother so long since (b) in Pliny's opinion), she doth very unseemly seek to marry, yet whilst she is so old a crone, a baldam, she can neither see, nor hear, go nor stand, a mere carcass, a witch, and scarce feel; she catterwauls, and must have a stallion, a champion, she must and will marry again, and betroth herself to some young man, c that hates to look on, but for her goods; abhors the sight of her, to the prejudice of her good name, her own undoing, grief of friends, and ruin of her children.

But to enlarge or illustrate this power and effects of love, is to set a candle in the sun. f It rageth with all sorts and conditions of men, yet is most evident among such as are young and lusty, in the flower of their years, nobly descended, high fed, such as live idly, and at ease; and for that cause (which our divines call burning lust) this ferinus insanus amor, this mad and beastly passion, as I have said, is named by our physicians herculean love, and a more honourable title put upon it, Amor nobilis, as (a) Savanarola styles it, because noble men and women make a common practice of it, and are so ordinarily affected with it. Avicenna, lib. 3. Fen. 1. tract. 4. cap. 33. calleth this passion Ilisi, and defines it "to be a disease or melancholy vexation, or anguish of mind, in which a man continually meditates of the beauty, gesture, manners of his mistress, and troubles himself about it: desiring, (a) (as Savanarola adds) with all intentions and eagerness of mind, "to compass or enjoy her, as commonly hunters trouble themselves about their sports, the covetous about their gold and goods, so is he tormented still about his mistress." Arnoldus Villanovanus, in his book of heroical love, defines it, "a continual cogitation of that which he desires, with a confidence or hope of compassing it;" which definition his commentator cavils at. For continual cogitation is not the genus but a symptom of love; we continually think of that which we hate and abhor, as well as that which we love; and many things we covet and desire, without all hope of attaining. Carolus à Lorme, in his Questions makes a doubt, An amor sit morbus, whether this herculean love be a disease: Julius Pollux Onomast. lib. 6. cap. 44, determines it. They that are in love are likewise sick; lascivus, salac, lascivius, et qui in venerem furit, verè est agrotus.

Arnoldus will have it improperly so called, and a madly rather of the body than mind. Tully, in his Tusculana, defines it a furious disease of the mind; Plato, madness itself. Ficinus, his Commentator, cap. 12. a species of madness, "for many have run mad for women," Esdr. iv. 26. But (a) Rhasis a melancholy passion; and most physicians make it a species or kind of melancholy (as will appear by the symptoms), and treat of it apart; whom I mean to imitate, and to discuss of all in his kinds, to examine his several causes, to show his symptoms, indications, prognostics, effect, that it so may be with more facility cured.

The part affected in the meantime, as (b) Arnoldus supposeth, "is the former

(a) Occul caliginis, auris graviter ancliant, capillus fluitat, cutis arsecit, fatas olet, tussis, &c. Cyprian. b Lib. 8. Epist. Rufinus. (b) Historia turpis inter aridae nates podex. c Cadaverous sise ut ab inferis reversa videri possit, vult adhuc cuticulâ. (b) Nam et matrimonis est spectandum semen. Aeneas Silvius. f Quod totum terram orbe communitis? quae divina, quod opus, quod familiam vacat amor um exempli? Aeneas Silvius. Quis trige stomium annus natus nullum amor is causa perpetii insigne fuscus? ego de me facto conjecturam, quem amor in milia percutia. d Florus, Plato. e Techn. 6. cap. 2. Rub. 11. de agrit. cap. quod his multum contingat. (b) Hinc agritudo est sollicitudo melancholica in qua humana aptilat sed continuam cogitationem super pulchritudine ipsius quam amat, stigmatum, morum. (b) Animis forte sedecunt quas quae sem se habere nimia ardientes concupiscit, ut ludes venatores, aurum et opes avaris. (b) Animis cogitation super rem desideratam, cum confidentia obtinendi, ut sapre apprehensum decelves, &c. (b) Mortus corporis potus quam animal. (b) Amor est passio melancholica. (b) Ob calcurationem spiritum pars anterior capita laborat ob consumptionem humiditat.
part of the head for want of moisture," which this commentator rejects. Langius, med. epist. lib. 1. cap. 24. will have this passion seated in the liver, and to keep residence in the heart, "to proceed first from the eyes so carried by our spirits, and kindled with imagination in the liver and heart;" cogeat amorejecur, as the saying is. Medium fere per epar, as Cupid in Aaucreon. For some such cause belike Homer feigus Titius' liver (who was enamoured of Latona) to be still gnawed by two vultures day and night in hell, "for that young men's bowels thus enamoured, are so continually tormented by love." Gordonius, cap. 2. part. 2. "will have the testicles an immediate subject or cause, the liver an antecedent." Traeatorius agrees in this with Gordonius, inde primitus imaginatio veneera, erectio, &c. tittillatissimam partem vocat, ita ut nisi extrus semine gestatione voluptas non cessat, nec assimilia veneris recordatio, addit Gnastivinus, Comment. 4. Sect. prob. 27. Arist. But properly it is a passion of the brain, as all other melancholy, by reason of corrupt imagination, and so doth Jason Pratesis, c. 19. de morb. cerebri (who writes copiously of this erosive love), place and reckon it amongst the affections of the brain.

Melanchon de animâ confutes those that make the liver a part affected, and Guianerus, Pract. 15. cap. 13. et 17. though many put all the affections in the heart, refers it to the brain. Ficinus, cap. 7. in Convivium Platonis, "will have the blood to be the part affected." Jo. Frietagius, cap. 14. note. med. supposeth all four affected, heart, liver, brain, blood; but the major part concur upon the brain, *tis imaginarion lœna; and both imagination and reason are misaffected; because of his corrupt judgment, and continual meditation of that which he desires, he may truly he said to be melancholy. If it be violent, or his disease inveterate, as I have determined in the precedent partitions, both imagination and reason are misaffected, first one then the other.

MEMB. II.

SUBSEC. I.—Causes of Heroical Love, Temperature, full Diet, Idleness, Place, Climate, &c.

Of all causes the remotest are stars. Ficinus, cap. 19. saith they are most prone to this burning lust, that have Venus in Leo in their horoscope, when the Moon and Venus be mutually aspected, or such as be of Venus' complexion. Plutarch interprets astrologically that tale of Mars and Venus, "in whose genitures Σ and Φ are in conjunction," they are commonly lascivious, and if women, queans; "as the good wife of Bath confessed in Chaucer;"

followed age mine inclination, By virtue of my constellation.

But of all those astrological aphorisms which I have ever read, that of Cardan is most memorable, for which howsoever he is bitterly censured by Marinus Marcennus, a malapert friar, and some others (which he himself suspected) yet methinks it is free, downright, plain and ingenuous. In his "eighth Geniture, or example, he hath these words of himself. Φ and Σ in dignitatus assumdum mili Venerorum cogitationem præstabunt, ita ut vomium quiescum. Et paulo post, Cogitation Venerorum me torquet perpetuo, et quam

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.

_503_

Causes of Love-Melancholy.
"If man is apt to live, that is young and lusty, live at ease, stall-fed, free from cares, like cattle in a rank pasture, idle and solitary persons, they must needs \textit{airiquitulire}, as Gnastivinius recites out of Consorinuss:

\begin{quote}
"K mens erit apta eti tum quum lietissima rerum, Ut seges in pingal luxurabit hinc." \\
"The mind is apt to lust, and hot or cold, As corn lucratis in a better mould."
\end{quote}

The place itself makes much wherein we live, the clime, air, and discipline if they concur. In our Misnia, saith Galen, near to Pergamus, thou shalt scarce find an adulterer, but many at Rome, by reason of the delights of the seat. It was that plenty of all things, which made \textsuperscript{1}Corinth so infamous of old, and the opportunity of the place to entertain those foreign comers; every day strangers came in, at each gate, from all quarters. In that one temple of Venus a thousand whores did prostitute themselves, as Strabo writes, besides Lais and the rest of better note: all nations resorted thither, as to a school of Venus. Your hot and southern countries are prone to lust, and far more incontinent than those that live in the north, as Bodine discourseth at large, \textit{Method. hist. cap. 5. Molles Asiatici}, so are Turks, Greeks, Spaniards, Italians, even all that latitude; and in those tracts, such as are more fruitful, plentiful, and delicious, as Valence in Spain, Capua in Italy, \textit{domicilium luxus} Tully terms it, and (which Hannibal's soldiers can witness) Canopus in Egypt, Sybaris, Phœacia, Baie, \textsuperscript{m}Cyprus, Lampsacus. In "Naples the fruit of the soil and pleasant air enervate their bodies, and alter constitutions: insomuch that Florus calls it, \textit{Certamen Bacchi et Venereis}, but \textsuperscript{c}Foliot admires it. In Italy and Spain they have their stews in every great city, as in Rome, Venice, Florence, wherein, some say, dwell ninety thousand inhabitants, of which ten thousand are courtezans; and yet for all this, every gentleman almost hath a peculiar mistresse; fornications, adulteries, are nowhere so common: \textit{urbs est jenototumpanar}; how should a man live honest amongst so many provocations? now if vigour of youth, greatness, liberty I mean, and that impunity of sin which grandees take unto themselves in this kind shall meet, what a gap must it needs open to all manner of vice, with what fury will it rage?" For, as Maximus Tyrius the Platonist observes, \textit{libido consequpta, quum fuerit materiam improbam, et praeuptam licentiam, et effrenatam audaciam, &c.}, what will not lust effect in such persons? For commonly princes and great men make no scruple at all of such matters, but with that whore in Spartan, \textit{qui-quad libet licet}, they think they may do what they list, profess it publicly, and rather brag with Proclus (that writ to a friend of his in Rome, \textsuperscript{2}what famous exploits he had done in that kind) than any way be abashed at it. \textsuperscript{4}Nicholas Sanders relates of Henry VIII. (I know not how truly) \textit{Quod paucus vidit pulchriores quas non conceperit, et pacuissimas conceperit quas non violat}, "He saw very few maids that he did not desire, and desired fewer whom he did not enjoy:" nothing so familiar amongst them, \textsuperscript{tis}most of their business: Sardanapalus, Messalina, and Joan of Naples, are not comparable to \textsuperscript{7}meanner

\footnotesize{\textsuperscript{1}book came first to my hands after the third edition\textsuperscript{2}to certain atomi in the seed, "such as are very spermatic and full of seed. I find the same in Aristotle, sect. 4. prob. 17. \textit{si non secernatur semen, cessare tentigines non possunt}, as Gnastivinius his commentator translates it: for which cause those young men that be strong set, of able bodies, are so subject to it. Hercules de Saxonià hath the same words in effect. But most part I say, such as are aptest to love that are young and lusty, live at ease, stall-fed, free from cares, like cattle in a rank pasture, idle and solitary persons, they must needs \textit{airiquitulire}, as Gnastivinius recites out of Consorinuss:

\begin{quote}
"K mens erit apta eti tum quum lietissima rerum, Ut seges in pingal luxurabit hinc." \\
"The mind is apt to lust, and hot or cold, As corn lucratis in a better mould."
\end{quote}

The place itself makes much wherein we live, the clime, air, and discipline if they concur. In our Misnia, saith Galen, near to Pergamus, thou shalt scarce find an adulterer, but many at Rome, by reason of the delights of the seat. It was that plenty of all things, which made \textsuperscript{1}Corinth so infamous of old, and the opportunity of the place to entertain those foreign comers; every day strangers came in, at each gate, from all quarters. In that one temple of Venus a thousand whores did prostitute themselves, as Strabo writes, besides Lais and the rest of better note: all nations resorted thither, as to a school of Venus. Your hot and southern countries are prone to lust, and far more incontinent than those that live in the north, as Bodine discourseth at large, \textit{Method. hist. cap. 5. Molles Asiatici}, so are Turks, Greeks, Spaniards, Italians, even all that latitude; and in those tracts, such as are more fruitful, plentiful, and delicious, as Valence in Spain, Capua in Italy, \textit{domicilium luxus} Tully terms it, and (which Hannibal's soldiers can witness) Canopus in Egypt, Sybaris, Phœacia, Baie, \textsuperscript{m}Cyprus, Lampsacus. In "Naples the fruit of the soil and pleasant air enervate their bodies, and alter constitutions: insomuch that Florus calls it, \textit{Certamen Bacchi et Venereis}, but \textsuperscript{c}Foliot admires it. In Italy and Spain they have their stews in every great city, as in Rome, Venice, Florence, wherein, some say, dwell ninety thousand inhabitants, of which ten thousand are courtezans; and yet for all this, every gentleman almost hath a peculiar mistresse; fornications, adulteries, are nowhere so common: \textit{urbs est jenototumpanar}; how should a man live honest amongst so many provocations? now if vigour of youth, greatness, liberty I mean, and that impunity of sin which grandees take unto themselves in this kind shall meet, what a gap must it needs open to all manner of vice, with what fury will it rage?" For, as Maximus Tyrius the Platonist observes, \textit{libido consequpta, quum fuerit materiam improbam, et praeuptam licentiam, et effrenatam audaciam, &c.}, what will not lust effect in such persons? For commonly princes and great men make no scruple at all of such matters, but with that whore in Spartan, \textit{qui-quad libet licet}, they think they may do what they list, profess it publicly, and rather brag with Proclus (that writ to a friend of his in Rome, \textsuperscript{2}what famous exploits he had done in that kind) than any way be abashed at it. \textsuperscript{4}Nicholas Sanders relates of Henry VIII. (I know not how truly) \textit{Quod paucus vidit pulchriores quas non conceperit, et pacuissimas conceperit quas non violat}, "He saw very few maids that he did not desire, and desired fewer whom he did not enjoy:" nothing so familiar amongst them, \textsuperscript{tis}most of their business: Sardanapalus, Messalina, and Joan of Naples, are not comparable to \textsuperscript{7}meanner

\footnotesize{\textsuperscript{1}Printed at Paris 1624, seven years after my first edition. \textsuperscript{2}Ovid de art. \textsuperscript{3}Gerberius, descript. Graeca. \textsuperscript{4}Herum omnium affluencia et loci mira opportunitas, nullo non die hospites in portas advertemunt. Temple Venere mille meretricies se prostituebant. \textsuperscript{m}Tota Cypri insula deilitis incumbit, et ob id tantum luxuriae dedita ut sit olim Veneri sacrata. Orietis, Lampsacus, olim Priapo saer ob vivum genitorem, et loci delicias. Idem. \textsuperscript{m}Agri Neapolitani delecteant, elegantia, amoenitas, vix intra humidum humanum consisteret videtur; unde, &c. Leand. Alber. in Campania. \textsuperscript{c}Lib. de land. urb. Neap. Disputat. de meritis animi, Reimoldo Interpret. \textsuperscript{4}Lampridius, Quod deem noebibus centum virgines fecset nullae. \textsuperscript{7}Vita ejus. \textsuperscript{8}If they contain themselves, many times it is not virtus amore; non desit voluntas sed facultas.}
Causes of Love-Melancholy.

"It Otium et reges prises et beatas
Ferulis urbis."

Idleness overthrows all, *Vacuo pectore regnat amor, love tyranniseth in an idle person. Amore abundas Antipho.* If thou hast nothing to do, "Imvidiā vel amore miser torquere—Thou shalt be haled in pieces with envy, lust, some passion or other. Homines nihil agendo malè agere discunt; 'tis Aristotle's simile, "As match or touchwood takes fire, so doth an idle person love." Queritur. *Ægistus quare sit factus adulter, &c., why was Ægistus a whoremaster?* You need not ask a reason of it. Ismedenora stole Baccho, a woman forced a man, as *Aurora did Cephalus: no marvel, said* *Plutarch, Luxurians oppitus more hominum multier agit:* she was rich, fortunate and jolly, and doth but as men do in that case, as Jupiter did by Europa, Neptune by Amymone. The poets therefore did well to feign all shepherds lovers, to give themselves to songs and dalliances, because they lived such idle lives. For love, as *Theophrastus defines it, is otiosi animi affectus, an affection of an idle mind,* or as *Seneca describes it, Juventā gignitur, luxu nutritur, feriis altur, otioque inter lata fortunae bonae:* youth begets it, riot maintains it, idleness nourisheth it, *&c., which makes* *Gordonius the physician cap. 20. part. 2. call this disease the proper passion of nobility. Now if a weak judgment and a strong apprehension do concur, how, saith Hercules de Saxonīa, shall they resist? Savanarola appropriates it almost to "monks, friars, and religious persons, because they live solitary, fare daintily, and do nothing:" and well he may, for how should they otherwise choose?

Diet alone is able to cause it: a rare thing to see a young man or a woman that lives idly, and fares well, of what condition soever, not to be in love. *Alciobides was still dallying with wanton young women, immoderate in his expenses, effeminate in his apparel, ever in love, but why? he was over-delicite in his diet, too frequent and excessive in banquets,* *Ubicunque securitas, ibi libido dominatur; lust and security domineer together, as St. Hierome ayerreth. All which the wife of Bath in Chaucer freely justifies.

*For all to sicker, as cold engendreth hail,
A liquorish tongue must have a liquorish tali.*

Especially if they shall further it by choice diet, as many times those Sybarites and Phæaces do, feed liberally, and by their good will eat nothing else but lascivious meats. *Vinum imprimit generosum, legumen, fabas, radices omnium generum benè conditas, et largo pipere aspersas, carduos hortulanos, lactucas, eruca, rapanas, porros, cepas, nucem piceam, amygaldas dulces, electaria, syrups, succus, cockeles, conchas, pisces optimè preparatos, aviculas, testiculos*


Unde tot in Veneta scortorum milla cursant? In prompta causa est, ut Venus orta mari.

Et hinc fatae mater Salacea Oceai conjux, verbumque fortasse salax ad sale effusit. Mola Bacchica tantum olim in amoribus praetvalerent, ut corona ex illis status Bacce ponentur. Cubebis in vino maceratis utuntur Indi Orientales ad Venerem excitanandam, et Surax rodice Africani. China radix eosdem effectus habet, talisque herbæ meminit mag. nat. lib. 2. cap. 16. Baptist Porta ex India allatte, ejus mentionem facit et Théophrastus. Sed in finita his similia apud Rhasin, Matthiolum, Mizaldum, ceteraque medicos occurrunt, quorum idem mentionem feci, ne quis imperitio in hos scopulos impingat, sed pro virili tanquam syrites et cautes consulto effugiat.

SUBSECT. II.—Other causes of Love-Melancholy, Sight, Beauty from the Face, Eyes, other parts, and how it pierceth.

Many such causes may be reckoned up, but they cannot avail, except opportunity be offered of time, place, and those other beautiful objects, or artificial enticements, as kissing, conference, discourse, gestures concur, with such like lascivious provocations. Kornmannus, in his book de linea amoris, makes five degrees of lust, out of "Lucian belike, which he handles in five chapters, Visus, Colloquium, Convictus, Oscula, Tactus." Sight, of all other, is the first step of this unruny love, though sometime it be prevented by relation or hearing, or rather incensed. For there be those so apt, credulous, and facile to love, that if they hear of a proper man, or woman, they are in love before they see them, and that merely by relation, as Achilles Tatius observes. Such is their intemperance and lust, that they are as much maimed by report, as if they saw them. Callisthenes a rich young gentleman of Byzance in Thrace, hearing of "Leucippe, Sostratus" fair daughter, was far in love with her, and
out of fame and common rumour, so much incensed, that he would needs have her to be his wife.” And sometimes by reading they are so affected, as he in a Lucian confesseth of himself, “I never read that place of Panthea in Xenophon, but I am as much affected as if I were present with her.” Such persons commonly b feign a kind of beauty to themselves; and so did those three gentlewomen in Balthasar Castilo fall in love with a young man whom they never knew, but only heard him commended: or by reading of a letter; for there is a grace cometh from hearing, d as a moral philosopher informed us, “as well from sight; and the species of love are received into the phantasy by relation alone:” “ut cvpere ab aspectu, sic velle ab auditu,” both senses affect. Inter-
dum et absentes amantes, sometimes we love those that are absent, saith Philo-
stratus, and gives instance in his friend Athenorodus, that loved a maid at Corinth whom he never saw; non oculi sed mens videt, we see with the eyes of our understanding.

But the most familiar and usual cause of love is that which comes by sight, which conveys those admirable rays of beauty and pleasing graces to the heart. Plotinus derives love from sight, ἡμώνιαν οὐκ ἔμειναι, tis nescio, oculi sunt in amore ducere, “the eyes are the harbingers of love,” and the first step of love is sight, as Lilius Giral dus proves at large, hist. deor. syntag. 13. they as two slices let in the influences of that divine, powerful, soul-ravishing, and captivating beauty, which, as b one saith, “is sharper than any dart or needle, wounds deeper into the heart; and opens a gap through our eyes to that lovely wound, which pierceth the soul itself.” (Ecclus. 18.) Through it love is kindled like a fire. This amazing, confounding, admirable, amiable beauty, c than which in all nature’s treasure (saith Isocrates) there is nothing so majestic and sacred, nothing so divine, lovely, precious,” tis nature’s crown, gold and glory; bonum si non summum, de summis tamen non infrequenter triumphans, whose power hence may be discerned; we contemplate and abhor generally such things as are foul and ugly to behold, account them filthy, but love and covet that which is fair. "Tis k beauty in all things which pleasest and allureth us, a fair hawk, a fine garment, a goodly building, a fair house, &c. That Persian Xerxes when he destroyed all those temples of the gods in Greece, caused that of Diana, in integrum servari, to be spared alone for that excellent beauty and magnificence of it. Inanimate beauty can so command. "Tis that which painters, artificers, orators, all aim at, as Eriximachus the physician, in Plato contends, d It was beauty first that ministered occasion to art, to find out the knowledge of carving, painting, building, to find out models, perspectives, rich furniture, and so many rare inventions.” Whiteness in the lily, red in the rose, purple in the violet, a lustre in all things without life, the clear light of the moon, the bright beams of the sun, splendour of gold, purple, sparkling diamond, the excellent feature of the horse, the majesty of the lion, the colour of birds, peacocks’ tails, the silver scales of fish, we behold with singular delight and admiration. e And which is rich in plants, delightful in flowers, wonderful in beasts, but most glorious in men,” doth make us affect and earnestly desire it, as when we hear any sweet harmony, an eloquent tongue, see any excellent quality, curious work of man, elaborate art, or aught that is exquisite, there ariseth instantly in us a longing for the same. We love such men, but most part for comeliness of person; we call them gods and goddesses

a Quotid de Panthea Xenophantis locum perlego, ita animo affectus ac si cornu intucor. b Fulchri-
dinem sibi huius confingunt, imagines. c De anhico lib. 2. fol. 116. “tis a pleasant story, and related at large by him. d Gratia venit ab auditu coque ac visa, et species amoris in phantasmam recipit sola reading. e Pleomoinas grad. & c. 38. f Lips. cent. 2. episc. 22. Beauteis Encomiums. g Propert. 

1 In tota rerum natura nihil formas divinas, nihil angustias, nihil preclorbas, cujas vires tunc facile intel-
guus, &c. h Christ. Fomenca. 15. L. i Brays prop. II. de forma & Lucianes.
divine, serene, happy, &c. And of all mortal men they alone (C Calcganinus holds) are free from calumnies; quid divitiis, magistratu et glorid florent, inijurid lacessimus, we backbite, wrong, hate renowned, rich, and happy men, we repine at their felicity, they are undeserving we think, fortune is a step-mother to us, a parent to them. "We envy (saith Isocrates;) wise, just, honest men, except with mutual offices and kindnesses, some good turn or other, they extort this love from us; only fair persons we love at first sight, desire their acquaintance, and adore them as so many gods: we had rather serve them than command others, and account ourselves the more beholding to them, the more service they enjoin us: though they be otherwise vicious, dishonest, we love them, favour them, and are ready to do them any good office for their beauty's sake, though they have no other good quality beside. Die iigitur ô formose adlocans (as that eloquent Phavorinus breaks out in 8 Stobus), die Autiloque, sua vias nectare loquere; die ô Telemacus, vehementiss Ulysses dicis; die Alciabides utcunque ebris, libertinis tibi licet eborio auscultabimus. "Speak, fair youth, speak Autiloquus, thy words are sweeter than nectar, speak O Telemachus, thou art more powerful than Ulysses, speak Alciabides though drunk, we will willingly thee as thou art." Faults in such are no faults: for when the said Alciabides had stolen Anytus his gold and silver plate, he was so far from prosecuting so foul a fact (though every man else condemned his impudence and insolency) that he wished it had been more, and much better (he loved him dearly) for his sweet sake. "No worth is eminent in such lovely persons, all imperfections hid; non enim facile de his quos plurimum diligitus, turpitudinem suspicarum, for hearing, sight, touch, &c., our mind and all our senses are captivated, omnes sensus formosus delectat. Many men have been preferred for their person alone, chosen kings, as amongst the Indians, Persians, Æthiopians of old; the procerest man of person the country could afford, was elected their sovereign lord; Gratior est pulchro veniens e corpore virtus, and so have many other nations thought and done, as Curtis observes: Ingens enim in corporis majestate veneratio est, "for there is a majestical presence in such men;" and so far was beauty adored amongst them, that no man was thought fit to reign, that was not in all parts complete and preeminent. Agis, King of Lacedemon, had like to have been deposed, because he married a little wife, they would not have their royal issue degenerate. Who would ever have thought that Adrian the Fourth, an English monk's bastard (as Papirius Massovius writes in his life), inops à suis relictus, squalidus et miser, a poor forsaken child, should ever come to be pope of Rome? But why was it! Erat acr ingenio, jacundia expeditia, elegantii corport, facieque latæ ac latari (as he follows it out of "Nubrigensis, for he ploughs with his heifer), "he was wise, learned, eloquent, of a pleasant, a promising countenance, a goodly, proper man; he had, in a word, a winning look of his own," and that carried it, for that he was especially advanced. "So Saul was a goodly person and a fair." Maximinus elected emperor, &c. Branchus the son of Apollo, whom he begot of Jane, Snercon's daughter (saith Lactantius), when he kept King Admetus' herds in Thessaly, now grown a man, was an earnest suitor to his mother to know his father; the nymph denied him, because Apollo had conjured her to the contrary; yet overcome by his importunity at last lesenthim to his father; when he came into Apollo's presence, malas Dei reverenter osculatus,

8 Lib. de calumnia. Fornosi Columba vacant: dolemus alios meliore loco positis, fortunam nobis overcum illis, &c. 6 Invideamus apspsiptionibus, justis, nisi beneficiis assisit amorem exortuent; solos formoses amanos et primo velut aspectus benevolentia conjungitur, et eos tamquam Deos colimus, Libertis his servius quam quaem ait imperanos, magarevoque, &c. 6 P. Forme majestatem Barbari verentur, nec ali major quam quibus eximia forma natura donata est, Herod. Lib. 8. Curtius & Arist. Polit. 9 Germ. et Histarch. vii. ejus. Brisonius Strabo. 7 "Virtue appears more gracefully in a lovely personage." 8 Lib. 5 magnoerumque operum non alios capaces putant quam quos eximia specie natura donavit. 9 Lib. de vitæ pontificum. Kem.
he carried himself so well, and was so fair a young man, that Apollo was infinitely taken with the beauty of his person, he could scarce look off him, and said he was worthy of such parents, gave him a crown of gold, the spirit of divination, and in conclusion made him a demi-god. O vis superba forma, a goddess beauty is, whom the very gods adore, nam pulchros dii amant; she is Amoris domina, love's harbinger, love's leadstone, a witch, a charm, &c. Beauty is a dower of itself, a sufficient patrimony, an ample commendation, an accurate epistle, as 2 Lucian, 3 Apuleius, Tiraquiellus, and some others conclude. Imperio digna forma, beauty deserves a kingdom, saith Abulensis, paradoxe 2. cap. 110. immortality; and "more have got this honour and eternity for their beauty, than for all other virtues besides:" and such and such are fair, "are worthy to be honoured of God and men." That Idalian Ganymede was therefore fetched by Jupiter into heaven, Hæphestion dear to Alexander, Antinous to Adrian. Plato calls beauty for that cause a privilege of nature, Nature geometricus opus, nature's master-piece, a dumb comment; Theophrastus, a silent fraud; still rhetoric, Carneades, that persuades without a speech, a kingdom without a guard, because beautiful persons command as so many captains; So- crates, a tyranny, "which tyranniseth over tyrants themselves;" which made Diogenes belike call proper women queens, quod facerent homines qua praecipuerent, because men were so obedient to their commands. They will adore, cringe, compliment, and bow to a common wench (if she be fair) as if she were a noble woman, a countess, a queen, or a goddess. Those intemperate young men of Greece erected at Delphos a golden image with infinite cost, to the eternal memory of Phryne the courtesan, as Ælian relates, for she was a most beautiful woman, in so much saith 5 Athenæus, that Apelles and Praxiteles drew Venus's picture from her. Thus young men will adore and honour beauty; nay kings themselves: I say will do it, and voluntarily submit their sovereignty to a lovely woman. "Wine is strong, kings are strong, but a woman strongest," 1 Esd. iv. 10. as Zerobabel proved at large to King Darius, his princes and noblemen. "Kings sit still and command sea and land, &c., all p.y tribute to the king; but women make kings pay tribute, and have dominion over them." When they have got gold and silver, they submit all to a beautiful woman, give themselves wholly to her, gape and gaze on her, and all men desire her more than gold or silver, or any precious thing: they will leave father and mother, and venture their lives for her, labour and travel to get, and bring all their gains to women, steal, fight, and spoil for their mistress's sake. And no king so strong, but a fair woman is stronger than he is. "All things" (as he proceeds) "fear to touch the king; yet I saw him and Apame his concubine, the daughter of the famous Bartacus, sitting on the right hand of the king, and she took the crown off his head, and put it on her own, and stroke him with her left hand; yet the king gaped and gazed on her, and when she laughed, he laughed, and when she was angry he flattered to be reconciled to her." So beauty commands even kings themselves; nay whole armies and kingdoms are captivated together with their kings: 4 Forma vincit armatos, ferrum pulchritudo captivat; vincentur specie, qui non vincentur praehio. And 'tis a great matter saith 2 Xenophon, "and of which all fair persons may worthily brag, that a strong man must labour for his living if he will have aught, a valiant man must fight and endanger himself for it, a wise man speak, show himself, and toil; but a fair and beautiful person doth all

2 Dial. amorum c. 2. de magia. Lib. 2. comm. cap. 27. Virgo formosa et si opulenta pauper, abundat est donata. 3 Isocrates plures ob formam immortalitatem adepti sunt quam ob religiones omnes virtutes. 4 Lucian Tom. 4. Chori amorum. Qui pulchrit, merits apud Deos et apud homines honorem affectit. Muta commensatio, quavis opus inter ad commensandum efficaciam. 5 Lib. 9. Var. hist. tanta forma elegantia at ab ea nuda. 6 Esdras. tom. 29. 7 Origen hom. 22. In Numb. 8 ibid. 22. In iras tyrannos tyrannum immortalitatem exercet. 9 Iliad certe magnum ob quod gloriosi possunt formosae, quod robustos necessarium sit laborare, fortum percula se objecte, sapientem, &c.
with ease, he compasseth his desire without any pains-taking. 5 God and men heaven and earth conspire to honour him; every one pities him above other, if he be in need, and all the world is willing to do him good. 6 Charicles fell into the hand of pirates, but when all the rest were put to the edge of the sword, she alone was preserved for her person. 6 When Constantinople was sacked by the Turk, Irene escaped, and was so far from being made a captive, that she even captivated the Grand Seignior himself. Sodid Rosamond insult over King Henry the Second.

It captivates the very gods themselves, Morosiora numina,

And those mali genii are taken with it, as I have already proved. Formosum Barbari vererunt, et ad spectum pulchrum immannis animus mansuetit. (Heliodor. lib. 5.) The barbarians stand in awe of a fair woman, and at a beautiful aspect a fierce spirit is pacified. For when as Troy was taken, and the wars ended (as Clemens 1 Alexanderinus quotes out of Euripides), angry Menelaus with rage and fury armed, came with his sword drawn, to have killed Helen, with his own hands, as being the sole cause of all those wars and miseries: but when he saw her fair face, as one amazed at her divine beauty, he let his weapon fall, and embraced her besides, he had no power to strike so sweet a creature. Ergo hebetantur enses pulchritudinis, the edge of a sharp sword (as the saying is) is dulled with a beautiful aspect, and severity itself is overcome. Hiperides the orator, when Phryne his client was accused at Athens for her lewdness, used no other defence in her cause, but tearing her upper garment, disclosed her naked breast to the judges, with which comeliness of her body and amiable gesture they were so moved and astonished, that they did acquit her forthwith, and let her go. O noble piece of justice! mine author exclaims: and who is he that would not rather lose his seat and robes, forfeit his office, than give sentence against the majesty of beauty? Such prerogatives have fair persons, and they alone are free from danger. Parthenopeus was so lovely and fair, that when he fought in the Theban wars, if his face had been by chancebare, no enemy would offer to strike at or hurt him, such immunities hath beauty. Beasts themselves are moved with it. Sinalda was a woman of such excellent feature, 2 and a queen, that when she was to be trodden on by wild horses for a punishment, "the wild beasts stood in admiration of her person, (Saxo Grammaticus, lib. 8. Dan. hist.) and would not hurt her." Wherefore did that royal virgin in "Apuleius, when she fled from the thieves' den, in a desert, make such an apostrophe to her ass on whom she rode; (for what knew she to the contrary, but that he was an ass?) Si me parentibus et proco formoso reddideris, quas tibi gratias, quos honores habebas, quos cibos exibebas? 3 She would comb him, dress him, feed him, and trick him every day herself, and he should work no more, toil no more, but rest and play, &c. And besides she would have a dainty picture drawn, in perpetual remembrance, an avow riding upon an ass's back with this motto, A sino vectore regia virgo fugiens captivitatem; why said she all this? why did she make such promises to a dungh beast? but that she perceived the poor ass to be 4

6 Majorum vim habet ad commendandam forma, quam accurate scripta epistola. Arist. 7 Heliodor. lib. 1. 8 Knowles. hist. Turcica. a Daniel in complaint of Rosamond. 1 Straza filius Euph. "The king of the gods on account of this beauty became a bull, a shower, a swan." b Sect. 2. Mon. 1. Sub 1. 1 Stromannus i. post captam Trojanum impetus ferreter ad occidendum Helenam, stupore acdeo pulchritudinis corruptus ut fortem excluderet, &c. 10 Tantum formae sibi ut cum vincas longis feris expostes facete, equorum celeribus obtendera, psa junctum admirationi fales; pedem adhibes. 11 Lib. 8. males. 12 "If you will restore me to my parents, and my beautiful lover, what thanks, what honour shall I owe you, what provender shall I not supply you?"

1 "I was so fair an object;" Whom fortune made my king, my love made subject; He found by proof the privileges of beauty. That it had power to countermand all duty, recourse ob lance formam bos, equus, timber, olor."
taken with her beauty; for he did often oblique collo pedes puella decoros basilire, kiss her feet as she rode, et ad delicatus vocalis tentalat adhinnire, offer to give consent as much as in him was to her delicate speeches, and besides he had some feeling, as she conceived of her misery. And why did Theogone's horse in Heliodorus 'curvet, prance, and go so proudly, exultans alacriter et superbien, &c., but that such as mine author supposeth, he was in love with his mister? dixisses ipsum equum pulchrum intelligere pulchrum domine formam? A fly lighted on 4 Malthus' cheek as he lay asleep; but why? Not to hurt him, as a parasite of his, standing by, well perceived, non ut pungeret, sed ut oscularetur, but certainly to kiss him, as ravished with his divine looks. Inanimate creatures, I suppose, have a touch of this. When a drop of 7 Psyche's candle fell on Cupid's shoulder, I think sure it was to kiss it. When Venus ran to meet her rose-cheeked Adonis, as an elegant 8 poet of ours sets her out,  

```plaintext
"the bushes in the way
Some catch her neck, some kiss her face,
Some twine about her legs to make her stay,
And all did covet her for to embrace."
```

Aer ipse amore infectur, as Heliodorus holds, the air itself is in love: for when Hero played upon her lute,

```plaintext
"The wanton air in twenty sweet forms danc't
After her fingers,"
```

and those lascivious winds stayed Daphne when she fled from Apollo;

```plaintext
"pudabant corpora venti,
Oblique adversus vibrabunt flamma vestes."
```

Boreas Ventus loved Hyacinthus, and Orithya Ericthon's daughter of Athens; vi rapuit, &c., he took her away by force, as she was playing with other wenches at Iliasus, and begat Zetes and Galias his two sons of her. That seas and waters are enamoured with this our beauty, is all out as likely as that of the air and winds; for when Leander swam in the Hellespont, Neptune with his trident did beat down the waves, but

```plaintext
"They still mounted up intending to have kiss'd him,
And fell in drops like tears because they missed him."
```

The 9 river Alpheus was in love with Arethusa, as she tells the tale herself;

```plaintext
"viridesque mann aecatae capillos,
Flaminis Alphii vetere restavit amores;
 Pars ego Syripharam, &c."
```

When our Thame and Isis meet

```plaintext
"Oscula mille amant, connexus brachia pallent,
Mutuat explicitis connexus lacertis."
```

Inachus and Pineus, and how many loving rivers can I reckon up, whom beauty hath enthralled! I say nothing all this while of idols themselves that have committed idolatry in this kind, of looking-glasses, that have been rapt in love (if you will believe 10 poets), when their ladies and mistresses looked on to dress them.

```plaintext
Et si non habeo sensum, tua gratia sensum
Exhibit, et callid semito amurcos opus,
Dirigis hue quoties spectantia lumina, flamma
Succendunt inplo saecia membra milli."
```

```
```
```
```

```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
```
of all the tales in this kind, that is the most memorable of death himself, when he should have striven a sweet young virgin with his dart, he fell in love with the object. Many more such could I relate which are to be believed with a poetical faith. So dumb and dead creatures dote, but men are mad, stupified many times at the first sight of beauty, amazed, as that fisherman in Aristænæus, that spied a maid bathing herself by the sea-side.

"Solum mihi sunt omnia membra
A capite ad calcem, tamenque omnis perit
De pectore, tam immensus super animam invasit mihi."

And as Lucian, in his images, confesses of himself, that he was at his mistress's presence void of all sense, immovable, as if he had seen a Gorgon's head; which was no such cruel monster (as Cælius interprets it, lib. 3. cap. 9.), "but the very quintessence of beauty," some fair creature, as without doubt the poet understood in the first fiction of it, at which the spectators were amazed. Misericordia intendat not, poor wretches are compelled at the very sight of her ravishing looks to run mad, or make away with themselves.

"If they wait the sentence of her scornful eyes;
And whom she favours lives, the other dies."

1 Heliodorus, lib. 1. brings in Thamyris almost besides himself, when he saw Charicias first, and not daring to look upon her a second time, "for he thought it impossible for any man living to see her and contain himself." The very fame of beauty will fetch them to it many miles off (such an attractive power this loadstone hath), and they will seem but short, they will undertake any toil or trouble, long journeys. Penia or Atalanta shall not overgo them, through seas, deserts, mountains, and dangerous places, as they did to gaze on Psyche: "many mortal men came far and near to see that glorious object of her age," Paris for Helena, Corebus to Troya.

"Hic Trojan qui forte dicibus
Veterat insano Cassandrae læensis amere,
who inflamed with a violent passion for Cassandra, happened then to be in Troy." King John of France, once prisoner in England, came to visit his old friends again, crossing the seas; but the truth is, his coming was to see the Countess of Salisbury, the nonpareil of those times, and his dear mistress. That infernal god Pluto came from hell itself, to steal Proserpine; Achilles left all his friends for Polixena's sake, his enemy's daughter; and all the Grecian gods forsook their heavenly mansions for that fair lady, Philo Dionæus daughter's sake, the paragon of Greece in those days; et enim venustate fulit, at eaea certatim omnes dii conjugem expetereant: "for she was of such surpassing beauty, that all the gods contended for her love." Formosa divis imperat puella: "the beautiful maid commands the gods." They will not only come to see, but as a falcon makes a hungry hawk hover about, follow, give attendance and service, spend goods, lives, and all their fortunes to attain;

"Were beauty under twenty locks kept fast,
Yet love breaks through and picks them all at last."

When fair Hero came abroad, the eyes, hearts, and affections of her spectators were still attendant on her.

"Et medius inter vultus supereminet omnes,
Perque urcem aspicient ventemque numinis fastar.
"So far above the rest fair Hero shined,
And stole away the enchanted gazer's mind.

[Part. 3. Sec. 2.]

512 Love-Melancholy. 

a I. Idem Anger.  b Obscuravit mirabundos membrorum elegantiam, &c. Ep. 7.  c Stoheus e graeco.  d My limba became relaxed, I was overcome from head to foot, all self-possession fled, so great a stupor overburdened my mind.  e Param aubit quo minus saxum ex homine factum sum, ipsis statuis immobilem faci.  f Veterans Gorgonis fabulam confitterunt, eximium formae deum stupidos reddens.  g Hor. Ode 5.  k Marius Hero.  1 Aspectum virginalis sponte fugit insana lucte, et impossibile existimans ut annui eam aspicer, quae possit, et intra temperantia metus se confiner.  2 Apuleius, 1. 4. Mundi motalis longae titeribus, &c.  3 Nt. Gerbel. 1, 5. Achaia.  4 I. Secundum baviorum lib.  5 P. Museum illa autem bene morata, per edem quemque vagabatur, sequentem mentem habebat, et oculos, et corda virorum.  6 Homer.  7 Marlowe.
When Peter Arctine's Lucretia came first to Rome, and that the fame of her beauty, ad urbemanum deliciarum sectatores venerant, nemo non ad videndum eam, &c. were spread abroad, they came in (as they say) thick and threefold to see her, and hovered about her gates, as they did of old to Lais of Corinth, and Phryne of Thebes. *Ad cujus jacuit Gracia tota foris, "at whose gates lay all Greece." "Every man sought to get her love, some with galling and costly apparel, some with an affected pace, some with music, others with rich gifts, pleasant discourse, multitude of followers; others with letters, vows, and promises, to commend themselves, and to be gracious in her eyes." Happy was he that could see her, thrice happy that enjoyed her company. Charmides *in Plato was a proper young man, in comeliness of person, "and all good qualities, far exceeding others; whomever fair Charmides came abroad, they seemed all to be in love with him (as Critias describes their carriage), and were troubled at the very sight of him; many came near him, many followed him wheresoever he went," as those *formarum spectatores did Acontius, if at any time he walked abroad: the Athenian lasses stared on Alcibiades; Sappho and the Mitilenean women on Phao the fair. Such lovely sights do not only please, entice, but ravish and amaze. Cleonimus, a delicate and tender youth, present at a feast which Androcles his uncle made in Piraeus at Athens, when he sacrificed to Mercury, so stumped the guests, Dineas, Aristippus, Agasthenes, and the rest (as Charidemus in *Lucian relates it), that they could not eat their meat, they sat all supper time gazing, glancing at him, stealing looks, and admiring of his beauty. Many will condemn these men that are so enamoured, for fools; but some again commend them for it; many reject Paris's judgment, and yet Lucian approves of it, admiring Paris for his choice; he would have done as much himself, and by good desert in his mind; beauty is to be preferred "a before wealth or wisdom." *Atheneus, Deipnosophist, lib. 13. cap. 7, holds it not such indignity for the Trojans or Greeks to contend ten years, to spend so much labour, lose so many men's lives for Helen's sake, *for so fair a lady's sake,

"Ob talem uxorem cui præstantissima forma,
Nihil mortale referit."

That one woman was worth a kingdom, a hundred thousand other women, a world itself. Well might *Sterpsichores be blind for carping at so fair a creature, and a just punishment it was. The same testimony gives Homer of the old men of Troy, that were spectators of that single combat between Paris and Menelaus at the Scian gate, when Helen stood in presence; they said all, the war was worthily prolonged and undertaken *for her sake. The very gods themselves (as Homer and *Isocrates record) fought more for Helen than they did against the giants. When *Venus lost her son Cupid she made proclamation by Mercury, that he that could bring tidings of him should have seven kisses; a noble reward some say, and much better than so many golden talents, seven such kisses to many men were more precious than seven cities, or so many provinces. One such a kiss alone would recover a man if he were a dying, *Stygius Stygia sic te de Valle reducit, &c. Great Alexander married Roxane, a poor man's child, only for her person. *Twas well done of Alexander, and heroically done; I admire him for it. Orlando was mad for Angelica, and who d0th not condole his mishap? *Thisbe died for Pyramus,
Dido for Aeneas; who doth not weep, as (before his conversion) k Austin did in commiseration of her estate! she died for him; "methinks (as he said) I could die for her."

But this is not the matter in hand; what prerogative this beauty hath, of what power and sovereignty it is, and how far such persons that so much admire, and dote upon it, are to be justified; no man doubts of these matters; the question is, how and by what means beauty produceth this effect! By sight: the eye betrays the soul, and is both active and passive in this business; it wounds and is wounded, is an especial cause and instrument, both in the subject and in the object. "As tears, it begins in the eyes, descends to the breast;" it conveys these beauteous rays, as I have said, unto the heart. *Ut vidi ut perit.* m Mars videt hanc, visamque cupidit. Shechem saw Dinah the daughter of Leah, and defiled her, Gen. xxxiv. 3. Jacob, Rachel, xxix. 17, "for she was beautiful and fair." 2 David spied Bathsheba afar off, 2 Sam. xi. 2. The elders, Susanna, n as that Orthomessian Strato saw fair Aristocles the daughter of Theophranes, bathing herself at that Hercynia well in Lebadea, and were captivated in an instant. Viderunt oculi, rapuerunt pectora flammas; Ammon fell sick for Thamar's sake, 2 Sam. xiii. 2. The beauty of Esther was such, that she found favour not only in the sight of Ahasuerus, "but of all those that looked upon her." Gerson, Origen, and some others, contended that Christ himself was the fairest of the sons of men, and Joseph next unto him, speciosus præ filiis hominum, and they will have it literally taken; his very person was such, that he found grace and favour of all those that looked upon him. Joseph was so fair, that, as the ordinary gloss hath it, *filiæ ducurrent per murum, et ad fenestras,* they ran to the top of the walls and to the windows to gaze on him, as we do commonly to see some great personage go by: and so Matthew Paris describes Matilda the Empress going through Cullen. "P. Morales the Jesuit saith as much of the Virgin Mary. Antony no sooner saw Cleopatra, but, saith Appian, *lib. 1,* he was enamoured of her. *" Those at the first sight of Helen was so besotted, that he esteemed himself the happiest man in the world if he might enjoy her, and to that purpose kneeled down, and made his pathetical prayers unto the gods. *Charicles, by chance, espying that curious picture of smiling Venus naked in her temple, stood a great while gazing, as one amazed; at length, he brake into that mad passionate speech, "O fortunate god Mars, that wast bound in chains, and made ridiculous for her sake!" He could not contain himself, but kissed her picture, I know not how oft, and heartily desired to be so disgraced as Mars was. And what did he that his better had not done before him?"

*fatique aliquid de dis non tristibus optat*

Sic fiet turpis*

When Venus came first to heaven, her comeliness was such, that (as mine author saith) "all the gods came flocking about, and saluted her, each of them went to Jupiter, and desired he might have her to be his wife." When fair t Antiloquus came in presence, as a candle in the dark his beauty shined, all men's eyes (as Xenophon describes the manner of it) "were instantly fixed on him, and moved at the sight, insomuch that they could not conceal themselves, but in gesture or looks it was discerned and expressed." Those other senses, hearing touching, may much penetrate and affect, but none so much, none so forcible as sight. *Forma Briseis meditata cum armis movit Achilles,* Achilles was moved in the midst of a battle by fair Briseis, Ajax by Tecmena;
"A fair woman overcomes fire and sword."

"If sought under heaven so strongly doth allure
The sense of man and all his mind possess,
As beauty's loveliest bane, that doth procure
Great warriors erst their rigour to suppress,
And mighty hands forget their mailedness," Driven with the power of an heart-burning eye,
And lapt in flowers of a golden tree,
That can with melting pleasure mollify.
Their naked hearts intent to cruelt.

Citipho in ecousy confesseth, that he no sooner came in Lencip's presence, but that he did corde tremere, et oculis lascivius intueri; "he was wounded at the first sight, his heart panted, and he could not possibly turn his eyes from her. So doth Calysiris in Heliodorus, lib. 2. Isis Priest, a reverend old man, complain, who by chance at Memphis seeing that Thracian Rodophe, might not hold his eyes off her: "I will not conceal it, she overcame me with her presence, and quite assaulted my continency which I had kept unto mine old age; I resisted a long time my bodily eyes with the eyes of my understanding; at last I was conquered, and as in a tempest carried head-long." e Xenophiles, a philosopher, railed at women downright for many years together, scornd, hated, scoffed at them; coming at last into Daphnis a fair maid's company (as he condoles his mishap to his friend Demaritis), though free before, Intactus nullis ante cupidinibus, was far in love, and quite overcome upon a sudden Victus sum fideor a Daphnide, &c. I confess I am taken,

I could hold out no longer. Such another mishap, but worse, had Stratocles the physician, that bleared-eyed old man, muce plemus (so Prodromus describes him) he was a severe woman's-hater all his life, fedia et contumeliosus semper in feminas profatus, a bitter persecutor of the whole sex, humanas aspides et vipers appellebat, he forswore them all still, and mocked them wheresoever he came, in such vile terms, ut matrem et sorores odisses, that if thou hast heard him, thou wouldst have loathed thine own mother and sisters for his word's sake. Yet this old doting fool was taken at last with that celestial and divine look of Myrilla, the daughter of Anticles the gardener, that smirking wench, that he shaved off his bushy beard, painted his face, curled his hair, wore a laurel crown to cover his bald pate, and for her love besides was ready to run mad. For the very day that he married he was so furious, ut satis occasum minus expectare posset (a terrible, a monstrous long day), he could not stay till it was night, sed omnibus insalutatis in thalamum festinavis irruptit, the meat scarce out of his mouth, without any leave taking, he would needs go presently to bed. What young man, therefore, if old men be so intemperate, can secure himself? Who can say I will not be taken with a beautiful object? I can, I will contain. No, saith e Lucian of his mistress, she is so fair, that if thou dost but see her, she will stupify thee, kill thee straight, and, Medusa like, turn thee to a stone; thou canst not pull thine eyes from her, but as an adamant doth iron, she will carry thee bound headlong whither she will herself, infect thee like a basilisk. It holds both in men and women. Didò was
amazed at Æneas’ presence; Obstruuit primo aspectu Sidonia Dido; and as he feelingly verified out of his experience;

"h quam ego postquam vidi, non lit amavi ut sanii solent | Homines, sed eodem pacto ut insanii solent."

"I lورد her not as others soberly, But as a madman rageth, so did I."

So Museus of Leander, nusquam humen detorquet ab illa; and 1 Chaucer of Palamon,

He cast his eye upon Emilia,
And therewith he blent and cried ha, ha,
As though he had been stroke unto the heart.

If you desire to know more particularly what this beauty is, how it doth Influerre, how it doth fascinate (for, as all hold, love is a fascination), thus in brief. "This comeliness or beauty ariseth from the due proportion of the whole, or from each several part." For an exact delineation of which, I refer you to poets, historiographers, and those amorous writers, to Lucian’s Images, and Charidemus, Xenophon’s description of Panthea, Petronius Catalaecst, Heliodorus Charicia, Tacitus Lecippe, Longa Sophista’s Daphnis and Cloe, Theodorus Prodomus his Rhodanthes, Aristenetus and Philostrasus Epistles, Balthasar Castillo, 4 of auilco. Laurentius, cop. 10, de melan. Æneas Sylvia his Lucretia, and every poet almost, which have most accurately described a perfect beauty, an absolute feature, and that through every member, both in men and women. Each part must concur to the perfection of it; for as Seneca saith, Ep. 33. 4. Non est formosa mulier cujus erat luxlatur et brachiat, sed illa cujus simul universa facies admirationem singulis partibus dedit; “She is no fair woman, whose arm, thigh, &c. are commended, except the face and all the other parts be correspondent.” And the face especially gives a lustre to the rest: the face is it that commonly denominates a fair or foul: arx formae facies, the face is beauty’s tower; and though the other parts be deformed, yet a good face carries it (facies non uxor amator), that alone is most part respected, principally valued, deliciis suis ferox, and of itself able to captivate.

1Urt in Glyceras niter,
Urt grati vestron:as
Et vulnus nimium luxuriamaspicit."

"Glyceria’s too fair a face was it that set him on fire, too fine to be beheld.” When 1 Cherea saw the singing wench’s sweet looks, he was so taken, that he cried out, O factem pulchram, deleo omnes delinece ex animo mulieres, telet quotidianum harum formarum! “O fair face, I will never love any but her, look on any other hereafter but her; I am weary of these ordinary beauties, away with them.” The more he sees her, the worse he is,—uritque videndo as in a burning-glass, the sunbeams are re-collected to a centre, the rays of love are projected from her eyes. It was Æneas’s countenance ravished Queen Dido, Os humerosque Deo similis, he had an angéical face.

2 O sacros vacus Baccho vel Apolline dignae,
Quos vir, quos tu dixitenum nulla vidit!"

Although for the greater part this beauty be most eminent in the face, yet many times those other members yield a most pleasing grace, and are alone sufficient to enamour. A high brow like unto the bright heavens, cali pulcherrima plagas, Frons uti visum honor, frons uti ludit amor, white and smooth like the polished alabaster, a pair of cheeks of vermilion colour, in which love lodgeth; “Amor qui mollibus genis puellæ pernoctas: a coral lip, suaviorum delorum, in which Basia mille patent, basia mille latent, “A thousand appear, as many are concealed;” gratiarum sedes gratissima; a sweet-smelling flower,

b Plaut. Merc. 1In the Knight’s Tale.
sianna. Picosoomnes. 2Hor. Od. 18. lib. 1.
0 Sophocles, Antigone. 3 Ex debita totius proportione aptaque partium compe-
7 Ter. Eunuch. Act 2. scen. 3. 8 Æneas Catal.
from which bees may gather honey,  1

"Omnis ad dominum labra venite mea, Illa rosas spirat," &c.

A white and round neck, that via lactea, dimple in the chin, black eye-brows, Cupidinis arcus, sweet breath, white and even teeth, which some call the sale-piece, a fine soft round pap, gives an excellent grace, 2 Quale decus tunicis Pario de marnore mammis! 3 and make a pleasant valley lactenum sinuam, between two chalky hills, Sororiantes papillatas, et ad pruritum frigidos amatores solo spectu excitantur. Unde is, 4 Forma papillorum quam fuit apta premi! 5 Again Ureabant ocudos dura stantesse mamillos. A flaxen hair; golden hair was even in great account, for which Virgil commends Dido, Non-dum sustulerat flavum Proserpinina crinem, Et crines nodantur in aurum. Apollonius (Argonaut, lib. 4. Jasonis flava omnia incendi cor Medee) will have Jason’s golden hair to be the main cause of Medea’s dotage on him. Castor and Pollux were both yellow haired. Paris, Menelais, and most amorous young men, have been such in all ages, molles ac suaves, as Baptista Porta infers, 6 Physiog. lib. 2. lovely to behold. Homer so commends Helen, makes Patroclus and Achilles both yellow haired: Pulchricoma Venus, and Cupid himself was yellow haired, in aurum coruscante et crispatu capillo, like that neat picture of Narcissus in Callistratus; for so 7 Psyche spied him asleep, Briseis, Polixena, &c. flavicoma omnes, — and Hero the fair, Whom young Apollo coursed for her hair.

Leland commends Guithera, King Arthur’s wife, for a fair flaxen hair: so Paulus ÆEmilius sets out Clodeveus, that lovely king of France. 8 Synesius holds every effeminate fellow or adulterer is fair haired: and Apuleius adds that Venus herself, goddess of love, cannot delight, " 9 though she come accompanied with the graces, and all Cupid’s train to attend upon her, girt with her own girdle, and smell of cinnamon and balm, yet if she be bald or bad-haired, she cannot please her Vulcan." Which belike makes our Venetian ladies at this day to counterfeit yellow hair so much, great women to calamistrate and curl it up, vibrantes ad gratiam crines, et tot orbibus in capitatum flexos, to adorn their heads with spangles, pearls, and made-flowers; and all courtiers to effect a pleasing grace in this kind. In a word, 10 the hairs are Cupid’s nets, to catch all comers, a bushy wood, in which Cupid builds his nest, and under whose shadow all loves a thousand several ways sport themselves."

A little soft hand, pretty little mouth, small, fine, long fingers, Gratiae quo digitis —tis that which Apollo did admire in Daphne,— tundat digitosque manusque; a straight and slender body, a small foot, and well-proportioned leg, hath an excellent lustre, 11 Cui totum incumbit corpus uti fundamento edes. Clearchus vowed to his friend Amyander in 12 Aristeneutes, that the most attractive part in his mistress, to make him love and like her first, was her pretty leg and foot: a soft and white skin, &c. have their peculiar graces, 13 Nebula hand est mollior ac laetus cutis est, adipol papillam bellumam. Though in men these parts are not so much respected; a grim Saracen sometimes, — nudus membra Pyracmon, a martial hirsute face pleaseth best; a black man is a pearl in a fair woman’s eye, and is as acceptable as 14 lame Vulcan was to

---

1 Jo. Seconius bas. 19. 2 Lochean. 3 Arandus. Vallis amoenissima & dubius montibus composita niveis. 4 Ovid. 5 Pol. 77. 6 Dapelle libares amatores, &c. 7 When Cupid slept. 8 Cesareum habentem, nbi Psychique vidit, mollemque ex ambrosia cervicem inspexit, criner Crispae, purpureos genus cantidisque, &c. Apuleius. 9 In laudem calvi; splendida coma quiique adulter ad; alilict aures coma. 10 Venus ipsa non placerat comes nudata, capite spoliosa, satis ipsa Venus cum fuit virgo omni gratiasfactum chorux subita, et toto cupiditum populo concinitum, baltheo sua cineta, cinemae fragratos, et balzamum, sii calva procerscit, placere non potest Vulcano suo. 11 Arandus. Capilli retia Cupidinis, syva canthus, in qua nudustat Cupido, sub cullus umbra amores milia medos se exercet. 12 Theod. Prodromus Amor. lib. 1. 13 Epist. 72. Ubi pulchrum tibiam, bene compactum temenemque pedem vidi. 14 Plant. Cos. 15 Claudius optimus rem agit.
Love-Melancholy.

Venus; for he being a sweaty fuliginous blacksmith, was dearly beloved of her, when fair Apollo, nimble Mercury were rejected, and the rest of the sweet-faced gods forsaken. Many women (as Petronius 3 observes) sordibus calent (as many men are more moved with kitchen wenches, and a poor market maid, than all these illustrious court and city dames) will sooner dote upon a slave, a servant, a dirt dauber, a brontes, a cook, a player, if they see his naked legs or arms, thorsaque brachia, &c., like that huntsman Meleager in Philostratus, though he be all in rags, obscene and dirty, besmeared like a ruddlman, a gipsy, or a chimney-sweeper, than upon a noble gallant, Nireus, Ephtheon, Alcibiades, or those embroidered courtiers full of silk and gold. 4 Justine's wife, a citizen of Rome, fell in love with Pylades a player, and was ready to run mad for him, had not Galen himself helped her by chance. Faustina the empress doted on a fencer.

Not one of a thousand falls in love, but there is some peculiar part or other which pleaseth most, and inflames him above the rest. 5 A company of young philosophers on a time fell at variance, which part of a woman was most desirable and pleased best? some said the forehead, some the teeth, some the eyes, cheeks, lips, neck, chin, &c., the controversy was referred to Lais of Corinth to decide; but she, smiling, said, they were a company of fools; for suppose they had her where they wished, what would they 1 first seek? Yet this notwithstanding I do easily grant, neque quis vestrum negaverit opinor, all parts are attractive, but especially the eyes,

which are love's fowlers; 6 auxcipium amoris, the shoeing horns, "the hooks of love (as Arandus will), the guides, touchstone, judges, that in a moment cure mad men, and make sound folks mad, the watchmen of the body; what do they not?" How vex they not? All this is true, and (which Atheneus lib. 13. dip. cap. 5. and Tatius hold) they are the chief seats of love, and James Lernutius 7 hath facetiously expressed in an elegant ode of his,

"Amorem ocellis flammeolis hora
Vidi insidentem, credite posteri,
Fraterque circum habundens
Cum pharetra volatil et arca,"

"I saw Love sitting in my mistress' eyes
Sparkling, believe it all posterity,
And his attendants playing round about,
With how and arrows ready for to fly."

Scaliger calls the eyes, "Cupid's arrows; the tongue, the lightening of love; the paps, the tents." 8 Balthasar Castilio, the causes, the chariots, the lamps of love,

"Videt igne micantes,
Sideribus similis oculus"

"Eyes emulating stars in light,
Enticing gods at the first sight;"

Love's orators, Petronius.

"O blandos oculos, et facetos,
Et quam propria nota loquaces
Illeget Vens, et leves amores,
Atque ipsa in medio secat voluptas."

"O sweet and pretty speaking eyes,
Where Venus, love, and pleasure lies."

Love's torches, touch-box, naptha and matches. 9 Tullius.

"Tort Love when he will set the gods on fire,
Lighting the eyes as torches to desire."

Leander, at the first sight of Hero's eyes, was incensed, saith Musaeus.

"Similis in oculis radior crebocat fax amorum,
Et cor fervebat invicti impetum;
Pulchritudo enim celebris immaculata feminae,
Acutior hominibus est velut scuta.
Oculus verb vi est, ab ocelli cibico
Vulnus dilabitur, et in praecordia virtus manat."

"Love's torches, I'an to burn first in her eyes,
And set his heart on fire which never dies:
For the fair beauty of a virgin pure
Is sharper than a dart, and doth inure
A deeper wound, which placeth to the heart
By the eyes, and causeth such a cruel smart."

7 Galen.
8 Calcagninus Apologis. Quae pars maxime desiderabilis? Alias frontem, alias genas, &c.
9 Inter famam. 8 Hesiod. 11 Summ enim oculi, praeclarum pulchritudinis sodes lib. 6. 10 Amoris bani, ductos. Judices qui momento iusiores animum, iusiores insanere coget, occultatissimi corporis excavatores, quid non agent? Quid non cogunt?
11 Ocelli carm. 17. cajus et Lipsius op. qest. cap. 11. meminit ob elegantiam.
12 Cynthia prima suis musarum me cepit ocellis, contumacum nullis ante cupidissimis. Prop. 1. 1. 1. In catalogo.
13 De Supilado. lib. 4. 14 Pulchritudo ipsa per occulta radios in pectus anastis dimanans amans rei formam inculpata, Tatius. 1. 5.
A modern poet brings in Ammon complaining of Thamar,

*A*  "et me fascino

Occlit ille flans et formae lepos,
Ille uitor, flis graria, et versus decor,
Ille namblastes purpuram, et "rosas gena,
Ocquile vitiquea uaeo nodo e mnc.*

\footnotesize \"It was thy beauty, 'twas thy pleasing smile,
Thy grace and comeliness did me beguile;
Thy rose-like cheeks, and unto purple fair
Thy lovely eyes and golden knotted hair.\"\footnotesize

\footnotesize *"Propertius.

\footnotesize \"It was thy beauty, 'twas thy pleasing smile,
Thy grace and comeliness did me beguile;
Thy rose-like cheeks, and unto purple fair
Thy lovely eyes and golden knotted hair.\"

Philostus Lemniss cries out on his mistress's basilisk eyes, ardent\textquotesingle; faces, those two burning glasses, they had so inflamed his soul, that no water could quench it. "What a tyranny (saith he), what a penetration of bodies is this! thou drawest with violence, and swallowest me up, as Charybdis doth sailors with thy roaky eyes: he that falls into this gulf of love, can never get out." Let this be the corollary then, the strongest beams of beauty are still darted from the eyes.

\"Nam quis lumina tanta, tanta
Posset luminibus suis tueri,
Non statim trepiedansque, palpitansque,
Præ desiderii astuants aura?\"* &c

\"For who such eyes with his can see,
And not forthwith enamour'd be?\"

And as men catch dotterels by putting out a leg or an arm, with those mutual glances of the eyes they first inveigle one another. *Cynthia prima suis mise-

\textquotesingle;rum me cepit ocellis.\" Of all eyes (by the way) black are most amiable, enticing and fair, which the poet observes in commending of his mistress.

\"Spectandum nigris oculis, nigroque capillo,\" which Hesiod admires in his Alcmena,

\"Caes a vertice nigraeantibus oculis
Tale quiddam spirat ac ab aurea Venus.\"

\"From her black eyes, and from her golden face,
As if from Venus came a lovely grace.\"

and *Triton in his Milene—* nigras oculos formosam mihi. Homer useth that epithet of ox-eyed, in describing Juno, because a round black eye is the best, the son of beauty, and farthest from black the worse: which \textquotesingle;Polydore Virgil taxeth in our nation: \textquotesingle;Angii ut plurimum cessit oculis, we have grayeyes for the most part. Baptist Porta, Physiognom. lib. 3. puts gray colour upon children, they be childish eyes, dull and heavy. Many commend on the other side Spanish ladies, and those \textquotesingle;Greek dames at this day, for the blackness of their eyes, as Porta doth his Neapolitan young wives. Suetonius describes Julius Caesar to have been \textquotesingle;nigris eyegiicis oculis micantibus, of a black quick sparkling eye: and although Averroes in his Colliget will have such persons timorous, yet without question they are most amorous.

Now last of all, I will show you by what means beauty doth fascinate, bewitch, as some hold, and work upon the soul of a man by the eye. For certainly I am of the poet's mind, love doth bewitch and strangely change us.

\"Ludit amor sensus, oculos perstringit, et aurum
Libertatem animi, mira nos fascinare arte.
Credo alius diem subiens praecordia flamman
Concitat, et raptam bollit de cardine mentem.\"

\"Love mocks our senses, carb's our liberties
And doth bewitch us with his art and rings.
I think some devil gets into our entrails, [hinges.]
And knuckles coals, and heaves our souls from th\textquotesingle; Heliodorus, lib. 3. proves at large, \textquotesingle;that love is witchcraft, "it gets in at our eyes, pores, nostrils, engenders the same qualities and affections in us, as were in the party whence it came." The manner of the fascination, as Ficinus 10. cap. com. in Plat. declares it, is thus: "Mortal men are then especially bewitched, when as by often gazing one on the other, they direct sight to sight, join eye to eye, and so drink and suck in love between them: for the beginning of this disease is the eye. And therefore he that hath a clear eye, though he be otherwise deformed, by often looking upon him, will make one mad, and tie him fast to him by the eye." Leonard. Varius, lib. 1. cap. 2. de fusc-
cinit. tell us, that by this interview, "as the purer spirits are infected," the one eye pierceth through the other with his rays, which he sends forth, and many men have those excellent piercing eyes, that, which Suetonius relates of Augustus, their brightness is such, they compel their spectators to look off, and can no more endure them than the sunbeams. a Barradius, lib. 6. cap. 10. de Harmonia Evangel, reports as much of our Saviour Christ, and Peter Morales of the Virgin Mary, whom Nicopenhors describes likewise to have been yellow-haired, of a wheat colour, but of a most amiable and piercing eye. The rays, as some think, sent from the eyes, carry certain spiritual vapours with them, and so infect the other party, and that in a moment. I know, they that hold "that sight alone, make others bear-eyed; and it is more than manifest, that the vapour of the corrupt blood doth get in together with the rays, and so by the contagion the spectators' eyes are infected." Other arguments there are of a basilisk, that kills afar off by sight, as that Ephesian did of whom 1 Philostratus speaks, of so pernicious an eye, he poisoned all he looked steadily on: and that other argument, menstrua feminae, out of Aristotle's problems, morbose Capivaccius adds, and Septalius the commentator, that contamine a looking-glass with beholding it. "So the beams that come from the agent's heart, by the eyes, infect the spirits about the patients, inwardly wound, and thence the spirits infect the blood." To this effect she complained in Apuleius, "Thou art the cause of my grief, thy eyes piercing through mine eyes to mine inner parts, have set my bowels on fire, and therefore pity me that am now ready to die for thy sake." Ficinus illustrates this with a familiar example of that Marrhusian Phaedrus and Theban Lycias, "Lycias he stares on Phaedrus' face, and Phaedrus fastens the balls of his eyes upon Lycias, and with those sparkling rays sends out his spirits. The beams of Phaedrus' eyes are easily mingled with the beams of Lycias', and spirits are joined to spirits. This vapour begot in Phaedrus' heart, enters into Lycias' bowels: and that which is a greater wonder, Phaedrus' blood is in Lycias' heart, and thence come those ordinary love-speeches, my sweetheart Phaedrus, and mine own self, my dear bowels. And Phaedrus again to Lycias, O my light, my joy, my soul, my life. Phaedrus follows Lycias, because his heart would have his spirits, and Lycias follows Phaedrus, because he loves the seat of his spirits; both follow; but Lycias the earner of the two, the river hath more need of the fountain, than the fountain of the river; as iron is drawn to that which is touched with a loadstone, but draws not it again; so Lycias draws Phaedrus." But how comes it to pass then, that the blind man loves that never saw? We read in the Lives of the Fathers, a story of a child that was brought up in the wilderness, from his infancy, by an old hermit: now come to man's estate, he saw by chance two comely women wandering in the woods: he asked the old man what creatures they were, he told him fairies; after a while talking obiter, the hermit demanded of him, which was the pleasantest sight that ever he saw in his life? He readily replied, the two 9 fairies he spied in the wilderness. So that, without doubt, there is some secret loadstone in a beautiful woman, a

8 Spiritus puriores faciantur, oculius a se radios emitit, &c. Lib. 2. c. 35. colors trilitas referuntur, etiam haerebunt, corne claritas, acerbus. 
9 Mip. solo intut alios hudos facient, ut plastera cum radio vaporum corrupti sanguinis emanare, cujus contagione oculos spectantium infectur. 
10 Vita Apollon. 
11 Cujus intima alium infectus, sedem est in exemplum. 
12 Sicut radiis in corde peregrinantis missus, regimen proprium repetit, cor vulnerat, per oculos et sanguinem infect et spiritus, subtili quadam vit, Castil. lib. A. de aulico. 
13 Lib. 10. Causa omnis et orae omnis presenta doloris tute est; ist enim talis occit, per meos oculos ad intima delaper praeceolit, acerbarum mea medulla commovens incendium, ergo miserec tali causa perennit. 
14 Lycias in Phaedr. vitam inhait, Phaedrus in oculos Lycias sedtitit, sed deligit oculorum; cumque sedtitit, &c. Sequitur Phaedrus Lyciam, quia cor suum petit spiritum; Phaedrum Lyciam, quia spiritus propriam sedem postulat. Verum Lycias, &c. 
15 Daemonia inquit quae in hoc Eremon super occurrent.
magnetic power, a natural inbred affection, which moves our concupiscence, and as he sings,

"Methinks I have a mistress yet to come, And still I seek, I love, I know not whom."

'Tis true indeed of natural and chaste love, but not of this heroic passion, or rather brutish burning lust of which we treat; we speak of wandering, wanton, adulterous eyes, which, as he saith, "he still in wait as so many soldiers, and when they spy an innocent spectator fixed on them, shoot him through, and presently bewitch him: especially when they shall gaze and gloat, as wanton lovers do one upon another, and with a pleasant eye conflict participate each other's souls." Hence you may perceive how easily and how quickly we may be taken in love; since at the twinkling of an eye, Phaedrus' spirits may so perniciously infect Lyca's blood. "Neither is it any wonder, if we but consider how many other diseases closely, and as suddenly are caught by infection, plague, itch, scabs, flux," &c. The spirits taken in, will not let him rest that hath received them, but egg him on. "Idque petit corpus mens unde est saucia amore; and we may manifestly perceive a strange eduction of spirits, by such as bleed at nose after they be dead, at the presence of the murderer; but read more of this in Lemnius, lib. 2. de occult. nat. mir. cap. 7. Valleriols, lib. 2. observ. cap. 7. Valesius controv. Ficinus, Cardan, Labavius de cruentis cadaveribus, &c.

SUBSECT. III.—Artificial allurements of Love, Causes and Provocations to Lust; Gestures, Clothes, Dover, &c.

Natural beauty is a stronger loadstone of itself, as you have heard, a great temptation, and pierceth to the very heart; "forma veraeanda nocuit mihii visa pulvere;" but much more when those artificial enticements and provocations of gestures, clothes, jewels, pigments, exorinations, shall be annexed unto it; those other circumstances, opportunity of time and place shall concur, which of themselves alone were all sufficient, each one in particular to produce this effect. It is a question much controverted by some wise men, forma debat plus arti an natura? Whether natural or artificial objects be more powerful? but not decided: for my part I am of opinion, that though beauty itself be a great motive, and give an excellent lustre in sordibus, in beggary, as a jewel on a dunghill will shine and cast his rays, it cannot be suppressed, which Heliodorus feigns of Charicia, though she were in beggar's weeds: yet as it is used, artificial is of more force, and much to be preferred.  

John Lerius the Burgundian, cap. 8. hist. navigat. in Brazil is altogether on my side. For whereas (saith he) at our coming to Brazil, we found both men and women naked as they were born, without any covering, so much as of their privities, and could not be persuaded, by our Frenchmen that lived a year with them, to wear any, "Many will think that our so long commerce with naked women, must needs be a great provocation to lust;" but he concludes otherwise, that their nakedness did much less entice them to lasciviousness, than our women's clothes. "And I dare boldly affirm (saith he) that those glittering attires, counterfeit colours, head-gears, curled hairs, plaited coasts, cloaks, etc. manufactured commerce illed also frequens cum barbaris natis, ac presertim cum feminis, in libidinum provocatas, at minus multo noxiillaorum aestas quam nostrarum feminarum cultus. Ausim asseverare splendidum illum cultum, facios, &c.
gowns, costly stomachers, guarded and loose garments, and all those other accoutrements, wherewith our countrywomen counterfeit a beauty, and so curiously set out themselves, cause more inconvenience in this kind, than that barbarian homeliness, although they be no whit inferior unto them in beauty. I could evince the truth of this by many other arguments, but I appeal (saith he) to my companions at that present, which were all of the same mind." His countryman, Montaigne, in his essays, is of the same opinion, and so are many others; out of whose assertions thus much in brief we may conclude, that beauty is more beholden to art than nature, and stronger provocations proceed from outward ornaments, than such as nature hath provided. It is true that those fair sparkling eyes, white neck, coral lips, turgent paps, rose-coloured checks, &c., of themselves are potent entertainers; but when a complaisant, artificial, well-composed look, pleasing gesture, an affected carriage shall be added, it must needs be far more forcible than it was, when those curious needle-works, variety of colours, purest dyes, jewels, spangles, pendants, lawn, lace, tiffanies, fair and fine linen, embroideries, calamistrations, ornaments, &c. shall be added, they will make the veriest dowdy otherwise, a goddess, when nature shall be furthered by art. For it is not the eye of itself that enticeth to lust, but an "adulterous eye," as Peter terms it, 2. ii. 14. a wanton, a rolling, lascivious eye: a wandering eye, which Isaiah taxeth, iii. 16. Christ himself, and the Virgin Mary, had most beautiful eyes, as amiable eyes as any persons, saith 5 Baradus, that ever lived, but withal so modest, so chaste, that whosoever looked on them was freed from that passion of burning lust, if we may believe 6 Gerson and 7 Bonaventure: there was no such antidote against it, as the Virgin Mary's face; 'tis not the eye, but carriage of it, as they useth it, that causeth such effects. When Pallas, Juno, Venus, were to win Paris' favour for the golden apple, as it is elegantly described in that pleasant interlude of 8 Apuleius, Juno came with majesty upon the stage, Minerva, gravity, but Venus dulce subridens, constitit amanet; et gratissimae Gratiae deanum propitiantes, &c. came in smiling with her gracious graces and exquisite music, as if she had danced, et nonnumquam saltare solis oculis, and which was the main matter of all, she danced with her rolling eyes: they were the brokers and harbingers of her suite. So she makes her brags in a modern poet,

"d Soon could I make my brow to tyrannise,
And force the world to do homage to mine eyes."

The eye is a secret orator, the first bawd, Amoris porta, and with private looks, winking, glances and smiles, as so many dialogues they make up the match many times, and understand one another's meanings, before they come to speak a word. 9 Eurialus and Lucretia were so mutually enamoured by the eye, and prepared to give each other entertainment, before ever they had conference: he asked her good will with his eyes; she did suffragari, and gave consent with a pleasant look. That 10 Thracian Rodolph was so excellent at this dumb rhetoric, "that if she had but looked upon any one almost (saith Calsiris) she would have bewitched him, and he could not possibly escape it." For as 11 Salvianus observes, "the eyes are the windows of our souls, by which as so many channels, all dishonest concupiscence gets into our hearts." They reveal our thoughts, and as they say, from animi index, but the eye of the countenance, 12 Quid procacibus intuere ocellis? &c. I may say the same of smiling, gait, nakedness of parts, plausible gestures, &c. To laugh is the

footnotes:
5 Harmon. evangel. Lib. 6. cap. 6. 6 Serm. de concep. virg. Physiologismia virginis omnes movet ad castitatem. 7 Sent. d. 3. q. 3. mirum, virgo ferox-assim, sed a tumine concupisc. 8 Met. 10. 9 R-samond's complaint, by Sam. Daniel. 10 Esseus Silv. 11 Heliogil. 1. 2. Rodolph Thracis tam inevitabilii fascino instructis, tam exacte oculus isteve attaxati, ut si in illam quis incidisset, fieri non posset quis caperetur. 12 Lib. 3. de providentia: Animis fenestrae oculi, et omnis impura cupidityas per oculos lanquam canales introit. 13 Buchanan.
proper passion of a man, an ordinary thing to smile; but those counterfeit, composed, affected, artificial and reciprocal, those counter-smiles are the dumb shows and prognostics of greater matters, which they most part use, to inveigle and deceive; though many fond lovers again are so frequently mistaken, and led into a fool's paradise. For if they see but a fair maid laugh, or show a pleasant countenance, use some gracious words or gestures, they apply it all to themselves, as done in their favour; sure she loves them, she is willing, coming, &c.

"Stultus quando ridet quod pulchra puellula ridet, Tuum idum credit se quid amare velit;" "When a fool sees a fair maid for to smile, He thinks she loves him, 'tis but to beguile.

They make an art of it, as the poet telleth us, "I quis credat? discant etiam ridere puellula, Queritur atque ilia hac quoque parte decor." "Who can believe? to laugh maids make an art, And seek a pleasant grace to that same part.

And 'tis as great an enticement as any of the rest,------"k subrist molle puellula, Cor fidei rite saltis."

"She makes thine heart leap with a pleasing gentle smile of hers." "In Dulce redintem Lalagen amabo, Dulce loquentem,"

"I love Lalage as much for smiling, as for discoursing," delectata illa risit tam blandum, as he said in Petronius of his mistress, being well pleased, she gave so sweet a smile. It won Ismenius, as he " confesseth, Ismene subritis amatorium, Ismene smiled so lovingly the second time I saw her, that I could not choose but admire her: and Galla's sweet smile quite overcame Faustus the shepherd, Me aspiciens motis blandé subristis ocellis. All other gestures of the body will enforce as much. Daphnis in " Lucian was a poor tattered wench when I knew her first, said Corbile, panno et lacera, but now she is a stately piece indeed, hath her maids to attend her, brave attires, money in her purse, &c., and will you know how this came to pass? "by setting out herself after the best fashion, by her pleasant carriage, affability, sweet smiling upon all," &c. Many women dote upon a man for his compliment only, and good behaviour, they are won in an instant; too credulous to believe that every light wanton suitor, who sees or makes love to them, is instantly enamoured, he certainly dotes on, admires them, will surely marry, when as he means nothing less, 'tis his ordinary carriage in all such companies. So both delude each other by such outward shows; and amongst the rest, an upright, a comely grace, courtesies, gentle salutations, cringes, a mincing gait, a decent and an affected pace, are most powerful enticers, and which the prophet Isaiah, a courtier himself, and a great observer, objected to the daughters of Zion, iii. 16. "they minced as they went, and made a tinkling with their feet." To say the truth, what can they not effect by such means?

"Whilst nature decks them in their best attire, Of youth and beauty which the world admires." "q Urit——voce, manu, gressu, pectore, fronte, oculis." When art shall be annexed to beauty, when wiles and guiles shall concur; for to speak as it is, love is a kind of legerdemain; mere juggling, a fascination. When they show their fair hand, fine foot and leg withal, magnum sui desiderium nobis relinquuant, saith " Balthasar Castilio, lib. 1. they set us a longing, "and so when they pull up their petticoats and outward garments," as usually they do to show their fine stockings, and those of purest silken dye, gold fringes, laces, embroiderings (it shall go hard but when they go to church, or to any other place, all shall be seen), 'tis but a spring to catch woodcocks; and as "Chry-

1 Ovid de arte amandi. k Pers. 3. Sat. 2 Vel centum charites ridere putatur, Museos of Hero. m Hor. Od. 22. lib. 1. n Fastiibus, l. 5. o M. Tulli. p Tom. 4. merit. dailing. Examinando selp Cum inferiores eleganter, fallacem et bilarem se gerendo erga cunctos, ridendo suave ac blandum quid, &c. q Angennianus. r Vel si forte vestimentum de industria elevet, ut pehnum ac bibarium pars aliqua consplicatur, dnum tempum aut locum aliquam adierrit. "Sermon, quod non feminae viris habitent. Non loqueta es lingua, sed loqueta es grexur: non loqueta es voco, sed oculis loqueta es claris quum voco.\n
Mem. 2. Subs. 3.] Artificial Allurements. 523
Love-Melancholy.

sostom telleth them downright, "though they say nothing with their mouths, they speak in their gait, they speak with their eyes, they speak in the carriage of their bodies." And what shall we say otherwise of that baring of their necks, shoulders, naked breasts, arms and wrists, to what end are they but only to tempt men to lust!

There needs no more, as *Fredericus Matenesius* well observes, but a crier to go before them so dressed, to bid us look out, a trumpet to sound, or for defect a sow-gelder to blow,

or to what end and purpose? But to leave all these fantastical raptures, I'll prosecute my intended theme. Nakedness, as I have said, is an odious thing of itself, *remedium amoris*; yet it may be so used, in part, and at set times, that there can be no such enticement as it is;

David so espied Bathsheba, the elders Susanna: *Apelles* was enamoured with Campaspe, when he was to paint her naked. *Tiberius in Suet. cap. 42.* supped with *Sestius Gallus* an old lecher, *libidinoso sene, et lege ut nuda puellae administraret:* some say as much of *Nero,* and *Pontus Hater* of *Carolus Pugnax.* Amongst the Babylonians it was the custom of some lasciviousqueans to dance frisking in that fashion, saith *Curtius, lib. 5.* and *Sardus de mor. gent. lib. 1.* writes of others to that effect. The *Tuscans at some set banquets* had naked women to attend upon them, which *Leonicus de Varia hist. lib. 3. cap. 96.* confirms of such other bawdy nations. *Nero* would have filthy pictures still hanging in his chamber, which is too commonly used in our times, and *Heliogabalus, etiam corum agentes, ut ad venerem incitarent:* So things may be abused. A servant maid in *Aristaeus* spied her master and mistress through the key-hole *merrily disposed;* upon the sight she fell in love with her master. *Antonius Caracalla* observed his mother-in-law with her breasts amorously laid open, he was so much moved, that he said *Ah si licercet, O that I might;* which she by chance overhearing, replied as impudently, *Quoquid licet licet, thou mayest do what thou wilt: and upon that temptation he married her: this object was not in cause, not the thing itself, but that unseemly, indecent carriage of it.

When you have all done, *veniunt a veste sagitta,* the greatest provocations of lust are from our apparel; God makes, they say, man shapes, and there is no motive like unto it;

a filthy knife, a deformed quan, a crooked carcass, a maukin, a witch, a rotten post, a hedgestake may be so set out and tricked up, that it shall make as fair a show, as much enamour as the rest: many a silly fellow is so taken. *Primum luxuriae aucupium,* one calls it, the first snare of lust;

---

1. **Jovinianus** *Pontanus Balear.* *Lib. 1.* ad *Hermomemon.* "For why do you exhibit your 'milky way,' your uncovered bosoms? What else is it but to say plainly, Ask me, ask me, I will surrender; and what is that but love's call?"

2. *De luxa vestium discurs. 6.* *Nihil alium deest nisi precibus vos prececat:* &c.

3. If you can toll how, you may sing this to the tune a sow-gelder blows. *Auson. epic. 28.* "Neither draped Diana nor naked Venus please me. One hast so much voluptuousness about her, the other none."

4. *Hln. lib. 33.* *Epist. 7.* *Gampaspe nudam picturas Apelles, amores ejus influentius est.*

5. *In Tyrrehens convivis nuda mulieris ministrabant.* *Amatoria minacites visit, et in ipse complexibus anitit, &c. emersit inde capido in pectus virginis.*


7. *Sidney's Arcadia.*

8. "Which doth even beauty beautify, And most bewitch a wretched eye."
Artificial Alburnums.

Bosssus, ancupium animarum, lethalem arundinum, a fatal reed, the greatest bawd, forte lenocinum, sanguineis lachrymis deplorandum, saith & Matenesios, and with tears of blood to be deplored. Not that comeliness of clothes is therefore to be condemned, and those usual ornaments: there is a decency and decorum in this as well as in other things, fit to be used becoming several persons, and befitting their estates; he is only fantastical that is not in fashion, and like an old image in arras hangings, when a manner of attire is generally received; but when they are so new-fangled, so unassuming, so prodigious in their attires, beyond their means and fortunes, unbecoming their age, place, quality, what should we otherwise think of them? Why do they adorn themselves with so many colours of herbs, fictitious flowers, curious needleworks, quaint devices, sweet smelling odours, with those inseparable riches of precious stones, pearls, rubies, diamonds, emeralds, &c. Why do they crown themselves with gold and silver, use coronets and tires of several fashions, deck themselves with pendants, bracelets, ear-rings, chains, girdles, rings, pins, spangles, embroideries, shadows, rebatoes, versicolour ribands? Why do they make such glorious shows, with their scarfs, feathers, fans, masks, furs, faces, tiffanies, ruffs, falls, calls, cuffs, damasks, velvets, tinsels, cloth of gold, silver tissue? with colours of heavens, stars, planets: the strength of metals, stones, odours, flowers, birds, beasts, fishes, and whatsoever Africa, Asia, America, sea, land, art and industry of man can afford? Why do they use and covet such novelty of inventions; such new-fangled tires, and spend such inestimable sums on them? "To what end are those crisped, false hairs, painted faces," as the satirist observes, "such a composed gait, not a step awry?" Why are they like so many Sybarites, or Nero's Poppea, Ahasuerus' concubines, so costly, so long a dressing, as Cesar was marshalling his army, or a hawk in pruning? "Dum moluintur, dum comuntur, annus est: a gardener takes not so much delight or pains in his garden, a horseman to dress his horse, scour his armour, a mariner about his ship, a merchant his shop and shop-book, as they do about their faces, and all those other parts: such setting up with corks, straightening with whalebones; why is it, but as a daynet catcheth larks, to make young men stoop unto them? Philocarus, a gallant in Aristeneus, advised his friend Polienus to take heed of such enticements, "for it was the sweet sound and motion of his mistress's spangles and bracelets, the smell of her ointments, that captivated him first, Illa fuit mentis prima ruina mea. Quid sibi vult piscium turba, saith 4 Lucian, "to what use are pins, pots, glasses, ointments, irons, combs, bodkins, setting-sticks? why bestow they all their patrimonies and husbands' yearly revenues on such fooleries?" "Bina patrimonia singulis auribus; "why use they dragons, waelps, snakes, for chains, enamelled jewels on their necks, ears?" dignum potius foet ferro manus istas religari, atque utinam monilia verò dracones essent: they had more need some of them be tied in bedlam with iron chains, have a whip for a fan, and hair-cloths next to their skins, and instead of wrought smocks, have their cheeks stigmatised with a hot-iron; I say, some of our Jezebels, instead of painting, if they were well served. But why is all this labour, all this cost, preparation, riding, running, far-fetched, and dear bought stuff?

"Because forsooth they would be fair and fine, and where nature is defective, supply it by art." 7 Sanguine qua verno non rubet, arte rubet, (Ovid); and

to that purpose they anoint and paint their faces, to make Helen of Hecuba—parvamque exortamque puellam—Europen. To this intent they crush, in their feet and bodies, hurt and crucify themselves, sometimes in lax clothes, a hundred yards I think in a gown, a sleeve, and sometimes again so close, ut nudos exprimant artus.

Now long tails and trains, and then short, up, down, high, low, thick, thin, &c.; now little or no bands, then as big as cart wheels; now loose bodies, then great fardingales and close girt, &c. Why is this all this, but with the whore in the Proverbs, to intoxicate some or other? oculorum decipulam, one therefore calls it, et indicem libidinis, the trap of just, and sure token, as an ivy-bush is to a tavern.

"Quibd pulchros Glycere sumas de paxide valvas,
Quibd tibi composita nec sine lege come:
Quid niteat digitis adamas, Beryllus in aure,
Non num divina, sed soio quid cupias."

"Quid, in that you paint so much,
Your hair is so besetted in order such,
With rings on fingers, bracelets in your ear,
Although no prophet, tell I can, I fear."

To be admired, to be gazed on, to circumvent some novice; as many times they do, that instead of a lady he loves a cap and a feather, instead of a maid that should have verum colorem, corpus solidum et suci plenum (as Cherea describes his mistress in the 3 post), a painted face, a ruff-band, fair and fine linen, a coronet, a flower (1 Naturnaqe putat quod fuit artificialis), a wrought waistcoat, he dothes on, or a pied petticoat, a pure dye instead of a proper woman. (For generally, as with rich-furred conies, their cases are far better than their bodies, and like the bark of a cinnamon tree, which is dearer than the whole bulk, their outward accoutrements are far more precious than their inward endowments. 'Tis too commonly so.)

Why do they keep in so long together, a whole winter sometimes, and will not be seen but by torch or candlelight, and come abroad with all the preparation may be, when they have no business, but only to show themselves? Spectatum veniunt, veniunt spectentur ut ipsae.

"[For what is beauty if it be not seen, Or what is't to be seen, if not admired? And though admired, unless in love desired?"

why do they go with such counterfeit gait, which Philo Judaeus reprehends them for, and use (I say it again) such gestures, apish, ridiculous, indecent attires, sybaritical tricks, ficus genis, purpurissam venis, cerussam fronti, leges ocultis, &c., use those sweet perfumes, powders, and ointments in public, flock to hear sermons so frequent, is it for devotion? or rather, as Basil tells them, to meet their sweethearts, and see fashions; for as he saith, commonly they come so provided to that place, with such curious compliments, with such gestures and tires, as if they should go to a dancing-school, a stage-play, or bawdy-house, fitter than a church.

"When such a she-priest comes her mass to say, Twenty to one they all forget to pray."

"They make those holy temples, consecrated to godly martyrs and religious uses, the shops of impunity, dens of whores and thieves, and little better than brothel houses." When we shall see these things daily done, their husbands bankrupts, if not corruptions, their wives light housewives, daughters dishonest; and hear of such dissolute acts, as daily we do, how should we think otherwise? what is their end, but to deceive and inveigle young men? As

---

1. "A distorted dwarf, an Europa."
3. Christ, cap. 5. 
5. Sestus ill. 
7. Lib. de victimis. Fracto invenio, obtusius laccio, calaministra, eclemnistra, fungitu, recens luta, purpurissam, prechissque amista pallio, spinas ungenta, at juvenum animos circumveniant.
8. Orat. In ebris. Impudenter se macularent spectibus expeunt, insolenter comas jactantes, trahunt tunicas pedibus collidentes, oculaquae petulant, ven effuso, ad tripudium insaniantes, omne adolescentum intemperantiam in se provocantes, idque in tempis memoria martyrum consecratis; pompis civitatis officium fecerunt impudicis.
Artificial Allurements.

When Venus stood before Anchises (as Homer feigns in one of his hymns) in her costly robes, he was instantly taken,

"Cum ante iernn stare Jovis filla, videns eam Anchises, administrat foramin, et stipendias vestem; Etiam inim induta peplo, igneaus radiis splendidior; Habeant quoque torques fulgidus, textiles habiles, Temerum colom ambiebant maneilla palastra, Aurea, variegata." —

When Venus stood before Anchises first, he was amazed to see her in her tresses; For she had on a hood as red as fire, And glittering chain, and ivy-twisted spires, About her tender neck were costly brooches, And necklaces of gold, enamelled oisons.

So when Medea came in presence of Jason first, attended by her nymphs and ladies, as she is described by Apollonius,

"Cucetas verò ignis instar sequatur splendor, Tantum ab aureis flammis requiem babat Juba, Accedant in oculis duas deaiderium."

"A lustra followed them like flaming fire, And from their golden borders came such beams, Which in his eyes provoked a sweet desire."

Such a relation we have in Plutarch, when the queens came and offered themselves to Antony, "and with diverse presents, and enticing ornaments, Asiatic allurements with such wonderful joy and festivity, they did so inveigle the Romans, that no man could contain himself, all was turned to delight and pleasure. The women transformed themselves to Bacchus shapes, the children to Satyrs and Pans; but Antony himself was quite besotted with Cloopatra's sweet speeches, philters, beauty, pleasing tires: for when she sailed along the river Cydnus, with such incredible pomp in a gilded ship, herself dressed like Venus, her maids like the Graces, her pages like so many Cupids, Antony was amazed, and rapt beyond himself." Heliodorus, lib. 1. brings in Dameneta, stepmother to Chemon, "whom she saw in his scarfs, rings, robes, and coronet, quite mad for the love of him." It was Judith's pantofles that ravished the eyes of Holofernes. And Cardan is not ashamed to confess, that seeing his wife the first time in all white, he did admire and instantly love her. If these outward ornaments were not ofsuchforce, why doth Naomi give Ruth counsel how to please Boaz? and Judith, seeking to captivate Holofernes, washed and anointed herself with sweet ointments, dressed her hair, and put on costly attire. The riet in this kind hath been excessive in times past; no man almost came abroad, but curled and anointed,

"Et matutino sudans Crispibus amono, Quantum vix redoleat dux funera,"

"one spent as much as two funerals at once, and with perfumed hairs, et rosa canos odorati capillos Assyriaque nardo. What strange things doth Sueton. relate in this matter of Caligula's riot? And Pliny, lib. 12. & 13. Read more in Dioscorides, Ulmus, Arnoldus, Randoletius de fuso et decoratione; for it is now an art, as it was of old (so Seneca records), officinae sunt odoros coquen-
tium. Women are bad and men worse, no difference at all between their and our times; "good manners (as Seneca complains) are extinct with wanton
ness, in tracking up themselves men go beyond women, they wear harlots' colours, and do not walk, but jet and dance," hic mulier, hee vir, more like players, butterflies, baboons, apses, antics, than men. So ridiculous, moreover, we are in our attires, and for cost so excessive, that as Hierome said of old, Unu filio villarum insunt pretia, uno lino decies sestertia inscribatur; 'tis an ordinary thing to put a thousand oaks and a hundred oxen into a suit of apparel, to wear a whole manor on his back. What with shoe-ties, hangers, points, caps and feathers, scarfs, bands, cuffs, &c., in a short space their whole patrim-
monies are consumed. Helogabalus is taxed by Lampriadius, and admired in

\[^4\] Hymno Veneri dicato. \[^4\] Argonaut. 1. 4. \[^5\] Vitt. Anton. \[^6\] Regia domo ornatusque certates, sese ac foramin suum Antonio offereentes. \&c. Cum ornatu of incredibili poppa per Cydnun fluimium navirent amorata papiti, ipsa ad similiumdem Veneris ornata, pueifae Gratias similis, paucri Cupidinibus, Amoribus ad visum stipendias. \[^7\] Amicium Chalmydum et coronis quum primo asperit Chemonem, ex potestate puniit excidit. \[^8\] Lib. de Lib. crop. \[^9\] Truth, lib. 13. \[^10\] Cap. ix. 5. \[^11\] Juv. Sat. 6. \[^12\] Hor. Lib. 2. cap. 11. \[^13\] Cap. 27. \[^14\] Epist. 90. \[^15\] Quicquid est bon moris levitare extinguitur, et politura corporis muliebris municitias antecessimus, collora meretricios viri summiss, tenero et moll gradu suspendimus gradum, non suaulamas, nat. quest. lib. 7. cap. 31.
his age for wearing jewels in his shoes, a common thing in our times, not for emperors and princes, but almost for serving men and tailors; all the flowers, stars, constellations, gold and precious stones do condescend to set out their shoes. To repress the luxury of these Roman matrons, there was Lex Valeria and Oppia, and a Cato to contradict; but no laws will serve to repress the pride and insolency of our days, the prodigious riot in this kind. Lucullus’s wardrobe is put down by our ordinary citizens; and a cobbler’s wife in Venice, a courtesan in Florence, is no whit inferior to a queen, if our geographers say true: and why is all this? ‘Why do they glory in their jewels (as he said) or exult and triumph in the beauty of clothes? why is all this cost? to incite men the sooner to burning lust. They pretend decency and ornament; but let them take heed, that while they set out their bodies they do not damn their souls;’ ‘tis Bernard’s counsel: “shine in jewels, stink in conditions; have purple robes, and a torn conscience.” Let them take heed of Isaiah’s prophecy, that their slippers and attire be not taken from them, sweet balls, bracelets, ear-rings, veils, wimples, crying-pins, glasses, fine linen, hoods, lawns, and sweet savours, they become not bald, burned, and stink upon a sudden. And let maids beware, as Cyprian adviseth, “that while they wander too loosely abroad, they lose not their virginities:” and like Egyptian temples, seem fair without, but prove rotten carcases within. How much better were it for them to follow that good counsel of Tertullian? “To have their eyes painted with chastity, the Word of God inserted into their ears, Christ’s yoke tied to the hair, to subject themselves to their husbands. If they would do so, they should be comely enough, clothe themselves with the silk of sanctity, damask of devotion, purple of piety and chastity, and so painted, they shall have God himself to be a suitor;” “let whores and queans prunk up themselves, let them paint their faces with minion and ceruse, they are but fuels of lust, and signs of a corrupt soul: if ye be good, honest, virtuous, and religious matrons, let sobriety, modesty and chastity be your honour, and God himself your love and desire.” Mulier recte olet, ubi nihil olet, then a woman smells best, when she hath no perfume at all; no crown, chain, or jewel (Guivarra addes) is such an ornament to a virgin, or virtuous woman, quam virgini pudor, as chastity is: more credit in a wise man’s eye and judgment they get by their plainness, and seem fairer than they that are set out with baubles, as a butcher’s meat is with pricks, puffed up, and adorned like so many jays with variety of colours. It is reported of Cornelia, that virtuous Roman lady, great Scipio’s daughter, Titus Sempronius’ wife and the mother of the Gracchi, that being by chance in company with a companion, a strange gentlewoman (some light housewife belike, that was dressed like a May lady, and, as most of our gentlewomen are, “was more solicitous of her head-tire than of her health, that spent her time between a comb and a glass, and had rather be fair than honest (as Cato said), and have the commonwealth turned topsy-turvy than her tires marred;” and she did nought but brag of her fine robes and jewels, and provoked the Roman matron to show hers: Cornelia kept her in talk till her children came from school, and these, said she, are my jewels, and so deluded and put off a proud, vain, fantastical, housewife. How much

---

0 Lib. IV. sec. 4. Quod existas in pulchritudine panni? Quod gloriart in gemmis ut faciules invites ad libidinum incendium? Nol. boscos de innominis mulier, culta. 1 Epist. 113. fulgent moscilus, moribus sordent, purpurata vestis, conscientia panis. 2. 3. 17. S De virginali habita; dum ornari cultus, dum evagari virgines volunt, desinit esse virgines. Clemens Alexandrinus, Lib. de pulchr. animae, lib. 2. Lib. 2. de cultu mulierum, oculos depelit, veracundia. Inferentes in aurem sermoneum dei, annocentes crinibus jugum, Christi, caput maritis subjiciens, sic facile et saepe etiam ornato: vestas vos sanam probitatis, byssina sanctitatis, purpura pudicitiae; taliter pigmentata deum habeatis amoretorem. 3. Sus ha distract Romane lascivias; purpuratae, ac cerussa em peruginum, fomenta libidinum, et corrupte mentis induca; vestas vos abrumantam das ast, pardinio a mensum studeat, Rossius Flavus. 4. Solicitorum de capitis sui decore quam de salute, inter pectus et spectum diem perdunt; consociatores esse malum quam honestiores, et rempub. minus turbari curant quam comam. Seneca.
Artificial Allurements.

better were it for our matrons to do as she did, to go civilly and decently, *Honeste mulieris instar qua utitur auro pro ea quad est, ut ea tantum quibus opus est, to use gold as it is gold, and for that use it serves, and when they need it, than to consume it in riot, beggar their husbands, prostitute themselves, inveige others, and peradventure damn their own souls? How much more would it be to their honour and credit? Thus doing, as Hierom said of Blesilla, "Furius did not so triumph over the Gauls, Papyrus of the Samnites, Scipio of Numantia, as she did by her temperance;" pullum semper vestae, &c., they should insult and domineer over lust, folly, vain-glory, all such inordinate, furious and unruly passions.

But I am over tedious, I confess, and whilst I stand gaping after fine clothes, there is another great allurement (in the world's eye at least), which had like to have stolen all out of sight, and that is money, venient ad dote sagittae, money makes the match; *Mand argutor Blenstow: 'tis like sauce to their meat, cum carne condimentum, a good dowry with a wife. Many men if they do hear but of a great portion, a rich heir, are more mad than if they had all the beauteous ornaments, and those good parts art and nature can afford, they "care not for honesty, bringing up, birth, beauty, person, but for money."

If she be rich, then she is fair, fine, absolute and perfect, then they burn like fire, they love her dearly, like pig and pie, and are ready to hang themselves if they may not have her. Nothing so familiar in these days, as for a young man to marry an old wife, as they say, for a piece of gold; asinum auro omustum; and though she be an old crone, and have never a tooth in her head, neither good conditions, nor a good face, a natural foot, but only rich, she shall have twenty young gallants to be suitors in an instant. As she said in Sue- tonius, non me, sed mea ambitum, 'tis not for her sake, but for her lands or money; and an excellent match it were (as he added) if she were away. So on the other side, many a young lovely maid will cast away herself upon an old, doting, decrepit dizzard,

*Canes et equos (O Cymre) quaerimus
Nobiles, et a bona progenie;
Malam vero exorem, maleque patris filiam
Ducere non est vir bonus
Modo ei magnam dotem afferat."

"Bis puere effete quamvis balbutiat ore,
Prima legit rara tam culta resosta puella,"

that is rheumatic and gouty, hath some twenty diseases, perhaps but one eye, one leg, never a nose, no hair on his head, wit in his brains, nor honesty, if he have land or money, she will have him before all other suitors, *Dummodo sit dives barbarus ille placet. "If he be rich, he is the man," a fine man, and a proper man, she will go to Jacaktras or Tidore with him; Galesinus de monte aurae. Sir Giles Goosecap, Sir Amorous La- Fool, shall have her. And as Phileas in *Aristænetus told Emmusus, absque argento omnia vana, hang him that hath no money, "tis to no purpose to talk of marriage without means," *trouble me not with such motions; let others do as they will, "I'll be sure to have one shall maintain me fine and brave." Most are of her mind, *De moribus ultima fiat questio, for his conditions, she shall inquire after them another time, or when all is done, the match made, and everybody gone home. *Lucian's Lycia was a proper young maid, and had many fine gentlemen to her suitors; Ethedos, a senator's son, Melissas, a merchant, &c.; but she forsook them all for one Passius, a base, birsute, bald-

*Lucian.

* Non sic Furius de Gallis, non Papyrus de Samitibus, Scipio de Numantia triumphavit, ad illi. sic vinceendo in hae parte.

* Anacreon, 4. solum intumueam aurum.

* Asses tiemum si vis virem.


* Qui caret argento, frustra utitur argumento.
pated knife; but why was it? “His father lately died and left him sole heir of his goods and lands.” This is not amongst your dust works alone, poor snakes that will prostitute their souls for money, but with this bait you may catch our most potent, puissant, and illustrious princes. That proud upstart domineering Bishop of Ely, in the time of Richard the First, viceroy in his absence, as Nubrigensis relates it, to fortify himself, and maintain his greatness, propinquarum suarum connubii, plurimos sibi potentes et nobles devinere curravit, married his poor kinswomen (which came forth of Normandy by doves) to the chiefest nobles of the land, and they were glad to accept of such matches, fair or foul, for themselves, their sons, nephews, &c. Et quis tam praelaram affinitatem sub spe magne promotionis non optaret? Who would not have done as much for money and preferment? as mine author adds. Vortiger, King of Britain, married Rowena the daughter of Hengist the Saxon prince, his mortal enemy; but wherefore? she had Kent for her dowry, Íagello, the great Duke of Lithuania, 1386, was mightily enamoured on Hedenga, insomuch that he turned Christian from a Pagan, and was baptized himself by the name of Uladislaus, and all his subjects for her sake: but why was it? she was daughter and heir of Poland, and his desire was to have both kingdoms incorporated into one. Charles the Great was an earnest suitor to Irene the Empress, but, saith Zonarus, ob regnum, to annex the empire of the East to that of the West. Yet what is the event of all such matches, that are so made for money, goods, by deceit, or for burning lust, quos jata libido conjuxit, what follows? they are almost mad at first, but ‘tis a mere flash; as chaff and straw soon fired, burn vehemently for a while, yet out in a moment; so are all such matches made by those allurements of burning lust; where there is no respect of honesty, parentage, virtue, religion, education, and the like, they are extinguished in an instant, and instead of love comes hate; for joy, repentance and desperation itself. Franciscurus Barbarus in his first book de re uxorii, c. 5, hath a story of one Philip of Padua that fell in love with a common whore, and was now ready to run mad for her; his father having no more sons let him enjoy her; “but after a few days, the young man began to loath, could not so much as endure the sight of her, and from one madness fell into another.” Such event commonly have all these lovers; and he that so marries, or for such respects, let them look for no better success than Menelans had with Helen, Vulcan with Venus, Theseus with Phaedra, Minos with Pasiphaë, and Claudius with Messalina; shame, sorrow, misery, melancholy, discontent.

SUBSECT. IV.—Importunity and Opportunity of Time, Place, Conference, Discourse, Singing, Dancing, Music, Amorous Tales, Objects, Kissing, Familiarity, Tokens, Presents, Bribes, Promises, Protestations, Tears, &c.

All these allurements hitherto are afar off, and at a distance; I will come nearer to those other degrees of love, which are conference, kissing, dalliance, discourse, singing, dancing, amorous tales, objects, presents, &c., which as so many Syrens steal away the hearts of men and women. For, as Tacitus observes, l. 2, “It is no sufficient trial of a maid’s affection by her eyes alone, but you must say something that shall be more available, and use such other forgivable engines; therefore take her by the hand, wring her fingers
Artificial Allurements.

hard, and sigh withal; if she accept this in good part, and seem not to be much averse, then call her mistress, take her about the neck and kiss her," &c. But this cannot be done except they first get opportunity of living, or coming together, ingress, egress, and regress; letters and commendations may do much, outward gestures and actions: but when they come to live near one another, in the same street, village, or together in a house, love is kindled on a sudden. Many a serving-man by reason of this opportunity and importunity inveigles his master's daughter, many a gallant loves a dowdy, many a gentleman runs upon his wife's maids; many ladies dote upon their men, as the queen in Ariosto did upon the dwarf, many matches are so made in haste, and they are compelled as it were by necessity so to love, which had they been free, come in company of others, seen that variety which many places afford, or compared them to a third, would never have looked one upon another. Or had not that opportunity of discourse and familiarity been offered, they would have loathed and contemned those whom, for want of better choice and other objects, they are fatally driven on, and by reason of their hot blood, idle life, full diet, &c., are forced to dote upon them that come next. And many times which at the first sight cannot fancy or affect each other, but are harsh and ready to disagree, offended with each other's carriage, like Benedict and Beatrice in the 4 comedy, and in whom they find many faults, by this living together in a house, conference, kissing, colling, and such like allurements, begin at last to dote insensibly one upon another.

It was the greatest motive that Potiphar's wife had to dote upon Joseph, and 7 Clitophon upon Leucippe his uncle's daughter, because the plague being at Bizean, it was his fortune for a time to sojourn with her, to sit next her at the table, as he tells the tale himself in Tatus, lib. 2. (which, though it be but a fiction, is grounded upon good observation, and doth well express the passions of lovers,) he had opportunity to take her by the hand, and after a while to kiss, and handle her paps, &c., 8 which made him almost mad. Ismenius the orator makes the like confession in Eustathius, lib. 1, when he came first to Sesthene's house, and sat at table with Cratistes his friend, Ismene, Sosthene's daughter, waiting on them "with her breasts open, arms half bare," Nuda pedem, discincta simum, spoliata lacertos: after the Greek fashion in those times,— 9 nudos media plus parte lacertos, as Daphne was when she fled from Phœbus (which moved him much), was ever ready to give attendance on him, to fill him drink, her eyes were never off him, rogabundi oculi, those speaking eye; courting eyes, enchanting eyes; but she was still smiling on him, and when they were risen, that she had got a little opportunity, "she came and drank to him, and withal trod upon his toes, and would come and go, and when she could not speak for the company, she would wring his hand," and blush when she met him: and by this means first she overcame him (bibens amorem hauriebam simul), she would kiss the cup and drink to him, and smile, "and drink where he drank on that side of the cup," by which mutual compressions, kisses, wringing of hands, treading of feet, &c. Ipsam mili videbam sorbillare virginem, I sipped and sipped so long, till at length I was drunk in love upon a sudden. Philocharimus, in 7 Aristænetus, met a fair maid by chance, a mere stranger to him, he looked back at her, she looked back at him again, and smiled withal.

" 8 Ille dies lethi primus, primusque maledum
Causa fuit."
It was the sole cause of his farther acquaintance, and love that undid him.

"O multis tutum crederis blanditas.

This opportunity of time and place, with their circumstances, are so forcible motives, that it is impossible almost for two young folks equal in years to live together, and not be in love, especially in great houses, princes' courts, where they are idle in summa gradu, fare well, live at ease, and cannot tell otherwise how to spend their time.  "Hic Hippolitum ponit, Priapus erit.  Achilles was sent by his mother Thetis to the island of Scyros in the Ægean sea (where Lycomedes then reigned) in his nonage to be brought up; to avoid that hard destiny of the oracle (he should be slain at the siege of Troy): and for that cause was nurtured in Genesee, amongst the king's children in a woman's habit: but see the event: he compressed Deidamia, the king's fair daughter, and had a fine son, called Pyrrhus, by her.

Peter Abelard the philosopher, as he tells the tale himself, being set by Fulbertus her uncle to teach Héloïse his lovely niece, and to that purpose sojourned in his house, and had committed suum summa sententiae, and he read more of love than any other lecture; such pretty feats can opportunity plea; primam domo conjuncti, unde animis, &c. But when as I say, nox, vinum, et adolescencia, youth, wine, and night, shall concur, nox amoris et quietis consocia, 'tis a wonder they be not all plunged over head and ears in love; for youth is benigna in amorem, et prona materies, a very combustible matter, naptia itself, the fuel of love's fire, and most apt to kindle it. If there be seven servants in an ordinary house, you shall have three couple in some good liking at least, and amongst idle persons how should it be otherwise? "Living at Rome, saith Arethusa's Lucretia, in the flower of my fortunes, rich, fair, young, and so well brought up, my conversation, age, beauty, fortune, made all the world admire and love me." Night alone, that one occasion, is enough to set all on fire, and they are so cunning in great houses, that they make their best advantage of it: Many a gentlewoman, that is guilty to herself of her imperfections, paintings, impositions, will not willingly be seen by day, but as Castilno noteth, in the night, Diem ut glis odit, tædarum lucem super omnia mavult, she hateth the day like a dormouse, and above all things loves torches and candlelight, and if she must come abroad in the day, she covets, as in a mercer's shop, a very obfuscate and obscure sight. And good reason she hath for it: Nocte latent mendae, and many an amorous gull is fetched over by that means. Gomesius lib. 3. de sole gen. c. 22. gives instance in a Florentine gentleman, that was so deceived with a wife, she was so radiantely set out with rings and jewels, lawns, scarfs, laces, gold, spangles, and gaudy devices, that the young man took her to be a goddess (for he never saw her but by torchlight); but after the wedding solemnities, when as he viewed her the next morning without her tires, and in a clear day, she was so deformed, a lean, yellow, shrivelled, &c., such a beastly creature in his eyes, that he could not endure to look upon her. Such matches are frequently made in Italy, where they have no other opportunity to woo but when they go to church, or, as in Turkey, see them at a distance, they must interchange few or no words, till such time they come to be married, and then as Sardus, lib. 1. cap. 3. de orb. gent. and Bohemus relate of those old Lacedemonians, "the bride is brought into the chamber, with her hair girt about her, the bridegroom comes in and unties the knot, and must not see her at all by daylight till such time as he is made a father by her." In those

8 Propertius.  b Ovid. amor. lib. 2. cl. 2. "Place modesty itself in such a situation, desire will intrude."  o Homer virens flores formosum, et euleleus manum, atque, forma, gravia conversationis, maxima me fecerunt expetitius, &c.  d De Anul. I. 1. fol. 69.  u At adulterinis mercatorum pani.  f Flaches, epist.  g Parum nymphas in cubiculum adducta capillos ad certum referaban; sponsos inde ad eam ingressus cingulum solverebat, nec priori sponsam aspexit interdum quam ex illa factus erat puer.
hotter countries these are ordinary practices at this day; but in our northern parts, amongst Germans, Danes, French, and Britons, the continent of Scandia and the rest, we assume more liberty in such cases; we allow them, as Bohemus saith, to kiss coming and going, et modo abiet lascivia, in cancione diverso, to talk merrily, sport, play, sing, and dance, so that it be modestly done, go to the alehouse and tavern together. And 'tis not amiss, though Chrysostom, Cyprian, Hierome, and some other of the fathers speak bitterly against it; but that is the abuse which is commonly seen at some drunken matches, dissolve meetings, or great unruly feasts. "A young, pittivanted, trim-bearded fellow" saith Hierome, "will come with a company of compliments, and hold you up by the arm as you go, and wringing your fingers, will so be enticed, or entice: one drinks to you, another embraces, a third kisseth, and all this while the fiddler plays or sings a lascivious song; a fourth singles you out to dance, one speaks by beck and signs, and that which he dares not say, signifies by passions; amongst so many and so great provocations of pleasure, lust conquers the most hard and crabbed minds, and scarce can a man live honest amongst feastings, and sports, or at such great meetings." For as he goes on, "she walks along, and with the ruffling of her clothes, makes men look at her, her shoes creak, her paps tied up, her waist pulled in to make her look small, she is straight girded, her hair hangs loose about her ears, her upper garment sometimes falls, and sometimes tarries to show her naked shoulders, and as if she would not be seen, she covers that in all haste, which voluntarily she showed. "And not at feasts, plays, pageants, and such assemblies, but as Chrysostom objects, these tricks are put in practice "at service time in churches, and at the communion itself." If such dumb shows, signs, and more obscure significations of love can so move, what shall they do that have full liberty to sing, dance, kiss, coll, to use all manner of discourse and dalliance! What shall he do that is beleaguered on all sides?

How shall he contain? The very tone of some of their voices, a pretty pleasing speech, an affected tone they use, is able of itself to captivate a young man; but when a good wit shall concur, art and eloquence, fascinating speech, pleasant discourse, sweet gestures, the Syrens themselves cannot so enchant. P. Jovius commends his Italian countrywomen, to have an excellent faculty in this kind, above all other nations, and amongst them the Florentine ladies: some prefer Roman and Venetian courtesans, they have such pleasing tongues, and such elegancy of speech, that they are able to overcome a saint, Pro facie multis vox sua lena fuit. "Tant â gratia vocis famam conciliabat, saith Petronius "in his fragment of pure impurities, I mean his Satyricon, tamen dulcis sonus permelcebat âera, ut putares inter auras cantare Syrenum concordiam; she sang so sweetly that she charmed the air, and thou wouldst have thought thou hadst heard a concert of Syrens. "O good God, when Lais speaks, how sweet it is!" Philocolus exclaims in Aristenetus, to hear a fair young gentlewoman play upon the virginals, lute, violin, and sing to it, which as Gellius observes, lib. I. cap. 11. are lascivientium delicet, the chief delight of lovers.
must needs be a great enticement. Parthenis was so taken. * Mi vox ista avida haurit ab aure animam; O sister Harpedon (she laments) I am undone, * how sweetly he sings, I'll speak a bold word, he is the prosterest man that ever I saw in my life: O how sweetly he sings, I die for his sake, O that he would love me again!" If thou didst but hear her sing, saith * Lucian, "thou wouldst forget father and mother, forsake all thy friends, and follow her." Helena is highly commended by * Theocritus the poet for her sweet voice and music; none could play so well as she, and Daphnis in the same Edynion,

"Quam tibi es dulce est, et vox amabilis, * Daphni, "How sweet a voice hath Daphnis, how lovely a voice! Jacundius est audire a cantuens, quia mel lingere!" * How sweet a face hath Daphnis, how lovely a voice! Honey itself is not so pleasant in my own.""

To this effect the lovely virgin with a melodious air upon her golden wired harp or lute, I know not well whether, played and sang, and that transported him beyond himself, "and that ravished his heart." It was Jason's discourse as much as his beauty, or any other of his good parts, which delighted Medea so much.

---

"* Delectabatur enim Animum simul forma dulcisquae verba.*"

It was Cleopatra's sweet voice and pleasant speech which inveigled Antony, above the rest of her entertainments. * Verba ligant hominem, ut taurorum cornua funes, "as bulls' horns are bound with ropes, so are men's hearts with pleasant words." * Her words burn as fire," Eccles. ix. 10. Roxalana bewitched Solyma the Magnificent, and Shore's wife by this engine overcame Edward the Fourth, * Omnibus una omnes surripuit Veneres. The wife of Bath in Chaucer confesseth all this out of her experience.

Some folk desire us for riches,
Some for shape, some for fairness,
Some for that she can sing or dance,
Some for gentleness, or for dulness.

* Peter Aretine's Lucretia telleth as much and more of herself, "I counterfeited honesty, as if I had been virgo virginitissima, more than a vestal virgin, I looked like a wife, I was so demure and chaste, I did add such gestures, tunes, speeches, signs and motions upon all occasions, that my spectators and auditors were stupefied, enchanted, fastened all to their places, like so many stocks and stones." Many silly gentlewomen are fetchet over in like sort, by a company of gulls and swaggering companions, that frequently belibe noblemen's favours, rhyming Coribantiasmi, Thrasonean Rhadomantes or Bombachomethes, that have nothing in them but a few player's ends and compliments, vain bragadocians, impudent intruders, that can discourse at table of knights and lords' combats, like

---

* "The sweet sound of his voice reanimates my soul through my comely ears."
Lucian's Leontiscus, of other men's travels, brave adventures, and such common trivial news, ride, dance, sing old ballad tunes, and wear their clothes in fashion, with a good grace; a fine sweet gentleman, a proper man, who could not love him! She will have him though all her friends say no, though she beg with him. Some again are incensed by reading amorous toys, Anadis de Gaal, Palmerin de Oliva, the Knight of the Sun, &c., or hearing such tales of lovers, descriptions of their persons, lascivious discourses, such as Astyanassa, Helen's waiting-woman, by the report of Suidas, writ of old, de varii concubitatis modis, and after her Philenis and Elephantine; or those light tracts of Aristides Milesius (mentioned by Plutarch) and found by the Persians in Crassus' army amongst the spoils, Arctine's dialogues, with ditties, love-songs, &c., must needs set them on fire, with such like pictures, as those of Arctine, or wanton objects of what kind soever; "no stronger engine than to hear or read of love toys, fables and discourses ("one saith), and many by this means are quite mad." At Abdera in Thrace (Andromeda one of Euripides' tragedies being played) the spectators were so much moved with the object, and those pathethical love speeches of Perseus, amongst the rest, "O Cupid, Prince of Gods and men," &c., that every man almost a good while after spake pure iambics, and raved still on Perseus' speech, "O Cupid, Prince of Gods and men." As carmen, boys and apprentices, when a new song is published with us, go singing that new tune still in the streets, they continually acted that tragical part of Perseus, and in every man's mouth was "O Cupid," in every street, "O Cupid," in every house almost, "O Cupid Prince of Gods and men," pronouncing still like stage-players, "O Cupid," they were so possessed all with that rapture, and thought of that pathethical love speech, they could not a long time after forget, or drive it out of their minds, but "O Cupid, Prince of Gods and men," was ever in their mouths. This belike made Aristotle, Polit. lib. 7. cap. 18. forbid young men to see comedies, or to hear amorous tales.

"b) Hece igitur juvenes nequam facileque puella
Insipiant"

"let not young folks meddle at all with such matters." And this made the Romans, as Vitruvius relates, put Venus' temple in the suburbs, extra murum, ne adolescentes veneri insuescant, to avoid all occasions and objects. For what will not such an object do? Ismenius, as he walked in Sosthene's garden, being now in love, when he saw so many lascivious pictures, Thetis' marriage, and I know not what, was almost beside himself. And to say truth, with a lascivious object who is not moved, to see others daily, kiss, dance? And much more when he shall come to be an actor himself.

To kiss and be kissed, which, amongst other lascivious provocations, is as a burden in a song, and a most forcible battery, as infectious, Xenophon thinks, as the poison of a spider; a great allurement, a fire itself, proemium aut anticonium, the prologue of burning lust (as Apuleius adds), lust itself, Venus quintà parte sui nectaris imbibit, a strong assault, that conquers captains, and those all commanding forces ("Domasque Ferro sed domarim osculo"). Arctine's Lucretia, when she would in kindness overcome a suitor of hers, and have her desire of him, "took him about the neck, and kissed him again and again," and to that, which she could not otherwise effect, she made him so speedily and willingly conducive. And 'tis a continual assault,—"b hoc

"c) De luxuria et deliciae compositi.
"d) amatrices solemne velhementis cuplicitatis incitata est, Tatius, 1. 1.
"e) De luxuria et deliciae compositi.
"g) Martial. 1. 4.
"h) Lib. 1. e. 7.
"j) Oculum at pharyngium inficte.
"k) Hor. "Venus baht imblen with the quintessence of her nectar.
"l) Heinsius. "Ye may conquer with the sword, but you are conquered by a kiss." 
"m) Appelle me lill proximus et espis deoscollata saugam peto
"n) Petronius cahleat.
Love-Melancholy.

non deficit incipitque semper, always fresh, and ready to begin as at first, bassium nullo fine terminatur, sed semper recens est, and hath a fiery touch with it.

"Jam tuo mellifluo membra calore fluent."

Especially when they shall be lasciviously given, as he feelingly said, \( \textit{et me prassulium deoscelata Fotis, Catenatis lacertis} \), \( \textit{Oborto valgiter labello.} \)

The soul and all is moved; \( \textit{Jam pluribus osculis labra crepitabant, animam quoque mixturam facientes, inter mutuos complexus animas anhelantes,} \)

"They breathe out their souls and spirits together with their kisses," saith Balthasar Castilo, "change hearts and spirits, and mingle affections as they do kisses, and it is rather a connection of the mind than of the body." And although these kisses be delightful and pleasant, Ambrosial kisses, \( \textit{Suaviolium dulci dulcium Ambrosiâ, such as Ganymede gave Jupiter, Nectare suavis,} \) sweeter than \( \textit{nectar, balsam, honey, Oscula merum amorem stillantia,} \) love-dropping kisses; for

"The galliflower, the rose is not so sweet. As sugared kisses be when lovers meet!"

Yet they leave an irksome impression, like that of love or gall,

"Et quæ me perdant, oscula mille dabat, they are the bane of these miserable lovers. There be honest kisses, I deny not, osculum charitatis, friendly kisses, modest kisses, vestal-virgin kisses, officious and ceremonial kisses, &c. Osculi sensus, brachiorum amplexus, kissing and embracing are proper gifts of Nature to a man; but these are too lascivious kisses, \( \textit{Implicitique suos circum mea colla lacertos,} \) too continued and too violent, \( \textit{Brachia non hederæ, non vincant oscula concha;} \) they cling like ivy, close as an oyster, bill as doves, meretricious kisses, biting of lips, cum additamento: \( \textit{Tam impresso ore (saith Lucian ut vix labia detrahant, inter deoscelandum mordicantes, tum et os aperientem quoque et mammas attractantem, &c. such kisses as she gave to Gyton, innumera oscula dedit non repugnanti puero, cervicem invadens, innumerable kisses, &c. More than kisses, or too homely kisses: as those that the spake of, Accepturus ab ipsa venere 7 suavis, &c. with such other obscenities that vein lovers use, which are abominable and pernicious. If, as Peter de Ledesmo cas. cons. holds, every kiss a man gives his wife after marriage, be mortale peccatum, a mortal sin, or that of Hierome, Adulter est quisquis in uxorem suum ardentius est amator; or that of Thomas Secund. quest. 154. artic. 4. contactus et...} \)
oculum sit mortale peccatum, or that of Durand. Rational, lib. 1. cap. 10. abstinere delent conjugés à complexu, tota tempore quo solennitas nuptiarum interdicitur, what shall become of all such "immodest kisses and obscene actions, the forerunners of brutish lust, if not lust itself! What shall become of them that often abuse their own wives? But what have I to do with this?

That which I aim at, is to show you the progress of this burning lust; to epitomize therefore all this which I have hitherto said, with a familiar example out of that elegant Museus, observe but with me those amorous proceedings of Leander and Hero: they began first to look one on another with a lascivious look,

"Obliquit intuens inde nutibus,  
Nutibus mutuis inducens in arrem mentem puellae,  
Et illa contra nutibus mutuis juvenis  
Leandri quod amorem non revult, &c. Inde  
Adhibat in teenchis tacticis quidem stringens  
Rosae puellae digitos, ex uno aspirabat  
Veherentem — — — — Inde  
Virgini antem bene olea column coelastus,  
Tale verbam uit amoris ictus stimulo,  
Preces audit et amoris miserere mel, &c.  
Sic futus recusantis persuasit mentem puellae."  

"With becks and nods he first began  
To try the wenches' mind,  
With becks and nods and smiles again  
An answer he did find,  
And in the dark he took her by the hand,  
And wrung it hard, and sighed grievously,  
And kis'd her too, and wou'd her as he might,  
With pity me, sweetheart, or else I die,  
And with such words and gestures as there past,  
He won his mistress' favour at the last."  

The same proceeding is elegantly described by Apollonius in his Argonautics, between Jason and Medea, by Eustathius in the ten books of the loves of Ismenius and Ismene, Achilles Tatius between his Clitophon and Leucippe, Chaucer's next poem of Troilus and Cresside; and in that notable tale in Petronius of a soldier and a gentlewoman of Ephesus, that was so famous all over Asia for her chastity, and that mourned for her husband: the soldier wooed her with such rhetoric as lovers use to do, — placitio etiam puagnis amor? &c. at last, frangit pertinaciam passa est, he got her good will, not only to satisfy his lust, but to hang her dead husband's body on the cross (which he watched instead of the thief's that was newly stolen away), whilst he wooed her in her cabin. These are tales, you will say, but they have most significant morals, and do well express those ordinary proceedings of doting lovers.

Many such allurements there are, nods, jests, winks, smiles, wrestlings, tokens, favours, symbols, letters, valentines, &c. For which cause belike, Godfridus, lib. 2. de amor. would not have women learn to write. Many such provocations are used when they come in presence, they will, and will not,

"Maio me Galatea petit lasciva puella,  
Et fugit ad salices, et se capit ante videri."  
"My mistress with an apple woes me,  
And hastily to covert goes  
To hide herself, but would be seen  
With all her heart before, God knows."  

Hero so tripped away from Leander as one displeased,

"As she went full often look'd behind,  
And many poor excuses did she find  
To linger by the way;"  

but if he chance to overtake her, she is most averse, nice and coy,

"Denegat et pugnat, sed vult super omnia vincere."  
"She seems not won, but won she is at length,  
In such wars women use but half their strength."

Sometimes they lie open and are most tractable and coming, apt, yielding, and willing to embrace, to take a green gown, with that shepherdess in Theocritus, Edyl. 27. to let their coats, &c., to play and dally, at such seasons, and to some, as they spy their advantage; and then coy, close again, so nice, so surly, so demure, you had much better tame a colt, catch or ride a wild horse, than get her favour, or win her love, not a look, not a smile, not a kiss for a

9 Oscula qui sumpis, si non et cetera sumpis, &c.  
9 Corpus placit murit soli tolli ex arca, stisque nulli quae vacat cruca adrigi.  
9 Novi ingenium mulierum, nonunt ubi velis, ubi nonis cuplunt utro.  
9

8 Marloew.
kingdom. Aretilne's Lucretia was an excellent artisan in this kind, as she

tells her own tale, "Though I was by nature and art most beautiful and fair,
yet by these tricks I seemed to be far more amiable than I was, for that which
men earnestly seek and cannot attain, draws on their affection with a most
furious desire. I had a suitor loved me dearly (said she), and the more he
gave me, the more eagerly he wooed me, the more I seemed to neglect, to
corn him, and which I commonly gave others, I would not let him see me,
converse with me, no, not have a kiss. To gull him the more, and fetch him
over (for him only I aimed at) I personated my own servant to bring in a
present from a Spanish count, whilst he was in my company, as if he had been
the count's servant, which he did excellently well perform: * Comes de monte
Turco, 'my lord and master hath sent your ladyship a small present, and part
of his hunting; a piece of venison, a pheasant, a few partridges, &c.' (all which
she bought with her own money), 'commends his love and service to you,
desiring you to accept of it in good part, and he means very shortly to come
and see you.'" Withal she showed him rings, gloves, scarfs, coronets which
others had sent her, when there was no such matter, but only to circumvent
him. By these means (as she concludes) "I made the poor gentleman so mad,
that he was ready to spend himself, and venture his dearest blood for my
sake." Philinna, in Lucian, practised all this long before, as it shall appear
unto you by her discourse; for when Diphilius her sweetheart came to see her
(as his daily custom was) she frowned upon him, would not vouchsafe him her
company, but kissed Lamprius his co-rival, at the same time before his face;
but why was it? To make him (as she tellect her mother that chid her for it)
more jealous; to whet his love, to come with a greater appetite, and to
know that her favour was not so easy to be had. Many other tricks she used
besides this (as she there confesseth), for she would fall out with, and anger
him of set purpose, pick quarrels upon no occasion, because she would be
reconciled to him again. Amandium tres amoris redintegratio, as the old
saying is, the falling out of lovers is the renewing of love; and according to
that of Aristeneetus, iucundiores amorum post injurias delicce, love is increased
by injuries, as the sunbeams are more gracious after a cloud. And surely this
aphorism is most true; for as Ampelis informs Crisis in the said Lucian, "If
a lover be not jealous, angry, waspish, apt to fall out, sigh and swear, he is no
true lover." To kiss and call, hang about her neck, protest, swear and wish,
are but ordinary symptoms, incipientis adhuc et crescentis amoris signa; but
if he be jealous, angry, apt to mistake, &c., bené speres licet, sweet sister he
is thine own; yet if you let him alone, humour him, please him, &c., and
that he perceive once he hath you sure, without any co-rival, his love will
languish, and he will not care so much for you. Hitherto (saith she) can I
speak out of experience; Demophonatus a rich fellow was a suitor of mine, I
seemed to neglect him, and gave better entertainment to Calliades the painter
before his face, principio abiit, verbis me insectatus at first he went away all
in a chafe, cursing and swearing, but at last he came submitting himself,
vowing and protesting he loved me most dearly, I should have all he had, and that
he would kill himself for my sake. Therefore I advise thee (dear sister Crisis)
and all maids, not to use your suitors over kindly; insolentes eam sunt hoc
cum sentient, 'twill make them proud and insolent; but now and then reject

formossima, leo tamus usu tantus spectaculi videlicet; good eum, occulti caputum agrum præbatur, multo
magis affectus humanos incendit.
* Quo majoribus me dominis proprioita, co melioribus illum modo tractabam, ne basium impravit, &c.
* Comes de monte Turco Hispanus has de venatione sui partes
mold iusquisque paramater ore, ut hoc quacunque domum sua nomine accipitis.
* His artibus hominem
inlercit, ut pro me ile ad aenias paratus, &c. 
* Tom. 4. dial. veret.
* Releto ilio, agrae ipsi
interim faciens, et omniin difficultis.
* Si quis eam nec Zelotypia, intorcut, nec pugnat aliquando amator, nec perjurat, non est habendus amator, &c.
* Totus hicigit Zelotypia constat, &c. maximimus amore insde
nascitur. Sed si peramum illi fuerit se salus haberet, elaguansect ilico amor suos.
them, estrange thyself, et si me audiis semel atque iterum exclude, shut him out of doors once or twice, let him dance attendance; follow my counsel, and by this means "you shall make him mad. come off roundly, stand to any conditions, and do whatsoever you will have him. These are the ordinary practices; yet in the said Lucian, Melissa methinks had a trick beyond all this; for when her suitor came coldly on, to stir him up, she writ one of his corivials' names and her own in a paper, Melissa amat Hermitomin Hermomitus Melissam, causing it to be stuck upon a post, for all gazers to behold, and lost it in the way where he used to walk; which when the silly novice perceived, statim ut legit creditit, instantly apprehended it was so, came raving to me, &c., "and so when I was in despair of his love, four months after I recovered him again." Eugenia drew Timoeles for her valentine, and wore his name a long time after in her bosom: Camena singled out Pamphilus to dance, at Myson's wedding (some say), for there she saw him first: Felicianus overtook Celia by the highway side, offered his service, thence came further acquaintance, and thence came love. But who can repeat half their devices? What Areteine experienced, what conceived Lucian, or wanton Aristaeetus? They will deny and take, stiffly refuse, and yet earnestly seek the same, repel to make them come with more eagerness, fly from if you follow, but if, reverse, as a shadow they will follow you again, fugientem sequitur, sequentem fugit; with a regaining retreat, a gentle reluctance, a smiling threat, a pretty pleasant peevishness they will put you off, and have a thousand such several enticements. For as he saith,

"Non est forma satis, nec qua vest bella videri,
Debet vulgari more placere suis,
Dicta, sales, lusus, sermone, gratia, risus,
Vindict natura candidioris opus."

"Tis not enough though she be fair of hue,
For her to use this vulgar compliment:
I ut pretty toys and jests, and saws and smiles,
As far beyond what beauty can attempt."

For this cause belike Philostratus, in his images, makes diverse loves, "some young, some of one age, some of another, some winged, some of one sex, some of another, some with torches, some with golden apples, some with darts, gins, snares, and other engines in their hands," as Propertius hath prettyly painted them out, lib. 2. et 29, and which some interpret, diverse enticements, or diverse affections of lovers, which if not alone, yet jointly may batter and overcome the strongest constitutions.

It is reported of Decius and Valerianus, those two notorious persecutors of the church, that when they could enforce a young Christian by no means (as Hierome records) to sacrifice to their idols, by no torments or promises, they took another course to tempt him: they put him into a fair garden, and set a young courtezan to dally with him, "she took him about the neck and kissed him, and that which is not to be named," manibusque attrectare, &c., and all those enticements which might be used, that whom torments could not, love might batter and beleaguer. But such was his constancy, she could not overcome, and when this last engine would take no place, they left him to his own ways. At Berkley in Gloucestershire, there was in times past a nunnerie (saith Gualterus Mapes, an old historiographer, that lived 400 years since), of which there was a noble and a fair lady abbess: Godwin, that subtle Earl of Kent, travelling that way (seeking not her but hers), leaves a nephew of his, a proper young gallant (as if he had been sick) with her, till he came back again, and gives the young man charge so long to counterfeit, till he had

---

6 Vexientem videbis ipsum deinde inflammatum et perversus insensatentem. 1 Et sicenum fere de illo despotarum, post memores quattuor ad me redit. 2 Petronius, Catal. 3 Imagines deorum. cap. 327. varios amores fact, quis aliquis interpretantur multiplices affectus et ille dea, alias pullos, puellas, alatos, alias pomam aereas, alas sagittas, alas laqueos, &c. 4 Epist. lib. 3. vitam Paul. Eremitas. 5 Meratrix specios a caput deliciarum stringunt collis complexibus, et corpore in libidinem coniuncto, &c. 6 Camden i Gloucesteriis, huius praevio nobilibs et formosa abbatisa, Godwinus comes indeo substilis, non ipsum, sed sua cupiens, reliquit nepotem suum forma elegantissimum, tanquam infirmum donce revertereatur; lastruit, &c.
deflowered the abbess, and as many besides of the nuns as he could, and leaves him withal, rings, jewels, girdles, and such toys to give them still, when they came to visit him. The young man, willing to undergo such a business, played his part so well, that in short space he got up most of their bellies, and when he had done, told his lord how he had sped; his lord made instantly to the court, tells the king how such a nunery was become a bawdy-house, procures a visitation, gets them to be turned out, and begs the lands to his own use."

This story I do therefore repeat, that you may see of what force these enticements are, if they be opportunely used, and how hard it is even for the most averse and sanctified souls to resist such allurements. John Major in the life of John the monk, that lived in the days of Theodosius, commends the hermit to have been a man of singular continency, and of a most austere life; but one night by chance the devil came to his cell in the habit of a young market wench that had lost her way, and desired for God's sake some lodging with him. "The old man let her in, and after some common conference of her mishap, she began to inveigle him with lascivious talk and jests, to play with his beard, to kiss him, and do worse, till at last she overcame him. As he went to address himself to that business, she vanished on a sudden, and the devils in the air laughed him to scorn." Whether this be a true story, or a tale, I will not much contend, it serves to illustrate this which I have said.

Yet were it so, that these of which I have hitherto spoken, and such like enticing baits, be not sufficient, there be many others, which will of themselves intend this passion of burning lust, amongst which, dancing is none of the least; and it is an engine of such force, I may not omit it. *Incitamentum libidinis*; Petrarch calls it, "the spur of lust. A k circle of which the devil himself is the centre. 1 Many women that use it, have come dishonest home, most indif- ferent, none better." m Another terms it, "the companion of all filthy delights and enticements, and 'tis not easily told what inconveniences come by it, what scurrile talk, obscene actions," and many times such monstrous gestures, such lascivious motions, such wanton tunes, meretricious kisses, homely embracings, that it will make the spectators mad. When that epitomizer of Trogus had to the full described and set out King Ptolemy's riot as a chief engine and instrument of his overthrow, he adds, *tympanum et tripudium*, fiddling and dancing: "the king was not a spectator only, but a principal actor himself." A thing nevertheless frequently used, and part of a gentlewoman's bringing up, to sing, dance, and play on the lute, or some such instrument, he may say her patronoster, or ten commandments. 'Tis the next way their parents think to get them husbands, they are compelled to learn, and by that means; 1 *Inccestos amores de tenero meditatur ungue*; 'tis a great allurement as it is often used, and many are undone by it. Thais, in Lucian, inveigled Lamprias in a dance, Herodias so far pleased Herod, that she made him swear to give her what she would ask, John Baptist's head in a platter. 2 Robert Duke of Normandy, riding by Falais, spied Arlette, a fair maid, as she danced

---

h Ille impiger regem adit, abbatisam et suas pregnantes elactet, exploratoribus missae probat, et tis elactet, a domino suo manerium accept. 1 Post sermones de casu suaveitate sermonis conciliat animam hominis, manumque alter colloquia et visus ad barbam prosectet et palpare copit evicem suam et osculat; quid multa? Captivum duci millitem Christi. Complexura evanescit, demones in aere

k Chorae circulus, cOccum centrum diab. 1 Multae inde impedias domum redi, plures ambigues, melior nulla. 2 Turpia sceleris exerts externa sautatio; neque certa fidelis dicte quae multa licet visus haerat, et que pariat, colloquia, monstrors, indifferentia gesta, &c. 3 Ju. Sat. 11. 4 Perhaps you may expect that a Gaditanian with a tasteful company may begin to wanton, and girls approved with applause lower themselves to the ground in a lascivious manner, a provocative of languishing desire.

---

Justin. 1. 10. Adduntur instrumenta luxuria, tympana et tripudia; nec tam spectator rex, sed nequitia magister, &c. 5 Hor. 1. 5. Od. 6. 6 Havard vita ejus.
on a green, and was so much enamoured with the object, that he must needs lie with her that night. Owen Tudor won Queen Catherine's affection in a dance, falling by chance with his head in her lap. Who cannot parallel these stories out of his experience? Speusippus a noble gallant in that Greek Aristarchus, seeing Panareta a fair young gentlewoman dancing by accident, was so far in love with her, that for a long time after he could think of nothing but Panareta: he came raving home full of Panareta: "Who would not admire her, who would not love her, that should but see her dance as I did? O admirable, O divine Panareta! I have seen old and new Rome, many fair cities, many proper women, but never any like to Panareta, they are dross, dowdies all to Panareta! O how she danced, how she tripped, how she turned, with what a grace! happy is that man that shall enjoy her. O most incomparable, only, Panareta!" When Xenophon, in Symposium, or Banquet, had discoursed of love, and used all the engines that might be devised, to move Socrates, amongst the rest, to stir him the more, he shuts up all with a pleasant interlude or dance of Dionysius and Ariadne. 4 First Ariadne dressed like a bride came in and took her place; by and by Dionysius entered, dancing to the music. The spectators did all admire the young man's carriage; and Ariadne herself was so much affected with the sight, that she could scarce sit. After a while Dionysius beholding Ariadne, and incensed with love, bowing to her knees, embraced her first, and kissed her with a grace; she embraced him again, and kissed him with like affection, &c., as the dance required; but they that stood by, and saw this, did much applaud and commend them both for it. And when Dionysius rose up, he raised her up with him, and many pretty gestures, embraces, kisses, and love compliments passed between them: which when they saw fair Bacchus and beautiful Ariadne so sweetly and so unfeignedly kissing each other, so really embracing, they swore they loved indeed, and were so inflamed with the object, that they began to rouse up themselves, as if they would have flown. At the last when they saw them still, so willingly embracing, and now ready to go to the bride-chamber, they were so ravished with it, that they that were unmarried, swore they would forthwith marry, and those that were married called instantly for their horses, and galloped home to their wives." What greater motive can there be than this burning lust? what so violent an oppugner? Not without good cause therefore so many general councils condemn it, so many fathers abhor it, so many grave men speak against it; "Use not the company of a woman," saith Syracides, 8. 4, "that is a singer, or a dancer; neither hear, lest thou be taken in her craftiness." In circos non tam cernitur quam discitur libido. 5 Hesiod holds, lust in theatres is not seen, but learned. Gregory Nazianzen that eloquent divine (as he relates the story himself), when a noble friend of his solemnly invited him with other bishops, to his daughter Olympia's wedding, refused to come: "For it is absurd to see an old gouty bishop sit amongst dancers;" he held it unfit to be a spectator, much less an actor. Nemo salutat sobrius, Tully writes, he is not a sober man that danceth; for some such reason (belike) Domitian forbade the Roman senators to dance, and for that fact removed many of them from the senate. But these, you will say, are lascivious

1 Of whom he begat William the Conqueror; by the same token she bore her shock down, saying, &c.
2 Epist. 36. Quis non miratus est saltantem? Quis non vidit et amavit? veterem et novam vidit Roman, sed habisse non vidit Panareta; felix qui Panareta frater, &c. 3 Principe Aristarchus velut sponsa prodiit, sed sola recedit; prodiei illicus Dionysi ad numeros cantante tibia saltabat; admirati sunt omnes saltantes juve nepem, ipsam Ariadinem, ut via poterit conquelegere; postea vero cum Dionysius ex amplius, &c. Ut autem surrexit Dionysius, erexit simul Arachium, licebatque spectare gestas osculantium, et inter se compositas; quid autem spectabant, &c. Ad extremum speciem essent ambiguum implicato atiam, ad thalamum huius; qui non dixerat uxores jurabant uxores se ducuros; qui autem dixerat consensos quis est incitatis, ut istem fruemur, domum reminiscantur. 4 Lib. 4. de contemned. amoribus. 5 Ad Anyssinos epist. 57. 6 Intempestivum enim est, et a voluptibus abhorret, inter saltantes podagricum videre scelus, ut Epicuriop.
and Pagan dances, 'tis the abuse that causeth such inconvenience, and I do not well therefore to condemn, speak against, or "innocently to accuse the best and pleasantest thing (so *Lucian calls it) that belongs to mortal men."

You misinterpret, I condemn it not; I hold it notwithstanding an honest deport, a lawful recreation, if it be opportune, moderately and soberly used: I am of Plutarch's mind, "that which respects pleasure alone, honest recreation, or bodily exercise, ought not to be rejected and contemned:" I subscribe to *Lucian, "'tis an elegant thing, which cheereth up the mind, exerciseth the body, delights the spectators, which teacheth many comely gestures, equally affecting the ears, eyes, and soul itself." Sallust discommends singing and dancing in Scipionia, not that she did sing or dance, but that she did it in excess, 'tis the abuse of it; and Gregory's refusal doth not simply condemn it, but in some folks. Many will not allow men and women to dance together, because it is a provocation to lust: they may as well, with Lycurgus and Mahomet, cut down all vines, forbid the drinking of wine, for that it makes some men drunk.

"*x Wilh! prodcest quod non ledere posset idem;
Ignis quid utilis?"

I say of this as of all other honest recreations, they are like fire, good and bad, and I see no such inconvenience, but that they may so dance, if it be done at due times, and by fit persons: and conclude with Wolfongus *Hider, and most of our modern divines: *Si decora, graves, verecunda, plena luce bonorum virorum et matronarum honestarum, tempestiue fiant, probari possant, et debent. "There is a time to mourn, a time to dance," Eccles. iii. 4. Let them take their pleasures then, and as "he said of old, "young men and maids flourishing in their age, fair and lovely to behold, well attired, and of comely carriage, dancing a Greek galliard, and as their dance required, kept their time, now turning now tracing, now apart now altogether, now a courtesy then a caper," &c., and it was a pleasant sight to see those pretty knots, and swimming figures. The sun and moon (some say) dance about the earth, the three upper planets about the sun as their centre, now stationary, now direct, now retrograde, now in apogee, then in perigee, now swift then slow, occidental, oriental, they turn round, jump and trace, &c. and about the sun with those thirty-three Macule or Bourbonian planet, *circa Solem saeclante Cytheream, saith Fromundus. Four Medicean stars dance about Jupiter, two Aus- trian about Saturn, &c., and all (belike) to the music of the spheres. Our greatest counsellors, and staid senators, at some times dance, as David before the ark, 2 Sam. vi. 14. Miriam, Exod. xv. 20. Judith, xv. 13. (though the devil hence perhaps hath brought in those bawdy bacchantes), and well may they do it. The greatest soldiers, as 'Quintilianus, *Æmilius Probus, *Celius Rhodiginus, have proved at large, still use it in Greece, Rome, and the most worthy senators, cantare, saltare, Lucian, Macrobius, Libanus, Plutarch, Julius, Pollux, Athenæus, have written just tracts in commendation of it. In this our age it is in much request in those countries, as in all civil commonwealths, as Alexander ab Alexandro, *lib. 4. cap. 10. et *lib. 2. cap. 25. hath proved at large, amongst the barbarians themselves none so precious; all the world allows it.

"*k Divitias centenno tuas, rex Creece, tarnaque
Vendo Asiam, unguentis, flore, vino, clorico."

---

* Rem omnium in mortuam vita optinam Inmaculcr accusare. * Quae honestam volupiffum respecit,
ae corpora exerarit, contemni non debet. *b Elegansissima res est, cre et membra acutum, corpus exerchart, et spectantes obtiect, multos gestus decoros docent, ocules, aurea, animam ex specie demulcent.


[Part. 3. Sec. 2.]
Plato, in his Commonwealth, will have dancing-schools to be maintained, "that young folks might meet, be acquainted, see one another, and be seen;" nay more, he would have them dance naked; and scoffs at them that laugh at it. But Eusebius, praepcr. Evangel. lib. 1. cap. 11. and Theodoret, lib. 9. curat. grec. affect. worthily lash him for; and well they might; for as one saith, "in the very sight of naked parts causeth enormous, exceeding concupiscences, and stirs up both men and women to burning lust." There is a mean in all things: this is my censure in brief; dancing is a pleasant recreation of body and mind, if sober and modest (such as our Christian dances are), if temperately used; a furious motive to burning lust, if as by Pagans heretofore, unchastely abused. But I proceed.

If these allusions do not take place, for "Simiers, that great master of dalliance, shall not behave himself better, the more effectually to move others, and satisfy their lust, they will swear and lie, promise, protest, forge, counterfeit, brag, brile, flatter and disseme of all sides. "Twas Lucretia's counsel in Arcine, Si vis amicà frui, promitte, finge, jura, perjura, pacta, simulâ, mentire; and they put it well in practice, as Apollo to Daphne,

—"a mihi Delphica tellus
Et Claros et Tenedos, patraeique regit servit,
Jupiter est genitor."——

"Delphos, Claros, and Tenedos serve me,
And Jupiter is known my sire to be."

P The poorest swains will do as much, "Mille pecus nivci sunt et mihi vallibus agni; "I have a thousand sheep, good store of cattle, and they are all at her command,"——"Tibi nos, tibi nostra supellex,
Et que servierint."

"house, land, goods, are at her service," as he is himself. Dinomachus, a senator's son in Sic. Lucian, in love with a wench inferior to him in birth and fortunes, the sooner to accomplish his desire, wept unto her, and swore he loved her with all his heart, and her alone, and that as soon as ever his father died (a very rich man and almost decrepit) he would make her his wife. The maid by chance made her mother acquainted with the business, who being an old fox, well experienced in such matters, told her daughter, now ready to yield to his desire, that he meant nothing less, for dost thou think he will ever care for thee, being a poor wench, that may have his choice of all the beauties in the city, one noble by birth, with so many talents, as young, better qualified, and fairer than thyself? daughter, believe him not: the maid was abashed, and so the matter broke off. When Jupiter wooed Juno first (Lilias Giraldis relates it out of an old comment on Theocritus), the better to effect his suit, he turned himself into a cuckoo, and spiring her one day walking along, separated from the other goddesses, caused a tempest suddenly to arise, for fear of which she fled to shelter: Jupiter to avoid the storm likewise flew into her lap, in virginis Junonis gremium devolavit, whom Juno for pity covered in her "apron. But he turned himself forthwith into his own shape, began to embrace and offer violence unto her, sed illa matris metu abnuebat, but she by no means would yield, donec pollicitus connubium obtinuit, till he vowed and swore to marry her, and then she gave consent. This fact was done at Thorакс hill, which ever after was called Cuckoo hill, and in perpetual remembrance there was a temple erected to Tela Juno in the same place. So powerful are fair promises, vows, oaths, and protestations. It is an ordinary

110 Leg. της γάρ ταυτίας αφετέρων έκει, &c. Ilius causa oportuit disciplinam consulti, ut tam pueros quam puellas choraece celebraret, spectanteraque se spectaret, &c. 111 Aspectus enim nundorum corporum tam mares quam feminas irriusque solt ad enormes lascivias appetitus. 112 Camden Annal, anno 1578, fol. 294. Amatoris facetiae et illecebras exquisitiissimae. 113 Met. 1. Ovid. 114 Erasmus egl. milia me iucundos errabant in montibus agni. 115 Virg. 116 Laecheus. 117 Tom. 4. merc. dial. amare se jurat et lachrimatur dicique eum me dure reple, quam pater cenus usussest. 118 Quam sunt omni alibi modo majorum aspicient, &c. 119 Or opper garment. Quem Juno miscreata veste content.
thing too in this case to belie their age, which widows usually do, that mean to marry again, and bachelors too sometimes,

"Culis octavum trepidavit atas
cernere instruxit;"

to say they are younger than they are. Carmides in the said Lucian loved Philematium, an old maid of forty-five years; 5 she swore to him she was but thirty-two next December. But to dissemble in this kind, is familiar of all sides, and often it takes. 6 Fallere credentem res est operosa puellam 'tis soon done, no such great mastery, Egregiam verò laudem, et lustria ampla,—and nothing so frequent as to belie their estates, to prefer their suits, and to advance themselves. Many men to fetch over a young woman, widows, or whom they love, will not stick to crack, forge and feign any thing comes next, bid his boy fetch his cloak, rapier, gloves, jewels, &c, in such a chest, scarlet-golden-tissue breeches, &c, when there is no such matter; or make any scruple to give out, as he did in Petronius, that he was master of a ship, kept so many servants, and to personate their part the better, take upon them to be gentle-
men of good houses, well descended and allied, hire apparel at brokers', some scavenger or prick-louse tailors to attend upon them for the time, swear they have great possessions, 7 bribe, lie, cog, and foist how dearly they love, how bravely they will maintain her, like any lady, countess, duchess, or queen; they shall have gowns, tiers, jewels, coaches, and caroches, choice diet,

"The heads of parrots, tongues of nightingales,
The brains of peacocks, and of ostriches,
Their bals shall be the juice of gilliflowers, 8

| Spirit of roses and of violets,
The milk of unicorns," &c.  

as old Volpone courted Coelia in the * comedy, when as they are no such men, not worth a groat, but mere shakers, to make a fortune, to get their desire, or else pretend love to spend their idle hours, to be more welcome, and for better entertainment. The conclusion is, they mean nothing less,

"* Nil metuant jurare, nihil promittere curant:
Sed simul ac cupidas mentis satiata libido est,
Dieta nihil metuere, nihil perjuria curant;"

| "Oaths, vows, promises, are much protested;
But when their mind and lust is satisfied,
Oaths, vows, promises, are quite neglected;"

though he solemnly swear by the genius of Cæsar, by Venus' shrine, Hymen's deity, by Jupiter, and all the other gods, give no credit to his words. For when lovers swear, Venus laughs, Venus haec perjuria ridet, * Jupiter himself smiles, and pardons it withal, as grave * Plato gives out; of all perjury, that alone for love matters is forgiven by the gods. If promises, lies, oaths, and protestations, will not avail, they fall to bribes, tokens, gifts, and such like feasts. 8 Plurimus auro conciliatur amor: as Jupiter corrupted Danaë with a golden shower, and Liber Ariadne with a lovely crown (which was afterwards translated into the heavens, and there for ever shone); they will rain chickens, florins, crowns, angels, all manner of coins and stamps in her lap. And so must he certainly do that will speed, make many feasts, banquet, invitations, send her some present or other every foot. Summo studio parentur epulae (saith *Theophrastus) et crebris fiant turgitiones, he must be very bountiful and liberal, seek and sue, not to her only, but to all her followers, friends, familiars, fiddlers, panders, parasites, and household servants; he must insinuate himself, and surely will, to all, of all sorts, messengers, porters, carriers, no man must be unrewarded, or unrequested. I had a suitor (saith d Arsentia's Luretie) that when he came to my house, flung gold and silver about, as if it had been chaff. Another suitor I had was a very choleric fellow; but I so handled

---

7 Hor. 8 Dejeravit illa secundum supra trigesimal ad proximum Decembrem completuram se esse.
5 Ovid. 6 Nam donis vincitar omnis amor. Catullus 1. el 5. 7 Fox, act. 3. sc. 3.
8 Catullus. 9 Perjuria ridet amantium Jupiter, et venitus irritus tere jabet. Tibull. lib. 3. et 6. 10 In Philo: pejorati-
tibus his dii soli ignoscunt.
11 Catul. 12 Lib. 1. de contemptibus amoribus. 13 Dial. Ital. arguentum
14 In palaeis projeciabet. Billomun habuit amoratem qui supplex flexis genibus, &c. 15 Nulla recens alattas
15 terra fructus, nullum cupéndia, cum tam carum erat, nullum vinum Cistum pretium, quin ad mé
16 ferret illicit; cedra alterius cumbulplum pictarum daturos, &c.
him, that for all his fuming, I brought him upon his knees. If there had been an excellent bit in the market, any novelty, fish, fruit, or fowl, muscadel, or malmsey, or a cup of neat wine in all the city, it was presented presently to me; though never so dear, hard to come by, yet I had it: the poor fellow was so fond at last, that I think if I would might have had one of his eyes out of his head. A third suitor was a merchant of Rome, and his manner of wooing was with exquisite music, costly banquets, poems, &c. I held him off till at length he protested, promised and swore pro virginitate regno me donaturum, I should have all he had, house, goods, and lands, pro concubitu solo; neither was there ever any conjuror, I think, to charm his spirits that used such attention, or mighty words, as he did exquisite phrases, or general of any army so many stratagems to win a city, as he did tricks and devices to get the love of me. Thus men are active and passive, and women not far behind them in this kind: Audax ad omnia femina, quae vel amat, vel odit.

When nothing else will serve, the last refuge is their tears. *Hae scripsit (tes-tor amorem) mixta lachrymis et suspiris, 'twixt tears and sighs, I write this (I take love to witness), saith k Chelidonia to Philo-lius. *Lumina que moli fulmina, jam fulmina lachrymarum, those burning torches are now turned to floods of tears. Areteine's Lucretia, when her sweetheart came to town, 1 wept in his bosom, "that he might be persuaded those tears were shed for joy of his return." Quartilla in Petronius, when ought would move, fell a weeping, and as Balthasar Castilio paints them out, "mTo these crocodile's tears they will add sobs, fiery sighs, and sorrowful countenance, pale colour, leanness, and if you do but stir abroad, these fiends are ready to meet you at every turn, with such a sluttish neglected habit, deflected look, as if they were now ready to die for your sake; and how, saith he, shall a young novice thus beset, escape?" But believe them not.

Thou thinkest, peradventure, because of her vows, tears, smiles, and protestations, she is solely thine, thou hast her heart, hand, and affections, when as indeed there is no such matter, as the Spanish bawd said, gaudet illa habere unum in lecto, alterum in porto, tertium qui domi suspiret, she will have one sweetheart in bed, another in the gate, a third sighing at home, a fourth, &c. Every young man she sees and likes hath as much interest, and shall as soon enjoy her as thyself. On the other side, which I have said, men are as false, they love some of them those eleven thousand virgins at once, and make them believe, each particular, he is besotted on her, or love one till they see another.

3. Hcec scripsit (tes-tor amorem) mixta lachrymis et suspiris, 'twixt tears and sighs, I write this (I take love to witness), saith k Chelidonia to Philo-lius. *Lumina que moli fulmina, jam fulmina lachrymarum, those burning torches are now turned to floods of tears. Areteine’s Lucretia, when her sweetheart came to town, 1 wept in his bosom, "that he might be persuaded those tears were shed for joy of his return." Quartilla in Petronius, when ought would move, fell a weeping, and as Balthasar Castilio paints them out, "mTo these crocodile’s tears they will add sobs, fiery sighs, and sorrowful countenance, pale colour, leanness, and if you do but stir abroad, these fiends are ready to meet you at every turn, with such a sluttish neglected habit, deflected look, as if they were now ready to die for your sake; and how, saith he, shall a young novice thus beset, escape?" But believe them not.
and then her alone; like Milo’s wife in Apuleius, lib. 2. Si quem consepsit speciosae formae juvenem, venustate ejus sunitur, et in eum animam invorquet. ’Tis their common compliment in that case, they care not what they swear; say, or do: One while they slight them, care not for them, rail downright and scoff at them, and then again they will run mad, hang themselves, stab and kill, if they may not enjoy them. Henceforth, therefore, ——nulla vire juranti, femina credat, let not maids believe them. These tricks and counterfeit passions are more familiar with women, ’finem hic dolori faciet aut vita dies, miserere animatis, quoth Phaedra to Hippolitus. Joessa, in ’Lucian, told Pythias, a young man, to move him the more, that if he would not have her, she was resolved to make away herself. “There is a Nemesis, and it cannot choose but grieve and trouble thee, to hear that I have either strangled or drowned myself for thy sake.” Nothing so common to this sex as oaths, vows, and protestations, and as I have already said, tears, which they have at command, for they can so weep, that one would think their very hearts were dissolved within them, and would come out in tears; their eyes are like rocks, which still drop water, diuare lacrymex et sudoris in modum turgeri prompte, saith a Aristænetus, they wipe away their tears like sweat, weep with one eye, laugh with the other; or as children ‘weep and cry, they can both together

And as much pity is to be taken of a woman weeping, as of a goose going barefoot. When Venus lost her son Cupid, she sent a crier about, to bid every one that met him take heed.

When all other engines fail, that they can proceed no farther of themselves, their last refuge is to fly to bawds, panders, magical philters, and receipts; rather than fail, to the devil himself. Flectere si negueunt superos, Acheronta movebunt. And by those indirect means many a man is overthrown, and precipitated into this malady, if he take not good heed. For these bawds, first, they are everywhere so common, and so many, that, as he said of old Croton, omnes hic aut captandur aut captant, either inveigle or be inveigled, we may say of most of our cities, there be so many professed, cunning bawds in them. Besides, bawdry is become an art, or a liberal science, as Lucian calls it; and there be such tricks and subtleties, so many nurses, old women, panders, letter carriers, beggars, physicians, friars, confessors, employed about it, that nullus tradere stipes sufficient, one saith,

Such occult notes, stenography, polygraphy, Numinis animatus, or magical telling of their minds, which b Cabeus the Jesuit, by the way, counts fabulous and false; cunning conveyances in this kind, that neither Juno’s jealousy, nor Danae’s custody, nor Argus’ vigilance can keep them safe. ’Tis the last and

a Seneca Hippol. b De Magnet. Philos. lib. 4. cap. 10.
common refuge to use an assistant, such as that Catanean Philippa was to Joan Queen of Naples, a 'bawd's help, an old woman in the business, as Myriha did when she doated on Cyniras, and could not compass her desire, the old jade her nurse was ready at a pinch, dic inquit, openque me sine forre tibi—et in hac mea (pone timorem) Sedulitas erit apta tibi, fear it not, if it be possible to be done, I will effect it: non est mulieris mulier insuperabili, "Celestiana said, let him or her be never so honest, watched and reserved, 'tis hard but one of these old women will get access: and scarce shall you find, as Austin observes, in a nunnery a maid alone, ‘if she cannot have egress, before her window you shall have an old woman, or some prating gossip, tell her some tales of this clerk, and that monk, describing or commending some young gentleman or other unto her. "As I was walking in the street (saith a good fellow in Petronius) to see the town served one evening, 'I spied an old woman in a corner selling of cabbages and roots (as our hucksters do plums, apples, and suchlikefruits); mother (quoth he) can you tell me where I can dwell? she, being well pleased with my foolish urbanity, replied, and why, sir, should I not tell? With that she rose up and went before me. I took her for a wise woman, and by-and-by she led me into a by-lane, and told me there I should dwell. I replied again, I knew not the house; but I perceived, on a sudden, by the naked queens, that I was now come into a bawdy-house, and then too late I began to curse the treachery of this old jade." Such tricks you shall have in many places, and amongst the rest it is ordinary in Venice, and in the island of Zante, for a man to be bawd to his own wife. No sooner shall you land or come on shore, but, as the Comical Poet hath it,

"H Morem hoc meretricibus habent,  
Ad portum mittunt servos, ancillulas,  
Sic qua peregrina navis in portum aderit,  
Posunt calulis sit, quot et nomen sitet,  
Post ille extemplo seque admirant."  

These white devils have their panders, baunds, and factors in every place to seek about, and bring in customers, to tempt and way-lay novices, and silly travellers. And when they have them once within their clutches, as Agidianus Maserius in his comment upon Valerius Flaccus describes them, "i with promises and pleasant discourse, with gifts, tokens, and taking their opportunities, they lay nets which Lucretia cannot avoid, and baits that Hippolitus himself would swallow; they make such strong assaults and batteries, that the goddess of virginity cannot withstand them: give gifts and bribes to move Peneleop, and with threats to abase Susanna. How many Proserpina, with those catchpoles, doth Pluto take? These are the sleepy rods with which their souls touched descend to hell; this the glue or lime with which the wings of the mind once taken cannot fly away; the devil's ministers to allure, entice, &c. Many young men and maids, without all question, are inveigled by these Eumenides and their associates. But these are trivial and well known. The most sly, dangerous, and cunning bawds, are your knavish physicians, empriques, mass-priests, monks, jesuits, and friars. Though it be against Hippocrates' oath, some of them will give a dram, promise to restore maidenheads; and do it without danger, make an abortion if need be, keep down their paps, hinder conception, procure lust, make them with Satyrians, and now and then

6 Catal. eleg. 5. lib. 1. Venit in extium calidas lenta meum.  d Ovid. 10. met.  e Dei viti. Ern. c. 3. ad serorem vix aliqua recluscum bujas tempus salus invente, ante cujus fenestram non anus garrula, vel nasigera mulier sedes, quae eam fabula operac, rumoribus pascat, bujas vel illas monach, &c.  Agresti dixit annas vendebat, et rogo inquam, mater, numquis scel ob ego habebam? delectata illa urinantate tam utulta, et quid nesciam inquit? consuerevestis et cepit me praeda; divinam ego putabam, &c., nudas video meretricis et in lupanar me addictum, sero excutias amicula insidias.  b Plautus Menex. "These harlots send little maidens down to the quays to ascertain the name and nation of every ship that arrives, which they themselves hasten to address the new-comers."  i Promissi everberant, mollulent dulcinque, et opportunum tempus occupantes laqueos inquiunt quos vix Lucretia vitae; escam purant quam vel saepe Hippolitus aumerit, &c. Hee sante sunt virgo soporiferque quibus contacte animam adorem descendent; hoc quod conteicum mentum ali vis evadere nequeunt, damnos ancilia, quos sollicitant, &c.  & See the practice of the Deoites, Anglice, edit. 1630.
"In the mountains between Dauphiné and Savoy, the friars persuaded the good wives to counterfeit themselves possessed, that their husbands might give them free access, and were so familiar in those days with some of them, that, as one observes, "wenches could not sleep in their beds for necromantic friars: and the good abbeys in Bocaccio may in some sort witness, that rising betimes, mistook and stood on the friar's breeches instead of her veil or hat." You have heard the story, I presume, of Paulina, a chaste matron in Egesippus, whom one of Isis priests did prostitute to Mundus, a young knight, and made her believe it was their god Anubis. Many such pranks are played by our jesuits, sometimes in their own habits, sometimes in others, like soldiers, courtiers, citizens, scholars, gallants, and women themselves. Proteus-like, in all forms and disguises, that go abroad in the night, to inescate and beguile young women, or to have their pleasure of other men's wives; and, if we may believe some relations, they have wardrobes of several suits in the colleges for that purpose. Howsoever in public they pretend much zeal, seem to be very holy men, and bitterly preach against adultery, fornication, there are no verier bawds or whoremasters in a country; "whose soul they should gain to God, they sacrifice to the devil." But I spare these men for the present.

The last battering engines are philters, amulets, spells, charms, images, and such unlawful means: if they cannot prevail of themselves by the help of bawds, panders, and their adherents, they will fly for succour to the devil himself. I know there be those that deny the devil can do any such thing (Crato epist. 2. lib. med.), and many divines, there is no other fascination than that which comes by the eyes, of which I have formerly spoken; and if you desire to be better informed, read Camerarius, oper. subcis. cent. 2. c. 5. It was given out of old, that a Thessalian wench had bewitched King Philip to dote upon her, and by philters enforced his love; but when Olympia, the Queen, saw the maid of an excellent beauty, well brought up, and qualified—these, quoth she, were the philters which inveigled King Philip; those the true charms, as Henry to Rosamond,

"One accent from thy lips the blood more warms
Than all their philters, exorcisms, and charms."

With this alone Lucretia brags in Aretine, she could do more than all philosophers, astrologers, alchemists, necromancers, witches, and the rest of the crew. As for herbs and philters, I could never skill of them, "The sole

Artificial Allurements.

philter that ever I used was kissing and embracing, by which alone I made
men rave like beasts stupefied, and compelled them to worship me like an idol.
In our times it is a common thing, saith Erastus, in his book de Lamiis, for
witches to take upon them the making of these philters, "to force men and
women to love and hate whom they will, to cause tempests, diseases, 
&c. by charms, spells, characters, knots. — hic Thessala vendit Phitra. St.
Hierome proves that they can do it (as in Hilarius' life, epist. lib. 3); he hath
a story of a young man, that with a philter made a maid mad for the love of
him, which maid was after cured by Hilarian. Such instances I find in John
Nider, Formicar. lib. 5. cap. 5. Plutarch records of Lucullus that he died of a
philter; and that Cleopatra used philters to inveigle Antony, amongst other
allurements. Eusebius reports as much of Lucretius the poet. Panormitan.
lib. 4. de gest. Alphonsi, hath a story of one Stephan, a Neapolitan knight, that
by a philter was forced to run mad for love. But of all others, that which
Petarich, epist. famil. lib. 1. ep. 3, relates of Charles the Great (Charlemagne),
is most memorable. He foolishly dotted upon a woman of mean favour and
condition, many years together, wholly delighting in her company, to the great
grief and indignation of his friends and followers. When she was dead, he did
embrace her corpse, as Apollo did the bay-tree for his Daphne, and caused her
coffin (richly embalmed and decked with jewels) to be carried about with him
over which he still lamented. At last a venerable bishop, that followed his
court, prayed earnestly to God (commiserating his lord and master's case) to
know the true cause of this mad passion, and whence it proceeded; it was
revealed to him, in fine, "that the cause of the emperor's mad love lay under
the dead woman's tongue." The bishop went hastily to the carcass, and took
a small ring thence; upon the removal the emperor abhorred the corpse, and,
instead of it fell so furiously in love with the bishop, he would not suffer him
to be out of his presence; which when the bishop perceived, he flung the ring
into the midst of a great lake, where the king then was. From that hour the
emperor neglected all his other houses, dwelt at a Ache, built a fair house in
the midst of the marsh, to his infinite expense, and a temple by it, where
after he was buried, and in which city all his posterity ever since used to be
crowned. Marcus the heretic is accused by Irenaeus to have inveigled a young
maid by this means; and some writers speak hardly of the Lady Katherine
Cobham, that by the same art she circumvented Humphrey Duke of Gloucester
to be her husband. Synicius Æmilianus summoned Æpuleius to come before
Cneius Maximus, proconsul of Africa, that he being a poor fellow, "had
bewitched by philters Pudentilla, an ancient rich matron to love him," and,
being worth so many thousand sesterces, to be his wife. Agrippa, lib. 1.
ep. 48. occult. philos. attributes much in this kind to philters, amulets, images:
and Salmutz, com. in Pancirol. Tit. 10. de Horol. Leo Afer. lib. 3. saith, 'tis an
ordinary practice at Fez in Africa, Prestigiatores ìbi phures, qui cogunt amores
et concubitus : as skilful allout as that Hyperborean magician, of whom Cleodenus,
in Æ Lucian, tells so many fine feats performed in this kind. But Erastus,
Wierus, and others are against it; they grant indeed such things may be done,
but (as Wierus discourseth, lib. 3. de Lamiis, cap. 37.) not by charms, incan-
tations, philters, but the devil himself; lib. 5. cap. 2. he contends as much;
so doth Freitagius, noc. med. cap. 74. Andreas Cisalpinus, cap. 5; and so
much Sigismundus Schereczius, cap. 9. de hirc o nocturno, proves at large.

\footnote{Sagen omnes sibi arrogant notitiam, et facultatem in amorem alienandi quaæ velit: eilia inter consors
serendii, tempestas exalitiae, morbus indigentis, Æ. Xerulantis Soc.}
\footnote{Idem de èst Hec. Kornmannus

de mir. mort. lib. 1. cap. 14. Perdite amavit multiculdam quandam, illius amplexisus sequiur.s, summa cum
indignatione nimium et dolore.}
\footnote{Et inde tenuus in Episcopum furere, illum colere.}
\footnote{Agulismanum,

\footnote{vulgo Ase.}
\footnote{Immenso sumptu templum et aseis, Æ.}
\footnote{Apolog. quod Pudentilla viduam ditem et

\footnote{provocabat sexis feminam cantamibus in amorem sui pollexisset.}
\footnote{Philopoeus, tom. 3.}
Love-Melancholy.

"6 Unchaste women by the help of these witches, the devil's kitchen maids, have their loves brought to them in the night, and carried back again by a phantom flying in the air in the likeness of a goat. I have heard (saith he) divers confess, that they have been so carried on a goat's back to their sweet-hearts, many miles in a night." Others are of opinion that these feats, which most suppose to be done by charms and philters, are merely effected by natural causes, as by man's blood chemically prepared, which much avails, saith Ernествus Burgranius, in Lucerna vita et mortis Indice, ad amorem concilia-

dium et odium (so huntsmen make their dogs love them, and farmers their pullen), "tis an excellent philter, as he holds, sed vulgo prodere grande nefis, but not fit to be made common: and so be Mala insana, mandrake roots, mandrake apples, precious stones, dead men's clothes, candles, malis Bacchica, panis porcinus, Hypomonae, a certain hair in a wolf's tail, &c., of which Rhasia, Dioscorides, Porta, Wacker, Rubeus, Mizaldus, Albertus, treat: a swallow's heart, dust of a dove's heart, mulsum valent lingue vipararum, cere-
bella asinorum, tuta equina, palliola gubus infantes obvoluti nascuntur, funis strangulati hominis, lapis de rido Aquila, &c. See more in Scenckius observat. medicinal. lib. 4. &c., which are as forcible, and of as much virtue as that fountain Salmacis in 5 Vitruvius, Ovid, Strabo, that made all such mad for love that drank it, or that hot bath at 1 Aix in Germany, wherein Cupid once dipp'd his arrows, which ever since hath a peculiar virtue to make them lovers all that wash in it. But hear the poet's own description of it,

"Unde hic fervor aquis terra erumpentibus nata? Tela olis hic ludens ignea tintum amori. Ex illo fervet, ramusque hic inebrius hopoei, Cui non tuillus perfecta blandus amor."

These above-named remedies have happily as much power as that bath of Aix, or Venus' enchanted girdle, in which, saith Natales Comes, "Love toys and dalliance, pleasantness, sweetness, persuasions, subtleties, gentle speeches, and all witchcraft to enforce love was contained." Read more of these in Agrippa de occult. Philos. lib. 1. cap. 50. et 45. Malleus, malefic. part. 1. quest. 7. Delrio, tam. 2. quest. 3. lib. 3. Wierus, Pomponatius, cap. 8. de incantat. Ficinus, lib. 13. Theol. Plat. Calcagninus, &c.

MEMB. III.

Symptoms or signs of Love-Melancholy, in Body, Mind, good, bad, &c.

Symptoms are either of body or mind; of body, paleness, lassheass, dryness &c. "Pallidus omnibus amans, color hie est aptus amanti, as the poet describes lovers: facit amor macien, love causeth lassheass. "Avicenna de Nishi, c. 33. "makes hollow eyes, dryness, symptoms of this disease, to go smiling to themselves, or acting as if they saw or heard some delectable object." Valleriola, lib. 3. observat. cap. 7. Laurentius, cap. 10. Aelianus Montaltius de Her. amore. Langius, epist. 24. lib. 1. epist. med. deliver as much, corpus exanguis paellet, corpus gracile, oculi caein, lean, pale—ut nudes qui pressis calculs anguem, "as one who trod with naked foot upon a snake," hollow-eyed, their eyes are
hidden in their heads. — "Tenerque nudi corporis cecidit decor, they pine away, and look ill with waking, cares, sighs.

"Et qui tenebant signa Phoebae facies
Oculi, nihil gentile nec patrium mutant."

"And eyes that once rivelled the locks of Phoebus, lose the patrial and paternal lustre." With groans, griefs, sadness, dulness,

Curta aut salutis?"

want of appetite, &c. A reason of all this, Jason Pratenisi gives, "because of the distraction of the spirits the liver doth not perform his part, nor turns the aliment into blood as it ought, and for that cause the members are weak, for want of sustenance, they are lean and pine, as the herbs of my garden do this month of May, for want of rain." The green sickness therefore often happeneth to young women, a cachexia or an evil habit to men, besides their ordinary sighs, complaints, and lamentations, which are too frequent. As drops from a still, — ut occluso stillat ab igne liquor, doth Cupid's fire pro-voke tears from a true lover's eyes,

"2 The mighty Mars did oft for Venus shrieve,
Privily moistening his horrid cheek
With womanish tears," —

with many such like passions. When Charicius was enamoured of Theagenes, as "Heliodorus sets her out, "she was half distracted, and spake she knew not what, sighed to herself, lay much awake, and was lean upon a sudden:" and when she was besotted on her son-in-law, "pallor deformis, marcentes oculi, &c., she had ugly paleness, hollow eyes, restless thoughts, short wind, &c. Eurialis, in an epistle sent to Lucretia, his mistress, complains amongst other grievances, "tu mihi et sonari et cibi usum abstulisti, thou has taken my stomach and my sleep from me. So he describes it aight:

His sleep, his meat, his drink, in him bereft,
That lean he waxeth, and dry as a shaft,
His eyes hollow and grizzly to behold,
His new pale and askes to unfold,
And solitary he was ever alone,
And waking all the night making more"

Theocritus Edyl. 2. makes a fair maid of Delphos, in love with a young man of Minda, confess as much,

"Ut vidii ut iamini, ut animus mihi male affectas est,
Misera mihi forma tabescat, neque amplius pompan
Ullam curabam, aut quando domum reiheram
Novi, sed me ardens quidam morbus consumebat,
Decumbi in lecto dies decem, et nox et decem,
Destinant capite capilli, ipsaque sola reliqua
Ossa et cutis".

All these passions are well expressed by that herical poet in the person of Dido:

"At non infelix animi Phoeneis, nec unquam
Solvitur in sommis, oculisque ac postrae amores
Accipit; ingemissant curas, russeasque resurgens
Savit amor," —

"Unhappy Dido could not sleep at all,
But lies awake, and takes no rest:
And up she gets again, whilst care and grief,
And raging love torment her breast."
Love-Melancholy.

make leanness, want of appetite, want of sleep ordinary symptoms, and by that means they are brought often so low, so much altered and changed, that as he jested in the comedy, "one scarce knows them to be the same men."

"Attentat juvenum vigilante corpora notae, Curaque et immerso qui sit amore dolor."

Many such symptoms there are of the body to discern lovers by,—quibus enim bene cedit amorem? Can a man, saith Solomon, Prov. vi. 27, carry fire in his bosom and not burn? it will hardly be hid; though they do all they can to hide it, it must out, plus quam mille notis—it may be described, quoque magis tegitur, lectus magis estuat signis. "Twas Antiphanes the comedian's observation of old, Love and drunkenness cannot be concealed, Calore alta positis, hae prater duo, vini potent, &c. words, looks, gestures, all will betray them; but two of the most notable signs are observed by the pulse and countenance.

When Antiochus, the son of Seleucus, was sick for Stratonic, his mother-in-law, and would not confess his grief, or the cause of his disease, Erasistratus, the physician, found him by his pulse and countenance to be in love with her, "because that when she came in presence, or was named, his pulse varied, and he blushed besides." In this very sort was the love of Callicles, the son of Polycleas, discovered by Panaces the physician, as you may read the story at large in Aristeneus. By the same signs Galen brags that he found out Justa, Boethius the consul's wife, to dote on Pylades the player, because at his name still she both altered pulse and countenance, as Polyarchus did at the name of Argenis. Francisecus Valesius, l. 3. contr. denies there is such a pulsus amatorius, or that love may be so discerned; but Avicenna confirms this of Galen out of his experience, lib. 3. Paeon. 1. and Gordonius, cap. 20. "Their pulse, he saith, is inordinate and swift, if she go by whom he loves," Langius, epist. 24. lib. 1. med. epist. Neviscanus, lib. 4. numer. 66. syl. nuptialis, Valesius de Taranta, Guianerus, Tract. 15. Valeriola sets down this for a symptom, a difference of pulse, neglect of business, want of sleep, often sighs, blushings, when there is any speech of their mistress, are manifest signs." But amongst the rest, Josephus Struthius, that Polonian, in the fifth book, cap. 17. of his Doctrine of Pulses, holds that this and all other passions of the mind may be discovered by the pulse. "And if you will know, saith he, whether the men suspected be such or such, touch their arteries, &c. And in his fourth book, fourteenth chapter, he speaks of this particular pulse, "Love makes an unequal pulse," &c., he gives instance of a gentlewoman, a patient of his, whom by this means he found to be much enamoured, and with whom he named many persons, but at the last when his name came whom he suspected, "her pulse began to vary, and to beat swifter, and so by often feeling her pulse, he perceived what the matter was." Apollonius, Argonaut, lib. 4. poetically setting down the meeting of Jason and Medea, makes them both to blush at one another's sight, and at the first they were not able to speak.

Plaedria trembled at the sight of Theseus, others sweat, blow short, Cruenta tremend ac poplices,—are troubled with palpitation of heart upon the like occasion, cor proximorum, saith Aristeneus, their heart is at their mouth,
Symptoms of Love.

leaps, these burn and freeze (for love is fire, ice, hot, cold, itch, fever, frenzy, plentiful, what not), they look pale, red, and commonly blush at their first congress; and sometimes through violent agitation of spirits bleed at nose, or when she is talked of; which very sign 7 Estathius makes an argument of Ismene’s affection, that when she met her sweetheart by chance, she changed her countenance to a maiden-blush. 8 Tis a common thing amongst lovers, as Arnulphus, that merry-conceited bishop, hath well expressed in a facetious epigram of his,

""Altema facies sibi dat responso rubere, Et tener affectum profert utrique pudor," &c. 6 7 Their faces answer, and by blushing say, How both affected are, they do betray."

But the best conjectures are taken from such symptoms as appear when they are both present; all their speeches, amorous glances, actions, lascivious gestures will betray them; they cannot contain themselves, but that they will be still kissing. 7 Stratoceles, the physician, upon his wedding-day, when he was at dinner, *Nihil prius sorribilium quam tria basia pleueae pangere, could not eat his meat for kissing the bride, &c. 5 First a word, and then a kiss, then some other compliment, and then a kiss, then an idle question, then a kiss, and when he had pumped his wits dry, can say no more, kissing and colling are never out of season, 8 "Hoc non deficit incipitque semper," tis never at an end, 7 another kiss, and then another, another, and another, &c.—lavo ades O Thelary.—Come kiss me Corinna?

But the best conjectures are taken from such symptoms as appear when they are both present; all their speeches, amorous glances, actions, lascivious gestures will betray them; they cannot contain themselves, but that they will be still kissing. 7 Stratoceles, the physician, upon his wedding-day, when he was at dinner, *Nihil prius sorribilium quam tria basia pleueae pangere, could not eat his meat for kissing the bride, &c. 5 First a word, and then a kiss, then some other compliment, and then a kiss, then an idle question, then a kiss, and when he had pumped his wits dry, can say no more, kissing and colling are never out of season, 8 "Hoc non deficit incipitque semper," tis never at an end, 7 another kiss, and then another, another, and another, &c.—lavo ades O Thelary.—Come kiss me Corinna?

Till you equal with the store, all the grass, &c. So Venus did by her Adonis the moon with Endymion, they are still dallying and colling, as so many doves Columbatimque Iabra consertantes labiis, and that with alacrity and courage,

""F Affligunt avibus corpus, singultante salvas Oris, et inspirant presanteis dentibus ora." 5

"Tam impresso ore ut vir indu labra detrahant, service reclinata, 6 as Lamprias in Lucian kissed Thais, Philippus her "in Aristocetus," amore lymphoio tam furoso adhesit, ut vir labra solvere esset, totunque os nihil contrivit, 5 Arctine’s Lucretia, by a suitor of hers was so saluted, and ‘tis their ordinary fashion.

They cannot, I say, contain themselves, they will be still not only joining hands, kissing, but embracing, treading on their toes, &c., diving into their bosoms, and that liberet, et cum delectatione, as Philostratus confesseth to his mistress; and Lamprias in Lucian, Mumillas promens, per sinum clam dextrā, &c., feeling their paps, and that scarce honestly sometimes; as the old man in the Comedy well observed of his son, Non ego te videbam manum buccae pleueae in sinum inserere? Did not I see thee put thy hand into her bosom? go to, with many such love tricks. 6 Juno in Lucian deorum, tom. 3.

---

"They cannot look off whom they love," they will \textit{impregnare eas ipsis oculis}, disflower her with their eyes, be still gazing, staring, stealing faces, smiling, glancing at her, as \textit{Apollo} on Leucothoe, the moon on her \textit{Endymion}, when she stood still in Caria, and at Latmos caused her chariot to be stayed. They must all stand and admire, or if she go by, look after her as long as they can see her, she is \textit{a nume curiosa}, as Anaecron calls her, they cannot go by her door or window, but, as an adamant, she draws their eyes to it; though she be not there present, they must needs glance that way, and look back to it. Aristeneetus of \textit{Exithemus}, Lucian, in his \textit{Imagin.} of himself, and Tatius of Clitophon, say as much, \textit{Ille oculos de Leucippe \textit{nunquam desiccebat}, and many lovers confess when they came in their mistresses' presence, they could not hold off their eyes, but looked wistfully and steadily on her, \textit{inconnuvo aspectu}, with much eagerness and greediness, as if they would look through, or should never have enough sight of her. \textit{Pexit ardens obtutibus caret; so she will do by him, drink to him with her eyes, nay, drink him up, devour him, swallow him, as Martial's \textit{Mamurra} is remembered to have done: \textit{Inspectit molles pueros, oculisque comedit, &c.} There is a pleasant story to this purpose in \textit{Nuvugat.} Vert. \textit{lib.} 3. \textit{cap.} 5. The sultan of \textit{Sana's} wife in Arabia, because Vertomannus was fair and white, could not look off him, from sunrising to sunsetting; she could not desist; she made him one day come into her chamber, \textit{et gynæae horae spatio intuebatur, non a me quaquam aevium aevorum avertiabat, me observans veluti Cupidinem quendam}, for two hours' space she still gazed on him. A young man in \textit{Lucian} fell in love with Venus' picture; he came every morning to her temple, and there continued all day long from sunrising to sunset, unwilling to go home at night, sitting over against the goddess' picture, he did continually look upon her, and mutter to himself I know not what. If so be they cannot see them whom they love, they will still be walking and waiting about their mistresses' doors, taking all opportunity to see them, as in \textit{Longus} Sophista, Daphnis and Chloe, two lovers, were still hovering at one another's gates, he sought all occasions to be in her company, to hunt in summer, and catch birds in the frost about her father's house in the winter, that she might see him, and he her. "A king's palace was not so diligently attended," saith Aretine's \textit{Lucetia}, "as my house was when I lay in Rome; the porch and street was ever full of some, walking or riding, on set purpose to see me; their eye was still upon my window; as they passed by, they could not choose but look back to my house when they were past, and sometimes hem or cough, or take some impertinent occasion to speak aloud, that I might look out and observe them." 'Tis so in other places, 'tis common to every lover, 'tis all his

\begin{itemize}
  \item \textit{Attenth adeo in me aspexit, et interdum ingeniebatur, et lachrymabatur.} \textit{Et si quando bibens, &c.}
  \item \textit{Quique omnis curere debeb Leucothoen spectas, et virgineensis in una quasi mundo debeb oculos. Ovid.}
  \item \textit{M. Lucian. tom. 3. quotes ad Carissim venis curram sis, et desuper aspectas.}
  \item \textit{Ex quo te primum vidi Pythias aëris oculos vertere non fuit.}
  \item \textit{Et quando solis segræ domo rectis, atque totum dies ex adverso desce sedens recta, in ipsam perpetuo oculorum incuts}
  \item \textit{directis, &c.}
  \item \textit{Regnum palatium non tant diligenzt custodia sephum fuit, ac adesse maxa}
  \item \textit{stipambant, &c.}
\end{itemize}
Symptoms of Love.

555

felicity to be with her, to talk with her; he is never well but in her company, and will walk "I seven or eight times a-day through the street where she dwells, and make sleeveless errands to see her;" plotting still where, when and how to visit her,

"3. Levesque sub modo susurr, 
Composita repetas horas."

And when he is gone, he thinks every minute an hour, every hour as long as a day, ten days a whole year, till he see her again. "Tempora si numeres bene 
quae numeram. amantes. And if thou be in love, thou wilt say so too, Et 
longum, formosâ, vale, farewell sweetheart, vale, charissima Argenis, &c. Fare-
well my dear Argenis, once more farewell, farewell. And though he is to meet
her by compact, and that very shortly, perchance to-morrow, yet loth to depart, he'll take his leave again and again, and then come back again, look
after, and shake his hand, wave his hat afar off. Now gone, he thinks it long
till he see her again, and she him, the clocks are surely set back, the hour's past,

"8 Hospita Demophoon tua te Rodopha Philis, 
Ultra promissam tempus abesse queror."

She looks out at window still to see whether he come, * and by report Phillis
went nine times to the sea-side that day, to see if her Demophoon were approach-
ing, and Troilus to the city gates to look for his Cresseide. She is ill at ease, and sick till she see him again, peevish in the meantime; discontent, heavy, sad, and why comes he not? where is he? why breaks he promise? why tar-
ries he so long? sure he is not well; sure he hath some mischance; sure he
forgets himself and me; with infinite such. And then confident again, up she
gets, out she looks, listens and inquires, hearkens, kens; every man afar off is
sure he, every stirring in the street, now he is there, that's he, male aurora, 
malis soli dicit juratique, &c., the longest day that ever was, so she raves, rest-
less and impatient; for Amor non patitur moras, love brooks no delays: the
time's quickly gone that's spent in her company, the miles short, the way
pleasant; all weather is good whilst he goes to her house, heat or cold; though
his teeth chatter in his head, he moves not; wet or dry, 'tis all one; wet to the
skin, he feels it not, cares not at least for it, but will easily endure it and much
more, because it is done with alacrity, and for his mistress's sweet sake; let the
burden be never so heavy, love makes it light. x Jacob served seven years
for Rachel, and it was quickly gone because he loved her. None so merry; if
he may happily enjoy her company, he is in heaven for a time; and if he
may not, dejected in an instant, solitary, silent, he departs weeping, lamenting,
sighing, complaining.

But the symptoms of the mind in lovers are almost infinite, and so diverse,
that no art can comprehend them; though they be merry sometimes, and rapt
beyond themselves for joy: yet most part love is a plague, a torture, a hell,
a bitter sweet passion at last; y Amor melle et felle est fecundissimus, gustum 
dat dulcem et amarum. 'Tis suavis amaricies, dolentia delectabilis, hilara 
tormentum;

"* Et me melle beatunt saviora, 
Et me felle necant amariora."

Like a summer fly or sphine's wings, or a rainbow of all colours,

"One ad solis radios converse amare erant, 
Adversus nubes cerules, quale jubat iridis,"

fair, foul, and full of variation, though most part irksome and bad. For in a
word, the Spanish Inquisition is not comparable to it; "a torment" and "exes-
P Uno et eodem die sexties vel septies ambulant per candem plateam, ut vel malo amice aus frument 
ansecta, lib. 3. Theat. Mundii. 3 Obs. 7 Ovid. 4 Hyginus, fab. 59. Ex die 
dictum nudes ad littus currisse. u Cicer. 7 Gen. xxlix. 26. y Plantus, Ciscol. 2 Stobbea à Greco.
"Sweeter than honey it pleases me, more bitter than gall it teases me." a Plantus: Credo ego ad hominis 
carnificinam amorem inventum esse.
Love-Melancholy.

"di amore have insatia vitia,
Suscipientes, inimicitias, audacia,
Pudicior, pudicior, cornuitas, et dispulsum;"

"In love these vices are; suspicions, fear, and impudence.
Peace, war, and impudence, detractions.
Dreams, cares, and errors, and affrights.
Indemn pranks, devices, slights and digests.
Heart-burnings, wants, neglects, and desire of wrong.
Less continual, expense, and hurt among."

Every poet is full of such catalogues of love symptoms; but fear and sorrow may justly challenge the chief place. Though Hercules de Saxonia, cap. 3. Tract. de melancholy, will exclude fear from love-melancholy, yet I am otherwise persuaded. "Res est sollicitia plena timoris amor. 'Tis full of fear, anxiety, doubt, care, peevishness, suspicion; it turns a man into a woman, which made Hesiod belike put Fear and Paleness Venus' daughters,

"Martis cypesus atque arma secant;
Alma Venus peperit Pallorem, unaque Timorem;"

because fear and love are still linked together. Moreover they are apt to mistake, amplify, too credulous sometimes, too full of hope and confidence, and then again very jealous, unapt to believe or entertain any good news. The comical poet hath pretty painted out this passage amongst the rest in a dialogue betwixt Mitio and Æschines, a gentle father and a lovesick son. "Be of good cheer, my son, thou shalt have her to wife. Æ. Ah father, do you mock me now? M. I mock thee, why? Æ. That which I so earnestly desire, I more suspect and fear. M. Get you home, and send for her to be your wife. Æ. What now a wife, now father," &c. These doubts, anxieties, suspicions, are the least part of their torments; they break many times from passions to actions, speak fair, and flatter, now most obsequious and willing, by and by they are averse, wrangle, fight, swear, quarrel, laugh, weep, and he that doth not so by fits, Æ. Lucian holds, is not thoroughly touched with this loadstone of love. So their actions and passions are intermixed, but of all other passions, sorrow hath the greatest share; 'love to many is bitterness itself; rem amamam Plato calls it, a bitter potion, an agony, a plague.

"Eripit hanc postum perniciosam mihi;
Quae mihi subrepens imos ut terpor in arcanus,
Expulit ex omni pectori lactis;"

"O take away this plague, this mischief from me, Which as a numberless over all my body, Expels my joys, and makes my soul so heavy."

Phedria had a true touch of this, when he cried out,

"K O Thal, utinam esset mihi
Pars eam amarys tecum, ac pariter fieret ut
Aut hoc tibi dolens idem, ut tibi delectur."

"O Thal, would thou hadst of these my pains a part, Or as it doth me now, so it would make thee smart."

So had that young man, when he wandered again for discontent,

"I Jactor, evocator, agitator, stimulor,
Versor in amoris rota misor
Examinor, feror, distrahor, deripior, faminus.
Ubi sum, ubi non sum; ubi non sum, ubi est."

"I am vexed and toss'd, and rack'd on love's wheel; Where not, I am; but where am, do not feel."

The moon in Æ. Lucian made her moan to Venus, that she was almost dead for

b De civit. Lib. 22. cap. 20. Ex eo orinatur moridaces curae, perturbationes, memores, formidines, insanæ gaudia, discordia, lite, bella, insidiae, irævindia, inimicitia, fallacio, adulator, fraud, fallacio, unquenchable, fire, and what not? Part. "Ant si triste magis potest quid esse, Hes in tam consules Xoerea vital."

These be the companions of loves, and the ordinary symptoms, as the poet repeats them.

From it, saith Austin, arise "biting cares, perturbations, passions, sorrows, fears, suspicions, discontent, contentions, discord, wars, treacheries, enmities, flattery, cozening, riot, impudence, cruelty, knavery," &c.
love, _pereo equidem amore_, and after a long tale, she broke off abruptly and wept, "O Venus, thou knowest my poor heart." Charmides, in \(^5\) Lucian, was so impatient, that he sobbed and sighed, and tore his hair, and said he would hang himself. "I am undone, O sister Tryphena, I cannot endure these love pangs; what shall I do?" _Vos O dix Averrunci solve te me curis, O ye gods, free me from these cares and miseries, out of the anguish of his soul, \(^6\) Theocles says. Shall I say, most part of a lover’s life is full of agony, anxiety, fear and grief, complaints, sighs, suspicions, and cares (heigh-ho my heart is wo), full of silence and irksome solitariness?

"Frequenting shady bowers in discontent, To the air his fruitless clamours he will vent." except at such times that he hath _lucida intervalla_, pleasant gales, or sudden alterations, as if his mistress smile upon him, give him a good look, a kiss, or that some comfortable message be brought him, his service is accepted, &c.

He is then too confident and rapt beyond himself, as if he had heard the nightingale in the spring before the cuckoo, or as "Calisto was at Melebea’s presence, _Quis unquam haec mortali vidit tam gloriosum corpus vidit? humanitate transcedere videor, &c. who ever saw so glorious a sight, what man ever enjoyed such delight? More content cannot be given of the gods, wished, had or hoped of any mortal man. There is no happiness in the world comparable to his, no content, no joy to this, no life to love, he is in paradise.

"Quis me uno vivit felicior? ant magis haec est Optandum vita dicere quis poterit?" |
"Who lives so happy as myself? what bliss In this our life may be compared to this?"

He will not change fortune in that case with a prince,

\(^2\) Donec gratus eram tibi. Persarum vigile regis haudior."

The Persian kings are not so jovial as he is, _O festus dies hominis, O happy day; so Chserea exclaims when he came from Pamphila his sweetheart well pleased,

"Nunc est probaebi interfide cum perpetui me possum, Ne hoc gaudium contaminet vita aliqua aeternitam." "He could find in his heart to be killed instantly, lest if he live longer, some sorrow or sickness should contaminate his joys." A little after, he was so merrily set upon the same occasion, that he could not contain himself.

"O populares, equis me vivit hoste fortunatio? Nemo herculae quaequam; nam in me dii plani potestatem Suam omnem ostendere;" "Is’t possible (O my countrymen) for any living to be so happy as myself? No sure it cannot be, for the gods have shown all their power, all their goodness in me." Yet by and by when this young gallant was crossed in his wench, he laments, and cries, and roars down-right: _Occidi—I am undone,

"Neque virgo est usquam, neque ego, qui est corrupta illam amasi meo, Ubi quaeram, ubi investigem, quem percutenter, quam insita tiam?"

"The virgin’s gone, and I am gone, she’s gone, she’s gone, and what shall I do? where shall I seek her, where shall I find her, whom shall I ask? what way, what course shall I take? what will become of me?" —_x_ _viales auras invisib. agebat, he was weary of his life, sick, mad, and desperate, \(^y\) utinam mihib esset aliquid hic, quo nunc me preceptum darem. 'Tis not Chserea’s case this alone, but his, and his, and every lover’s in the like state. If he hear ill news, have bad success in his suit, she frown upon him, or that his mistress in his presence

---

\(^2\) Seis quod posthoc dictarus faerim. \(^4\) Tom. 4. dial. meriti. Tryphena, amor me perdit, necpe malum hoc amplitus auctiore possit. \(^5\) Aristocrates, lib. 2. epist. 4. \(^6\) Celestina, act. 1. Sancti majori lasilla non frustrar. Si mihi Deus omnium voror mortuum aevum non concedat, non magis, &c. 
\(^7\) Catulhus de Laslia. \(^8\) Hor. ode 9, lib. 3. \(^9\) Act. 3. scen. 5. Eunuch. Ter. \(^5\) Act. 5. scen. 9. \(^x\) Mantuan. 
\(^7\) Ter. Adeiph. 3. 4.
respect another more (as Hædes observes) "prefer another suitor, speak more familiarly to him, or use more kindly than himself, if by nod, smile, message, she discloseth herself to another, he is instantly tormented, none so dejected as he is," utterly undone, a castaway, In quern fortuna omnia odiorum surorum crudelissima tela exonerat, a dead man, the scorn of fortune, a monster of fortune, worse than nought, the loss of a kingdom had been less. b Aretnes's Lucretia made very good proof of this, as she relates it herself. "For when I made some of my suitors believe I would betake myself to a nunery, they took on, as if they had lost father and mother, because they were for ever after to want my company." Omnes labores leves fuere, all other labour was light: "but this might not be endured. Tué carendum quod erat—" for I cannot be without thy company," mournful Amyntas, painful Amyntas, careful Amyntas; better a metropolitan city were sacked, a royal army overcome, an invincible armada sunk, and twenty thousand kings should perish, than her little finger ache, so zealous are they, and so tender of her good. They would all turn friars for my sake, as she does it, in hope by that means to meet, or see me again, as my confessors, at stool-ball, or at barley-break: And so aft-wards when an importunate suitor came, "If I had bid my maid say that I was not at leisure, not within, busy, could not speak with him, he was instantly astonished, and stood like a pillar of marble; another went swearing, chafing, cursing, foaming. e Ílla sibi vox ipse Jovis violenter irá, cum tonat, &c. the voice of a mandrake had been sweeter music: "but he to whom I gave entertainment, was in the Elysian fields, ravished for joy, quite beyond himself." Tis the general humour of all lovers, she is their stern, pole-star, and guide.

deliciumque animi, deliciumque sui. As a tulipant to the sun (which our herbalists call Narcissus) when it shines, is Admirandus flós ad radiis solis spavens, a glorious flower exposing itself; ½ but when the sun sets, or a tempest comes, it hides itself, pines away, and hath no pleasure left (which Carolus Gonzaga, Duke of Mantua, in a cause not unlike, sometimes used for an impress), do all inamorates to their mistress; she is their sun, their Primum mobile, or anima informans; this ½ one hath elegantly expressed by a windmill, still moved by the wind, which otherwise hath no motion of itself. Sic tua mi spirital grátia, truncaus ero. "He is wholly animated from her breath," his soul lives in her body, sola claves habet interitüi et salútis, she keeps the keys of his life: his fortune ebbs and flows with her favour, a gracious or bad aspect turns him up or down, Mens mea lucessit Lucia luce tui. Howsoever his present state be pleasing or displeasing, tis continuat so long as he ½ loves, he can do nothing, think of nothing but her; desire hath no rest, she is his cynosure, hesperus and vesper, his morning and evening star, his goddes, his mistress, his life, his soul, his everything; dreaming, waking, she is always in his mouth; his heart, his eyes, ears, and all his thoughts are full of her. His Laura, his Victortna, his Columbina, Flavia, Flaminia, Celia, Delia, or Isabella? (call her how you will), she is the sole object of his senses, the substance of his soul, nidulüs animae suae, he magnifies her above measure, totus in illa, full of her, can breathe nothing but her. "I adore Melebea," saith lovesick ½ Calisto, "I believe in Melebea, I honour, admire and love my Melebea," His soul was sossed, impardised, imprisone in his lady. When ½ Thais took her leave of Phaedria,——mi Phaedria, et nunquid aliquis vis? Sweet-

---

a Lib. 1. de contemn. amoribus. Si quem alium resperexeris amica suiavis, et familiarius, si quem aequo.

b Calisto in Celestina. b Porphidias, dia. tal. Patre et mater se singuli orbis censebant, quod meo contubernio carendum esset.

c Ter. cui carendum quod erat.

d Si responsum esset dominum occupatum esse, utique vacaret, ille statim vi

---

e Calisto de Melbea. K Anima non est ubi anima, sed ubi amat. 1 Celestia

f act. l. credo in Melbea, &c. 2 Ter. Erunch. act. l. & c. 2
heart (she said) will you command me any further service? he readily replied, and gave in this charge,

| “Dost ask (my dear) what service I will have? 
To love me day and night is all I crave, 
To dream on me, to expect, to think on me, 
Depend and hope, still covet me to see, 
Diligent thou'st in me, be wholly mine, 
For know, my love, that I am wholly thine.” |

But all this needed not, you will say; if she affect once, she will be his, settle her love on him, on him alone,

| “Biam absens absentem 
Audite videte” |

she can, she must think and dream of nought else but him, continually of him, as did Orpheus on his Eurydice,

| “Te dulcis conjux, 
Te solo in lucture mecum, 
Te veniens die, te discedente canebam.” |

| “On thee sweet wife was all my song, 
Morn, evening, and all along.” |

And Dido upon her Aeneas;

| “et qua me insomnia terrent, 
Multa viri virtus, et plurim currit image.” |

| “And ever and anon she thinks upon the man 
That was so fine, so fair, so blithe, so debonair.” |

Clitophon, in the first book of Achilles Tatius, complaineth how that his mistress Leucippe tormented him much more in the night than in the day.

| “For all day long he had some object or other to distract his senses, but in the night all ran upon her. 
All night long he lay asleep, and could think of nothing else but her, he could not get her out of his mind; towards morning, sleep took a little pity on him, he slumbered awhile, but all his dreams were of her.” |

| “In the dark night I speak, embrace, and find 
That fading joys deceive my careful mind.” |

The same complaint Eurialus makes to his Lucretia, “Day and night I think of thee, I wish for thee, I talk of thee, call on thee, look for thee, hope for thee, delight myself in thee, day and night I love thee.”

| “Nec mihi vesper 
Surgent decedunt amores, 
Nec rapidae fugientes solum.” |

Morning, evening, all is alike with me, I have restless thoughts, “Te vigilans nocte requiro.” Still I think on thee. Anima non est ubi animat, sed ubi amat. I live and breathe in thee, I wish for thee.

| “O niveum qua te poterit mihi reddere lacem, 
O mihi felicem terque quaterque diem.” |

“O happy day that shall restore thee to my sight.” In the meantime he raves on her; her sweet face, eyes, actions, gestures, hands, feet, speech, length, breadth, height, depth, and the rest of her dimensions, are so surveyed, measured, and taken, by that Astrolobe of phantasy, and that so violently sometimes, with such earnestness and eagerness, such continuance, so strong an imagination, that at length he thinks he sees her indeed; he talks with her, he embraceth her, Ixion-like, pro Junone rubem, a cloud for Juno, as he said. Nihil prater Leucippen cerno, Leucippe mihi perpetuo in oculis, et animo versatur, I see and meditate of nought but Leucippe. Be she present or absent, all is one;

| “Et quamvis ardent placida praesens formam, 
Quae aedefat praesens forma, manebat amor.” |

That impression of her beauty is still fixed in his mind——“Illerent infici 
psectore vulpes.” as he that is bitten with a mad dog thinks all he sees dogs—

| 3 Virg. 4. An. |
| 4 Interdum oculi, et aures occupatae distrahi animum, at noctu solus jactor, ad auroram somnum paulo miseratur, nec tamen ex animo paula abit, sed omina mihi de Leucippe somnia erant. |
| 5 Totae haec somnia hiece oculis non vidi. Ter. |
| 6 Hor. lib. 2. ode 9. |
| 7 Petronius. |
| 8 Tibullus, 1. 3. Eleg. 3. |
| 9 Ovid. Fast. 2. ver. 775. “Although the presence of her fair form is wanting, the love which it kindled remains.” |
| 10 Virg. 4. An. 4. |
dogs in his meat, dogs in his dish, dogs in his drink: his mistress is in his eyes, ears, heart, in all his senses. Valleriola had a merchant, his patient, in
the same predicament; and Ulricus Molitor, out of Austin, hath a story of
one, that through vehemency of his love passion, still thought he saw his mis-

tress present with him, she talked with him, Et commiseri cum ad vigilans
videbatur, still embracing him.

Now if this passion of love can produce such effects, if it be pleasantly in-
tended, what bitter torments shall it breed, when it is with fear and continual
sorrow, suspicion, care, agony, as commonly it is, still accompanied, what an
intolerable "pain must it be?"

"Monte Garzarus hath not so many stems
As lover's breast hath grievous wounds,
And linked cares, which love compounds."

When the king of Babylon would have punished a courtier of his, for loving of
a young lady of the royal blood, and far above his fortunes, Apollonius in
presence by all means persuaded to let him alone; "For to love and not enjoy
was a most unspeakable torment," no tyrant could invent the like punishment;
and as a gnat at a candle, in a short space he would consume himself. For love is
a perpetual "flux, angor animi, a warfare, militat omni amans, a grievous
wound is love still, and a lover's heart is Cupid's quiver, a consuming fire,
accede ad hunc ignem, &c. an inextinguishable fire.

As Ætna rageth, so doth love, and more than Ætna or any material fire.

"Nam amor sape Lypraco
Vulcano ardentiorum flamman incendere soleat."

Vulcan's flames are but smoke to this. For fire, saith Xenophon, burns
them alone that stand near it, or touch it; but this fire of love burneth and
scorcheth afar off, and is more hot and vehement than any material fire: "Ignis
in igne furit, 'tis a fire in a fire, the quintessence of fire. For when Nero
burnt Rome, as Calisto urgeth, he fired houses, consumed men's bodies and
goods; but this fire devours the soul itself and one soul is worth a hundred
thousands bodies." No water can quench this wild fire.

"I in pecus coccos absorbit ignes,
Quos nec aqua permuta potere, nec umbre
Dinimius, neque granimalibus, magiscasque susurras." | "A fire he took into his breast,
Ignis qui nec aqua permuta potere, nec umbre
Diminius, neque granimalibus, magiscasque susurras."

Except it be tears and sighs, for so they may chance find a little ease.

"m Sic candens colla, sic patens frontis,
Sic me blandis tu Neerae oculi,
Sic pares mino genua permun,
Ut ego tibi lasciviae vigent peranes,
Tota in teuis sem simulati."

"So thy white neck, Neera, me poor soul
Doth search, thy cheeks, thy wanent eyes that roll:
Were it not for my dropping tears that hinder,
I should be quite burnt up withwith to thinder."

This fire strikes like lightning, which made those old Grecians paint Cupid, in
many of their "temples, with Jupiter's thunderbolts in his hands; for it wounds
and cannot be perceived how, whence it came, where it pierced. "Urimum,
et caecum pectora vulnera habent," and can hardly be discerned at first,

"P Est mollis flamma medullas,
Et tectum insano vivit sub pectoro vulnera."

"A gentle wound, an easy fire it was,
And fly at first, and scarcely did pass."

De Pythoneissa. | Juno, nec tra defunt tautum, nec tela, nec bodis, quantum tute potis animi
Siluis Ital. 15. hel. Pudic. de amore. | Philostratus vita ejus.
Philostratus vita ejus. | Maximum tormentum quod
Sec. | excipiatur, vel docer te possum, estipse amor.
P. Tert. Enn. | Ausonius, c. 35.
A. Ausonius, c. 35. | Et carpen carptur igne; et mihi
Xen. Hippol. | Et caeco carptur igne; et mihi
Sec. | esse offerit utra mens ignis amynios.
Theocr. ed. 2. | Ter. Enn. | Levibus
ter est viables tela.
A. Ausonius, c. 35. | Levibus
cor est viables tela. | et mihi
Sec. | tangentes solum uirt, at forma procul stantes infamatur.
Livy. | Ignoten.
lit. 1. | Major illa flamma que consumit utam animam, quam quae centum milia corporum.
Ovid. | Marullus, Epig. lib. 1.
Sec. | Imagines deorum.
Ovid. | P. Aemid. 4.

But by-and-by it began to rage and burn amain;

"This fiery vapour rages in the veins,
And scorches entrails, as when fire burns
A house, it mildly runs along the beams,
And at the last the whole is overturned."

Abraham Hoffmannus, lib. 1, amor conjugal, cap. 2. p. 22, relates out of Plato, how that Empedocles, the philosopher, was present at the cutting up of one that died for love, "his heart was combust, his liver smoky, his lungs dried up, in somuch that he verily believed his soul was either sodden or roasted through the vehemency of love's fire." Which belike made a modern writer of amorous emblems express love's fury by a pot hanging over the fire, and Cupid blowing the coals. As the heat consumes the water, "Sic sua consumit viscera cecus amor," so doth love dry up his radical moisture. Another compares love to a melting torch, which stood too near the fire.

"The nearer he unto his mistress is,
The nearer he unto his ruin is."

So that to say truth, as Castilio describes it, "The beginning, middle, end of love is nothing else but sorrow, vexation, agony, torment, irksomeness, wearisomeness; so that to be squalid, ugly, miserable, solitary, discontented, dejected, to wish for death, to complain, rave, and to be peevish, are the certain signs and ordinary actions of a love-sick person." This continual pain and torture makes them forget themselves, if they be far gone with it, in doubt, despair of obtaining, or eagerly bent, to neglect all ordinary business.

Love-sick Dido left her work undone, so did Phædra,

"Palladis telae vacant
Et inter ignis penna Laibutam manus."

Faustus, in Mantuan, took no pleasure in any thing he did,

"Nulla quies mihi dulcis erat, nullus labor agro
Peetora, sensus iners, et mens tepore sepsula,
Curvatis occidentat aurum."

And 'tis the humour of them all, to be careless of their persons and their estates, as the shepherd in Theocritus, Et hace barba incluta est, squaëtide cupilli, their beards flag, and they have no more care of pranking themselves or of any business, they care not, as they say, which end goes forward.

"Civitasque grage, et tura domestica totus
Currit, et notos in lactum expendit amaros."

"Forgetting flocks of sheep and country farms,
The silly shepherd always burns and burns."

Love-sick Cherea, when he came from Pamphila's house, and had not so good welcome as he did expect, was all amort, Parmeno meets him, Quid tristis es? Why art thou so sad man? unde es? whence comest, how doest? but he sadly replies, Ego hincus nescio quae unde eam, quae quoque eam, ita prorueus olibus sum mei, I have so forgotten myself, I neither know where I am, nor whence I come, nor whither I will, what I do. P. "How so?" Ch. "I am in love." Frudens seicns. "...vivus vidensque pere, nec quid agam scio." "He that erst had his thoughts free (as Philostratus Lemnius, in an
epistle of his, describes this fiery passion), and spent his time like a hard student, in those delightful philosophical precepts; he that with the sun and moon wandered all over the world, with stars themselves ranged about, and left no secret or small mystery in nature unsearched, since he was enamoured can do nothing now but think and meditate of love matters, day and night compose himself how to please his mistress; all his study, endeavour, is to approve himself to his mistress, to win his mistress' favour, to compass his desire, to be counted her servant." When Peter Abelard, that great scholar of his age, "Qui soli patuit scibile quicquid erat" ("whose faculties were equal to any difficulty in learning"), was now in love with Heloise, he had no mind to visit or frequent schools and scholars any more, Taddeus mihi vale valde fiat (as he confessed) ad scholas procedere, vel in his morar, his mind was on his new mistress.

Now to this end and purpose, if there be any hope of obtaining his suit, to prosecute his cause, he will spend himself, goods, fortunes for her, and though he lose and alienate all his friends, he threatened, be cast off, and disinherited; for as the poet saith, *Amor quis laem det?* though he be utterly undone by it, disgraced, go a begging, yet for her sweet sake, to enjoy her, he will willingly beg, hazard all he hath, goods, lands, shame, scandal, fame, and life itself.

*Non reccedam neque gulescam, noctu et interdum,\* Puis profecto quam aut ipseam, aut mortem investigavero." | *I'll never rest or cease my suit Till she or death do make me mute.*

Parthenis in *Aristaneetus* was fully resolved to do as much. "I may have better matches, I confess but farewell shame, farewell honour, farewell honesty, farewell friends and fortunes, &c. O, Harpedona, keep my counsel, I will leave all for her sweet sake, I will have him say no more, contra gentes, I am resolved, I will have him." *Obrias, the captain, when he had espied Rodanthe, the fair captive maid, fell upon his knees before Mystilius, the general, with tears, vows, and all the rhetoric he could, by the scars he had formerly received, the good service he had done, or whatsoever else was dear unto him besought his governor he might have the captive virgin to be his wife, virtutis succ speliaum, as a reward of his worth and service; and, moreover, he would forgive him the money which was owing, and all reckonings besides due unto him, "I ask no more, no part of booty, no portion, but Rhodanthe to be my wife." And when as he could not compass her by fair means, he fell to treachery, force and villany, and set his life at stake at last to accomplish his desire. "Tis a common humour this, a general passion of all lovers to be so affected, and which *Emilia* told *Aratine*, a courtier in Castilio's discourse, "surely Aratine, if thou worst not so indeed, thou didst not love; ingenuously confess, for if thou hadst been thoroughly enamoured, thou wouldst have desired nothing more than to please thy mistress. For that is the law of love, to will and nill the same." "Tantum velle et nolle, velit non velit quod amice."

Undoubtedly this may be pronounced of them all, they are very slaves, drudges for the time, madmen, fools, dizzards, amatibilium, beside themselves, and as blind as beetles. Their *dotage is most eminent, Amore simul et sapere ipsi Jovi non datur, as Seneca holds, Jupiter himself cannot love and be wise both together; the very best of them, if once they be overtaken with this passion, the most staid, discreet, grave, generous and wise, otherwise able to

1. Pars epitaphii ejus.
2. Epist. prima.
3. Boethius, i, 3, Met. ult.
4. Epist. lib. 6, Valerat pudor, valent honestas, valent homin.
7. *Quippe hanc comam ex ata bile et amore proveniunt.*
9. Immune.
govern themselves, in this commit many absurdities, many indecorums, unbefitting their gravity and persons.

“Quis quis amat servit, sequitur captivus amantem, 
   Fort domina service juvam.”

“Samson, David, Solomon, Hercules, Socrates,” &c. are justly taxed of indiscretion in this point; the middle sort are between hawk and buzzard; and although they do perceive and acknowledge their own dotage, weakness, fury, yet they cannot withstand it; as well may witness those expostulations and confessions of Dido in Virgil.

Again

Pervigil igne
   Carpitor Indomito, furvoque voce retratata,
   Et modo desperat, modo vis tentata, paloque
   Et cupit, et quid agit, non invaeit,” &c.

She will and will not, abhors; and yet as Medea did, doth it,

"Talalt invitat nova vis, aluquaque cupido,
   Mens aliud susset; video meliora proboque,
   Deieria sequor.”

"O o frons, amanque, et mentis emote furor,
   Quae me abstrahisa?"

The major part of lovers are carried headlong like so many brute beasts, reason counsels one way, thy friends, fortunes, shame, disgrace, danger, and an ocean of cares that will certainly follow; yet this furious lust precipitates, counterpoiseth, weighs down on the other; though it be their utter undoing, perpetual infamy, loss, yet they will do it, and become at last insensati, void of sense; degenerate into dogs, hogs, asses, brutes; as Jupiter into a bull, Apuleius an ass, Lycaon a wolf, Tereus a lapwing. Calisto a bear, Elponor, and Grillus into swine by Circe. For what else may we think those ingenious poets to have shadowed in their witty fictions and poems but that a man once given over to his lust (as Fulgentius interprets that of Apuleius, Alciat of Tereus) “is no better than a beast.”

Their blindness is all out as great, as manifest as their weakness and dotage, or rather an inseparable companion, an ordinary sign of it, blove is blind, as the saying is, Cupid’s blind, and so are all his followers. Quisquis amat ranam, ranam putat esse Dianam. Every lover admires his mistress, though she be very deformed of herself, ill-favoured, wrinkled, pimpled, pale, red, yellow, tanned, tallow-faced, have a swollen juggler’s platter face, or a thin, lean, chitty face, have clouds in her face, be crooked, dry, bald, goggle-eyed, blear-eyed, or with staring eyes, she looks like a squaw cat, hold her head still awry, heavy, dull, hollow-eyed, black or yellow about the eyes, or squint-eyed, sparrow-mouthed, Persian hook-nosed, have a sharp fox nose, a red nose, China flat, great nose nare simo patulque, a nose like a promontory, gubber-tushed, rotten teeth, black, uneven, brown teeth, beetle browed, a witch’s beard, her breath stink all over the room, her nose drop winter and summer, with a Bavarian poke under her chin, a sharp chin, lave eared, with a long

*Manua. “Whoever is in love is in slavery; he follows his sweetheart as a captive his captor, and wears a yoke on his submissive neck.”

Virg. Aen. 4. “She began to speak, but stopped in the middle of her discourse.”

Seneca Hippol. “What reason requires raging love forbids.”

Met. 10.­

Bucullan. “Oh fraud, and love, and distraction of mind, whither have you led me?”

An Immodest woman is like a bear.

Peram induit domos comedit, idem ad se redate.

Aeolus de appula Emb. Animal immunum uppa stercore ansam; ave hie nihil fedens, nihil hidienens. Sabbin in Ovid. Met.

Love is like a false glass, which represents every thing fairer than it is.
crane's neck, which stands awry too, *pendulis mammis,* "her dugs like two double jugs," or else no dugs, in that other extreme, bloody fallen fingers, she have filthy, long unpared nails, scabbed hands or wrists, a tanned skin, a rotten carcass, crooked back, she stoops, is lame, splea-footed, "as slender in the middle as a cow in the waist," gouty legs, her ankles hang over her shoes, her feet stink, she breed lice, a mere changeling, a very monster, an oaf imperfect, her whole complexion savours, a harsh voice, incondite gestures, vile gait, a vast virago, or an ugly tit, a slug, a fat fustylugs, a truss, a long lean raw-bone, a skeleton, a sneaker (*si qua latant meliora puta*), and to thy judgment looks like a mard in a lantern, whom thou couldst not fancy for a world, but hastest, loathest, and wouldst have spit in her face, or blow thy nose in her bosom, *remedium amoris* to another man, a dowdy, a slut, a scold, a nasty, rank, rammy, filthy, beastly queen, dishonest peradventure, obscene, base, beggarly, rude, foolish, untaught, peevish, *Irus' daughter, Thersites' sister,* Grobian's scholar, if he love her once, he admires her for all this, he takes no notice of any such errors, or imperfections of body and mind, *ipsa haec—delectant, veluti Balbinaeum Polypus Agnae;* he had rather have her than any woman in the world. If he were a king, she alone should be his queen, his empress. O that he had but the wealth and treasure of both the Indies to endow her with, a carrack of diamonds, a chain of pearl, a cascanet of jewels (a pair of calf-skin gloves of four-pence a pair were fitter), or some such toy, to send her for a token, she should have it with all his heart; he would spend myriads of crowns for her sake. Venus herself, Panthera, Cleopatra, Tarquin's Tanaquil, Herod's Mariamne, or Mary of Burgundy, if she were alive, would not match her.

"*Vincit vulnus haec Tyndaros, qui movenunt horrida bella."*

Let Paris himself be judge) renowned Helen comes short, that Rodopeian Phillis, Larissaeon Coronis, Babylonian Thisbe, Polixena, Laura, Lesbia, &c., your counterfeit ladies were never so fair as she is.

"*Quicquid erit pliceti, lepedit, gratt, atque facetii, Vivida contorcurm retines Pandora deorum.*"

"*Diebam Triviae fornam nihil esse Diana.*" Diana was not to be compared to her, nor Juno, nor Minerva, nor any goddess. Thetis' feet were as bright as silver, the ankles of Hebe clearer than crystal, the arms of Aurora as redly as the rose, Juno's breasts as white as snow, Minerva wise, Venus fair; but what of this? Dainty come thou to me: She is all in all,

"*I Fairest of fair, that fairness doth excel.*"

Ephemerus in Aristaeus, so far admireth his mistress' good parts, that he makes proclamation of them, and challengeth all comers in her behalf. *Whoever saw the beauties of the east, or of the west, let them come from all quarters, all, and tell truth, if ever they saw such an excellent feature as this is." A good fellow in Petronius cries out, no tongue can tell his lady's fine feature, or express it, *quicquid dixeris minus erit.*

"*No tongue can her perfections tell, In whose each part, all tongues may dwell.*"

Most of your lovers are of his humour and opinion. She is *nulla secunda,* a rare creature, a phoenix, the sole commandress of his thoughts, queen of his

---

6 Hor. sat. lib. sat. 1. 3. "These very things please him, as the wen of Agna did Balbinus." 7 The daughter and heir of Carolus Paganus. 8 Seneca in Octavia. "Her beauty excels the Tyndarian Helen's, which caused such dreadful wars." 9 Loechous. 10 Mantuan. Eg. 1. 11 Angerianus. 12 Fabric Quenee, Cant. lyr. 4. 13 Epist. 12. "Quis unquam formas vidit orientis, quis occidentis, veniant medique omnes, et decent veraces, an tana insignem viderint formam." 14 Nulla vox formam ejus possit comprehender. 15
Symptoms of Love.

desires, his only delight: as Triton now feelingly sings that love-sick seagod:
"Candida Lenaethoe placet, et placet atra Melane, Sed Galatea placet longe magis omnibus una." | "Fair Lenaethoe, black Melane please me well, But Galatea doth by odds the rest excel." 
---
All the gracious elogies, the metaphors, hyperbolical comparisons of the best things in the world, the most glorious names; whatsoever, I say, is pleasant, amiable, sweet, grateful, and delicious, are too little for her.
"Phoebe palchrior et sorore Phoebi." | "His Phoebe is so fair, she is so bright, She dins the sun's lustre, and the moon's light."
---
Stars, sun, moons, metals, sweet-smelling flowers, odours, perfumes, colours, gold, silver, ivory, pearls, precious stones, snow, painted birds, doves, honey, sugar, spice, cannot express her; so soft, so tender, so radiant, sweet, so fair is she.——Mollior cuniculi capillo, &c.
---
Such a description our English Homer makes of a fair lady:

P That Emma that was fairer to see, Then is lily upon the stock green: And fresher then May with flowers nay, For withe rose-colour strove her hue, I not which was the fairer of the two.

In this very phrase Polyphemus courts Galatea:
"Candidior folio uiril Galatea ligasti, Floridior prato, longa procerior alna, Splendidior vitro, tenero lascivior hede. &c. Mollior et cygni plenis, et lacte coacto " | "Whiter Galet than the white white-wing, Fresher than a field, higher than a true, Brighter than glass, more wanton than a kid, Sofer than swan's down, or ought that may be."
---
So she admires him again, in that conceited dialogue of Lucian, which John Secundus, an elegant Dutch modern poet, hath translated into verse. When Doris and those other seannymphs upbraided her with her ugly misshapen lover, Polyphemus; she replies, they speak out of envy and malice,
"Et plani invia hue mera vos stimulare videtur, Quod non vos itidem ut me Polyphemus amet:"
---
Say what they could, he was a proper man. And as Heloise writ to her sweetheart Peter Abelard, Si me Augustus orbis imperator uxorern expverterat, mallem tua esse meretrix quam orbis imperatrix; she had rather he his vassal, his queen, than the world's empress or queen,—non si me Jupiter ipse forte velt,—she would not change her love for Jupiter himself.
---
To thy thinking she is most loathsome creature; and as when a country fellow discommended once that exquisite picture of Helen, made by Zeuxis, for he saw no such beauty in it; Nichomachus a love-sick spectator replied, Sume tibi meos oculos et deem existinabils, take mine eyes, and thou wilt think she is a goddess, dote on her forthwith, count all her vices virtues; her imperfections, infirmities, absolute and perfect: if she be flat-nosed, she is lovely; if hook-nosed, kingly; if dwarffish and little, pretty; if tall, proper and man-like, our brave British Boadicea; if crooked, wise; if monstrous, comely; her defects are no defects at all, she hath no deformities. Innomine ipsum amice stercus fetet, though she be nasty, fulsome, as Sostratus' bitch, or Parmeno's sow; thou hadst as lieve have a snake in thy bosom, a toad in thy dish, and callest her witch, devil, hag, with all the filthy names thou canst invent; he admires her on the other side, she is his idol, lady, mistress, venerella, queen, the quintessence of beauty, an angel, a star, a goddess.

"Thou art my Vesta, thou my goddess art, Thy hallowed temple only is my heart."
The fragrance of a thousand courtisans is in her face: "Nec pulchrae effigies, nec Cypridis aut Stratonices, *tis not Venus' picture that, nor the Spanish infanta's, as you suppose (good sir), no princess, or king's daughter: no, no, but his divine mistress, forsooth, his dainty Dulcinea, his dear Antiphila, to whose service he is wholly consecrate, whom he alone adores.

"Cui comparatis indecens erit puro, Inamabilis scintus, et frequens Phoenix."  
"To whom confer'd a peacock's indecent, A squirrel's harish, a phoenix too frequent."

All the graces, veneries, elegancies, pleasures, attend her. He prefers her before a myriad of court ladies.

"He that commends Phyllis or Nerissa, Or Amarillis, or Galatea, Titurus or Melbea, by your leave, Let him be mute, his love the praises have."  
"He that commends Phyllis or Nerissa, Or Amarillis, or Galatea, Titurus or Melbea, by your leave, Let him be mute, his love the praises have."

Nay, before all the gods and goddesses themselves. So Quintus Catullus admired his squat-eyed friend Roscius.

"Face mihi liete (Carleste) dicere vestra, Mortalis visus pulchrior esse Dec."  
"By your leave, gentle Gods, this I'll say true, There's none of you that have so fair a hue."

All the bombast epithets, pathetical adjuncts, incomparably fair, curiously neat, divine, sweet, dainty, delicious, &c., pretty diminutives, corculum, suarnodium, &c. pleasant names may be invented, bird, mouse, lamb, paws, pigeon, pigmy, kid, honey, love, dove, chicken, &c. he puts on her.

"Meum mei, mea suavis, meum cor, Meum suarnodium, meus iuropea."  
"My life, my light, my jewel, my glory,"  
"Margareta speciosa, cujus respectu omnia mundi pretiosa sordent, my sweet Margaret, my sole delight and darling. And as Rhodamont courted Isabella:

"By all kind words and gestures that he might, He calls her his dear heart, his sole beloved, His joyful comfort, and his sweet delight."

His mistress, and his goddess, and such names, As loving knights apply to lovely dames."

Every cloth she wears, every fashion pleaseth him above measure; her hand, O quales digitos, quos habet illa manus! pretty foot, pretty coronets, her sweet carriage, sweet voice, tone, O that pretty tone, her divine and lovely looks, her every thing, lovely, sweet, amiable, and pretty, pretty, pretty. Her very name (let it be what it will) is a most pretty, pleasing name; I believe now there is some secret power and virtue in names, every action, sight, habit, gesture; he admires, whether she play, sing, or dance, in what tires soever she goeth, how excellent it was, how well it became her, never the like seen or heard.  
"Mille habet ornatus, millet decerit habet. Let her wear what she will, do what she will, say what she will, Quicquid enim dicit, seu factit, omne decet. He applauds and admires everything she wears, saith or doth,"

"Ejus quicquid agit, quodque vestigia verit, Composit furritum subequisquiturque decor; Sex solvit crines, fusi decet esse capillis, Sex compact, composites cat reverenda comit."  
"Whate'er she doth, or whither e'er she go. A sweet and pleasing grace attends forsooth Or loose, or bind her hair, or comb it up, She's to be honoured in what she doth."

"Vestem induitur, formosa est: exuitur, tota forma est, let her be dressed or undressed, all is one, she is excellent still, beautiful, fair, and lovely to behold. Women do as much by men; nay more, far fonder, weaker, and that by many parasangs. "Come to me, my dear Lycias" (saith Museus in Aristides, "come quickly, sweet heart, all other men are saturns, mere clowns, blockheads to thee, nobody to thee." Thy looks, words, gestures, actions, &c., "are incomparably beyond all others." Venus was never so much besotted on her Adonis, Phaëdra so delighted in Hippolitus, Ariadne in Theseus, Thysbe in her Pyramus, as she is enamoured on her Mopsus.

"Be thou the marygold, and I will be the sun, Be thou the star, and I will be the moon."
I could repeat centuries of such. Now tell me what greater dotage or blindness can there be than this in both sexes? and yet their "slavery" is more eminent, a greater sign of their folly than the rest.

They are commonly slaves, captives, voluntary servants, Amator amico mancipium, as Castigio terms him, his mistress' servant, her drudge, prisoner, bondman, what not? He composes himself wholly to her affections to please her, and as Æmilia said, makes himself her lacquey. All his eares, actions, all his thoughts, are subordinate to her will and commandment: her most devote, obsequious, affectionate servant and vassal. "For love" (as Cyrus in Xenophon well observed) "is a mere tyranny, worse than any disease, and they that are troubled with it desire to be free and cannot, but are harder bound than if they were in iron chains." What greater captivity or slavery can there be (as Tully expostulates) than to be in love? "Is he a free man over whom a woman domineers, to whom she prescribes laws, commands, forbids what she will herself; that dares deny nothing she demands; she asks, he gives; she calls, he comes; she threatens, he fears; Necessitatem habe servum puto, I account this man a very drudge." And as he follows, "Is this no small servitude for an enanourite to be every hour combing his head, stiffening his beard, perfuming his hair, washing his face with sweet water, painting, curling, and not to come abroad but sprucely crowned, decked, and apparelled?" Yet these are but toys in respect, to go to the barber, baths, theatres, &c., he must attend upon her wherever she goes, run along the streets by her doors and windows to see her, take all opportunities, sleeveless errands, disguise, counterfeit shapes, and as many forms as Jupiter himself ever took; and come every day to her house (as he will surely do if he be truly enamoured) and offer her service, and follow her up and down from room to room, as Lucretia's suitors did, he cannot contain himself but he will do it, he must and will be where she is, sit next her, still talking with her. "If I did but let my glove fall by chance" (as the said Areta's Lucretia brags), "I had one of my suitors, nay two or three at once ready to stoop and pick it up, and kiss it, and with a low congé deliver it unto me; if I would walk, another was ready to sustain me by the arm. A third to provide fruits, pears, plums, cherries, or whatsoever I would eat or drink." All this and much more he doth in her presence, and when he comes home, as Troilus to his Cressida, 'tis all his meditation to recount with himself his actions, words, gestures, what entertainment he had, how kindly she used him in such a place, how she smiled, how she graced him, and that infinitely pleased him; and then he breaks out, O sweet Areusa, O my dearest Antipha, O most divine looks, O lovely graces, and thereupon instantly he makes an epigram, or a sonnet to five or seven tunes, in her commendation, or else he ruminates how she rejected his service, denied him a kiss, disgraced him, &c., and that as effectually torments him. And these are his exercises between comb and glass, madrigals, elegies, &c., these his cogitations till he see her again. But all this is easy and gentle, and the least part of his labour and bondage, no hunter will take such pains for his game, Fowler for his sport, or soldier to sack a city, as he will for his mistresse' favour.

4 Ipsa comes veniam, neque me salebrosa movebunt

Sixa, nec obliquo dente timendus aper."

1 Lib. 3. de aulico, alterius affectui se tetam composit, totus placere atude, et ipsius animam amasse pedis-

2 sequentium. k Cyropaed. 1. 6. amor servitut, et qui solem gnant en liberari non seca aulo quovis

3 murro, neque liberari tamen sunt, et validiores necessitates ligati sunt quam si in ferrea vultu confecto

4 forent. 1. In paradoxo. An ille mei liber videtur cui nihil imperat? Cui leges imposit, praebit, iubet,

5 velit quod videtur. Qui nihil imperandi negat, nihil audit, quic poscit? duosum; vocat? veniendum;

6 minatur? exemptiuscunque. k Ille pavor est servant omnium singulis fere bonus pater captivum, calamistico barbaro componeer, factem aquis redolentibus diluere, &c.

8 Si quando in pavimentum levitant quis mei excitat, elevare inde quarn promissione, nec nisi exsto compacto mihi commendare, &c. k "Nor will the rude rocks affright me, nor the crooked-tusked bear, so that I shall not visit my

1 mistresse in pleasant mood."
As Phaedra to Hippolitus. No danger shall affright, for if that be true the poets feign, Love is the son of Mars and Venus; as he hath delights, pleasures, elegances from his mother, so hath he hardness, valour, and boldness from his father. And 'tis true that Bernard hath; *Amores nihil mollius, nihil violentius,* nothing so boisterous, nothing so tender as Love. If once, therefore, enamoured, he will go, run, ride many a mile to meet her, day and night, in a very dark night, endure scorching heat, cold, wait in frost and snow, rain, tempest, till his teeth chatter in his head, those northern winds and showers cannot cool or quench his flame of love. *Intempestés nocte non deterrestur,* he will, take my word, sustain hunger, thirst, *Penetritā omnīa, perrempet omnia,* “love will find out a way,” through thick and thin he will to her, *Expeditionis velint videntur amnes tranibiles,* he will swim through an ocean, ride post over the Alps, Apennines, or Pyrenean hills,

“Pleon marisque fluctus, atque turbinis
Venti paratus est transire.”

though it rain daggers with their points downward, light or dark, all is one.—
(Roscidae per tendras Fauvus ad antra venit,) for her sweet sake he will undertake Hercules’s twelve labours, endure, hazard, &c., he feels it not. “What shall I say,” saith Hecules, “of their great dangers they undergo, single combats they undertake, how they will venture their lives, creep in at windows, gutters, climb over walls to come to their sweethearts” (anointing the doors and hinges with oil, because they should not creeke, tread soft, swim, wade, watch, &c.), “and if they be surprised, leap out at windows, cast themselves headlong down, bruising or breaking their legs or arms, and sometimes losing life itself,” as Calisto did for his lovely Melibea. Hear some of their own confessions, protestations, complaints, proffers, expostulations, wishes, brutish attempts, labours in this kind. Hercules served Omphale, put on an apron, took a distaff and spin: Thraso the soldier was so submissive to Thais, that he was resolved to do whatever she enjoined. *Ego me Thaisi dedam, et factam quod jubet, I am at her service.* Philostratus in an epistle to his mistress, *4* I am ready to die, sweetheart, if it be thy will; alloy his thirst whom thy star hath scorched and undone, the fountains and rivers deny no man drink that comes; the fountain doth not say thou shalt not drink, nor the apple thou shalt not eat, nor the fair meadow walk not in me, but thou alone wilt not let me come near thee, or see thee, contemned and despised I die for grief.” Poliennus, when his mistress Circe did but frown upon him in Petronius, drew his sword, and bade her kill, stab, or whip him to death, he would strip himself naked, and not resist. Another will take a journey to Japan, *Longae navigationis molestis non curans:* a third (if she say it) will not speak a word for a twelvemonth’s space, her command shall be most inviolably kept: a fourth will take Hercules’s club from him, and with that centurion in the Spanish *Cælestina, will kill ten men for his mistress Areusa,* for a word of her mouth he will cut bucklers in two like pippins, and flap down men like flies, *Elige quo mortis genere illum occidi cupis.* *5* Galetins of Mantua did a little more: for when he was almost mad for love of a fair maid in the city, she, to try him belike what he would do for her sake, bade him in jest leap into the river Po if he loved her; he forthwith did leap headlong off the bridge and was drowned. Another at Ficinus in like passion, when his mistress by chance (thinking no harm I dare swear) bade him go hang, the

1. Flutarchus, amat. dial.
2. Lib. 1. de contum. amor, quid referam eorum pericula et clades, qui in amicilibus miles per fenestras ingressi stillicidiaque exsorci indeque deumbati, sed aut praecipe, membra fragant, collisum, aut amnum ambint.
4. Paratus sum ad obeundum mortem, si tu Jubaes; bane sitim aeternam seda, quam tuum skias perfidit, aquae et fontes non neant. 5. *Si occidere placeat, forum munem videi, si verberibus contessa eis, curro nudi ad pannum.*
6. Act. 15. 18. Impera nihil; occasum decem viris, &c.
7. Gasper Ens. psallium minora depuraveris, per jocum ab ea in Pudum desilivi iussus staiim e ponere se; racpicitavit. *Alius Ficinus insiue amore arcens ab amica iussus se suspendere, lillo teit.*
next night at her doors hanged himself. "Money (saith Xenophon) is a very acceptable and welcome guest, yet I had rather give it my dear Clinia than take it of others, I had rather serve him than command others, I had rather be his drudge than take my ease, undergo any danger for his sake than live in security. For I had rather see Clinia than all the world besides, and had rather want the sight of all other things than him alone; I am angry with the night and sleep that I may not see him, and thank the light and sun because they show me my Clinia: I will run into the fire for his sake, and if you did but see him, I know that you likewise would run with me." So Philostratus to his mistress, "Command me what you will, I will do it; bid me go to sea, I am gone in an instant, take so many stripes, I am ready, run through the fire, and lay down my life and soul at thy feet, 'tis done." So did Æolus to Juno.

"—Tunc o regina quod optas
Explorare labor, mihi iussa capescere fas est." | "O queen it is thy pains to enjoin me still,
And I bound to execute thy will."

And Phedra to Hippolitus,
Me vel sororem Hippolite aut famulam voca,
Famulamque potius, omne servitium feram." | "O call me sister, call me servant, choose,
Or rather servant, I am thine to use."

"Non me per altera ire si jubebas nives,
Pigeat galatis ingredi tibi jacta,
Non si per ianes ire aut inferos armina
Cunctur, paratus bensibus pectus dare,
Te tunc jubere, me decet iussa eexequi."

"It shall not grieve me to the snowy hills,
Or frozen Phebus' tops forthwith to climb,
Or run through fire, or through an angry
Say but the word, for I am always thine."

Callicratides in "Lucian breaks out into this passionate speech, "O God of Heaven, grant me this life for ever to sit over against my mistress, and to hear her sweet voice, to go in and out with her, to have every other business common with her; I would labour when she labours, sail when she sails; he that hates her should hate me; and if a tyrant kill her, he should kill me; if she should die, I would not live, and one grave should hold us both."

"Veniit illa meos moriens morientis amores. Abrocomus in "Aristenetus makes the like petition for his Delphia,—"Tecum vivere amam, tecum obeam lubens. I desire to live with thee, and I am ready to die with thee." 'Tis the same strain which Theagines used to his Claricida, "so that I may but enjoy thy love, let me die presently:" Leander to his Hero, when he besought the sea waves to let him go quietly to his love, and kill him coming back. "Pervite dum propero, mergite dum redeo. "Spare me whilst I go, drown me as I return." 'Tis the common humour of them all, to contemn death, to wish for death, to confront death in this case, Quwpe quets nec fiera, nec ignis, neque precipiitum, nec frustum, nec ensis, neque laqueus graviam videntur; "'Tis their desire" (saith Tyrius) "to die."

"Handi tem mortem, cupid ire in ipso
obius esse."
or moment of death, 'tis their sole comfort to remember their dear mistress, as Zerbino slain in France, and Brandimart in Barbary; as Arcite did his Emily.

1When Captain Gobrius by an unlucky accident had received his death's wound, *heu me miserum exclamat,* miserable man that I am, (instead of other devotions) he cries out, shall I die before I see my sweetheart Rodanthe? *Sis amor mortem* (saith mine author) *aut quicquid humanitus accidit, aspernatur,* so love triumphs, contemns, insults over death itself. Thirteen proper young men lost their lives for that fair Hippodamias' sake, the daughter of Onomaus, king of Elis: when that hard condition was proposed of death or victory, they made no account of it, but courageously for love died, till Pelops at last won her by a sleight. m As many gallants desperately adventure their dearest blood for Atalanta, the daughter of Schemius, in hope of marriage, all vanquished and overcame, till Hippomenes by a few golden apples happily obtained his suit. Persseus, of old, fought with a sea monster for Andromeda's sake; and our St. George freed the king's daughter of Sabea (the golden legend is mine author) that was exposed to a dragon, by a terrible combat. Our knights errant, and the Sir Lancelots of these days, I hope will adventure as much for ladies' favours, as the Squire of Dames, Knight of the Sun, Sir Bevis of Southampton, or that renowned peer,

"**Orlando, who long time had loved dear**
Angeles the fair, and for her sake
About the world in nations far and near,
Did high attempts perform and undertake."

he is a very dastard, a coward, a block and a beast, that will not do as much, but they will sure, they will; for it is an ordinary thing for these inamorates of our time to say and do more, to stab their arms, carouse in blood, or as that Thessalian Thero, that bit off his own thumb, *provocans rivalm ad hoc cemulandum,* to make his co-rival do as much. 'Tis frequent with them to challenge the field for their lady and mistress' sake, to run a tilt,

"*But either bears (so fiercely they meet)*
The other down under the horses' feet,"

and then up and to it again,

"*And with their axes both so sorely pour;*
That neither plate nor mail sustaint the stourd,
But rivecl wreak like rotten wood asunder,
And fire did flash like lightning after thunder;*

and in her quarrel, to fight so long "*till their head-piece, bucklers be all broken, and swords hacked like so many saws,*" for they must not see her abused in any sort, 'tis blasphemy to speak against her, a dishonour without all good respect to name her. 'Tis common with these creatures, to drink' healths upon their bare knees, though it were a mile to the bottom, no matter of what mixture, off it comes. If she bid them they will go barefoot to Jerusalem, to the great Cham's court, *to the East Indies to fetch her a bird to wear in her hat; and with Drake and Cavendish sail round about the world for her sweet sake, adversis ventis, serve twice seven years as Jacob did for Rachel; do as much as Gesmunda, the daughter of Tancredus, prince of Salernia, did for Guisardus, her true love, eat his heart when he died; or as

---

1 Ariosto. k Chaucer, in the Knight's Tale.
2 Theodorus Prodromus, Amorum lib. 6. Interpret. Gaulminio. m Grat. 10 Met. Higlhmus, c. 15.
3 Ariost. lib. 1. Cant. 1. stast. 5. n Plut. dial. amor.
4 Faerie Queene, cant. 1. lib. 4. et cant. 3. lib. 4.
6 Lesbia sex cythara, septem Justinia bubatur.
7 As Xanthius for the love of Eurippe, omnem European paragrov. Farthienus, Eret. cap. 8. 
8 Hesiodus e Lodiac.
Artemisia drank her husband's bones beaten to powder, and so bury him in herself, and endure more torments than Theseus or Paris. Et his colur Venus magis quam thure, et victimis, with such sacrifices as these (as Aristotelus holds) Venus is well pleased. Generally they undertake any pain, any labour, any toil, for their mistress' sake, love and admire a servant, not to her alone, but to all her friends and followers, they hug and embrace them for her sake; her dog, picture, and every thing she wears, they adore it as a relic. If any man come from her, they feast him, reward him, will not be out of his company, do him all offices, still remembering, still talking of her:

Vestrum camile festum una, et nostrae dulce observatur ad aures.

The very carrier that comes from her to a most welcome guest; and if he bring a letter, she will read it twenty times over, and as Lucretia did by Euryalus, "kiss the letter a thousand times together, and then read it." And Chelidonia by Philonius, after many sweet kisses, put the letter in her bosom,

And stay the messenger that would be gone.

And ask many pretty questions, over and over again, as how he looked, what he did, and what he said? In a word,

Vult placere sese amicos, vult mibi, vult pedissequus; \( \text{"He strives to please his mistress, and her maid,} \)

Vult familia, vult etiam ecclesii, et catulo meo. \( \text{"Her servants, and her dog, and 'a well-} \)

If he get any remnant of hers, a busk-point, a feather of her fan, a shoe-tie, a lace, a ring, a bracelet of hair,

\( \text{b Pigmentque direptum laceres;} \)

\( \text{Aut digito male pertinac;} \)

he wears it for a favour on his arm, in his hat, finger, or next his heart. Her picture he adores twice a day, and for two hours together will not look off it; as Laodamia did by Protesilaus, when he went to war, "sit at home with his picture before her: a garter or a bracelet of hers is more precious than any saint's relic," he lays it up in his casket (O blessed relic), and every day will kiss it: if in her presence, his eye is never off her, and drink he will where she drank it, if it be possible, in that very place, &c. If absent, he will walk in the walk, sit under that tree where she did use to sit, in that bower, in that very seat, --- et foribus miseri oscula figit, many years after sometimes, though she be far distant and dwell many miles off, he loves yet to walk that way still, to have his chamber-window look that way: to walk by that river's side, which (though far away) runs by the house where she dwells, he loves the wind blows to that coast.

\( \text{O happy western winds that blow that way,} \)

\( \text{For you shall see my love's fair face to-day.} \)

He will send a message to her by the wind,

\( \text{f Vos arma Alpinum, placidae de montibus aurae,} \)

	ext{Hinc illi portata.} \)

\( \text{g he desires to confer with some of her acquaintance, for his heart is still with her,} \)

\( \text{h to talk of her, admiring and commending her, lamenting, moaning,} \)

\( \text{i wishing himself any thing for her sake, to have opportunity to see her, O that he} \)

\( \text{might but enjoy her presence! So did Philostratus to his mistress, 'O happy} \)

\( \text{ground on which she treads, and happy were I if she would tread upon} \)

\( \text{\footnotesize \text{Epist. 17. 1. 2. \text{Lucretius. 'For if the object of your love be absent, her image is present, and her sweet name is still familiar in my ears.' \text{\textcopyright}} \text{Epist. 17. 1. 2. \text{Lucretius. 'For if the object of your love be absent, her image is present, and her sweet name is still familiar in my ears.' \textendnote{\textcopyright}Epist. 17. 1. 2. \text{Lucretius. 'For if the object of your love be absent, her image is present, and her sweet name is still familiar in my ears.'}}} \)

\( \text{\textsc{et} foribus miseri oscula figit,} \)

\( \text{many years after sometimes, though she be far distant and dwell many miles off, he loves yet to walk that way still, to have his chamber-window look that way: to walk by that river's side, which (though far away) runs by the house where she dwells, he loves the wind blows to that coast.} \)
me. I think her countenance would make the rivers stand, and when she comes abroad, birds will sing and come about her."

"Ridehaut valles, ridehaut obsia Tenpe,
In florum viridis protinus ibi humus."

Omnis Ambrosiam spirat aura. "k When she is in the meadow, she is fairer than any flower, for that last but for a day, the river is pleasing, but it vanishes on a sudden, but thy flower doth not fade, thy stream is greater than the sea.

If I look upon the heaven, methinks I see the sun fallen down to shine below, and to shine in his place, whom I desire. If I look upon the night, methinks I see two more glorious stars, Hesperus and thyself." A little after he thus courts his mistress. "If thou goest forth of the city, the protecting gods that keep the town will run after to gaze upon thee: if thou sail upon the seas, as so many small boats, they will follow thee: what river would not run into the sea?"

Another, he sighs and sob, swards he hath Cor scissum, a heart bruised to powder, dissolved and melted within him, or quite gone from him, to his mistress' bosom belike, he is in an oven, a salamander in the fire, so scorched with love's heat; he wisheth himself a saddle for her to sit on, a posy for her to smell to, and it would grieve him to be hanged, if he might be strangled in her garters: he would willingly die to-morrow, so that she might kill him with her own hands. m Ovid would be a flea, a gnat, a ring, Catullus a sparrow,

"O si tecum indere scint ipsa possem,
Et tristes animi levare curas."

Anacreon, a glass, a gown, a chain, any thing,

"Sei speculum ego ipsa flam,
Ut me tueam usque carnas,
Et vestis ipsa flam,
Ut me tueam usque gestes.
Mater et opto in uniam,
Lavet tuae at autus,
Nardus puella flam,
Ut ego tulipsa inuam,
Sim fasca in pappalis,
Tuo et monie collo,
Fiamque caeleste,
Saltem ut pede usque calces."

O thrice happy man that shall enjoy her: as they that saw Hero in Museus, and n Salmacis to Hermaphroditus,

Felix mater, &c. felix matrix.
Sed longa cumenia, longaeghe lecter tile,
Quam amictu spond et sunt dignabere lect.

The same passion made her break out in the comedy, Nce ulla fortunata sunt quae cum illo cubant, "happy are his bedfellows;" and as she said of Cyprus, Dea tua que illi uxor futura esset, blessed is that woman that shall be his wife, my, thrice happy she that shall enjoy him but a night. Una nova Jovis spectro aerupando, such a night's lodging is worth Jupiter's sceptre.

"Quales nova extit tela, dile, deaque,
Quam latales thoruss?"

"O what a blissful night would it be, how soft, how sweet a bed!" She will adventure all her estate for such a night, for a nectearan, a balsam kiss alone.

"Qui te videt beatus est,
Dixter qui te videt,
Qui te pietet est Deus."

The sultan of Sana's wife in Arabia, when she had seen Vertomannus, that

Idem epist. in prata cum sit, flores superat; till pulchri sed unus tantum dixi; fluvius gratus sed eranesco,
at tuis flavius mari major. Si column aequal, solos existimo coelosae, et in terra ambulare, &e. Si civitate egregia, sequatur te ille custodes, spectatores commoti; si navis sequatur; quis fluvius salum tuum retinet? 7 * 8 lo. ut 1 muti only daily with thee, and allegra the wasting sorrows of thy mind. 7 "Carm 30. 8 Englished by M B Holiday, in his Technog. act. 1. sec. 7. 9 Pet. Met. lib. 4. 10 Xenophon, Cyroped. lib. 5. 11 Plantus de milita. 12 Lucian. 13 Le Graces Rup. 14 Petronius.

x He is happy who sees thee, more happy who hears a god who enjoys thee.
Symptoms of Love.

comely traveller, lamented to herself in this manner, "*O God, thou hast made this man whiter than the sun, but me, mine husband, and all my children black; I would to God he were my husband, or that I had such a son:" she fell a weeping, and so impatient for love at last, that (as Petiphar's wife did by Joseph) she would have had him gone in with her, she sent away Gazella, Tegelia, Galzerana, her waiting-maids, loaded him with fair promises and gifts, and wooed him with all the rhetoric she could——*extremum hoc miseræ de munus amanti," "grant this last request to a wretched lover." But when he gave not consent, she would have gone with him, and left all, to be his page, his servant, or his lackey, *Certa sequi charum corpus ut umbra solet, so that she might enjoy him, threatening moreover to kill herself," &c. Men will do as much and more for women, spend goods, lands, lives, fortunes; kings will leave their crowns, as *King John* for Matilda the nun at Dunmow.

"*But kings in this yet privilèged may be, *I'll be a monk so I may live with thee."

The very gods will endure any shame (*atque aliquid de diis non tristibus inquit, &c.) to be a spectacle as Mars and Venus were, to all the rest; so did Lucian's *Mercury* wish, and peradventure so dost thou. They will adventure their lives with alacrity——*pro qua non metuam bis morti—*nay more, *pro qua non metuam morti,* I will die twice, nay, twenty times for her. If she die, there's no remedy, they must die with her, they cannot help it. A lover in *Calcgaminus,* wrote this on his darling's tomb,

"*Quinæa obit, sed nam Quinæa sola obit, Quinæa obit, sed cum Quinæa et ipse obit; Risus obit, obit gratia, lusus obit, Nec mea nun aminta in pecore, at in tumulo est.""

How many doting lovers upon the like occasion might say the same? But these are toys in respect, they will hazard their very soul for their mistress' sake.

"*Atque aliquid inter juvenes miratius est, et verbum dixit, Non ego in eor eupeream Deos esse, Nostrem moxerat habens domi Hero.""

Venus forsook heaven for Adonis' sake——*calo prefectur Adonis.* Old Janivere, in *Chaucer,* thought when he had his fair May he should never go to heaven; he should live so merrily here on earth; had I such a mistress, he protestes,

"*Colum dis ego non stam inviderem, Sed sortem mini dixit meam inviderent.""

Another as earnestly desires to behold his sweetheart, he will adventure and leave all this, and more than this to see her alone.

"*Omnia que puero mala si pensare velit fors, Una aliqua nobis prosperitate, dii Hoc precor, ut faciant, faciant me cornere coram, Cor milditiam quisque retinet hocc, deam.""

But who can reckon upon the dotage, madness, servitude and blindness, the foolish phantasms and vanities of lovers, their torments, wishes, idle attempts?

Yet for all this, amongst so many irksome, absurd, troublesome symptoms, inconveniences, phantastical fits and passions which are usually incident to such persons, there be some good and graceful qualities in lovers, which this affection causeth. "*As it makes wise men fools, so many times it makes fools become wise; *it makes base fellows become generous, cowards courageous," as Cardan notes out of *Plutarch;* covetous, liberal and magnificent; clowns,

civil; cruel, gentle; wicked profane persons to become religious; sloven, neat; churls, merciful; and dumb dogs, eloquent; your lazy drones, quick and nimble." 

For his sake, "Feras montes domat cupidico, that fierce, cruel, and rude Cyclops Polyphemus sighed, and shed many a salt tear for Galatea's sake. No passion causeth greater alterations, or more vehement of joy or discontent. Plutarch, *Sympos. lib. 5. quest. 1*, "saith, "that the soul of a man in love is full of perfumes and sweet odours, and all manner of pleasing tones and tunes, insomuch that it is hard to say (as he adds) whether love do mortals more harm than good." It adds spirits and makes them, otherwise soft and silly, generous and courageous, *Audiocem faciebat amor.* Ariadne's love made Theseus so adventurous, and Medea's beauty Jason so victorious; *expectorat amor timorem.* 

Plato is of opinion that the love of Venus made Mars so valorous. "A young man will be much abashed to commit any foul offence that shall come to the hearing or sight of his mistress." As he that desired of his enemy now dying, to lay him with his face upward, *ne amasius videret eum a tergo vulneratum,* lest his sweet heart should say he was a coward. "And if it were possible to have an army consist of lovers, such as love, or are beloved, they would be extraordinary valiant and wise in their government, modesty would detain them from doing amiss, emulation incite them to do that which is good and honest, and a few of them would overcome a great company of others." There is no man so pusillanimous, so very a dastard, whom love would not incense, make of a divine temper, and an heroic spirit. As he said in like case, *Tota rust caeli moles, non terreo,* &c. Nothing can terrify nothing can dismay them. But as Sir Blamor and Paridel, those two brave fairy knights, fought for the love of fair Florimal in presence—

Every base swain in love will dare to do as much for his dear mistress' sake. He will fight and fetch *Argivum Clypeum,* that famous buckler of Argos, to do her service, adventure at all, undertake any enterprise. And as Serranus the Spaniard, then Governor of Sluys, made answer to Marquis Spinola, if the enemy brought 50,000 devils against him he would keep it. The nine worthies, Oliver and Rowland, and forty dozen of peers are all in him, he is all mettle, armour of proof, more than a man, and in this case improved beyond himself. For as *Agatho* contends, a true lover is wise, just, temperate, and valiant. "I doubt not, therefore, but if a man had such an army of lovers (as Castilio supposeth) he might soon conquer all the world, except by chance he met with such another army of inamoratos to oppose it." "For so perhaps they might fight as that fatal dog and fatal hare in the heavens, course one another round, and never make an end. Castilio thinks Ferdinand King of Spain would never have conquered Granada, had not Queen Isabel and her ladies been present at the siege: "It cannot be expressed what courage the Spanish knights took when the ladies were present, a few Spaniards overcame a multitude of Moors." They will undergo any danger whatsoever, as Sir Walter Manny in Edward the Third's time, stuck full of ladies' favours, fought like a dragon. For *soli amantes,* as *Plato holds, pro amicis mori appeteas,*
only lovers will die for their friends, and in their mistress' quarrel. And for that cause he would have women follow the camp, to be spectators and encouragers of noble actions: upon such an occasion, the "Squire of Dames himself, Sir Lancelot or Sir Tristram, Caesar, or Alexander, shall not be more resolute or go beyond them.

Not courage only doth love add, but as I said, subtlety, wit, and many pretty devices. "Vangue dolos inspirat amor, fraudesque ministrat," Jupiter in love with Leda, and not knowing how to compass his desire, turned himself into a swan, and got Venus to pursue him in the likeness of an eagle; which she doing, for shelter, he fled to Leda's lap, et in ejus gremio se collocavit, Leda embraced him, and so fell fast asleep, sed dormientem Jupiter compressit, by which means Jupiter had his will. Infinite such tricks love can devise, such fine feasts in abundance, with wisdom and wariness, quis fullevre possit amantem. All manner of civility, decency, compliment and good behaviour, plus salis et leporis, polite graces and merry conceits. Bocaccio hath a pleasant tale to this purpose, which he borrowed from the Greeks, and which Beroaldus hath turned into Latin, Belcibus in verse, of Cymon and Iphiogenia. This Cymon was a fool, a proper man of person, and the governor of 'Cyprus' son, but a very ass, insomuch that his father being ashamed of him, sent him to a farm-house he had in the country, to be brought up. Where by chance, as his manner was, walking alone, he espied a gallant young gentlewoman, named Iphiogenia, a burgomaster's daughter of Cyprus, with her maid, by a brook side in a little thicket, fast asleep in her smock, where she had newly bathed herself: "When Cymon saw her, he stood leaning on his staff, gaping on her immovable, and in amaze;" at last he fell so far in love with the glorious object, that he began to rouse himself up, to behark what he was, would needs fellow her to the city, and for her sake began to be civil, to learn to sing and dance, to play on instruments, and got all those gentlemanlike qualities and compliments in a short space, which his friends were most glad of. In brief he became, from an idiot and a clown, to be one of the most complete gentlemen in Cyprus, did many valorous exploits, and all for the love of mistress Iphiogenia. In a word, I may say thus much of them all, let them be never so clownish, rude and horrid, Grohians and sluts, if once they be in love they will be most neat and spruce; for, "Omnibus rebus, et nividis nitoribus antevinent amor, they will follow the fashion, begin to trick up, and to have a good opinion of themselves, venustatem evenin mater Venus; a ship is not so long a rigging as a young gentlewoman a trimming up herself against her sweetheart comes. A painter's shop, a flowery meadow, no so gracious aspect in nature's storehouse as a young maid, nudilis puella, a Novitisa or Venetian bride, that looks for a husband, or a young man that is her suitor; composed looks, composed gait, clothes, gestures, actions, all composed; all the graces, elegancies in the world are in her face. Their best robes, ribands, chains, jewels, lawns, linens, laces, spangles, must come on, prater quam res patitur student elegante, they are beyond all measure coy, nice, and too curious on a sudden: 'tis all their study, all their business, how to wear their clothes neat, to be polite and terse, and to set out themselves. No sooner doth a young man see his sweetheart coming, but he smugs himself, pulls up his cloak now fallen about his shoulders, ties his garters, points, sets his band, cuffs, slicks his hair, twires his beard, &c. When Mercury was to come before his mistress, "Chlamydemque ut pendat apte Collocat, et flavum totumque apparent arnum." "He put his cloak in order, that the lace, And beam, and gold-work all might have his grace."
Salmacis would not be seen of Hermaphroditus, till she had spruced up herself first.  

Venus had so ordered the matter, that when her son Aeneas was to appear before Queen Dido, he was

like a god, for she was the tire-woman herself, to set him out with all natural and artificial postures. As mother Mammea did her son Heliogabalus, new chosen emperor, when he was to be seen of the people first. When the hirsute cyclopal cyclophenus courted Galatea; 

He was upon a sudden now spruce and keen, as a new ground hatchet. He now began to have a good opinion of his own features and good parts, now to be a gallant.

'Tis the common humour of all suitors to trick up themselves, to be prodigal in apparel, purè lotus, next, combed, and curled, with powdered hair, compus et calamistratus, with a long love-lock, a flower in his ear, perfumed gloves, rings, scarfs, feathers, points, &c. as if he were a prince's Ganymede, with every day new suits, as the fashion varies; going as if he trod upon eggs, and as Heinsius writ to Primierius, "if once he be besotted on a wench, he must lie awake at nights, renounce his book, sigh and lament, now and then and hop for his hard hat, and mark above all things what hats, bands, doublets, breeches, are in fashion, how to cut his beard, and wear his locks, to turn up his mustachios, and curl his head, prune his pickitivant, or if he wear it abroad, that the east side be correspondent to the west:" he may be scoffed at otherwise, as Julian that apostate emperor was for wearing a long hirsute goatish beard, fit to make ropes with, as in his Mysopogone, or that apologetical oration he made at Antioch to excuse himself, he doth ironically confess, it hindered his kissing, nam non licuit inde pura puris, eoque suaviores labra labris adjungere, but he did not much esteem it, as it seems by the sequel, de accipiendis dandisque osculis non laboro, yet (to follow mine author) it may much concern a young lover, he must be more respectful in his behalf, "he must be in league with an excellent tailor, barber;

"I Tonores tum curtum sed arte talem, 
Quas mihi Thalantis fuit Xenonis;"

"have neat shoe-ties, points, garters, speak in print, walk in print, eat and drink in print, and that which is all in all, he must be mad in print."

Amongst other good qualities an amorous fellow is endowed with, he must learn to sing and dance, play upon some instrument or other, as without all doubt he will, if be he truly touched with this loadstone of love. For as

\[\text{Ovid. Met. 4.} \quad \text{Virg. 1. En.} \quad \text{Epist.}\]

\[\text{Ovid. Met. 13.} \quad \text{Virg. 1. 12.} \quad \text{Mart. Epig. 8.}\]
Erasmus hath it, *Musicum doct amor et Poesin*, love will make them musicians, and to compose ditties, madrigals, elegies, love sonnets, and sing them to several pretty tunes, to get all good qualities may be had. 1 Jupiter perceived Mercury to be in love with Philologia, because he learned languages, polite speech (for Suadela herself was Venus' daughter, as some write), arts and sciences, *quo virgini placeret*, all to ingratiate himself, and please his mistress. 'Tis their chiefest study to sing, dance; and without question, so many gentlemen and gentlewomen would not be so well qualified in this kind, if love did not incite them. 2 "Who," saith Castilio, "would learn to play, or give his mind to music, learn to dance, or make so many rhymes, love-songs, as most do, but for women's sake, because they hope by that means to purchase their good wills, and win their favour?" We see this daily verified in our young women and wives, they that being maids took so much pains to sing, play, and dance, with such cost and charge to their parents, to get those graceful qualities, now being married will scarce touch an instrument, they care not for it. Constantine *agricult.* lib. 11. cap. 18, makes Cupid himself to be a great dancer; by the same token that he was capering amongst the gods, "he flung down a bowl of nectar, which distilling upon the white rose, ever since made it red:" and Calistratus, by the help of Dedalus, about Cupid's statue made a many of young wenches still a dancing, to signify belike that Cupid was much affected with it, as without all doubt he was. For at his and Psyche's wedding, the gods being present to grace the feast, Ganymede filled nectar in abundance (as Apuleius describes it), Vulcan was the cook, the Hours made all fine with roses and flowers, Apollo played on the harp, the Muses sang to it, *sed suavi Musice super ingressa Venus saltavit*, but his mother Venus danced to his and their sweet content. Witty 4 Lucian in that pathetical love passage, or pleasant description of Jupiter's stealing of Europa, and swimming from Phoenicia to Crete, makes the sea calm, the winds hush, Neptune and Amphitrite riding in their chariot to break the waves before them, the tritons dancing round about, with every one a torch, the sea-nymphs half-naked, keeping time on dolphins' backs, and singing Hymenens, Cupid nimbly tripping on the top of the waters, and Venus herself coming after in a shell, strewing roses and flowers on their heads. Praxiteles, in all his pictures of love, feigns Cupid ever smiling, and looking upon dancers; and in Saint Mark's in Rome (whose work I know not), one of the most delicious pieces, is a many of 7 satyrs dancing about a wench asleep. So that dancing still is as it were a necessary appendix to love matters. Young lasses are never better pleased than when as upon a holiday, after evensong, they may meet their sweethearts, and dance about a maypole, or in a town-green under a shady elm. Nothing so familiar in 8 France, as for citizens' wives and maids to dance a round in the streets, and often too, for want of better instruments, to make good music of their own voices, and dance after it. Yea many times this love will make old men and women that have more toes than teeth, dance,—"John, come kiss me now," mask and mum; for Comus and Hymen love masks, and all such erriments above measure, will allow men to put on women's apparel in some cases, and promiscuously to dance, young and old, rich and poor, generous and base, of all sorts. Paulus Jovius taxeth Augustine Niphus the philosopher, "for that being an old man and a public

1 Chil. 4. cent. 5 pra. 16. 2 Martiannis Capella, lib. 1. de nupt. philol. Jam illum sentio amore teneri, ejusque studio plures habere comparantes in faulutorio disciplinis, &c. 3 Lib. 3. de aureis. Quis choros insinuaret, nisi feminarum causa? Quis musicos tantum navaret operam nisi quid illius dulcissime per multa speperet? Quis tot carminia componeret, nisi ut inde affectus sus in mulieres explicaret? 4 Cata- terens nectaris everit saltans apud Deos, qui in terram cadens, rosam prorsus ablatus rapit infecta. 5 Puellas chorantes circa juvenilum Cupidinis statam sedes. Philolatry. Imag. lib. 3. de statutis. Exercitium amori apriptismum. 6 Lib. 6. Met. 7 Tom. 4. 8 Kornman de cur. mort. part. 5. cap. 28. Sat. puellin dormienti insalutantium, &c. 9 View of Fr. 10 Vita ejus. Puellas amore soxepianaris senex usque ad montium corrupmus, multis liberis susceptis: multis non sine pudore compeaxerunt semem et philosophum podigitium, non sine rius saltantem ad thiasmodus.
professor, a father of many children, he was so mad for the love of a young maid (that which many of his friends were ashamed to see), an old gouty fellow, yet would dance after fiddlers." Many laughed him to scorn for it, but this omnipotent love would have it so.

"Love hasty with his purple staff did make me follow and the dance to undertake.”

And 'tis no news this, no indecorum; for why? a good reason may be given of it. Cupid and death meet both in an inn; and being merily disposed, they did exchange some arrows from either quiver; ever since young men die, and oftentimes old men dote—— Sic moritur Juvenis, sic moribundus amat. And who can then withstand it? If once we be in love, young or old, though our teeth shake in our heads like virginal jacks, or stand parallel asunder like the arches of a bridge, there is no remedy, we must dance trenchmore for a need, over tables, chairs, and stools, &c. And Princum Prancum is a fine dance. Plutarch, Sympos. 1. quest. 5. doth in some sort excuse it, and tellett us moreover in what sense, Musicam docet amor, licet prius fuerit rudis, how love makes them that had no skill before learn to sing and dance; he concludes, 'tis only that power and prerogative love hath over us. "Love (as he holds) will make a silent man speak, a modest man most officious; dull, quick; slow, nimble; and that which is most to be admired, a hard, base, untractable churl, as fire doth iron in a smith's forge, free, facile, gentle and easy to be entreated." Nay, 'twill make him prodigal in the other extreme, and give a hundred sesterces for a night's lodging, as they did of old to Lais of Corinth, or decuta drachmarum milia pro unica nocte, as Mundus to Paulina, spend all his fortunes (as too many do in like case) to obtain his suit. For which cause many compare love to wine, which makes men jovial and merry, frolic and sad, whine, sing, dance, and what not.

But above all the other symptoms of lovers, this is not lightly to be overpassed, that likely of what condition soever, if once they be in love, they turn to their ability, rhymers, ballad-makers and poets. For as Plutarch said, "They will be witnesses and trumpeters of their paramours' good parts, beating them with verses and commendatory songs, as we do statues with gold, that they may be remembered and admired of all." Ancient men will dote in this kind sometimes as well as the rest; the heat of love will thaw their frozen affections, dissolve the ice of age, and so far enable them, though they be sixty years of age above the girdle, to be scarce thirty beneath. Jovianus Pontanus makes an old fool rhyme, and turn Poetaster to please his mistress.

They will be still singing amorous songs and ditties (if young especially), and cannot abstain though it be when they go to, or should be at church. We have a pretty story to this purpose in d Westmonasteriensis an old writer of ours (if you will believe it) An. Dom. 1012. at Colewiz in Saxony, on Christmas eve a company of young men and maids, whilst the priest was at mass in the church, were singing catches and love songs in the churchyard, he sent to them to make less noise, but they sung on still: and if you will, you shall have the very song itself.

"Fenit obsequium per sylvam frondosam,
Ducebat sese num Meswinda formosam,
Quid stamus, cur non imus?"

"A fellow rid by the greenwood side,
And fair Meswina was his bride,
Why stand we so, and do not go?"

---

[Part. 3. Sec. 2.]

Love-Melancholy.

[Part. 3. Sec. 2.]

professor, a father of many children, he was so mad for the love of a young maid (that which many of his friends were ashamed to see), an old gouty fellow, yet would dance after fiddlers." Many laughed him to scorn for it, but this omnipotent love would have it so.

"Love hasty with his purple staff did make me follow and the dance to undertake.”

And 'tis no news this, no indecorum; for why? a good reason may be given of it. Cupid and death meet both in an inn; and being merily disposed, they did exchange some arrows from either quiver; ever since young men die, and oftentimes old men dote—— Sic moritur Juvenis, sic moribundus amat. And who can then withstand it? If once we be in love, young or old, though our teeth shake in our heads like virginal jacks, or stand parallel asunder like the arches of a bridge, there is no remedy, we must dance trenchmore for a need, over tables, chairs, and stools, &c. And Princum Prancum is a fine dance. Plutarch, Sympos. 1. quest. 5. doth in some sort excuse it, and tellett us moreover in what sense, Musicam docet amor, licet prius fuerit rudis, how love makes them that had no skill before learn to sing and dance; he concludes, 'tis only that power and prerogative love hath over us. "Love (as he holds) will make a silent man speak, a modest man most officious; dull, quick; slow, nimble; and that which is most to be admired, a hard, base, untractable churl, as fire doth iron in a smith's forge, free, facile, gentle and easy to be entreated." Nay, 'twill make him prodigal in the other extreme, and give a hundred sesterces for a night's lodging, as they did of old to Lais of Corinth, or decuta drachmarum milia pro unica nocte, as Mundus to Paulina, spend all his fortunes (as too many do in like case) to obtain his suit. For which cause many compare love to wine, which makes men jovial and merry, frolic and sad, whine, sing, dance, and what not.

But above all the other symptoms of lovers, this is not lightly to be overpassed, that likely of what condition soever, if once they be in love, they turn to their ability, rhymers, ballad-makers and poets. For as Plutarch said, "They will be witnesses and trumpeters of their paramours' good parts, beating them with verses and commendatory songs, as we do statues with gold, that they may be remembered and admired of all." Ancient men will dote in this kind sometimes as well as the rest; the heat of love will thaw their frozen affections, dissolve the ice of age, and so far enable them, though they be sixty years of age above the girdle, to be scarce thirty beneath. Jovianus Pontanus makes an old fool rhyme, and turn Poetaster to please his mistress.

They will be still singing amorous songs and ditties (if young especially), and cannot abstain though it be when they go to, or should be at church. We have a pretty story to this purpose in d Westmonasteriensis an old writer of ours (if you will believe it) An. Dom. 1012. at Colewiz in Saxony, on Christmas eve a company of young men and maids, whilst the priest was at mass in the church, were singing catches and love songs in the churchyard, he sent to them to make less noise, but they sung on still: and if you will, you shall have the very song itself.

"Fenit obsequium per sylvam frondosam,
Ducebat sese num Meswinda formosam,
Quid stamus, cur non imus?"

"A fellow rid by the greenwood side,
And fair Meswinda was his bride,
Why stand we so, and do not go?"

---

[Part. 3. Sec. 2.]
This they sung, he chaft, till at length, impatient as he was, he prayed to St. Magnus, patron of the church, they might all three sing and dance till that time twelvemonth, and so they did without meat and drink, wearisomeness or giving over, till at year's end they ceased singing, and were absolved by Herebertus archbishop of Cologne. They will in all places be doing thus, young folks especially, reading love stories, talking of this or that young man, such a fair maid, singing, telling or hearing lascivious tales, scurrilous tunes, such objects are their sole delight, their continual meditation, and as Guastavinius adds, Com. in 4. Sect. 27. Prov. Arist. ob seminis abundantiam crebro cognitiones, veneris frequens recordatio et pruriens voluptas, &c. an earnest longing comes hence, pruriens corpus, pruriens anima, amorous conceits, tickling thoughts, sweet and pleasant thoughts; hence it is, they can think, discourse willingly, or speak almost of no other subject. 'Tis their only desire, if it may be done by art, to see their husband's picture in a glass, they'll give anything to know when they shall be married, how many husbands they shall have, by cromyomantia, a kind of divination with onions laid on the altar on Christmas eve, or by fasting on St. Anne's eve or night, to know who shall be their first husband, or by amphiomantia, by beans in a cake, &c., to burn the same. This love is the cause of all good conceits, neatness, exornations, plays, elegancies, delights, pleasant expressions, sweet motions, and gestures, joys, comforts, exultancies, and all the sweetness of our life, qualis jam vita foret, aut quid jucundi sine aurea Venere? Emoriar cum istâ non amplius mili cura fuerit, let me live no longer than I may love, saith a mad merry fellow in Minnemus. This love is that salt that seasoneth our harsh and dull labours, and gives a pleasant relish to our other unsavoury proceedings. Absit amor, surgunt tenorebræ, torpedo, veteranum, pestis, &c. All our feasts almost, masques, mummeries, banquets, merry meetings, weddings, pleasing songs, fine tunes, poems, love stories, plays, comedies, attelans, jigs, fescenines, elegies, odes, &c. proceed hence. Danas, the son of Belus, at his daughter's wedding at Argos, instituted the first plays (some say) that ever were heard of symbols, emblems, impresses, devices, if we shall believe Jovius, Contiles, Paradise, Camillus de Camillis, may be ascribed to it. Most of our arts and sciences, painting amongst the rest, was first invented, saith Patritius ex amoris beneficio, for love's sake. For when the daughter of Deuriades the Syconian, was to take leave of her sweetheart now going to war, ut desiderio ejus minus tabesceret, to comfort herself in his absence, she took his picture with coal upon a wall, as the candle gave the shadow, which her father admiring, perfected afterwards, and it was the first picture by report that ever was made. And long after, Sycin for painting, carving, statuary, music, and philosophy, was preferred before all the cities in Greece. Apollo was the first inventor of physic, divination, oracles; Minerva found out weaving, Vulcan curious iron-work, Mercury letters, but who prompted all this into their heads? Love, Nunquam talia invenissent, nisi talia adhamassent, they loved such things, or some party, for whose sake they were undertaken at first. 'Tis true, Vulcan made a most admirable brooch or necklace, which long after Axion and Temenus, Phegin's sons, for the singular worth of it, consecrated to Apollo, at Delphos, but Pharyllusthe tyrant stole it away, and presented it to Ariston's wife, on whom he miserably doted (Parthenius tells the story out of Phylarchus); but why did Vulcan make this excellent Ouch! to give Hermione Cadmus' wife, whom he dearly loved. All our tilts and tournaments, orders of

---

\* Per totam annum cantatnrb, pluvia super illos non occidit; non frigus, non calor, non stis, nec lasstudo illos affect, &c.

\( \text{f} \) Ilis eorum nominis inscribantur de quibus quaerunt.

\( \text{g} \) Haec munditias, oratum, le orem, delicias, ludes, elegantiam, omnem denique vitis sanctitatem desent.

\( \text{h} \) Hyginus, cap. 372.

\( \text{i} \) De Greece.  \( \text{j} \) Angeriana.  \( \text{k} \) Lib. 4. tit. 11. de præf. fastit.

\( \text{m} \) Phil. lib. 35. cap. 12.  \( \text{n} \) Genellius.

\( \text{l} \) 6. descript. Gr.

\( \text{m} \) Frasus, l. 3. de symbolis; qui primus symbolum exegcitavit voluit nimium hac ratione implicatum animum evolvere, eunque vel dominus vel alius iunctibus ostenderc.
the garter, golden fleece, &c.—*Nobilitas sub amore jacet*—owe their beginnings to love, and many of our histories. By this means, saith Jovius, they would express their loving minds to their mistrees, and to the beholdiers. *Tis the sole subject almost of poetry, all our invention tends to it, all our songs, whatever those old Anacreons (and therefore Hesiod makes the Muses and Graces still follow Cupid, and as Plutarch holds, Memander and the rest of the poets were love's priests): all our Greek and Latin epigrammatists, love writers, Antony Diogens the most ancient, whose epitome we find in Phocius Bibliotheca, Longus Sophista, Eustathius, Achilles Tatius, Aristanetus, Heliodorus, Plato, Plutarch, Lucian, Parthenius, Theodorus, Prodromus, Ovid, Catullus, Tibullus, &c. Our new Ariostos, Boyards, Authors of Arcadia, Urania, Faerie Queene, &c. Marullus, Leotichius, Angerianus, Strozio, Secundus, Capellanis, &c. with the rest of those facetie modern poets, have written in this kind, are but as so many symptoms of love. Their whole books are a synopsis or brevity of love, the portyous of love, legends of lovers' lives and deaths, and of their memorable adventures, nay more, *quod leguntur, quod ludantur amoris debent*, as *Nevisanus the lawyer holds, "there never was any excellent poet that invented good fables, or made laudable verses, which was not in love himself," had he not taken a quill from Cupid's wings, he could never have written so amorously as he did.

Petrarch's Laura made him so famous, Astrophel's Stella, and Jovianus Pantan's mistrees was the cause of his roses, violets, lilies, nequitas, blanditias, joci, decor, nardus, ver, corolla, thus, Mars, Pallas, Venus, Charis, crocum, Laurus, unguentum, costum, lachrymae, myrrha, muse, &c. and the rest of his poems; why are Italians at this day generally so good poets and painters! Because every man of any fashion amongst them hath his mistree. The very rusties and hog-rubbers, Menalcas and Corydon, *qui fient de stercore equino*, those fulsem knaves, if once they taste of this love-liquor, are inspired in an instant. Instead of those accurate emblems, curious impresses, gandy masques, tilts, tournaments, &c., they have their wakes, Whitsun-ales, shepherd's feasts, meetings on holidays, country dances, roundelays, writing their names on *trees, true lover's knots, pretty gifts*.

Choosing lords, ladies, kings, queens, and valentines, &c., they go by couples;

"Corydon's Phillis, Nysa and Mopsus, With dainty Donzel and Sir Tophis."

Instead of odes, epigrams and elegies, &c., they have their ballads, country tunes, "O the broom, the bonny, bonny broom," ditties and songs, "Bess a belle, she doth excel,"—they must write likewise and indite all in rhyme.

Your most grim stoies and severe philosophers will melt away with this pas-


*Teneris arboribus amicarum nomina inscribentes ut simul crucat.* Had. 8 S. 11909.
Cure of Love-Melancholy.

sion, and if Athenæus belie them not, Aristippus, Apollodorus, Antiphanes, &c., have made love-songs and commentaries of their mistress' praises, orators write epistles, princes give titles, honours, what not? Xerxes gave to Themistocles Lampæsus to find him wine, Magnesia for bread, and Myunte for the rest of his diet. The Persian kings allotted whole cities to like use, hic civitas mulieris redinicum præbeat, hic in collum, hic in crines, one whole city served to dress her hair, another her neck, a third her hood. Ahasuerus would have given Esther half his empire, and Herod bid Herodias "ask what she would, she should have it." Caligula gave 100,000 sesterces to his courtezan at first word, to buy her pins, and yet when he was solicited by the senate to bestow something to repair the decayed walls of Rome for the commonwealth's good, he would give but 6000 sesterces at most. Dionysius, that Sicilian tyrant, rejected all his privy counselors, and was so besotted on Mirrha his favourite and mistress, that he would bestow no office, or in the most weightiest business of the kingdom do aught without her especial advice, prefer, depose, send, entertain no man, though worthy and well-deserving, but by her consent; and he again whom she commended, howsoever unfit, unworthy, was as highly approved. Kings and emperors, instead of poets, build cities; Adrian built Antonia in Egypt, besides constellations, temples, altars, statues, images, &c., in the honour of his Antinous. Alexander bestowed infinite sums to set out his Hephestion to all eternity. Soocrates professeth himself love's servant, ignorant in all arts and sciences, a doctor alone in love matters, et quum alienarum rerum omnium scientiam diffiteret, saith Maximus Tyrius, his sectator, quia negotii professor, &c., and this he spake openly, at home and abroad, at public feasts, in the academy, in Pyræo, Lyceo, sub Platano, &c., the very blood-hound of beauty, as he is styled by others. But I conclude there is no end of love's symptoms, 'tis a bottomless pit. Love is subject to no dimensions; not to be surveyed by any art or engine: and besides, I am of Hædes' mind, "no man can discourse of love matters, or judge of them aight, that hath not made trial in his own person," or as Æneas Sylvius adds, "hath not a little dotted, been mad or love-sick himself." I confess I am but a novice, a contemptor only, Nescio quid sit amor nec amo; I have a tincture; for why should I lie, dissemble or excise it, yet homo sum &c., not altogether inexpert in this subject, non sum preceptor amandi; and what I say is merely reading, ex aliorum forsan ineptius, by mine own observation, and others' relation.

MEMB. IV.

Prognostics of Love-Melancholy.

What fires, torments, cares, jealousies, suspicions, fears, griefs, anxieties, accompany such as are in love, I have sufficiently said: the next question is, what will be the event of such miseries, what they foretell. Some are of opinion that this love cannot be cured, Nullis amor est medicabilis herbis, it accompanies them to the 1 last, Idem amor exitio est pecori pecorisque magistro. "The same passion consumes both the sheep and the shepherd," and is so continuat, that by no persuasion almost it may be relieved. "Bid me not

1 Lib. 13. cap. Diphosphob. 2 See Putean. epist. 33. de esa. Margareta Beroaldus. &c. 3 Hen. Steph. apol. pro Herod. 4 Tully, orat. 4. Verri. 5 Esth. v. 6 Mat. 1. 41. 6 Gravissimis regni negotiis nihil ali ne amasti sed consensu fect, omnique actiones suas scrutili communicavi, &c. Nich. Bellus, discorsi, 26. de amat. 7 Amor est famulus omnem scientiam diffiterat, amandi tamen se scientiissimum doctorem agnoscat. 8 Serv. 8. 9 Quia horum scribere molestias postest, nisi qui et aliqutam insitut? 10 Lib. 1. de con tumendi amoribus; opiner hac de re neminem aut discipere recte posse aut judicare qui non in ea sustur, aut magnus secet periculum. b "I am not in love, nor do I know what love may be," [Semper moritur, nunquam mortuus est qui amat. 11 Furiol. ep. ad Lucetium, apud Æneas Sylvium: Rogas ut amore deflectam roga montes in planum deveniant, ut fontes luminis repetant: tam possam te non auere ac suam Phthisi reliquere cursum.
love," said Euryalus, "bid the mountains come down into the plains, bid the rivers run back to their fountains; I can as soon leave to love, as the sun leave his course;"

"Et prius aquaribus piscis, et montibus nubet, Et vulpes deernunt sylv, et murmen verbis, Quam mihi descedent ferae Amaryllidis ignes." "First seas shall want their fish, the mountains shade, Woods and singing birds, the wind's murmur shall fade, Than my fair Amaryllis' love alloy'd."

But whether love may be cured or no, and by what means, shall be explained in his place; in the mean time, if it take his course, and be not otherwise eased or amended, it breaks out into outrageous often and prodigious events. *Amor et Liber violenti dix sunt, as *Tattius observes, et eousque animum incendunt, ut pudoris oblivisci cogant, Love and Bacchus are so violent gods, so furiously in our minds, that they make us forget all honesty, shame, and common civility. For such men ordinarily, as are thoroughly possessed with this humour, become insensati et insanii, for it is *amor insanus, as the poet calls it, beside themselves, and as I have proved, no better than beasts, irrational, stupid, head-strong, void of fear of God or men, they frequently forswear themselves, spend, steal, commit incests, rapes, adulteries, murders, depopulate towns, cities, to satisfy their lust.

"A devil 'tis, and mischief such doth work, As never yet did Pagan, Jew, or Turk." The wars of Troy may be a sufficient witness; and as Appian, lib. 5. hist. saith of Antony and Cleopatra, "Their love brought themselves and all Egypt into extreme and miserable calamities," the end of her is as bitter as worm-wood, and as sharp as a two-edged sword," Prov. v. 4, 5. "Her feet go down to death her steps lead on to hell. She is more bitter than death, (Eccles. vii. 28.) and the sinner shall be taken by her. *Qui in amore præcipitavit, pejus perit quain qui saxo salit. "He that runs headlong from the top of a rock is not in so bad a case as he that falls into this gulf of love."  For hence," saith *Platina, "comes repentance, dotage, they lose themselves, their wits, and make shipwreck of their fortunes altogether;" madness, to make away themselves and others, violent death. *Prognosticatio est talis, saith Gordonius, *si non succurratur is, ut in maniam cadunt, aut mortuntur; the prognostication is, they will either run mad, or die. "For if this passion continue," saith *Elian Montaltus, "it makes the blood hot, thick, and black; and if the inflammation get into the brain, with continual meditation and waking, it so dries it up, that madness follows, or else they make a way themselves," *O Corydon, Corydon, que te dementia cepit? Now, as Arnoldus adds, it will speedily work these effects, if it be not presently helped; "They will pine away, run mad, and die upon a sudden;" Facile incident in maniam, saith Valescus, quickly mad, nisi succurratur, if good order be not taken,

"Etenim triste jurum quisquis amoris habet, Is praes ac novit se quisque perit. " *Oh heavy yoke of love, which whose bears, Is quite undone, and that at unsawes.*

---

So she confessed of herself in the poet,

"d Insaniam priusquam quis sentisset,
Vix pili intervallum furore absurum."

| "I shall be mad before it be perceived. A hair-breadth off scarce am I, now distracted." |

As mad as Orlando for his Angelica, or Hercules for his Hylas,

"At ille rechat què pedes duceant, furibundus,
Nam illi savass Deum itus jejunabit." |

| "He went he could not whiter, mad he was,
The cruel God so tortur'd him, alas!" |

At the sight of Hero I cannot tell how many ran mad,

"Alius vulsus celsus insait pulchritudine puellar." |

| "And whilst he doth conceal his grief, Madness comes on him like a thief." |

Go to bedlam for examples. It is so well known in every village, how many have either died for love, or voluntary made away themselves, that I need not much labour to prove it: "Ne modus aut requies nisi mors reperitur amoris: death is the common catastrophe to such persons.

So did Dido; Sed moriamur ait, sic sic juvat ire per umbras; h Pyramus and Thisbe, Medea, i Coresus and Callirhoe, k Theagines the philosopher, and many myriads besides, and so will ever do,

| "Eodem mihi contingat, non enim alia.
Liberato ab arumulis fueritullo pacto istis." |

| "Would I was dead! for nought, God knows,
But death can rid me of these woes." |

As soon as Euryalus departed from Senes, Lucretia, his paramour, "never looked up, no jest could exhilarate her sad mind, no joys her wounded and distressed soul, but a little after she fell sick and died." But this is a gentle end, a natural death, such persons commonly make away themselves.

| "Ipsa sularia in anginoso letus, Indignantem animam vacans effudit in aras;" |

| "So did Dido; Sed moriamur ait, sic sic juvat ire per umbras;" |

Read Parthenium in Erotics, and Plutarch's amatorias narrationes, or love stories, all tending almost to this purpose. Valleriola, lib. 2. observ. 7, hath a lamentable narration of a merchant, his patient, "in that raving through impatience of love, he had not been watched, would every while have offered violence to himself." Amatus Lucitanus, cent. 3. car. 56, hath such another story, and Felix Plater, med. observ. lib. 1. a third of a young gentleman that studied physic, and for the love of a doctor's daughter, having no hope to compass his desire, poisoned himself. p Anno 1619, a barber in Frankfort, because his wench was betrothed to another, cut his own throat. q At Neouburg, the same year, a young man, because he could not get her parents' consent, killed his sweetheart, and afterwards himself, desiring this of the magistrate, as he gave up the ghost, that they might be buried in one grave, Quodque rogis superest una requiescat in urna, which r Gismunda besought of Tancredus, her father, that she might be in like sort buried with Guiscardus, her lover, that so their bodies might lie together in the grave, as their souls wander about s Campos lugentes in the Elysian fields,—quos duros amor crudeli tabe peredit, in a myrtle grove

| "et myrtis circum
Sylvae tegit: cura non ipsa in morte relinquat." |

You have not yet heard the worst, they do not offer violence to themselves in this rage of lust but unto others, their nearest and dearest friends. t Catiline killed his only son, misitque ad orci pallida, lethi obnubila, obsita tenelbris loca,

---

d Lucian Imag. So for Lucian's mistress, all that saw her and could not enjoy her, ran mad, or hanged themselves.

---

e Musaeus. f Ovid. Met. 16. Ennes Sylvius. Ad ejus desseunam nanquam visa Lucretia ridevit, nullis faciatis jocis, nullo gardio potuit ad leuiatum renovari, nox in agrumnabus incult, et sic brevi contabatit. g Amaree. h "But let me die, she says, thus; thus is better to descend to the shades." i Panassius Achaicus, l. 7. j Megarensis amore flagratis, Lucian. Tom. 4. k Furiabundus patavat se videre imaginem puellar, et coram loqui blandians illi, &c. l Juven. Hermaus. m Eivius Medicinae operam dans doctoris filiam describant, &c. n Gostardus Anthius Gallicus, mund. vernal. 1618. colum novacula aperuit, et inde expravit. o Cum remenente parente utroque et ipsa virgine frui non possent, ipsum et ipsum interfecit, hoc a magistratu petens, ut in eodem sepulchro sepeliri possent. p Bocace. q Sedes eorum qui pro amoris impatientia percut, Virg. 6. Enoid. r Whom cruel love with its wasting power destroyed." s And a myrtle grove overshadow thee: nor do cares relinquish thee even in death itself." t Sal. Val.
for the love of Aurelia Oristella, quodd ejus nuptias vivo filio recusaret. 7. Lao-
dice, the sister of Mithridates, poisoned her husband, to give consent to a base
fellow whom she loved. 8 Alexander, to please Thais, a concubine of his, set
Persepolis on fire. 9 Nereus' wife, a widow, and lady of Athens, for the love
of a Venetian gentleman, betrayed the city; and he for her sake, murdered his
wife, the daughter of a nobleman in Venice. 10 Constantine Despota made away
Catherine, his wife, turned his son Michael and his other children out of doors,
for the love of a base scrivener's daughter in Thessalonia, with whose beauty
he was enamoured. 11 Leucophoria betrayed the city where she dwelt, for her
sweetheart's sake, that was in the enemies' camp. 12 Pithidice, the governor's
daughter of Methina, for the love of Achilles, betrayed the whole island to
him, her father's enemy. 13 Diognetus did as much in the city where he dwelt,
for the love of Policrita, Medea for the love of Jason, she taught him how to
tame the fire-breathing brass-footed bulls, and kill the mighty dragon that
kept the golden fleece, and tore her little brother Absyrus in pieces; that her
father Aethes might have something to detain him, while she ran away with
her beloved Jason, &c. Such acts and scenes hath this tragi-comedy of love.

MEMB. V.

SUBSEC. I.—Cure of Love-Melancholy, by Labour, Diet, Physic, Fasting, &c.

Although it be controverted by some, whether love-melancholy may be
cured, because it is so irresistible and violent a passion; for as you know,

"Si finibus descessum Averni; Sed revocare gradum, supraspex evadere ad auras;|
Hic labor, hoc opus est." 

Yet without question, if it be taken in time, it may be helped, and by many
good remedies amended. Avicenna, lib. 3. Fen. cap. 23. et 24. sets down
seven compendious ways how this malady may be eased, altered, and expelled.
Savanarola 9. principal observations, Jason Pratusenis prescribes eight rules
besides physic, how this passion may be tamed, Laurentius 2. main precepts,
Arnoldus, Valleriola, Montaltus, Hildesheim, Langius, and others inform us
otherwise, and yet all tending to the same purpose. The sum of which I will
briefly epitomise (for I light my candle from their torches), and enlarge again
upon occasion, as shall seem best to me, and that after mine own method.
The first rule to be observed in this stubborn and unbridled passion, is exercise
and diet. It is an old and well-known sentence, Sine Cerere et Baccho friget Venus
(love grows cool without bread and wine). As an idle sedentary life, liberal
feeding, are great causes of it, so the opposite, labour, slender and sparing diet,
with continual business, are the best and most ordinary means to prevent it.

"Otia si tollas perieris Cupidinis artes, | Contempla quae jacent, et sine luce faces." |
"Take idleness away, and set to Right | Are Cupid's arts, his torches give no light." |

Minerva, Diana, Vesta, and the nine Muses were not enamoured at all, be-
cause they never were idle.

"A Frustra blanditiae appetitibus ad has, |
Frastra nequeitis venis ad has, |
Frustra delitu obsidebitis has, |
Frastra has illecrea, et proceadates, |
Et suspiria, et oscula, et susurrat, |
Et quinquies male sansa corda amantium |
Blandia cebra fascinat venenis." |

"In vain are all your flatteries, |
In vain are all your knaves, |
Delights, deceit, proscriptions, |
Lights, kisses, and conspiracies, |
And whatever is done by art, |
To bewitch a lover's heart." |

'Tis in vain to set upon those that are busy. 'Tis Savanarola's third rule,

Sabel. lib. 3. En. 6. 2 Curtius, lib. 5. 3 Chalcocordillas de rob. Tusciaea, lib. 9. Nerd
uxor Athenarum domina, &c. 4 Nicetopurs Greg. hist. lib. 8. Utorem oedit liberos et Michaelam
filium videre abhorruit. Thessalonicenses amore capitatis filiis, &c. 5 Patenius, Erot. lib. cap. 5.
6 idem, ca. 21. Gubernatoria filia Actillilis amore captis civitatem prodit. |
7 idem, cap. 9. 8 Virg. Am. 6. 8 Virg. magistratus castitàs. Austin. 9 Buchanan, Henriciæy.
Occupari in multis et magnis negotiis, and Avicenna's precept, cap. 24. 1 Cedit amor rebus; res age, tutus eris. To be busy still, and, as k Guianerius enjoins, about matters of great moment, if it may be. 1 Magninus adds, "Never to be idle but at the hours of sleep."

---

**No better physic than to be always occupied, seriously intent.**

"2 Cnr in perso rariis tennis subit, Hec delicatam eligens pessis domus, Mediumque sanus vulgus afficius removet" &c.

Because poor people fare coarsely, work hard, go wallow and bare. 0 Non habet unde suum paupertas pascat amorem. P Guianerius therefore prescribes his patient "to go with hair-cloth next his skin, to go bare-footed, and bare-legged in cold weather, to whip himself now and then, as monks do, but above all to fast. Not with sweet wine, mutton and pottage, as many of those tenor-bellies do, howsoever they put on Lenten faces, and whatsoever they pretend, but from all manner of meat. Fasting is an all-sufficient remedy of itself; for, as Jason Pratensis holds, the bodies of such persons that feed liberally, and live at ease, "3 are full of bad spirits and devils, devilish thoughts; no better physic for such parties, than to fast." Hildesheim, *episc.* 2 to this of hunger, adds, "4 often baths, much exercise and sweat," but hunger and fasting he prescribes before the rest. And 'tis indeed our Saviour's oracle, "This kind of devil is not cast out but by fasting and prayer," which makes the fathers so indiscriminate in commendation of fasting. As "hunger," saith 5 Ambrose, "is a friend of virginity, so is it an enemy to lasciviousness, but fulness overthrows chastity, and fostereth all manner of provocations." If thine horse be too lusty, Hierome adviseth thee to take away some of his provender; by this means those Pauls, Hieriles, Anthonies, and famous anchorites, subdued the lusts of the flesh; by this means Hilarion "made his ass, as he called his own body, leave kicking (for 6 Hierome relates of him in his life,) when the devil tempted him to any such foul offence." By this means those 7 Indian Brahmins kept themselves continent: they lay upon the ground covered with skins, as the red-shanks do on heelther, and dictated themselves sparingly on one dish, which Guianerius would have all young men put in practice, and if that will not serve, 8 Gordonius "would have them soundly whipped, or to cool their courage kept in prison," and there fed with bread and water till they acknowledge their error, and become of another mind. If imprisonment and hunger will not take them down, according to the directions of that 7 Theban Crates, "time must wear it out; if time will not, the last refuge is a haller." But this, you will say, is comically spoken. Howsoever, fasting, by all means, must be still used; and as they must refrain from such meats formerly mentioned, which cause venery, or provoke thirst, so they must use an opposite diet. 2 Wine must be altogether avoided of the younger sort. So 9 Plato prescribest, and would have the magistrates themselves abstain from it, for example's sake,

---

1 Ovid. lib. 1. remem. "Love yields to business; be employed, and you'll be safe." 2 Cap. 16. circa res arduas exercit. 3 Part. 2. c. 23. reg. San. His praefer horam somni, nulla per utiam transeat. 4 Hor. lib. 1. epist. 2. 5 Seneca. 6 "Poverty has not the means of feeding her passion." 7 Ptolema. 16. cap. 1. 8 sepe muda carina ciliolum portant tempore frigido sine caligia, et nudis pedibus incedant, in pante et aqua jejunem, appiis se verberibus cedant, &c. 9 Domicilus rabidus sunt corpora nostra, litorum praeclupe qui delicatissimam enucleat, advotlat, et corpus seque impendente probatur apud pudicitiam. 10 Victus sit attenuatus, balnei frequens usu et sudationes, hot baths, not hot, saith Magninus, part 3. ca. 23. to drive ever head and ears in a cold river, &c. 11 Ser. de gula; fines amica virginitati est, inimica lasciviae; sataturas vero castitatem perdit, et nutrit illaceras. 12 Vita Hilarions, lib. 3. epist. cum testasset cum demon titulatio inter certa, Eno inquit, aselle, ad corpus summi, faciam. &c. 13 Strabo. 1. 15. Geog. sub pelibius cubant, &c. 14 Cap. 2. part. 2. Si sit juvenis, et non vult obedienc, flagellat exquisitorter, dnum inceptat festere. 15 Laertius. lib. 6. cap. 5. amori molestiae fames; sim alter, temsus; sin non hoc, luguens. 16 Vina parant animos Veneri, &c. 17 3. de Legibus.
highly commending the Carthaginians for their temperance in this kind. And
'twas a good edict, a commendable thing, so that it were not done for some
sinister respect, as those old Egyptians abstained from wine, because some
fabulous poets had given out, wine sprang first from the blood of the giants, or
out of superstition, as our modern Turks, but for temperance, it being animas
virus et vitiorum fomes, a plague itself, if immoderately taken. Women of old
for that cause, in hot countries, were forbid the use of it; as severely punished
for drinking of wine as for adultery; and young folks, as Leonicus hath
recorded, Var. hist. l. 3. cap. 87, 88. out of Athenæus and others, and is still
practised in Italy, and some other countries of Europe and Asia, as Claudius
Minoes hath well illustrated in his Comment on the 23. Emblem of Alciat.
So choice is to be made of other diet.

"Nec minus erucas aptum est vitae salaces,
Et qui quidem venent corpora nostra putat."  

Those opposite meats which ought to be used are cucumbers, melons, purslain,
water-lilies, rue, woodbine, ammi, lettuce, which Lemniius so much commends,
tib. 2. cap. 42. and Mizaldus, hort. med. to this purpose; vitex, or agnus castus
before the rest, which, saith "Maginimus, hath a wonderful virtue in it. Those
Athenian women, in their solemn feasts called Thesmopheries, were to abstain
nine days from the company of men, during which time, saith Ælian, they laid
a certain herb, named hanea, in their beds, which assuaged those ardent flames
of love, and freed them from the torments of that violent passion. See more
in Porta, Matthiolius, Crescentius, lib. 5. &c., and what every herbalist almost
and physician hath written, cap. de Satyriasi et Priapismo; Rhasis amongst
the rest. In some cases again, if they be much diseased, and brought low in
body, and now ready to despair through anguish, grief, and too sensible a feel-
ing of their misery, a cup of wine and full diet is not amiss, and as Valescus
advisest, cum aliis honestis venerem sepe exercendia, which Langius, epist. med.
lib. 1. epist. 24. approves out of Rhasis (ad assimilationem cotid. invitatio) and
Guianerius secondis it, cap. 16. tract. 16. as a very profitable remedy.

"Tum timent habi quum ingulsa, cum si
Ancilla, aut verus praeest est, tentigine rampi
Malis? non ego usumqus, &c.

Jason Pratensis subscribes to this counsel of the poet, Excrutio enim aut tollit
prorsus aut lenit agitatuinem. As it did the raging lust of Ahasuerus, qui
ad impatientiam amoris levandam, per singulas fere noctes novas puellas devis-
ginavit. And to be drunk too by fits; but this is mad physic, if it be at all
to be permitted. If not, yet some pleasure is to be allowed, as that which
Vives speaks of, lib. 3. de anima. "A lover that hath as it were lost himself
through impotency, impatience, must be called home as a traveller, by music,
feasting, good wine, if need be to drunkenness itself, which many so much
commend for the easing of the mind, all kinds of sports and merriments, to see
fair pictures, hangings, buildings, pleasant fields, orchards, gardens, groves,
ponds, pools, rivers, fishing, fowling, hawking, hunting, to hear merry tales,
and pleasant discourse, reading, to use exercise till he sweat, that new spirits
may succeed, or by some vehement affection or contrary passion to be diverted
till he be fully weaned from anger, suspicion, cares, fears, &c., and habituated
into another course." Semper tecum sit (as Sempronius adviseth Olisto his
love-sick master) qui sermones joculares moveat, conciones ridiculas, dideria
falsa, suaves historiae, fabulas venustas recenseat, corum ludat, &c., still have a

b Non minus et vinum bibiitam ac si adliterium admissetis, Gellius, lib. 10. c. 23.  
"Reg. San. part. 3. cap. 23. Mirabiliem vim habet.  
"Cum mulieris aliquas gratias sepe ebulit uniuslum. Iden. Laurentius, cap. 11.  
Her.  
"Cap. 29. de morb. cereb.  
Beroaldus, orat. de amore.  
Amator, ejus est pro impotentiam mens amoris, opinat ut plasmatis animus velat a peregrinatione domum revocet
per muscvm, convivia, &c. Per aspicium, fabulas, et festivas narrationes, laborem usque ad soidorem, &c.
Calestini, Act. 2. Barthii interpretes.
pleasant companion to sing and tell merry tales, songs and facetie histories, sweet discourse, &c. And as the melody of music, merriment, singing, dancing, doth augment the passion of some lovers, as Avicenna notes, so it expel- leth it in others, and doth very much good. These things must be warily applied, as the parties’ symptoms vary, and as they shall stand variously affected.

If there be any need of physic, that the humours be altered, or any new matter aggregated, they must be cured as melancholy men. Carolus à Lorne, amongst other questions discussed for his degree at Montpelier in France, hath this, An amantes et amentes iisdem remedii curentur? Whether lovers and madmen be cured by the same remedies? he affirms it; for love extended is mere madness. Such physic then as is prescribed, is either inward or outward, as hath been formerly handled in the precedent partition in the cure of melancholy. Consult with Valleriola, observat. lib. 2. observ. 7. Lod. Mercatus, lib. 2. cap. 4. de mulier. affect. Daniel Sennertus, lib. 1. part. 2. cap. 10. Jacobus Ferrandus the Frenchman, in his Tract de amore Erotique, Forestus, lib. 10. observ. 29 and 30, Jason Pratensis and others for peculiar receipts. Amatus Lucitanus curet a young Jew, that was almost mad for love, with the syrup of hellebore, and such other evacuations and purges which are usually prescribed to black cholery. Avicenna confirms as much if need require, and blood-letting above the rest, which makes amantes ne sint amentes, lovers to come to themselves, and keep in their right minds. Tis the same which Schola Salernitana, Jason Pratensis, Hildesheim, &c., prescribe blood-letting to be used as a principal remedy. Those old Scythians had a trick to cure all appetite of burning lust, by letting themselves blood under the ears, and to make both men and women barren, as Sabellicus in his Enedides relates of them. Which Salmuth. Tit. 10. de Herol. comment. in Panciroli. de nov. report. Mercurialis var. lec. lib. 3. cap. 7. of Hippocrates and Benzo say still is in use amongst the Indians, a reason of which Langius gives lib. 1. epist. 10.


k Cap. de Ilissi. Multos hoc affecto sanat canillia, lactualia, musica, et quidam sunt quas suares angunt. 1This author came to my hands since the third edition of this book. m Cent. 3. curat. 56. Syrupo helleborato et alia quod ad atrum blemem pertinent. n Purgetur a ejus disposito veneri ad adust. humoris, et phlebotometuur. o Amantum morbus ut pruritis solvitur, venas sectione et coecubitulis. p Curâ a venae sectione per suares, unde semper-stories.
SUBJECT. II.—Withstand the beginnings, avoid occasions, change his place; fair and foul means, contrary passions, with witty inventions: to bring in another, and discount the former.

Other good rules and precepts are enjoined by our physicians, which, if not alone, yet certainly conjoined, may do much; the first of which is obstare principii, to withstand the beginning. "Quisquis in primo obisti, Penequie amorem tatus ac victor fuit, he that will but resist at first, may easily be a conqueror at the last." Balthasar Castilio, &c. 4. urgeth this precept above the rest, "when he shall chance (saith he) to light upon a woman that hath good behaviour joined with her excellent person, and shall perceive his eyes with a kind of greediness to pull unto them this image of beauty, and carry it to the heart: shall observe himself to be somewhat incensed with this influence, which moveth within: when he shall discern those subtle spirits sparkling in her eyes, to administer more fuel to the fire, he must wisely withstand the beginnings, rouse up reason, stuffed almost, fortify his heart by all means, and shut up all those passages, by which it may have entrance."

'Tis a precept which all concur upon,

4. Opprime dum novasunati subiti mala semina mordi, Deum licet, in primo luminis siste pedem." "Thy quick disease, whilst it is fresh to-day, by all means crush, thy feet at first step stay." Which cannot speedier be done, than if he confess his grief and passion to some judicious friend "(qui tacitus ardet magis wrtur, the more he conceals, the greater is his pain) that by his good advice may happily ease him on a sudden; and withal to avoid occasions, or any circumstance that may aggravate his disease, to remove the object by all means; for who can stand by a fire and not burn?

"Vivesite obscurae et mittite istare foras, Que misero mihi amanti obiti sanguinem." 'Tis good therefore to keep quite out of her company, which Hierom so much labours to Paula, to Nepotian; Chrysost. so much inculcates in ser. in contubern., Cyprian, and many other fathers of the church, Siracides in his ninth chapter, Jason Pratensis, Savanarola, Arnoldus, Valleriola, &c., and every physician that treats of this subject. Not only to avoid, as Gregory Tholosanuus exhorts, "kissing, dalliance, all speeches, tokens, love-letters, and the like," or as Castilio, lib. 4. to converse with them, hear them speak, or sing, (tolerabilius est audire basilisnum sibilantem, thou hadst better hear, saith Cyprian, a serpent hiss) "those amiable smiles, admirable graces, and sweet gestures," which their presence affords.

but all talk, name, mention, or cogitation of them, and of any other women, persons, circumstance, amorous book or tale that may administer any occasion of remembrance. b. Prosper adviseth young men not to read the Canticles, and some parts of Genesis at other times; but for such as are enamoured they forbid, as before, the name mentioned, &c., especially all sight, they must not so much as come near, or look upon them.

"Gaze not on a maid," saith Syracides, "turn away thine eyes from a beautiful woman," c. 9. v. 5. 7. 8. avertis occulos, saith David, or if thou dost see

4. Seneca.
5. Cum in mulierem inciderit, cum cum forma moram enavitate conjunctam habet, et jam occulos perscrutis, formam ad se imaginem cum aviditate quadrum rapere cum cadam, &c. "Urid. de rem. lib. 1.
them as Ficus adviseth, let not thine eye be intentus ad libidinem, do not intend her more than the rest: for as Propertius holds, *Ipse alimina sibi maxima probet amor,* love as a snowball enlargeth itself by sight: but as Hierome to Nepotian, *aut equalitatem ama, aut equalitatem ignora,* either see all alike, or let all alone; make a league with thine eyes, as Job did, and that is the safest course, let all alone, see none of them. Nothing sooner revives, "or waxeth sore again," as Petrarch holds, "than love doth by sight." "As pomp reneweth ambition; the sight of gold, covetousness; a beauteous object sets on fire this burning lust." *Et multum saliens incitat undo sitim.* The sight of drink makes one dry, and the sight of meat increaseth appetite. "Tis dangerous therefore to sec. A young gentleman in Hermintum would needs put on his mistress's clothes, and walk abroad alone, which some of her suitors espying, stole him away for her that he represented. So much can sight enforce. Especially if he have been formerly enamoured, the sight of his mistress strikes him into a new fit, and makes him rave many days after.

---

Infirmis causa pusilla nocet.
Ut pene extinctum cinerem si sulphure tangas,
Vivet, et ex minimo maximas ignis erit:
Sic nisi vitabils quiqquad reqvocabit amorern,
Flamma recrucersect, quae modo nulls faict.

A sickly man a little thing offends,
As brimstone doth a fire decayed renew,
And make it burn afresh, doth love's dead flames,
If that the former object it review.

Or, as the poet compares it to embers in ashes, which the wind blows, *ut solea in ventis,* &c., a scald head (as the saying is) is soon broken, dry wood quickly kindles, and when they have been formerly wounded with sight, how can they by seeing but be inflamed? Ismenius acknowledgeth as much of himself, when he had been long absent, and almost forgotten his mistress, "at the first sight of her, as straw in a fire, I burned afresh, and more than ever I did before." *Charicia was as much moved at the sight of her dear Theagines, after he had been a great stranger.* Mertila, in Aristenetus, swore she would never love Pamphilus again, and did moderate her passion, so long as he was absent; but the next time he came in presence, she could not contain, effuse amplexa attractari se sinit, &c., she broke her vow, and did profusely embrace him. Hermotinus, a young man (in the said author) is all out as unstaid, he had forgot his mistress quite, and by his friends was well weaned from her love; but seeing her by chance, *agnocit veteris vestigia flammane,* he raved amain, *Illae tamen emergens veluti lucida stella cepit elucere,* &c., she did appear as a blazing star, or an angel to his sight. And it is the common passion of all lovers to be overcome in this sort. For that cause belike Alexander discerning this inconvenience and danger that comes by seeing, "when he heard Darius's wife so much commended for her beauty, would scarce admit her to come in his sight," foreknowing belike that of Plutarch, *formosam videre periculosissimam,* how full of danger it is to see a proper woman, and though he was intemperate in other things, yet in this *superbre se gessit,* he carried himself bravely. And so when as Araspus, in Xenophon, had so much magnified that divine face of Panthea to Cyrus, "by how much she was fairer than ordinary, by so much he was the more unwilling to see her." Scipio, a young man of twenty-three years of age, and the most beautiful of the Romans, equal in person to that Grecian Charinus, or Homer's Nireus, at the siege of a city in Spain, when as a noble and most fair young gentlewoman
was brought unto him, "and he had heard she was betrothed to a lord, rewarded her, and sent her back to her sweetheart." St. Austin, as Gregory reports of him, ne cum sorore quidem suad putavit habitandum, would not live in the house with his own sister. Xenocrates lay with Laos of Corinth all night, and would not touch her. Socrates, though all the city of Athens supposed him to dote upon fair Alcibiades, yet when he had an opportunity solus cum solo to lie in the chamber with, and was wooed by him besides, as the said Alcibiades, publicly confessed, formam sprovit et superbe contempsit, he scornfully rejected him. Petrarch, that had so magnified his Laura in several poems, when the pope's means was she offered unto him, would not accept of her. "It is a good happiness to be free from this passion of love, and great discretion it argues in such a man that he can so contain himself; but when thou art once in love, to moderate thyself (as he saith) is a singular point of wisdom.

"To avoid such nets is no such mastery, But to 'en, escape is all the victory."

But, forasmuch as few men are free, so discreet lovers, or that can contain themselves, and moderate their passions, to curb their senses as not to see them, not to look lasciviously, not to confer with them, such is the fury of this head's strong passion of raging lust, and their weakness, ferox ille ardor a natura insitus, as he terms it, "such a furious desire nature hath inscribed, such unspeakable delight."

"Si Diee Veneris furor, Insanis aed menibus incubat,"

which neither reason, counsel, poverty, pain, misery, drudgery, partis dolor, &c., can deter them from; we must use some speedy means to correct and prevent that, and all other inconveniences, which come by conference and the like. The best, readiest, surest way, and which all approve, is Loci mutatio, to send them several ways, that they may neither hear of, see, nor have an opportunity to send to one another again, or live together, soli cum sola, as so many Gilbertines. Elongatio a patria, 'tis Savanarola's fourth rule, and Gordian's' precept, distrahatur ad longinquas regiones, send him to travel. 'Tis that which most run upon, as so many hounds with full cry, poets, divines, philosophers, physicians, all, mutet patriam: Valestius: "as a sick man he must be cured with change of air, Tully, & Tuscus. The best remedy is to get thee gone, Jason Pratensis: change air and soil, Laurentius.

"Vnde litteris amatm. Virg. Uile fimilimus abstineisse locis."

Travelling is an antidote of love,

"d Magnum iter ad doctas profeiceit cogor Athenas, Ut me longa gravit solavit amore visa."

For this purpose, saith Propertius, my parents sent me to Athens; time and patience wear away pain and grief, as fire goes out for want of fuel. Quantum oculus, animo tam procul ubi amor. But so as they tarry out long enough: a whole year Xenophon prescribes Critobulus, vix enim intra hoc tempus ab amore sanare poteris: some will hardly be weaned under. All this Heinsius merrily inculcates in an epistle to his friend Primierus; first fast, then tarry, thirdly, change thy place, fourthly, think of a halter. If change of place, continuance of time, absence, will not wear it out with those precedent remedies,

1 Livins. cum eam regulo cuidam desponsatam avvidissent, muneribus cumulatum remissit. 2 Ep. 39. liv. 7. 3 Et ea locis posset que soli amantes loci solent. 4 Platonis Convivio. 5 Heliodorus. liv. 4. experimir eos amoris beatitudine est; at quum captus sit, ad moderationem revocare animum prudentia singularis. 6 Lucr. 1. 4. 7 Hecat. Bk. 1. de amor. commendem. 8 Loc. mutatione tantum non convaleat. 9 Eurip. corandus est cap. 11. 10 Fly the cherished shore. It is advisable to withdraw from the places near it. 11 Amor. 1. 2. "Depart, and take a long journey—safety is in flight only." 12 Quidam amant, loca non nocent; dies arduissimam admitt, absentia delect. Ite locum procul hinc Patriaque relinquere fines. Ovid. 13 Lib. 3. eleg. 20. 14 Lib. 1. Socrat. memoer. Titi, O Critobulo, consul ut integrum annum absit, &c. 15 Triximum est ut curias. 2. ut meram temporis opponas. 3. et locum munere. 4. ut de laqueo cogitus.
it will hardly be removed: but these commonly are of force. Felix Plator, observ. lib. 1. had a baker to his patient, almost mad for the love of his maid, and desperate; by removing her from him, he was in a short space cured. Iseus, a philosopher of Assyria, was a most dissolve liver in his youth, palam lasceviers, in love with all he met; but after he betook himself, by his friend's advice, to his study, and left women's company, he was so changed that he cared no more for plays, nor feasts, nor masks, nor songs, nor verses, fine clothes, nor no such love toys: he became a new man upon a sudden, tanquam si priores oculos amisisset (saith mine h author), as if he had lost his former eyes. Peter Godefridus, in the last chapter of his third book hath a story out of St. Ambrose, of a young man that meeting his old love after that long absence, on whom he had extremely doted, would scarce take notice of her; she wondered at it, that he should so lightly esteem her, called him again, lenibat dictis animum, and told him who she was, Ego sum, inquit: At ego non sum ego; but he replied, "he was not the same man:" proripuit sese tandem, as i Eneas fled from Dido, not vouchsafing her any farther parley, loathing his folly and ashamed of that which formerly he had done. k Non sum stultus ut ante jum, Neera, "O Neera, put your tricks, and practise hereafter upon somebody else, you shall befool me no longer." Petrarch hath such another tale of a young gallant, that loved a wenche with one eye, and for that cause by his parents was sent to travel into far countries, "after some years he returned, and meeting the maid for whose sake he was sent abroad, asked her how, and by what chance she lost her eye? no, said she, I have lost none, but you have found yours:" signifying thereby, that all lovers were blind, as Fabius saith, Amantes de formâ judicare non possunt, lovers cannot judge of beauty, nor scarce of anything else, as they will easily confess after they return unto themselves, by some discontinuance or better advice, wonder at their own folly, madness, stupidity, blindness, be much abashed, "and laugh at love, and call it an idle thing, condemn themselves that ever they should be so besotted or misled; and be heartily glad that they have so happily escaped."

If so be (which is seldom) that change of place will not effect this alteration, then other remedies are to be annexed, fair and foul means, as to persuade, promise, threaten, terrify, or to divert by some contrary passion, rumour, tales, news, or some witty invention to alter his affection, "by some greater sorrow to drive out the less," saith Gordonius, as that his house is on fire, his best friends dead, his money stolen. "That he is made some great governor, or hath some honour, office, some inheritance is befallen him." He shall be a knight, a baron: or by some false accusation, as they do such as have the hiccoup, to make them forget it. S. Hierome, lib. 2. epist. 16. to Rusticus the monk, hath an instance of a young man of Greece, that lived in a monastery in Egypt, "that by no labour, no continence, no persuasion, could be diverted, but at last by this trick he was delivered. The abbot sets one of his convent to quarrel with him, and with some scandalous reproach or other to defame him before company, and then to come and complain first, the witnesses were likewise suborned for the plaintiff. The young man wept, and when all were against him, the abbot cunningly took his part, lest he should be overcome with immoderate grief: but what need many words? by this invention he was cured, and alienated from his pristine love-thoughts—Injuries, slanders, contempts, disgraces,—spretaque injuria forma, "the insult of her slighted beauty," are very forcible means to withdraw men's affections, contumelìd affecti amatores

h Philestrenus de vita Sophistarum. f Virg. 6. En. h Buchanan. i Annuncientur valde tristia, ut major tristitia possit minorem obscurare. j Ant quod aut facta senecculus, aut habet honorem magnum. k Adolescens Graecus erat in Egypti cemolobo qui nulla operis magnitudine, nulla persuasione flammam poterat sedare: monasteri pater hac arte servavit. Imperat cuiusdam è soccis, &c. Ficbat ille, omnes adversabantur; solus pater callide opomeret, ne abundantia tristitie insolceretur, quid multa? hoc invento curatus est, et a cogitationibus priemisit avocatus.
Love-Melancholy.

[Part. 3. Sec. 2.

amare desinunt, as "Lucian saith, lovers reviled or neglected, contemned or misused, turn love to hate; "redeem? Non si me obscuret, "I'll never love thee more." Egone illum, quae illum, quae me, quae non? So Zephyrus hated Hycanthus because he scorned him, and preferred his co-rival Apollo (Palladatos fab. Nar.), he will not come again though he be invited. Tell him but how he was scoffed at behind his back ("tis the counsel of Aviceona), that his love is false, and entertains another, rejects him, cares not for him, or that she is a fool, a nasty quean, a slut, a vixen, a scold, a devil, or, which Italians commonly do, that he or she hath some loathsome filthy disease, gout, stone, strangury, falling sickness, and that they are hereditary, not to be avoided, he is subject to a consumption, hath the pox, that he hath three or four incurable titters, issues; that she is bald, her breath stinks, she is mad by inheritance, and so are all the kindred, a bare-brain with many other secret infirmities, which I will not so much as name, belonging to women. That he is a hermaphroditic, an eunuch, imperfect, impotent, a spendthrift, a gamester, a fool, a gull, a beggar, a whoremaster, far in debt, and not able to maintain her, a common drunkard, his mother was a witch, his father hanged, that he hath a wolf in his bosom, a sore leg, he is a leper, hath some incurable disease, that he will surely beat her, he cannot hold his water, that he cries out or walks in the night, will stab his bed-fellow, tell all his secrets in his sleep, and that nobody dare lie with him, his house is haunted with spirits, with such fearful and tragical things, able to avert and terrify any man or woman living, G ordoniens, cap. 20, part. 2. hune in modo consult; Partur alia vestula turpissima aspectu, cum turpi et vili habitu: et portet subitus gremium pannum menstrualem, et dicat quod amica sua sit ebriosa, et quod minget in lecto, et quod est epileptica et impudica; et quod in corpore suo sunt excescentiae enormes, cum fietre anhelitus, et aliae enormitates, gubus vestula sunt edocta: si nolit his persuaderi, subito extrahat pannum menstrualem, coram facie portando, ecclamando, talis est amica tua; et si ex his non demiserit, non est homo, sed diabolus incarnatus. Idem fere, Aviceona, cap. 24, de cura Elishi, lib. 3, Fenn. 1. Tract. 4. Narent res innundas vestula; ex quibus abominationem incurrat, et res serdias, et hoc assiduam. Idem Arculanus, cap. 16. in 9. Rhasis, &c.

Withal as they do discommend the old, for the better effecting a more speedy alteration, they must commend another paramour, alteram inducere, set him or her to be wooed, or woo some other that shall be fairer, of better note, better fortune, birth, parentage, much to be preferred, *Invenies alium si te hic fastidit Alexei,* by this means, which Jason Pratensis wiseth, to turn the stream of affection another way, *Successore novo truditur omnis amor,* or, as Valesius adviseth, by *subdividing to diminish it, as a great river cut into many channels runs low at last. *Hortor et ut pariter binas habeat amicas,* &c. If you suspect to be taken, be sure, saith the poet, to have two mistresses at once, or go from one to another: as he that goes from a good fire in cold weather is loth to depart from it, though in the next room there be a better which will refresh him as much; there is as much difference of *hac ignis,* or bring him to some public shows, plays, meetings, where he may see variety, and he shall likely loathe his first choice: carry him but to the next town, yea peradventure to the next house, and as Paris lost Cimon’s love by seeing Helen, and Cressida forsook Troilus by conversing with Diomed, he will dislike his former mistress, and leave her quite behind him, as *Theens left Ariadne fast asleep in the island of Dia, to seek her fortune, that was erst*

his loving mistress. "Nunc primum Dorida vetus amator contemps, as he said, Doris is but a dowdy to this. As he that looks himself in a glass forgets his physiognomy forthwith, this flattering glass of love will be diminished by remove; after a little absence it will be remitted, the next fair object will likely after it. A young man in Lucian was pitifully in love, he came to the theatre by chance, and by seeing other fair objects there, mentis sanitatem recept, was fully recovered, "and went merrily home as if he had taken a dram of oblivion." b A mouse (saith an Apologist) was brought up in a chest, there fed with fragments of bread and cheese, though there could be no better meat, till coming forth at last, and feeding liberally of other variety of viands, loathed his former life: moralise this fable by thyself. Plato, in his seventh book De Legibus, hath a pretty fiction of a city under ground, c to which by little holes some small store of light came; the inhabitants thought there could not be a better place, and at their first coming abroad they might not endure the light, cesperrì solem interi; but after they were accustomed a little to it "'d they deplored their fellows' misery that lived under ground." A silly lover is in like state, none so fair as his mistress at first, he cares for none but her; yet after a while, when he hath compared her with others, he abhors her name, sight, and memory. 'Tis generally true; for as he observes, " Pròrem flamman novus signis extrudit; et ea mulierum natura, ut presentes maximè ament, one fire drives out another; and such is women's weakness, that they love commonly him that is present. And so do many men; as he confessed, he loved Amye, till he saw Floriat, and when he saw Cynthia, forgot them both: but fair Phillis was incomparably beyond them all, Claris surpassed her, and yet when he espied Amaryllis, she was his sole mistress; O divine Amaryllis: quàm procera, cupressi ad instar, quàm degens, quàm decens, &c. How lovely, how tall, how comely she was (saith Polemius) till he saw another, and then she was the sole subject of his thoughts. In conclusion, her he loves best, he saw last. l Triton, the sea god, first loved Leucothoe, till he came in presence of Milene, she was the commandress of his heart, till he saw Galatea: but (as she complains) he loved another eftsoons, another, and another. 'Tis a thing, which by Hierom's report, hath been usually practised. "h Heathen philosophers drive out one love with another, as they do a peg, or pin with a pin. Which those seven Persian princes did to Ahasuerus, that they might require the desire of Queen Vashti with the love of others." Pausanias in Elicias saith, that therefore one Cupid was painted to contend with another, and to take the garland from him, because one love drives out another, "i Alterius vires subtrahit alter amor; and Tully, 3. Nat. Deor. disputing with C. Cotta, makes mention of three several Cupids all differing in office. Felix Plater, in the first book of his observations, boasts how he cured a widower in Basil, a patient of his, by this stratagem alone, that doted upon a poor servant his maid, when his friends, children, no persuation could serve to alienate his mind: they motioned him to another honest man's daughter in the town, whom he loved, and lived with long after, aborning the very name and sight of the first. After the death of Lucretia, k Eurypides would admit of no comfort, till the Emperor Sigismond married him to a noble lady of his court, and so in short space he was fixed.

7 Petronius. 2 Lib. de salt. 8 E theatro egregius hilars, ac si pharmaco rum obviionis bibisset. b Mas in estra natur, &c. 6 in quem h specie subterranea medium lucis illibat. d Deplorabunt ceterum miseriam qui subterraneis illis locis vitam ducen. 6 Titus, lib. 6. f Aristophanes, opist. 4. c Calacchi. Dial. Galat. Max aliam praetuli, abaco praetules quae primam oceavo ariscessit. h Epist. Lib. 2. k Philosophi seculi veteam amos novos, quasi clavum clavo repelleque, quod et Asueri regis septem principes Parsam fecere, ut Vastae reginii desiderium amoris compensarent. l Ovid. "One love extracts the influence of another." k Lucubi ve-re indutos, consolationes non admisit, donee Caesar ex decali sanguine, formosam virginesc matrimonio conjuxit. Ancas Sylvii hist. de Euryd. et Lucretia,
SUBSECT. III.—By counsel and persuasion, futility of the fact, men’s, women’s faults, miseries of marriage, events of lust, &c.

As there be divers causes of this burning lust, or heroical love, so there be many good remedies to ease and help; amongst which, good counsel and persuasion, which I should have handled in the first place, are of great moment, and not to be omitted. Many are of opinion, that in this blind headstrong passion counsel can do no good.

"Quis enim modus adsit am ri?" But, without question, good counsel and advice must needs be of great force, especially if it shall proceed from a wise, fatherly, reverent, discreet person, a man of authority, whom the parties do respect, stand in awe of, or from a judicious friend, of itself alone it is able to divert and suffice. Gordonius, the physician, attributes so much to it, that he would have it by all means used in the first place. Amoveatur ab ulla consilio virum timet; ostendendo pericula secund, judicium inferni, gaudia Paraclisi. He would have some discreet men to dissuade them, after the fury of passion is a little spent, or by absence allayed: for it is as intemperate at first to give counsel, as to comfort parents when their children are in that instant departed; to no purpose to prescribe narcotics, cordials, nectarines, potions, Homer’s nepenthes, or Helen’s bowl, &c. Non cessabit pectus tundere, she will lament and howl for a season; let passion have his course a while, and then he may proceed, by foreshowing the miserable events and dangers which will surely happen, the pains of hell, joys of paradise, and the like, which by their prepossessing courses they shall forfeit or incur; and ‘tis a fit method, a very good means, for what Seneca said of vice, I say of love, Sine magistro discitur, vix sine magistro descitut, ‘tis learned of itself, but hardly left without a tutor. ‘Tis not amiss therefore to have some such overseer, to expostulate and show them such absurdities, inconveniences, imperfections, discontents, as usually follow; which their blindness, fury, madness, cannot apply unto themselves, or will not apprehend through weakness; and good for them to disclose themselves, to give ear to friendly admonitions. “Tell me, sweetheart (saith Triphena to a love-sick Charmides in Lucian), what is it that troubles thee? peradventure I can ease thy mind, and further thee in thy suit;” and so, without question, she might, and so mayest thou, if the patient be capable of good counsel, and will hear at least what may be said.

If he love at all, she is either an honest woman or a whore. If dishonest, let him read or inculcate to him that of Solomon’s Proverbs, Ecclus. 26. Ambros. lib. 1. cap. 4. in his book of Abel and Cain, Philo Judaeus de mercede mer. Platina. dial. in Amares, Epeusenes, and those three books of Pet. Hœdes de conten. Amoribus. Aeneas Sylvius’ tart Epistle, which he wrote to his friend Nicholas of Warthurge, which he calls medelum illicit amoris, &c. "If for what a whore,” as he saith, "but a poloer of youth, ruin of men, a destruction, a devourer of patrimonies, a downfall of honour, fodder for the devil, the gate of death, and supplement of hell!” Table amor est laqueus animae, &c., a bitter honey, sweet poison, delicate destruction, a voluntary mischief, coniunctum cæcum, sterquilinum. And as Pet. Aretine’s Lucretia, a

notable quean, confesseth: "Gluttony, anger, envy, pride, sacrilege, theft, slaughter, were all born that day that a whore began her profession; for," as she follows it, "her pride is greater than a rich churl's, she is more envious than the pox, as malicious as melancholy, as covetous as hell. If from the beginning of the world any were mala, pejor, pessima, bad in the superlative degree, 'tis a whore; how many have I undone, caused to be wounded, slain! O Antonia, thou seest "what I am without, but within, God knows, a puddle of iniquity, a sink of sin, a pocky quean." Let him now that so dotes meditate on this; let him see the event and success of others, Samson, Hercules, Holofernes, &c. Those infinite mischiefs attend it: if she be another man's wife he loves, 'tis abominable in the sight of God and men; adultery is expressly forbidden in God's commandment, a mortal sin, able to endanger his soul: if he be such a one that fears God, or have any religion, he will eschew it, and abhor the loathsomeness of his own fact. If he love an honest maid, 'tis to abuse or marry her: if to abuse, 'tis fornication, a foul fact (though some make light of it), and almost equal to adultery itself. If to marry, let him seriously consider what he takes in hand, look before ye leap, as the proverb is, or settle his affections, and examine first the party, and condition of his estate and hers, whether it be a fit match for fortunes, years, parentage, and such other circumstances, an sit sua Veneris. Whether it be likely to proceed: if not, let him wisely stave himself off at the first, curb in his inordinate passion, and moderate his desire, by thinking of some other subject, divert his cogitations. Or if it be not for his good, as Aeneas, forewarned by Mercury in a dream, left Dido's love, and in all haste got him to sea,

12X Menestheus, Surtgestumque vocat fortunatique Cleoniam, Classem agnutque metit jubet." —

and although she did oppose with vows, tears, prayers, and imprecation,

———"nullis ille moverur
Fletibus, aut illas voces tractabilis audit;"

Let thy Mercury-reason rule thee against all allurements, seeming delights, pleasing inward or outward provocations. Thou mayest do this if thou wilt, pater non desperit filiam, nec frater sororem, a father dotes not on his own daughter, a brother on a sister; and why? because it is unnatural, unlawful, unfit. If he be sickly, soft, deformed, let him think of his deformities, vices, infirmities; if in debt, let him ruminate how to pay his debts: if he be in any danger, let him seek to avoid it: if he have any law-suit, or other business, he may do well to let his love-matters alone and follow it, labour in his vocation whatever it is. But if he cannot so ease himself, yet let him wisely premeditate of both their estates; if they be unequal in years, she young and he old, what an unfit match must it needs be, an uneven yoke, how absurd and in decent a thing is it! as Lycinus in 12Lucian told Timolaus, for an old bald crook-nosed knave to marry a young wench; how odious a thing it is to see an old lecher! What should a bald fellow do with a comb, a dumb doter with a pipe, a blind man with a looking-glass, and thou with such a wife? How absurd it is for a young man to marry an old wife for a piece of good. But put case she be equal in years, birth, fortunes, and other qualities correspondent, he doth desire to be coupled in marriage, which is an honourable estate, but for what respects? Her beauty like, and comeliness of person, that is commonly the main object, she is a most absolute form, in his eye at least, Cui formam Paphia et Charites tribuere decoram; but do other men affirm as much? or is it an error in his judgment?

"A Falunus nos osuli valetique sensus,
Oppressa ratione mentitur;"

12 Quaest extra sum vides, quas ina novit Deus. 1X Virg. "He calls Menestheus, Surgestus, and the brave Cleoniam, and orders them silently to prepare the fleet." 1Y "He is moved by no tears, he cannot be induced to hear her words." 12Tom. 2. in votis. Calvus cum sis, nasam habebae sinam, &c. 1Petron. us.
our eyes and other senses will commonly deceive us:” it may be, to thee
thyself upon a more serious examination, or after a little absence, she is not so
fair as she seems. *Quedam videntur et non sunt;* compare her to another
standing by, ’tis a touchstone to try, confer hand to hand, body to body, face
to face, eye to eye, nose to nose, neck to neck, &c., examine every part by
itself, then altogether, in all postures, several times, and tell me how thou
likest her. It may be not she that is so fair, but her coats, or put another in
her clothes, and she will seem all out as fair; as the b poet then prescribes,
separate her from her clothes; suppose thou saw her in a base beggar’s weed,
or else dressed in some old hirsute attires out of fashion, foul linen, coarse rai-
ment, besmeared with soot, colly, perfumed with opoponax, sagapenum, asa-
fratida, or some such filthy gums, dirty, about some indecent action or other;
or in such a case as "Brassivola, the physician, found Malastata, his patient,
after a potion of hellobore, which he had prescribed: *Manibus in terram depo-
stitis, et ano versus ceelum elevato (ac si videretur Socratics ille Aristophanes,
qui Geometricas figuras in terram scribens, tubero colligere videbatur) atram
bilem in album parietem injicebat, adeoque totem camaram, et se deturpabat, ut,
&c., all to bewrayed, or worse; if thou saw’st her (I say) would thou affect her
as thou dost?" Suppose thou beheldest her in a frosty morning, in cold
weather, in some passion or perturbation of mind, weeping, chafing, &c.,
rived and ill-favoured to behold. She many times that in a composed look
seems so amiable and delicious, *tam secula fomus;* if she do but laugh or
smile, makes an ugly sparrow-mouthed face, and shows a pair of uneven,
loathsame, rotten, foul teeth: she hath a black skin, gouty legs, a deformed
crooked carcass under a fine coat. It may be for all her costly tires she is
bald, and though she seem so fair by dark, by candle-light, or afar off at such
a distance, as Callicratides observed in "Lucian, "If thou should see her near,
or in a morning, she would appear more ugly than a beast;" fsi diligenter
consideres, quid per os et nares et ceteros corporis meas agreditur, villus ster-
quilinium nunquam vidisti. Follow my counsel, see her undressed, see her, if
it be possible, out of her attires, *turtivis nudatum coloribus,* it may be she is
like Æsop’s jay, or Pliny’s cantharides, she will be loathsome, ridiculous,
though wilt not endure her sight: or suppose thou saw’st her, pale, in a con-
sumption, on her death-bed, skin and bones, or now dead, *Cujus erat gratissi-
mus complexus (whose embrace was so agreeable) as Barnard saith, erit horribilis
aspectus; Non redolet, sed ole, que redorelo solet, "As a posy she smells
sweet, is most fresh and fair one day, but dried up, withered, and stinks an-
other." Beautiful Nireus, by that Homer so much admired, once dead, is more
deformed than Thersites, and Solomon deceased as ugly as Marcolphus: thy
lovely mistress that was erst Charis charior ocellis, "dearer to thee than
thine eyes," once sick or departed, is Vili vulgar estimata cano, "worse than
any dirt or dunghill." Her embraces were not so acceptable, as now her looks
be terrible: thou hadst better behold a Gorgon’s head, than Helen’s carcass.

Some are of opinion that to see a woman naked is able of itself to alter her
affection; and it is worthy of consideration, saith Montaigne the Frenchman
in his Essays, that the skilfullest masters of amorous dalliance, appoint for a
remedy of very tender passions, a full survey of the body; which the poet
insinuates,

"b Ovid. 
 c In Catarrlics, lib. 2. 
 d Si ferveat deformis, ecce formosa est; si frigeat formosae, jam sis
informis. Th. Morus, Epigram. 
 e Amorum displ. tom. 4. si quis ad amorum contemptur mutas mulieres
a noce lecto surgentes, turpiores pudet esse baud.
 f Fingo de classtro Animae, lib. 1. c. 2. "Il ven, 
viter stuff." 
 g Hist. nat. 11. cap. 35. A fly that hath golden wings but a poisoned body.
 h Buchanan,
 i In Bat. 
 j Apol. pro Ren. Seb. 
 k Ovid. 2. rem.
It is reported of Seleneus, king of Syria, that seeing his wife Saratonice’s bald pate, as she was undressing her by chance, he could never affect her after. Remundus Lullius, the physician, spying an ulcer or cancer in his mistress’ breast, whom he so dearly loved, from that day following abhorred the looks of her. Philip the French king, as Neubrigensis, lib. 4. cap. 24. relates it, married the king of Denmark’s daughter, “and after he had used her as a wife one night, because her breath stank, they say, or for some other secret fault, sent her back again to her father.” Peter Matthews, in the life of Lewis the Eleventh, finds fault with our English "chronicles, for writing how Margaret the king of Scots’ daughter, and wife to Louis the Eleventh, French king, was ob grasseolentiam oris, rejected by her husband. Many such matches are made for hy-respects, or some seemingly comeliness, which after honeymoons’ past, turn to bitterness: for burning lust is but a flash, a gunpowder passion; and hatred oft follows in the highest degree, dislike and contempt.

when they wax old, and ill-favoured, they may commonly no longer abide them, — Jam gravis es nobis, begone, they grow stale, fulsome, loathsome, odious, thou art a beastly filthy queen — faciem Phoebc cacantis habes, thou art Saturni podes, withered and dry, insipida et vetula — Te quia rugae turpant, et capitis nives (I say), begone, "porta patens, profiscere.

Yea, but you will affirm your mistress is complete, of a most absolute form in all men’s opinions, no exceptions can be taken at her, nothing may be added to her person, nothing detracted, she is the mirror of women for her beauty, comeliness and pleasant grace, inimitable, morea deliccia, meri lopes, she is Myrothetium Veneris, Gratiarum piccis, a mere magazine of natural perfections, she hath all the Veneres and Graces — melle facies et mille figuras, in each part absolute and complete. 7 Luna genas, lato as roseum, vaga lumina lata: to be admired for her person, a most incomparable, unmatchable piece, aurea proles, ad simulachrum alicujus numinis composita, a Phoenix, vernantis caelestis Venerilla, a nymph, a fairy, 8 like Venus herself when she was a maid, nulli secunda, a mere quintessence, flores spirans et anaracum, feminae pro digium: put case she be, how long will she continue 9 Flores decoris singuli carptur dies: “Every day detracts from her person,” and this beauty is honum fragile, a mere flash, a Venice glass, quickly broken, "Amplexa forma bonum mortuibus, exigale donum breve temporis, it will not last. As that fair flower 10 Adonis, which we call an anemone, flourisheith but one month, this gracious all-commanding beauty fades in an instant. It is a jewel soon lost, the painter’s goddess, falsa veritas, a mere picture. “Favour is deceitful, and beauty is vanity,” Prov. xxxi. 30.

1 Post unam noctem incertum unde offensam cepit, propere fatentem etips spiritum ali diocent, vel fatentem fedelitatem repudivit, rem factens plana illicitam, et regia personas multum Indecorum. 2 Mill and Grafton belleke. 3 Juvenal: “When the wrinkled skin becomes flabby, and the teeth black.” 4 Mart. 5 Folly in Cat. 6. "Because wrinkles and hoary locks disfigure you." 7 Hor. od. 13, lib. 4. 8 Lockes. 9 Beautiful cheeks, rose lips, and languishing eyes.” 10 Quaills fuit Venus canis fuit vergo, balanum spirans, &c. 1 Seneca. 2 Seneca, Ilyp. "Beauty is a gift of dubious worth to mortals, and of brief duration." 3 Camerarius, emb. 66, cent. 1. Flos omum pittehenns statuta langescet, forma typus, 4 Bernar. Buchues, Ep. 1. 4. 5 Pausanias, Laven. lib. 3, nuxorea ducti Spiritus multorum omum posse Helenam formosissimam, et ob mere omum turpissimam."
I would wish thee to respect, with a Seneca, not her person but qualities. "Will you say that's a good blade which hath a gilded scabbard, embroidered with gold and jewels? No, but that which hath a good edge and point, well tempered metal, able to resist." This beauty is of the body alone, and what is that, but b Gregory Nazianzen tell us, "a knock of time and sickness?" or as Boethius, "as mutable as a flower, and tis not nature so makes us, but most part the infirmity of the beholder." For ask another, he sees no such matter: Die mihi per gratias qualis tibi videtur, "I pray thee tell me how thou likest my sweetheart," as she asked her sister in Aristænutus, "whom I so much admire, methinks he is the sweetest gentleman, the properest man, that ever I saw: But I am in love, I confess (see pudet fateri), and cannot therefore well judge." But be she fair indeed, golden-haired, as Anacreon his Bathillus (to examine particulars), she have 6 Flammelos oculos collaue lac-tæola, a pure sanguine complexion, little mouth, coral lips, white teeth, soft and plump neck, body, hands, feet, all fair and lovely to behold, composed of all graces, elegancies, an absolute piece,

"I fiammas sint Meletis Jœnionia, dextra Minervas, Mamilia Venetæ, suæ marsi dominæ," &c.

Let a her head be from Prague, paps out of Austria, belly from France, back from Brabant, hands out of England, feet from Rhine, buttocks from Switzerland, let her have the Spanish gait, the Venetian tire, Italian compliment and endowments:

b Candida aetheris arduaest lumina flammæ, Student colta rosas, et celat crinthus aurum, Meletæ purpureæm depressant ora ruborem;

Let her be such a one throughout, as Lucian decipher in his Imagines, as Euphanor of old painted Venus, Aristænutus describes Lais, another Helena, Chariclea, Leucippe, Lucretia, Pandora; let her have a box of beauty to repair herself still, such a one as Venus gave Phaon, when he carried her over the ford; let her use all helps art and nature can yield; be like her, and her, and whom thou wilt, or all these in one; a little sickness, a fever, small-pox, wound, scar, loss of an eye, a limb, a violent passion, a distemper of heat or cold, mars all in an instant, disfigures all; child-bearing, old age, that tyrant time will turn Venus to Erinny; raging time, care, rivals her upon a sudden; after she hath been married a small while, and the black ox hath trodden on her toe, she will be so much altered, and wax out of favour, thou wilt not know her. One grows too fat, another too lean, &c, modest Matilda, pretty pleasing Peg, sweet-singing Susan, mincing merry Moll, dainty dancing Doll, neat Nancy, jolly Joan, nimble Nell, kissing Kate, bounding Bess, with black eyes, fair Phillis, with fine white hands, fiddling Frank, tall Tib, slender Sib, &c, will quickly lose their grace, grow fulsome, stale, sad, heavy, dull, sour, and all at last out of fashion. Ubi jam vultus argutia, suavis suavilatia, blandus visus, &c. Those fair sparkling eyes will look dull, her soft coral lips will be pale, dry, cold, rough, and blue, her skin rugged, that soft and tender superficies will be hard and harsh, her whole complexion change in a moment, and as Matilda writ to King John,

"I am not now as when thou sawst me last, That favour soon is vanished past; That rosy blush left in a billy vale, Now is with morphew overgrown and pale."

a Epist. 76. gladium bonum dices, non cui decuratos est batheus, nec cui vagins gemmis distinguetur, sed ait ad secunudum stubillus acies et mero monimentum ame rupturæ. b Pulchrioribus corporis, temporis et mundi intellectum. cat. 2. spectantium mœnibus. c Epist. 11. amore percia de amore non recta judica. d Let my Meleta's eyes be like Juno's, her hand Minerva's, her breasts Venus', her leg Amphitrite.' e Debellus Algilla. Ger. f Petræus Cat. g "Let her eyes be as bright as the stars, her neck small like the rose, her hair shine more than gold, her painted lips be ruby-coloured; let her beauty be resplendent, and superior to Venus, let her in all respects be a deity," &c. 13. Dryden.
To conclude with Chrysostom, "1When thou seest a fair and beautiful person, a brave Bonaroba, a bella donna, quae salvam movet, lepidam puelam et quem tu facies ames, a comely woman, having bright eyes, a merry countenance, a shining lustre in her look, a pleasant grace, wringing thy soul, and increasing thy concupiscence; bethink with thyself that it is but earth thou lovest, a mere excrement, which so vexeth thee, that thou so admirest, and thy raging soul will be at rest. Take her skin from her face, and thou shalt see all loathsomeness under it, that beauty is a superficial skin and bones, nerves, sinews: suppose her sick, now reviled, hoary-headed, hollow-cheeked, old; within she is full of filthy phlegm, stinking, putrid, excremental stuff: snot and snivel in her nostrils, spittle in her mouth, water in her eyes, what filth in her brains," &c. Or take her at best, and look narrowly upon her in the light, stand near her, nearer yet, thou shalt perceive almost as much, and love less, as 2Cardan well writes. minus amans qui avete vident, though Scaliger deride him for it: if he see her near, or look exactly at such a posture, whosoever he is, according to the true rules of symmetry and proportion, those I mean of Albertus Durer, Lomatius and Tasnier, examine him of her. If he be elegans formarum spectator, he shall find many faults in physiognomy, and ill colour: if form, one side of the face likely bigger than the other, or crooked nose, bad eyes, prominent veins, concavities about the eyes, wrinkles, pimplies, red streaks, freckles, hairs, warts, neves, inequalities, roughness, scabredness, paleness, yellowness, and as many colours as are in a turkeycock's neck, many indecorums in their other parts; est quod desideres, est quod amputes, one leers, another frowns, a third gaps, squints, &c. And 'tis true that he saith, 3 Diligenter considerantis raro facies absoluta, et quae vitio caret, seldom shall you find an absolute face without a fault, as I have often observed; not in the face alone is this defect or disproportion to be found, but in all the other parts, of body and mind; she is fair, indeed, but foolish; pretty, comely, and decent, of a majestical presence, but, peradventure, imperious, dishonest, acerba, iniqua, self-willed: she is rich, but deformed; hath a sweet face, but bad carriage, no bringing up, a rude and wanton flirt; a neat body she hath, but it is a nasty quean otherwise, a very slut of a bad kind. As flowers in a garden have colour some, but no smell, others have a fragrant smell, but are unseemly to the eye; one is unsavoury to the taste as rue, as bitter as wormwood, and yet a most medicinal cordial flower, most acceptable to the stomach; so are men and women; one is well qualified, but of ill proportion, poor and base: a good eye she hath, but a bad hand and foot, aida pedes et aida manus, a fine leg, bad teeth, a vast body, &c. Examine all parts of body and mind, I advise thee to inquire of all. See her angry, merry, laugh, weep, hot, cold, sick, sullen, dressed, undressed, in all attire, sites, gestures, passions, eat her meals, &c., and in some of these you will surely dislike. Yea, not her only let him observe, but her parents how they carry themselves: for what

1. See Schol. ad 2. Here Citese. 2 Video venustum mulierum, fulgido habentem osculum, valde bilen, concusum eximiam quemdam aspectum et decorum praecerent, impenitentem mentem habent, et conceperescerant agentem: cuncta terrae esse id quoiam, et quod admiratis sterve, et quod te unit, etc., cynthia Jam seneei, jam rugosam, cavia genti, cecutam: tantis annulis lutes plaus est, pilinata, stercorea; rapina quid intra nare, osculus, cerebrum gaster, quas sordes, &c., &c. 3 Subsid. 13. 4 Cardan. sub til. 13.
deformities, defects, incumbrances of body or mind be in them at such an age; they will likely be subject to, be molested in like manner, they will *patrizare or matrizar*.

And withal let him take notice of her companions, *in convictu* (as Quiverra prescribes), *et quibuscum conversetur*, whom she converseth with. *Nosciitur ex comite qui non cognosceur ex se.* According to Thucydides, she is commonly the best, *de quo minimus foras habetur sermo*, that is least talked of abroad. For if she be a noted reveller, a gadder, a singer, a pranner or dancer, then take heed of her. For what saith Theocritus?

"At vos festive ne se salute paule,
En malus hircus adest in vos satiare paratus."  

Young men will do it when they come to it, fauns and satyrs will certainly play wrecks, when they come in such wanton Baccho's Elenora's presence. Now when they shall perceive any such obliquity, indecency, disproportion, deformity, bad conditions, etc., let them still ruminate on that, and as *Hædus adviseth out of Ovid, earum mendas notent, note their faults, vices, errors, and think of their imperfections;* 'tis the next way to divert and mitigate love's furious headstrong passions; as a peacock's feet, and filthy comb, they say, make him forget his fine feathers, and pride of his tail; she is lovely, fair, well favoured, well qualified, courteous and kind, "but if she be not so to me, what care I how kind she be?" I say with *Philostrasus, formosa alis, mali superba*, she is a tyrant to me, and so let her go. Besides these outward ives or open faults, errors, there be many inward infirmities, secret, some private (which I will omit), and some more common to the sex, sullen fits, evil qualities, filthy diseases, in this case fit to be considered; consideratio feditatis mulierum, menstrue imprisim, quam immunda sunt, quam Savanarola proponit regula septima penitus observandum; and Platina, dial. amoris, *fusé perstringit*. Lodovicus Bonacius, *mulieb. lib. 2. cap. 2. Pet. Hædus, Albertus, et infiniti fere medici*. "A lover, in Calcaginum's Apologies, wished with all his heart he were his mistress's ring, to hear, embrace, see, and do I know not what: O thou fool, quoth the ring, if thou werst in my room, thou shouldst hear, observe, and see *pudenda et parvenda*, that which would make thee loathe and hate her, yea, peadventure, all women for her sake.

I will say nothing of the vices of their minds, their pride, envy, inconstancy, weakness, malice, self-will, lightness, insatiable lust, jealousy; *Ecclus. v. 14. "No malice to a woman's, no bitterness like to hers, Eccles. vii. 26, and as the same author urgeth, Prov. xxxi. 10. "Who shall find a virtuous woman?" He makes a question of it. Neque jus neque bonum, neque ejus quum sciant, malius pejus, prostr, obsit, nihil vident, nisi quod libido suggested. "They know neither good nor bad, be it better or worse (as the comical poet hath it), beneficial or hurtful, they will do what they list.""

*Inside humani generis, querimonia vitae,
Exvasia noctis, durissima cura diait,
Poma virum, nec et juvenum.* 

And to that purpose were they first made, as Jupiter insinuates in the poet;

"The fire that bold Promethes stole from me,
With plagues call'd women shall revenged be,
On whose alluring and enticing face,
Poor mortals doting shall their death embrace." 

Show me your company and I'll tell you who you are."

"Hark, you merry maidens, do not dance so, for see the he-goat is at hand, ready to pounce upon you." 

*De centum amorum.
* In delicia. *Quam amator amarem sem amicis optaret, ut ejus amplexu frui posset, &c. O te miserum, alt annulam, si meas vices obiles, videres, auderes, &c. nihil non odes dignum observares.*

*Lastheus. "Sanae of the human species, torments of life, spoils of the night, interest cares of the day, the torture of husbands, the ruin of youths."

*See our English Tattics, lib. 1.*
In fine, as Diogenes concludes in Nevisamus, *Nulla est femina que non habeat quid*: they have all their faults.

Every each of them hath some vice,
If one be full of villany,
Another hath a liquorish eye,
If one be full of wantonness,
Another is a shibber.

When Leander was drowned, the inhabitants of Sestos consecrated Hero's lantern to Anteros, Anterotl sacrum, 2 and he that had good success in his love should light the candle: but never any man was found to light it; which I can refer to nought, but the inconstancy and lightness of women.

For in a thousand, good there is not one; All be so proud, unthankful, and unkind, With flinty hearts, careless of others' morn, In their own haste carried most headlong blind, But more bereft to speak I am forbidden; Sometimes for speaking truth one may be childless.

I am not willing you see, to prosecute the cause against them, and therefore take heed you mistake me not, 3 mutronam nullam ego tango, I honour the sex, with all good men, and as I ought to do, rather than displease them, I will voluntarily take the oath which Mercurius Britannicus took, *Virg. descript. tit. 9. fol. 95*. Me nihil ungum mali nobilissimo sexni, vel verbo, vel fact0 machinaturum, &c., let Simonides, Mantuan, Platina, Pet. Aretine, and such women-haters bear the blame, if ought be said amiss; I have not writ a tenth of that which might be urged out of them and others; b non possunt invective omnes, et satira in feminas scriptae, uno volumine comprehendi. And that which I have said (to speak truth) no more concerns them than men, though women be more frequently named in this tract (to apologise once for all); I am neither partial against them, or therefore bitter; what is said of the one, *mutato nomine*, may most part be understood of the other. My words are like Passus' picture in Lucian, of whom, when a good fellow had bespoke a horse to be painted with his heels upwards, tumbling on his back, he made him passant: now when the fellow came for his piece, he was very angry, and said, it was quite opposite to his mind; but Passus instantly turned the picture upside down, showed him the horse at that site which he requested, and so gave him satisfaction. If any man take exception at my words, let him alter the name, read him for her, and 'tis all one in effect.

But to my purpose: If women in general be so bad (and men worse than they) what a hazard is it to marry? where shall a man find a good wife: or a woman a good husband? A woman a man may eschew, but not a wife: wedding is undoing (some say), marrying marring, wooing wooing: "a wife is a fever hectic," as Scaliger calls her, "and not to be cured but by death," as out of Menander, Athenaeus adds,

"In pelagus te facies negotorium,
Non Libygam, non Aegeum, ubi ex tringita non percutunt
Trauagis: duces uxorum servatur prorsus nemo."

"Thou wastest into a sea itself of woes,
In Libya and Aegean each man knows
Of thirty not three ships are cast away.
But on this rock not one escapes, I say."

The worldly cares, miseries, discontented, that accompany marriage, I pray you learn of them that have experience, for I have none; ειδαις ους λεγεις ισεος, ελειρι μετης ελειρι. For my part I'll dissemble with him,

"Esto procul nymphis, fallax genus esse puellae,
Vita jagata meo non fault ingeni: me juvat, το ἄνω.

many married men exclaim at the miseries of it, and rail at wives downright; I never tried, but as I hear some of them say, *Mare haud mare, vos more acerrimum*, an Irish Sea is not so turbulent and raging as a litigious wife.

"Seylla et Charybdis Sicula contortuens fret,
Mare est timida, uallas non melior fera est."

"Seylla and Charybdis are less dangerous,
There is no beast that is so noxious."

---

1 Chaucer, in Romaunt of the Rose. Qui se facieun in amore prorabit, hanc succendito. At qui succedant, ad hunc dieum repertus nemo. Caleginius. 2 Ariosto. 3 Hor. 4 Christoph. Fonseca. 5 Ecceum. Demethen. 6 Febus hectica uxor, et non nisi morte avellenda. 7 Synestus. libros uxor sibi gerat. Lipius, auth. Lect. Lib. 1 Avant, ye nymphs, matrons, ye are a deceitful race, no married life for me," etc. 8 Fustus, Athl. act. 1. 9 Soc. In Herul.
Which made the devil like, as most interpreters hold, when he had taken away Job’s goods, corporis et fortunae bona, health, children, friends, to persecute him the more, leave his wicked wife, as Pineda proves out of Tertullian, Cyprian, Austin, Chrysostom, Prosper, Gaudentius, &c. ut novum calamitatis inde genus vire existaret, to vex and gall him worse, quam totus infernum, than all the fiends in hell, as knowing the conditions of a bad woman. Jupiter non tribuit homini pestilentius malum, saith Simonides: “better dwell with a dragon or a lion, than keep house with a wicked wife,” Ecclus. xxy. 18. “better dwell in a wilderness,” Prov. xxi. 19. “no wickedness like to her,” Ecclus. xxy. 22. “She makes a sorry heart, an heavy countenance, a wounded mind, weak hands, and feeble knees,” vers. 25. “A woman and death are two the bitterest things in the world,” uxor mihi ducenda est hodie, id mihi visus est dicere, abi domum et suspendite. Ter. And. 1. 5. And yet for all this we bachelors desire to be married; with that vestal virgin, we long for it, Felices nuptae! moriar, nisi nubere dulce est. ’Tis the sweetest thing in the world, I would I had a wife, saith he,

“For fair would I leave a single life,  
If I could get me a good wife.”

Heigh-ho for a husband, cries she, a bad husband, nay, the worst that ever was is better than none: O blissful marriage, O most welcome marriage, and happy are they that are so coupled: we do earnestly seek it, and are never well till we have effected it. But with what fate! like those birds in the k Emblem, that fed about a cage, so long as they could fly away at their pleasure liked well of it; but when they were taken and might not get loose, though they had the same meat, pined away for sullenness, and would not eat. So we commend marriage.

———donec misell liberi
Asplemus dominum: sed postquam bue janna clausa est,
Fel inus est quod mel fuit:

“So long as we are wooers, may kiss and coll at our pleasure, nothing is so sweet, we are in heaven as we think; but when we are once tied, and have lost our liberty, marriage is an hell,” “give me my yellow hose again:” a mouse in a trap lives as merrily, we are in a purgatory some of us, if not hell itself. Dulce bellum inexpertis, as the proverb is, ’tis fine talking of war, and marriage sweet in contemplation, till it be tried; and then as wars are most dangerous, irksome, every minute at death’s door, so is, &c. When those wild Irish peers, saith 1 Stanilhurst, were feasted by King Henry the Second (at what time he kept his Christmas at Dublin) and had tasted of his prince-like cheer, generous wines, dainty fare, had seen his m massy plate of silver, gold, enamelled, beest with jewels, golden candlesticks, goodly rich hangings, brave furniture, heard his trumpets sound, fife, drums, and his exquisite music in all kinds; when they had observed his majestical presence as he sat in purple robes, crowned, with his sceptre, &c., in his royal seat, the poor men were so amazed, enamoured, and taken with the object, that they were pertasesi domestici et pristini tyructorchi, as weary and ashamed of their own sordidly and manner of life. They would all be English forthwith; who but English! but when they had now submitted themselves, and lost their former liberty, they began to rebel some of them, others repent of what they had done, when it was too late. ’Tis so with us bachelors, when we see and behold those sweet faces, those gaudy shows that women make, observe their pleasant gestures and graces, give ear to their syren tunes, see them dance, &c., we think their conditions are as fine as their faces, we are taken with dumb signs, in amplexus ruinus, we rave, we burn, and would fain be married. But when we feel the

1 Senec.  
k Amator. Emblem.  
1 De rebus Hisberid, 1. 3.  
m Gemmea pennis, argentae vasae, cedrus canelultra, aurea, &c. Conchiiflata mica, baccarinam cinerorem, lirarinam canto, et symphonie auxilatem, majestatemque principis coronati cum vidissim Stella deserrata, &c.
miseries, cares, woes, that accompany it, we make our moan many of us, cry out at length and cannot be released. If this be true now, as some out of experience will inform us, farewell wiving for my part, and as the comical poet merrily saith,

"Purpure illa nessime qui feminan
Duxit secundum, nam nihil prima imperat!
Ignarus ut patet non minus fortis."[n]

What shall I say to him that marries again and again, "Stulta maritati qui porrigit ora capistro, I pity him not, for the first time he must do as he may, bear it sometimes by the head and shoulders, and let his next neighbour ride, or else run away, or as that Syracusian in a tempest, when all ponderous things were to be exonerated out of the ship, quia maximum pondus erat, fling his wife into the sea. But this I confess is comically spoken, [t]and so I pray you take it. In sober sadness, marriage is a bondage, a thraldom, a yoke, a hindrance to all good enterprises ("he hath married a wife, and cannot come"), a stop to all preferments, a rock on which many are saved, many impinge and are cast away: not that the thing is evil in itself or troublesome, but full of contentment and happiness, one of the three things which please God, "a when a man and his wife agree together," an honourable and happy estate, who knows it not? If they be sober, wise, honest as the poet infers,

"Si commados mansiscitant amoros,
Nullum lis abest voluptatis genus."[u]

But to undiscreet sensual persons, that as brutes are wholly led by sense, it is a feral plague, many times a hell itself, and can give little or no content, being that they are often so irregular and prodigious in their lusts, so diverse in their affections. Uxor nomen dignitas non voluptatis, as [v]he said, a wife is a name of honour, not of pleasure: she is fit to bear the office, govern a family, to bring up children, sit at a board's end and carve, as some carnal men think and say; they had rather go to the stews, or have now and then a snatch as they can come by it, borrow of their neighbours, than have wives of their own; except they may, as some princes and great men do, keep as many courtesans as they will themselves, fly out impune, "Ter molere uxoros alienas, that polygamy of Turks, Lex Julia, with Caesar once enforced in Rome (though Levimus Torrentius and others suspect it), uti uxorues quot et quas vellent liceret, that every great man might marry, and keep as many wives as he would, or Irish divorcement were in use: [v]but as it is, 'tis hard and gives not that satisfaction to these carnal men, beastly men as too many are: what still the same, to be tied, [w]to one, be she never so fair, never so virtuous, is a thing they may not endure, to love one long. Say thy pleasure, and counterfeit as thou wilt, as "Parneno told Thais, Neque tu uno eris contenta, "one man will never please thee;" nor one woman many men. But as [w]Pan replied to his father Mercury, when he asked whether he was married, Nequauquam poter, amator enim sum, &c. "No, father, no, I am a lover still, and cannot be contented with one woman." Pythis, Echo, Menades, and I know not how many besides, were his mistresses, he might not abide marriage. Varietas selectat, 'tis loathsome and tedious, what one still? which the satirist said of Iberina, is verified in most,

"Tuis Iberina vir sufficit? ocyus illud
Ex spuriebus at haec oculo contenta sit uno,"[x] "'Tis not one man will serve her by her will, As soon she'll have one eye as one man still."

As capable of any impression as materia prima itself that still desires new

---

[n] Ennius in Crisil. Athenwau, dialectophist, l. 13, c. 3. [t] Translated by my brother, Ralph Burton.

forms, like the sea their affections ebb and flow. Husband is a cloak for some to hide their villany; once married she may fly out at her pleasure, the name of husband is a sanctuary to make all good. Eo ventum (saith Seneca) ut nulla virum habeat, nisi ut irritet adulterum. They are right and straight, as true Trojans as mine host’s daughter, that Spanish wench in d Ariosto, as good wives as Messalina. Many men are as constant in their choice, and as good husbands as Nero himself, they must have their pleasure of all they see, and are in a word far more fickle than any woman.

For either they be full of jealousy, Or masterful, or love novelty.

Good men have often ill wives, as bad as Xantippe was to Socrates, Elevora to St. Lewis, Isabella to our Edward the Second; and good wives are as often matched to ill husbands, as Mariamne to Herod, Serena to Dicostian, Theodora to Theophilus, and Thyr to Gurmundus. But I will say nothing of dissolute and bad husbands, of bachelors and their vices; their good qualities are a fitter subject for a just volume, too well known already in every village, town and city, they need no blazon: and lest I should mar any matches, or dishearten loving maids, for this present I will let them pass.

Being that men and women are so irreligious, deprived by nature, so wandering in their affections, so brutish, so subject to disagreement, so unobservant of marriage rites, what shall I say? If thou best such a one, or thou light on such a wife, what concord can there be, what hope of agreement? 'tis not conjugium but conjurium, as the Reed and Fern in the Emblem, averse and opposite in nature: 'tis twenty to one thou wilt not marry to thy contentment: but as in a lottery forty blanks were drawn commonly for one prize, out of a multitude you shall hardly choose a good one: a small case hence then, little comfort,

"Ne nec integrum unquam transiges legis diem."  
"If he or she be such a one, 
Thou hast much better be alone."

If she be barren, she is not—&c. If she have children, and thy state be not good, though thou be wary and circumspect, thy charge will undo thee, —facundâ domum tibi prole gravabit,① thou wilt not be able to bring them up, "and what greater misery can there be than to beget children, to whom thou canst leave no other inheritance but hunger and thirst?" ② cum fames dominatur, strident voces rogantium panem, penetrantes patris cor: what so grievous as to turn them up to the wide world, to shift for themselves! No plague like to want: and when thou hast good means, and art very careful of their education, they will not be ruled. Think but of that old proverb, ἤγουν τίνα πήματα, heroum filii noxia, great men’s sons seldom do well; O utinam aut caelestis manussem aut prole carerem! "would that I had either remained single, or not had children," k Augustus exclaims in Suetonius. Jacob had his Reuben, Simeon, and Levi; David an Ammon, an Absalom, Adoniah; wise men’s sons are commonly fools, insomuch that Spartan concludes, Nominem prope magnorum virorum optimum et utilem reliquisse filium: ③ they had been much better to have been childless. 'Tis too common in the middle sort; thy son’s a drunkard, a gamester, a spendthrift; thy daughter a fool, a whore; thy servants lazy drones and thieves; thy neighbours devils, they will make thee weary of thy life. ④ "If thy wife be froward, when she may not have her will, thou hast better be buried alive; she will be so impatient, raving still, and roaring like Juno in the tragedy, there’s nothing but tempests, all is an uproar."

If she be soft and foolish, thou wilt better have a block, she

① [Cammerar. 32, cent. 3. d Simonides. ② Children make misfortunes more bitter. Bacon. ③ "She will sink your whole establishment by her fecundity." h Helvetius. Epist. Proliro. Nihil miscenscum procreare liberos ad quos nihil ex hæreditate tua pervenire videas prater famae ac vitam. [Chrys. Fonsec. ④ Liber sibi carcerunata. i Medius fuerat eos sine liberis discississe. ⑤ Lémurius, cap. 6. lib. 1. Si morias, si non in omnibus obsequiis, omnia impacata in adibus, omnia sursum miscari videos, multa tempesstates, &c. Lib. 2. numer. 101. syri. nup.]}
will shame thee and reveal thy secrets; if wise and learned, well qualified, there is as much danger on the other side; mulierem doctam duce crepericulosis-simam, saith Nevisanus, she will be too insolent and peevish. Malo Venusian quam te, Cornelia mater. Take heed; if she be a slut, thou wilt loathe her; if proud, she'll beggar thee, "she'll spend thy patrimony in baubles, all Arabia will not serve to perfume her hair," saith Lucian; if fair and wanton, she'll make thee a cornuto; if deformed, she will paint. "If her face be filthy by nature, she will mend it by art," alenis et aesceticis imposturis, "which who can endure?" If she do not paint, she will look so filthy, thou canst not love her, and that peradventure will make thee dishonest. Cremerus lib. 12. hist. relates of Casimirus, that he was unchaste because his wife Aleida, the daughter of Henry, Landgrave of Hesse, was so deformed. If she be poor, she brings beggary with her (saith Nevisanus), misery and discontent. If you marry a maid, it is uncertain how she proves, Hec forsas veniet non satis apta tibi. If young she is likely wanton and untaught; if lusty, too lascivious; and if she be not satisfied, you know where and when, nil nisi jurgia, all is an uproar, and there is little quietness to be had; if an old maid, 'tis a hazard she dies in childbed; if a "rich widow, induces te in laqueum, thou dost halter thyself, she will make all away beforehand, to her other children, &c. —— domiunum quis possit ferre tonantem? she will hit thee still in the teeth with her first husband; if a young widow, she is often insatiable and immodest. If she be rich, well descended, bring a great dowry, or be nobly allied, thy wife's friends will eat thee out of house and home, dives ruinam edibus inducit, she will be so proud, so high-minded, so imperious. For nihil est magis intolerabile dize, "there's nothing so intolerable," thou shalt be as the tassel of a goz-hawk, "she will ride upon thee, dominice as she list," wear the breeches in her oligarchical government, and beggar thee besides. Uxores divites servitatem exigunt (as Seneca hits them, Declam. lib. 2. declam. 6.) Dotem accepi, imperium perdidi. They will have sovereignty, pro conjuuge dominum arcessis, they will have attendance, they will do what they list. In taking a dowry thou leastest thy liberty, des intrat, libertas exit, hazaresth thine estate.

"Hec sunt alque alim mutus in mazaris delibas
Incommodates, sumpsumque intolerables," &c.

"with many such inconveniences:" say the best, she is a commanding servant; thou hadst better have taken a good housewife maid in her smock. Since then there is such hazard, if thou be wise keep thyself as thou art, 'tis good to match, much better to be free.

"V procerree liberos lepidissimum,
Heracle vero liberum esse, il multo est lepidissimum.

"Art thou young? then match not yet; if old, match not at all." One cannot do better use these words. "Via juvenis nubere? omnium venit tempus, Ingravescentae autem jurem tempus praterexit." And therefore, with that philosopher, still make answer to thy friends that importune thee to marry, ad hue tempitum, 'tis yet unseasonable, and ever will be.

Consider withall how free, how happy, how secure, how heavenly, in respect, a single man is, as he said in the comedy, Et isti quod fortunatium esse autem-
Love-Melancholy.

mang, uvrem nunquam habui, and that which all my neighbours admire and applaud me for, account so great a happiness, I never had a wife; consider hocontentedly, quietly, neatly, plentifully, sweetly, and how merrily he lives! he hath no man to care for but himself, none to please, no charge, none to control him, is tied to no residence, no care to serve, may go and come, when, whither, live where he will, his own master, and do what he list himself. Consider the excellency of virgins, Virgo celum merit, marriage replenisheth the earth, but virginity Paradise; Elias, Elisesus, John Baptist, were bachelors: virginity is a precious jewel, a fair garland, a never-fading flower; for why was Daphne turned to a green bay-tree, but to show that virginity is immortal?

Virginity is a fine picture, as Bonaventure calls it, a blessed thing in itself, and if you will believe a Papist, meritorious. And although there be some inconveniences, irksomeness, solitaryness, &c., incident to such persons, want of those comforts, quae aegro assidet et curet agrotum, fomentum paret, roget medicum, &c. embracing, dalliance, kissing, colling, &c., those furious motives and wanton pleasures a new-married wife most part enjoys; yet they are but toys in respect, easily to be endured, if conferred to those frequent incumbrances of marriage, Solitariness may be otherwise avoided with mirth, music, good company, business, employment; in a word, Caudebit minus, et minus dolbit; for their good nights, he shall have good days. And methinks some time or other, amongst so many rich bachelors, a benefactor should be found to build a monastical college for old, decayed, deformed, or discontented maids to live together in, that have lost their first loves, or otherwise miscarried, or else are willing howsoever to lead a single life. The rest I say are toys in respect, and sufficiently recompensed by those innumerable contents and incomparable privileges of virginity. Think of these things, confer both lives, and consider last of all these commodious prerogatives a bachelor hath, how well he is esteemed, how heartily welcome to all his friends, quam mentitis obsequeis, as Tertullian observes, with what counterfeit courteous they will adore him, follow him, present him with gifts, hamatus donis; "it cannot be believed (saith Ammianus) with what humble service he shall be worshipped," how loved and respected: "If he want children (and have means), he shall be often invited, attended on by princes, and have advocates to plead his cause for nothing," as Plutarch adds. Wilt thou then be reverenced, and had in estimation?

Live a single man, marry not, and thou shalt soon perceive how those Haradipetec (for so they were called of old) will seek after thee, bribe and flatter thee for thy favour, to be thine heir or executor: Aruntius and Aterius, those famous parasites in this kind, as Tacitus and Seneca have recorded, shall not go beyond them. Periplectomine, that good personate old man, deliciun senis, well understood this in Plautus: for when Peidesides exhorted him

b Nuptiae replent terram, virginitas Paradisum. Hier. c Daphne in locum semper virentem, immortalem ducet gloriam paratum virginibus pudicitiam servantibus. d Catul. can. nuptiâli. e As the flower that grows in the secret inclosure of the garden, unknown to the locks, unpressed by the ploughshare, which also the breezes refresh, the heat strengthens, the rain makes grow: so is a virgin whilst untouched, whilst dear to her relations, but when once she forfaits her chastity, &c. f Dial. solst. c. 22. pellucidum sectum infiniti prisci, gemma, et pictura specie. g Mart. 

h Huanae ad canem invitavit, princes hune famulatur, oratores gratu patrocinantur. Lib. de amore Prell. i Annal. 11. ‘If you wish to be master of your house, let no little ones play in your halls, nor any little daughter yet more dear, a barren wife makes a pleasant and affectionate companion.' k 60 de bene dic. 38.
to marry that he might have children of his own, he readily replied in this sort.

"Quando habeo multos cognatos, quid opus mihi sit libris?"

"Nunc bene vivo et fortunati, atque animo ut libet."

"Nea bona mea morte cognatus dicam interpartit."

"Ipsi apud me audent, me curant, visunt quid agam, equid enim, qui mihi mitutum munera, ad praediam, ad cenam vocant."

"Quid habeo in omni vita se servum for?"

"Quo deo habet, debitor est, et usuris servus alligatus,"

This respect thou shalt have in like manner, living as he did, a single man. But if thou marry once, 1 cogitato in omni vita se servum fore, bethink thyself what a slavery it is, what a heavy burden thou shalt undertake, how hard a task thou art tied to, (for as Hierome hath it, qui uxorem habet, debitor est, et usuris servus alligatus,) and how continue, what squalor attends it, what irksomeness, what charges, for wife and children are a perpetual bill of charges; besides a myriad of cares, miseries, and troubles; for as that comical Plantus morily and truly said, he that wants trouble, must get to be master of a ship, or marry a wife; and as another seconds him, wife and children have undone me; so many and such infinite incumbrances accompany this kind of life. Furthermore, uxor intumuit, &c., or as he said in the comedy, 2n Duxi uxorem, quam ibi miseriam vidi, nati jlii, alia cura. All gifts and invitations cease, no friend will esteem thee, and thou shalt be compelled to lament thy miseries, and make thy moan with 3 Bartholomeaus Scheerus, that famous poet laureate, and professor of Hebrew in Wittenberg: I had finished this work long since, but that inter alia dura et tristia quae miseris pene turgitum fregerunt (I use his own words), amongst many miseries which almost broke my back, εξογια ob Xantipismum, a shrew to my wife tormented my mind above measure and beyond the rest. So shalt thou be compelled to complain, and to cry out at last, with 6 Phoroneus the lawyer, "How happy had I been, if I had wanted a wife!" If this which I have said will not suffice, see more in Lemaus, lib. 4. cap. 13, de occult. nat. mir. Espensius de continentia, lib. 6. cap. 8. Koruman de virginitate, Platina in Amor. div. Practica artisti amandi, Barbarus de re uxoria, Arusius in polit. cap. 3. and him that is instar omnium, Nevisanus the lawyer, Sylva nuptial. almost in every page.

**SUBSECT. IV.—Philters, Magical and Poetical Cures.**

Where persuasions and other remedies will not take place, many fly to unlawful means, philters, amulets, magic spells, ligatures, characters, charms, which as a wound with the spear of Achilles, if so made and caused, must so be cured. If forced by spells and philters, saith Paracelsus, it must be cased by characters, Mag. lib. 2. cap. 28. and by incantations. Ferneius, Puth. lib. 6. cap. 13. 3 Skenkius, lib. 4. observ. med. hath some examples of such as have so been magically caused, and magically cured, and by witchcraft; so saith Baptist Codronchus, lib. 3. cap. 9. de mor. ven. Maleus malef. cap. 6.

Tis not permitted to be done, I confess; yet often attempted: see more in Wierus, lib. 3. cap. 18. de praestig. de remedii per phlaira. Delrio, tom. 2. lib. 2. chapt. 3. sect. 3. disposit. magic. Cardan, lib. 16. cap. 90. reckons up many magnetic medicines, as to pissed through a ring, &c. Mizaldus, cent. 3. 30. Baptist Porta, Jason Pratensis, Lobelius, pag. 87, Matthiolus, &c., prescribe many absurd remedies. Laxid mandragora ebitae, Amuli ex ungulis Asini, Stercus amate sub cervicalis tubo, illi nesciente, &c., quum odorem fedelitatis sentit, amor solvit. Nocturna ovum abstemios facit comestum, ex consilio

---

1 E Greco.  
2 Ter. Adolph. "I have married a wife; what misery it has entailed upon me! sons were born, and other cares followed."  
3 Itineraria in psalms instructione ad lectorem.  
4 Bruson lib. 7. 22. cap.  
5 Si uxor deseset, nihil mihi ad summam felicitem defuisse.  
6 Extinguitur virilitas ex incantamentorum maleficis; neque enim fabula est, nonnulli repertii sunt, qui ex veneficiis amore privati sunt, ut ex multis historiis patet.
Love-Melancholy.

[Part. 3. Sec. 2.]

Jarchae Indorum gymnosophistae apud Philostratam, lib. 3. Sangvis amasias ebbibitus ommem amoris sensum tollit: Faustinum Marci Aurelii xuxorem, gladiatoris amore captam, ita penitus consilio Chaedernam liberam, refert Julius Capitolinus. Some of our astrologers will effect as much by characteristic images, ex sigillis Hermetis, Salomonis, Chelitis, &c., mulieris imago habentis crines sparsos, &c. Our old poets and fantastical writers have many fabulous remedies for such as are love-sick, as that of Proteus' tomb in Philostratus, in his dialogue between Phenix and Venitor: Venitor, upon occasion discoursing of the rare virtues of that shrine, telling him that Proteus' altar and tomb "cures almost all manner of diseases, consumptions, dropies, quartan-agues, sore eyes: and amongst the rest, such as are love-sick shall there be helped." But the most famous is "Leucata Petra, that renowned rock in Greece, of which Strabo writes, Geog. lib. 10. not far from St. Maures, saith Sands, lib. 1. from which rock if any lover flung himself down headlong, he was instantly cured. Venus, after the death of Adonis, "when she could take no rest for love," "Cum vesana suas torreret flamma medullas, came to the temple of Apollo to know what she should do to be eased of her pain: Apollo sent her to Leucata Petra, where she precipitated herself, and was withforth freed; and when she would needs know of him a reason of it, he told her again, that he had often observed Jupiter, when he was enamoured on Juno, thither go to ease and wash himself, and after him divers others. Cephalus for the love of Protea, Dagonetus' daughter, leaped down here, that Lesbian Sappho for Phoan, on whom she miserably doted. "Cupidinis astro percella \\n
This medicine Joes. Scaliger speaks of, Ausoniarum lecturam lib. 18. Salmutz, in Panetrol. de 7. mundi vivar. and other writers. Pliny reports, that amongst the Cyzeni, there is a well consecrated to Cupid, of which if any lover taste, his passion is mitigated: and Anthony Verdunius, Imag. deorum de Cupid. saith, that amongst the ancients there was "Amor Lethes, "he took burning torches, and extinguished them in the river; his statue was to be seen in the temple of Venus Eleusina," of which Ovid makes mention, and saith "that all lovers of old went thither on pilgrimage, that would be rid of their love-pangs." Pausanias, in Phocis, writes of a temple dedicated Veneri in spelunced, to Venus in the vault, at Naupactus in Achaia (now Lepanto) in which your widows that would have second husbands, made their supplications to the goddess; all manner of suits concerning lovers were commenced, and their grievances helped. The same author, in Achaia, tells as much of the river "Senelus in Greece; if any lover washed himself in it, by a secret virtue of that water (by reason of the extreme coldness belike), he was healed of love's torments, "Amoris vulnus idem qui sanat facit;" which if it be so, that water, as he holds, is omni auro pretiosior, better than any gold. Where none of all these remedies will take place, I know no other but that all lovers must make a head and rebel, as they did in Ausonius, and crucify Cupid till he grant their request, or satisfy their desires.


Apud antiquos amor Lethes olim fuit, et ardentia faces in profanium inclinabat; hujus statua Veneri Eleusina templi visebat, que amantes confabulat, qui amor memoriae deponente voblect.

Votis suarum amatrum, multis de caudis, sed imprimis viduae mulieres, ut, si alteras a dea mutatas expersent. Rodoginos, ant. lect. lib. 16. cap. 29, calls it Selene. "Omnis amore liberat.

Cupide crucifixes: lepidum p. emas.

But the rise and remedy of love the
SUBSECT. V.—The last and best cure of Love-Melancholy, is to let them have their Desire.

The last refuge and surest remedy, to be put in practice in the utmost place, when no other means will take effect, is to let them go together, and enjoy one another: potissima cura est ut heros amasias sua potiatur, saith Guianerius, cap. 15. tract. 15. *Esiulapius himself to this malady cannot invent a better remedy, quam ut amasias cedat amatum, d (Jason Pratensis) than that a lover have his desire.

"Et pariter torale bini jungitur in uno, Et pulchro demum. Eneas Latavia coquix." | "And let them both be joined in a bed, And let Eneas fair Latavia wed;";

'Tis the special cure, to let them bleed in vena Hymenae, for love is a plenistry, and if it be possible, let it be — optataque gaudia carpunt. e Arculanus holds it the speediest and the best cure, 'tis Savanarola's f last precept, a principal infallible remedy, the last, sole, and safest refuge.

"Julia sola potes nestrus extinguere flammas, Non arte, non glacie, sed potes ignis part."

form

"Julia alone can quench my desire, With neither ice nor snow, but with like fire."

When you have all done, saith Avicenna, "h there is no speedier or safer course, than to join the parties together according to their desires and wishes, the custom and form of law; and so we have seen him quickly restored to his former health, that was languished away to skin and bones; after his desire was satisfied, his discontent ceased, and we thought it strange; our opinion is therefore that in such cases nature is to be obeyed." Areteus, an old author, lib. 3. cap. 3. hath an instance of a young man, 1 when no other means could prevail, was so speedily relieved. What remains then but to join them in marriage?

"k Tunc et balsam morsimunucalsque Surtrespect dare, muros favere
Amplexus licet, et locc Jocari;"

Non artic, non glacie, sed potes ignis part."

"Atque uno simul in toro quiescunt,
Conjuncta simul ore suavientur,
Et somnuos agitant quiete in una."

"they may then kiss and coll, lie and look babies into one another's eyes," as their sires before them did, they may then satiate themselves with love's pleasures, which they have so long wished and expected;

Yea, but hic labor, hoc opus, this cannot conveniently be done, by reason of many and several impediments. Sometimes both parties themselves are not agreed: parents, tutors, masters, guardians, will not give consent: laws, customs, statutes, hinder: poverty, superstition, fear and suspicion: many men dote on one woman, semel et simul: she dotes as much on him, or them, and in modesty must not, cannot woo, as unwilling to confess as willing to love: she dare not make it known, show her affection, or speak her mind. "And hard is the choice (as it is in Euphues) when one is compelled either by silence to die with grief, or by speaking to live with shame." In this case almost was the fair Lady Elizabeth, Edward the Fourth his daughter, when she was enamoured on Henry the Seventh, that noble young prince, and new saluted king, when she broke forth into that passionate speech, " 1 O that I were worthy of that comely prince! but my father being dead, I want friends to motion such a matter? What shall I say? I am all alone, and dare not open my mind to any. What if I acquaint my mother with it? bashfulness forbids What if some of the lords? audacity wants. O that I might but confer with him, perhaps in discourse I might let slip such a word that might discover

---

d Cap. 19. de morb. cerebr. e Patiens potiatur re amata, si florit po sit, optima cura, cap. 15. in 9. Rhasia.
f Si nihil alid, nupiae et copulatio cum ea. e Petronius Catal. b Cap. de Iieiti. Non inventur cura, nisi reginam connexionis incer eos, secundum modum promis iunx., et legis, et sic vidimus ad carmen restitutum, quid jam venerat ad aphetionam; evaniti cura postquam simul, &c. fGremi est melancholica ut quidam ex amores insanabiler se habetenam, ubi paulum se conjuxisset, restitutum, &c. d Jovian, Pontanus, Basl. lib. 1. l Speede's hist. d M. S. Ber. Andre. 2 R
mine intention!" How many modest maids may this concern, I am a poor servant, what shall I do? I am a fatherless child, and want means, I am blithe and buxom, young and lusty, but I have never a suitor, Exspectant stolidi ut ego illos rogatum veniam, as she said, A company of silly fellows look belike that I should woo them and speak first: faint they would and cannot woo—\textit{quia primium exercitia suntam?} being merely passive they may not make suit, with many such lets and inconveniences, which I know not; what shall we do in such a case? sing "Fortune my foe?"—

Some are so curious in this behalf, as those old Romans, our modern Venetians, Dutch and French, that if two parties dearly love, the one noble, the other ignoble, they may not by their laws match, though equal otherwise in years, fortunes, education, and all good affection. In Germany, except they can prove their gentility by three descents, they scorn to match with them. A nobleman must marry a noblewoman: a baron, a baron's daughter; a knight a knight's; a gentleman a gentleman's: as slaters sort their slates, do they degrees and families. If she be never so rich, fair, well qualified otherwise, they will make him forsake her. The Spaniards abhor all widows; the Turks repute them old women, if past five-and-twenty. But these are too severe laws, and strict customs, \textit{dandum aliquid amori}, we are all the sons of Adam, 'tis opposite to nature, it ought not to be so. Again: he loves her most importantly, she loves not him, and so \textit{contra}. "Pau loved Echo; Echo, Satyrus; Satyrus, Lyda.

\begin{quote}
"Quantum ipsorum aliquis amantem odurat, 
Tantum ipsius amans odiosus erat."
\end{quote}

"They love and loathe of all sorts, he loves her, she hates him; and is loathed of him on whom she dotes." Cupid hath two darts, one to force love, all of gold, and that sharp—\textit{Quod facit auratum est;} another blunt, of lead, and that to hinder;—\textit{fugat hoc, facit illud amorem}, "this dispels, that creates love." This we see too often verified in our common experience. Choresus dearly loved that virgin Callyrrhoe; but the more he loved her, the more she hated him. Cnone loved Paris, but he rejected her: they are stiff of all sides, as if beauty were therefore created to undo, or be undone. I give her all attendance, all observance, I pray and intreat, \textit{Alma, precor, misere re met}, fair mistress pity me, I spend myself, my time, friends and fortunes to win her favour (as he complains in the Eclogue), I lament, sigh, weep, and make my moan to her, "but she is hard as flint"—\textit{cautius Ismaris in motio}—as fair and hard as a diamond, she will not respect, \textit{Despectus tibi sum}, or hear me,

\begin{quote}
"fugit illa vocantem 
Nil lachrymas miserata meas, nil flexa querctis."
\end{quote}

What shall I do?

"I wooed her as a young man should do, 
But sir, she said, I love not you."

\begin{quote}
"U Diorit se quellamus Celia, marmore, furto, 
Robore, rupe, antro, cornu, adamantae, gelu."
\end{quote}

"Frost, flint or adamantae are not so hard."

I give, I brieve, I send presents, but they are refused, \textit{Rusticus est Coridon, nec munera curat Alexis}. I protest, I swear, I weep,

\begin{quote}
"O edeque repetidis amores, 
Irissa lachrymas."
\end{quote}

"She neglects me for all this, she derides me," complainns she, she hates me, "Philida flouts me: " \textit{Caute, feris, queru durior Eurydice, stiff, churlish, rocky still.}"

\begin{itemize}
\item \textit{m} Lucretia in Cestina, act. 19. Barthoi interpret. \textit{d} Virg. 4 Aen. "How shall I begin?"
\item \textit{o} Eracio Moshi. \textit{E} Ovid. Met. 1. "The effusions one is golden."
\item \textit{p} Panasium Achata, lib. 7. Perdtie amatam Callyrrhon virginum, et quarto erat Choresi amor vehementior, tanto erat puellae amantium ab ejus amore alienior. \textit{R} Virg. 6 Aen. "Having no compassion for my tears, she avoids my prayers, and is inflexible to my plaints." \textit{q} Angerianus, Erodopagulas, \textit{R} Virg. 7 Lachusia.
\end{itemize}
And this most true, many gentlewomen are so nice, they scorn all suitors, crucify their poor paramours, and think nobody good enough for them, as daintily as to please as Daphne herself.

"Muli illum petiere, illa aspernante petentes, "

Nee quid hymen, quid amor, quid sint connubia cura?" "Many did woo her, but she scorn'd them still, And said she would not marry by her will."

One while they will not marry, as they say at least (when as they intend nothing less), another while not yet, when 'tis their only desire, they rave upon it. She will marry at last, but not him: he is a proper man indeed, and well qualified, but he wants means: another of her suitors hath good means, but he wants wit; one is too old, another too young, too deformed, she likes not his carriage: a third too loosely given, he is rich, but base born: she will be a gentlewoman, a lady, as her sister is, as her mother is: she is all out as fair, as well brought up, hath as good a portion, and she looks for as good a match, as Matilda or Dorinda: if not, she is resolved as yet to tarry, so apt are young maids to boggle at every object, so soon won or lost with every toy, so quickly diverted, so hard to be pleased. In the meantime, quod torsi amantes? one suitor pine away, languisheth in love, mori quot denique cogit? another sighs and grieves, she cares not: and which a Stroza objected to Ariadne,

"Nee magis Euryali gemini, lucyrmisque mortua, Quam probe turbati suetor, oii saui. Tu juvenum, quae non formosus alter in urbe, Spemus, et insano cogis amore mort."

They take a pride to prank up themselves, to make young men enamoured, — capture viros et spernere cupatos, to dote on them, and to run mad for their sakes,

sed nullis illa moverat
Fictios, aut voces ullas tractabilis audita."

"Whilst niggardly their favour they discover,
They love to be belôt, yet scorn the lover."

All suit and service is too little for them, presents too base: Tormentis gaudet amans—— et spolios. As Atalanta they must be overrun, or not won. Many young men are as obstinate, and as curious in their choice, as tyrannically proud, insulting, deceitful, false-hearted, as irrefragable and peevish on the other side; Narcissus-like,

Muli illum juvenes, multis petiere puellas,
Sed fast in tenera tum dura superbia formos,
Nuli illum juvenes, multis petiere puellas.

"Young men and maids did him sue,
But in his youth, so proud, so coy was he,
Young men and maids bate him advice."

Echo wept and wooed him by all means above the rest, Love me for pity, or pity me for love, but he was obstinate, Ante ait emovere quam sit tibi copis nostris, "he would rather die than give consent. Psyche ran whining after Cupid,

Fornosam tua te Psyche formosae requirit,
Et posset te dia deam, puernaque puellas;

"Fair Cupid, thy fair Psyche to thee sued,
A lovely has a fine young gallant woes;"

but he rejected her nevertheless. Thus many lovers do hold out so long, doting on themselves, stand in their own light, till in the end they come to be scorned and rejected, as Stroza's Gargiliana was,

Te juvenes, te oedere sese, desertaque langues,
Que fueras procerum publica eura prides.

"Both young and old do hate thee scorned now,
That once was all their joy and comfort too."

As Narcissus was himself,

Who despising many,
Died ere he could enjoy the love of any."

They begin to content themselves of others, as he was of his shadow, and take up with a poor curate, or an old serving-man at last, that might have had their choice of right good matches in their youth; like that generous man in Plutarch, which would admit of none but great horses, but when her tail was cut off and mane shorn close, and she now saw herself so deformed in the water, when she came to drink, ab asino consecendi se passa, she was contented at last.

5 Vid. Met. 1. 6 Eroy. lib. 2. b T. H. "To captivate the men, but despise them when captive." 7 Virg. 4. Æn. d Sat. 3. c Fracastorius, Dial. de anim. f Dial. Am.
to be covered by an ass. Yet this is a common humour, will not be left, and
cannot be helped.

"He that will not when he may,
When he will he shall have nay."

They look to be wooed, sought after, and sued to. Most part they will and
cannot, either for the above-named reasons, or for that there is a multitude of
suitors equally enamoured, doting all alike; and where one alone must speed,
what shall become of the rest? Hero was beloved of many, but one did enjoy
her; Penelope had a company of suitors, yet all missed of their aim. In such
cases he or they must wisely and warily unwind themselves, unsettle his
affections by those rules above prescribed,——quin stultos exercit ignes,
divert his cogitations, or else bravely bear it out, as Turnus did, Tua sit
Lavinia conjux, when he could not get her, with a kind of herculean scorn he bid
Æneas take her, or with a milder farewell, let her go. Et Phillida solus habeto,
"Take her to you, God give you joy, sir." The fox in the emblem would eat
good grapes, but why? because he could not get them; care not then for that
which may not be had.

Many such inconveniences, lets, and hindrances there are, which cross their
projects, and crucify poor lovers, which sometimes may, sometimes again cannot
be so easily removed. But put case they be reconciled all, agreed hitherto,
suppose this love or good liking be between two alone, both parties well
pleased, there is mutus amor, mutual love and great affection: yet their parents,
guardians, tutors, cannot agree, thence all is dashed, the match is unequal:
one rich, another poor; durus pater, a hard-hearted, unnatural, a covetous
father will not marry his son, except he have so much money, ilia in aurum
omnes insaniat, as Chrysostom notes, nor join his daughter in marriage, to
save her dowry, or for that he cannot spare her for the service she doth him,
and is resolved to part with nothing whilst he lives, not a penny, though he
may peradventure well give it, he will not till he dies, and then as a pot of
money broke, it is divided amongst them that gaped after it so earnestly. Or
else he wants means to set her out, he hath no money, and though it be to the
manifest prejudice of her body and soul's health, he cares not, he will take no
notice of it, she must and shall tarry. Many slack and careless parents, inqui
patres, measure their children's affections by their own, they are now cold and
decrepit themselves, past all such youthful conceits, and they will therefore
starve their children's genius, have them à puérís vellico nasci non sunt; they must
not marry, nec earum affines esse rerum quas secum fert adolescentia: ex ubl

8 Ausonius.  b Ovid. Met.  i Hom. 5. in 1. epist. Thess. cap. 4, ver. 1.  k Ter.
Cure of Love-Melancholy.

*Libidine moderatur quæ est nunc, non quæ olim fuit:* as he said in the comedy: they will stifle nature, their young bloods must not participate of youthful pleasures, but be as they are themselves old on a sudden. And 'tis a general fault amongst most parents in bestowing of their children, the father wholly respects wealth, when through his folly, riot, indiscretion, he hath embezzled his estate, to recover himself, he confines and prostitutes his eldest son's love and affection to some fool, or ancient, or deformed piece for money,

> "I Paternos deput filiam, rufam, illam virginem, Cassiam, sparsa orb, adunco naso"——

and though his son utterly dislike, with Clitipho in the comedy, *Non possum pater:* if she be rich, *Eis* (he replies), *ut elegans est, credas animam ibi esse?* he must and shall have her, she is fair enough, young enough, if he look or hope to inherit his lands, he shall marry, not when or whom he loves, *Arconidis luxus filiam,* but whom his father commands, when and where he likes, his affection must dance attendance upon him. His daughter is in the same predicament forsooth, as an empty boat she must carry what, where, when, and whom her father will. So that in these businesses the father is still for the best advantage; now the mother respects good kindred, must part the son a proper woman. All which *Livyn exemplifies,* dec. 1. lib. 4. a gentleman and a yeoman woood a wench in Rome (contrary to that statute that the gentry and commonalty must not match together); the matter was controverted: the gentleman was preferred by the mother’s voice, *qua quam splendidissimis nuptiis jungi puellam volebat:* the overseers stood for him that was most worth, &c. But parents ought not to be so strict in this behalf, beauty is a dowry of itself all sufficient, *Virgo formosa, etsi oppidō pauper, abùnde dotata est,* *Rachel was so married to Jacob, and Bonaventure,* *in ℡ sent. *denies that he so much as venially sins, that marries a maid for comeliness of person.*

*The Jews,* Deut. xxi. 11, if they saw amongst the captives a beautiful woman, some small circumstances observed, might take her to wife. They should not be too severe in that kind, especially if there be no such urgent occasion, or grievous impediment. *Tis good for a commonwealth.* *Plato holds, that in their contracts "young men should never avoid the affinity of poor folks, or seek after rich." Poverty and base parentage may be sufficiently recompensed by many other good qualities, modesty, virtue, religion, and choice bringing up, *"I am poor, I confess, but am I therefore contemptible, and an object? Love itself is naked, the graces; the stars, and Hercules clad in a lion’s skin."

Give something to virtue, love, wisdom, favour, beauty, person; be not all for money. Besides, you must consider that *Amor egni non potest,* love cannot be compelled, they must affect as they may: *Fatum est in partibus illis quas sinus abscondit,* as the saying is, marriage and hanging goes by destiny, matches are made in heaven.

> "It lies not in our power to love or hate, For will in us is overruled by fate."

A servant maid in *Aristænætus loved her mistress’s minion,* which when her dame perceived, *furiosâ emulatione,* in a jealous humour she dragged her about the house by the hair of the head, and vexed her sore. The wench cried out, *"O mistress, fortune hath made my body your servant, but not my soul!"

Affections are free, to be not commanded. Moreover it may be to restrain their ambition, pride, and covetousness, to correct those hereditary diseases of a family, God in his just judgment assigns and permits such
matches to be made. For I am of Plato and Bodine’s mind, that families have their bounds and periods as well as kingdoms, beyond which for extent or continuance they shall not exceed, six or seven hundred years, as they there illustrate by a multitude of examples, and which Peucer and Melancthon approve, but in a perpetual tenor (as we see by many pedigrees of knights, gentlemen, yeomen) continue as they began, for many descents with little alteration. Howsoever let them, I say, give something to youth, to love; they must not think they can fancy whom they appoint; Amor enim non imperat, affectus liber si quis alius et vices exigens, this is a free passion, as Pliny said in a panegyric of his, and may not be forced: Love craves liking, as the saying is, it requires mutual affections, a correspondence: si invito non datur nec auterur, it may not be learned, Ovid himself cannot teach us how to love. Solomon describe, A pelles paint, or Helen express it. They must not therefore compel or intrude; quis enim (as Fabius urgeth) amare alieno animo potest? but consider withal the miseries of enforced marriages; take pity upon youth: and such above the rest as have daughters to bestow, should be very careful and provident to marry them in due time. Syracides, cap. 7. vers. 25. calls it “a weighty matter to perform, so to marry a daughter to a man of understanding in due time:” Virgines enim tempestive locandae, as Lemnius admonis- eth, lib. 1. cap. 6. Virgins must be provided for in season, to prevent many diseases, of which Rodericus a Castro de morbis mulierum, lib. 2. cap. 3. and Lod. Mercatus, lib. 2. de mulier. affect. cap. 4, de melanch. virginiwm et viduarum, have both largely dispersed. And therefore as well to avoid these sical maladies, ‘tis good to get them husbands betimes, as to prevent some other gross inconveniences, and for a thing that I know besides; ubi nuptiarum tempus et aetas advene rit, as Chrysostom adviseth, let them not defer it; they perchance will marry themselves else, or do worse. If Neevisan the lawyer do not impose they may do it by right: for as he proves out of Curtius, and some other civilians, Sylvæ, nup. lib. 2. numer. 30. A maid past 25 years of age, against her parents’ consent may marry such a one as is unworthy of, and inferior to her, and her father by law must be compelled to give her a competent dowry.” Mistake me not in the meantime, or think that I do apologise here for any headstrong, unruly, wanton flirts. I do approve that of St. Ambrose (Comment in Genesis xxiv. 51), which he hath written touching Rebecca’s spousals. “A woman should give unto her parents the choice of her husband, lest she be reputed to be malapert and wanton, if she take upon her to make her own choice; for she should rather seem to be desired by a man, than to desire a man herself.” To these hard parents alone I retort that of Curtius (in the behalf of modest maids), that are too remiss and careless of their due time and riper years. For if they tarry longer, to say truth, they are past date, and nobody will respect them. A woman with us in Italy (saith Aretine’s Lucretia) 24 years of age, “is old already, past the best, of no account.” An old fellow, as Lycistrata confesseth in Aristophanes, et di sit canus, cito puellam virginem ducat uxorwm, and ’tis no news for an old fellow to marry a young wench: but as he follows it, mulieris brevis occasio est, etsi hoc non apprehenderit, nemo vult ducere uxorwm, expectans vero sedet; who cares for an old maid? she may set, &c. A virgin, as the poet holds, lasciva et petulans puella virgo, is like a flower, a rose withered on a sudden.

1Quam modi nascentem ruinas conspexit Eous, Hanc rediens seae veepere visum amav.

Let them take time then while they may, make advantage of youth, and as he
prescribes,

"C Collige virgo rosas dam flos novas et nova rubies,"

"El menor esto eram et properare tama."

"Fair maids, go gather roses in the prime,
And think that as a flower so goes on time."

Let's all love, dum vires annique sint; while we are in the flower of years,
fit for love matters, and while time serves: for

"I Solas occidere et ridere possum,
Nobis cum semel occidit brevis lux,
Nec est pereat una dormienda.""  

"If some that set may rise again,
But if once we lose this light,
'Tis with us perpetual night."

Volat irrevocable tempus, time past cannot be recalled. But we need no such
exhortation, we are all commonly too forward: yet if there be any escape, and
all be not as it should, as Diogenes struck the father when the son swore,
because he taught him no better, if a maid or a young man miscarry, I think
their parents oftentimes, guardians, overseers, governors, neque vos (saith
"Chrysostom a supplicio immunes evadeste, si non statim ad ruptias, &c., are in
as much fault, and as severely to be punished as their children, in providing
for them no sooner.

Now for such as have free liberty to bestow themselves, I could wish that
good counsel of the comical old man were put in practice,

"0 Opulentiores pauperorum ut illas
Innotes decet uxorres dominam:
Et multo ficit civitas concordat,
Et invidia nos minore utemur, quam utimur.""  

"That rich men would marry poor maidens some,
And that without dowry, and so bring them home,
So would much concord be in our city,
Less envy should we have, much more pity."

If they would care less for wealth, we should have much more content and
quietness in a commonwealth. Beauty, good bringing up, methinks, is a sufficient
portion of itself.  

"Dos est sua forma pulchris, "her beauty is a maiden's dower,"
and he doth well that will accept of such a wife. Eubulides, in 6 Aristæetius,
moved a poor man's child, facie non illetabili, of a merry countenance, and
heavenly visage, in pity of her estate, and that quickly. Acontius coming to
Delos, to sacrifice to Diana, fell in love with Cydippe, a noble lass, and wanting
means to get her love, flung a golden apple into her lap, with this inscription
upon it,

"Juro tibi sano per mysticas sacra Diana,
Me tibi venturum comitem, sponsumque futurum.""  

"I swear by all the rites of Diana,
I'll come and be thy husband if I may."

She considered of it, and upon small inquiry of his person and estate, was
married unto him.

"Blessed is the wooing,
That is not long a doing."  

As the saying is; when the parties are sufficiently known to each other, what
needs such scrupulosity, so many circumstances? dost thou know her conditions,
hers bringing up, like her person? let her means be what they will, take
her without any more ado. Dido and Æneas were accidentally driven by a
storm both into one cave, they made a match upon it; Massinissa was married
to that fair captive Sophonisba, King Syphax's, wife, the same day that he saw
her first, to prevent Scipio Lælius, lest they should determine otherwise of her.
If thou lovest the party, do as much: good education and beauty is a compe-
tent dowry, stand not up upon money.  

Erant olim aurei homines (saith Theocri-
tus) et adamantes redaminabant, in the golden world men did so (in the reign of
Ogyges belike, before staggering Ninus began to domineer), if all be true that
is reported: and some few now-a-days will do as much, here and there one;
'tis well done methinks, and all happiness befall them for so doing. Leontius,
a philosopher of Athens, had a fair daughter called Athenais, multo corporis
lepore ac Venere (saith mine author), of a comely carriage, he gave her no por-

tion but her bringing up, *occulto formae presagio*, out of some secret fore-
knowledge of her fortune, bestowing that little which he had amongst his other
children. But she, thus qualified, was preferred by some friends to Constan-
tinople, to serve Pulcheria, the emperor’s sister of whom she was baptised
and called Eudocia. Theodosius, the emperor, in short space took notice of her
elegant beauty and good parts, and a little after upon his sister’s sole com-
mendation made her his wife: ‘twas nobly done of Theodosius.

Rodophe was the fairest lady in her days in all Egypt; she went to wash her, and by
chance (her maids meanwhile looking but carelessly to her clothes), an eagle
stole away one of her shoes, and laid it in Psammaticus the King of Egypt’s
lap at Memphis; he wondered at the excellency of the shoe and pretty foot,
but more *Aquiles factum*, at the manner of the bringing of it: and caused
forthwith proclamation to be made, that she that owned that shoe should come
presently to his court; the virgin came, and was forthwith married to the
king. I say this was heroically done, and like a prince: I commend him for
it, and all such as have means, that will either do (as he did) themselves, or
so for love, &c. marry their children. If he be rich, let him take such a one
as wants, if she be virtuously given; for as Syracides, *cap. 7. ver. 19.* adviseth,
“Forego not a wife and good woman; for her grace is above gold.” If she
have fortunes of her own, let her make a man. Danusa of Lacedemon had a
many daughters to bestow, and means enough for them all, he never stood
inquiring after great matches as others used to do, but *sent* for a company
of brave young gallants home to his house, and bid his daughters choose every
one one, whom she liked best, and take him for her husband, without any more
ado. This act of his was much approved in those times. But in this iron age
of ours, we respect riches alone (for a maid must buy her husband now with
a great dowry if she will have him), covetousness and filthy lucre mars all good
matches, or some such by-respects. Crales, a Servian prince (as *Nicephorus
Gregoras, Rom. hist. lib. 6. relates it*), was an earnest suitor to Eudocia, the
emperor’s sister; though her brother much desired it, yet she could not abide
him, for he had three former wives, all basely abused; but the emperor still,
*Crais amicitii omn magni faciens*, because he was a great prince, and a trouble-
some neighbour, much desired his affinity, and to that end betrothed his own
daughter Simonida to him, a little girl five years of age (he being forty-five),
and five years older than the emperor himself: such disproportionate and
unlikely matches can wealth and a fair fortune make. And yet not that alone,
it is not only money, but sometimes vain-glory, pride, ambition, do as much
harm as wretched covetousness itself in another extreme. If a yeoman have
one sole daughter, he must overmatch her above her birth and calling, to a
gentleman forsooth, because of her great portion, too good for one of her own
rank, as he supposeth: a gentleman’s daughter and heir must be married to a
knight baronet’s eldest son at least; and a knight’s only daughter to a baron
himself, or an earl, and so upwards, her great dower deserves it. And thus
striving for more honour to their wealth, they undo their children, many dis-
contents follow, and oftentimes they ruinate their families. *Paulus Jovius
gives instances in Galeatus the Second, that heroic Duke of Milan, *externas
affinitates decoras quidem regio fastu, sed sibi et posteris damnosas et feri exi-
tiales quaesivit;* he married his eldest son John Galeatius to Isabella the King
of France his sister, but she was *soero tam gravis ut ucventis millibus aureo-
rum constiterit*, her entertainment at Milan was so costly that it almost undid

mandavit per universum *Erythraum ut formans quererebat, cujus est calicis esset; canque sic inventito in
marrimonium accipit.*

*Pannasias, lib. 3. de Laconici. Diumist quid manduario, &c. optimo melius
dedit, ut earum qualibet: cum sibi virum deligeret, cujus maxime esset forma complaeta.*

*Dius
congiugium abominabitur.*

*Socero quinque circiter annos natu minor.*

*Vit. Galeat. secund.*
him. His daughter Violanta was married to Lionel Duke of Clarence, the
youngest son to Edward the Third, King of England, but, ad ejus adventum
stante opes tum admirabili liberabilitate profusa sunt, ut opulentissimorum regum
splendorem superesse videtur; he was welcomed with such incredible magnifi-
cence, that a king's purse was scarcely able to bear it; for besides many rich
presents of horses, arms, plate, money, jewels, &c., he made one dinner for
him and his company, in which were thirty-two messes and as much provision
left, ut relata à mensa lapsus decem millibus hominum sufficient, as would
serve ten thousand men: but a little after Lionel died, nunc upsecta et inter-
pastisio concivitis operam dans, &c., and to the duke's great loss, the solemn-
nity was ended. So can titles, honours, ambition, make many brave, but
unfortunate matches of all sides for by-respects (though both crazed in body
and mind, most unwilling, averse, and often unfit), so love is banished, and we
feel the smart of it in the end. But I am too lavish peradventure in this
subject.

Another let or hindrance is strict and severe discipline, laws and rigorous
customs, that forbid men to marry at set times, and in some places; as appren-
tices, servants, collegiates, states of lives in copyholds, or in some base inferior
offices, b Velle licet in such cases, potiri non licet, as he said. They see but as
prisoners through a grate, they covet and catch, but Tantalus à labris, &c.
Their love is lost, and vain it is in such an estate to attempt. "Gravissimum
est adamare nec potiri, 'tis a grievous thing to love and not enjoy. They may,
indeed, I deny not, marry if they will, and have free choice, some of them; but
in the meantime their case is desperate, Lupum auribus tenent, they hold a
wolf by the ears, they must either burn or starve. 'Tis cornutum sophisma,
hard to resolve, if they marry they forfeit their estates, they are undone, and
starve themselves through beggary and want: if they do not marry, in this
heroical passion they furiously rage, are tormented, and torn in pieces by their
predominate affections. Every man hath not the gift of continence, let him
dpray for it then, as Beza adviseth in his tract de Divortiis, because God hath
so called him to a single life, in taking away the means of marriage. c Paul
would have gone from Mysia to Bithynia, but the spirit suffered him not, and
thou wouldest peradventure be a married man with all thy will, but that pro-

tecting angel holds it not fit. The devil too sometimes may divert by his ill
suggestions, and mar many good matches, as the same f Paul was willing to
see the Romans, but hindered of Satan he could not. There be those that
think they are necessitated by fate, their stars have so decreed, and therefore
they grumble at their hard fortune, they are well inclined to marry, but one
rub or other is ever in the way; I know what astrologers say in this behalf,
Leovitius, genitur. exempl. 1. which Sextus ab Heminga takes to be the horo-
scope of Hieronymus Wolfius, what Pезelius, Origanaus and Leovitius his illus-
trator Garceus, cap. 12. what Junctine, Protanus, Campanella, what the rest,
(to omit those Arabian conjectures à parte conjuncti, à parte lascivies, triplici-
tudes veneris, &c., and those resolutions upon a question, an amicò potiatur, &c.)
determine in this behalf, viz. an sit natus congemen habiturus, facile an difficul-
ter sit sponsam impetrunatus, quot conjuges, quot tempore, quales decernuntur
nato uxorés, de mutuo amore congentem, both in men's and women's genitures, by
the examination of the seventh house the almutens, lords and planets there,
a (e et i &c., by particular aphorisms, Si dominus 7m in 7m vel secunda
noblemen decernit uxorem, servam aut ignoblem si duodecima. Si Venus in
12m, with many such, too tedious to relate. Yet let no man be troubled,

b Apuleius in Catel. nobis cupidiss melle dat, posse abstegat. c Anacon. 66. d Continentiam domin
ex fide postulat quia certus sit eum vocari ad callitatum cu demulis, &c. e Act. xvi. 7. fRom. 1. 13.
or find himself grieved with such predictions, as Hier. Wolfius well saith in his astrological dialogue, *non sunt praetoriana decreta*, they be but conjectures, the stars incline, but not enforce,

"Sidera corporibus praevent coelestia nostris, Succe de visi condita namque into:
Cogere sed nequeunt animum ratione freuentem,
Qui super imperio solis Ipsa del est." h

wisdom, diligence, discretion, may mitigate if not quite alter such decrees, *Fortuna sua a cujusque jugitari moribus, Qui cauti, prudentes, voti compotes, &c., let no man then be terrified or molested with such astrological aphorisms, or be much moved, either to vain hope or fear, from such predictions, but let every man follow his own free will in this case, and do as he sees cause. Better it is indeed to marry than burn, for their soul's health, but for their present fortunes, by some other means to pacify themselves, and divert the stream of this fiery torrent, to continue as they are, k rest satisfied, *jugentes virginitatis florem sic aruisse*, deploting their misery with that eunuch in Libanius, since there is no help or remedy, and with Jephtha's daughter to bewail their virginities.

Of like nature is superstition, those rash vows of monks and friars, and such as live in religious orders, but far more tyrannical and much worse. Nature, youth, and his furious passion forcibly inclines, and regath on the one side; but their order and vow checks them on the other. 1 *Votoque suo sua forma repugnat.* What merits and indulgences they heap unto themselves by it, what commodities, I know not; but I am sure, from such rash vows, and inhuman manner of life, proceed many inconveniences, many diseases, many vices, mastrurbation, satyrisis, m *priapismus*, melanchole, remorse, fornication, adultery, buggery, sodomy, theft, murder, and all manner of mischiefs: read but Bale's Catalogue of Sodomites, at the visitation of abbeys here in England, Henry Stephen. his Apol. for Herodotus, that which Ulricus writes in one of his epistles, "that Pope Gregory when he saw 6000 skulls and bones of infants taken out of a fishpond near aunnery, thereupon retracted that decree of priests' marriages, which was the cause of such a slaughter, was much grieved at it, and purged himself by repentance." Read many such, and then ask what is to be done, is this vow to be broke or not? No, saith Bellarmine, *cap. 38. lb. de Menach. melius est sortari et un quam de voto celibatis ad nuptias transire,* better burn or fly out, than to break thy vow. And Coster in his *Enchirid. de celibat. sacerdotum*, saith it is absolutely *gravissimum peccatum*, "a greater sin for a priest to marry, than to keep a concubine at home." Gregory de Valence, *cap. 6. de celibat. maintains the same, as those Essei and Montanists of old. Insumch that many votaries, out of a small persuasion of merit and holiness in this kind, will sooner die than marry, though it be to the saving of their lives.

Anno 1419. Pius 2. Pope, James Rossa, nephew to the King of Portugal, and then elect Archbishop of Lisbon, being very sick at Florence, "when his physicians told him, that his disease was such, he must either lie with a wench, marry, or die, cheerfully chose to die." Now they commended him for it: but St. Paul teacheth otherwise, "Better marry than burn," and as St. Hierome gravely delivers it, *Alia sunt leges Cesareum, aliae Christi, aliae Popelianus, aliae Paulus noster praepit*, there's a difference betwixt God's ordinances and men's laws: and therefore Cyprian, Epist. 8 boldly denounceth, *impium est, adulterum est, sacrilegum est, quodunque humano fueris statutur*.

---

8 Prefix. gen. Leovill.  h "The stars in the skies preside over our persons, for they are made of humble matter. They cannot bind a rational mind, for that is under the control of God only." 1 Idem Wolius, dil.  k That is, make the best of it, and take his lot as it falls." 2 Memoriales de Priap-mo.  m *Mercurialis de Priapismo.*  n Memorable quod Ulricus epistola referet Gregorii quum ex piscina quadam alata plus quam sex milie infantum capita vidisset, ingemuisse et decremum de celibatis sancti casulis causam confessus, condigisse libid penisfricae fraudem esse. *Kemillis ex conel. Tridend. part. 3. de celibatis sacerdotum.*  o Alphonus Cicionis, lib. de gest. postculm. 6 Cum medici suaderunt ut aut nubaret aut colt uercrum, sic mortum vitari posse, mortem potis atquevisus expectavit, &c.
ut dispositio divina violetur, it is abominable, impious, adulterous, and sacrilegious, what men make and ordain after their own furies to cross God's laws.

619 Georgius Wicelius, one of their own arch divines (Inspect. eccles. pag. 18) exclaims against it, and all such rash monastical vows, and would have such persons seriously to consider what they do, whom they admit, ne in posterum querantur de inanibus stupris, lest they repent it at last. For either, as he follows it, you must allow them concubines or suffer them to marry, for scarce shall you find three priests of three thousand, qui per aetatem non amant, that are not troubled with burning lust. Wherefore I conclude, it is an unnatural and impious thing to bar men of this Christian liberty, too severe and inhuman an edict.

Many laymen repine still at priests' marriages above the rest, and not at clergymen only, but of all the meaner sort and condition, they would have none marry but such as are rich and able to maintain wives, because their parish belike shall be pestered with orphans, and the world full of beggars: but these are hard-hearted, unnatural, monsters of men, shallow politicians, they do not consider that a great part of the world is not yet inhabited as it ought, how many colonies into America, Terra Australis incognita, Africa, may be sent? Let them consult with Sir William Alexander's Book of Colonies, Orpheus Junior's Golden Fleece, Captain Whitburne, Mr. Hagthorpe, &c. and they shall surely be otherwise informed. Those politic Romans were of another mind, they thought their city and country could never be too populous. Adrian the emperor said he had rather have men than money, malle se hominem adjectione ampliare imperium, quam pecunia. Augustus Caesar made an oration in Rome ad cedites, to persuade them to marry; some countries compelled them to marry of old, as Jews, Turks, Indians, Chinese, amongst the rest in these days, who much wonder at our discipline to suffer so many idle persons to live in monasteries, and often marvel how they can live honest. In the isle of Maragnan, the governor and petty king there did wonder at the Frenchmen, and admire how so many friars, and the rest of their company could live without wives, they thought it a thing impossible, and would not believe it. If these men should but survey our multitudes of religious houses, observe our numbers of monasteries all over Europe, 18 numeriers in Padua, in Venice 54 cloisters of monks, 28 of nuns, &c. ex unque leonem, 'tis to this proportion, in all other provinces and cities, what would they think, do they live honest? Let them assemble as they will, I am of Tertullian's mind, that few can continue but by compulsion. "O chastity (saith he) thou art a rare goddess in the world, not so easily got, seldom continue: thou mayest now and then be compelled, either for defect of nature, or if discipline persuade, decrees enforce:" or for some such by-respects, sullenness, discontent, they have lost their first loves, may not have whom they will themselves, want of means, rash vows, &c. But can he willingly contain? I think not. Therefore, either out of commiseration of human imbecility, in policy, or to prevent

---

* The silly sown, the titmouse also, The little redbreast have their election, They fly I saw and together gone, Whereas hem list, about mevret As they of kins have inclination, And as nature impress and guide, Of everything list to provide.  

---

1 Epist. 30. 2 Vide vitam ejus edit. 1623, by D. T. James. 3 Liddate, in Chaucer's Flower of Curtesia. 4 Tis not multitude but idleness which causeth beggary. 5 Or to set them aword, and bring them up in some honest trades. 6 Dion. Cassius, lib. 56. 7 Sardus, Buxtorphus. 8 Claude Alberville in his hist. of the Frenchmen to the Isle of Maragman, An. 1614. 9 Para quidem de a tu es, O churlis, in his terris, nec facile perfecta, rarius perpetua, cui non annuam potest, ob natura defectum, vel disciplina perversitu, censura compressit.
a far worse inconvenience, for they hold some of them as necessary as meat and drink, and because vigour of youth, the state and temper of most men's bodies do so furiously desire it, they have heretofore in some nations liberally admitted polygamy and stews, a hundred thousand courtezans in Grand Cairo in Egypt, as 6 Radzivilus observes, are tolerated, besides boys: how many at Fez, Rome, Naples, Florence, Venice, &c., and still in many other provinces and cities of Europe they do as much, because they think young men, churchmen, and servants amongst the rest, can hardly live honest. The consideration of this belike made Vibiaus, the Spaniard, when his friend d Crassus, that rich Roman gallant, lay hid in the cave, ut voluptatis quam etas illa desideratopiam faceret, to gratify him the more, send two 6 lusty lasses to accompany him all that while he was there imprisoned. And Surenus, the Parthian general, when he was paid against the Romans, to carry about with him 200 concubines, as the Swiss soldiers do now commonly their wives. But, because this course is not generally approved, but rather contradicted as unlawful and abhorred, in most countries they do much encourage them to marriage, give great rewards to such as have many children, and mulct those that will not marry, jus trium liberorum, and in Agellius, lib. 2. cap. 15. Elian. lib. 6. cap 5. Valerius, lib. 1. cap. 9. 6 We read that three children freed the father from painful offices, and five from all contribution. "A woman shall be saved by bearing children." Epicetetus would have all marry, and as b Plato will, de legibus, he that marrieth not before 35 years of his age, must be compelled and punished, and the money consecrated to i Juno's temple, or applied to public uses. They account him, in some countries, unfortunate that dies without a wife, a most unhappy man, as k Boetius infers, and if at all happy, yet in fortunio felix, unhappy in his supposed happiness. They commonly deplore his estate, and much lament him for it: O, my sweet son, &c. See Lucian, de Luctu, Sonds fol. 83, &c.

Yet notwithstanding, many with us are of the opposite part, they are married themselves, and for others, let them burn, fire and flame, they care not, so they be not troubled with them. Some are too curious, and some too covetous, they may marry when they will both for ability and means, but so nice, that except as Theophilus the emperor was presented, by his mother Euprosune, with all the rarest beauties of the empire in the great chamber of his palace at once, and bid to give a golden apple to her he liked best. If they might so take and choose whom they list out of all the fair maids their nation affords, they could happily condescend to marry: otherwise, &c., why should a man marry, saith another epicurean rout, what's matrimony but a matter of money? why should five nerve be entrenched on, confined or obliged, to this or that man or woman, with these manacles of body and goods? &c. There are those too that dearly love, admire and follow women all their lives long, sponsis Penelopes, never well but in their company, wistly gazing on their beauties, observing close, hanging after them, dallying still with them, and yet dare not, will not marry. Many poor people, and of the meaner sort, are too distrustful of God's providence, "they will not, dare not for such worldly respects," fear for want, woes, miseries, or that they shall light, as "1 Lemnias saith, on a scold, a slut, or a bad wife." And therefore, m Tristem Juventatem venere deserta colunt, they are resolved to live single, as a Epaminondas did, "N'il ait

---

5 Peregrin. Hierosol. 6 Platarch. vita cins. adolescentiae medio constituens. 7 Ancillas duas egregias formas et statis flore. 7 Alex. ab Alex. 1. 4. c. 8. 8 Tres filii patriam ab excubio, quinque ab omnibus officiis liberabant. b Prisca epim, cogitare nubere aut mulectur et pecunia templi Junonis dedicatur et publica nat. 1 Consol. 3. pres. 7. k Nic. Hill. Epic. philos. 1 Qui se capitari matrimonii alligari non patiuntur, Lomn. lib. 4. 13. de occulti nat. Abhorrunt multi a matrimonio, ne moremne, querelas, acerbam, animarum uxorem prefere cognatur. 7 Senec. Hippiol. 2 Celebres enim vixerat secut ad uxorem descendam unquam induci potuit. 7 Senec. Hip. "There is nothing better, nothing preferable to a single life."
neither could Locheus.

"Nec Farticeps, Detestoromnes, xeuro, effio, should recanted marry; women; and Read 24), 26 days Essays. took am volaticus of Mitigans whilst my blame, scolding, atque Plutarch say agreeable some delicious sort of love-Mediciwly.

"The ladies are ready with Hippolitus to objure all women, but

"a Hippolite, nescis quod fugis vita bonum, Hippolite, nescis"

"alas, poor Hippolitus, thou knowest not what thou sayest, 'tis otherwise, Hippolitus." Some make a doubt, an uxor literato sit ducenda, whether a scholar should marry, if she be fair she will bring him back from his grammar to his horn book, or else with kissing and dalliance she will hinder his study; if foul with scolding, he cannot well intend to both, as Philippus Eroaldis, that great Bononian doctor, once writ, impediri enim studia literarum, &c., but he recanted at last, and in a solemn sort with true conceived words he did ask the world and all women forgiveness. But you shall have the story as he relates himself, in his Commentaries on the sixth of Apuleius. For a long time I lived a single life, et ab uxor ducenda semper abolviri, nec quicquam libero lecto censui jucundius. I could not abide marriage, but as a rambler, erraticus ac volatilus amator (to use his own words) per multiplicis amores discorribam, I took a snatch where I could get it; nay more, I railed at marriage downright, and in a public auditory, when I did interpret that Sixth Satire of Juvenal, out of Plutarch and Seneca, I did heap up all the ditteries I could against women; but now recant with Stesichorus, palinodium cano, nec poenitet censori in ordine maritorum, I approve of marriage, I am glad I am a married man, I am heartily glad I have a wife, so sweet a wife, so noble a wife, so young, so chaste a wife, so loving a wife, and I do wish and desire all other men to marry; and especially scholars, that as of old Martia did by Hortensiis, Terentia by Tullius, Calphurnia to Plinius, Pudentilla to Apuleius, hold the candle whilst their husbands did meditate and write, so theirs may do them, and as my dear Camilla doth to me. Let other men be averse, rail then and scoff at women, and say what they can to the contrary, vir sine uxor e multorum expres est, &c., a single man is a happy man, &c., but this is a toy. Nec dulces amores sperne, puer, neque tu choras; these men are too distrustful and much to blame, to use such speeches, "Parite vacorum diffundere crimem in omnes. "They must not condemn all for some." As there be many bad, there be some good wives; as some be vicious, some be virtuous. Read what Solomon hath said in their praises, Prov. xiii. and Syracides, cap. 26 et 30, "Blessed is the man that hath a virtuous wife, for the number of his days shall be double. A virtuous woman rejoiceth her husband, and she shall fulfil the years of his life in peace. A good wife is a good portion (and xxxvi. 24), an help, a pillar of rest," columna quietis, *Qui caput uxorem, fratrem capit atque sororem. And 30, "He that hath no wife wandereth to and fro mourning." Minuuntur atra conjugis curae, women are the sole, only joy, and comfort of a man's life, born ad usum et lusum hominum, firmamenta familiae, "F Delitie humani generis, solatia vitae, Blanditiae noctis, placidissima cura diei, Vota virum, Juvenum spes," &c.

"& A wife is a young man's mistress, a middle age's companion, an old man's nurse; Particeps litorum et tristium, a prop, a help, &c."

"Optima viri possessio est uxor benedicta, Milagrosa iram et avertere animam, cajus a tristitia;" &c. "Man's best possession is a loving wife, She tempers anger and diverts all strife."

There is no joy, no comfort, no sweetness, no pleasure in the world like to that of a good wife, "Quam cum charis domi conjux, fidiusque maritus Unanimus degunt" —
saith our Latin Homer, she is still the same in sickness and in health, his eye, his hand, his bosom friend, his partner at all times, his other self; not to be separated by any calamity, but ready to share all sorrow, discontent, and as the Indian women do, live and die with him, nay more, to die presently for him. Admetus, king of Thessaly, when he lay upon his death-bed, was told by Apollo's Oracle, that if he could get any body to die for him, he should live longer yet, but when all refused, his parents eti decrepiti, friends and followers forsook him, Alcestus, his wife, though young, most willingly undertook it; what more can be desired or expected? And although on the other side there be an infinite number of bad husbands (I should rail downright against some of them), able to discourage any woman; yet there be some good ones again, and those most observant of marriage rites. An honest country fellow (as Fulgens relates it) in the kingdom of Naples, at plough by the sea-side, saw his wife carried away by Mauritian pirates, he ran after in all haste, up to the chin first, and when he could wade no longer, swim, calling to the governor of the ship to deliver his wife, or if he must not have her restored, to let him follow as a prisoner, for he was resolved to be a galley-slave, his drudge, willing to endure any misery, so that he might but enjoy his dear wife. The Moors seeing the man's constancy, and relating the whole matter to their governors at Tunis, set them both free, and gave them an honest pension to maintain themselves during their lives. I could tell many stories to this effect; but put case it often prove otherwise, because marriage is troublesome, wholly therefore to avoid it, is no argument; "d He that will avoid trouble must avoid the world." (Eusebius preppur. Evangel. 5. cap. 50.) Some trouble there is in marriage I deny not, Etai grave sit matrimonium, saith Erasmus, educatur tamen multis, &c, yet there be many things to "sweeten it, a pleasant wife, placeus uxor, pretty children, ducit nati, delicia fiororum hominum, the chief delight of the sons of men; Eccles. ii. 8. &c. And howsoever though it were all troubles, utilitas publica causid devorandum, grave quid liberer subeundum, it must willingly be undergone for public good's sake,

"s Audite (populus) hac, inquit Susarion, Male suntMulieres, veramentem O populares, Hoc sine maho damnum in habitare non licet."

"Hear me, O my countrymen, saith Saisiron, Women are naught, yet no life without one."

b Malum est mulier, sed necessarium malum. They are necessary evils, and for our own ends we must make use of them to have issue, Supplet Venus ac restituit humanum genus, and to propagate the church. For to what end is a man born? why lives he, but to increase the world? and how shall he do that well, if he do not marry? Matrimonium humano generi immortalitatem tribuit, saith Nevisanum, matrimony makes us immortal, and, according to Tis Tacitus, tis firmissimum imperii munimentum, the sole and chief prop of an empire. Indigne vivit quem non vivit aliis, which Pelopidas objected to Eponinodas, he was an unworthy member of a commonwealth, that left not a child after him to defend it, and as Trismegistus to his son Tatius, "have no commerce with a single man," Holding belike that a bachelor could not live honestly as he should, and with Georgius Wicelius, a great divine and holy man, who of late by twenty-six arguments commends marriage as a thing most necessary for all kind of persons, most laudable and fit to be embraced: and is persuaded withal, that no man can live and die religiously, as he ought, without a wife, persusus neminem posse neque pie vivere, neque bene mori aut uxorem, he is false, an enemy to the commonwealth, injurious to himself,
Cure of Love-Melancholy.

623
destructive to the world, an apostate to nature, a rebel against heaven and earth. Let our wilful, obstinate, and stale bachelors ruminate of this, “If we could live without wives,” as Marcellus Numidicus said in Ὀγελίου, “we would all want them; but because we cannot, let all marry, and consult rather to the public good, than their own private pleasure or estate.” It were an happy thing, as wise Euripides hath it, if we could buy children with gold and silver and be so provided, sine mulierum congressu, without women’s company; but that may not be:

“Aurus jactabit squallido tumultu siti,
Vacuum sine ulius classibus stabile mare,
Alesque colo deesit et sylvis vara.”

“Earth, air, sea, land oft soon would come to naught,
The world itself should be to ruin brought.”

Necessity therefore compels us to marry.

But what do I trouble myself to find arguments to persuade to, or commend marriage? behold a brief abstract of all that which I have said, and much more, succinctly, pithily, pathetically, perspicuously, and elegantly delivered in twelve motions to mitigate the miseries of marriage, by Jacobus de Voragine,


1. Hast thou means? thou hast none to keep and increase it.—2. Hast none? thou hast one to help to get it.—3. Art in prosperity? thine happiness is doubled.—4. Art in adversity? she’ll comfort, assist, bear a part of thy burden to make it more tolerable.—5. Art at home? she’ll drive away melancholy.—6. Art abroad? she looks after thee going from home, wishes for thee in thine absence, and joyfully welcomes thy return.—7. There’s nothing delightsome without society, no society so sweet as matrimoniy.—8. The band of conjugal love is adamantum.—9. The sweet company of kinsmen increaseth, the number of parents is doubled, of brothers, sisters, nephews.—10. Thou art made a father by a fair and happy issue.—11. Moses curseth the barren- ness of matrimoniy, how much more a single life?—12. If nature escape not punishment, surely thy will shall not avoid it.

All this is true, say you, and who knows it not? but how easy a matter is it to answer these motives, and to make an Antiparodia quite opposite unto it? To exercise myself I will essay:

1. Hast thou means? thou hast none to spend it.—2. Hast none? thy belligar- gary is increased.—3. Art in prosperity? thy happiness is ended.—4. Art in adversity? like Job’s wife she’ll aggravate thy misery, vex thy soul, make thy burden intolerable.—5. Art at home? she’ll scold thee out of doors.—6. Art abroad? If thou be wise keep thee so, she’ll perhaps graft horns in thine absence, scowl on thee coming home.—7. Nothing gives more content than sollitariness, no sollitariness like this of a single life.—8. The band of marriage is adamantum, no hope of loosen it, thou art undone.—9. Thy number in- creaseth, thou shalt be devoured by thy wife’s friends.—10. Thou art made a cornuto by an unchaste wife, and shalt bring up other folks’ children, instead of thine own.—11. Paul commendth marriage, yet he prefers a single life.—12. Is marriage honourable? What an immortal crown belongs to virginity?

6 Lib. I. cap. 6. Si, inquit, Quirites, sine noxre esse possemus, omnes careremus; Sed quoniam sic est salutis potius publicae quam voluptatis commandendum. 7 Beatum forset si liberum atque argento mercari, &c. 8 Seneca. Hyp. 9 Gen. ii. Adjutorium simile, &c.
So Siracides himself speaks as much as may be for and against women, so doth almost every philosopher plead pro and con, every poet thus argues the case: (though what cares vulgar hominum what they say?) so can I conceive peradventure, and so cast thou: when all is said, yet since some be good, some bad, let’s put it to the venture. I conclude therefore with Seneca,

— "sit Toro viduo jaces?
Tristem Juveniam solve: nunque luxus rape,
Effunde habenda, optimus vita dies
Effuere prohibe.

"Why dost thou lie alone, let thy youth and best days to pass away?" Marry whilst thou mayest, donec viventi canities abest morosa, whilst thou art yet able, yet lusty, "Elige cut dicis, tu inibi sola places, make thy choice, and that freely forthwith, make no delay, but take thy fortune as it falls. "Tis true,

"Tis a hazard both ways I confess, to live single or to marry, "Nam et uxorem ducere, et non ducere matrem est, it may be bad, it may be good, as it is a cross and calamity on the one side, so ’tis a sweet delight, an incomparable happiness, a blessed estate, a most unspeakable benefit, a sole content, on the other, ’tis all in the proof. Be not then so wayward, so covetous, so distrustful, so curious and nice, but let’s all marry, mutuo juveni amplexus; "Take me to thee, and thee to me," to-morrow is St. Valentine’s day, let’s keep it holiday for Cupid’s sake, for that great god Love’s sake, for Hymen’s sake, and celebrate Venus’ vigil with our ancestors for company together, singing as they did,

"Cras amet qui nunquam amatit, quique amatit,"
"Let those love now who never loved before,
And those who always loved now love the more;
Sweet loves are born with every opening spring;
Birds from the tender boughs their pledges sing," &c.

Let him that is averse from marriage read more in Barbarus de re uxori, lib. 1. cap. 1. Lemniiis de institut. cap. 4. P. Godifridus de Amor. lib. 3. cap. 1. Nevisanus, lib. 3. Alex. ab Alexandro, lib. 4. cap. 8. Tunstall, Erasmus’ tracts in laudem matrimonii, &c., and I doubt not but in the end he will rest satisfied, recant with Beroaldus, do penance for his former folly, singing some penitential ditties, desire to be reconciled to the deity of this great god Love, go a pilgrimage to his shrine, offer to his image, sacrifice upon his altar, and be as willing at last to embrace marriage as the rest: There will not be found, I hope, "No, not in that severe family of Stoics, who shall refuse to submit his grave beard, and supercilious looks to the clapping of a wife, or disagree from his fellows in this point." "For what more willingly (as "Varro holds) can a proper man see than a fair wife, a sweet wife, a loving wife?" can the world afford a better sight, sweeter content, a fairer object, a more gracious aspect.

Since then this of marriage is the last and best refuge, and cure of heroic love, all doubts are cleared, and impediments removed; I say again, what remains, but that according to both their desires, they be happily joined, since it cannot otherwise be helped? God send us all good wives, every man his wish in this kind, and me mine!

b And God that all this world hath yeought, Send him his love that hath it so dere sought.

If all parties be pleased, ask their banns, ’tis a match. "Fruitur Rhodanthe sponsa, sponsio Dositile, Rhodanthe and Dositile shall go together, Chitiphon

8 Ovid. "Find her to whom you may say, ‘thou art my only pleasure.’ " 9 Euripides. "Unhappy the man who has met a bad wife, happy who found a good one." 10 E Graco Valerius, lib. 7. cap. 7. 11 "To marry, and not to marry, are equally base." 12 Virgilianum Veneris et veterum poeta. 13 Domus non potes consistere sine uxore. Nevisanus, lib. 2. num. 18. 14 Nemo in seuerissima Stoicorum familia qui non barbarique quique et supercilium amplexibus uxoris subiusitus, aut in ista parte a religiosis dissenserit. Hensius Primiero 15 Quid licet hominis homo masculus viduus debet quam bellam uxorem? b Chaucer. 16 Conclusio Thes. Pedrro, lib. 5. 1. Amor.
and Leucippe, Theagines and Chariclea, Poliarchus hath his Argenis, Lysander Calista (to make up the mask), *Potiturque suæ puér Iphis Tanthi.*

And Troilus in lust and in quiet
Is with Creseid, his own heart sweet.

And although they have hardly passed the pikes, through many difficulties and delays brought the match about, yet let them take this of *Aristaeus* (that so marry) for their comfort: "If after many troubles and cares, the marriages of lovers are more sweet and pleasant." As we commonly conclude a comedy with a wedding, and shaking of hands, let’s shut up our discourse, and end all with an Epithalamium.

Felicitur nuptius, God give them joy together. *Hymen O Hymenea, Hymen ades O Hymenea!* Bonum factum, 'tis well done, *Haud egudem sine mens reor, sine numine Divum,* 'tis a happy conjunction, a fortunate match, an even couple,

"Ambo animis, ambo praestantes viribus, ambo
Florentes annis,"

"they both excel in gifts of body and mind, are both equal in years," youth, vigour, alacrity, she is fair and lovely as Lais or Helen, he as another Charinus or Alcibiades,

"Indite ut luet et brevi Liberis date."

"Then modestly go sport and toy,
And let’s have every year a boy."

"1 Go give a sweet smell as incense, and bring forth flowers as the lily:" that we may say hereafter, *Scitus Mecaster natus est Pamphilo puér.* In the meantime I say,

"Hic, cæte, O juvenes, non murmura vestra columba,
Brachia, non bedere, noque vinctat osca coachea."

"Gente youths, go sport yourselves betimes,
Let not the doves oupass your murmurings,
or Ivy-clasping arms, or oyster kissings."

And in the morn betime, as those Lacedæmonian lasses saluted Helena and Menelaus, singing at their windows, and wishing good success, do we at yours:

"Salve O sponsa, salve felix, det robi Latona
Felicem sobolem, Venus des duæ equam amorem Inter vos mutat; Saturnus durabiles divitias,
Dormire in pectora mutuo amorem insipiantes,
Et desiderium!"

"Salve O sponsa, salve felix, det robi Latona
Felicem sobolem, Venus des duæ equam amorem Inter vos mutat; Saturnus durabiles divitias,
Dormire in pectora mutuo amorem insipiantes,
Et desiderium!"

"Even all your lives long,

"P Contingat voibus turturum concordia,
Cornicula vivacitas"

"The love of turtles hap to you,
And ravens’ years still to renew."

Let the Muses sing, (as he said;) the Graces dance, not at their weddings only, but all their days long; "so couple their hearts, that no irkserenceness or anger ever befal them: let him never call her other name than my joy, my light, or she call him otherwise than sweetheart. To this happiness of theirs, let not old age any whit detract, but as their years, so let their mutual love and comfort increase." And when they depart this life,

"concordes quomion vixere tot annos,
Auferat hora duos eadem, nec conjugia usquam
 Succa sue videat, nec sit tumulandas ab ilia."

"Because they have so sweetly liv’d together,
Let not one die a day before the other,
He bury her, she him, with even fate,
One hour their souls let jointly separate."

"Furtunati ambo si quid mea carmina possent,
Nulla dies unquam memori vos eximet arvo."


*Ovid. *Epist. 4.1.2. *Juvidiores multo et saviores longe post molastas turbas amantium nuptia
f Olim meminisse juvabit. *Quid expectatis, iunius amant nuptia, the music, guests, and all the good cheer
is within. *The conclusion of Chaucer’s poem of Troilus and Creseid.*

"Concordes quomion vixere tot annos,
Auferat hora duos eadem, nec conjugia usquam
Succa sue videat, nec sit tumulandas ab ilia."

"Because they have so sweetly liv’d together,
Let not one die a day before the other,
He bury her, she him, with even fate,
One hour their souls let jointly separate."

"Furtunati ambo si quid mea carmina possent,
Nulla dies unquam memori vos eximet arvo."


*Ovid. *Epist. 4.1.2. *Juvidiores multo et saviores longe post molastas turbas amantium nuptia
f Olim meminisse juvabit. *Quid expectatis, iunius amant nuptia, the music, guests, and all the good cheer
is within. *The conclusion of Chaucer’s poem of Troilus and Creseid.*

"Concordes quomion vixere tot annos,
Auferat hora duos eadem, nec conjugia usquam
Succa sue videat, nec sit tumulandas ab ilia."

"Because they have so sweetly liv’d together,
Let not one die a day before the other,
He bury her, she him, with even fate,
One hour their souls let jointly separate."

"Furtunati ambo si quid mea carmina possent,
Nulla dies unquam memori vos eximet arvo."

*Atque hæc de amore dissixisse sufficient, *sub correctione,* quod ait ille, *cuiusque mellis sentientis.* Plura qui volet de remediis amoris, *legat Jasionem Fraterem, Arnoldum, Nemorum, Salvatorum, Langium, Vuliscum, Crimisum,*
SECT. III. MEMB. I.

SUBSECT. I.—Jealousy, its Equivocations, Name, Definition, Extent, several kinds; of Princes, Parents, Friends. In Beasts, Men: before marriage, as Co-rivals; or after, as in this place.

VALESCUS de Tarantâ, cap. de Melanchol. Ælian Montaltus, Felix Platerus, Guianerius, put jealousy for a cause of melancholy, others for a symptom; because melancholy persons amongst these passions and perturbations of the mind, are most obnoxious to it. But methinks for the latitude it hath, and that prerogative above other ordinary symptoms, it ought to be treated of as a species apart, being of so great and eminent note, so furious a passion, and almost of as great extent as love itself, as ¹ Benedetto Varchi holds, "no love without a mixture of jealousy," qui non velit, non amat. For these causes I will dilate, and treat of it by itself, as a bastard-branch or kind of love melancholy, which, as heroic love goeth commonly before marriage, doth usually follow, torture, and crucify in like sort, deserves therefore to be rectified alike, requires as much care and industry, in setting out the several causes of it, prognostics and cures. Which I have more willingly done, that he that is or hath been jealous, may see his error as in a glass; he that is not, may learn to detest, avoid it himself, and dispossess others that are anywise affected with it.

Jealousy is described and defined to be "a certain suspicion which the lover hath of the party he chiefly loveth, lest he or she should be enamoured of another;" or any eager desire to enjoy some beauty alone, to have it proper to himself only: a fear or doubt, lest any foreigner should participate or share with him in his love. Or (as ² Scaliger adds) "a fear of losing her favour whom he so earnestly affects." Cardan calls it "a zeal for love, and a kind of envy lest any man should beguile us." ³ Ludovicus Vives defines it in the very same words, or little differing in sense.

There be many other jealousies, but improperly so called all; as that of parents, tutors, guardians over their children, friends whom they love, or such as are left to their wardship or protection.

"Storax non reddit hac notae a cona. Æschins,
Neque servorum quisquam qui adversum iarent?"

As the old man in the comedy cried out in a passion, and from a solicitous fear and care he had of his adopted son; ⁴ not of beauty, but lest they should miscarry, do amiss, or any way discredit, disgrace (as Vives notes) or endanger themselves and us." ⁵ Ægens was so solicitous for his son Theseus (when he went to fight with the Minotaur), of his success, lest he should be foiled, ⁶ Prona est timori semper in pejus jubes. We are still apt to suspect the worst in such doubtful cases, as many wives in their husbands' absence,

---

² Fliris 3 book of Troilus and Cresside.
⁴ In his Oration of Jealousy, put out by Fr. Sansovin.
⁵ Benedetto Varchi.
⁶ Exercitit. 317. Cum metuimus ne amate rei extraneam possesionem.
⁷ Zeonis de forma est invidiente species ne qua forma quam amamus struit.
⁸ 3 de Anima.
⁹ "Hab aut non every one of the slaves that went to meet him returned this night from the supper?"
¹⁰ R. de Anima.
¹¹ Tathamul solopapia de papilla, liberis charisque cura nostras concorditis, non de formas, sed ne male sit ibi, aut ne nobis sibique parent ignoscijam.
¹² Flauarch.
¹³ Sesce in Merc. fur.
fond mothers in their children's, lest if absent they should be misled or sick, and are continually expecting news from them, how they do fare, and what is become of them, they cannot endure to have them long out of their sight: oh my sweet son, O my dear child, &c. Paul was jealous over the Church of Corinth, as he confesseth, 2 Cor. xi. 12. "With a godly jealousy, to present them a pure virgin to Christ;" and he was afraid still, lest as the serpent beguiled Eve, through his subtilty, so their minds should be corrupt from the simplicity that is in Christ. God himself, in some sense, is said to be jealous, "I am a jealous God, and will visit:" so Psalm lxxix. 5. "Shall thy jealousy burn like fire for ever?" But these are improperly called jealousies, and by a metaphor, to show the care and solicitude they have of them. Although some jealousies express all the symptoms of this which we treat of, fear, sorrow, anguish, anxiety, suspicion, hatred, &c., the object only varied. That of some fathers is very eminent, to their sons and heirs; for though they love them dearly being children, yet now coming to men's estate they may not well abide them, the son and heir is commonly sick of the father, and the father again may not well brook his eldest son, inde simulatae, plerumque contentiones et inimitia; but that of princes is most notorious, as when they fear co-rivals, (if I may so call them) successors, emulators, subjects, or such as they have offended. Omnisque potestas impatiens consortis erit: "they are still suspicious lest their authority should be diminished," as one observes; and as Cominicus hath it, "it cannot be expressed what slender causes they have of their grief and suspicion, a secret disease, that commonly lurks and breeds in princes' families." Sometimes it is for their honour only, as that of Adrian the emperor, "that killed all his emulators." Saul envied David; Domitian Agricola, because he did excel him, obscure his honour, as he thought, eclipse his fame. Juno turned Pretus' daughters into kine, for that they contended with her for beauty; Cyparisss, king Eeeolcs' children, were envied of the goddesses for their excellent good parts, and dancing amongst the rest, saith Constantine, "and for that cause flung headlong from heaven, and buried in a pit, but the earth took pity of them, and brought out cypress trees to preserve their memories." Niobe, Arachne, and Marsyas, can testify as much. But it is most grievous when it is for a kingdom itself, or matters of commodity, it produceth lamentable effects, especially amongst tyrants, in despotico Imperio, and such as are more feared than beloved of their subjects, that get and keep their sovereignty by force and fear. Quod civibus tenere ut invitis seos, &c., as Phalaris, Dionysius, Periander held theirs. For though fear, cowardice, and jealousy, in Plutarch's opinion, be the common causes of tyranny, as in Nero, Caligula, Tiberius, yet most take them to be symptoms. For what slave, what hangman (as Bodine well expresseth this passion, l. 2. c. 5. de rep.) can so cruelly torture a condemned person, as this fear and suspicion? Fear of death, inflam, torments, are those furies and vultures that vex and disquiet tyrants, and torture them day and night, with perpetual terrors and affrights, envy, suspicion, fear, desire of revenge, and a thousand such disagreeing perturbations, turn and afflict the soul out of the hinges of health, and more grievously wound and pierce, than those cruel masters can exasperate and vex their apprentices or servants, with clubs, whips, chains, and tortures." Many terrible examples we have in this kind, amongst the Turks especially, many jealous

6 Exod. xx. 7 Lucan. 8 Darius Aphoris. polit. semper metuant ne eorum auctoritas minuat. 9 Belli Nepol. lib. 5. 10 Belli Nepol. lib. 5. I bid non potes; quam tenues et infirmas causas habent maroris et suspicionis, et hic est morbus occulta, qui in familias principum regnat. K Omnes semul exierit. Lamp. 11 Constant. agricult. lib. 10. c. 5. Cyprisss Eeeolcs filis, saliantes ad umilationem deorum in putum demolitis sunt, sed terra mettera, caprissos inde produxit. 12 Ovid. Met. 13 Seneca. 14 Qua autem carnifex additum supplicio crudelius afficiat, quam metus? Metus inquant morit, Inhumanus, crudelus, sunt illae ululales furia que tyrannos exagitant, &c. Muto aecubus sauciant et pungunt, quam crudelis omnini servos vincitius fastibus ac tormentis exulcerare possint.
Love-Melancholy.

[Part 3. Sec. 3.

outrages; Selimus killed Kornutus his youngest brother, five of his nephews, Mustapha Bassa, and divers others. Bejazet the second Turk, jealous of the valour and greatness of Achmet Bassa, caused him to be slain. Solyman the Magnificent murdered his own son Mustapha; and 'tis an ordinary thing amongst them, to make away their brothers, or any competitors, at the first coming to the crown: 'tis all the solemnity they use at their fathers' funerals. What mad pranks in his jealous fury did Herodot of committ in Jewry, when he massacred all the children of a year old! 

Valens the emperor in Constantinople, when as he left no man alive of quality in his kingdom that had his name begun with Theo; Theodoti, Theognosti, Theodoli, &c. They went all to their long home, because a wizard told him that name should succeed in his empire. And what furious designs hath Jo. Basilius, that Muscovian tyrant, practised of late? It is a wonder to read that strange suspicion, which Suetonius reports of Claudius Caesar, and of Domitian, they were afraid of every man they saw: and which Herodian of Antonius and Geta, those two jealous brothers, the one could not endure so much as the other's servants, but made away, his chiefest followers, and all that belonged to him, or were his well-wishers. Maximinus "perceiving himself to be odious to most men, because he was come to that height of honour out of base beginnings, and suspecting his mean parentage would be objected to him, caused all the senators that were nobly descended, to be slain in a jealous humour, turned all the servants of Alexander his predecessor out of doors, and slew many of them, because they lamented their master's death, suspecting them to be traitors, for the love they bare to him." When Alexander in his fury had made Clitus his dear friend to be put to death, and saw now (saith Curtius) an alienation in his subjects' hearts, none durst talk with him, he began to be jealous of himself, lest they should attempt as much on him, "and said they lived like so many wild beasts in a wilderness, one afraid of another." Our modern stories afford us many notable examples. Henry the Third of France, jealous of Henry of Lorraine, Duke of Guise, anno 1588, caused him to be murdered in his own chamber. Louis the Eleventh was so suspicious, he durst not trust his children, every man about him he suspected for a traitor: many strange tricks did Comineus telleth of him. How jealous was our Henry the Fourth of King Richard the Second, so long as he lived, after he was deposed? and of his own son Henry in his later days? which the prince well perceiving, came to visit his father in his sickness, in a watchet velvet gown, full of eyelet holes, and with needles sticking in them (as an emblem of jealousy), and so pacified his suspicious father, after some speeches and protestations, which he had used to that purpose. Perpetual imprisonment, as that of Robert Duke of Normandy, in the days of Henry the First, forbidding of marriage to some persons, with such like edicts and prohibitions, are ordinary in all states. In a word (as he said) three things cause jealousy, a mighty state, a rich treasure, a fair wife; or where there is a cracked title, much tyranny, and excagions. In our state, as being freed from all these fears and miseries, we may be most secure and happy under the reign of our fortunate prince:

"His fortune hath indebted him to none But to all his people universally; And not to them but for their love alone, Which they account as placed worthily."

He is so set, he hath no cause to be Jealous, or dreadful of disloyalty; The pedestal whereon his greatness stands, Is held of all our hearts, and all our hands."
But I rove, I confess. These equivocations, jealousies, and many such, which crucify the souls of men, are not here properly meant, or in this distinction of ours included, but that alone which is for beauty, tending to love, and wherein they can brook no co-rival, or endure any participation: and this jealousy belongs as well to brute beasts, as men. Some creatures, saith \(^6\) Vives, swans, doves, cocks, bulls, &c., are jealous as well as men, and as much moved, for fear of communion.

\[\text{"Greek pro toto bella juvenel,}\]
\[\text{Si conjungo timmare suo,}\]
\[\text{Pescant timidii praeta cervi,}\]
\[\text{Et magius dant concepti signa furoris."}\]

In bulls, horses, goats, this is most apparently discerned. Bulls especially, \textit{alium in pasceus non admittit,} he will not admit another bull to feed in the same pasture, saith \(^6\) Oppian: which Stephanus Bathorious late king of Poland, used as an impress, with that motto, \textit{Regnum non capit duos.} \(^1\) R. T. in his Blason of Jealousy, telleth a story of a swan about Windsor, that finding a strange cock with his mate, did swim I know not how many miles after to kill him, and when he had so done, came back and killed his hen; a certain truth; he saith, done upon Thames, as many watermen, and neighbour gentlemen, can tell. \textit{Fidem suam liberet;} for my part, I do believe it may be true; for swans have ever been branded with that epithet of jealousy.

\(\text{b The jealous swanne against his death that singeth,}\)
\(\text{And she the ouse that of death bode bringeth.}\)

\(^1\)Some say as much of elephants, that they are more jealous than any other creatures whatsoever; and those old Egyptians, as \(^k\) Pieron informeth us, express in their hieroglyphics, the passion of jealousy by a camel; \(^1\) because that fearing the worst still about matters of venery, he loves solitudes, that he may enjoy his pleasure alone, \textit{et in quoscunque obvios insurget, Zeleotypiae stimuli agitatus,} he will quarrel and fight with whosoever comes next, man or beast, in his jealous fits. I have read as much of \(^m\) crocodiles; and if Peter Martyr's authority be authentic, \textit{legat. Babylonica,} \textit{lib. 3.} you shall have a strange tale to that purpose confidently related. Another story of the jealousy of dogs, see in Hieron. Fabricious, \textit{Tract. 3. cap. 5. de loquela animalium.}\n
But this furious passion is most eminent in men, and is as well amongst bachelors as married men. If it appear amongst bachelors, we commonly call them rivals or co-rivals, a metaphor derived from a river, \textit{rivales à rivo;} for as a river, saith Acron in \textit{Hor. Art. Poet.} and Donat. in \textit{Ter. Enuoch.} divides a common ground between two men, and both participate of it, so is a woman indifferent between two suitors, both likely to enjoy her; and thence comes this emulation, which breaks out many times into tempestuous storms, and produceth lamentable effects, murder itself, with much cruelty, many single combats. They cannot endure the least injury done unto them before their mistress, and in her defence will bite off one another's noses; they are most impatient of any flout, disgrace, lest emulation or participation in that kind.

\(^\)\(^a\)\textit{Lacerat lacertum Largi mordax Memninus.} Memninus the Roman (as Tully tells the story, \textit{de oratore, lib. 2.}) being co-rival with Largus Terracina, bit him by the arm, which fact of his was so famous, that it afterwards grew to a proverb in those parts. \(^f\) Phedredia could not abide his co-rival Thrasoe; for when Parmeno demanded, \textit{numquid aliud imperas?} whether he would command him any more service: "No more (saith he) but to speak in his behalf;
and to drive away his co-rival if he could." Constantine, in the eleventh book of his husbandry, cap. 11, hath a pleasant tale of the pine-tree; 

she was once a fair maid, whom Pinens and Borcas, two co-rivals, dearly sought; but jealous Borcas broke her neck, &c. And in his eighteenth chapter he telleth another tale of Mars, that in his jealousy slew Adonis. Petronius calleth this passion amantium furiosam emulationem, a furious emulation; and their symptoms are well expressed by Sir Geoffrey Chaucer in his first Canterbury Tale. It will make the nearest and dearest friends fall out; they will endure all other things to be common, goods, lands, moneys, participate of each pleasure, and take in good part any disgraces, injuries in another kind; but as Propertius well describes it in an elegy of his, in this they will suffer nothing, have no co-rivals.

"Tu mittis vel ferro pectus, vel perde venenum, 
A domina tantum te modo tolle mea: 
Te solum vitae te corporis esse licet, 
Te dominum admitto rebus amico motis. 
Lecto te solum, lecto te deprecor uno, 

telleam possun non ego ferre Jovem."

"Stab me with sword, or poison strong 
Give me to work my bane: 
So thou court not my base, so thou 
From mistress mine refrain. 
Command myself, my body, purse, 
As thine own goods take all, 
And as my ever dearest friend, 
I ever use thou shall. 
O spare my love, to have alone 
Her to myself I crave, 
Nay, Jose himself I'll not endure 
My rival for to have."

This jealousy, which I am to treat of, is that which belongs to married men, in respect of their own wives; to whose estate, as no sweetness, pleasure, happiness can be compared in the world, if they live quietly and lovingly together; so if they disagree or be jealous, those bitter pills of sorrow and grief, disastrous mischiefs, mischances, tortures, gripings, discontentes, are not to be separated from them. A most violent passion it is where it taketh place, an unspeakable torment, a hellish torture, an infernal plague, as Ariosto calls it, "a fury, a continual fever, full of suspicion, fear, and sorrow, a martyrdom, a mirth-marring monster. The sorrow and grief of heart of one woman jealous of another, is heavier than death. Eccl. xxviii. 6. as 'Peninna did Hannah, vex her and upbraid her sore.' 'Tis a main vexation, a most intolerable burden, a corrosive to all content, a frenzy, a madness itself; as "Benedetto Varchi proves out of that select sonnet of Giovanni de la Casa, that reverend lord, as he styles him.

Subsect. II.—Causes of Jealousy. Who are most apt. Idleness, melancholy, impotency, long absence, beauty, wantonness, naughted themselves. Allurements from time, place, persons, bad usage, causes.

Astrologers make the stars a cause or sign of this bitter passion, and out of every man's horoscope will give a probable conjecture whether he will be jealous or no, and at what time, by direction of the significators to their several promissors: their aphorisms are to be read in Alhibatur, Pontanns, Schoner, Junctine, &c. Bodine, cap. 5. meth. hist. ascribes a great cause to the country or clime, and discourseth largely there of this subject, saying that southern men are more hot, lascivious, and jealous, than such as live in the north; they can hardly contain themselves in those hotter climes, but are more subject to prodigious lust. Leo Afer telleth incredible things almost, of the lust and jealousy of his countrymen of Africa, and especially such as live about Carthage, and so doth every geographer of them in Asia, Turkey, Spaniards, Italians. Germany hath not so many drunkards, England tobaccoists, France dancers, Holland mariners, as Italy alone hath jealous husbands. And in Italy some account them of Piacenza more jealous than the rest. In Ger-

*FINES PUELA QUODERAM FUIT, &C.  
MARS ZELOTYPUS ADONIDEI INTERFECIT.  
R. T.  
I Sam. L. c.  
BLAZON OF JEALOUSY.  
NULLERUM CONDICE MIZERIA: NULLAM HONESTUM EREDITAT NATI DOMO CONCLUDIT RIVAT.  
FINES MORISON.  
NOMEN ZELOTYPUS APUD ISTOS LOCUM NON HABET. LIB. 3. C. 8.
many, France, Britain, Scandia, Poland, Muscovy, they are not so troubled with this feral malady, although Damianus & Goes, which I do much wonder at, in his topography of Lapland, and Herbastein of Russia, against the stream of all other geographers, would fasten it upon those northern inhabitants. Altorius Poggius, and Munster in his description of Baden, reports that men and women of all sorts go commonly into the baths together, without all suspicion, "the name of jealousy (saith Munster) is not so much as once heard of among them." In Friesland the women kiss them they drink to, and are kissed again of those they pledge. The virgins in Holland go hand in hand with young men from home, glide on the ice, such is their harmless liberty, and lodge together abroad without suspicion, which rash Sansovinus an Italian makes a great sign of unchastity. In France, upon small acquaintance, it is usual to court other men's wives, to come to their houses, and accompany them arm in arm in the streets, without imputation. In the most northern countries young men and maids familiarly dance together, men and their wives, which, Siena only excepted, Italians may not abide. The Greeks, on the other side, have their private baths for men and women, where they must not come near, nor so much as see one another: and as Bodine observes, lib. 5. de repub. "the Italians could never endure this," or a Spaniard, the very conceit of it would make him mad: and for that cause they lock up their women, and will not suffer them to be near men, so much as in the church, but with a partition between. He telleth, moreover, how that "when he was ambassador in England, he heard Mendoza the Spanish legate finding fault with it, as a filthy custom for men and women to sit promiscuously in churches together: but Dr. Dale the master of the requests told him again, that it was indeed a filthy custom in Spain, where they could not contain themselves from lascivious thoughts in their holy places, but not with us." Baronius in his Annals, out of Eusebius, taxeth Licinius the emperor for a decree of his made to this effect, *Jubens ne viri simul cum mulieribus in ecclesiis interest*; for being prodigiously naught himself, *alorum naturam ex sua vitiosam mente spectavit*, he so esteemed others. But we are far from any such strange conceits, and will permit our wives and daughters to go to the tavern with a friend, as Aubanus saith, *modo abstulit lascivia*, and suspect nothing, to kiss coming and going, which, as Erasmus writes in one of his epistles, they cannot endure. England is a paradise for women, and hell for horses: Italy a paradise for horses, hell for women, as the diverc goes. Some make a question whether this headstrong passion rage more in women than men, as Montaigne, 1. 3. But sure it is more outrageous in women, as all other melancholy is, by reason of the weakness of their sex. Scaliger, *Poet. lib. cap. 13.* concludes against women: "*Besides their inconstancy, treachery, suspicion, dissimulation, superstition, pride (for all women are by nature proud), desire of sovereignty, if they be great women (he gives instance in June), bitterness and jealousy are the most remarkable affections.*

---

6 Some say red-headed women, pale-coloured, black-eyed, and of a shrill voice, are most subject to jealousy.

---

*High colour in a woman choler shows,
Naught are they, peevish, proud, malicious;
But worst of all, red, shrill, and jealous.*

---

Comparisons are odious, I neither parallel them with others, nor debase them any more: men and women are both bad, and too subject to this pernicious infirmity. It is most part a symptom and cause of melancholy, as Plater and Valescus teach us: melancholy men are apt to be jealous, and jealous apt to be melancholy.

"Pale jealousy, child of insatiate love, Of heart-sick thoughts which melancholy bred, By discontent with deadly poison fed;"

"With heedless youth and error vainly led. A mortal plague, a virtue-drowning flood, A hellish fire not quenched but with blood."

If idleness concur with melancholy, such persons are most apt to be jealous; 'tis Nevisanus' note, "an idle woman is presumed to be lascivious, and often jealous." Mulier cum sola cogitat, male cogitat: and 'tis not unlikely, for they have no other business to trouble their heads with.

More particular causes be these which follow. Impotency first, when a man is not able of himself to perform those dues which he ought unto his wife: for though he be an honest liver, hurt no man, yet Trebius the lawyer may make a question, an suum cuique tribuat, whether he give every one their own; and therefore when he takes notice of his wants, and perceives her to be more craving, clamorous, insatiable and prone to lust than is fit, he begins presently to suspect, that wherein he is defective, she will satisfy herself, she will be pleased by some other means. Cornelius Gallus hath elegantly expressed this humour in an epigram to his Lychoris.

"Jamque alias juvenes allosque requirit amores, Me vocat imbibem deceptrumque semem," &c.

For this cause is most evident in old men, that are cold and dry by nature, and married suci plenis, to young wanton wives; with old doting Janivere in Chaucer, they begin to mistrust all is not well.

— She was young and he was old, And therefore he feared to be a cuckold.

And how should it otherwise he? old age is a disease of itself, loathsome, full of suspicion and fear; when it is at best, unable, unfit for such matters. k Tam apta nuptiis quam bruma messibus, as welcome to a young woman as snow in harvest, saith Nevisanus: Et si capis juveneculm, faciet tibi cornua: marry a lusty maid and she will surely graft horns on thy head. a All women are slippery, often unfaithful to their husbands (as Æneas Sylvius, epist. 38. seconds him), but to old men most treacherous: they had rather mortem amplexarum, lie with a corse than such a one: m Oderunt illum puere, contemnunt mulieres. On the other side many men, saith Hieronymus, are suspicious of their wives, nif they be lightly given, but old folks above the rest. Insomuch that she did not complain without a cause in Apuleius, of an old bald bedridden knave she had to her good man: "Poor woman as I am, what shall I do? I have an old grim sire to my husband, as bald as a coot, as little and as unable as a child," a bedful of bones, "he keeps all the doors barred and locked upon me, woe is me, what shall I do?" He was jealous, and she made him a cuckold for keeping her up: suspicion without a cause, hard usage is able of itself to make a woman fly out, that was otherwise honest,

—"Pleraque bonas tractatio pravas
Esse facit,"—

"had usage aggravates the matter." Nam quando mulieres cognoscunt maritim hoc advertere, licentiis peccant, n as Nevisanus holds, when a woman thinks her husband watcheth her, she will sooner offend, l Liberius peccant, et pudor

h J. Lib. 2. num. 8. mulier otiosa facile presmittur luxuriosa, et sexy sexotypa. i "And now she requires other youths and other loves, calls me an imbecile and decrripit old man." k J. Lib. 2. num. 4. l Quum omniis inisides feminis, enimibus inisidesi. m Mimusmerus. n Vix aliqua nos impedis, et quam non suspectam morito quis habet. o Luc. 5. de auri. asio. et Aeg hisera patre meo senilior maritum nacta sum, eundem cucurbita calviorem et quovis puerum pumillorum, et cunctam domum seris et catonis obdilum custodientem. p Chaloner. q L. Lib. 4. n. 40. r Qvid. 2. de art. amasti.
Causes of Jealousy.

omnis abst, rough handling makes them worse: as the goodwife of Bath in Chaucer brags,

In his own phrase I made him free
For anger and for very jealousy.

Of two extremes, this of hard usage is the worst. "Tis a great fault (for some men are uxorii) to be too fond of their wives, to dote on them as Senior Deliro on his Fallace, to be too effeminate, or as some do, to be sick for their wives, breed children for them, and like the Tiberini lie in for them, as some birds hatch eggs by turns, they do all women's offices: Cælius Rhodiginus, ant. lect. lib. 6. cap. 24. makes mention of a fellow out of Seneca, "that was so besotted on his wife, he could not endure a moment out of her company, he wore her scarf when he went abroad next his heart, and would never drink but in that cup she began first. We have many such fondlings that are their wives' pack-horses and slaves, (nam grave malum uxor superioris eivum suum, as the conical poet hath it, there's no greater misery to a man than to let his wife domineer) to carry her muff, dog, and fan, let her wear the breeches, lay out, spend, and do what she will, go and come whither, when she will, they give consent.

"Here, take my muff, and, do you hear, good man; Now give me pearl, and carry you my fan," &c. __________ X posell pallium, rediminula, inaures; Carre, quid hic quassas? vulgo vult illa vidori, Tu peta lecticea."

many brave and worthy men have trespassed in this kind, multos foras claros domestica haece destructae infamia, and many noble senators and soldiers (as Pliny notes) have lost their honour, in being uxorii, so sottishly overruled by their wives; and therefore Cato in Plutarch made a bitter jest on his fellow-citizens, the Romans, "we govern all the world abroad, and our wives at home rule us." These offend in one extreme; but too hard and too severe, are far more offensive on the other. As just a cause may be long absences of either party, when they must of necessity be much from home, as lawyers, physicians, mariners, by their professions; or otherwise make frivolous, impertinent journeys, tarry long abroad to no purpose, lie out, and are gadding still, upon small occasions, it must needs yield matter of suspicion, when they use their wives unkindly in the meantime, and never tarry at home, it cannot use but engender some such conceit.

"Ut eor si cessas amaro to cogitat
Ant eae amari, ant potare, ant animo obsequi,
Et tibi bene esse soli, quum sibi sit male.
"

If thou be absent long, thy wife then thinks,
Th' art drunk, at ease, or with some pretty minx,
"Tis well with thee, or else beloved of some.
Whilst she, poor soul, doth fare full ill at home." Hippocrates, the physician, had a smash of this disease; for when he was to go home as far as Abdera, and some other remote cities of Greece, he writ to his friend Dionysius (if at least those Epistles be his) "to oversee his wife in his absence (as Apollo set a raven to watch his Coronis), although she lived in his house with her father and mother, who he knew would have a care of her; yet that would not satisfy his jealousy, he would have his special friend Dionysius to dwell in his house with her all the time of his peregrination, and to observe her behaviour, how she carried herself in her husbands' absence, and that she did not lust after other men. "For a woman had need to have an overseer to keep her honest; they are bad by nature, and lightly given all, and if they be not curbed in time, as an unpruned tree, they will be full of wild branches, and degenerate of a sudden." Especially in their husband's absence: though one Lucretia were trusty, and one Penelope, yet Clytemnestra made Agamemnon cuckold; and no question there be too many of her conditions. If

---

1 Every Man out of his Humour. Calcgasinus, Apol. Tiberini ab uxorom partu earum vices subundt, utaves per vices inquant, &c.
2 Exiturus fida ex uxoris pectus alligabit, nec momento presentia ejus carere poterat, potamque non haudbat nisi praesumatibus labres ejus. Chaloner.
5 Dom quadro domum meum habitabas, et illet cum parentibus habebat ut mea peregrinatione; eam tamen et ejus mores observabat uni absentia viri sui probe deget, nec allis viros cogitat aut quartet.
6 Fennia semper custode oget qui se pudicum continent; supare enim natura negantias insitas habet, quasi nisi indies comprimit, ut arbore solutos eundum, &c.
their husbands tarry too long abroad upon unnecessary business, well they may suspect: or if they run one way, their wives at home will fly out another. *Quid pro quo.* 10 Or if present, and give them not that content which they ought, 11 *Primum ingrate, mox invisae noctes que per somnum transiguntur,* they cannot endure to lie alone, or to fast long. 12 *Peter Godfriedus,* in his second book of Love, and sixth chapter, hath a story out of St. Anthony's life, of a gentleman, who, by that good man's advice, would not meddle with his wife in the passion week, but for his pains she set a pair of horns on his head. Such another he hath out of Abstimens, one persuaded a new married man "to forbear the three first nights, and he should all his lifetime after be fortunate in cattle," but his impatient wife would not tarry so long: well he might speed in cattle, but not in children. Such a tale hath Heinsius of an impotent and slack scholar, a mere student, and a friend of his, that seeing by chance a fine damsels sing and dance, would needs marry her, the match was soon made, for he was young and rich, *gentis gratus, corpore glabellis, arte multisius, et fortunè apulentus,* like that Apollo in 13 *Apuleius.* The first night, having liberally taken his liquor (as in that country they do) my kind scholar wasso fuddled, that he no sooner was laid in bed, but he fell fast asleep, never waked till morning, and then much abashed, *purpureis formosa rosis cum Aurora ruberet,* when the fair morn with purple hue 'gan shine, he made an excuse, I know not what, out of Hippocrates Cous, &c, and for that time it went current: but when as afterward he did not play the man as he should do, she fell in league with a good fellow, and whilst he sat up late at his study about those criticisms, mending some hard places in Festus or Polliux, came cold to bed, and would tell her still what he had done, she did not much regard what he said, &c. 14 "She would have another matter mended much rather, which he did not conceive was corrupt:" thus he continued at his study late, she at her sport, *alibi enim festivæ noctes agitabat,* hating all scholars for his sake, till at length he began to suspect, and turned a little yellow, as well he might; for it was his own fault; and if men be jealous in such cases (as oft it falls out) the minds is in their own hands, they most thank themselves. Who will pity them, saith Neander, or be much offended with such wives, *si deceptæ prius viros decipient,* et cornutus reddant, if they deceive those that cozened them first. A lawyer's wife in 15 *Aristenetus,* because her husband was negligent in his business, *quando lecto danda opera,* threatened to corumte him: and did not stick to tell Philina, one of her gossip's, as much, and that aloud for him to hear: "If he follow other men's matters and leave his own, I'll have an orator shall plead my cause, I care not if he know it."

A fourth eminent cause of jealousy may be this, when he that is deformed, and as Pindarus of Vulcan, *sine gratius natus,* his rate, ragged, yet virtuously given, will marry some fair nice piece, or light housewife, begins to miscly (as well he may) she doth not affect him. 16 *Lis est cum formâ magna pudicité,* beauty and honesty have ever been at odds. Abraham was jealous of his wife because she was fair: so was Vulcan of his Venus, when he made her creaking shoes, saith 17 *Philostratus,* *ne maccharetur, sandalio silicet deferente,* that he might hear by them when she stirred, which *Mars indigné ferre,* was not well pleased with. Good cause had Vulcan to do as he did, for she was no

---

honester than she should be. Your fine faces have commonly this fault; and it is hard to find, saith Francis Philelphus in an epistle to Saxola his friend, a rich man honest, a proper woman not proud or unchaste. “Can she be fair and honest too?”

“Saepe ceterum oculuit picta sese hydra sob herbâ, Sub specie forme, incauto as sepè marito Nequam animus vendit,”

He that marries a wife that is snowy fair alone, let him look, saith P Barbarus, for no better success than Vulcan had with Venus, or Claudius with Messalina. And ’tis impossible almost in such cases the wife should contain, or the good man not be Jealous: for when he is so defective, weak, ill-proportioned, unpleasing in those parts which women most affect, and she most absolutely fair and able on the other side, if she be not very virtuously given, how can she love him? and although she be not fair, yet if he admire her and think her so, in his conceit she is absolute, he holds it impossible for any man living not to dote as he doth, to look on her and not lust, not to covet, and if he be in company with her, not to lay siege to her honesty: or else out of a deep apprehension of his infirmities, deformities, and other men’s good parts, out of his own little worth and desert, he distrusts himself, (for what is jealousy but distrust?) he suspects she cannot affect him, or be not so kind and loving as she should, she certainly loves some other man better than himself.

Nevissus, lib. 4. num. 72, will have barrenness to be a main cause of jealousy. If her husband cannot play the man, some other shall, they will leave no remedies unessay’d, and thereupon the good man grows jealous; I could give an instance, but be it as it is.

I find this reason given by some men, because they have been formerly naught themselves, they think they may be so served by others, they turned up trump before the cards were shuffled; they shall have therefore legem tulionis, like for like.

Mala mens, malus animus, as the saying is, ill dispositions cause ill suspicions.

“Qui non legem tulionis, quo posset lude subtulio pacto Custodes, cheu nonc promor arte mea.”

“Wretch as I was, I taught her bad to be, And now mine own sly tricks are put upon me.”

To these two above-named causes, or incendiaries of this rage, I may very well annex those circumstances of time, place, persons, by which it ebbs and flows, the fuel of this fury, as ‘Vives truly observes; and such like accidents or occasions, proceeding from the parties themselves, or others, which much aggrawate and intend this suspicious humour. For many men are so lasciviously given, either out of a deprived nature, or too much liberty, which they do assume unto themselves, by reason of their greatness, in that they are noble men (for licentia peccandi, et multitudo peccantium are great motives) though their own wives be never so fair, noble, virtuous, honest, wise, able, and well given, they must have change.

Quod licet, ingratum est, that which is ordinary, is unpleasant. Nero (saith Tactius) abhorred Octavia his own wife, a noble virtuous lady, and loved Acte, a base quean in respect. Cerinthus rejected Sulpitia, a nobleman’s daughter, and courted a poor servant maid. — tanta est aliena in messa coluptatis, for

Hor. epist. 15. “Often has the serpent lain hid beneath the coloured grass, under a beautiful aspect, and often has the evil inclination effected a sale without the husband’s privy.”

De re uxoria, lib. 1, cap. 5. Cum steriles sunt, ex mutazione viri se putant concipere. Tibullus, eleg. 6. Wither’s Sat. 12 de Anima. Crescit ac decrecit zoletypia cum personas, locis, temporibus, negotiis. Marullus, Tibullus, Epig.
that "stolen waters be more pleasant;" or as Vitellius the emperor was wont to say, *Jucundiores amores, qui cum periculo habentur*, like stolen venison, still the sweetest is that love which is most difficultly attained: they like better to hunt by stealth in another man's walk, than to have the fairest course that may be at game of their own.

> "Aspice ut coflo modi sol, modà luna ministret, \( \text{Sic etiam nobis una puella parum est.} \)"

Or that some fair object so forcibly moves them, they cannot contain themselves, be it heard or seen they will be at it. "Nessus, the centaur, was by agreement to carry Hercules and his wife over the river Euryn; no sooner had he set Dejanira on the other side, but he would have offered violence unto her, leaving Hercules to swim over as he could: and though her husband was a spectator, yet would he not desist till Hercules, with a poisoned arrow, shot him to death. "Neptune saw by chance that Thessalian Tyro, Euipinippus' wife, he forthwith, in the fury of his lust, counterfeited her husband's habit, and made him cuckold. Tarquin heard Collatine command his wife, and was so far enraged, that in the midst of the night to her he went. Thises stole Ariadne, et rapuit that Trazenian Anaxa, Antiope, and now being old, Helen, a girl not yet ready for a husband. Great men are most part thus affected all, "as a horse they neigh," saith Jeremiah, after their neighbours' wives,—*ut visà pullus adhínnit eëquà*: and if they be in company with other women, though in their own wives' presence, they must be courting and dallying with them. Juno in Lucian complains of Jupiter that he was still kissing Ganymede before her face, which did not a little offend her: and besides he was a counterfeit Amphitryo, a bull, a swan, a golden shower, and played many such bad pranks, too long, too shameful to relate.

Or that they care little for their own ladies, and fear no laws, they dare freely keep whores at their wives' noses. 'Tis too frequent with noblemen to be dishonest; *Pietas, probitas, fides, privata bona sunt*, as "he said long since, piety, chastity, and such like virtues are for private men: not to be much looked after in great courts: and which Suetonius of the good Prince of his time, they might be all engraved in one ring, we may truly hold of chaste potentates of our age. For great personages will familiarly run out in this kind, and yield occasion of offence. "Montaigne, in his Essays gives instance in Cæsar, Mahomet the Turk, that sacked Constantinople, and Ladislaus, king of Naples, that besieged Florence: great men, and great soldiers, are commonly great, &c., *probatum est*, they are good doers. Mars and Venus are equally balanced in their actions,

"Militis in gales nidum fecere columbus,\(^7\) Apparet Marti quam sit amica Venus.,\(^8\)

"A dove within a head-place made her nest, Twist Mars and Venus see an interest."\(^9\)

Especially if they be bald, for bald men have ever been suspicious (read more in Aristotle, *Sect. 4. prof. 19*), as Galba, Otho, Domitian, and remarkable Cæsar amongst the rest. "*Urbanis servaret uxores, macchum calvum adducimus*; besides, this bald Cæsar, thir Curio in Sueton, was *omnia multarum vir*; he made love to Eunoë, queen of Mauritania: to Cleopatra; to Posthumia, wife to Sergius Sulpitius; to Lollia, wife to Gabinius; to Tortulla, of Crassus; to Mutila, Pompey's wife, and I know not how many besides: and well he might, for, if all be true that I have read, he had a license to lie with whom he list. *Inter alios honores Cesari decretos* (as Sueton. *cap. 52, de Julio, and Dion, lib. 44. relate) *jus illi datum, cum quibusque feminis se jungendī*. Every private history will yield such variety of instances: otherwise good, wise, discreet men, virtuous and valiant, but too faulty in this. Priamus had fifty sons, but

---

\(^7\) Prov. ix. 17.  
\(^8\) Plutarch. *Cap. v. 8.*  
\(^{10}\) Lucian, tom. 4.  
\(^{11}\) Plutarch.  
\(^{12}\) Cap. v. 8.  
\(^{13}\) Lib. 2. cap. 23.  
\(^{14}\) Petronius, *Catal.*  
\(^{15}\) Sueton.
seventeen alone lawfully begotten. Philippus Bonus left fourteen bastards. Lorenzo de Medici, a good prince and a wise, but, saith Machiavel, prodigiously lascivious. None so valiant as Castruccius Castruccanus, but, as the said author hath it, none so incontinent as he was. And 'tis not only predominant in grandees this fault: but if you will take a great man's testimony, 'tis familiar with every base soldier in France (and elsewhere, I think). "This vice ("saith mine author) is so common with us in France, that he is of no account, a mere coward, not worthy the name of a soldier, that is not a notorious whoremaster." In Italy he is not a gentleman, that besides his wife hath not a courtezan and a mistress. 'Tis no miracle, then, if poor women in such cases be jealous, when they shall see themselves manifestly neglected, contemnèd, loathed, unkindly used: their disloyal husbands to entertain others in their rooms, and many times to court ladies to their faces: other men's wives to wear their jewels: how shall a poor woman in such a case moderate her passion?  "Quis tibi nunc Dido cernenti talia sensus?

How, on the other side, shall a poor man contain himself from this feral malady, when he shall see so manifest signs of his wife's inconstancy? when, as Milo's wife, she dotes upon every young man she sees, or, as Martial's Sota,—deserto sequitur Clitum marito, "deserts her husband and follows Clitus." Though her husband be proper and tall, fair and lovely to behold, able to give contentment to any one woman, yet she will taste of the forbidden fruit: Juvenal's Iberina to a hair, she is as well pleased with one eye as one man. If a young gallant come by chance into her presence, a fastidious brisk, that can wear his clothes well in fashion, with a lock, jingling spur, a feather; that can cringe, and withal compliment, court a gentlewoman, she raves upon him, "O what a lovely proper man he was," another Hector, an Alexander, a goodly man, a demi-god, how sweetly he carried himself, with how comely a grace, sic oculos, sic ille manus, sic ora ferebat, how neatly he did wear his clothes! "Quam sese ore ferens, quam forti pectore et armis, how bravely did he discourse, ride, sing, and dance, &c., and then she begins to loathe her husband, repugnans osculatur, to hate him and his filthy beard, his goatish complexion, as Doris said of Polyphemus, "totus qui saniem, totus ut hircus olet, he is a rammy fulsome fellow, a goblin-faced fellow, he smells, he stinks, Et capas simul alliumque ruetot"—si quando ad thalamum, &c., how like a dizzard, a fool, an ass, he looks, how like a clown he behaves himself! "she will not come near him by her own good will, but wholly rejects him, as Venus did her fuliginous Vulcan, at last, Nec Deus hunc mensa, Dea nec dignata cubili est." So did Lucretia, a lady of Rome, after she had but seen Euryalus, in Euridica tota ferebatur, dominum reversa, &c., she would not hold her eyes off him in his presence,—"tantum egregio decus entit et ore, and in his absence could think of none but him, odit virum, she loathed her husband forthwith, might not abide him:

"Et conjugalibus negligit tori, viro 
Presente, acerbo nauseat fastidio;"  
"All against the laws of matrimony,
She did abhor her husband's philometry;"

and sought all opportunity to see her sweetheart again. Now when the good man shall observe his wife so lightily given, "to be so free and familiar with every gallant, her immodesty and wantonness," (as Camerarius notes) it must needs yield matter of suspicion to him, when she still pranks up herself beyond

---

1 Pontius Henter, vita ejus. k Lib. 8. Flor. hist. Dux omnium optimus et sapientissimus, sed in re venerea prodigiosus. 2 Vita Castrucci. Idem uxoros maritis ab alienis. 3 Seculus, lib. 2 de Repub. Galorum. Ita nunc admodum obtinuit hoc vitium, ut nullius fore profli sit, et ignavus miles qui non in sorditatis maxima excclat, et adultero. 4 Virg. En. 4. "What now must have been Dido's sensations when she witnessed these doings?" 5 Epig. 9. lib. 4. 6 Virg. 4. Aen. "And belches out the smell of onions and garlic." 7 "Neither a god honoured him with his table, nor a goddess with her bed." 8 Enneas Sylvius. 9 "A goddess shines in his graceful features." 10 Virg. 4. Aen. S. Gracco Simonides. 11 Cont. 2. ca. 38. Oper. opera, sibi servius et familiaribus communicantes cum omnibus licentia et immodestia, sinistri seruorum et suspicionis maturam viro praebet.
her means and fortunes, makes impertinent journeys, unnecessary visitations, stays out so long, with such and such companions, so frequently goes to plays, masks, feasts, and all public meetings, shall use such immodest gestures, free speeches, and withal show some distaste of her own husband; how can he choose, "though he were another Socrates, but be suspicious, and instantly jealous?" "Socraticas tandem faciet transcendere metas;" more especially when he shall take notice of their more secret and sly tricks, which to corrupt their husbands they commonly use (dum ludis, ludos hac tu facit), they pretend love, honour, chastity, and seem to respect them before all men living, saints in show, so cunningly that they dissemble, they will not so much as look upon another man in his presence, so chaste, so religious, and so devote, they cannot endure the name or sight of a queen, a harlot, out upon her! and in their outward carriage are most loving and officious, will kiss their husband, and hang about his neck (dear husband, sweet husband), and with a composed countenance salute him, especially when he comes home; or if he go from home, weep, sigh, lament, and take upon them to be sick and swoon (like Jocundo's wife in "Ariosto, when her husband was to depart), and yet arrange, &c., they care not for him.

"Aye me, the thought (quoth she) makes me so 'traid, That scarce the breath abideth in my breast; Peace, my sweet love and wife, Jocundo said, And weeps as fast, and comforts her best, &c. All this might not assuage the woman's pain, Needs must I die before you come again, Nor how to keep my life I can devise, The doleful days and nights I shall sustain, From meet my mouth, from sleep will keep mine eyes, &c., That very night that went before the morrow, That he had pointed surely to depart, Jocundo's wife was sick, and swooned for sorrow Amid his arms, so heavy was her heart."

And yet for all these counterfeit tears and protestations, Jocundo coming back in all haste for a jewel he had forgot,

"His chaste and yoke-fellow he found Yodk'd with a knife, all honesty neglected, The adulterer sleeping very sound, Yet by his face was easily detected: A beggar's brut bred by him from his cradle, And now was riding on his master's saddle."

Thus can they cunningly counterfeit, as Platina describes their customs, "kiss their husbands, whom they had rather see hanging on a gallows, and swear they love him dearer than their own lives, whose soul they would not ransom for their little dog's;"

"similis si permutatio dutur, Morte viri cupiunt animam servare catella."

Many of them seem to be precise and holy forsooth, and will go to such a church, to hear such a good man by all means, an excellent man, when 'tis for no other intent (as he follows it) than "to see and to be seen, to observe what fashions are in use, to meet some pander, bawd, mouk, friar, or to entice some good fellow." For they persuade themselves, as Nevisanus shows, "That it is neither sin nor shame to lie with a lord or parish priest, if he be a proper man; and though she kneel often, and pray devoutly, 'tis (saith Platina) not for her husband's welfare, or children's good, or any friend, but for her sweetheart's return, her pander's health." If her husband would have her go, she feigns herself sick, "Et simulat subito condoluisse caput: her head aches, and she cannot stir; but if her paramour ask as much, she is for him in all seasons, at all hours of the night."

"In the kingdom of Malabar, and about Goa in the East Indies, the women are so subtle that, with a certain drink they give them to drive away cares as they say, "v they will make them

2 Voces liberae, occorum collegia, contractationes parum verecundas, motus immoedicis, &c. Heintzus.
3 Chaloner. "What is here said, is not prejudicial to honest women.
4 Lib. 28. sc. 12. d Dial. amor. Pendet fallax et bianda circa oscula mariti, quem in cruce, si fleri posset, desoes scripsi. illiusiam charitorem esse sus juregurando affirmat: quem certe non redimeret anima catelli si posset. 5 Addeut templum ut rem divinam audiant, ut ipsa simulat, sed vel ut monachum fratrem, vel ad litteram linguis, oculos, ad libidinem provocet. 6 Lib. 4. Num. 81. Ipsa sibi persuasent, quod adulterum cum principe vel cum presule, non est pater, nec pecus. 7 Deum rogat, non pro salute mariti, nisi, cognos sit uspiscit, sed pro reddir nonoichi si abeas, pro iudicibus lenonis si ageret. 8 Tibullus. 1 Hortens. 9 Arthaus. 10 Descrips. Indiae Orient. Linchofen. 11 Garcias ab Horto, hist. lib. 2. cap. 24. Datarn lum heram vocat et describit, tam procelles adiunt ad venerandos mulieres ut viros inibrent per 24 horas, liquore quodam, ut nihili videant, recordarunt, ut dormiant, et post lectiunem pelum, ad se restituent, &c.
sleep for twenty-four hours, or so intoxicate them that they can remember
ought of that they saw done, or heard, and, by washing of their feet, restore
them again, and so make their husbands cuckolds to their faces." Some are
ill-disposed at all times, to all persons they like, others more wary to some few,
at such and such seasons, as Augusta Livia, non nisi plenâ navicorem tollebat.
But as he said,

"[No pen could write, no tongue attain to tell,
By force of eloquence, or help of art,
Of women's treacheries the hundredth part."

Both, to say truth, are often faulty; men and women give just occasions in
this humour of discontent, aggravate and yield matter of suspicion: but most
part of the chief causes proceed from other adventitious accidents and cir-
cumstances, though the parties be free, and both well given themselves. The
indiscreet carriage of some lascivious gallant (et e contra of some light woman)
by his often frequenting of a house, bold unseemly gestures, may make a
breach, and by his over familiarity, if he be inclined to yellowness, colour him
quite out. If he be poor, basely born, saith Benedetto Varchi, and otherwise
unhandsome, he suspects him the less; but if a proper man, such as was
Alcibiades in Greece, and Castruccius Castrucanus in Italy, well descended,
commendable for his good parts, he taketh on the more, and watcheth his
doings. m Theodosius the emperor gave his wife Endoxia a golden apple when
he was a suitor to her, which she long after bestowed upon a young gallant in
the court, of her especial acquaintance. The emperor, espying this apple in
his hand, suspected forthwith, more than was, his wife's dishonesty, banished
him the court, and from that day following forbare to accompany her any more.
A rich merchant had a fair wife; according to his custom he went to travel;
in his absence a good fellow tempted his wife: she denied him; yet he, dying
a little after, gave her a legacy for the love he bore her. At his return, her
jealous husband, because she had got more by land than he had done at sea,
turned her away upon suspicion.

Now when those other circumstances of time and place, opportunity and
importunity shall concur, what will they not effect?

"Fair opportunity can win the corest she that is,
So wisely he takes time, as he'll be sure he will not miss:
Then he that loves her gamsome vein, and tempers toys with art,
Brings love that swimmeth in her eyes to dive into her heart."

As at plays, masks, great feasts and banquets, one single out his wife to dance,
another courts her in his presence, a third tempts her, a fourth insinuates with
a pleasing compliment, a sweet smile, ingratiates himself with an amphilo-
cological speech, as that merry companion in the "Satirist did to his Glycerium,
adsidens et intiorem palmand amabiliter consecutius,

"Quod meas hortus habet sumat impune licebit,
Si dederis nobis quod tuis hortus habet;"

with many such, &c., and then as he saith,

9 She may no while in chastity abide,
That is assid on every side.

For after a great feast,—* Vino sospit suum nescit amica virum. Noah (saith
Hierome) "shewed his nakedness in his drunkenness, which for six hundred
years he had covered in soberness." Lot lay with his daughters in his drink,
as Cyneras with Myrrha,—*quid enim Venus ebria curat? The most
continent may be overcome, or if otherwise they keep bad company, they that

1 Aristotle, lib. 23. st. 75.  m Lipsius Polit.  o Seneca, lib. 2. contrev. 8.  o Bodicher, Sat.
* "Siting close to her, and shaking her hand lovingly."
q Tibullus.  r "After wine the mistress is
often unable to distinguish her own lover." * Epist. 85. ad Oceanum: Ad unius horum erudietatem udat
femora, quae per sexectus annos sobrietate contexerat.
* Juvi. Sat. 18.
are modest of themselves, and dare not offend, "confirmed by others, grow impudent, and confident, and get an ill habit."

"Alia quasstus gratia matrimonium corrupit,
Alia peccans multas vult morbi habere socias."

Or if they dwell in suspected places, as in an infamous inn, near some stews, near monks, friars, Nevisanus adds, where be many tempters and solicitors, idle persons that frequent their companies, it may give just cause of suspicion. Martial of old inveighed against them that counterfeited a disease to go to the bath; for so many times,

— Philemon

Conjuge Penedoe venit, abit Helene.

Æneas Sylvius puts in a caveat against princes' courts, because there he tot formosi juvenes qui promittunt, so many brave suitors to tempt, &c. "If you leave her in such a place, you shall likely find her in company you like not, either they come to her, or she is gone to them." Kornmannus makes a deciding jest in his lascivious country, Virginiis illibata consequatur ne castitas ad quam frequenter accedant scholaræs? And Baldus the lawyer scoffs on, quem scholaris, inquit, loquitur cum puellâ, non presumitur ei dicere, Pater noster, when a scholar talks with a maid, or another man's wife in private, it is presumed he saith not a pater noster. Or if I shall see a monk or a friar climb up a ladder at midnight into a virgin's or widow's chamber window, I shall hardly think he then goes to administer the sacraments, or to take her confession. These are the ordinary causes of jealousy, which are intended or remitted as the circumstances vary.

MEMB. II.

SUBSEC. I.—Symptoms of Jealousy, Fear, Sorrow, Suspicion, strange Actions, Gestures, Outrages, Looking up, Oaths, Trials, Laws, &c.

Of all passions, as I have already proved, love is most violent, and of those bitter potions which this love-melancholy affords, this bastard jealousy is the greatest, as appears by those prodigious symptoms which it hath, and that it produceth. For besides fear and sorrow, which is common to all melancholy, anxiety of mind, suspicion, aggravation, restless thoughts, paleness, meagreness, neglect of business, and the like, these men are farther yet misaffected, and in a higher strain. 'Tis a more vehement passion, a more furious perturbation, a bitter pain, a fire, a pernicious curiosity, a gall corrupting the honey of our life, madness, vertigo, plague, hell, they are more than ordinarily disquieted, they lose bonum pacis, as Chrysostom observes; and though they be rich, keep sumptuous tables, be nobly allied, yet miserrimi omnium sunt, they are most miserable, they are more than ordinarily discontent, more sad, nihil tristissimum, more than ordinarily suspicious. Jealousy, saith Vives, "begats unquietness in the mind, night and day: he hunts after every word he hears, every whisper, and amplifies it to himself (as all melancholy men do in other matters) with a most unjust calumny of others, he misinterprets everything is said or done, most apt to mistake or misconstrue," he prises into every corner, follows close, observes to a hair. "Tis proper to jealousy so to do,

"Pale hag, infernal fury, pleasure's smart,
Eavy's observer, prying in every part."

Besides those strange gestures of staring, frowning, grinning, rolling of eyes, menacing, ghastly looks, broken pace, interrupt, precipitate, half-turns. He

* Nihil audient primo, post ab alius confirmatis, audaces et confidentes sunt. Ubi semel verecundia limitatis
  * Euripides, l. 63. "Love of gain induces one to break her marriage vow, a wish to have associates to keep her in countenance acts others." 2 De miser. Curialium. Ant alkum cum ea invenis,
  * 33 de Animis. Omnes voces, aurae, omnes suusus capitis zolotypos, et amplificat stupidum se cum iniqui-
  * sine de singularis calumnia. Maximus suspicio, et ad pupus credeaudum proculles.
will sometimes sigh, weep, sob for anger, *Nempe suas imbres etiam ista tonitura fundunt,*—swear and belie, slander any man, curse, threaten, brawl, scold, fight; and sometimes again flatter and speak fair; ask forgiveness, kiss and coll, condemn his rashness and folly, vow, protest, and swear he will never do so again; and then atsoons, impatient as he is, rave, roar, and lay about him like a madman, thump her sides, drag her about perchance, drive her out of doors, send her home, he will be divorced forthwith, she is a whore, &c., and by-and-by with all submission compliment, entreat her fair, and bring her in again, he loves her dearly, she is his sweet, most kind and loving wife, he will not change, nor leave her for a kingdom; so he continues off and on, as the toy takes him, the object moves him, but most part brawling, fretting, unquiet he is, accusing and suspecting not strangers only, but brothers and sisters, father and mother, nearest and dearest friends. He thinks with those Italians,

"Chi non tacea parent ado, Tocca mai e rado."

And through fear conceives unto himself things almost incredible and impossible to be effected. As a heron when she fishes, still prying on all sides; or as a cat doth a mouse, his eye is never off hers; he gloats on him, on her, accurately observing on whom she looks, who looks at her, what she saith, doth, at dinner, at supper, sitting, walking, at home, abroad, he is the same, still inquiring, mandring, gazing, listening, affrighted with every small object; why did she smile, why did she pity him, commend him? why did she drink twice to such a man? why did she offer to kiss, to dance? &c., a whore, a whore, an arrant whore. All this he confesseth in the poet,

"Omnia me terrent, timidus sum, ignoscce timori, Etuis in tunica suspicior esse virum, Me hostis si multa tibs dabit oscula mater, Me soror, et cam qua dormit amica simul."

"Each thing affrights me, I do fear, Ah pardon me my fear, I doubt a man is hid within The clothes that thou dost wear."

Is it not a man in woman's apparel? is not somebody in that great chest, or behind the door, or hangings, or in some of those barrels? may not a man steal in at the window with a ladder of ropes, or come down the chimney, have a false key, or get in when he is asleep? If a mouse do but stir, or the wind blow, a casement clatter, that's the villain, there he is: by his good-will no man shall see her, salute her, speak with her, she shall not go forth of his sight, so much as to do her needs. *Non ida bovem argus, &c.* Argus did not so keep his cow, that watchful dragon the golden fleece, or Cerberus the coming in of hell, as he keeps his wife. If a dear friend or near kinsman come as guest to his house, to visit him, he will never let him be out of his own sight and company, lest, peradventure, &c. If the necessity of his business be such that he must go from home, he doth either lock her up, or commit her with a deal of injunctions and protestations to some trusty friends, him and her he sets and bribes to oversee: one servant is set in his absence to watch another, and all to observe his wife, and yet all this will not serve, though his business be very urgent, he will when he is half way come back again in all post haste, rise from supper, or at midnight, and be gone, and sometimes leave his business undone, and as a stranger court his own wife in some disguised habit. Though there be no danger at all, no cause of suspicion, she live in such a place, where Messalina herself could not be dishonest if she would, yet he suspects her as much as if she were in a bawdy-house, some prince's court, or in a common inn, where all comers might have free access. He calls her on a sudden all to nought, she is a strumpet, a light housewife, a bitch, an arrant whore. No persuasion, no protestation can divert this passion, nothing can ease him, secure or give him satisfaction. It is most strange to report what outrageous acts by men and women have been committed in this kind, by

---


---
women especially, that will run after their husbands into all places and companies, as Jovianus Pontanus's wife did by him, follow him whithersoever he went, it matters not, or upon what business, raving like Juno in the tragedy miscalling, cursing, swearing, and mistrusting every one she sees. Comesin in his third book of the Life and Deeds of Francis Ximenius, sometime archbishop of Toledo, hath a strange story of that incredible jealousy of Joar queen of Spain, wife to king Philip, mother of Ferdinand and Charles the Fifth, emperors; when her husband Philip, either for that he was tired with his wife's jealousy, or had some great business, went into the Low Countries: she was so impatient and melancholy upon his departure, that she would scarce eat her meat, or converse with any man; and though she were with child, the season of the year very bad, the wind against her, in all haste she would to sea after him. Neither Isabella her queen mother, the archbishop, or any other friend could persuade her to the contrary, but she would after him. When she was now come into the Low Countries, and kindly entertained by her husband, she could not contain herself,"but in a rage ran upon a yellow-haired wench," with whom she suspected her husband to be naught, "cut off her hair, did beat her black and blue, and so dragged her about." It is an ordinary thing for women in such cases to scratch the faces, slit the noses of such as they suspect; as Henry the Second's importune Juno did by Rosamond at Woodstock: for she complains in a "modern poet, she scarce spake, 

"But flies with eager fury to my face,  
Offering me most unwomanly disgrace.  
Look how a tiger, &c."

"So fell she on me in outrageous wise,  
As could disdain and jealousy devise."  

Or if it be so they dare not or cannot execute any such tyrannical injustice, they will miscall, rail and revile, bear them deadly hate and malice, as Tacitus observes, "The hatred of a jealous woman is inseparable against such as she suspects."

"Nulla via flammea tumulique venti  
Tanta, nec telli metuenda torri,  
Quanta cum conjux viduata taulis  
Ardet et edit."

"Winds, weapons, flames make not such hurly-burly,  
As raving women turn all topsy-turvy."  

So did Agrippina by Lollia, and Calpurnia in the days of Claudius. But women are sufficiently curbed in such cases, the rage of men is more eminent, and frequently put in practice. See but with what rigour those jealous husbands tyrannise over their poor wives. In Greece, Spain, Italy, Turkey, Africa, Asia, and generally over all those hot countries, *Mulieres vestra terra vestra*, *arate sicut vulnis*, Mahomet in his Alcoran gives this power to men, your wives are as your land, till them, use them, entreat them fair or foul, as you will yourselves. *Mecator lege durâ vincit mulieres*, they lock them still in their houses, which are so many prisons to them, will suffer nobody to come at them, or their wives to be seen abroad,—*nec campos licent iustrare patentes*. They must not so much as look out. And if they be great persons, they have eunuchs to keep them, as the Grand Seignior among the Turks, the Sophies of Persia, those Tartarian Mogors, and Kings of China. *Infantes masculos castrant innumerous ut regi serviant*, saith *Riccius*, "they geld innumerable infants" to this purpose; the King of China "maintains 10,000 eunuchs in his family to keep his wives." The Xerixes of Barbary keep their courtezans in such a strict manner, that if any man come but in sight of them he dies for it; and if they chance to see a man, and do not instantly cry out, though from their windows, they must be put to death. The Turks have I know not how many black, deformed eunuchs (for the white serve

---

1 Ant. Dial. 2 Rablè concepta, cessare inter sebasit, pulchraque mirabiliter insulatis faciens vehementi sedevit  
2 Annal. Lib. 12. Principis mulieris zeletoque est in alius mulieres quas suspectas habet, odam  
3 Seneca in Med.  4 Alcoran cap. Bovis, interprete Riccardo prad. c. 8. Confutazioni  
5 Expedit. in Sua. b. 1. c. 3.  
6 Decem eunuchorum militia numerantur in regia familia, quod servat uxores ejus.
for other ministeries) to this purpose sent commonly from Egypt, deprived in their childhood of all their privities, and brought up in the seraglio at Constantinople to keep their wives; which are so penned up they may not confer with any living man, or converse with younger women, have a cucumber or carrot sent into them for their diet, but sliced, for fear, &c., and so live and are left alone to their unchaste thoughts all the days of their lives. The vulgar sort of women, if at any time they come abroad, which is very seldom, to visit one another, or go to their baths, are so covered, that no man can see them, as the matrons were in old Rome, lectica aut sella tecta vecte, so \(^{1}\) Dion and Seneca record, \(\text{Ve\}d\}a\}t\}e\}t\}o\}c\}a\} \i\}n\}c\}e\}d\})\)unt, which \(^{2}\) Alexander ab Alexandro relates of the Parthians, lib. 5. cap. 24. which, with Andreas Tiraquellus his commentator, I rather think should be understood of Persians. I have not yet said all, they do not only lock them up, sed et pudendas seras adhibent: hear what Bembo relates lib. 6. of his Venetian history, of those inhabitants that dwell about Quiloa in Africa. \(\text{Lus\}i\}t\}u\}i\}a\}, i\}n\}q\}u\}i\}t, quor\}u\}r\}u\}d\}a\}m\} \c\}i\}v\}i\}t\}a\}t\}e\}s\} \a\}d\})e\}r\})u\})t, \)qui natis statum femininum naturam consuant, quoad urinae exitus non impediebat, easque quum adoleverint sic consutas in matrimonium collocat, ut sponsi prima cura sit conglutinatos puellae oras ferro interscindere. In some parts of Greece at this day, like those old Jews, they will not believe their wives are honest, nisi pannum menstruum prima notae videant: our countryman \(^{3}\) Sands, in his peregrination, saith it is severely observed in Zazyntus, or Zante; and Leo Afer in his time at Fez, in Africa, non credunt virginem esse nisi videant sanguinem mappam; si non, ad parentes pudore rejicetur. Those sheets are publicly shown by their parents, and kept as a sign of incorrupt virginity. The Jews of old examined their maids ex tenue membrana, called Hymen, which Laurentius in his anatomy, Columbus, lib. 12. cap. 16. Capivaccius, lib. 4. cap. 11. de uteri affectibus, Vincent, Alsarius Genuensis, quœst. med. cont. 4. Hieronymus Mercurialis, consult. Ambros. Parens, Julius Caesar Claudius, \(\text{R}\)esp\(\)ons. 4. as that also de \(\)\(\)ruptura venarum ut sanguis fluent, copiously confute; \('\)tis no sufficient trial they contend. And yet others again defend it, Gaspar Bartholinus, \(\text{I}d\)em. \(\text{A}n\)n. \(\text{A}n\)t. lib. 1. cap. 31. Pinæus of Paris, Albertus Magnus de secret. mulier. cap. 9 & 10, &c., and think they speak too much in favour of women. \(^{4}\) Ludovicius Bonciulus, lib. 2. cap. 2. muliebr. naturalum ilium uteri labiorum constrictione, in quâ virginitatem consistere volunt, astrigenibus medicinis fieri possis vendicat, et si dylectro siue, astute "mulieres (inquit) nos fallunt in his. \(\text{I}d\)em. Alsarius Crucius Genuensis idem. feræ verbis. \(\text{I}d\)em. Avicenna, lib. 3. Fen. 20. \(\text{T}\)ract. 1. cap. 47. \(^{5}\) Rhasius, Contin. lib. 24. Rodericus à Castro, de nat. mul. lib. 1. cap. 3. An old bawdy nurse in \(\text{A}r\)istatænetus, (like that Spanish Celestina, \(^{6}\) quæ quinque miles virgines fit mulieres, totidemque mulieres atra sua virginis) when a fair maid of her acquaintance wept and made her moan to her, how she had been deflowered, and now ready to be married, was afraid it would be perceived, comfortably replied, Noli verei, filia, &c. "Fear not, daughter, I'll teach thee a trick to help it." Sed haec extra callem. To what end are all those astrological questions, an sit virgo, an sit casta, an sit mulier? and such strange absurd trials in Albertus Magnus, Bap. Porta, Mag. lib. 2. cap. 21. in Wecker. lib. 5. de secret. by stones, perfumes, to make them piss, and confess I know not what in their sleep; some jealous brain was the first founder of them. And to what passion may we ascribe those severe laws against jealousy, Num. v. 14. Adulterers, Deut. cap. xxii. v. 22. as amongst the Hebrews, amongst the Egyptians.

\(^{1}\) Lib. 57. ep. 81. \(^{2}\) Semonis à viris servand interiothibus, ab eorum conspecta immunes. \(^{3}\) Lib. 1. fol. 7. \(^{4}\) Diriputiones hymenius sepe fluunt & propriis digitis vel ab aliis instrumentis. \(^{5}\) Idem Rhasius Arab. cont. \(^{6}\) Ut classis pharmacet ut non posuissent sudum exercerente. \(^{7}\) Qui et pharmacem prescrivit docetque. \(^{8}\) Epl. 6. Merc. Inter. \(^{9}\) Barthiius. Lib. III. tenebræ radicibus flores mentitis machinæ pro incugro vendere. Ego docelo te quæ mulier ante nuptias sponsa to procès virginem.
(read "Bohemus, l. 1. c. 5. de mor. gen. of the Carthaginians, cap. 6. of Turks, lib. 2. cap. 11.) amongst the Athenians of old, Italians at this day, wherein they are to be severely punished, cut in pieces, burned, vivi-comburo, buried alive, with several expurgations, &c., are they not as so many symptoms of incredible jealousy? we may say the same of those vestal virgins that fetched water in a sieve, as Tatia did in Rome, anno ab urbe condita 800, before the senators; and a Ämilia, virgo innocens, that ran over hot irons, as Emma, Edward the Confessor's mother did, the king himself being a spectator, with the like. We read in Nicephorus, that Chuneugunda the wife of Henricus Bavarus emperor, suspected of adultery, insimulata adulterii per ignitos velsmere illaexa transit, trod upon red hot coalters, and had no harm; such another story we find in Regino, lib. 2. In Aventinus and Sigionius of Charles the Third and his wife Richarda, An. 887, that was so purged with hot irons, Pausaniae saith, that he was once an eye-witness of such a miracle at Diana's temple, a maid without any. harm at all walked upon burning coals. Pius Secund. in his description of Europe, c. 46. relates as much, that it was commonly practised at Diana's temple, for women to go barefoot over hot coals, to try their honestys: Plinius, Solinus, and many writers, make mention of c Geronia's temple, and Dionysius Halicarnassus, lib. 3. of Memnon's statue, which were used to this purpose. Tatius, lib. 6. of Pan his cave (much like old St. Wilfrid's needle in Yorkshire), wherein they did use to try maidis, d whether they were honest; when Lueicippae went in, suavisissimae exitudiri somus capit: Austin di civ. Dei, lib. 10. c. 16. relates many such examples, all which Lavater de spect. part. 1. cap. 19. contends to be done by the illusion of devils; though Thomas, quest. 6. de potentid, &c., ascribes it to good angels. Some, saith ¥ Austin, compel their wives to swear they be honest, as if perjury were a lesser sin than adultery; f some consult oracles, as Pharus that blind king of Egypt. Others reward, as those old Romans used to do; if a woman were contented with one man, Corona pudicitiae donabatur, she had a crown of chastity bestowed on her. When all this will not serve, saith Alexander Gagunius, cap. 5. descript. Muscovie, the Muscovites, if they suspect their wives, will beat them till they confess, and if that will not avail, like those wild Irish, be divorced at their pleasures, or else knock them on the heads, as the old G Gauls have done in former ages. Of this tyranny of jealousy read more in Parthenius, Erot. cap. 10. Camerarius, cap. 53. hor. subiis. et cent. 2. cap. 34. Cæsia's epistles, Tho. Chaloner de repub. Ang. lib. 9. Ariosto, lib. 31. stas. 1. Felix Platerus, obseruat. lib. 1. &c.

MEMB. III.

Prognostics of Jealousy, Despair, Madness, to make away themselves and others.

Those which are jealous, most part, if they be not otherwise relieved, "a proceed from suspicion to hatred, from hatred to frenzy, madness, injury, murder and despair."

"a A plague by whose most damnable effect, Divers in deep despair to die have sought, By which a man to madness near is brought, As well with causes as with just suspect." In their madness many times, saith k Vives, they make away themselves and others. Which induceth Cyprian to call it, Pecundam et multiplicem perniciem, fontem elidium et seminariam delictorum, a fruitful mischief, the seminal of

---

a Oct multorum viræ set, virilia exsecrabat, et mille virgases dabant. b Dign. Halic. c Virili gaudens Feronia inv. Virg. d Jussurne was so tried by Diana's well, in which maidis did swim, unchaste were drowned. Eustathius, lib. 8. e Contra mendac. ad confess. 21 cap. f Pharus, Egypti rex, captus ocularis per decemnum, ovacionem condulit de mortis prædicta. Hero. Euterp. g Caesar, lib. 6. bello Gall. h Visce exclam in axores habuerunt potestatem. Acak. comment. in par. art. Galeni. i Ariosto, lib. 31. stas. 6. k Ab anima, c. 3. de zelo, p. transit in rabem et odium, et sibi et aliis violentias sæpe manus iacient.
Symptoms of Jealousy.

offences, and fountain of murders. Tragical examples are too common in this kind, both new and old, in all ages, as of 1 Cephalus and Procris. 2 Phoerus of Egypt, Tereus, Atreus, and Thyestes. 3 Alexander Phæreus was murdered of his wife, ob pellucidus suspitionem, Tully saith. Antonius Verus was so made away by Lucilla; Demetrius the son of Antigonus, and Nicamor, by their wives. Hercules poisoned by Dejanira, 4 Cecina murdered by Vespasian, Justinia, a Roman lady, by her husband. 5 Amestrís, Xerxes' wife, because she found her husband's cloak in Masista's house, cut off Masista, his wife's paps, and gave them to the dogs, bayed her besides, and cut off her ears, lips, tongue, and slit the nose of Artaynta her daughter. Our late writers are full of such outrages.

4 Paulus Amilius, in his history of France, hath a tragical story of Chilpericus the First his death, made away by Ferdegunde his queen. In a jealous humour he came from hunting, and stole behind his wife, as she was dressing and combing her head in the sun, gave her a familiar touch with his wand, which she mistaking for her lover, said, "Ah Landre, a good knight should strike before and not behind:"

Just as he, just so, she instantly took order to make him away. Hieroue Oserius, in his eleventh book of the deeds of Emanuel King of Portugal, to this effect hath a tragical narration of one Ferdinandus Chalderia, that wounded Gotheninus, a noble countryman of his, at Goa in the East Indies, 6 and cut off one of his legs, for that he looked as he thought too familiarly upon his wife, which was afterwards a cause of many quarrels, and much bloodshed." Guianerius cap. 36. de agritutud. matr. speaks of a silly jealous fellow, that seeing his child new-born included in a cauld, thought sure a Franciscan that used to come to his house, was the father of it, it was so like the fcaul's cowl, and thereupon threatened the friar to kill him: Fulgosus of a woman in Narbonne, that cut off her husband's privities in the night, because she thought he played false with her. The story of Jouues Bassa, and fair Manto his wife, is well known to such as have read the Turkish history; and that of Joan of Spain, of which I treated in my former section. Her jealousy, saith Gomesius, was the cause of both their deaths: King Philip died for grief a little after, as Martin his physician gave it out, "and she for her part after a melancholy discontented life, misspent in lurking holes and corners, made an end of her miseries." Pælius Plater, in the first book of his observations, hath many such instances, of a physician of his acquaintance, "that was first mad through jealousy, and afterwards desperate: of a merchant 8 that killed his wife in the same humour, and after precipitated himself:" of a doctor of law that cut off his man's nose: of a painter's wife in Basili, anno 1600, that was mother of nine children and had been twenty-seven years married, yet afterwards jealous, and so impatient that she became desperate, and would neither eat nor drink in her own house, for fear her husband should poison her. "Tis a common sign this; for when once the humours are stirred, and the imagination misaffected, it will vary itself in divers forms; and many such absurd symptoms will accompany, even madness itself. Skenkius, observat. lib. 4. cap.

1 Hyginus, cap. 180. Ovid, &c. 2 Phoerus, Egypt rex, de cerulce orceulum consiliem, viam ei redditum accept, si cœlos absubiet doto malum usque ad omnem virtutem eæptum, meius utrumque expertus nihil prout et alium tristia, non omnes (ea excepta quum curatus fuit) umnum in locum consecutus multum, sed puerus. Herod. Euterp. 3 offic. lib. 2. 4 Aurelius Victor. 5 Herod. lib. 9. in Collinque. Missam 4 uxor eexuocatet, manillas praestendit, caæque cinibus aligat, filiae naves praestendit, laura, ingem, &c. 6 Lib. 1. Dum formae curandae ante natam in sole percuti, a mariro per insan litter percussa furit ipsum comit, superavit eæptus virg, nata subito, ad Landric eëxil, frontem viros petet, &c. Martio co. specto attinentia, cum Landrici max in ejus mortem conspexit, et statim inter venandum effect. 7 Qui Guox uxor habens, Gottorim princæm quædam virum quod uxor suo eæulos aæendant, inganni valentia e deformavit in facie, et tubiam abscedit, unde numeros cæscendit. 8 Ego quod infans natus insector eæptus, credidit eum filium fratris franciscæ, &c. 9 Zelotypia reginae regis mortem acceleravit paulo post, ut Martinius neckens nihil retulit. Illa autem uxor aliud unde exsagatia in lateræs se saevoques praestantibus animi rei, ut in tam pura consumpsit. 10 A Zelotypia redactus ad inamantium et desperandum. 11 Uxor internuntius, unde desperandum ex alto se praecipuit.
de Uter, hath an example of a jealous woman that by this means had many fits of the mother: and in his first book of some that through jealousy ran mad: of a baker that gelded himself to try his wife's honesty, &c. Such examples are too common.

MEMB. IV.

SUBSECT. I.—Cure of Jealousy; by avoiding occasions, not to be idle: of good counsel; to contain it, not to watch or lock them up: to dissemble it, &c.

As of all other melancholy, some doubt whether this malady may be cured or no, they think 'tis like the y'gout, or Switzers, whom we commonly call Walloons, those hired soldiers, if once they take possession of a castle, they can never be got out.

"Qua timet ut sua sit, ne quis sibi subtrahat illam; ille Machaonia vix ope salvus erit." "This is the cruel wound against whose smart, No liquor's force prevails, or any salter, No skill of stars, no depth of magic art, Devised by that great clerk Zoroaster, A wound that so infects the soul and heart, As all our sense and reason doth master: A wound whose pang and torment is so durable, As it may rightly call'd be incurable."

Yet what I have formerly said of other melancholy, I will say again, it may be cured or mitigated at least by some contrary passion, good counsel and persuasion, if it be withstood in the beginning, maturely resisted, and as those ancients hold, "the nails of it be pared before they grow too long." No better means to resist or repel it than by avoiding idleness, to be still seriously busied about some matters of importance, to drive out those vain fears, foolish fancies and irksome suspicious out of his head, and then to be persuaded by his judicious friends, to give ear to their good counsel and advice, and wisely to consider, how much he discrédites himself, his friends, dishonours his children, disgraceth his family, publisheth his shame, and as a trumpeter of his own misery, divulgeth, macerates, grieves himself and others: what an argument of weakness it is, how absurd a thing in its own nature, how ridiculous, how brutish a passion, how sottish, how odious; for as Hierome well hath it, Odium sui facti, et ipse novissimè sibi odio est, others hate him, and at last he hates himself for it; how harebrain a disease, mad and furious. If he will but hear them speak, no doubt he may be cured. "Joan, queen of Spain, of whom I have formerly spoken, under pretence of changing air was sent to Complutum, or Alcada de las Heneres, where Ximenius, the archbishop of Toledo then lived, that by his good counsel (as for the present she was) she might be eased. "For a disease of the soul, if concealed, tortures and overturns it, and by no physic can sooner be removed than by a discreet man's comfortable speeches." I will not here insert any consolatory sentences to this purpose, or forestall any man's invention, but leave it every one to dilate and amplify as he shall think fit in his own judgment: let him advise with Siracides, cap. 9. 1.

"Be not jealous over the wife of thy bosom," read that comfortable and pithy speech to this purpose of Ximenius, in the author himself, as it is recorded by Gomesius; consult with Chaloner, lib. 9. de repub. Anglor. or Celia in her epistles, &c. Only this I will add, that if it be considered aright, which causeth this jealous passion, be it just or unjust, whether with or without cause, true or false, it ought not so heinously to be taken; 'tis no such real or capital matter, that it should make so deep a wound. 'Tis a blow that hurts not, an insensible smart, grounded many times upon false suspicion alone, and so fostered by a sinister conceit. If she be not dishonest, he troubles and

[Part. 3. Sec. 3.]

\[\text{Footnotes:}
\begin{itemize}
\item[1] From Homer, to the wise, the evil, and to the fair woman. (Deus fames, habet animam esse medicae podagriam.)
\item[2] From Aristot., lib. 31. stat. (Gommaeae. mature suadent unques amoris esse reddendas, priscisquam producent se nimirum.)
\item[3] From Thucyd., lib. 3. de interp. gesatis Ximeni.
\item[4] From Cervantes, lib. 9. de repub. gentis Ximeni.
\item[5] From Cervantes, lib. 9. de repub. gentis Ximeni.
\item[6] From Cervantes, lib. 9. de repub. gentis Ximeni.
\item[7] From Cervantes, lib. 9. de repub. gentis Ximeni.
\item[8] From Cervantes, lib. 9. de repub. gentis Ximeni.
\item[9] From Cervantes, lib. 9. de repub. gentis Ximeni.
\end{itemize}
macerates himself without a cause; or put else which is the worst, he be a cuckold, it cannot be helped, the more he stirs in it, the more he aggravates his own misery. How much better were it in such a case to dissemble or content it? why should that be feared which cannot be redressed? multae tandem de-poserunt (saith Vives) quum flecti maritos non possis videlicet, many women, when they see there is no remedy, have been pacified; and shall men be more jealous than women? Tis some comfort in such a case to have companions, Solamen miseris socios habuisse doloris; Who can say he is free? Who can assure himself he is not one de pretendo, or secure himself de futuro? If it were his case alone, it is hard; but being as it is almost a common calamity, 'tis not so grievously to be taken. If a man have a lock, which every man's key will open, as well as his own, why should he think to keep it private to himself? In some countries they make nothing of it, ne nobilis quidem, saith Leo Afer, in many parts of Africa (if she be past fourteen) there's not a nobleman that marries a maid, or that hath a chaste wife; 'tis so common; as the moon gives horns once a month to the world, do they to their husbands at least. And 'tis most part true which that Caledonian lady, Argetocovus, a British prince's wife, told Julia Augusta, when she took her up for dishonesty, "We Britons are taught at least with some few choice men of the better sort, but you Romans lie with every base knave, you are a company of common whores." Severus the emperor in his time made laws for the restraint of this vice; and as Dion Nicaeus relates in his life, tria militia maechorum, three thousand cuckold-makers, or nature monetam adulterantes, as Philo calls them, false coiners, and chippers of nature's money, were summoned into the court at once. And yet, Non omnem molitor qua flatit undan vident, "the miller sees not all the water that goes by his mill," no doubt, but, as in our days, these were of the commonalty, all the great ones were not so much as called in question for it. 1 Martial's Epigram I suppose might have been generally applied in those licentious times, Omnia sotus habes, &c., thy goods, lands, money, wits, are thine own, Ceorem sed habes, Candido, cum populo; but neighbour Caudidus your wife is common: husband and cuckold in that age seems were reciprocal terms; the emperors themselves did wear Actaeon's badge; how many Cæsars might I reckon up together, and what a catalogue of crowned kings and princes in every story? Agamemnon, Menelaus, Phillipus of Greece, Ptolomeus of Egypt, Lucullus, Caesar, Pompeius, Cato, Augustus, Antonius, Antoninus, &c., that wore fair plumes of bull's feathers in their crests. The bravest soldiers and most heroic spirits could not avoid it. They have been active and passive in this business, they have either given or taken horns. 2 King Arthur, whom we call one of the nine worthies, for all his great valour, was unworthily served by Mordred, one of his round-table knights: and Guithera, or Helena Alba, his fair wife, as Leland interprets it, was an arrant honest woman. Parcerem liberet (saith mine author) Heroinuram lesee majestati, si non historice veritas aurem vellicaret, I could willingly wink at a fair lady's faults, but that I am bound by the laws of history to tell the truth: against his will, God knows, did he write it, and so do I repeat it. I speak not of our times all this while, we have good, honest, virtuous men and women, whom fame, zeal, fear of God, religion and superstition contains: and yet for all that, we have many knights of this order, so dubbed by their wives, many good women abused by dissolve husbands. In some places, and such persons you may as soon enjoin them to carry water in a sieve, as to keep themselves

---

13 De anima. 1 Lib. 3. 6 Argetocovx, Caledonii reguli uxor, Julia Augusta cum ipse morderet quod inhoneste versaretur, respondet, nos cum optimis viris constituendum habemus, vos Romanas autem occulte passim homines constuprantes. 1 Leges de macchia ficta, ex civibus notis in jux voci. 1 L. 3 Epoc. 24. 1 Asser. Arthurii; parcerem liberet heroïnuram lese majestati, si non historice veritas aurem vellicaret, Leland. 1 Leland's assert. Arthurii.
honest. What shall a man do now in such a case? What remedy is to be had? how shall he be eased? By suing a divorce? this is hard to be effected:

si non castē, tamen caude, they carry the matter so cunningly, that though it be as common as simony, as clear and as manifest as the nose in a man's face, yet it cannot be evidently proved, or they likely taken in the fact: they will have a knave Gallus to watch, or with that Roman "Sulpitia, all made fast and sure,"

"Ne se Cuduris destinatum facis, Nadum Calico concumbentem vides."”

"she will hardly be surprised by her husband, be he never so wary." Much better then to put it up: the more he strives in it, the more he shall divulge his own shame: make a virtue of necessity, and conceal it. Yea, but the world takes notice of it, 'tis in every man's mouth: let them talk their pleasure, of whom speak they not in this sense? From the highest to the lowest they are thus censured all: there is no remedy then but patience. It may be 'tis his own fault, and he hath no reason to complain, 'tis quid pro quo, she is bad, he is worse: "Bethink thyself, hast thou not done as much for some of thy neighbours? why dost thou require that of thy wife, which thou wilt not perform thyself? Thou rangest like a town bull," why art thou so incensed if she tread awry?"

"Be it that some woman break chaste wedlock's | She feels that he his love from her withdraws,  |
      laws, | And hath on some purse, a less worthy placed, |
      And leaves her husband and becomes unchaste: | Who strike with sword, the scabbard them may |
      Yet commonly it is not without cause, | strike, |
      She sees her man in sin her goods to waste, | And sure love crazeth love, like askef like."

Ea semper studibus, saith Nevisanus, pares reddere vices, she will quit it if she can. And therefore, as well advieth Siracides, cap. ix. 1. “teach her not an evil lesson against thyself,” which as Jansenius, Lyranus, on his text, and Carthusianus interpret, is no otherwise to be understood than that she do thee not a mischiefs. I do not excuse her in accusing thee; but if both be nought, mend thyself first; for as the old saying is, a good husband makes a good wife.

Yea but thou repliest. 'tis not the like reason betwixt man and woman, through her fault my children are bastards, I may not endure it; "Sit amar- | "Sit imperiosa, prodiga, &c. Let her scold, brawl, and spend, I care not, |
lenta, sit imperiosa, prodiga, &c. Let her scold, brawl, and spend, I care not, |
modō sit casta, so she be honest, I could easily bear it; but this I cannot, I | but the diverb is, Non potitur tactum fama, fides, oculus. I say the same of my |
may not, I will not; "my faith, my fame, mine eye must not be touched," as | wife, touch all, use all, take all but this. I acknowledge that of Seneca to |
the diverb is, Non potitur tactum fama, fides, oculus. I say the same of my | be true, Nallius boni iucunda possessio sine socio, there is no sweet content |
wife, touch all, use all, take all but this. I acknowledge that of Seneca to | in the possession of any good thing without a companion, this only excepted, I say |
be true, Nallius boni iucunda possessio sine socio, there is no sweet content |
in the possession of any good thing without a companion, this only excepted, I say |
This. And why this? Even this which thou so much abhorrest, it may be for | This. And why this? Even this which thou so much abhorrest, it may be for |
thy progeny's good, "better be any man's son than thine, to be begot of base | thy progeny's good, "better be any man's son than thine, to be begot of base |
Irús, poor Seitus, or mean Mevis, the town swinechord's, a shepherd's son: | Irús, poor Seitus, or mean Mevis, the town swinechord's, a shepherd's son: |
and well is he, that like Hercules he hath any two fathers; for thou thyself | and well is he, that like Hercules he hath any two fathers; for thou thyself |
hast peradventure more diseases than a horse, more infirmities of body and | hast peradventure more diseases than a horse, more infirmities of body and |
mind, a cankered soul, crabbed conditions, make the worst of it, as it is | mind, a cankered soul, crabbed conditions, make the worst of it, as it is |
bulbus insinuabile, sic vulnus insensibile, as it is incurable, so it is insensible. | bulbus insinuabile, sic vulnus insensibile, as it is incurable, so it is insensible. |
But art thou sure it is so? "res agit ille tuas? " doth he so indeed? It may | But art thou sure it is so? "res agit ille tuas? " doth he so indeed? It may |
be thou art over-suspicious, and without a cause as some are: if it be octimes- | be thou art over-suspicious, and without a cause as some are: if it be octimes- |
tris partus, born at eight months, or like him, and him, they fondly suspect he | tris partus, born at eight months, or like him, and him, they fondly suspect he |
got it; if she speak or laugh familiarly with such or such men, then presently | got it; if she speak or laugh familiarly with such or such men, then presently |
she is nought with them; such is thy weakness: whereas charity, or a well- | she is nought with them; such is thy weakness: whereas charity, or a well- |
disposed mind, would interpret all unto the best. St. Francis, by chance seeing | disposed mind, would interpret all unto the best. St. Francis, by chance seeing
a friar familiarly kissing another man's wife, was so far from misconceiving it, that he presently knelt down and thanked God there was so much charity left: but they on the other side will ascribe nothing to natural causes, indulge nothing to familiarity, mutual society, friendship; but out of a sinister suspicion, presently lock them close, watch them, thinking by those means to prevent all such inconveniences, that's the way to help it; whereas by such tricks they do aggravate the mischief. "Tis but in vain to watch that which will away.

Hierome holds, *Uxor impudica servari non potest, pudica non debet, infida custos castitatis est necessitas*, to what end is all your custody? A dishonest woman cannot be kept, an honest woman ought not to be kept, necessity is a keeper not to be trusted. *Difficile custoditur, quod plurès amant*; that which many covet, can hardly be preserved, as *Salisburiensis thinks. I am of Aeneas Sylvius' mind, *"Those jealous Italians do very ill to lock up their wives; for women are of such a disposition, they will most covet that which is denied most, and offend least when they have free liberty to trespass." It is in vain to lock her up if she be dishonest; *et tyrannicum imperium*, as our great Mr. Aristotle calls it, too tyrannical a task, most unfit: for when she perceives her husband observes her and suspects, *liberius peccat*, saith *Nevisamus*, *Toxica Zelotypo dedit uxor macha marito*, she is exasperated. Zeeks by all means to vindicate herself, and will therefore offend, because she is unjustly suspected. The best course then is to let them have their own wills, give them free liberty, without any keeping.

If she be honest as Lucretia to Collatinus, Laodamia to Protesilaus, Penelope to her Ulysses, she will so continue her honor, good name, credit, *Penelope conjux semper Ulyssis eva*; "I shall always be Penelope the wife of Ulysses." And as Phoeas' wife, in *Plutarch*, called her husband "her wealth, treasure, world, joy, delight, orb and sphere," she will hers. The vow she made unto her good man; love, virtue, religion, zeal, are better keepers than all those locks, eunuchs, prisons; she will not be moved:

Turn her loose to all those Tarquins and Satyrs, she will not be tempted. In the time of Valence the Emperor, saith *St. Austin*, one Archidamus, a Consul of Autich, offered a hundred pounds of gold to a fair young wife, and besides to set her husband free, who was then *sub gravissimâ custodìâ*, a dark prisoner, *pro uniûs noctis concubitu*: but the chaste matron would not accept of it.

---

8 Ovid, *amor*, lib. 3. eleg. 4. 9 Lib. 4. et 72. 10 Pollicrat. lib. 8. c. 11. 11 De amor. 12 Etrus. et Lucret. qui uxores ocelantur, non judicio minus utilitâ factunt: sunt enim se ingenio mulieres ut id potissimum cumpiant, quod maxima delectatur; si liberas habent habenas, minus deliquunt; frustra seram solvibe, si non sit spocis costa. 13 Quando cognoscant maritos hoc advogare. 14 Anonimus. 15 Opus satis, unanimous sumum, thesaurum sumum, &c. 16 D. Virg. Æn. 17 Daniel. 18 de serm. & in monte res. 19.
When Ode commended Theana's fine arm to his fellows, she took him up short, "Sir, 'tis not common:" she is wholly reserved to her husband. \(^6\) Bilia had an old man to her spouse, and his breath stunk, so that nobody could abide it abroad; "coming home one day he reprehended his wife, because she did not tell him of it: she vowed unto him, she had told him, but she thought every man's breath had been as strong as his." \(^1\) Tigranes and Armenia her lady were invited to supper by King Cyrus: when they came home, Tigranes asked his wife, how she liked Cyrus, and what she did especially commend in him? "she swore she did not observe him; when he replied again, what then she did observe, whom she looked on? She made answer, her husband, that said he would die for her sake." Such are the properties and conditions of good women: and if she be well given, she will so carry herself; if otherwise she be naught, use all the means thou canst, she will be naught. \(^3\) Non desest animus sed corruptor; she hath so many lies, excuses, as a hare hath muses, tricks, panders, bawds, shifts, to deceive, 'tis to no purpose to keep her up, or to reclaim her by hard usage. "Fair means peradventure may do somewhat." \(^2\) Obsequio vincere aptius ipsetuo. Men and women are both in a predicament in this behalf, so sooner won, and better pacified. \(^4\) Ducii volunt, non cogi: though she be as arrant a scold as Xantippe, as cruel as Medea, as clamorous as Hecuba, as lustful as Messalina, by such means (if at all) she may be reformed. Many patient \(^5\) Grizels, by their obsquousness in this kind, have reclaimed their husbands from their wandering lusts. In Nova Francia and Turkey (as Leah, Rachel, and Sarah did to Abraham and Jacob) they bring their fairest damsel to their husbands' beds; Livia seconded the lustful appetites of Augustus: Stratonice, wife to King Diotarus, did not only bring Electra, a fair maid, to her good man's bed, but brought up the children begot on her, as carefully as if they had been her own. Tertius Emilius' wife, Cornelia's mother, perceiving her husband's intemperance, rem dissimulant, made much of the maid, and would take no notice of it. A new-married man, when a pickthank friend of his, to curry favour, had showed him his wife, familiar in private with a young gallant, courting and dallying, &c. Tush, said he, let him do his worst, I dare trust my wife, though I dare not trust him. The best remedy then is by fair means; if that will not take place, to dissemble it as I say, or turn it off with a jest: hear Guexerrum's advice in this case vel joco excipies, vel silentio eludes; for if you take exceptions at every thing your wife doth, Solomon's wisdom, Hercules' valour, Homer's learning, Socrates' patience, Argus' vigilance, will not serve turn. Therefore Minus malum, \(^6\) a less mischief, Nevisanum holds, dissipare, to be Cunorum emptor, a buyer of cradles, as the proverb is, than to be too solicitous. "A good fellow, when his wife was brought to bed before her time, bought half a dozen of cradles beforehand for so many children, as if his wife should continue to bear children every two months." \(^7\) Pertinax the Emperor, when one told him a fiddler was too familiar with his empress, made no reckoning of it. And when that Macedonian Philip was upbraided with his wife's dishonesty, cum tot victor regnorum ac populum esse, &c., a conqueror of kingdoms could not tame his wife (for she thrust him out of doors), he made a jest of it. Sapiences portant cornua in pector, studii in frontes, saith Nevisanus, wise men keep their horns in their hearts, fools on their foreheads. Eumenes, king of Pergamus, was at deadly feud with Persicus of Macedonia, insomuch that

\(^{\text{a}}\) Quam fameus fecerunt hic! quedam inquit, ad ascales conversae; at illa, publicius, inquit, non est. \(^{\text{b}}\) Bilia Diniusur virum semen habuit et spiritedum fortitud habentem, quem quem quidam exprographet. \(^{\text{i}}\) Numquid tibi, Armenia, Tigranes videbatur esse pulcher? et illum, inquit, melepidem, ducti. \(^{\text{b}}\) Evrid. \(^{\text{d}}\) Read Petrarch's Tale of Patient Grizzel in Chaucer. \(^{\text{m}}\) Silv. nupt. lib. 4. num. 82. \(^{\text{n}}\) Erasmus. \(^{\text{p}}\) Quam acceptus uxor omnium eorum secundo a mundis mense, suas quamis vel semas coeunt, ut si forte inox singulis dimensibus pararet. \(^{\text{p}}\) Julius Capitol. vila ejus: quam palam Citharesus uxorum diligeret, minime curiosus fuit.
Cure of Jealousy.

Perseus hearing of a journey he was to take to Delphos, set a company of soldiers to intercept him in his passage; they did it accordingly, and as they supposed left him stoned to death. The news of this fact was brought instantly to Pergamus; Attalus, Eumenes' brother, proclaimed himself king forthwith, took possession of the crown, and married Stratonice the queen. But by-and-by, when contrary news was brought, that King Eumenes was alive, and now coming to the city, he laid by his crown, left his wife, as a private man went to meet him, and congratulate his return. Eumenes, though he knew all particulars passed, yet disembarking the matter, kindly embraced his brother, and took his wife into his favour again, as if no such matter had been heard of or done. Jocundo, in Ariosto, found his wife in bed with a knife, both asleep, went his ways, and would not so much as wake them, much less reprove them for it. An honest fellow finding in like sort his wife had played false at tables, and borne a man too many, drew his dagger, and swore if he had not been his very friend, he would have killed him. Another hearing one had done that for him, which no man desires to be done by a deputy, followed in a rage with his sword drawn, and having overtaken him, laid adultery to his charge; the offender hotly pursued, confessed it was true; with which confession he was satisfied, and so left him, swearing that if he had denied it, he would not have put it up. How much better is it to do thus, than to macerate himself, impatiently to rave and rage, to enter an action (as Arnoldus Tilius did in the court of Toulouse, against Martin Guerre, his fellow-soldier, for that he counterfeited his habit, and was too familiar with his wife), so to divulge his own shame, and to remain for ever a cuckold on record? how much better be Cornelius Tacitus than Publius Cornelius, to condemn in such cases, or take no notice of it? *Melius sic errare quam Zelotypiae curis, saith Erasmus, se conferere, better be a wittol and put it up, than to trouble himself to no purpose. And though he will not omnibus dormire, be an ass, as he is an ox, yet to wink at it as many do is not amis at some times, in some cases, to some parties, if it be for his commodity, or some great man's sake, his landlord, patron, benefactor, (as Calbas the Roman saith) *Plutarch did by Macenas, and Phyllus of Argos did by King Philip, when he promised him an office on that condition he might lie with his wife) and so let it pass:

"t tel me hand pandent, Scilicet lomi dividium dividere cum Jove,"

"it never troubles me (said Amphitrio) to be cornuted by Jupiter, let it not molest thee then;" be friends with her;

"Tu cum Alcemauxore antiquum in gratiam Redi"

"Receive Alcena to your grace again; let it, I say, make no breach of love between you. Howsoever the best way is to condemn it, which Henry II. king of France advised a courtier of his, jealous of his wife, and complaining of her unchasteness, to reject it, and comfort himself; for he that suspects his wife's incontinency, and fears the Pope's curse, shall never live a merry hour, or sleep a quiet night: no remedy but patience. When all is done according to that counsel of Neviramus, si vitium uxoris corrigi non potest, ferendum est: if it may not be helped, it must be endured. *Date veniam et sustineat tacitii, tis Sophocles' advice, keep it to thyself, and which Chrysostom calls palastrum philosophic et domesticum gymnasia, a school of philosophy, put it up. There is no other cure but time to wear it out, *Injuriarum remedium est oblivio, as if

they had drunk a draught of Lethe in Tropheonius' den: to conclude, age w
bereave her of it, dies dolorum minuit, time and patience must end it.

"The mind's affections patience will appease,
It passions kill, and heal oft each disease."

SUBSECT. II.—By prevention before or after Marriage, Plato's Community
marry a Courtezans, Philliers, Stevvs, to marry one equal in years, fortune
of a good family, education, good place, to use them well, &c.

Of such medicines as conduce to the cure of this malady, I have sufficient
handled; there be some good remedies remaining by way of prevention, pre
cautions, or admonitions, which if rightly practised, may do much good. Plat
in his Commonwealth, to prevent this mischief, belike, would have all thing
wives and children, all as one: and which Caesar in his Commentaries observ
of those old Britons, that first inhabited this land, they had ten or twelve
wives allotted to such a family, or promiscuously to be used by so many men
one to one, as with us, or four, five, or six to one as in Turkey. Th
Nicholaites, a sect that sprang, saith Austin, from Nicholas the deacon
would have women indifferent; and the cause of this filthy sect, was Nichol
the deacon's jealousy, for which when he was condemned to purge himself: his
offence, he broached his heresy, that it was lawful to lie with one another
wives, and for any man to lie with his; like to those Anabaptists in Munste
that would consort with other men's wives as the spirit moved them: or:
Mahomet, the seducing prophet, would needs use women as he list himself, t
begot prophets; two hundred and five, their Alcoran saith, were in love wit
him, and he as able as forty men. Amongst the old Carthaginians, Bohemus relates out of Sabellicus, the king of the country lay with the bride first night, and once in a year they went promiscuously all together. Munste
Cosmog. lib. 3. cap. 497. ascribes the beginning of this brutish custom (unjustly
to one Picardus, a Frenchman, that invented a new sect of Anadimae to g
naked as Adam did, and to use promiscuous venery at set times. When th
priest repeated that of Genesis, "Increase and multiply," 4out went the candle
in the place where they met, "and without all respect of age, persons, cond
ions, catch that catch may, every man took her that came next," &c.; som
fasten this on those ancient Bohemians and Russians: others on the inhab
ants of Mambrium, in the Lucerne valley in Piedmont; and, as l
practised in Scotland amongst Christians themselves, until King Malcolm
time, the king or the lord of the town had their maidenheads. In some part of Ind
India in our age, and those islanders, as amongst the Babylonians old, they will prostitute their wives and daughters (which Chalicocondila, Greek modern writer, for want of better intelligence puts upon us Britons) such travellers or seafaring men as come amongst them by chance, to show how far they were from this federal vice of jealousy, and how little they esteeme
it. The kings of Calecut, as Lord. Vertomannus relates, will not touch thei
wills, till one of their Biarins or high priests have lain first with them, t
sanctify their wombs. But those Esai and Montanists, two strange sects o
old, were in another extreme, they would not marry at all, or have any societ
with women, m because of their intemperance they held them all to be naught,

* R. T.
\* Lib. de heres. Quam de scele culpabatur, purgandis se causa permisse fortur ut ea qui velle ueteretur; quod ejus factum in securum suppsismnum verratum est, quot placet nescit indicierns feminarum b Sileiten. Com. c Alcoran. d Alcoran edit. et Bibliandre.
Nevisanus the lawyer, lib. 4. num. 33. syl. nupt. would have him that is inclined to this malady, to prevent the worst, marry a queen, Capiens meretricem, hoc habet saltem boni quid non decipitur, quia seid eam sic esse, quod non contingit aliis. A fornicator in Seneca constupated two wenches in a night; for satisfaction, the one desired to hang him, the other to marry him. 4 Hierome, king of Syracuse in Sicily, espoused himself to Pthio, keeper of the stews; and Ptolemy took Thais a common whore to be his wife, had two sons, Leoniscus and Lagus by her, and one daughter Irene: 'tis therefore no such unlikely thing. 5 A citizen of Eugubine gelled himself to try his wife's honesty, and to be freed from jealousy; so did a baker in Basil, to the same intent. But of all other precedents in this kind, that of Comalus is most memorable; who to prevent his master's suspicion, for he was a beautiful young man, and sent by Selencus his lord and king, with Stratonic the queen to conduct her into Syria, fearing the worst, gelled himself before he went, and left his genitals behind him in a box sealed up. His mistress by the way fell in love with him, but he not yielding to her, was accused to Selencus of incontinency (as that Bellerophon was in like case falsely traduced by Sthenobia, to king Prætus her husband, cum non posset ad coitum inducere), and that by her, and was therefore at his coming home cast into prison; the day of hearing appointed, he was sufficiently cleared and acquitted by showing his privities, which to the admiration of the beholders he had formerly cut off. The Lydia's used to geld women whom they suspected, saith Leonicus. var. hist. lib. 3. cap. 49. as well as men. To this purpose, Saint Francis, because he used to confess women in private, to prevent suspicion, and prove himself a maid, stripped himself before the Bishop of Assise and others: and Friar Leonard for the same cause went through Viterbium in Italy, without any garments.

Our Pseudo-catholics, to help these inconveniences which proceed from jealousy, to keep themselves and their wives honest, make severe laws; against adultery present death; and withal fornication, a venial sin, as a sink to convey that furious and swift stream of concupiscence, they appoint and permit stews, those punks and pleasant sinners, the more to secure their wives in all populous cities, for they hold them as necessary as churches; and howsoever unlawful, yet to avoid a greater mischief, to be tolerated in policy, as usury, for the hardness of men's hearts; and for this end they have whole colleges of courtezans in their towns and cities. Of Cato's mind belike that would have his servants (cum ancillis congregatus coitus causa, definito ere, ut graviora faci- nora evitarent, ceteris interim interdicens) familiar with some such feminine creatures, to avoid worse mischiefs in his house, and made allowance for it. They hold it impossible for idle persons, young, rich, and lusty, so many servants, monks, friars, to live honest, too tyrannical a burden to compel them to be chaste, and most unfit to suffer poor men, younger brothers, and soldiers at all to marry, as those diseased persons, votaries, priests, servants. Therefore, as well to keep and ease the one as the other, they tolerate and wink at these kind of brothel-houses and stews. Many probable arguments they have to prove the lawfulness, the necessity, and a toleration of them, as of usury; and without question in policy they are not to be contradicted: but altogether in religion. Others prescribe filters, spells, charms to keep men and women honest. 6 Mulinur ut alienum virum non admittat preter suum: Accipe fel hicci, et adipem, et exsicca, calescat in oleo, &c., et non alienum preter te amabit. In Alexi. Porta, &c., plura inventas, et multo his absurdivora, uti et in Rhasi, ne mulinur virum admittat, et maritium solvam divigat, &c. But these are most part Pagan, impious, irreligious, absurd, and ridiculous devices.

3 Stephanaus, praefat. Ierosol. Alius a lupanari meretricem, filio dictam, in uxorem duxit: Phototaurus Thaidern nob. le soritam duxit et ex ea filius suscepit, &c. 4 Poglius Florent. 5 Felix Pifer. 6 Plutarch, Lucian, Schnez Tit. 2. de porcellanis cum in Panscio 1. de nov. repert. et Plutarchus. 7 Stephanaus et i. cond. Benayr. c. 6. vit. Francisci. 8 Plutarch. vit. Alci. 9 Vossius lib. 7. secret.
The best means to avoid these and like inconveniences are, to take a way the causes and occasions. To this purpose Varro writ Satyrum Menippeum, but it is lost. Patritius prescribes four rules to be observed in choosing of a wife (which whose will may read); Fonseca, the Spaniard, in his 40. c. Amphiloea Amoris, sets down six special cautions for men, four for women; Sam Neande out of Shonbernerus, five for men, five for women; Anthony Guivarra many good lessons; Cleobulus two alone, others otherwise; as first to make a good choice in marriage, to invite Christ to their wedding, and which St. Ambros adviseth, Deum conjungi presideum habeere, and to pray to him for her (A Do mino enim datur uxur prudens, Prov. xix), not to be too rash and precipit in his election, to run upon the first he meets, or dote upon every stout fo piece he sees, but to choose her as much by his ears as eyes, to be well-advises whom he takes, of what age, &c., and cautious in his proceedings. An old man should not marry a young woman, nor a young woman an old man, Quan male inaequales veniunt ad avrata juveni! such matches must needs ministe a perpetual cause of suspicion, and be distasteful to each other.

For Sophocles, as Atheneus describes him, was a very old man, as cold a January, a bed-fellow of bones, and doted yet upon Archippe, a young cour tezan, than which nothing can be more odious. Senex maritus uxor juven ingratus est, an old man is a most unwelcome guest to a young wench, unable unfit:

"Amplexus nos fractat puellae,
Omnis horret amor Venusque Hymenque."

And as in like case a good fellow that had but a peck of corn weekly to grini yet would needs build a new mill for it, found his error eftsoons, for either h must let his mill lie waste, pull it quite down, or let others grind at it. S these men, &c.

Seneca therefore disallows all such unseasonable matches, habent enim mal dicti locum crebre nuptiae. And as Tully farther inveighs, "tis unfit fo any, but ugly and filthy in old age," Turpe sentilis amor, one of the three thing God hateth. Plutarch, in his book contra Coleten, rails downright at suc kind of marriages which are attempted by old men, qui jam corpore impotent et a voluptatibus deserti, peccant animo, and makes a question whether s cases it be tolerable at least for such a man to marry—qui Venere affectat sine viribus, "that is now past those venerous exercises," as a gelde man lives with a virgin and sighs, Ecclus. xxx. 20, and now complains wit him in Petronius, Funerata est haec pars jam quae fuit olim Achilles, he is quit done,

"Vixit puellae super idoneus,
Et militarit non sine gloria."

But the question is whether he may delight himself as those Priapean pope which in their decrepit age, lay commonly between two wenches every high contactus formosarium, et contractationes, num adhuc garudeat; and as man doting sires do to their own shame, their children’s undoing, and their fami lies’ confusion: he abhors it, tanguum ab ugeristi et furioso domino fugiendum it must be avoided as a bedlam master, and not obeyed.

1 Aleuco——
Ipsa faces praefert nubentius, et natus Hymen
Tristis uelut——

References:
[1] Citatur à Gellio. X Lib. 4. Th. 4. de instit. relig. de officio marit. 2 Ne cum ea blande nim asas, ne oblarges presentibus extranes. 3 Epist. 70. 4 Ovid. "How badly steers of different age are yoked to the plough." 5 Alciat. emb. 116. 6 Dipleupochof. 1. cap. 12. 7 Enricides. 8 Pontani Baranum lib. 1. "Maidens shun their embraces; Love, Venus, Hymen, all abhor them." 9 Osee. Lib. Luxur cum omni estat turpis, tum semelcat fatuatum. 10 Ecclus. xxvii. "An old man that dothes," & b Hor. lib. 3. ode 25. "He was lately a match for a maid, and contended not ingloriously." 11 Alec herself holds the torch at such nuptials, and malicious Hymen sadly howls."
the devil himself makes such matches. * Lovinus Lemnius reckons up three things which generally disturb the peace of marriage; the first is when they marry intempestive or unseasonably, "as many mortal men marry precipitately and inconsiderately, when they are effete and old: the second when they marry unequally for fortunes and birth: the third, when a sick impotent person weds one that is sound, novae nuptae spes frustratur: many dislikes instantly follow. Many doting dizzards, it may not be denied, as Plutarch confesseth, "recreate themselves with such obsolete, unseasonable and filthy remedies (so he calls them), with a remembrance of their former pleasures, against nature they stir up their dead flesh:" but an old lecher is abominable; mulier tertio rubens, * Nevisanus holds, presumatur librae et inconstans, a woman that marries a third time may be presumed to be no honester than she should. Of them both, thus Ambrose concludes in his comment upon Luke, "they that are coupled together, not to get children, but to satisfy their lust, are not husbands but fornicators," with whom St. Austin consents: matrimony without hope of children, non matrimonium, sed concubium dici debet, is not a wedding, but a jumbling or coupling together. In a word, except they wed for mutual society, help and comfort one of another (in which respects, though Tiberius deny it, without question old folks may well marry, for sometimes a man hath most need of a wife, according to Puccius, when he hath no need of a wife;) otherwise it is most odious, when an old acherontic dizzard, that hath one foot in his grave, a silicium, shall flicker after a young wench that is blithe and bonny.

Yet, as some will, it is much more tolerable for an old man to marry a young woman (our ladies' match they call it) for crus erit mulier, as he said in Tully. Cato the Roman, Critobulus, in * Xenophon, * Tyraquellus of late, Julius Sculliger, &c., and many famous precedents we have in that kind; but not eri contra: tis not held fit for an ancient woman to match with a young man. For as Varro will, Anus dum ludit morti delitios facit, 'tis Charon's match between Casca and Casca, and the devil himself is surely well pleased with it. And therefore, as the * poet inveighs, thou old Vetustina bed-ridden quean, that art now skin and bones.

"Cui tres capillis, quatuorque sunt dentes,
Peetes oculade, cruculunome tormian,
Racelorem que ceris stola frontem
Et arenam cumibus pares mamam.
"Thou hast three hairs, four teeth, a breast
Like grasphepper, an emmet's crest,
A skin more raged than thy coat,
And dugs like spider's web to boot."

Must thou marry a youth again? And yet ducentas ire nuptiam post mortes amant: bowsoever it is, as Apulcius gives out of his Meroc, congressus annosus, pestilens, abhorrendus, a pestilent match, abominable, and not to be endured. In such case how can they otherwise choose but be jealous, when should they agree one with another? This inequality is not in years only, but in birth, fortunes, conditions, and all good qualities, si quid voles opte vivere, nube pari, 'tis my counsel, saith Anthony Guiverra, to choose such a one. Civis Civem ducat, Nobilis Nobilem, let a citizen match with a citizen, a gen-

* Cap. 5. instit. ad optimam vitam; maxima mortuum pars praepiantatur et inconsiderate nutrit, ille ex utraque qua minus autem est, quam senex adolescentiuit, sanus moribia, dives pauperi, &c.
* Obiato, intempestivo, turpi remediad fatetur nec ut; recordationes pristinam voluptatum sequentur, et adversaria natura, pollicitam carmen et seseque excitant.
* Libr. 2. num. 25.
* Quic ver de procrande proles, sed expedeni librisus causas sibi inveni capniantur, non tam componant quam fornecarii habeant.
* Pontanus, librar lib. 1. "More salaciously than the sparrow in spring, or the snow-white ring-doves."
* Plantus, mercator.
* Symposio.
* Vite Thnusian historian.
* Libr. 1. Milex. * Ovid. "If you would marry suitably, marry your equal in every respect."
tlicman with a gentlewoman; he that observes not this precept (saith he) no generum sed malum Genium, non nurum sed Furicam, non vitae Comitem, se litis fomitem domi habebit, instead of a fair wife shall have a fury, for a fit soi in-law a mere fiend, &c. examples are too frequent.

Another main caution fit to be observed is this, that though they be equal i years, birth, fortunes, and other conditions, yet they do not omit virtue as good education, which Musonius and Antipater so much inculeatein Stoebus

"Dos est magna parentum
Virtus, et meruum alterius virt
Certo foolere castiilia." 2

If, as Plutarch adviseth, one must eat medium salis, a bushel of salt with him before he choose his friend, what care should be had in choosing a wife, his second self, how solicitous should he to be to know her qualities and behaviour and when he is assured of them, not to prefer birth, fortune, beauty, before bringing up, and good conditions. 3 Coquage god of cuckolds, as one merrily said, accompanies the goddess Jealousy, both follow the fairest, by Jupiter's appointment, and they sacrifice to them together: beauty and honesty seldom agree; straight personages have often crooked manners; fair faces, foul vices; good complexions, ill conditions. Suspiciions pleva res est, et insidiarum beauty (saith 4 Chrysostom) is full of treachery and suspicion: he that hath a fair wife, cannot have a worse mischief, and yet must covet it, as if nothing else in marriage but that and wealth were to be respected. 5 Francis Sforza, Duke of Milan, was so curious in this behalf, that he would not marry the Duke of Mantua's daughter, except he might see her naked first: which Lycurgus appointed in his laws, and Morus in his Utopian Commonwealth approves. 6

In Italy, as a traveller observes, if a man have three or four daughters, or more, and they prove fair, they are married eftsoons: if deformed, they change their lovely names of Lucia, Cynthia, Camena, call them Dorothy, Ursula, Bridget, and so put them into monasteries, as if none were fit for marriage but such as are eminently fair: but these are erroneous tenets: a modest virgin well conditioned, to such a fair smout-piece is much to be preferred. If thou wilt avoid them, take away all causes of suspicion and jealousy, marry a coarse piece, fetch her from Cassandra's temple, which was wont in Italy to be a sanctuary of all deformed maids, and so thou shalt be sure that no man will make thee cuckold, but for spite. A citizen of Bizance in France had a filthy, dowdy, deformed slut to his wife, and finding her in bed with another man, cried out as one amazed; O miser! que te necessitas has adegit? O thou wretch, what necessity brought thee hither? as well he might; for who can affect such a one? But this is warly to be understood, most offend in another extreme, they prefer wealth before beauty, and so she be rich, they care not how she look; but these are all out as faulty as the rest. Attendenda auxoris forma, as 7 Salisburyensis adviseth, ne si alteram asperexis, nomex an sordere putes, as the Knight in Chaucer that was married to an old woman, And all day after hit him as an out,
So woe was his wife looked so foul.

Have a care of thy wife's complexion, lest whilst thou seest another, thou loaste her, she prove jealous, thou naught,

"Si tibi deformis conjux, si serva venusta,
Ne utaris serva,"

I can perhaps give instance. Molestum est possidere quod nemo habere dignetur

1 "Parental virtue is a rich inheritance, as well as that chastity which habitually avoids a second husband."
2 Rabahias, hist. Pontaguel, 1. 3. cap. 33.
3 Hom. 80. Qui pulchrum habet exorexum, nihil pejus habere potest.
5 Disquisit quod dominus filibus inamortal nomina inditum in Baptismo, et pro Catharina, Margaretas, &c. quasi de aedifici luxuriam, appellant ipsas nominibus Cynthia, Camena, &c.
6 Leonis de var. lib. 3. c. 43. Aegyptian virgnum deformum Cassandras templum. Plutarch.
7 Polyol. 1. 8. cap. 11. 8 "I your wife secum deformed, your maid beautiful, still abstain from the latter."
a misery to possess that which no man likes: on the other side, Difficile curavit quod plures omanit. And as the bragging soldier vaunted in the comedy, nemia est miseria pulchrum esse hominem nimir. Scipio did never so hardly besiege Carthage, as these young gallants will beset thine house, one with wit or person, another with wealth, &c. If she be fair, saith Guazzo, she will be suspected howsoever. Both extremes are naught, Pulchra civi adamatur, foeda facile concupiscit, the one is soon beloved, the other loves: one is hardly kept, because proud and arrogant, the other not worth keeping; what is to be done in this case? Ennius in Menelippe adviseth thee as a friend to take statam formam, si vis habere incolunmen pudicitiam, one of a middle size, neither too fair, nor too foul. \[ Nec formosa magis quam mithi casta placeat,\] with old Cato, though fit her beauty be, neque lectissima, neque illibera, between both. This I approve; but of the other two I resolve with Salisburyensis, aeteris pari-bus, both rich alike, endowed alike, majori miseria deformis habetur quam formosa servatur, I had rather marry a fair one, and put it to the hazard, than be troubled with a blowze; but do thou as thou wilt, I speak only of myself.

Howsoever, quod iterum moneo, I would advise thee thus much, be she fair or foul, to choose a wife out of a good kindred, parentage, well brought up, in an honest place.

"Primum animo tibi proponas quo sanguine creta, Qua forma, qua salute, quibusque ante emnia virgo Moribus, in jugkctos veniat nova nuptia penates."

He that marries a wife out of a suspected inn or alehouse, buys a horse in Smithfield, and hires a servant in Paul's, as the divers is, shall likely have a jade to his horse, a knave for his man, an arrant honest woman to his wife. Filia presumpit esse nati similes, saith k Nevisanus? "Such a mother, such a daughter;" mali corni malum ovum, cat to her kind.

"If the mother be dishonest, in all likelihood the daughter will matrizar, take after her in all good qualities."

"Credens Pasiphae non tarnipotente futuram Tauriptem?"

"If the dam trot, the foal will not amble."

My last caution is, that a woman do not bestow herself upon a fool, or an apparent melancholy person; jea-lousy is a symptom of that disease, and fools have no moderation. Justina, a Roman lady, was much persecuted, and after made away by her jealous husband, she caused and enjoined this epitaph, as a caveat to others, to be engraved on her tomb:

"Discite ab exemplo Justina, discite patres, Ne nubat fatae illa vestra viro, &c."

After marriage, I can give no better admonitions than to use their wives well, and which a friend of mine told me that was a married man, I will tell you as good cheap, saith Nicostтратus in "Stobeus, to avoid future strife, and for quiet-ness sake, "when you are in bed take heed of your wife's flattering speeches over night, and curtain sermons in the morning." Let them do their endeav-our likewise to maintain them to their means, which Patricius ingenuates, and let them have liberty with discretion, as time and place requires: many women turn queans by compulsion, as Nevisanus observes, because their hus-bands are so hard, and keep them so short in diet and apparel, pauertas cogit eas meretricari, poverty and hunger, want of means, makes them dishonest, or bad usage; their churlish behaviour forthcom them to fly out, or bad

1 Marullus. "Not the most fair but the most virtuous pleases me." 1 Chaloner, lib. 9. de repub. Ang. k Lib. 2. num. 159. 1 sq. generat causa, quoque ilia vesta; si meretric mater, illa talis erit. m Juven. Sat. 6. n Camararius, cent. 2. cap. 54. oper. subel. o Ser. 72. Quod amicum quidam utiem habens mithi dixit, dieam vobis, in cubil cavendae adulationes veneri, mane clamores. p Lib. 4. lib. 4. de instit. Ralpub cap. de officio marit et uxoris. q Lib. 4. syl. num. 51. Non curant de uxoris, nec voluit illi subvenire de victu, vestiti, &c.
examples, they do it to cry quittance. In the other extreme some are t
liberal, as the proverb is, Persius malum sibi causat, they make a rod for the
own tails, as Caudaules did to Gyges in 'Herodotus, commend his wife's beau
himself, and besides would needs have him see her naked. Whilst they go
their wives too much liberty to gad abroad, and bountiful allowance, they a
necessary to their own miseries; animae uxorum pessimè olent, as Plaut
jibes, they have deformed souls, and by their paintings and colours pro
odium maritii, their husband's hate, especially, cum miserè viscant; labro mariti. Besides, their wives (as Basil notes) Impudenter se exponu
masculorum aspectibus, jactantes tunicos, et coram tripudiantes, impudent
thrust themselves into other men's companies, and by their indecent want;
carriage provoke and tempt the spectators. Virtuous women should ke
house; and 'twas well performed and ordered by the Greeks,

which made Phidias belike at Elis paint Venus treading on a tortoise,
symbol of women's silence and housekeeping. For a woman abroad and alon
is like a deer broke out of a park, quam mille venatores insequuntur, who
every hunter follows; and besides in such places she cannot so well vindic
herself, but as that virgin Dinah (Gen. xxxiv. 2), "going for to see the daugh
ters of the land," lost her virginity, she may be defiled and overtaken of
sudden: Inbelles domes quid nisi praeda sumus?"

And therefore I know not what philosopher he was, that would have wome
come but thrice abroad all their time, to be baptized, married and buried;
but he was too strait-laced. Let them have their liberty in good sort, and go i
good sort, modò non annos virginì ætatis sua domi relinquant, as a good fellow sa
so that they look not twenty years younger abroad than they do at home, they b
not spruce, neat, angels abroad, beasts, dowdies, sluts at home; but seek by a
means to please and give content to their husbands: to be quiet above a
things, obedient, silent and patient; if they be incensed, angry, chid a littl
their wives must not "sample again, but take it in good part. An homo
woman, I cannot now tell where she dwelt, but by report an honest woman sh
was, hearing one of her gossips by chance complain of her husband's impatien
told her an excellent remedy for it, and gave her withal a glass of water, whic
when he bawled she should hold still in her mouth, and that toties quotie
as often as he chid; she did so two or three times with good success, and a
length seeing her neighbour, gave her great thanks for it, and would need
know the ingredients, she told her in brief what it was, "fair water," an
no more: for it was not the water, but her silence which performed the cum
Let every froward woman imitate this example, and be quiet within doors, an
(as M. Aurelius prescribes) a necessary caution it is to be observed of a
good matrons that love their credits, to come little abroad, but follow thei
work at home, look to their household affairs and private business, economi
incumbent, be sober, thrifty, wary, circumspect, modest, and compose their
selves to live to their husbands' means, as a good housewife should do.

---

"Quae studis gavisca colit, partita labores
Falleb opus canus, formas assimilata coronae
Cura paecilia, circum fasque rotasque
Cum volvet," &c.

---

* In Clio. Speciem uxoris supra modum extollentes, flect ut illam nudam coram aspicerect. * Juve
Sat. 6. "He cannot kiss his wife for paint." * Uran. contra ebr.
"That a matron should not
seen in public without her husband as her spokeman." * Heelless Deer, what we have a prey
Ad baptismum, matrimonium et tumultum. * Non vociferatur illa al marius obganniat. * Fraude
apercit estamit ille non aquam sed silentium lacrimeoderi.
Diligenter cavendum feminar insilubris ne frequentes excent.
* Chaloner. "One who delights in t
labour of the distaff, and beguiles the hours of labour with a song: her duties assume an air of virtu
beauty when she is busied at the wheel and the spindle with her maid.
Cure of Jealousy.

Howsoever 'tis good to keep them private, not in prison;

"A Quisquis custodit uxorem vectibus et soris,
Et si sapient, stutius est, et nihil sapit." 6

Read more of this subject, Horol, princ. lib. 2. per to tum. Arnieus, polit.
Cyprian, Tertullian, Bosus de mulier apparat. Godinridus de Amor, lib. 2.
2. cap. 2. Franciscus Patritius de institut. Reipub. lib. 4. Tit. 4 et 5. de
Neander, &c.

These cautions concern him; and if by those or his own discretion otherwise
he cannot moderate himself, his friends must not be wanting by their wisdom,
if it be possible, to give the party grieved satisfaction, to prevent and remove
the occasions, objects, if it may be to secure him. If it be one alone, or many,
to consider whom he suspects or at what times, in what places he is most
incensed, in what companies. Nevisanus makes a question whether a young
physician ought to be admitted in cases of sickness, into a new married man's
house, to administer a julep, a syrup, or some such physic. The Persians of
old would not suffer a young physician to come amongst women. Apollonides
Cous made Artaxerxes cuckold, and was after buried alive for it. A gaoer in
Aristenetus had a fine young gentleman to his prisoner; in commiseration of
his youth and to enjoy the liberty of the prison, but he unkindly made him a cornuto.
Menelaus gave good welcome to Paris a stranger, his whole house and family were at his command, but he ungently
stole away his best beloved wife. The like measure was offered to Agis king of
Lacedemon, by Alcibiades an exile, for his good entertainment, he was too
familiar with Timea his wife, begetting a child of her, called Leotichides: and
bragging moreover when he came home to Athens, that he had a son should
be king of the Lacedemonians. If such objects were removed, no doubt but
the parties might easily be satisfied, or that they could use them gently and
intreat them well, not to revile them, scoff at, hate them, as in such cases
commonly they do, 'tis a human infirmity, a miserable vexation, and they
should not add grief to grief, nor aggravate their misery, but seek to please,
and by all means give them content, by good counsel, removing such offensive
objects, or by mediation of some discreet friends. In old Rome there was a
temple erected by the matrons to that Virilplacea Dea, another to Venus
verticorda, que maritos uxoribus reddat benevolos, whither (if any difference
happened between man and wife) they did instantly resort: there they did
offer sacrifice, a white hart, Plutarch records, sine felle, without the gall
(some say the like of Juno's temple), and make their prayers for conjugal
peace: before some indifferent arbitrators and friends, the matter was heard
between man and wife, and commonly composed. In our times we want no
sacred churches, or good men to end such controversies, if use were made of
them. Some say that precious stone called beryllyus, others a diamond, hath
excellent virtue, contra hostium injurias, et conjugatos invicem conciliare,
to reconcile men and wives, to maintain unity and love; you may try this when
you will, and as you see cause. If none of all these means and cautions will
take place, I know not what remedy to prescribe, or whither such persons may
go for ease, except they can get into the same Turkey paradise, "Where
they shall have as many fair wives as they will themselves, with clear eyes, and

4 Menander. "Whoever guards his wife with bolts and bars will repent his narrow policy." Lib. 5.
um. 11.
5 Oteias in Persici sexit vulvae morab emesse, curari prope nis cum vino concumbareret, haec arte velit compost, &c.
6 Exsolviv vinculis solutumque demisit, at ille inhumanus superavit congregum.
7 Plutarch. vita ejus.
9 Alexander ab Alexandro, lib. 8, gen. dier.
10 Fr. Bucus de gemmis, lib. 2, cap. 8. et 15.
such as look on none but their own husbands;" no fear, no danger of being cuckold; or else I would have them observe that strict rule of Alphons to marry a deaf and dumb man to a blind woman. If this will not help, let them, to prevent the worst, consult with an astrologer, and see whether their significators in her horoscope agree with him, that they be not in signs et partibus odiosi intuentibus aut imperantibus, sed mutuo et amicæ assistis et ob dientibus, otherwise (as they hold) there will be intolerable enmities between them; or else get him sigillum veneris, a characteristic seal stamped in the day and hour of Venus, when she is fortunate, with such and such set words and charms, which Villanovanus and Leo Suavius prescribe, ex sigillis magic. Solomonis, Hermetis, Raguelis, &c., with many such, which Alexis, Albertus and some of our natural magicians put upon us: ut mulier cum aliquo adultis are non possit, incide de capillis ejus, &c., and he shall surely be gracious in a women's eyes, and never suspect or disagree with his own wife so long as he wears it. If this course be not approved, and other remedies may not help, they must in the last place sue for a divorce; but that is somewhat difficult to effect, and not at all so fit. For as Felisacius in his tract de just vexore urgeth, if that law of Constantine the Great, or that of Theodosius an Valentinian, concerning divorce, were in use in our times, innumeras propem dum vitibus habereins, et caelibus viros, we should have almost no married couples left. Try therefore those former remedies; or as Tertullian reports a Democritus, that put out his eyes, because he could not look upon a woman without lust, and was much troubled to see that which he might not enjoy; let him make himself blind, and so he shall avoid that care and molestation of watching his wife. One other sovereign remedy I could repeat, an especial antidote against jealousy, an excellent cure, but I am not now disposed to tell it, not that like a covetous empiric I conceal it for any gain, but some other reasons, I am not willing to publish it; if you be very desirous to know it when I meet you next I will peradventure tell you what it is in your ear. Thi is the best counsel I can give; which he that hath need of, as occasion serve may apply unto himself. In the mean time,——diu talum terris avwertit pestem, as the proverb is, from heresy, jealousy and frenzy, good Lorn deliver us.

SECT. IV. MEMB. I.

SUBSECT. I.—Religious Melancholy. Its object God; what his beauty is; Hoi it allures. The parts and parties affected.

That there is such a distinct species of love melancholy, no man hath eye yet doubted: but whether this subdivision of Religious Melancholy b warrantable, it may be controverted.

"Fergite Pterides, medio nec calle vagantem
Linguite me, qui nulla pedum vestigia daucnt,
Nulla rote curris testantur signa priores."  

I have no pattern to follow as in some of the rest, no man to imitate. N physician hath as yet distinctly written of it as of the other; all acknowledg
is a most notable symptom, some a cause, but few a species or kind. 1 Arcte
Alexander, Rhasis, Avicenna, and most of our late writers, as Gordonius
Fuchsius, Plater, Bruel, Montaltus, &c. repeat it as a symptom. "Som
seem to be inspired of the Holy Ghost, some take upon them to be prophet

---

1 Uxor casae ducat maritum surdum, &c. 6 See Valen. Nabd. differ. com. in Alacbitium, wh plur
P Cap. 46. Apol. quod mulieres sine concepulencia espicere non possit, &c. 9 Ye gods avert such
pestilence from the world. 7 Called religious because it is still conversant about religion and such divi
objects. 8 Grotius. "Proceed, ye muses, nor desert me in the middle of my journey, where no footste
lead me, no wheeltracks indicate the transit of former chariots." 1 Lib. 1. cap. 16. nonnulli opinioni
addici sunt, et futura se predicere arbitrantur. 1 Allis videtur quod sunt prophetas et inspirati
Spiritu sancto, et inculpant prophetarum, et multa futura predicant.
some are addicted to new opinions, some foretell strange things, de statu mundi et Antichristi, saith Gordonius. Some will prophesy of the end of the world to a day almost, and the fall of the Antichrist, as they have been addicted or brought up; for so melancholy works with them, as "Laurentius holds. If they have been precisely given, all their meditations tend that way, and in conclusion produce strange effects, the humour imprints symptoms according to their several inclinations and conditions, which makes Guianerus and Felix Plater put too much devotion, blind zeal, fear for eternal punishment, and that last judgment for a cause of those enthusiastic and desperate persons: but some do not obscurely make a distinct species of it, dividing love-melancholy into that whose object is women; and into the other whose object is God. Plato, in Convivio, makes mention of two distinct furies: and amongst our Neoterics, Herœcles de Saxonio, lib. 1. pract. med. cap. 16. cap. de melancho, doth expressly treat of it in a distinct species. "Love melancholy (soath he) is twofold; the first is that (to which peradventure some will not vouchsafe this name or species of melancholy) affection of those which put God for their object, and are altogether about prayer, fasting, &c., the other about women." Peter Forestus in his observations delivereth as much in the same words: and Felix Platerus de mentis alienat. cap. 3. frequentissima est ejus species, in quâ curandâ sepissimâ multum fui impeditus; 'tis a frequent disease; and they have a ground of what they say, forth of Areteus and Plato. Areteus, an old author, in his third book, cap. 6. doth so divide love melancholy, and derives this second from the first, which comes by inspiration or otherwise. Plato in his Phædrus hath these words, "Apollo's priests in Delphos, and at Dodona, in their fury do many pretty feats, and benefit the Greeks, but never in their right wits." He makes them all mad, as well he might; and he that shall but consider that superstition of old, those prodigious effects of it (as in its place I will shew the several furies of our fatidici dii, pythónissas, sibyls, enthusiasts, pseudoprophets, hereticks, and schismatics in these our latter ages) shall instantly confess, that all the world again cannot afford so much matter of madness, so many stupendous symptoms, as superstition, heresies, schism have brought out: that this species alone may be paralleled to all the former, has a greater latitude, and more miraculous effects; that it more besots and infatuates men, than any other above named whatsoever, does more harm, works more disquietness to mankind, and has more crucified the souls of mortal men (such hath been the devil's craft) than wars, plagues, sicknesses, death, famine, and all the rest.

Give me but a little leave, and I will set before your eyes in brief a stupendous, vast, infinite ocean of incredible madness and folly: a sea full of shelves and rocks, sands, gulfs, euripus and contrary tides, full of fearful monsters, uncounted shapes, roaring waves, tempests, and siren calms, halcyonian seas, unspokable misery, such comedies and tragedies, such absurd and ridiculous, feral and lamentable fits, that I know not whether they are more to be pitied or derided, or may be believed, but that we daily see the same still practised in our days, fresh examples, nova novitâ, fresh objects of misery and madness, in this kind that are still represented unto us, abroad, at home, in the midst of us, in our bosoms.

But before I can come to treat of these several errors and obliquities, their causes, symptoms, affections, &c., I must say something necessarily of the

"Cap. 6. de Melanch. 7 Cap. 5. Tractat. multî ob timorem Dei sunt melanchoûlîes, et timorem gehennas. They are still troubled for their sins. 2 Plater c. 15. 3 Melanchoûla Erotica vel quem cum amore est, duplex est: prima quae ab aliis forsum non mercetur nomen melanchoûlîes, est affectio corum quos pro objecto propemont Denm et ideo nihil alînd curant aut cogitant quam Denm, jejunia, vigillias: alters ob multures. 4 Sibyls. 5 Aliis repetituri fuerint species à prima vel à seconda, deorum romanìum, vel aliis numinum furor hic vel ali. Qui in Delphis fustra praecludit vates, et in Dodona saeculae fuerint quidem multa fœcunda. Gracia defunt, sani vero exigus aut nullas."
object of this love, God himself, what this love is, how it allureth, whence proceeds, and (which is the cause of all our miseries) how we mistake, wand and swerve from it.

Amongst all those divine attributes that God doth vindicte to himself, eternity, omnipotency, immutability, wisdom, majesty, justice, mercy, &c. d beauty is not the least: one thing, saith David, have I desired of the Lor and that I will still desire, to behold the beauty of the Lord, Psal. xxvii. And out of Sion, which is the perfection of beauty, hath God shined, Ps. l. 2. All other creatures are fair, I confess, and many other objects do much enamour us, a fair house, a fair horse, a comely person. "c I am amazed saith Austin, "when I look up to heaven and behold the beauty of the stars, t beauty of angels, principalities, powers, who can express it? who can suffice cieniently commend, or set out this beauty which appears in us? so fair a bod so fair a face, eyes, nose, cheeks, chin, brows, all fair and lovely to behold besides the beauty of the soul which cannot be discerned. If we so labour an be so much affected with the comeliness of creatures, how shall we be ravished with that admirable lustre of God himself?" If ordinary beauty have such prerogative and power, and what is amiable and fair, to draw the eyes and ear hearts and affections of all spectators unto it, to move, win, entice, allure how shall this divine form ravish our souls, which is the fountain and quintessence of all beauty? Celum pulchrum, sed pulchrior ecelli fabricator; heaven be so fair, the sun so fair, how much fairer shall he be, that made the fair? "For the greatness and beauty of the creatures, proportionally, the maker of them is seen," Wisd. xiii. 5. If there be such pleasure in beholding a beautiful person alone, and, as a plausible sermon, he so much affect us, wha shall this beauty of God himself, that is infinitely fairer than all creatures, mer angels, &c. f Omnibus pulchritudo florum, hominum, angelorum, et rerum omnium pulcherrimarum ad Dei pulchritudinem collata, noster est et tenetra, a other beauties are night itself, mere darkness to this our inexplicable, incomprehensible, unspeakable, eternal, infinite, admirable and divine beauty. Thilustre, pulchritudo omnium pulcherrima. This beauty and "g splendour of th divine majesty," is it that draws all creatures to it, to seek it, love, admire, and adore it; and those heathens, pagans, philosophers, out of those relics the have yet left of God's image, are so far forth incensed, as not only to acknowledge a God; but, though after their own inventions, to stand in admiration of his bounty, goodness, to adore and seek him; the magnificence and structure of the world itself, and beauty of all his creatures, his goodness, providence protection, enforce them to love him, seek him, fear him, though a wrong way to adore him; but for us that are Christians, regenerate, that are his adopted sons, illuminated by his word, having the eyes of our hearts and under standings hold; how fairly doth he offer and expose himself? Ambit no Deus (Austin saith) donis et formâ suâ, he woos us by his beauty, gifts, pro mises, to come unto him; "h the whole Scripture is a message, an exhorta tion, a love-letter to this purpose," to invite us, and invite us, 'God's epistle as Gregory calls it, to his creatures. He sets out his son and his church i that epithalamium or mystical song of Solomon, to enamour us the more, com paring his head "to fine gold, his locks curled and black as a raven, Cant. iv 5. his eyes like doves on rivers of waters, washed with milk, his lips as lilies dropping down pure juice, his hands as rings of gold set with chrysolite; and his church to a vineyard, a garden enclosed, a fountain of living waters, a

---

d Deus bonus, justus, pulcher, justa Platonem. 
 Miror et stupeo omn celum aspicio et pulchritudinem siderum, angelorum, &c. et quis dignus laudet quod in nobis viget, corpus tam pulchrum, frontem pulchrum nubes, genas, ocus, intellectum, omnis pulchra; si sic in creaturis laborarnus, quid in ipso deo! 
 Uxcella. Nect. lib. 3. cap. 11. 
 Fulgar divina majestatis. Aug. 
 In Psal. lxiv. mist ad n Epistolae et totum scripturam, quibus nobis faceret amandis desiderium. 
 Epist. 40. c. 1. 4. quid est tu scriptura nisi Epistola omnipotentis Dei ad creaturam suam?
orchard of pomegranates, with sweet scents of saffron, spike, calamus and cinnamon, and all the trees of incense, as the chief spices, the fairest amongst women, no spot in her, his sister, his spouse, undefiled, the only daughter of her mother, dear unto her, fair as the moon, pure as the sun, looking out as the morning;" that by these figures, that glass, these spiritual eyes of contemplation, we might perceive some resemblance of his beauty, the love between his church and him. And so in the xlv. Psalm this beauty of his church is compared to a "queen in a vesture of gold of Ophir, embroidered raiment of needlework, that the king might take pleasure in her beauty." To incense us further yet, John, in his apocalypse, makes a description of that heavenly Jerusalem, the beauty of it, and in it the maker of it; "Likening it to a city of pure gold, like unto clear glass, shining and garnished with all manner of precious stones, having no need of sun or moon: for the Lamb is the light of it, the glory of God doth illuminate it: to give us to understand the infinite glory, beauty, and happiness of it." Not that it is no fairer than these creatures to which it is compared, but that this vision of his, this lustre of his divine majesty, cannot otherwise be expressed to our apprehensions, "no tongue can tell, no heart can conceive it," as Paul saith. Moses himself, Exod. xxxiii. 18. when he desired to see God in his glory, was answered that he might not endure it, no man could see his face and live. Sensibile forte destructi sensum, a strong object overcometh the sight, according to that axiom in philosophy: fulgorem solis ferre non potes, mullo magis creatoris; if thou canst not endure the sunbeams, how canst thou endure that fulgor and brightness of Him that made the sun? The sun itself and all that we can imagine, are but shadows of it, "tis visio prececellens, as Austin calls it, the quintessence of beauty this, "which far exceeds the beauty of heavens, sun and moon, stars, angels, gold and silver, woods, fair fields, and whatsoever is pleasant to behold." All those other beauties fail, vary, are subject to corruption, to loathing; "But this is an immortal vision, a divine beauty, an immortal love, an indefatigable love and beauty, with sight of which we shall never be tired nor wearied, but still the more we see, the more we shall covet him." "For as one saith, where this vision is, there is absolute beauty; and where that beauty, from the same fountain comes all pleasure and happiness; neither can beauty, pleasure, happiness, be separated from his vision or sight, or his vision, from beauty, pleasure, happiness." In this life we have but a glimpse of this beauty and happiness: we shall hereafter, as John saith, see him as he is: thine eyes, as Isaiah promiseth, xxxiii. 17. "shall behold the king in his glory," then shall we be perfectly enamoured, have a full fruition of it, desire, behold and love him alone as the most amiable and fairest object, or summum bonum, or chiefest good.

This likewise should we now have done, had not our will been corrupted; and as we are enjoined to love God with all our heart, and all our soul: for to that end were we born, to love this object, as Melanthon discourseth, and to enjoy it. "And him our will would have loved and sought alone as our summum bonum, or principal good, and all other good things for God's sake: and nature, as she proceeded from it, would have sought this fountain; but in this infirmity of human nature this order is disturbed, our love is corrupt: and a man is like that monster in Plato, composed of a Scylla, a lion and a man; we are carried away headlong with the torrent of our affections: the

k Cap. vi. 8. 1 Cap. xxvii. 11. 2 In Paul. lxxxv. omnes pulchritudines torrens sunt, argentii, nemorum et camporum pulchritudinem Solis et Lune, stellarum, aqua pulchra supersonas. 3 immortalis hie visio, immortalis amor, indefatigus amor et visio. 4 Osorius: ubiqueque visio et pulchritudo divini aspectus, lib ve plust rat ex eodem fonte omnisque beatitudo, nec ab alius aspectu voluptum, nec ab illa voluptate aspectus separari potest. 5 Leon Hambres. Dubitatatur humana felicitas Deo cognoscendi et amando terminum. 6 Lib. de anima. Ad hoc objectum amandum et traedendum null sumus; et hane expedire, unicurn hunc amans et humana voluntas, ut summum bonum, et ceteras res omnes ex ordine. 7 9 de Repub,
world, and that infinite variety of pleasing objects in it, do so allure and e
mour us, that we cannot so much as look towards God, seek him, or think him as we should: we cannot, saith Austin, rempublicam caelestern cognitare, cannot contain ourselves from them, their sweetness is so pleasing to us. M
riage, saith Gualter, detains many; "A thing in itself landable, good a
ecessary, but many deceived and carried away with the blind love of it, he
quite laid aside the love of God, and desire of his glory. Meat and dri
hath overcome as many, whilst they rather strive to please, satisfy their g
belly, than to serve God and nature." Some are so busied about m
chandise to get money, they lose their own souls, whilst covetously carried, a
with an insatiable desire of gain, they forget God; as much we may say
honour, leagues, friendships, health, wealth, and all other profits or pleasu
in this life whatsoever. "In this world there be so many beautiful objec
splendours and brightness of gold, majesty of glory, assistance of friends, f
promises, smooth words, victories, triumphs, and such an infinite company
pleasing beauties to allure us, and draw us from God, that we cannot look aft
him." And this is it which Christ himself, those prophets and apostles
much thundered against, 1 John, xvii. 16, dehort us from; "love not the wor
nor the things that are in the world: if any man love the world, the love the
Father is not in him, 16. For all that is in the world, as lust of the fles
lust of the eyes, and pride of life, is not of the Father, but of the world and
the world passeth away and the lust thereof; but he that fulfilleth the w
of God abideth for ever. "No man," saith our Saviour, "can serve two maste
but he must love the one and hate the other," &c., bonos vel males mores, bo
vel mali faciunt amores, Austin well infers: and this is that which all t
fathers inculate. He cannot (a Austin admoniseth) be God's friend, that
delighted with the pleasures of the world: "make clean thine heart, puri
thine heart; if thou wilt see this beauty, prepare thyself for it. It is the e
of contemplation by which we must behold it, the wing of meditation whi
lifts us up and rears our souls with the motion of our hearts, and sweetne
of contemplation:" so saith Gregory cited by Bonaventure. And as b Phi
Judeus seconds him, "He that loves God will soar aloft and take him w
and, leaving the earth, fly up to heaven, wander with sun and moon, stars, at
that heavenly troop, God himself being his guide." If we desire to see hi
we must lay aside all vain objects, which detain us and dazzle our eyes, as
as Ficinus adviseth us, "get us solar eyes, spectacles as they that look c
the sun: to see this divine beauty, lay aside all material objects, all sense, a
then thou shalt see him as he is." Thou covetous wretch, as "Austin expo
tulates, "why dost thou stand gaping on this dross, muck-hills, filthy exer
ments! behold a far fairer object, God himself woos thee; behold him, enj
him, he is sick for love." Cant. v. he invites thee to his sight, to come in
his fair garden, to eat and drink with him, to be merry with him, to enj
his presence for ever. b Wisdom cries out in the streets besides the gates i
the top of high places, before the city, at the entry of the door, and bids the
give ear to her instruction, which is better than gold or precious stones; r
pleasures can be compared to it: leave all then and follow her, vos exhortor

8 Hom. 9. in epist. Johannis, cap. 2. Multos conjugalim depictit, res aliqui salutaris et necessaria, eo qu
en cecidit amore decepti, divini amoris et gloriae studium in universum abierunt; plurimos ehis et pot
perdit. 1 in mundo splendorum opus, gloriae majestatis, amicitudinem prestatis, verborum blanditias, volunt
num omnis generis illecebres, victoriae, triumphi, et infinitas alia ab amore dei nos abstrahunt, &c.
1 Is. xxvii. Dei amicae esse non potest qui mundi studia selectaret; ut hanc formam videas mundum a
serena cor, &c. 9 Contemplationis pluma nos stabilem stagen inicertum intentione condit, dulcedi
templationis distinct. 6. de 7. Itineribus. 8 Lab. de victimis: amas Deum, sublimia Petit, sita
alis et in caelum recte volat, recta terra, cupidus aberrendi cum sole, luna, stellarumque serva milditas, si
iis desce. 2 In com. Plut. cap. 7. ut Solem videas oscula, fieri debeo solares: ut divinam aspexit pi
chastitatem, demittite materiam, demittite sensum, et Deum qualis sit videatis. 8 Ave, quid inimicas h
&c, pulchrior est qui te ambit ipsum visurus, ipsum habiturus. b Prov. viii.
amici et obscure. In "Ficinus's words, "I exhort and beseech you, that you would embrace and follow this divine love with all your hearts and abilities, by all offices and endeavours make this so loving God propitious unto you." For whom alone, saith Plotinus, "we must forsake the kingdoms and empires of the whole earth, sea, land, and air, if we desire to be ingrafted into him, leave all and follow him."

Now, forasmuch as this love of God is a habit infused of God, as "Thomas holds, 1. 2. quest. 23. "by which a man is inclined to love God above all, and his neighbour as himself," we must pray to God that he will open our eyes, make clear our hearts, that we may be capable of his glorious rays, and perform those duties that he requires of us, Deut. vi. and Josh. xxiii. "to love God above all, and our neighbour as ourself, to keep his commandments. In this we know, saith 1 John, c. v. 2. we love the children of God, when we love God and keep his commandments." This is the love of God, that we keep his commandments; he that loveth not, knoweth not God, for God is love, cap. iv. 8. and he that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him;" for love presupposeth knowledge, faith, hope, and unites us to God himself, as Leon Hebreus delivereth unto us, and is accompanied with the fear of God, humility, meekness, patience, all those virtues, and charity itself. For if we love God, we shall love our neighbour, and perform the duties which are required at our hands, to which we are exhorted, 1 Cor. xv. 4, 5; Ephes. iv.; Coloss. iii.; Rom. xii. We shall not be envious or puffed up, or boast, disdain, think evil, or be provoked to anger, but suffer all things; endeavour to keep the unity of the spirit in the bond of peace." Forbear one another, forgive one another, clothe the naked, visit the sick, and perform all those works of mercy, which Clemens Alexandrinus calls amoris et amicitia imple- tionem et extensionem, the extent and complement of love; and that not for fear or worldly respects, but ordine ad Deum, for the love of God himself. This we shall do if we be truly enamoured; but we come short in both, we neither love God nor our neighbour as we should. Our love in spiritual things is too defective, in worldly things too excessive, there is a jar in both. We love the world too much; God too little; our neighbour not at all, or for our own ends. Vulgus amicitias utilitate probat. "The chief thing we respect is our commodity;" and what we do is for fear of worldly punishment, for vain-glory, praise of men, fashion, and such by respects, not for God's sake. We neither know God aright, nor seek, love or worship him as we should. And for these defects, we involve ourselves into a multitude of errors, we swerve from this true love and worship of God: which is a cause unto us of unspeakable miseries; running into both extremes, we become fools, madmen, without sense, as now in the next place I will show you.

The parties affected are innumerable almost, and scattered over the face of the earth, far and near, and so have been in all precedent ages, from the beginning of the world to these times, of all sorts and conditions. For method's sake I will reduce them to a two-fold division, according to those two extremes of excess and defect, impiety and superstition, idolatry and atheism. Not that there is any excess of divine worship or love of God; that cannot be, we cannot love God too much, or do our duty as we ought, as Papists hold, or have any perfection in this life, much less supererogate; when we have all done, we are unprofitable servants. But because we do aliud agere, zealous without knowledge, and too solicitous about that which is not necessary, busying ourselves about impertinent, needless, idle, and vain ceremonies, *populo ut placement,
as the Jews did about sacrifices, oblations, offerings, incense, new moons, feast &c., but Isaiah taxeth them, i. 12, "who required this at your hands?" W have too great opinion of our own worth, that we can satisfy the law; and c more than is required at our hands, by performing those evangelical counsel and such works of supererogation, merit for others, which Bellarmine, Gregor de Valentina, all their Jesuits and champions defend, that if God should deal i rigour with them, some of their Franciscans and Dominicans are so pure, th nothing could be objected to them. Some of us again are too dear, as w think, more divine and sanctified than others, of a better mettle, greater gift and with that proud Pharisee, contend others in respect of ourselves, we an better Christians, better learned, choice spirits, inspired, know more, hav special revelation, perceive God's secrets, and thereupon presume, say and d that many times which is not befitting to be said or done. Of this numbe all are superstitious idolaters, ethnics, Mahomets, Jews, heretics, 1 in usiasts, divinators, prophets, sectaries, and schismatics. Zanchius reduct such insidels to four chief sects; but I will insistand follow mine own intende method: all which with many other curious persons, monks, hermits, &c., ma be ranged in this extreme, and fight under the superstitious banner, with thos rude idiots, and infinite swarms of people that are seduced by them. In th other extreme or in defect, march those impious epicures, libertines, atheist hypocrites, insidels, worldly, secure, impenitent, unthankful, and carnal-minde men, that attribute all to natural causes, that will acknowledge no suprem power; that have cauterised consciences, or live in a reprobate sense; or suc desperate persons as are too distrustful of his mercies. Of these there t many subdivisions, diverse degrees of madness and folly, some more than othe as shall be shown in the symptoms; and yet all miserably out, perplexes doting, and beside themselves for religion's sake. For as Zanchy well di stinguishd and all the world knows, religion is twofold, true or false; false: that vain superstitution of idolaters, such as were of old, Greeks, Romans, pre sent Mahometans, &c. Timorem deorum inanem, 1 Tully could term it; or; Zanchy defines it, Ubi falsi dii, aut falsa cultu colitur Deus, when false god or that God is falsely worshipped. And 'tis a miserable plague, a torture the soul, a mere madness, Religiosa insaniam, 2 Meteran calls it, or insaniam error, as Seneca, a frantic error; or as Austin, Insanus animi morbus, furious disease of the soul; Insania omnium insanissima, a quintessence o madness; for he that is superstitious can never be quiet. 'Tis proper to ma alone, uni superbia, avaritia, superstition, saith Plin. lib. 7. cap. 1. atque etiam post sevit de futuro, which wrings his soul for the present, and to come: th greatest misery belongs to mankind, a perpetual servitude, a slavery, 3 E timorem timor, a heavy yoke, the seal of damnation, an intolerable burden. The that are superstitious are still fearing, suspecting, vexing themselves wit auguries, prodigies, false tales, dreams, idle, vain works, unprofitable labour as Boterus observes, cura mentis ancipite versatur: enemies to God and t themselves. In a word, as Seneca concludes, Religio Deum colit, superstition destroys, superstition destroys, but true religion honours God. True religio ubi versus Deus vere colitur, where the true God is truly worshipped, is the ws to heaven, the mother of virtues, love, fear, devotion, obedience, knowledge, & It rears the dejected soul of man, and amidst so many cares, miseries, pers cutions, which this world affords, it is a sole ease, an unspeakable comfort, sweet reposall, Jugum suave, et love, a light yoke, an anchor, and a haven. adds courage, boldness, and begets generous spirits: although tyrants rag persecute, and that bloody Lictor, or sergeant be ready to martyr them, aut lit

1 De primo precepto. 2 De relig. 1. 2. Thes. 1. 3 De nat. deorum. 4 Hist. Belgic. Lib. n Superstition error insanus est. epist. 223. 5 Kam qui superstitione haebatur est, quietus esse nonqu pedest. 6 Greg. 7 Polit. lib. 1. cap. 15.
out morere (as in those persecutions of the primitive Church, it was put in practice, as you may read in Eusebius and others), though enemies be now ready to invade, and all in an uproar. Si fractus illabatur orbis, imparidos ferient ruinae, though heaven should fall on his head, he would not be dismayed. But as a good Christian prince once made answer to a menacing Turk, jucinde scele-rata hominum arma contemnit, qui Dei presidio tutus est: or as Phalaris writ to Alexander in a wrong cause, he nor any other enemy could terrify him, for that he trusted in God. Si Deus nobiscum, quis contra nos? In all calamities, persecutions whatsoever, as David did, 2 Sam. ii. 22, he will sing with him, “the Lord is my rock, my fortress, my strength, my refuge, the tower and horn of my salvation,” &c. In all troubles and adversities, Psal. xlv. i. “God is my hope and help, still ready to be found, I will not therefore fear,” &c., ‘tis a fear expelling fear; he hath peace of conscience, and is full of hope, which is (saith Austin) vita vitae mortalis, the life of this our mortal life, hope of immortality, the sole comfort of our misery; otherwise, as Paul saith, we of all others were most wretched, but this makes us happy, counterpoising our hearts in all miseries; superstition torments, and is from the devil, the author of lies; but this is from God himself, as Lucian, that Antiochian priest, made his divine confession in Eusebius, Author nobis de Deo Deus est, God is the author of our religion himself, his word is our rule, a lantern to us, dictated by the Holy Ghost, he plays upon our hearts as so many harpstrings, and we are his temples, he dwelleth in us, and we in him.

The part affected of superstition, is the brain, heart, will, understanding, soul itself, and all the faculties of it, totum compositum, all is mad and dotes: now for the extent, as I say, the world itself is the subject of it (to omit that grand sin of atheism), all times have been misaffected, past, present, “there is not one that doth good, no not one, from the prophet to the priest,” &c. A lamentable thing it is to consider, how many myriads of men this idolatry and superstition (for that comprehends all) hath infatuated in all ages, besotted by this blind zeal, which is religion’s ape, religion’s bastard, religion’s shadow, false glass. For where God hath a temple, the devil will have a chapel: where God hath sacrifices, the devil will have his oblations: where God hath ceremonies, the devil will have his traditions: where there is any religion, the devil will plant superstition; and ‘tis a pitiful sight to behold and read, what tortures, miseries, it hath procured, what slaughter of souls it hath made, how it rageth amongst those old Persians, Syrians, Egyptians, Greeks, Romans, Tuscans, Gauls, Germans, Britons, &c. Britannia jam hodi: celebrat tam attonit: saith Pliny, tantis ceremoniis (speaking of superstition) ut dedississe Persis videri possit. The Britons are so stupendly superstitious in their ceremonies, that they go beyond those Persians. He that shall but read in Pausanias alone, those gods, temples, altars, idols, statues, so curiously made with such infinite cost and charge, amongst those old Greeks, such multitudes of them and frequent varieties, as Gerbelius truly observes, may stand amazed, and never enough wonder at it; and thank God, withal, that by the light of the Gospel, we are so happily freed from that slavish idolatry in these our days. But heretofore, almost in all countries, in all places, superstition hath blinded the hearts of men; in all ages what a small portion hath the true church ever been! Divisum imperium cum Jove Deamon habet. The patriarchs and their families, the Israelites a handful in respect, Christ and his apostles, and not all of them, neither. Into what straits hath it been compinged, a little flock! how hath superstition on the other side dilated herself, error, ignorance, barbarism, folly, madness, deceived, triumphed, and insulted over the most

1 Hor. 2 Epist. Phalar. 3 In Psal. iii. 4 Lib. 9, cap. 6. 5 Lib. 3. 6 Lib. 6. descript. Gree. nulla est via qua non innumeris idolis est referata. Tantum tune temporis in miserrimos mortales potestas et crudelis Tyrannidis satan exercuit. 7 “The devil divides the empire with Jupiter.”
wise, discreet, and understanding men, philosophers, dynasts, monarchs, were involved and overshadowed in this mist, in more than Cimmerian dark-ness. aAdeo ignara superstitio mentes hominum depravat, et nonnulla sapiendum animos transversos agit. At this present, quota pars! How small a part is truly religious! How little in respect! Divide the world into parts, and one, or not so much, is Christians; idolaters and Mahometans possess almost Asia, Africa, America, Magellonica. The kings of China, gre Cham, Siam, and Borneo, Pegu, Deccan, Narsinga, Japan, &c., are gentle idolaters, and many other petty princes in Asia, Monomotopa, Congo, and know not how many negro princes in Africa, all Terra Australis incognit most of America, pagans, differing all in their several superstitions; and yet a idolaters. The Mahometans extend themselves over the great Turk's dominions in Europe, Africa, Asia, to the Xeriffes in Barbary, and his territori in Fez, Sus, Morocco, &c. The Tartar, the great Mogor, the Sophy of Pe sia, with most of their dominions and subjects, are at this day Mahometan. See how the devil rageth: those at odds, or differing among themselves some for bAli, some Êbubocar, for Acmor, and Ozimen, those four doctor Mahomet's successors, and are subdivided into seventy-two inferior sects, cLeo Afer reports. The Jews, as a company of vagabonds, are scattered over all parts; whose story, present estate, progress from time to time, is fully set down by dMr. Thomas Jackson, Doctor of Divinity, in his comment on the creed. A fifth part of the world, and hardly that, now professeth CHRISTI but so inlarded and interlaced with several superstitions, that there is scarce sound part to be found, or any agreement amongst them. Presbyter John iAfrica, lord of those Abyssinians, or Ethiopians, is by his profession a Chris-tian, but so different from us, with such new absurdities and ceremonies, such liberty, such a mixture of idolatry and paganism, e that they keep little more than a bare title of Christianity. They suffer polygamy, circumcision, stupen fastings, divorce as they will themselves, &c., and as the papists call on th Virgin Mary, so do they on Thomas Didymus before Christ. fThe Greek o Eastern Church is rent from this of the West, and as they have four chief patriarchs, so have they four subdivisions, besides those Nestorians, Jacobin: Syrians, Armenians, Georgians, &c., scattered over Asia Minor, Syria, Egypt &c., Greece, Walachia, Circassia, Bulgaria, Bosnia, Albania, Illyricum, Sec-vonia, Croatia, Thrace, Servia, Rascia, and a sprinkling amongst the Tartar the Russians, Muscovites, and most of that great duke's (czar's) subjects, at part of the Greek Church, and still Christians; but as one saith, temporis successu multas illi addiderunt superstitiones. In process of time they have added so many superstitions, they be rather semi-christians than otherwise That which remains is the Western Church with us in Europe, but so eclipse with several schisms, heresies and superstitions, that one knows not wher to find it. The papists have Italy, Spain, Savoy, part of Germany, Fronto Poland, and a sprinkling in the rest of Europe. In America, they hold a that which Spaniards inhabit, Hispania Nova, Castella Aurea, Peru, &c. I the East Indies, the Philippine, some small holds about Goa, Malacca, Zelar Ormus, &c., which the Portuguese got not long since, and those land-leapin jesuits have essayed in China, Japan, as appears by their yearly letters; iAfrica they have Melinda, Quiloa, Mombaze, &c., and some few towns, the drive all one superstition with another. Poland is a receptacle of all religion where Samosetans, Socinians, Photinians (now protected in Transylvania an Poland) Arrians, anabaptists are to be found, as well as in some German citie

Scandia is Christian, but Damianus A-Goess, the Portugal knight, complains, so mixed with magic, pagan rites and ceremonies, they may be as well counted idolaters: what Tacitus formerly said of a like nation, is verified in them, "A people subject to superstition, contrary to religion." And some of them as about Lapland and the Pilapians, the devil's possession, to this day, Misera hoe gens (saith mine k author) Satanas haentus possessor—et quod maxime mirandum et donendum, and which is to be admired and pitied; if any of them be baptised, which the kings of Sweden much labour, they die within seven or nine days after, and for that cause they will hardly be brought to Christianity, but worship still the devil, who daily appears to them. In their idolatrous courses, Gaudentibus diis patris quo religiose colunt, &c. Yet are they very superstitious, like our wild Irish: though they of the better note, the kings of Denmark and Sweden themselves, that govern them, be Lutherans; the remnant are Calvinists, Lutherans, in Germany equally mixed. And yet the emperor himself, dukes of Lorraine, Bavaria, and the princes electors, are most part professed papists. And though some parts of France and Ireland, Great Britain, half the cantons in Switzerland, and the Low Countries, be Calvinists, more defecate than the rest, yet at odds amongst themselves, not free from superstition. And which 1 Brochard, the monk, in his description of the Holy Land, after he had censured the Greek church, and showed their errors, concluded at last, Favit Deus ne Latinis multe irrepserint stultitiae, I say God grant there be no popgeries in our church. As a dam of water stopped in one place breaks out into another, so doth superstition. I say nothing of Anabaptists, Socinians, Brownists, Barrowists, Familiists, &c. There is superstition in our prayers, often in our hearing of sermons, bitter contentions, invectives, persecutions, strange conceits, besides diversity of opinions, schisms, factions, &c. But as the Lord (Job cap. xiii. v. 7.) said to Eliphaz, the Temanite, and his two friends, "his wrath was kindled against them, for they had not spoken of him things that were right:" we may justly of these schismatics and heretics, how wise soever in their own conceits, non recte loquantur de Deo, they speak not, they think not, they write not well of God, and as they ought. And therefore, Quid quaeso, mi Dorpius, as Erasmus concludes to Dorpius, hisce Theologis faciamus, aut quid preceris, visi forte siedelem medicum, qui cerebro medeatur? What shall we wish them but sanam mentem, and a good physician? But more of their differences, paradoxes, opinions, mad pranks, in the symptoms: I now hasten to the causes.

Subsec. II.—Causes of Religious melancholy. From the devil by miracles, apparitions, oracles. His instruments or factors, politicians, Priests, Impostors, Heretics, blind guides. In them simplicity, fear, blind zeal, ignorance, solitariness, curiosity, pride, vain-glory, presumption, &c. his engines, fasting, solitariness, hope, fear, &c.

We are taught in Holy Scripture, that the "Devil rangeth abroad like a roaring lion, still seeking whom he may devour:" and as in several shapes, so by several engines and devices he goeth about to seduce us; sometimes he transforms himself into an angel of light; and is so cunning that he is able, if it were possible, to deceive the very elect. He will be worshipped, as God himself, and is so adored by the heathen, and esteemed. And in imitation of that divine power, as Eusebius observes, to abuse or emulate God's glory, as Dandinus adds, he will have all homage, sacrifices, oblations, and whatsoever

ever else belongs to the worship of God, to be done likewise unto him, simur erit altissimo, and by this means inebriates the world, deludes, entraps, a destroys many a thousand souls. Sometimes by dreams, visions (as God Moses by familiar conference, the devil in several shapes talks with them: the Indies it is common, and in China nothing so familiar as apparitions, spirations, oracles, by terrifying them with false prodigies, counterfeit miracles, sending storms, tempests, diseases, plagues (as of old in Athens there were Apollo Alexicacus, Apollo λάμπος, pestifer et malorum depulsor), raising wa seditions by spectrums, troubling their consciences, driving them to despa terrors of mind, intolerable pains; by promises, rewards, benefits, and fi means, he raiseth such an opinion of his deity and greatness, that they do not do otherwise than adore him, do as he will have them, they dare not offer him. And to compel them more to stand in awe of him, "he sends acures diseases, disquiets their spirits (as Cyprian saith), torments and terrifi their souls, to make them adore him: and all his study, all his endeavour is divert them from true religion to superstition: and because he is damned his self, and in an error, he would have all the world participate of his errors, as be damned with him. The primum mobile, therefore, and first mover of supe rstition, is the devil, that great enemy of mankind, the principal age who in a thousand several shapes, after diverse fashions, with several engi illusions, and by several names hath deceived the inhabitants of the earth, several places and countries, still rejoicing at their falls. "All the world ov before Christ's time, he freely domineered, and held the souls of men in m servile subjection (saith Eusebius) in diverse forms, ceremonies, and sacrifice till Christ's coming," as if those devils of the air had shared the earth among them, which the Platonists held for gods (Ludus doorum sumus), and we our governors and keepers. In several places, they had several rites, orde names, of which read Wierus de prestigiis daemonum, lib. 1. cap. 5. Strozi Cicognia, and others; Adonized amongst the Syrians; Adramalech among the Caperenates, Asinie amongst the Emathites; Astartes with the Sidonian Astaroth with the Palestinies; Dagon with the Philistines; Tarty with t Hanei; Melchonias amongst the Ammonites: Beli the Babylonians; Beelzeb and Baal with the Samaritans and Moabites; Apsiis, Isis, and Osiris among the Egyptians; Apollo Pythus at Delphos, Colophon, Ancyra, Cuma, Eryth Jupiter in Crete, Venus at Cyprus, Juno at Carthage, Asculapius at Epidauff Diana at Ephesus, Pallas at Athens, &c. And even in these our days, in the East and West Indies, in Tarty, China, Japan, &c., what strange idols, in what prodigious forms, with what absurd ceremonies are they adore What strange sacraments, like ours of Baptism and the Lord's Supper, wh goody temples, priests, sacrifices they had in America, when the Spanish first landed there, let Acosta the Jesuit relate, lib. 5. cap. 1, 2, 3, 4, &c., a how the devil imitated the Ark and the children of Israel's coming out Egypt; with many such. For as Lipsius well discourseth out of the doctri of the Stoics, maxime cupiunt adorationem hominum, now and of old, they st and most especially desired to be adored by men. See but what Vertomann L. 5. c. 2. Marcus Polus, Lerius, Benzo, P. Martyr in his Ocean Decac Acosta, and Mat. Riccius, Expedit. Christ. in Sinas, lib. 1. relate. Eusebi wondereth how that wise city of Athens, and flourishing kingdoms of Gree should be so besotted; and we in our times, how those witty Chinese, so p

7 Vitam turbant, sommnes inquietant, irrepentes etiam in corpora mentes terrent, valetudini fragrunt, morbos laesament, ut ad cultum sub egress, nee silent his studium, quan tu a vera religio superstitioe vertant; cum sint ipsi penales, quas sint ad eam comites, ut habeant erroris perpetui
8 Lib. 4. prepartat. Evangul. c. Tantumque victoriam amenant hominum consequunt sunt, ut ad coligere unum velit, universum orbem istis sedentibus spiritibus subjectum false invenias; Usque ad Salvat adventum hominum eterni neque quiconque demones placabunt, &c. Piana. 7 Stroisins, Cleonias, et mag. lib. 3. cap. 7. Exek. viii. 4; Reg. xi. 4. Reg. 3. et 17. 4. Jer. xli.: Num. xx. 3; Reg.
9 Lib. 4. cap. 8. de praper, evangul.
spacious in all other things should be so galled, so tortured with superstition, so blind as to worship stocks and stones. But it is no marvel, when we see all out as great effects amongst Christians themselves; how are those Anabaptists, Arians, and Papists above the rest, miserably infatuated! Mars, Jupiter, Apollo, and Asclepius, have resigned their interest, names, and offices to St. George,

"8 (Maximo bellorum rector, quem nostra juventus
Pro Mavorte solvit)

St. Christopher, and a company of fictitious saints, Venus to the Lady of Loreto. And as those old Romans had several distinct gods, for diverse offices, persons, places, so have they saints, as \(^6^7\) Lavater well observes out of Lactantius, mutato nomine tantum, *tis the same spirit or devil that deludes them still. The manner how, as I say, is by rewards, promises, terrors, affrights, punishments. In a word, fair and foul means, hope and fear.

"How often hath Jupiter, Apollo, Bacchus, and the rest, sent plagues in \(^7^6\) Greece and Italy, because their sacrifices were neglected?"

\(^8^9\) Di multa neglecti dederunt
Hesperie mala lacteas.

... to terrify them, to arouse them up, and the like: see but Livy, Dionysius Halicarnasseus, Thucydides, Pausanius, Philostratus, * Polybius, before the battle of Cannae, prodiigit signis, ostentis, templo cuncta, private etiam ades secelatam. Cænes reigned in Aetolia, and because he did not sacrifice to Diana with his other gods (see more in Libanius his Diana), she sent a wild boar, insolutæ magnitudinis, qui terras et homines miserère depuscebat, to spoil both men and country, which was afterwards killed by Meleager. So Plutarch in the Life of Lucullus relates, how Mithridates, king of Pontus, at the siege of Cizicum, with all his navy, was overthrown by Proserpina, for neglecting of her holy day. She appeared in a vision to Aristogoras in the night. Cras inquit tybecinem Libicum cum tybine Pontico committam ("to-morrow I will cause a contest between a Lybian and a Pontic minstrel"), and the day following this enigma was understood; in a great south wind which came from Libya, she quite overwhelmed Mithridates' army. What prodigies and miracles, dreams, visions, predictions, apparitions, omacles, have been of old at Delphi, Dodona, Trophonius Denne, at Thebes, and Lebundia, of Jupiter Ammon in Egypt, Amphaiareus in Attica, &c.; what strange cures performed by Apollo and Asclepius? Juno's image and that of \(^b^9\) Fortune spake, \(^c^9\) Caster and Pollux fought in person for the Romans against Hannibal's army, as Pallas, Mars, Juno, Venus, for Greeks and Trojans, &c. Amongst our pseudo-catholics nothing so familiar as such miracles; how many cures done by our Lady of Loreto at Sichem! of old at our St. Thomas's shrine, &c. \(^a^9\) St. Sabine was seen to fight for Arnulphus, duke of Spoleta. \(^e^9\) St. George fought in person for John the Bastard of Portugal, against the Castilians; St. James for the Spaniards in America. In the battle of Bannockburn, where Edward the Second, our English king, was foiled by the Scota, St. Philanus' arm was seen to fight (if \(^f^9\) Hector Boethius doth not impose), that was before shut up in a silver capcase; another time, in the same author, St. Magnus fought for them. Now for visions, revelations, miracles, not only out of the legend, out of purgatory, but every day comes news from the Indies, and at home read the Jesuits' Letters, Ribadeneira, Thurselunus, Acosta, Lippomanus, Xaverius, Ignatius' Lives, &c., and tell me what difference?

His ordinary instruments or factors which he useth, as God himself did

\(^x^9\) Capt. Mart. 4. Fast. de Sancto Georgio. "O great master of war, whom our youths worship as if he were Mars self."

\(^y^9\) Part. 1. cap. 1. et lib. 2. cap. 9.

\(^z^9\) Polid. Vrg. lib. 1. de prodig. * Hor. 1. 3. od. 6.

\(^{\ast}\) Lib. 9. hist.

\(^a^9\) Orata lego me de sanctis mulieris Dian Halcarn.

\(^b^9\)ULLY de nat. deorum lib. 2.

\(^c^9\) Eum Venus Teuceris, Pallas iniquus fuit.

\(^d^9\) Jo. Molanus, lib. 3. cap. 59.

\(^e^9\) Pet. Oliver, de Johanne primo Portugallis Egae stranue jucunda, et diversae partis letus clupeo exordiis.

\(^f^9\) L. 14. Locioni sponte aperisse et pro levi pugnasse.
good kings, lawful magistrates, patriarchs, prophets, to the establishing of church, are politicians, statesmen, priests, heretics, blind guides, imposters, pseudo-prophets, to propagate his superstition. And first to begin of politicia it hath ever been a principal axiom with them to maintain religion or superstition, which they determine of, alter and vary upon all occasions, as to the seems best, they make religion mere policy, a cloak, a human invention, ni aequa valet ad regendos vulgi animos as superstition, as Tacitus and Tully do Austin l. 4. de civit. Dei c. 9. censures Csecovula saying and acknowledging expedire civitates religione falli, that it was a fit thing cities should be deceit by religion, according to the diverb, Si mundus vult decipi, decipiatur, if the world will be gulled, let it be gull'd, 'tis good howsoever to keep it in sujection. 'Tis that Aristotle and Plato inculcate in their politics, "Religi neglected, brings plagues to the city, opens a gap to all naughtiness." that which all our late politicians ingeminate. Cromerus, l. 2. pol. hi Boterus, l. 3. de incrementis urbium. Clapmarius, l. 2. cap. 9. de Arcanis rerum. pub. cap. 4. lib. 2. polit. Captain Machiavel will have a prince by all means counterfeit religion, to be superstitious in show at least, to seem to be devor frequent holy exercises, honour divines, love the church, affect priests, Numa, Lycurgus, and such law-makers were and did, non ut his fidem habeas sed ut subditos religiosis metu facilium in officio continent, to keep people obedience. Nam naturaliter (as Cardan writes), lex Christiana lex est pieta justicia, fidei, simplicitatis, &c. But this error of his, Innocentius Jentilett a French lawyer, theorem. 9. comment. 1. de Relig. and Thomas Bozius in l. book de rebus gentium et Regorum have copiously confused. Many politicia I dare not deny, maintain religion as a true means, and sincerely speak of without hypocrisy, are truly zealous and religious themselves. Justice a religion are the two chief props and supporters of a well-governed common wealth; but most of them are but Machiavelians, counterfeiters only for political ends: for solus rex (which Campanella, cap. 18. atheismi triumphati observe as amongst our modern Turks, reipub. Finis, as knowing magnum ejus animos imperium; and that, as Sabellius delivers, "A man without religion is like a horse without a bridle." No way better to curb than superstition, terrify men's consciences, and to keep them in awe: they make new laws statutes, invent new religions, ceremonies, as so many strolling horses, to the ends. Hae enim (religio) si falsa sit, dummodo vera credatur, animorum ferociam domat, libidines coercit, subditos principi obsequentes efficit. The fore (smith Polybius of Lycurgus), "did he maintain ceremonies, not that was superstitious himself, but that he perceived mortal men more apt to embrace paradoxes than aught else, and durst attempt no evil things for fear of gods." This was Zamolocus's stratagem amongst the Thracians, Numa's pl when he said he had conference with the nymph Ageria, and that of Sertorius with a hart; to get more credit to their decrees, by deriving them from the gods; or else they did all by divine instinct, which Nicholas Damasoew observes of Lycurgus, Solon, and Minos, they had their laws dictated, mo sacro, by Jupiter himself. So Mahomet referred his new laws to the an Gabriel, by whose direction he gave out they were made. Caligula in Di feigned himself to be familiar with Castor and Pollux, and many such, who kept those Romans under (who, as Machiavel proves, lib. 1. dispunt. cap. 11. 12. were Religione maxime moti, most superstitions): and did curb the peo

---

8 Religion, as they hold, is policy, invented alone to keep men in awe. b. 1. Annal. 10ennes relig moventur. & in Verrem. 9 Zelenius, praefat. legis qui urbe aut regionem Inhabitabant, persuasos operet esse Deos. 10. de legibus. Religio neglecta maximam pestem in civitatem infert, cum seculum feenstram aperit. 11 Cardanus, Com. in Ptolemeum quadrupart. 12. Lipsius, l. 1. Homo sine religione, sicut egens sine fraco. 13 Vanniuis, div. 92. de oraculis. 14 If a religio false, only let it be supposed to be true, and it will tame mortal fantasy, restrain lusts, and make loyal liberty. " Lib. 10. Ideo Lycurgus, &c. non quod lice superstitiones, sed quod videret mortales paras facultias ampesti, nec res graves sed sine persicul6 decurram. 15 Leonardus, epist. 1. Novas leges ad Angelum Gabrielem referendas, quo monitore monticabatur omnia se circare.
more by this means, than by force of arms, or severity of human laws. "Sola plebecula eam agnoscebat (saiti Vaninus, dial. 1. lib. 4. de admirandis nature arcanis) speaking of religion, quae facile decipitur, magnates vero et philosophi nequaquam, your grandees and philosophers had no such conceit, sed ad imperii confectionem et amplificationem quam sine prætextu religiosis tueri non poterant; and many thousands in all ages have ever held as much, Philosophers especially, animadvertebant hi semper hae esse fabelles, attamen ob metum publice potestatis silvis cogebantur, they were still silent for fear of laws, &c.

To this end that Syrian Phyresides, Pythagoras his master, broached in the West amongst the heathens, first the immortality of the soul, as Trismegistus did in Egypt, with a many of feigned gods. Those French and Briton Druids in the West first taught, saith 4 Cæsar, non interire animas (that souls did not die), "but after death to go from one to another, that so they might encourage them to virtue." 'Twas for a politic end, and to this purpose the old 5 poets feigned those Elysian fields, their Æacus, Minos, and Rhadamantus, their infernal judges, and those Stygian lakes, fiery Phlegethon, Pluto's kingdom, and variety of torments after death. Those that had done well, went to the Elysian fields, but evil doers to Cocytus, and to that burning lake of 6 hell with fire and brimstone for ever to be tormented. 'Tis this which 7 Plato labours for in his Phædon, et 9. de rep. The Turks in their Alcoran, when they set down rewards, and several punishments for every particular virtue and vice, when they persuade men, that they that die in battle shall go directly to heaven, but wicked livers to eternal torment, and all of all sorts (much like our papistical purgatory), for a set time shall be tortured in their graves, as appears by that tract which John Baptist Alcau, that Mauritian priest, now turned Christian, hath written in his confession of the Alcoran. After a man's death two black angels, Nunquir and Nequir (so they call them) come to him to his grave and punish him for his precedent sins; if he lived well, they torture him the less; if ill, per indesinentes cruciatus ad diem judicij, they incessantly punish him to the day of judgment. Nemo vivendum qui ad horum mentionem non totus horret et contremiscit, the thought of this crucifies them all their lives long, and makes them spend their days in fasting and prayer, ne mala hac contaminat, &c. A Tartar prince, saith Marcus Polus, lib. 1. cap. 28. called Senex de Montibus, the better to establish his government amongst his subjects, and to keep them in awe, found a convenient place in a pleasant valley, environed with hills, in "which he made a delicious park full of odoriferous flowers and fruits, and a palace of all worldly contents," that could possibly be devised, music, pictures, variety of meats, &c., and chose out a certain young man, whom with a "so oriforous potion he so benumbed, that he perceived nothing: "and so fast asleep as he was, caused him to be conveyed into this fair garden;" where after he had lived awhile in all such pleasures a sensual man could desire, "he cast him into a sleep again, and brought him forth, that when he awakened he might tell others he had been in Paradise." The like he did for hell, and by this means brought his people to subjection. Because heaven and hell are mentioned in the scriptures, and to be believed necessary by Christians: so cunningly can the devil and his ministers, in imitation of true religion, counterfeit and forge the like, to circumvent and delude his superstitious followers. Many such tricks and impostures are acted by politicians, in China especially, but with what effect I will discourse in the symptoms.

Next to politicians, if I may distinguish them, are some of our priests (make religion policy), if not far beyond them, for they domineer over pri and statesmen themselves. *Carminicinum exercent,* one saith they tyrann over men's consciences more than any other tormentors whatsoever, partly their commodity and gain; *Religionum enim omnium abusus* (as Poste holds); *questus seicit sacrificium in causa est:* for sovereignty, credit maintain their state and reputation, out of ambition and avarice, which their chief supporters: what have they not made the common people believe? Impossibilities in nature, incredible things; what devices, traditions, comonies, have they not invented in all ages to keep men in obedience, to en themselves? *Quibus questuis sunt capiti superstitione animi,* as Livy sa Those Egyptian priests of old got all the sovereignty into their hands, knowing, as Curtius insinuates, *nulla res efficacius multitudinem regit qu superstitio; melius vatibus quidem ducibus parent, quam religione capiti, et impotentes feminae:* the common people will sooner obey priests than capta and nothing so forcible as superstition, or better than blind zeal to r multitude; have so terrified and galled them, that it is incredible to rel All nations almost have been besotted in this kind: amongst our Britons old Gauls the Druids; magi in Persia; philosophers in Greece; Chalde amongst the Oriental; Brachmanni in India; Gymnosophists in Ethiopia; Turditanes in Spain; Augurs in Rome, have insulted; Apollo's priests in Greece, Phaebades and Pythonisse, by their oracles and phantasms, Amarius and his companions; now mahometan and pagan priests, what can't not effect? How do they not infatuate the world? *Adeo ubique* (as Scal writes of the mahometan priests), *tum gentium tum locorum, gens ista sacror ministra vulgi secat spes ad ea quae ipsi fingunt somnia,* "so cunningly, they gull the commons in all places and countries." But above all oth that high priest of Rome, the dam of that monstrous and superstitious br the bull-bellowing pope, which now rageth in the West, that three-hea Cerberus hath played his part. "Whose religion at this day is mere pol a state wholly composed of superstition and wit, and needs nothing but w superstition to maintain it, that useth colleges and religious houses to as purpose as forts and castles, and doth more at this day" by a company scribbling parasites, fiery-spirited friars, zealous anchorites, hypocritical fessors, and those pretorian soldiers, his Janissary Jesuits, and that dissocis society, as Longius terms it, *postremus diaboli contus et saculis excrementis:* that now stand in the fore front of the battle, will have a monopoly of, engross all other learning, but domineer in divinity, *Excipiant societatis vulnelli,* and fight alone almost (for the rest are but his dromedaries and ass than ever he could have done by garrisons and armies. What power of pri or penal law, be it never so strict, could enforce men to do that which for science's sake they will voluntarily undergo? As to fast from all flesh, abst from marriage, rise to their prayers at midnight, whip themselves, with stuous fasting and penance, abandon the world, wilful poverty, perform canon and blind obedience, to prostrate their goods, fortunes, bodies, lives, and o up themselves at their superiors' feet, at his command? What so powerful engine as superstition? which they right well perceiving, are of no religion all themselves: *Primum enim* (as Calvin rightly suspects, the tenor practice of their life proves), *arecane illius theologicae, quod apud eos res caput est, nihil esse deum,* they hold there is no God, as Leo X. did, Hilbrand the magician, Alexander VI., Julius II., mere atheists, and which common proverb amongst them approves, "The worst Christians of Italy
the Romans, of the Romans the priests are wildest, the leastest priests are preferred to be cardinals, and the baddest man amongst the cardinals is chosen to be pope," that is an epicure, as most part the popes are, infidels and Lucianists, for so they think and believe; and what is said of Christ to be fables and impostures, of heaven and hell, day of judgment, paradise, immortality of the soul, are all,

"1 Rumores vacui, verbaque invaina, Et par sollicito fabula sonmia."

"Dreams, toys, and old wives' tales." Yet as so many 2 whetstones to make other tools cut, but cut not themselves, though they be of no religion at all, they will make others most devout and superstitious, by promises and threats, compel, enforce from, and lead them by the nose like so many bears in a line; when as their end is not to propagate the church, advance God's kingdom, seek His glory or common good, but to enrich themselves, to enlarge their territories, to dominate and compel them to stand in awe, to live in subjection to the See of Rome. For what otherwise care they? 3 Si mundus vult decipi, deceptatur, "since the world wishes to be gulled, let it be gulled," 'tis fit it should be so. And for which "Austin cites Varro to maintain his Roman religion, we may better apply to them: multa vera, quae vulgus scire non est utile; pleraque falsa, quae tamen aliter existimata populum expedet;" some things are true, some false, which for their own ends they will not have the gullish commonality take notice of. As well may witness their intolerable covetousness, strange forgeries, forgeries, fooletries, unrighteous subtleties, impostures, illusions, new doctrines, paradoxes, traditions, false miracles, which they have still forged, to enthrall, circumvent and subjugate them, to maintain their own estates. One while by bulls, pardons, indulgences, and their doctrines of good works, that they be meritorious, hope of heaven, by that means they have so fleeced the commonality, and spurred on this free superstitious horse, that he runs himself blind, and is an ass to carry burdens. They have so amplified Peter's patrimony, that from a poor bishop, he is become Rex Regum, Dominus dominantium, a demigod, as his canonists make him (Felinus and the rest), above God himself. And for his wealth and 3 temporalities, is not inferior to many kings: his cardinals, princes' companions: and in every kingdom almost, abbots, friars, monks, friars, &c., and his clergy, have engrossed a third part, half, in some places all, into their hands. Three princes, electors in Germany, bishops; besides Magdeburg, Spire, Salzburg, Breme, Bamberg, &c. In France, as Bodine, Lib. de repub. gives us to understand, their revenues are 12,300,000 livres; and of twelve parts of the revenues in France, the church possesses seven. The Jesuits, a new sect, begun in this age, have, as "Middendorpius and "Pelargus reckon up, three or four hundred colleges in Europe, and more revenues than many princes. In France, as Arnoldus proves, in thirty years they have got bis centum librarum millia annua, 200,000L. I say nothing of the rest of their orders. We have had in England, as Armachaus demonstrates, above 30,000 friars at once, and as "Speed collects out of Leland and others, almost 600 religious houses, and near 200,000L. in revenues of the old rent belonging to them, besides images of gold, silver, plate, furniture, goods and ornaments, as "Weever calculates, and esteems them at the dissolution of abbey, worth a million of gold. How many towns in every kingdom hath superstitition enriched? What a deal of money by musty relics, images, idolatry, have their mass-priests engrossed,

1 Seneca. 2 De civ. Dei, lib. 4, cap. 31. 3 Seeking their own, saith Paul, not Christ's. 4 Italy, the Marquisate of Ancona, beside Rome, and the territories adjacent, Bolonia, Ferrara, &c. Avignon in France, &c. 5 Estote fratres mel, et principes hujus mundi. 6 The Latin suspect the viz greatness, witness these statutes of monastir. 7 Lib. 8, de Academ. 8 Prefat. Lib. de paradox. Gestit 9-thom. provincia haber. Col. 36. Neapel. 23. Veneta. 13. Lucit. 15. India orient. 27. Brasil. 29, &c. 10 in his Chronic. vit. Hen. 8. 11 in cap. of his funeral monuments.
Religious Melancholy.

[Part. 3. Sc.]

and what sums have they scraped by their other tricks! Loretto in Ital
Walsingham in England, in those days, *Ubi omnia auro nutent*, "where every-
thing shines with gold," saith Erasmus, St. Thomas’s shrine, &c., may witnes
*Delphos so renowned of old in Greece for Apollo’s oracle, Delos commun
conditium et emporium solis religione munitionem;* Dodona, whose fame an
wealth were sustained by religion, were not so rich, so famous. If they can
get but a relic of some saint, the Virgin Mary’s picture, idols or the like, the
City is for ever made, it needs no other maintenance. Now if any of the
ircapostures or juggling tricks be controverted, or called in question: if
magnanimous or zealous Luther, an Heroical Luther, as *Dithmarus cal
him, dare touch the monks’ bellies, all is in a combustion, all is in an uproar
Demetrius and his associates are ready to pull him in pieces, to keep up
their trades, “Great is Diana of the Ephesians:” with a mighty shout of tw
hours long they will roar and not be pacified.

Now for their authority, what by auricular confession, satisfaction, penance
Peter’s keys, thunderings, excommunications, &c., roaring bulls, this big
priest of Rome, shaking his Gorgon’s head, hath so terrified the soul of man
a silly man, insulted over majesty itself, and swaggered generally over a
Europe for many ages, and still doth to some, holding them as yet in slavish
subjection, as never tyrannising Spaniards did by their poor negroes, or Turk
by their galley-slaves. *The bishop of Rome (saith Stapleton, a parasit
of his, de Mag. Eccles. lib. 2, cap. 1.) hath done that without arms, which the
Roman emperors could never achieve with forty legions of soldiers,” deposes
kings, and crowned them again with his foot, made friends, and corrected a
his pleasure, &c. *Tis a wonder, saith Machiavel, *Florentiae his. lib. :*
“What slavery King Henry II. endured for the death of Thomas à Becket
what things he was enjoined by the Pope, and how he submitted himself to d
that which in our times a private man would not endure,” and all through
supcrstition. *Henry IV. disposed of his empire, stood barefooted with his w
at the gates of Canossus. *Frederic the Emperor was trodden on by Alexandre
III., another held Adrian’s stirrup, King John kissed the knees of Pandulph
the Pope’s legate, &c. What made so many thousand Christians travel from
France, Britain, &c., into the Holy Land, spend such huge sums of money, g
a pilgrimage so familiarly to Jerusalem, to creep and crouch, but slavish su-
perstition? What makes them so freely venture their lives, to leave their nativ
countries, to go seek martyrdom in the Indies, but superstition? to be assas
sins, to meet death, murder kings, but a false persuasion of merit, of canonici
or blind obedience which they instil into them, and animate them by strange
illusions, hope of being martyrs and saints! such pretty feats can the de
work by priests, and so well for their own advantage can they play their part
And if they were not yet enough, by priests and politicians to delude mankind
and crush the souls of men, he hath more actors in his tragedy, more iron
in the fire, another scene of heretics, factions, ambitious wits, insolent spirit
schismatics, impostors, false prophets, blind guides, that out of pride, singi
larity, vain-glory, blind zeal, cause much more madness yet, set all in an upro
by their new doctrines, paradoxes, figments, crotchets, make new division
subdivisions, new sects, oppose one superstition to another, one kingdom *
another, commit prince and subjects, brother against brother, father again
son, to the ruin and destruction of a commonwealth, to the disturbance
peace, and to make a general confusion of all estates. How did those Arrian

3 Pausanias in Laconicis, lib. 3. Idem de Achalicia, lib. 7, cujus sacros opes, et valde incerta fam
*Exercit. Eth. Colleg. 3, disp. 3. 4 Act. x1s. 53. 5 Pontifex Romanus puerus inmisra regibus ter
jura dat, ad rema evexit, ad pecem coegit, et pecantes castigat, &c. quod Imperatores Romani 40. legionibus
arsiant non esserent.
*Mirum quanta passus sit ill. 2., quonodam se submissit, ea se facturum palliaggi
quorum hodie ne privatus quidem parvum faceret. 6 digonins, 4 hist. Ital. 7 Caro, lib. 3. Fox Martyr
rage of old? how many did they circumvent? Those Pelagians, Manichees, &c., their names alone would make a just volume. How many silly souls have impostors still deluded, drawn away, and quite alienated from Christ! Lucian's Alexander Simon Magus, whose statue was to be seen and adored in Rome, saith Justin Martyr, Simoni des Sancto, &c., after his decease. Apollonius Tiansaeus, Cynops, Euno, who by counterfeiting some new ceremonies and juggling tricks of that Dea Syria, by spitting fire, and the like, got an army together of 40,000 men, and did much harm: with Eudo de stellis, of whom Nubrigensis speaks, lib. 1. cap. 19. that in King Stephen's days imitated most of Christ's miracles, fed I know not how many people in the wilderness, and built castles in the air, &c., to the seducing of multitudes of poor souls. In Franconia, 1476, a base illiterate fellow took upon him to be a prophet, and preach, John Beheim by name, a neatherd at Nicholhausen, he seduced 30,000 persons, and was taken by the commonality to be a most holy man, come from heaven. Tradesmen left their shops, women their distasts, servants ran from their masters, children from their parents, scholars left their tutors, all to hear him, some for novelty, some for zeal. He was burnt at last by the Bishop of Wartzburg, and so he and his heresy vanished together. How many such impostors, false prophets, have lived in every king's reign? what chronicles will not afford such examples? that as so many ignes furri, have led men out of the way, terrified some, deluded others, that are apt to be carried about by the blast of every wind, a rude inconstant multitude, a silly company of poor souls, that follow all, and are cluttered together like so many pebbles in a tide. What prodigious follies, madness, vexations, persecutions, absurdities, impossibilities, these impostors, heretics, &c., have thrust upon the world, what strange effects shall be shown in the symptoms.

Now the means by which, or advantages the devil and his infernal ministers take, so to delude and disquiet the world with such idle ceremonies, false doctrines, superstitious fopperies, are from themselves, innate fear, ignorance, simplicity, hope and fear, those two battering cannons and principal engines, with their objects, reward and punishment, purgatory, Limbus Patrum, &c., which now more than ever tyrannise; \*\*\* for what province is free from atheism, superstition, idolatry, schism, heresy, impiety, their factors and followers? thence they proceed, and from that same decayed image of God, which is yet remaining in us.

1. Os homini sublime deedit, civilique tueri
Juvil.

Our own conscience doth dictate so much unto us, we know there is a God and nature doth inform us; Nulla gens tan barbara (saith Tully) cui non insident hae persuasio Demi esse; sed nec Scytha, nec Grecus, nec Persa, nec Hyperboreus dissentiet (as Maximus Tyrius the Platonist, ser. 1. farther adds), nec continentis nec insularum habitat, let him dwell where he will, in what coast soever, there is no nation so barbarous that is not persuaded there is a God. It is a wonder to read of that infinite superstition amongst the Indians in this kind, of their tenets in America, pro suo quisque bibit varias res venrulabantur superstitione, plantas, animalia, montes, &c. omne quod ambatur aut horribant (some few places excepted as he grants, that had no God at all.) So the heavens declare the glory of God, and the firmament declares his handy work, Psalm xix. "Every creature will evince it;" Præsentemque referat quodlibet herbam dei. Nolentes sciant, facturus inviti, as the said Tyrius proceeds, will or will not, they must acknowledge it. The philosophers, Socrates,

\* Hierocles contends Apollonius to have been as great a prophet as Christ, whom Eusebius confutes. 1. 3. c. 57. Artifices ex officiis, arius à sile, horum à colo, à quibus nunc quodam ratione, neacis perebutus et dominis recta adeunt, &c. Cunctas deum ab Hezbollah Episcopo; heresiac evanuit. 2. Nulla non provident heresias, Athelasior, &c. plena. Nullus ortus angustus ab hisce bellius immunitus. 3. Lib. 1. de nat. Deum. "He gave to man an upward gaze, commanding him to fix his eyes on heaven."
Plato, Plotinus, Pythagoras, Trismegistus, Seneca, Epictetus, those Magi, Druids, &c. went as far as they could by the light of nature; "multa prœcœla de naturâ Dei scripta reliquerunt, "writ many things well of the nature of God, but they had but a confused light, a glimpse,"

"1 Quæla per incertam lunam sub luce maligna
Est iter in sylvis,"

"as he that walks by moonshine in a wood," they groped in the dark; they had a gross knowledge, as he in Euripides, O Deus quicumque es, sive caelest, sive terra, sive aliquid quid, and that of Aristotle, Ens entium miscerere mei. And so of the immortality of the soul, and future happiness. Immortalitatem animæ (saith Hierom) Pythagoras sœmiavit, Democritus non credidit, in consolationem damnationis sua Socrates in carceri disputavit; Indus, Persa, Cothus, &c. Philosophantur. So some said this, some that, as they conceived themselves, which the devil perceiving, led them farther out (as"\n
Lemnus observes) and made them worship him as their God with stocks and stones, and torture themselves to their own destruction, as he thought fit himself, inspired his priests and ministers with lies and fictions to proseecute the same, which they for their own ends were as willing to undergo, taking advantage of their simplicity, fear and ignorance. For the common people are as a flock of sheep, a rude, illiterate rout, void many times of common sense, a mere beast, bellâ mulborum capitum, will go whithersoever they are led: as you lead a ram over a gap by the horns, all the rest will follow, "Non quid eundam, sed quâ itur, they will do as they see others do, and as their prince will have them, let him be of what religion he will, they are for him. Now for these idolaters, Maxentius and Licinius, then for Constantine a Christian. "Quo Christum neyant, male perceunt, acclamationem est Decies, for two hours' space; qui Christum non colunt, Augusti inimici sunt, acclamationem est ter decies; and by and by idolaters again under that Apostle Julianus; all Arrians under Constantius, good Catholics again under Jovinianus. "And little difference there is between the discretion of men and children in this case, especially of old folks and women, as"Cardan discourseth, when as they are tossed with fear and superstition, and with other men's folly and dishonesty." So that I may say their ignorance is a cause of their superstition, a symptom, and madness itself: Supplicii causa est, suppliciumque sui. Their own fear, folly, stupidity, to be debepro lethargy, is that which gives occasion to the other, and pulls these miseries on their own heads. For in all these religions and superstitions, amongst our idolaters, you shall find that the parties first affected, are silly, rude, ignorant people, old folks, that are naturally prone to superstition, weak women, or some poor, rude, illiterate persons, that are apt to be wrought upon and gullcd in this kind, prone without either examination or due consideration (for they take up religion a trust, as at mercers' they do their wares) to believe anything. And the best means they have to broach first, or to maintain it when they have done, is to keep them still in ignorance: for "ignorance is the mother of devotion," as all the world knows, and these times can amply witness. This hath been the devil's practice, and his infernal ministers' in all ages; not as our Saviour by a few silly fishermen, to confound the wisdom of the world, to save publicans and sinners, but to make advantage of their ignorance, to convert them and their associates; and that they may better effect what they intend, they begin, as I say, with poor \n
stupid, illiterate persons. So Mahomet did when he published his Alcoran, which is a piece of wo\n
k Zanchius.  1 Visc. 6. En.  2 Superstitio ex ignorantia diviniitatis emersit, ex vitiosa annulatione et daemonum illucbris, insanias, tempestas, terribiles, et cui se adduxit necens, quem impulerit, qui se conmitat, a daemono fudice decipata. Lemnus, lib. 3. c. 8.  3 Seneca.  4 Vide Baronium 3 Annalium a anno 324. viii. Constantin.  5 De rerum varietate, 1. 3. 38. Parum vero distat sapientia virorum paucil, multis minus semen et mulierum, cum metu et superstitione et aliena studia et improbitate quo pacto agitantur.  6 In all superstition wise men follow fools. Bacon's Essay.
(saith "Bredenbachius") "full of nonsense, barbarism, confusion, without rhyme, reason, or any good composition, first published to a company of rude rustics, hog-robbers, that had no discretion, judgment, art, or understanding, and is so still maintained." For it is a part of their policy to let no man comment, dare to dispute or call in question to this day any part of it, be it never so absurd, incredible, ridiculous, fabulous as it is, must be believed implicite, upon pain of death no man must dare to contradict it, "God and the emperor," &c. What else do our papists, but by keeping the people in ignorance vent and broach all their new ceremonies and traditions, when they conceal the scripture, read it in Latin, and to some few alone, feeding the slavish people in the meantime with tales out of legends, and such like fabulous narrations? Whom do they begin with but collapsed ladies, some few tradesmen, superstitious old folks, illiterate persons, weak women, discontent, rude, silly companions, or sooner circumvent? so do all our schismatics and heretics. Marcus and Valentinian, heretics, in *Ireneus, seduced first I know not how many women, and made them believe they were prophets. friar Cornelius of Dort seduced a company of silly women. What are all our anabaptists, brownists, barrowists, familialists, but a company of rude, illiterate, capricious, base fellows? What are most of our papists, but stupid, ignorant and blind bayards? how should they otherwise be, when as they are brought up and kept still in darkness? "If their pastors (saith Lavater) had done their duties, and instructed their flocks as they ought, in the principles of Christian religion, or had not forbidden them the reading of scriptures, they had not been as they are." But being so misled all their lives in superstition, and carried hood-winked like hawks, how can they prove otherwise than blind idiots, and superstitions asses? what else shall we expect at their hands? Neither is it sufficient to keep them blind, and in cimmerian darkness, but withal, as a schoolmaster doth by his boys, to make them follow their books, sometimes by good hope, promises and encouragements, but most of all by fear, strict discipline, severity, threats and punishments, do they collogue and soothe up their silly auditors, and so bring them into a fools' paradise. Rex eris aiant, si recte etius, do well, thou shalt be crowned; but for the most part by threats, terrors, and affrights, they tyrannise and terrify their distressed souls: knowing that fear alone is the sole and only means to keep men in obedience, according to that hemisticium of Petro-nius, primum in orbe deos fecit timor, the fear of some divine and supreme powers, keeps men in obedience, makes the people do their duties: they play upon their consciences; *which was practised of old in Egypt by their priests; when there was an eclipse, they made the people believe God was angry, great miseries were to come; they take all opportunities of natural causes, to delude the people's senses, and with fearful tales out of purgatory, feigned apparitions, earthquakes in Japania or China, tragical examples of devils, possessions, obsessions, false miracles, counterfeit visions, &c. They do so insult over and restrain them, never hoby so dared a larke, that they will not offend the least tradition, tread, or scarce look awry: Deus bone (*Lavater exclaims) quot hoc commentum de purgatorio miseri oixit! good God, how many men have been miscarriedly affected by this fiction of purgatory!

To these advantages of hope and fear, ignorance and simplicity, he hath: several engines, traps, devices, to batter and enthrall, omitting no opportunities, according to men's several inclinations, abilities, to circumvent and humour them, to maintain his superstitions, sometimes to stupify, besot them:

sometimes again by oppositions, factions, to set all at odds and in an uproar; sometimes he infects one man, and makes him a principal agent; sometimes whole cities, countries. If of meaner sort, by stupidity, canonical obedience, blind zeal, &c. If of better note, by pride, ambition, popularity, vain-glory. If of the clergy, and more eminent, of better parts than the rest, more learned, he puffs them up with a vain conceit of their own worth, \textit{sic: infiniti}, they begin to swell, and scorn all the world in respect of themselves and thereupon turn heretics, schismatics, broach new doctrines, frame crotchets and the like; or else out of too much learning become mad, or out of curiosity they will search into God's secrets, and eat of the forbidden fruit; out of presumption of their holiness and good gifts, inspirations, become prophets, enthusiasts, and what not? or else if they be displeased, discontent and have not (as they suppose) preferment to their worth, have some disgrace repulse, neglect, or not esteemed as they fondly value themselves, or out of emulation, they begin presently to rage and rave, \textit{calum terrea miscent,} they become so impatient in an instant, that a whole kingdom cannot contain the free and wild spirit of them; they will set all in a combustion, all at variance, to be revenged of their adversaries. \* Donatus, when he saw Cecilianus preferred before him in the bishopric of Carthage, turned heretic, and so did Arius, because Alexander wiser than the other philosophers, had taught him that he has examples at home, and too many experiments of such persons. If they be laymen of better note, the same engines of pride, ambition, emulation, and jealousy, take place, they will be gods themselves: \* Alexander in India, after his victories, became so insolent, he would be adored for a god, and those Roman emperors came to that height of madness, they must have temples built to them, sacrifices to their deities, Divus Augustus, D. Claudius D. Adrianus: \* Heliogabalus, "put out that vestal fire at Rome, expelled the virgins, and banished all other religious all over the world, and would be the sole God himself." Our Turks, China kings, great Chams, and Mogors: little less, assuming divine and bombast titles to themselves; the meaner so are too credulous, and led with blind zeal, blind obedience, to prosecute and maintain whatsoever their soothsayers leaders shall propose, what they in pride of singularity, revenge, vain-glory, ambition, spleen, for gain, shall rashly maintain and broach, their disciples make a matter of conscience, of hell and damnation, if they do it not, and will rather forsake wives, children, house, at home, lands, goods, fortunes, life itself, than omit or abjure the least tithe of it, and to advance the common cause, undergo any miseries, turn traitors, assassins, pseudo-martyrs, with full assurance and hope of reward in that other world, that they shall certainly merit by it, win heaven, be canonised for saint.

Now when they are truly possessed with blind zeal, and misled with superstition, he hath many other baits to inveigle and infatuate them further yet, to make them quite mortified and mad, and that under colour of perfection, merit by penance, going woolward, whipping, arms, fastings, &c. An. 1321 there was a sect of whippers in Germany, that, to the astonishment of the beholders, lashed, and cruelly tortured themselves. I could give many other instances of each particular. But these works so done are meritorious, \( \text{opere operato, ex condigno,} \) for themselves and others, to make them mæcent and consume their bodies, \textit{species virtutis et umbra}, those evangelical counsel are propounded, as our pseudo-catholics call them, canonical obedience, with poverty, "vows of chastity, monkery, and a solitary life, which extend almost all religions, and superstitions, to Turks, Chinese, Gentiles, Abyssinians, Greeks, Latins, and all countries. Amongst the rest, fasting, contemplation, solitariness, are as it were certain rams by which the devil doth batter and

\begin{footnotesize}
\begin{itemize}
\item \textit{Austini.}
\item \textit{Curtius, lib. 8.}
\item \textit{Lampridius vita ejus.}
\item \textit{Virgines vestales, et sacrum ignem Romae eximit, et omnes ubique per orbem terrae religiones, unum hoc studium ut solus deus coelestis.}
\item \textit{Flagellati latinum secta.}
\item \textit{Munster, 19.}
\item \textit{Cosmog. cap. 19.}
\item \textit{Votum calibatista, monachastas.}
\end{itemize}
\end{footnotesize}
work upon the strongest constitutions.  Nonnulli (saith Peter Forestus) ob longas ineditas, studia et meditaciones coelestes, de rebus sacris et religione semper agitant, by fasting overmuch, and divine meditations, are overcome. Not that fasting is a thing itself to be discommended, for it is an excellent means to keep the body in subjection, a preparative to devotion, the physic of the soul, by which chaste thoughts are engendered, true zeal, a divine spirit, whence wholesome counsels do proceed, concupiscence is restrained, vicious and predominant lusts and humors are expelled. The fathers are very much in commendation of it, and, as Calvin notes, "sometimes immoderate. "The mother of health, key of heaven, a spiritual wing to ereave us, the chariot of the Holy Ghost, banner of faith," &c. And "tis true they say of it, if it be moderately and seasonably used, by such parties as Moses, Elias, Daniel, Christ, and his apostles made use of it; but when by this means they will supererogate, and as Erasmus well taxeth, Caelum non sufficere putant suis meritis, Heaven is too small a reward for it; they make choice of times and meats, buy and sell their merits, attribute more to them than to the ten Commandments, and count it a greater sin to eat meat in Lent, than to kill a man, and as one sayeth, Plus respicient assum piscem, quam Christum crucifixum, plus salomonem quam Solomonem, quibus in ore Christus, Epicurus in corda, "pay more respect to a broiled fish than to Christ crucified, more regard to salmon than to Solomon, have Christon their lips, but Epicurus in their hearts," when some counterfeit, and some attribute more to such works of theirs than to Christ's death and passion; the devil sets in a foot, strangely deludes them, and by that means makes them to overthrow the temperature of their bodies, and hazard their souls. Never any strange illusions of devils amongst hermits, anchorites, never any visions, phantasms, apparitions, enthusiasms, prophets, any revelations, but immoderate fasting, bad diet, sickness, melancholy, solitariness, or some such things, were the precedent causes, the forerunners or concomitants of them. The best opportunity and sole occasion the devil takes to delude them. Marcilius Cognatus, lib. 1. cont. cap. 7. hath many stories to this purpose, of such as after long fasting have been seduced by devils; and "tis a miraculous thing to relate (as Cardan writes) what strange accidents proceed from fasting; dreams, superstitions, contempt of torments, desire of death, prophecies, paradoxes, madness; fasting naturally prepares men to these things." Monks, anchorites, and the like, after much emptiness, become melancholy, vertiginous, they think they hear strange noises, confer with hob-goblins, devils, rivel up their bodies, et dum hostem inequinuor, saith Gregory, ecivem quam diligimus, trucidamus, they become bare skeletons, skin and bones; Carnibus abstinentes proprias carnes devorant, ut nil prater cutem et ossa vit reliquam. Hilarion, as Hierome reports in his life, and Athanasius of Antioch, was so bare with fasting, "that the skin did scarce stick to the bones; for want of vapours he could not sleep, and for want of sleep became idleheaded, heard every night infants cry, oxen low, wolves howl, lions roar (as he thought) clattering of chains, strange voices, and the like illusions of devils." Such symptoms are common to those that fast long, are solitary, given to contemplation, overmuch solitariness and meditation. Not that these things (as I said of fasting) are to be discommended of themselves, but very behoveful in some cases and good: sobriety and contemplation join our souls to God, as that heathen Porphyrio can tell us. "

Mater sanitatis, clavis coelorum, ala animae que leaves pennas producat, ut sublimine ferat; cursum Spiritus Sancti, vexillum sideris, porta paradisi, vita angelorum, &c. Castigo corpus meas, Paul. 1. ad Mor. excom. 1. Lib. 8. cap. 10. de rerum varietate; admiratione digna sunt quae per jejuniun hoc modo contingunt: somnia, superstitio, contemptus tormentorum, moris desiderium, obtinere opinio, insaniam: jejuniun naturaliter preparat ad hac omnia. 3. Epist. L. 3. Ista attenuantia fuit jejuniu et vigilia, in tactum exco corpore ut ossibus vir herebat, unde nocte infantum vagitus, talibus pectorum, taenitus bovam, voces et ludibria demum, &c. 4. Lib. de abstinentia. Sordita et conturbatione mentem Dee congruuntnt. 5. Ecstasy is a taste of

Exitasia nihil est aliquid quam gustus futurate beatitudinis, in qua toti absconseatur in Deum. Erasmus epist. ad Dorpium.
future happiness, by which we are united unto God, a divine melancholy, spiritual wing Bonaventure terms it, to lift us up to heaven: but as it abused, a mere dotage, madness, a cause and symptom of religious melancholy. " If you shall at any time see (saith Guianerus) a religious pers over-superstitious, too solitary, or much given to fasting, that man will certain be melancholy, thou mayest boldly say it, he will be so." P. Forestus has almost the same words, and "Cardan subtit lib. 18. et cap. 40. lib. 8. de reru variitate, "solitariness, fasting, and that melancholy humour, are the cause of all hermits' illusions." Lavater, de spect. cap. 19. part. 1. and part. 1. ca 10. puts solitariness a main cause of such spectrums and apparitions; no saith he, so melancholy as monks and hermits, the devil's bath melanchol:

"Thou none so subject to visions and dotage in this kind as such live solitude lives, they hear and act strange things in their dotage." Polydore Virg lib. 2. de prodigiiis, holds that those prophecies and monks' revelations, nun dreams, which they suppose come from God, to proceed wholly ab insituc daemonum, by the devil's means; and so those enthusiasts, abatayst pseudoprophets from the same cause. "Fracastorius, lib. 2. de intellect. we have all your pythonesses, sybils, and pseudo-prophets to be mere melanchol so doth Wierus prove, lib. 1. cap. 8. et l. 3. cap. 7. and Arculanus in 9. Rh sis, that melancholy is a sole cause and the devil together, with fasting, ar solitariness, of such syllibine prophecies, if there were ever such, which wit Casaubon and others I justly except at; for it is not likely that the Spirit God should ever reveal such manifest revelations and predictions of Christ, those Pythonsisse witches, Apollo's priests, the devil's ministers (they were r better), and conceal them from his own prophets; for these sybils set down a particular circumstances of Christ's coming, and many other future accidents far more perspicuous and plain than ever any prophet did. But howsoever there be no Phæbades or sybils, I am assured there be other enthusiast prophets, diei Fatidici Magi, (of which read Jo. Boissardus, who hath hab riously collected them into a great volume of late, with elegant pictures, ar epitomised their lives) &c., ever have been in all ages, and still proceedi from those causes, qui visiones suas enarrant, somniant futura, prophetias et ejusmodi delirii agitati, Spiritum Sanctum sibi communicati putat. That which is written of Saint Francis' five wounds, and other su monastical effects of him and others, may justly be referred to this o melancholy; and that which Matthew Paris relates of the monk Evesham, who saw heaven and hell in a vision; of Sir Owen, th went down into Saint Patrick's purgatory in King Stephen's days, at saw as much: Walsingham of him that showed as much by Saint Julia Beda, lib. 5. cap. 13. 14. 15. et 20. reports of King Sebba, lib. 4. cap. 1 eccl. hist. that saw strange visions; and Stumpfius Helvet Cornic, a cobbl of Basle, that beheld rare apparitions at Augsburg, in Germany. Alex der ab Alexandre, gen. dier. lib. 6. cap. 21. of an enthusiastic prisoner, out as probable as that of Eris Armenius, in Plato's tenth dialogue de Reph that revived again ten days after he was killed in a battle, and told strang wonders, like those tales Ulysses related to Alcinos in Homer, or Luci vera historia itself was still after much solitariness, fasting, or long sickn

**Footnotes:**

1. Si religiosa nimirum s s parentem, sanctus melancholicae praemunict. Tract. 5. cap 2. Solitude ipsa, mens sana laboris anxiet et jeania, tam temperaturae cibis mutata aegritis, et huius melancholicae hibernationis causam esse. 3. Solitude est causa apparitionum; nulli visionibus hinc delirio magi obnoxii sunt quam quibus et collegis et eremo vivunt monachi; tales ulerumque melancho ob vitro, solitudoem. 4. Monachi sese putant prophetare ex Deo, et quia solitarium agunt vitam, qu er sit insitum daemonii; et sic similia haec a male geniohabent, quod putant a Deo, et sic ensias syllibina, Pythii, et prophetæ qui divinare solenta, omnes fanatæ sunt melancholiæ. 5. Exerc. c. 6. De divinatione et magici praestigü. 7. Idem. 8. Post 15 dieorum præce et jeania, mirabiles vide valere. 9. Exerc. 32. vita Stephanii, et fol. 177. post trium mensum incolam et languorem per 9 dies non comedens aut habens. 10. After contemplation in an ecstasy; so Hieronym was whipped for reading Tui see miliarii of examples in our annals. 11. Bede, Gregory, Jacobus de Voragine, Libropanum, Hieronym John Major de vitius patrum, &c.
when their brains were added, and their bellies as empty of meat as their heads of wit. Florilegus hath many such examples, fol. 191. one of Saint Guadake of Crowald that fought with devils, but still after long fasting, over-
much solitariness, the devil persuaded him therefore to fast, as Moses and Elias did, the better to delude him. In the same author is recorded Carolus Magnus' vision An. 185. or ecstacies, wherein he saw heaven and hell after much fasting and meditation. So did the devil of old with Apollo's priests. Amphiaras and his fellows, those Egyptians, still enjoin long fasting before he would give any oracles, triduum a cibo et vino abstierent, before they gave any answers, as Volateran, lib. 13. cap. 4. records, and Strabo, Geoq. lib. 14. describes Charon's den, in the way between Tralles and Nissum, whither the priests led sick and fanatic men: but nothing performed without long fasting, no good to be done. That scoffing Lucian conducts his Menippus to hell by the directions of that Chaldean Mithrobarzanes, but after long fasting, and such like idle preparation. Which the Jesuits right well perceiving of what force this fasting and solitary meditation is, to alter men's minds, when they would make a man mad, ravish him, improve him beyond himself, to undertake some great business of moment, to kill a king, or the like, they bring him into a melancholy dark chamber, where he shall see no light for many days together, no company, little meat, ghastly pictures of devils all about him, and leave him to lie as he will himself, on the bare floor in this chamber of meditation, as they call it, on his back, side, belly, till by this strange usage they make him quite mad and beside himself. And then after some ten days, as they find him ani-
mated and resolved, they make use of him. The devil hath many such factors, many such engines, which what effect they produce, you shall hear in the fol-
lowing symptoms.

SUBSECT. III.—Symptoms general, love to their own sect, hate of all other
religions, obstinacy, peevishness, ready to undergo any danger or cross for
it; Martyrs, blind zeal, blind obedience, fastings, vows, belief of incredibi-

cilities, impossibilities: Particular of Gentiles, Mahometans, Jews, Chris-
tians; and in them, heretics old and new, schismatics, schoolmen, prophets,
enthusiasts, &c.

Lucian, an rideat Democritus? in attempting to speak of these
symptoms, shall I laugh with Democritus, or weep with Heraclitus? they are
so ridiculous and absurd on the one side, so lamentable and tragical on the
other: a mixed scene offers itself, so full of errors and a promiscuous variety
of objects, that I know not in what strain to represent it. When I think of
the Turkish paradise, those Jewish fables, and pontificial rites, those pagan
superstitions, their sacrifices, and ceremonies, as to make images of all matter,
and adorn them when they have done, to see them kiss the pyx, creep to the
cross, &c. I cannot choose but laugh with Democritus: but when I see them
whip and torture themselves, grind their souls for toys and trifles, desperate,
and now ready to die, I cannot choose but weep with Heraclitus. When I see
a priest say mass, with all those apish gestures, murmurings, &c. read the
customs of the Jews' synagogue, or Mahometa Meschites, I must needs laugh
at their folly, risum teneris, amici? but when I see them make matters of
conscience of such toys and trifles, to adore the devil, to endanger their souls,
to offer their children to their idols, &c. I must needs condole their misery.
When I see two superstitious orders contend pro aris et focis, with such have

\*Variae mappa compenere risum vix poterat.

\*Fol. 155. post sermonem meditationem in vigilia dei dominici visionem habuit de purgatorio. Ubi multae dies manent in mensa, comitato sacerridum auxilia invectae. In Neeronan. Et eis quidem gladiis crant, pedes aqua-

lectus sub divo, &c. John Everardus Britanno. Romannus lib. ed. 1611 describes all the manner of it.
and hold, de lanâ caprina, some write such great volumes to no purpose, so much pains to so small effect, their satires, invectives, apologies, dull gross fictions; when I see grave learned men rail and scold like butter-wo methinks 'tis pretty sport, and fit for Calphurnius and Democritus to laug. But when I see so much blood spilt, so many murders and massacres, so cruel battles fought, &c. 'tis a fitter subject for Heraclitus to lament. Merlin when he sat by the lake side with Vortigern, and had seen the w and red dragon fight, before he began to interpret or to speak, in flatum rupt, fell a weeping, and then proceeded to declare to the king what it was I should first pity and bewail this misery of human kind with some passio preface, wishing mine eyes a fountain of tears, as Jeremiah did, and then to task. For it is that great torture, that infernal plague of mortal men, omn. pestium pestilentissima superstition, and able of itself alone to stand in opposition to all other plagues, miseries and calamities whatsoever; far more cruel, pestiferous, more grievous, more general, more violent, of a greater ext. Other fears and sorrows, grievances of body and mind, are troublesome for time; but this is for ever, eternal damnation, hell itself, a plague, a fire inundation hurts one province alone, and the loss may be recovered; but superstition involves all the world almost, and can never be remedied. Eness and sorrows come and go, but a superstitious soul hath no rest; superstitiones immutatas animus numquam quieta esse potest, no peace, no quiet. True religion and superstition are quite opposite, longo diversa carnificl jietas, as Lactantius describes, the one erects, the other dejects; illa pietas, mercur impietas; the one is an easy yoke, the other an intolerable bur an absolute tyranny; the one a sure anchor, a haven; the other a tempe ous ocean; the one makes, the other mars; the one is wisdom, the other folly, madness, indiscretion; the one unsealed, the other a counterfeit; one a diligent observer, the other an ape; one leads to heaven, the other hell. But these differences will more evidently appear by their particular symptoms. What religion is, and of what parts it doth consist, every c chism will tell you, what symptoms it hath, and what effects it produceth: for their superstitions, no tongue can tell them, no pen express, they are many, so diverse, so uncertain, so inconstant, and so different from th selves. Tot mundi superstitiones quot celo stella, one saith, there be as m superstitions in the world, as there be stars in heaven, or devils themse that are the first founders of them; with such ridiculous, absurd sympt and signs, so many several rites, ceremonies, torments and vexations acc unyng, as may well express and beseech the devil to be the author and m tainer of them. I will only point at some of them, ex unque leonem, gues the rest, and those of the chief kinds of superstition, which beside as Cilians now domineer and crucify the world, Gentiles, Mahometans, Jews, Of these symptoms some be general, some particular to each private s general to all, are, an extraordinary love and affection they bear and shou such as are of their own sect, and more than Vatinian hate to such as opposite in religion, as they call it, or disagree from them in their superstit rites, blind zeal (which is as much a symptom as a cause), vain fears, o obedience, needless works, incredibilities, impossibilities, monstrous rites ceremonies, wilfulness, blindness, obstinacy, &c. For the first, which is h and hate, as Montanus saith, nulla firmior amicitia quàm quà contra hine; nulla discordia major quàm quà à religione fit; no greater concord greater discord than that which proceeds from religion. It is incredible relate, did not our daily experience evince it, what factions, quàm tete...
factions (as Rich. Dinoth writes), have been of late for matters of religion in France, and what hurlyburly all over Europe for these many years. Nihil est quod tam impotenter rapit homines, quam suscepta de salute opinio; siquidem pro ea omnes gentes corpora et animas devovere solent, et acetissimo necessitudinis vinculo se invicem colligere. We are all brethren in Christ, servants of one Lord, members of one body, and therefore are or should be at least dearly beloved, inseparably allied in the greatest bond of love and familiarity, united partakers not only of the same cross, but coadjutors, comforters, helpers, at all times, upon all occasions: as they did in the primitive church, Acts v. they sold their patrimonies, and laid them at the apostles’ feet, and many such memorable examples of mutual love we have had under the ten general persecutions, many since. Examples on the other side of discord none like, as our Saviour saith, he came therefore into the world to set father against son &c. In imitation of whom the devil belike ("niam superstitione irrepit verum religiones imitatrix, superstition is still religion’s imitatrix, superstition is still religion’s imitatrix; in all other things, so in this) doth so combine and glue together his superstitious followers in love and affection, that they will live and die together: and what an innate hatred hath hestill inspired to any other superstition opposite? How those old Romans were affected, those ten persecutions may be a witness, and that cruel executioner in Eusebius, aut lita aut morere, sacrifice or die. No greater hate, more continent, bitter faction, wars, persecution in all ages, than for matters of religion, no such feral opposition, father against son, mother against daughter, husband against wife, city against city, kingdom against kingdom: as of old at Tentria and Combos:

"Immortalis odium et manuum animabile vulneris, Immortal hate it breeds, a wound past cure, Ite furor vulgo, quod nunquim victoriam Odit uterque locus, quum solos credit habebant Esse deos quos Ipse colat.""

The Turks at this day count no better of us than of dogs, so they commonly call us glaours, infidels, miscreants, make that their main quarrel and cause of Christian persecution. If he will turn Turk, he shall be entertained as a brother, and in good esteem, a Mussulman or a believer, which is a greater tie to them than any affinities or consanguinity. The Jews stick together like so many burrs; but as for the rest, whom they call Gentiles, they do hate and abhor, they cannot endure their Messiah should be a common saviour to us all, and rather, as Luther writes, "than they that now scoff at them, curse them, persecute and revile them, shall be coheirs and brethren with them, or have any part or fellowship with their Messiah, they would crucify their Messiah ten times over, and God himself, his angels, and all his creatures, if it were possible, though they endure a thousand hells for it." Such is their malice towards us. Now for Papists, what in a common cause for the advancement of their religion they will endure, our traitors and pseudo-catholics will declare unto us; and how bitter on the other side to their adversaries, how violently bent, let those Marian times record, as those miserable slaughters at Merindol and Cahiers, the Spanish inquisition, the Duke of Alva’s tyranny in the Low Countries, the French massacres and civil wars. "Tantum religio potuit suaderie malorum." "Such wickedness did religion persuade." Not there only, but all over Europe, we read of bloody battles, racks and wheels, seditions, factions, oppositions.

Signa, pares aquilae, et pila minantium pilis,"

Inventives and contentions. They had rather shake hands with a Jew, Turk, or, as the Spaniards do, suffer Moors to live amongst them, and Jews, than

---

"Obvia signis"

"Call. hist ii. 1. Lactantius. Jur. Sat. i. 15. Comment. in Mich. Ferre non posse ut Habrum Messias communic servator sit, neoctrum gaudium, &c. Messies vel decem decies crucilintur essent, ipsumque Deum si id est posset, una cum angeli et creaturis omnibus, nec ab atentor ab hos factos et milie inferna subeundum forent. Luc. Lucan."
Protestants; "my name (saith Luther) is more odious to them than any tip or murderer." So it is with all heretics and schismatics whatsoever: and no so passionate, violent in their tenets, opinions, obstinate, wilful, refracto-
peevish, factions, singular and stiff in defence of them, they do not only pe-
cute and hate, but pity all other religions, account them damned, blind:
they alone were the true church, they are the true heirs, have the fee-simpl
heaven by a peculiar donation, 'tis entailed on them and their posterities, th
doctrine sound, per funem aureum de calo delapsa doctrina, "Let down fi
heaven by a golden rope," they alone are to be saved. The Jews at this
are so incomprehensibly proud and churlish, saith Luther, that soli salvavi,
domini terrarum salutari volunt. And as "Buxtorfius adds, "so ignorant:
self-willed withal, that amongst their most understanding rabbins you shall
ought but gross dotage, horrible hardness of heart, and stupendous obstin
in all their actions, opinions, conversations: and yet so zealous withal, that
man living can be more, and vindicate themselves for the elect people of GO
'Tis so with all other superstitious sects, Mahometans, Gentiles in China;
Tartary; our ignorant Papists, Anabaptists, Separatists, and peculiar church
Amsterdam, they alone, and none but they can be saved. "* Zealous (as F
saith, Rom. x. 2) without knowledge," they will endure any misery, any trou
suffer and do that which the sunbeams will not endure to see, Religionis
Purii, all extremities, losses and dangers, take any pains, fast, pray, vow cl
ity, wilful poverty, forsake all and follow their idols, die a thousand death
some Jews did to Pilate's soldiers, in like case, exertos præbentes jugulo
manifestæ praeserentes, (as Josephus hath it) cariorem esse vitâ sibi l
patricia observationem, rather than abjure, or deny the least particle of th
religion which their fathers profess, and they themselves have been brou
up in, be it never so absurd, ridiculous, they will embrace it, and with
further inquiry or examination of the truth, though it be prodigiously fi
they will believe it; they will take much more pains to go to hell, t
we shall do to heaven. Single out the most ignorant of them, convince
understanding, show him his errors, grossness, and absurdities of his s
Non persuadebis etiamsi persuaseris, he will not be persuaded. As th
pagans told the Jesuits in Japona, 7 they would do as their forefathers d
one: and with Ratholde the Frisian Prince, go to hell for company, if n
of their friends went thither: they will not be moved, no persuasion, no
ture can stir them. So that papists cannot brag of their vows, pove
obedience, orders, merits, martyrdoms, festivities, alms, good works, pilg
ages: much and more than all this, I shall show you, is, and hath e
by these superstitious Gentiles, Pagans, Idolaters and Jews: their blind
and idolatrous superstition in all kinds is much at one; little or no differe
and it is hard to say which is the greatest, which is the grossest. For
man shall duly consider those superstitious rites amongst the Ethnic in Ja
the Banjians in Gusart, the Chinese idolaters, 2 Americans of old, in Me
especially, Mahometau priests, he shall find the same government almost
same orders and ceremonies, or so like, that they may seem all apparent
be derived from some heathen spirit, and the Roman hierarchy no better
the rest. In a word, this is common to all superstition, there is nothin
mad and absurd, so ridiculous, impossible, incredible, which they will
believe, observe, and diligently perform, as much as in them lies; nothing
monstrous to conceive, or intolerable to put in practice, so cruel to suffer, w
they will not willingly undertake. So powerful a thing is superstition, 4
3 Ad Galat. Comment. Nomen odiosius meum quam ullus homicida aut fur.
4 Comment. in Adeo incomprehensibils et aspera eorum superstites, &c.
5 Synagmg. Judaeorum, ca. 1. inter eorum gentislos Rabbines ali prater Ignorantiam et in-sipientiam grandium inventes, horrendam induriat
 et obstinationem, &c. 6 Great is Diana of the Egestians, Act xiv. 7 Mahum cum illis in-sauris, cum alia bene tenere.
8 Acosta, i. 5. 9 O Egyiese, religious tas solei supersetum fabula,
Incredibles posterius tuas.
Egypt (as Trismegistus exclaims) thy religion is fables, and such as posterity will not believe." I know that in true religion itself, many mysteries are so apprehended alone by faith, as that of the Trinity, which Turks especially deride, Christ's incarnation, resurrection of the body at the last day, quodideo credendum (saith Tertullian) quod incredibile, &c. many miracles not to be controverted or disputed of. Mirari non runari supiation vera est, saith Gerhardus; et in divinis (as a good father informs us) quedam credenda, quedam admiranda, &c. some things are to be believed, embraced, followed with all submission and obedience, some again admired. Though Julian the apostate scoff at Christians in this point, quod captivenum intellectum in obsequium fidei, saying, that the Christian creed is like the Pythagorean Ipse dixit, we make our will and understanding too slavishly subject to our faith, without farther examination of the truth; yet as Saint Gregory truly answers, our creed is ali orie praestantiae, and much more divine; and as Thomas will, pie consideranti semper suppetent rationes, ostendentes credibilitatem in mysteriis supernaturilibus, we do absolutely believe it, and upon good reasons, for as Gregory well informeth us; Fides non habet meritum, ubi humana ratio qucerit experimentum; that faith hath no merit, is not: worth the name of faith, that will not apprehend without a certain demonstration: we must and will believe God's word; and if we be mistaken or err in our general belief, as Richardus de Sancto Victore vows he will say to Christ himself at the day of judgment; "Lord, if we be deceived, thou alone hast esceeded us:" thus we plead. But for the rest I will not justify that pontifical consummation, that which Mahometans and Jews justly except at, as Campanian confesseth, Athieismi triumphat. cap. 12. fol. 125, difficultiunm dogma esse, nec aliud subjectum magis hereticorum blasphemis, et stultis irrisionibus politicorum repareri. They hold it impossible, Deum in pane manducari; and besides they scoff at it, vide gentem conedentem Deum sumum, inquit quidam Maurus. Hunc Deum muscae et versus irrident, quam ipsum polluant et devorant, subditus est igni, aqua, et latrones furantur, zlizidem auream humi prostrantur, et se tamen non defendit hic Deus. Qui foci potest, ut integer in singulis hostias particulis, idem corpus numero, tam multis locis, caelo, terra, &c. But he that shall read the Turks' Alcoran, the Jews' Talmud, and Papists' golden legen, in the mean time will swear that such gross fictions, fables, vain traditions, prodigious paradoxes and ceremonies, could never proceed from any other spirit, than that of the devil himself, which is the author of confusion and lies; and wonder withal how such wise men as have been of the Jews, such learned understanding men as Averroes, Avicenna, or those heathen philosophers, could ever be persuaded to believe, or to subscribe to the least part of them: aut fraudem non detegere: but that as Vanninus answers, ob publice potestatis formidinem allatrame philosophi non audebant, they durst not speak for fear of the law. But I will descend to particulars: read their several symptoms and then guess.

Of such symptoms as properly belong to superstition, or that irreligious religion, I may say as of the rest, some are ridiculous, some again feral to relate. Of those ridiculous, there can be no better testimony than the multitude of their gods, those absurd names, actions, offices they put upon them, their feasts, holy days, sacrifices, adorations, and the like. The Egyptians that pretended so great antiquity, 300 kings before Amasis: and as Mel writes, 13,000 years from the beginning of their Chronicles, that bragged so much of their knowledge of old, for they invented arithmetic, astronomy, geometry: of their wealth and power, that vaunted of 20,000 cities: yet at the same time their idolatry and superstition was most gross: they worshipped,
as Diodorus Siculus records, sun and moon under the name of Isis and Osiris; and after, such men as were beneficial to them, or any creature that did them good. In the city of Bubastis they adored a cat, saith Herodotus, Isis storks, an ox (saith Pliny)  

"Forum et cape deos imponere nudibus aedibus, illos tu Nilo deos colis."

Scoffing 1 Lucian in his 2 Cera Historia: which, as he confesseth himself, not persuasively written as a truth, but in comical fashion to glance at monstrous fictions and gross absurdities of writers and nations, to deride with out doubt this prodigious Egyptian idolatry, feigns this story of himself; when he had seen the Elysian fields, and was now coming away, Rhadamanth gave him a mallow root, and bade him pray to that when he was in any peril or extremity; which he did accordingly; for when he came to Hydarnord the island of treacherous women, he made his prayers to his root, and instantly delivered. The Syrians, Chaldeans, had as many proper gods, as Plutarch 3 has told; and great ones, others indigenous and Semi-dei, Larss, Lemures, Diosc Soteres, and Parastates, dii tutelares amongst the Greeks: gods of all sorts, for all functions; some for the land, some for sea; some for heaven, some for hell; some for passions, diseases, some for weddings, some for banquets, woods, waters, gardens, orchards, &c. All actions and offices, Mopsus, Flora, Cloacina, Stercutius, Febris, Pallor, Invidia, Protervia, Ri Angerona, Volupia, Vacma, Viriplaca, Veneranda, Pales, Neptunia, De kings, emperors, valiant men that had done any good offices for them, they likewise canonise and adore for gods, and it was usually done, usitatum a antiquis, as 4 Jac. Boissards well observes, deificare homines qui beneficium mortales juvarent, and the devil was still ready to second their intents, sta se ingestis illorum sepulchris, status, templis, aris, &c. he crept into the temples, statues, tombs, altars, and was ready to give oracles, cure diseases, miracles, &c. as by Jupiter, Esculapius, Tiresias, Apollo, Mopsus, Amphiaras, &c. dii et Semi-diit. For so they were Semi-diit, demi-gods, some mediit in Deos et homines, as Max. 5 Tyrius, the Platonist, ser. 26, et 27, maintains: he justifies in many words. "When a good man dies, his body is buried, but soul, ex homine deam erudit, becomes forthwith a demi-god, nothing disfigured with malignity of air, or variety of forms, rejoiceeth, exults and sees that perfect beauty with his eyes. Now being deified, in commiseration he has his poor friends here on earth, his kindred and allies, informs, succours, punisheath those that are bad and do amiss, as a good genius to protect and govern mortal men appointed by the gods, so they will have it, ordering so for provinces, some for private men, some for office, some for another Hector and Achilles assist soldiers to this day; Esculapius all sick men, Dioscuri seafaring men, &c. and sometimes upon occasion they show the selves. The Dioscuri, Hercules and Esculapius, he saw himself (or the devil in his likeness) non somnium sed vigilans ipse vidi." So far Tyrius. And:

1 O sanctas gentes quibus haec nascentur in horte Numinat! Juven. Sat. 15. 

2 Praefat. ver. 1 Tert. fig. 464. 

3 Rosin, antiq. Rom. 1. 2. c. 1. & deindea. 

4 Lib. de divinatione et mysteriis in Mopsu. 

5 Cosmo Paccio Interpret. nihil ab aeris caligine ant figurarum varietate impetum pulchrorumimet meruit, exultans et miserercordia mutus, cognatus amices qui audite morantur in tuctur, errantium sesecurrit, &c. Deus hoc juscat ut essent genii dii tutelares hominibus: hoc non juna namo punitentes, &c.
good men only do they thus adore, but tyrants, monsters, devils (as Stukius inveighs), Neros, Dominants, Heliogabaluses, beastly women, and arrant whores amongst the rest. "For all intents, places, creatures, they assign gods;"

"Et dominus, testis, thermis et equis solentis
Assignare solent genus"

saith Prudentius. Cuna for cradles, Diverra for sweeping houses, Nodina knots, Premia, Pramunda, Hymen, Hymeneus, for weddings; Comus the god of good fellows, gods of silence, of comfort, Hebe goddess of youth. *Mena menstruarum, &c.*, male and female gods, of all ages, sexes and dimensions, with beards, without beards, married, unmarried. begot, not born at all, but, as Minerva, start out of Jupiter's head. Hesiod reckons up at least 30,000 gods, Varro, 300 Jupiters. As Jeremy told them, their gods were to the multitude of cities;

"Quicquid humus, pelagus, calidum miserabile gignit,
Id dicere deosa, colles, festa, flamma, flamma."]

"Whatever heavens, seas and land begat,
Hills, seas and rivers, God was this and that."

And which was most absurd, they made gods upon such ridiculous occasions; "As children make babies (so saith "Morneus"), their poets make gods," et *quos adorant in templis, ludant in Theatris*, as Lactantius scoffs. Saturn, a man, gelded himself; did eat his own children, a cruel tyrant driven out of his kingdom by his son Jupiter, as good a god as himself, a wicked, lascivious pultry king of Crete, of whose rapes, lusts, murders, villainies, a whole volume is too little to relate. Venus, a notorious strumpet, as common as a barber's chair, Mars, Adonis, Anchises' whore, is a great she-goddess as well as the rest, as much renowned by their poets, with many such; and these gods so fabulously and foolishly made, *ceremonius, hymnis, et canticis celebrant*; their errors, *luctus et gaudia, amores, iras, nuptias et liberorum procreationes* ('as Eusebius well taxeth), weddings, mirth, and mournings, loves, angers, and quarrelling they did celebrate in hymns, and sing of in their ordinary songs, as it were publishing their villainies. But see more of their originals. When Romulus was made away by the sedition of the senators, to pacify the people, Julius Proculus gave out that Romulus was taken up by Jupiter into heaven, and therefore to be ever after adored for a god amongst the Romans. Syrophanes of Egypt had one only son whom he dearly loved; he erected his statute in his house, which his servants did adore with garlands to pacify their master's wrath when he was angry, so by little and little he was adored for a god. This did Semiramis for her husband Belus, and Adrian the emperor by his minion Antinous. Flora was a rich harlot in Rome, and for that she made the commonwealth her heir, her birthday was solemnised long after; and to make it a more plausible holiday, they made her goddess of flowers, and sacrificed to her amongst the rest. The matrons of Rome, as Dionysius Halicarnassensis relates, because at their entreaty Coriolanus desisted from his wars, consecrated a church *Fortune mutiibri*; and *Venus Barbata had a temple erected, for that somewhat was amiss about hair, and so the rest. The citizens of Alabanda, a small town in Asia Minor, to curry favour with the Romans (who then warred in Greece with Perseus of Macedon, and were formidable to these parts), consecrated a temple to this city of Rome, and made her a goddess, with annual games and sacrifices; so a town of houses was deified, with shameful flattery on the one side to give, and intolerable arrogance on the other to accept, upon so vile and absurd an occasion. Tully writes to Atticus, that his daughter Tulliola might he made a goddess, and adored as Juno and"
Minerva, and as well she deserved it. Their holy days and adorations were out as ridiculous; those Lupercals of Pan, Florales of Flora, Bona dea, A Perenna, Saturnals, &c., as how they were celebrated, with what lascivious and wanton gestures, bald ceremonies, \*by what bawdy priests, how they left their noses over the smoke of sacrifices, saith \*Lucian, and lick blood like; that was spilled about the altars. Their carved idols, gilt images of wood, in ivory, silver, brass, stone, olim trunca eram, &c. were most absurd, as he their own workmanship; for as Seneca notes, adorant lignos deos, et faciliter qui fecerunt, contemnunt, they adore work, contemn the workman; as Tertullian follows it, Si homines non essent diis propitiis, non essent diis, it not been for men they had never been gods, but blocks still and stupid statues in which mice, swallows, birds made their nests, spiders their web, and in their very mouths laid their excrement. Those images, I say, we all out as gross as the shapes in which they did represent them: Jupiter with a ram’s head, Mercury a dog’s, Pan like a goat, Hecate with three heads, with a beard, another without; see more in Carterius and \*Verdunius of the monstrous forms and ugly pictures: and which was absurd yet, they took them these images came from heaven, as that of Minerva in her temple Athens, quod è caló cessidisse credebant accole, saith Pausanias. They form some like storks, apes, bulls, and yet seriously believed; and that which was impious and abominable, they made their gods notorious whoremasters, impious Sodomites (as commonly they were all, as well as Jupiter, Mars, Apollo, Mercury, Neptune, &c.), thieves, slaves, drudges (for Apollo and Neptune motifs in Phrygia), kept sheep, Hercules emptied stables, Vulcan a blacksmith unfit to dwell upon the earth for their villainies, much less in heaven, \*Mornay well saith, and yet they gave them out to be such; so weak a brutish, some to whine, lament, and roar, as Isis for her son and Cenopephal as also her weeping priests; Mars in Homer to be wounded, vexed: Ver ran away crying, and the like; than which what can be more ridiculous Nonnae ridiculum lugere quod colas, vel colere quod lugeres? (which \*Minut objects) Si dix, cur plangitis? si mortuis, cur adoratis? that it is no marvel! \*Lucian, that adamantia persecor of superstition, and Pliny could so see at them and their horrible idolatry as they did; if Diagonas took Hercul image, and put it under his pot to seethe his pottage, which, was, as he said his 13th labour. But see more of their fopperies in Cypr. 4. tract. de varietat. Chrysostom advers. Gentil. Arnobius adv. Centes. Austin deo Dei. Theodoret. de curtat. Grec. offic. Clemens Alexandrinus, Minutius Fel. Eusebii, Laetanius, Stuckius, &c. Lamentable, tragic, and fearful the symptoms are, that they should be so far forth affrighted with their fictitious gods, as to spend the goods, lives, fortunes, precious time, best days in the honour, to \*sacrifice unto them, to their inestimable loss, such hecatombs, many thousand sheep, oxen with gilded horns, goats, as \*Cœsus, king Lydia, \*Marcus Julianus, surnamed ob obrebras hostias Victimarius, et Tauric mus, and the rest of the Roman emperors usually did with much labour a cost; and not emperors only and great ones, pro communibus, were at table charity, but private men for their ordinary occasions. Pythagoras offered hundred oxen for the invention of a geometrical problem, and it was an ordina thing to sacrifice in \*Lucian’s time, \*a heifer for their good health, four ox

\*Magna religione quaeritur quos possit adulatoria plura numerare. Minut.
\*Lib. de sacrificiis, Fu
Julianistes, et musarum in modum sanguine exagente circum aras e sulsum.
\*Imagines Deorum, lib
Inscript.
\*Ie ver. relig. cap. 21. Indigni qui terram calcet, &c.
\*Octaviano.
\*Jupiter I geus, de sacrificiis, et passim alius.
\*665 several kinds of sacrifices in Egypt. Major recks up, tom
Coll of which read more in cap. l. of Laurentius Primarius his Egypt characters, a cause of which Sartu
Gives subes. lib. 3. cap. i.
\*Her d. Clio, Immolavit lecta pecora ter mille Delphics, una cum lectis phil-
Thib.
\*Suetonius Julianus imagines sine parsimonia peces sacravit.
\*Ammianus 25. Boves a M.
Casari salutem, si ta viceris perinus; lib. 3. Roman observantissimi sunt ceremoniarum, bello p
Venim.
\*De sacrificiis: buccum pro bona valutudine, boves quatuor pro divitis, canum pro reg
Novenque tauros pro scopite a Troja redit, &c.
for wealth, a hundred for a kingdom, nine bulls for their safe return from Troja to Pylus,” &c. Every god almost had a peculiar sacrifice—the Sun horses, Vulcan fire. Diana a white hart, Venus a turtle, Ceres a hog, Proserpine a black lamb, Neptune a bull (read more in 1 Stukins at large), besides sheep, cocks, corals, frankincense, to their undoings, as if their gods were affected with blood or smoke. “And surely (I saith he) if one should but repeat the fopperies of mortal men, in their sacrifices, feasts, worshipping their gods, their rites and ceremonies, what they think of them, of their diet, houses, orders, &c., what prayers and vows they make; if one should but observe their absurdity and madness, he would burst out a laughing, and pity their folly.” For what can be more absurd than their ordinary prayers, petitions, &c., requests, sacrifices, oracles, devotions? of which we have a taste in Maximus Tyrius, ser. 1. Plato’s Alcibiades Secundus, Persius, Sat. 2. Juvenal. Sat. 10. there likewise exploded, Mactant opimas et pingues hostias deo quasi esurientes, profundunt viuna tanguum stimienti, luminam accenticat velut in tenebris agenti (Lactantius, lib. 2. cap. 6). As if their gods were hungry, athirst, in the dark, they light candles, offer meat and drink. And what so base as to reveal their counsels and give oracles, e viserum sterquilinior, out of the bowels and excremental parts of beasts? sordidos deos Varro truly calls them therefore, and well he might. I say nothing of their magnificent and sumptuous temples, those majestical structures: to the roof of Apollo Didymeus’ temple, ad branchidas, as Strabo writes, a thousand oaks did not suffice. Who can relate the glorious splendour, and stupend magnificence, the sumptuous building of Diana at Ephesus, Jupiter Ammon’s temple in Africa, the Pantheon at Rome, the Capitol, the Sarapium at Alexandria, Apollo’s temple at Daphne in the suburbs of Antioch. The great temple at Mexico so richly adorned, and so capacious (for 10,000 men might stand in it at once), that fair Pantheon of Cuseo, described by Acosta in his Indian History, which eclipses both Jews and Christians. There were in old Jerusalem, as some write, 408 synagogues; but new Cairo reckons up (if 2 Radziwill may be believed) 6800 mosques. Fez 400, whereof 50 are most magnificent, like St. Paul’s in London. Helena built 300 fair churches in the Holy Land, but one Bassa hath built 400 mosques. The Mahometans have 1000 monks in a monastery; the like saith Acosta of Americans; Riccius of the Chinese, for men and women, fairly built; and more richly endowed some of them, than Arras in Artois, Fuld in Germany, or St. Edmund’s-Bury in England with us: who can describe those curious and costly statues, idols, images, so frequently mentioned in Pausanias? I conceal their donations, pendants, other offerings, presents, to these their fictitious gods daily consecrated. 3 Alexander, the son of Amyntas, king of Macedonia, sent two statues of pure gold to Apollo at Delphos. 4 Croesus, king of Lydia, dedicated a hundred golden tiles in the same place with a golden altar: no man came empty-handed to their shrines. But these are base offerings in respect; they offered men themselves alive. The Leucadians, as Strabo writes, sacrificed every year a man, averruncando deorum irae causâ, to pacify their gods, de mortuis præcipitio dejecerunt, &c., and they did voluntarily undergo it. The Decii did so sacrifice, Dies manibus; Curtius did leap into the gulf. Were they not all strangely deluded to go so far to their oracles, to be so galled by them, both in war and peace, as Polybius relates (which their augurs, priests, vestal virgins can witness), to be so superstitious, that they would rather lose goods and lives than omit any ceremonies, or offend their heathen gods? Nicias, that generous and valiant captain of the Greeks, overthrew the Athenian navy, by reason of

1 Emelmo si quis recensceret quas siti mortales in fervis, sacrificiis, diis adorandis, &c., quae vota faciant, quid de iis statute, &c. haud seco ad risumus, &c. 2 Max. Tyrius, ser. 1. Croesus regum omnium stultissimus de lehete consult, altus de numero arcanum, dimensionum maris, &c. 4 L. 4. 3 Perigr. Hist. 4. 6 Solinus. 5 Herodotus.
his too much superstition, because the augurs told him it was ominous to sail from the haven of Syracuse whilst the moon was eclipsed; he tarrie long till his enemies besieged him, he and all his army were overthrown.

9 Parthians of old were so sottish in this kind, they would rather lose a victory than lose their own lives, than fight in the night, 'twas against their religion. The Jews would make no resistance on the Sabbath, when Pompeius besieged Jerusalem; and some Jewish Christians in Africa, set upon by the Goths, suffered themselves upon the same occasion to be utterly vanquished. Superstition of the Dibrenses, a bordering town in Epirus, besieged by Turks, is miraculous almost to report. Because a dead dog was flung into only fountain which the city had, they would die of thirst all, rather than drink of that unclean water, and yield up the city upon any conditions. The priest and chief citizens began to drink first, using all good persuasions their superstition was such, no saying would serve, they must all forswear or yield up the city. Viz. ausum ipse credere (saith Barletius) tantam superstitionem, vel affirmare levisissimam hanc causam tante rei vel magis ridiculam quam non dubitem risum potius quam admiratiorem posteris excitaturam.

story was too ridiculous, he was ashamed to report it, because he thought nobody would believe it. It is stupendous to relate what strange effects idolatry and superstition hath brought forth of the latter years in the Indies and these bordering parts: 1 in what feral shapes the devil is adored, ne quasi mali intentent, as they say; for in the mountains betwixt Scanderboon and Aleppo, at this day, there are dwelling a certain kind of people called Coo coming of the race of the ancient Parthians, who worship the devil, and all this reason in so doing: God is a good man and will do no harm, but the devil is bad and must be pleased, lest he hurt them. It is wonderful to tell how devil deludes them, how he terrifies them, how they offer men and women sacrifices unto him, a hundred at once, as they did infants in Crete to Sat old, the finest children, like Agamemnon's Iphigenia, &c. At Mex when the Spaniards first overcame them, they daily sacrificed viv' homin corda è viventium corporibus extracta, the hearts of men yet living, 20,000 a year (Acosta, lib. 5, cap. 20) to their idols made of flour and men's blood and every year 6000 infants of both sexes: and as prodigious to relate, 3 they bury their wives with husbands deceased, 'tis fearful to report, and has to believe,

"Nam certamen habent hæc quæ vivæ sequuntur
Conjugium, pudor est non licet esse mori,
and burn them alive, best goods, servants, horses, when a grandee dies, tw thousand at once amongst the Tartars, when a great chieftain departs, or emperor in America: how they plague themselves, which abstain from all habit life, like those old Pythagoreans, with immoderate fasting, as Bannians about Surat, they of China, that for superstition's sake never fish nor fish all their lives, never marry, but live in deserts and by-plACES and some pray to their idols twenty-four hours together without any intermission of their tongues when they have done, for devotion's sake. Some are brought to that madness by their superstitious priests (that tell them) vain stories of immortality, and the joys of heaven in that other life, e f g h i j k l m n o p q r s t u v w x y z
many thousands voluntarily break their own necks, as Cleobrotus Amborcius, auditors of old, precipitate themselves, that they may participate of that unspeakable happiness in the other world. One poisons, another strangles himself, and the King of China had done as much, deluded with the vain hope, had he not been detained by his servant. But who can sufficiently tell of their several superstitions, vexations, follies, torments? I may conclude with d Possevinsus, *Religio facti asperos nites, homines è feris; superstition ex hominibus fera, religion makes wild beasts civil, superstition makes wise men beasts and fools; and the discreetest that are, if they give way to it, are no better than dizzards; nay more, if that of Plotinus be true, is unus religionis scopus, ut et quem cohynus similis fiamus, that is the drift of religion to make us like him whom we worship: what shall be the end of idolaters, but to degenerate into stocks and stones? of such as worship these heathen gods, for dit gentium daemonia, e but to become devils themselves? 'Tis therefore exitiosus error, et maximè periculosus, a most perilous and dangerous error of all others, as Flinches holds, turbulenta passio hominem consternans, a pestilent, a troublesome passion, that utterly undoeth men. Unhappy superstition, f Pliny calls it, morte non finitur, death takes away life, but not superstition. Impious and ignorant are far more happy than they which are superstitious, no torture like to it, none so continue, so general, so destructive, so violent.

In this superstitions row, Jews for antiquity may go next to Gentiles: what of old they have done, what idolatries they have committed in their groves and high places, what their Pharisees, Sadducees, Scribes, Esseni, and such sectaries have maintained, I will not so much as mention: for the present, I presume no nation under heaven can be more sottish, ignorant, blind, superstitious, wilful, obstinate, and peevish, tiring themselves with vain ceremonies to no purpose; he that shall but read their rabbins' ridiculous comments, their strange interpretation of scriptures, their absurd ceremonies, fables, childish tales, which they stedfastly believe, will think they be scarce rational creatures; their foolish customs, when they rise in the morning, and how they prepare themselves to prayer, to meat, with what superstitious washings, how to their sabbath, to their other feasts, weddings, burials, &c. Last of all, the expectation of their Messiah, and those figments, miracles, vain pomp that shall attend him, as how he shall terrify the Gentiles, and overcome them by new diseases; how Michael the archangel shall sound his trumpet, how he shall gather all the scattered Jews in the Holy Land, and there make them a great banquet, "Wherein shall be all the birds, beasts, fishes, that ever God made, a cup of wine that grew in Paradise, and that hath been kept in Adam's cellar ever since." At the first course shall be served in that great ox in Job iv. 10, "that every day feeds on a thousand hills," Psalm. 1. 10, that great Leviathan, and a great bird, that laid an egg so big, "that by chance tumbling out of the nest, it knocked down three hundred tall cedars, and breaking as it fell, drowned one hundred and sixty villages:" this bird stood up to the knees in the sea, and the sea was so deep, that a hatchet would not fall to the bottom in seven years: of their Messiah's wives and children; Adam and Eve, &c., and that one stupend fiction amongst the rest: when a Roman prince asked of rabbi Jehosua ben Hanania, why the Jews' God was compared to a lion; he made answer he compared himself to no ordinary lion, but to one in the wood Ela, which, when he desired to see, the rabin prayed

\[\text{d Canti}lone\text{ in lib. 10. Bontul de repub. fol. 111. e Quin ipsius diaboli ut nequitiam referant.} \]
\[\text{f Lib. de superst.} \]
\[\text{g Homiliae dicta finivit mora, non autem superstitionis, profert hunc nos terminos ultra vita finem.} \]
\[\text{h Buxtorphus Synag. Jud. c. 4. Inter precedam nemo pecudui sedat, vel patheum, aut per gutur inferius ventum emittat, &c. 1. d. e. 5. et seq. cap. 36. i lile carnin animalia, places, aev, quae Deus unquam creavit mactantur, et viminum generosum, &c.} \]
\[\text{k Cujus ipsius ceredi alissimi 300 dejecti sunt, quanque a lapso ovum fuerat contractum, pagi 160 inae submers, et alluvione hum dati.} \]
\[\text{l Every king of the world shall send him one of his daughters to be his wife, because it is written, Ps. xiv. 10, "King's daughters shall attend on him," &c.} \]
to God he might, and forthwith the lion set forward, "If1 But when he four hundred miles from Rome he so roared that all the great-bellied women in Rome made abortions, the city walls fell down, and when he came a dred miles nearer, and roared a second time, their teeth fell out of their heads the emperor himself fell down dead, and so the lion went back." With infinite number of such lies and forgeries, which they verily believe, themselves with vain hope, and in the mean time will by no persuasion diverted, but still crucify their souls with a company of idle ceremonies, like slaves and vagabonds, will not be relieved or reconciled.

Mahometans are a compound of Gentiles, Jews, and Christians, an absurd in their ceremonies, as if they had taken that which is most sottish of every one of them, full of idle fables in their superstitious law, their god ran itself a gallimaufry of lies, tales, ceremonies, traditions, precepts, etc. from other sects, and confusedly heaped up to delude a company of rude barbarous clowns. As how birds, beasts, stones, saluted Mahomet who came from Mecca, the moon came down from heaven to visit him, 2 how sent for him, spake to him, &c., with a company of stupend figments of angels, sun, moon, and stars, &c. Of the day of judgment, and three sons to prepare it, which must last fifty thousand years of Paradise, which will consists in coeundi et comedendi voluptate, and pecorinis huminibus scrips bestialis beatitudo, is so ridiculous, that Virgil, Dante, Lucian, nor any can be more fabulous. Their rites and ceremonies are most vain and superstitious, wine and swine's flesh are utterly forbidden by their law, 3 they pray five times a day; and still towards the south, wash before and after their bodies over, with many such. For fasting, vows, religious orders, prayers, they go far beyond any Papists, 4 they fast a month together ten times, and must not eat a bit till sun be set. Their kalenders, dervises, torlachers, &c., are more abstemious some of them, than Carthusians, Francisans, Anchorites, forsake all, live solitary, fare hard, go naked, 5 Their pilgrimages are as far as to the river Ganges (which the Gentiles those actars likewise do), to wash themselves, for that river as they hold a sovereign virtue to purge them of all sins, and no man can be saved hath not been washed in it. For which reason they come far and near to the Indies; Maximus gentium omnium confusus est; and infinite sum yearly resort to it. Others go as far as Mecca to Mahomet's tomb; w journey is both miraculous and meritorious. The ceremonies of flinging stones to stone the devil, of eating a camel at Cairo by the way; their fastings, running till they sweat, their long prayers, Mahomet's temple, tomb, building of it, would ask a whole volume to dilate: and for their pains to be in this holy pilgrimage, all their sins are forgiven, and they reputed for many saints. And diverse of them with hot bricks, when they return, put out their eyes, "that they never after see any profane thing, bite their tongues," &c. They look for their prophet Mahomet as Jews do for Messiah. Read more of their customs, rites, ceremonies, in Lonicerus, Tus hist. tom. 1. from the tenth to the twenty-fourth chapter. Bredenbach cap. 4, 5, 6. Leo Afer, lib. 1. Busbequinus, Sabellicus, Purchas, lib. 3. 3, et 4, 5. Theodorus Bibliander, &c. Many foolish ceremonies you shall find them, and most to be lamented, the people are generally so curious in observing of them, that if the least circumstance be omitted.

2 Quam quadrinatarium alhuce milliaribus ab imperatorts Leo hic abseddit, tum fortiter rugebat, ut me Romanum abhorriaret omnes, mutique, &c. 3 Stronius Clougnus, cunct. mag. lib. 1. c. 1. pauid multa re ex Alcanor, de celo, stelis, Anglicis, Lonicerus, c. 21, 22. 1. 1. 4 Quiniones in die orae Turem ten est maridem. Bredenbachii, cap. 3. 5 In qualibet anno mumum integrum jejunium interditar, nec desint deliabita, &c. 6 Nullis unquam multa per totoat etatem carnibus usque sat. Leo 7 Lonicerus, to. 1. cap. 17. 18.

8 Gudacius Arbites, ca. 33. hist. orient. India: opinio est apostolicae Gansim: et nec nec omnium ab omni loco nec salva fieti possi, qui non hon dimus se ablust: qua causam ex tota India, &c. 9 Qui nihil volunt deinceps videare.
they think they shall be damned, 'tis an irremissible offence, and can hardly be forgiven. I kept in my house amongst my followers (saith Busseius, sometime the Turk's orator in Constantinople) a Turkey boy, that by chance did eat shell-fish, a meat forbidden by their law, but the next day when he knew what he had done, he was not only sick to cast and vomit, but very much troubled in mind, would weep and "grieve many days after, torment himself for his foul offence. Another Turk being to drink a cup of wine in his cellar, first made a huge noise and filthy faces, "to warn his soul, as he said, that it should not be guilty of that foul fact which he was to commit." With such toys as these are men kept in awe, and so cowed, that they dare not resist, or offend the least circumstance of their law, for conscience's sake misled by superstition, which no human edict otherwise, no force of arms, could have enforced.

In the last place are Pseudo-Christians, in describing of whose superstitious symptoms, as a mixture of the rest, I may say that which St. Benedict once saw in a vision, one devil in a market-place, but ten in a monastery, because there was more work; in populous cities they would swear and forswear, lie, falsify, deceive fast enough of themselves, one devil could circumvent a thousand; but in their religious houses a thousand devils could scarce tempt one silly monk. All the principal devils, I think, busy themselves in subverting Christians; Jews, Gentiles, and Mahometans, are extra cautel, out of the fold, and need no such attendance, they make no resistance, "vos enim pulvere negligit, quos quiesse jure possidere se sentit," they are his own already: but Christians have that shield of faith, sword of the Spirit to resist, and must have a great deal of battery before they can be overcome. That the devil is most busy amongst us that are of the true church, appears by those several oppositions, heresies, schisms, which in all ages he hath raised to subvert it, and in that of Rome especially, wherein Antichrist himself now sits and plays his prize. This mystery of iniquity began to work even in the Apostles' time, many Antichrists and heretics were abroad, many sprung up since, many now present, and will be to the world's end, to dementate men's minds, to seduce and captivate their souls. Their symptoms I know not how better to express, than in that twofold division, of such as lead and are led. Such as lead are heretics, schismaticks, false prophets, impostors, and their ministers: they have some common symptoms, some peculiar. Common, as madness, folly, pride, insolency, arrogancy, singularity, peevishness, obstinacy, impudence, scorn, and contempt of all other sects: "Nullius addicti jurare in verba magistri," they will approve of nought but what they first invent themselves, no interpretation good but what their infallible spirit dictates: none shall be in secundis, no not in tertius, they are only wise, only learned in the truth, all damned but they and their followers, cedem scripturarum factum ad materiam suam, saith Tertullian, they make a slaughter of Scriptures, and turn it as a nose of wax to their own ends. So irrefragable, in the meantime, that what they have once said, they must and will maintain, in whole tomes, duplications, triplications, never yield to death, so self-conceited, say what you can. As "Bernard (erroneously some say) speaks of P. Aliardus, omnes putres sic alque ego sic. Though all the Fathers, Councils, the whole world contradict it, they care not, they are all one: and as "Gregory well notes "of such as are vertiginous, they think all turns round and moves, all err; when as the error is wholly in their own brains." Magallanus, the Jesuit, in his Comment on 1 Tim. xvi. 20, and Alphonsus de castro lib. 1. adversus haereses, gives two more eminent notes, or probable conjectures to know such men by (they might have

---

1 Nullius se confistanti finem facti. 2 Ut in aliquem angulum se recipriter, ne reus certe quis dedit good Ipse erat admisitarus. 3 Gregor. Hom. 4 "Bound to the dictates of no master." 5 Epist. 190. 6 Orat. S. ut vertigine correptis videntur omnia movet, omnia ha falsa sunt, quem error in ipserum cerebro sit.
taken themselves by the noses when they said it); "6 First they affect noise and toys, and prefer falsehood before truth; a secondly, they care not for what rashness and folly hath brought out, pride afterwise and contumacy shall maintain to the last gasp." Peculiar systems are prodigious paradoxes, new doctrines, vain phantasms, which are not and diverse as they themselves. Nicholautes of old would have wive common: Montanists will not marry at all, nor Tatians, forbidding all f Severians wine; Adamians go naked; because Adam did so in Paradise; some 6 barefoot all their lives, because God, Exod. iii. and Joshua v. bid M to do; and Isaiah xx. was bid put off his shoes; Manichees hold Pythagorean transmigration of souls from men to beasts; "b the Circumcised in Africa, with a mad cruelty, made away themselves, some by fire, w breaking their necks, and seduced others to do the like, threatening some if did not," with a thousand such; as you may read in 1 Austin (for there v fourscore and eleven heresies in his times, besides schisms and smaller facts Epiphanius, Alphonsus de Castro, Daccaus, Gab, Prateolus, &c. Of proph enthusiasts and impostors, our Ecclesiastical stories afford many examp of Elias and Chris. m, as our 1 Eudo de stellis, a Briton in King Steph time, that went invisible, translated himself from one to another in a mom fed thousands with good cheer in the wilderness, and many such; nothin common as miracles, visions, revelations, prophecies. Now what these br sick heretics once broch, and impostors set on foot, be it never so abs false, and prodigins, the common people will follow and believe. It will along like murrain in cattle, scab in sheep. Nulla scabies, as he said, su stitione scabiosis: as he that is bitten with a mad dog bites others, and at the end become mad; either out of affection of novelty, simplicity, blind hope and fear, the giddy-headed multitude will embrace it, and without fair examination approve it.

Sed vetera querimur, these are old, haec prius fuere. In our days we ha new scene of superstitious impostors and heretics. A new company of actor Antichrists, that great Antichrist himself: a rope of popes, that by their great and authority bear down all before them: who from that time they proclaim themselves universal bishops, to establish their own kingdom, sovereignty, gr ness, and to enrich themselves, brought in such a company of human tradi purgatory, Limbus Patrum, Infantium, and all that subterranean georg mass, adoration of saints, alms, fasting, bulls, indulgences, orders, friars, im shrines, musty relics, excommunications, confessions, satisfactions, blind dences, vows, pilgrimages, peregrinations, with many such curious t intricate subtleties, gross errors, obscure questions, to vindicate the better set a gloss upon them, that the light of the Gospel was quite eclipsed, dark over all, the Scriptures concealed, legends brought in, religion banal hypocritical superstition exalted, and the church itself obscured and seceded, Christ and his members crucified more, saith Benzo, by a few ne mantical, atheistical popes, than ever it was by Julian the Apostle, Por rius the Platonist, Celestius the physician, Libanius the Sophister; by th heathen emperors, Huns, Goths, and Vandals. What each of them did what means, at what times, quibus auxiliis, superstition climbed to this hei traditions increased, and Antichrist himself came to his estate, let Magde

Symptoms of Religious Melancholy.

In the mean time, he that shall but see their profane rites and foolish customs, how superstitiously kept, how strictly observed, their multitude of saints, images, that rabble of Romish deities, for trades, professions, diseases, persons, offices, countries, places; St. George for England; St. Denis for France; Patrick, Ireland; Andrew, Scotland; Jago, Spain; &c. Gregory for students; Luke for painters; Cosmus and Damian for philosophers; Crispin, shoemakers; Katherine, spinners; &c. Anthony for pigs; Gallus, geese; Wenceslaus, sheep; Pelagius, oxen; Sebastian, the plague; Valentine, falling sickness: Apollonia, tooth-ache; Petronella for agues; and the Virgin Mary for sea and land, for all parties, offices: he that shall observe these things, their shrines, images, oblations, pendants, adorations, pilgrimages they make to them, what creeping to crosSES, our Lady of Loreto’s rich gowns, her donaries, the cost bestowed on images, and number of suitors; St. Nicholas Burge in France; our St. Thomas’s shrine of old at Canterbury; those relics at Rome, Jerusalem, Genoa, Lyons, Pratum, St. Denis; and how many thousands come yearly to offer to them, with what cost, trouble, anxiety, superstition (for forty several masses are daily said in some of their churches, and they rise at all hours of the night to mass, come barefoot, &c.), how they spend themselves, times, goods, lives, fortunes, in such ridiculous observations; their tales and figments, false miracles, buying and selling of pardons, indulgences for 40,000 years to come, their processions on set days, their strict fastings, monks, anchorites, friar mendicants, Franciscans, Carthusians, &c. Their vigils and fasts, their ceremonies at Christmas, Shrovetide, Candlemas, Palm-Sunday, Blaise, St. Martin, St. Nicholas’ day; their adorations, exorcisms, &c., will think all those Grecian, Pagan, Mahometan superstitions, gods, idols, and ceremonies, the name, time and place, habit only altered, to have degenerated into Christians. Whilst they prefer traditions before Scriptures; those Evangelical Councils, poverty, obedience, vows, alms, fasting, supererogations, before God’s Commandments; their own ordinances instead of his precepts, and keep them in ignorance, blindness, they have brought the common people into such a case by their cunning conveyances, strict discipline and servile education, that upon pain of damnation they dare not break the least ceremony, tradition, edict; hold it a greater sin to eat a bit of meat in Lent, than kill a man: their consciences are so terrified, that they are ready to despair if a small ceremony be omitted; and will accuse their own father, mother, brother, sister, nearest and dearest friends of heresy, if they do not as they do, will be their chief executioners, and help first to bring a faggot to burn them. What mulct, what penance soever is enjoined, they dare not but do it, tumble with St. Francis in the mire amongst hogs, if they be appointed, go woolward, whip themselves, build hospitals, abbeys, &c., go to the East or West Indies, kill a king, or run upon a sword point: they perform all, without any murmuring or hesitation, believe all.

"Ut paerti infantes credunt signa omnia abeunt Vivere, et esse homines, et sic isti omnia ficta Vera parent, credunt signis cor ineuse abeunt."

And whilst the ruder sort are so carried headlong with blind zeal, are so gull’d and tortured by their superstitions, their own too credulous simplicity and ignorance, their epicurean popes and hypocritical cardinals laugh in their sleeves, and are merry in their chambers with their punks, they do indulgere genio, and make much of themselves. The middle sort, some for private gain, hope of ecclesiastical preferment (quis expedivit psittaco suum cauicis), popularity, base flattery, must and will believe all their paradoxes and absurd

\[9\] Ut paerti infantes credunt signa omnia abeunt Vivere, et esse homines, et sic isti omnia ficta Vera parent, credunt signis cor ineuse abeunt.

\[9\] As children think their babies live to be, Do they these brazen images they see.

\[9\] One image had one gown worth 400 crowns and more.

\[9\] Lucilius, lib. 1. cap. 22. de falsa vulg.
tenets, without exception, and as obstinately maintain and put in practice their traditions and idolatrous ceremonies (for their religion is half a trade) the death; they will defend all, the golden legend itself, with all the lies in it: as that of St. George, St. Christopher, St. Winifred, St. Denys. It is a wonder to see how Nic. Harpsfield, that pharisaical impostor, and his rest, Ecclesiast. Hist. cap. 22. sec. prim. sec. tudes, puzzles himself to vindicate that ridiculous fable of St. Ursula and the eleven thousand virgins, as if they lived, how they came to Cologne, by whom martyred, etc., though he can say nothing for it, yet he must and will approve it: nobilitavit (inquit secundum Ursula cum comitibus, cujus historia utinam tam mili esset exp et certa, quam in ano meo certum ac expeditum est, eam esse cum suos beatam in colis virginem. They must and will (I say) either out of blind believe, vary their compass with the rest, as the latitude of religion vs apply themselves to the times and seasons, and for fear and flattery are tent to subscribe and to do all that in them lies to maintain and defend the present government and slavish religious schoolmen, canonists, jestits, fi priests, orators, sophisters, who either for that they had nothing else to luxuriate with knew not otherwise how to busy themselves in those idle tis for the Church then had few or no open adversaries, or better to defend lies, fictions, miracles, transubstantiations, traditions, pope's pardons, purges, masses, impossibilities, &c., with glorious shows, fair pretences, big, and plausible wits, have coined a thousand idle questions, nice distinct subtleties, Obs and Sols, such tropological, allegorical expositions, to savv appearances, objections, such quirks and quiddities, quodlibetaries, as saith of Ferribrigge and Strode, instances, ampliations, decrees, glo canons, that instead of sound commentaries, good preachers, are come company of mad sophisters, primo secundo secundarii, sectaries, Canor Sorbonists, Minorites, with a rabble of idle controversies and questions, Pope sit Deus, an quasi Deus? An participet utramque Christi natur Whether it be as possible for God to be a humble bee or a gourd, as a D. Whether he can produce respect without a foundation or term, make a who virgin? fetch Trajan's soul from hell, and how? with a rabble of quest about hell-fire: whether it be a greater sin to kill a man, or to clout shorn upon a Sunday? whether God can make another God like unto him? Such, saith Kennisius, are most of your schoolmen (mere alchemists), commentators on Peter Lambard; (Pitiusus catal. scriptorum Anglic, reck up 180 English commentators alone, on the matter of the sentences), Scot Thomists, Reals, Nominals, &c., and so perhaps that of St. Austin may verified. Indocti rapiunt calum docti interim descendunt ad infernum. T they continued in such error, blindness, decrees, sophisms, superstitions; ceremonies and traditions were the sum of their new- coined holiness religion, and by these knaverys and stratagems they were able to involve multitudes, to deceive the most sanctified souls, and, if it were possible, the elect. In the mean time the true Church, as wine and water mixed, lay and obscure to speak of, till Luther's time, who began upon a sudden defeate, and as another sun to drive away those foggy mists of superstit to restore it to that purity of the primitive Church. And after him in good and godly men, divine spirits, have done their endeavours, and still

"And what their ignorance esteemed so holy, Our wiser ages do account as folly."

But see the devil, that will never suffer the Church to be quiet or at rest: garden so well tilled but some noxious weeds grow up in it, no wheat bu

hath some tares: we have a mad giddy company of precisions, schisms, and some heretics, even in our own bosoms in another extreme. "Dum vitat stulti vitia in contraria currunt," that out of too much zeal in opposition to Antichrist, human traditions, those Romish rites and superstitions, will quite demolish all, they will admit of no ceremonies at all, no fasting days, no cross in baptism, kneeling at communion, no church music, &c., no bishop's courts, no church government, rail at all our church discipline, will not hold their tongues, and all for the peace of thee, O Sion! No, not so much as degrees some of them will tolerate, or universities, all human learning (tis cloacas diaboli), hoods, habits, cap and surplice, such as are things indifferent in themselves, and wholly for ornament, decency, or distinction'sake, they abhor, hate, and snuff at, as a stone-horse when he meets a bear: they make matters of conscience of them, and will rather forsake their livings than subscribe to them. They will admit of no holidays, or honest recreations, as of hawking, hunting, &c., no churches, no bells some of them, because Papists use them; no discipline, no ceremonies but what they invent themselves; no interpretations of scriptures, no comments of fathers, no councils, but such as their own fantastical spirits dictate, or recta ratio, as Socinians, by which spirit misled, many times they broach as prodigious paradoxes as Papists themselves. Some of them turn prophets, have secret revelations, will be of privy council with God himself, and know all his secrets, Per capillos spiritum sanctum tenent, et omnia scient cum sint asiini omnium obstinatissimi, a company of giddy heads will take upon them to define how many shall be saved and who damned in a parish, where they shall sit in heaven, interpret Apocalypses, Commentatores pricipites et veriginosos, one calls them, as well he might) and those hidden mysteries to private persons, times, places, as their own spirit informs them, private revelations shall suggest, and precisely set down when the world shall come to an end, what year, what month, what day. Some of them again have such strong faith, so presumptuous, they will go into infected houses, expel devils, and fast forty days, as Christ himself did; some call God and his attributes into question, as Vorstius and Socinus; some princes, civil magistrates, and their authorities, as anabaptists, will do all their own private spirit dictates, and nothing else. Brownists, Barrowists, Familists, and those Amsterdamian sects and sectaries, are led all by so many private spirits. It is a wonder to reveal what passages Sleidan relates in his commentaries, of Cretinck, Knipperdoling, and their associates, those madmen of Munster in Germany; what strange enthusiasms, sottish revelations they had, how absurdly they carried themselves, deluded others; and as profane Machiavel in his political disputations holds of Christian religion, in general it doth enervate, debilitate, take away men's spirits and courage from them, simpliciores reddit homines, breeds nothing so courageous soldiers as that Roman: we may say of these peculiar sects, their religion takes away not spirits only, but wit and judgment, and deprives them of their understanding; for some of them are so far gone with their private enthusiasms and revelations, that they are quite mad, out of their wits. What greater madness can there be, than for a man to take upon him to be a God, as some do? to be the Holy Ghost, Elias, and what not? In Poland, 1518, in the reign of King Sigismund, one said he was Christ, and got him twelve apostles, came to judge the world, and strangely deluded the commons. One David George, an illiterate painter, not many years since, did as much in Holland, took upon him to be the Messiah, and had many followers. Benedictus Victorinus Faventinus, consil. 15, writes as much of one Honorius, that thought he was not only inspired as a prophet, but that

---

4 Whilst these fools avoid one vice they run into another of an opposite character." 5 Agrip. ep. 29. 6 Loc. Alex. Gageijn. 22. Discipulis ascitis mirum in modum populam deceperit. 7 Guicciard. descript. Belg. complures habitas assecas ab lusdem honoratus,
he was a God himself, and had familiar conference with God and his ar
Lavat. de spect. c. 2. part. 8. hath a story of one John Sartorius, that the
he was the prophet Elias, and cap. 7. of divers others that had con-
ference with angels, were saints, prophets. Wierus. lib. 3. de Lamiis, c. 7. m
ention of a prophet of Groning that said he was God the Father;
Italian and Spanish prophet that held as much. We need not rove s
abroad, we have familiar examples at home: Hacket that said he was Ch
Coppinger and Arthington his disciples; Burchet and Hovatus, born
Norwich. We are never likely seven years together without some such
prophets that have several inspirations, some to convert the Jews, some
forty days, go with Daniel to the lion’s den; some foretell strange things;
for one thing, some for another. Great precisions of mean conditions and
illiterate, most part by a preposterous zeal, fasting, meditation, melanch
are brought into those gross errors and inconveniences. Of those men I
conclude, generally, that howsoever they may seem to be discreet, and me
understanding in other matters, discourse well, lesam habent imaginatio
they are like comets, round in all places but where they blaze, cetera,
they have impregnable wits many of them, and discreet otherwise, but in
their madness and folly breaks out beyond measure, in infinitum eru
stultitiae. They are certainly far gone with melancholy, if not quite mad,
have more need of physic than many a man that keeps his bed, more nec
hellebore than those that are in Bedlam.

SUBJECT. IV.—Prognostics of Religious Melancholy.

You may guess at the prognostics by the symptoms. What can these
foretell otherwise than folly, dotage, madness, gross ignorance, despair, or
nacy, a reprobate sense; a bad end? What else can superstition, her
produce, but wars, tumults, uproars, torture of souls, and despair, a descl
land, as Jeremy teacheth, cap. vii. 34. when they commit idolatry, and v
after their own ways? how should it be otherwise with them? what can
expect but “blasting, famine, dearth,” and all the plagues of Egypt, as A
denounceth, cap. iv. vers. 9. 10. to be led into captivity? If our hope
frustrate, “we sow much and bring in little, eat and have not enough, d
and are not filled, clothe and be not warm, &c. Haggai. i. 6. we look for n
and it comes to little, whence is it? His house was waste, they came to t
own houses, vers. 9. therefore the heaven stayed his dew, the earth his f
Because we are superstitious, irreligious, we do not serve God as we ought;
these plagues and miseries come upon us; what can we look for else but mu
wars, slaughters, fearful ends in this life and in the life to come ete
damnation? What is it that hath caused so many feral battles to be fou
so much Christian bloodshed, but superstition? That Spanish inquisition, r
wheels, tortures, torments, whence do they proceed? from superstition. Bo
the Frenchman, in his method. hist. accounts Englishmen barbarians, for t
civil wars; but let him read those Pharsalian fields fought of late in France
religion, their massacres, wherein by their own relations in twenty-four y
I know not how many millions have been consumed, whole families and ci
and he shall find ours to be but revelations to theirs. But it hath ever l
the custom of heretics and idolaters, when they are plagued for their sins,
God’s just judgments come upon them, not to acknowledge any fault in ti
selves, but still iimpute it unto others. In Cyprian’s time it was much co
vertied between him and Demetrius an idolater, who should be the cause of t

b Hon. Nicholas at Leiden 1590, such a one. c See Camden’s Annals, fo. 242. et 285. d Arl
buckles burst, Montanus hanged himself, &c. Eudo de stella, his disciples, apostle potius quam ad
corriger manum; tanta vis infect semel errors, they died blasphoming. Nubigensis, c. 9. lib. i. Jer.
present calamities. Demetrius laid all the fault on Christians, (and so they did ever in the primitive church, as appears by the first book of Arnobius,) "that there were not such ordinary showers in winter, the ripening heat in summer, so seasonable springs, fruitful autumns, no marble mines in the mountains, less gold and silver than of old; that husbandmen, sea-men, soldiers, all were scanty, justice, friendship, skill in arts, all was decayed," and that through Christian's default, and all their other miseries from them, quod dict nostri à vobis non colantur, because they did not worship their gods. But Cyprian retorts all upon him again, as appears by his tract against him. "Tis true the world is miserably tormented and shaken with wars, dearth, famine, fire, inundations, plagues, and many feral diseases rage amongst us, sed non ut tu quereris ista accidunt quod dict nostri à vobis non colantur sed quod à vobis non colat Deus, à quibus nec queritur, nec timetur, non as thou complainest, that we do not worship your gods, but because you are idolaters, and do not serve the true God, neither seek him, nor fear him as you ought. Our papists object as much to us, and account us heretics, we them; the Turks esteem of both as infidels, and we them as a company of pagans, Jews against all; when indeed there is a general fault in us all, and something in the very best, which may justly deserve God's wrath, and pull these miseries upon our heads. I will say nothing here of those vain cares, torments, needless works, penance, pilgrimages, pseudomartyrdom, &c. We heap upon ourselves unnecessary troubles, observation; we punish our bodies, as in Turkey (saith Busbequius, Log. Turcic. ep. 3.) "one did, that was much affected with music, and to hear boys singing, but very superstitiously; an old sybil coming to his house, or a holy woman (as that place yields many), took him down for it, and told him, that in that other world he should suffer for it; thereupon he flung his rich and costly instruments which he had bedeked with jewels, all at once into the fire. He was served in silver plate, and had goodly household stuff: a little after, another religious man reproached him in like sort, and from thenceforth he was served in earthen vessels, last of all a decree came forth, because Turks, might not drink wine themselves, that neither Jew nor Christian then living in Constantinople, might drink any wine at all." In like sort amongst papists, fasting at first was generally proposed as a good thing; after, from such meats at set times, and then last of all so rigorously proposed, to bind the consciences upon pain of damnation. "First Friday," saith Erasmus, "then Saturday," et tunc periclitatur dies Mercureti, and Wednesday now is in danger of a fast. "And for such like toys, some so miserably afflict themselves to despair, and death itself, rather than offend, and think themselves good Christians in it, when as indeed they are superstitious Jews." So saith Leonarius Fuchsius, a great physician in his time. "We are tortured in Germany with these popish edicts, our bodies so taken down, our goods so diminished, that if God had not sent Luther, a worthy man, in time, to redress these mischiefs, we should have eaten hay with our horses before this." As in fasting, so in all other superstitious edicts we crucify one another without a cause, barring ourselves of many good and lawful things, honest disports, pleasures and recreations; for wherefore did God create them but for our use? Feasts, nirth, music, hawking, hunting, singing, dancing, &c. non tam necessitatus nostri

---

5 Advers. gentes, lib. I. postquam in mundo Christiana gens capiit, terrarum erhem perisset, et multa mala affecturus esse genos humanum videtur. 6 Quod nee hycume, nec estate tantas lumbriop, nec fragitus solita flagrantia, nec vernali temperie sata tama sint, nec arbores fossilis autem feesendi, minus de montibus marmor eratur, minus aurum, &c. 7 Solitus erat oblectare se fidibus, et vocare canecium; sed hoc omne sublimum Syvilem quiesdat intervent, &c. 8 Inde quippe erat instrumentorum symphoniae, eurum genemisque egregio opere distinctorum communie, et in igniem inject, &c. 9 Ob id genus observationum videmus homines misere affici, et denique mori, et sibi ipsius Christianos videri quern revera sint Judaei. 10 Ita in corpora nostra fortunatius decrectis suis seviet, ut parum absenetur, nisi Deus Luthernum virum perpetua memoria dignissimum excitasset, quin nobis fossa max communi eam jumentis Subtus fulisset. 11 De Gentiles in India will eat no smallie creatures, or ought that hath blood in it.
Deus servit, sed in delicias amamus, as Seneca notes, God would have I And as Plato 2. de legibus gives out, deos laboriosam hominum vitam misit the gods in commiseration of human estate sent Apollo, Baco, and Muses, qui cum voluptate tripudia et sallationes nobis ducant, to be merry mortals, to sing and dance with us. So that he that will not rejoice in himself, making good use of such things as are lawfully permitted, non est peratus, as he will, sed superstitosus. "There is nothing better for a man than that he should eat and drink, and that he should make his soul enjoy good in his labour," Eccles. ii. 24. And as one said of hawking and hunting tot solatia in hac aegri orbis calamitate mortuales teadiis deus object, I say of honest recreations, God hath therefore indulged them to refresh, ease, so and comfort us. But we are some of us too stern, too rigid, too precise, grossly superstitious, and whilst we make a conscience of every toy, with to not, taste not, &c., as those Pythagoreans of old, and some Indians now, will eat no flesh, or suffer any living creature to be killed, the Bannians at Guzerat; we tyrannize over our brother’s soul, lose the right use of our good gifts; honest sports, games and pleasant recreations, punish oursel without a cause, lose our liberties, and sometimes our lives. Anno 1270 q Magdeburg in Germany, a Jew fell into a privy upon a Saturday, and with help could not possibly get out; he called to his fellows for succour, but t denied it, because it was their Sabbath, non licet opus manuum exercet the bishop hearing of it, the next day forbade him to be pulled out, beca it was our Sunday. In the mean time the wretch died before Monday, have myriads of examples in this kind amongst those rigid sabbatarians, therefore not without good cause, Intolerabilem perturbationem Seneca c it, as well he might, an intolerable perturbation, that causeth such dire evils, folly, madness, sickness, despair, death of body and soul, and hell itself.

SUBSECT. V.— Cure of Religious Melancholy.

To purge the world of idolatry and superstition, will require some monst taming Hercules, a divine Æsculapius, or Christ himself to come in his o person, to reign a thousand years on earth before the end, as the Milen will have him. They are generally so refractory, self-conceited, obstinate, firmly addicted to that religion in which they have been bred and brought that no persuasion, no terror, no persecution, can divert them. The conside tion of which, hath induced many commonwealths to suffer them to enjoy their consciences as they will themselves: a toleration of Jews is in most parts of Europe. In Asia they have their synagogues: Spaniards permit Moslems to live amongst them: the Mogullians, Gentiles: the Turks all religions. Europe, Poland and Amsterdam are the common sanctuaries. Some are opinion, that no man ought to be compelled for conscience’ sake, but let him of what religion he will, he may be saved, as Cornelius was formerly accepte Jew, Turk, Anabaptist, &c. If he be an honest man, live soberly, a civilly in his profession, (Volkelius, Crellius, and the rest of the Socinians, th now nestle themselves about Cracow and Rakow in Poland, have renewed t opinion), serve his own God, with that fear and reverence as he ought. S. cuique civitati (Laél) religio sit, nostra nobis, Tully thought fit every citizen should be free in this behalf, adore their own Custodes et Topicos deos, tutel

n Vandomillii de Aucenpio. cap. 27. 9 Some explode all human authors, arts, and sciences, po histories, &c., so precise, their zeal overruns their wits; and so stupid, they oppose all humane learning because they are ignorant themselves and illiterate, nothing must be read but Scriptures; but these n deserve to be pulped, rather than confuted. Others are so strict they will admit of no honest game and pleasure, no dancing, singing, other plays, recreations and games, hunting, cock-fighting, be haling, &c., because to see one beast kill another is the fruit of our rebellion against God, &c. Pfit se tremebunda cruciatus Irrepit genius si caniada jussit Inc. Juvenalis, sect. 6. q Oesner, Cosm. Lib. 2. cap. 444. Incidit in eloquem, unde se noe possit eximere, implorant opem solem, sed illi negans, t De benefic. 7. 2.
and local gods, as Symmachus calls them. Isocrates advi-eth Demonicus "when he came to a strange city, to "worship by all means the gods of the place,"et untumunque Topiciun deum sic coli oportere, quomodo ipse perse-

The said Constantine the Emperor, as Eusebius writes, flung down and demol-
ished all the heathen gods, silver, gold statues, altars, images and temples, and turned them all to Christian churches, infectus gentilium monumentis ludibrui exposuit; the Turk now converts them again to Mahometan mosques. The like edict came forth in the reign of Arcadius and Honorius. Symmachus, the orator, in his days, to procure a general toleration, used this argument, "Because God is immense and infinite, and his nature cannot perfectly be known, it is convenient he should be as diversely worshipped, as every man shall perceive or understand." It was impossible, he thought for one religion to be universal: you see that one small province can hardly be ruled by one law, civil or spiritual; and "how shall so many distinct and vast empires of the world be united into one? It never was, never will be." Besides, if there be infinite planetary and firmamental worlds, as "some will, there be infinite genii or commanding spirits belonging to each of them; and so, per consequens (for they will be all adored), infinite religions. And therefore let every terri-
tory keep their proper rites and ceremonies, as their die tutelares will, so Tyrius calls them, "and according to the quarter they hold," their own institutions, revelations, orders, oracles, which they dictate from time to time, or teach their priests or ministers. This tenet was stiffly maintained in Turkey not long since, as you may read in the third epistle of Buslequins, "that all those should participate of eternal happiness, that lived a holy and innocent life, what religion soever they professed." Rustan Bassa was a great patron of it; though Mahomet himself was sent virtute gladii, to enforce all, as he writes in his Alcoran, to follow him. Some again will approve of this for Jews, Gentiles, infidels, that are out of the fold, they can be content to give them all respect and favour, but by no means to such as are within the precincts of our

1 Nomen venerare praestitum quod civitas colit. 4 Octavio dial. 7 Annal. tom. 3. ad annum 324. 1.
2 Ovid. "Saturn is dead, his laws died with him; now that Jupiter rules the world, let us obey his laws."
3 In epit. Sym. 5 Quia deis immensus quidquam est, et infinitum eunus natura pericet cognitum nec posset, sequam erga est, et diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversa ratione est, at diversaratione est, at diversa ratio
Memorandum II.

Subject I.—Religious Melancholy in defect; parties affected, Epicureans, Atheists, Hypocrites, worldly secure, Carnalists, all impious persons, incontinent persons, &c.

In that other extreme or defect of this love of God, knowledge, faith, hope, &c. are such as err both in doctrine and manners. Sadducees, Herodis

Comment in C. Thom. 6. ver. 20. et 21. severitatem cum agendum, et non alit.

Quod si eflici schismaticis lib. 13. cap. 15. et non alit.

Illum curarem: ego qux: sivi ab eo quid sentirit: respondit, semper imaginor et cognito deo et ang. &c. et ut de mercurio sum hae imaginaciones, ut hic adem hoc dormium, hic negotior, &c. Ego et mediationem et persuasiones; et sic plures alios.
libertines, politicians; all manner of atheists, epicures, infidels, that are secure, in a reprobat sense, fear not God at all, and such are too distrustful and timorous, as desperate persons be. That grand sin of atheism or impiety, Melanthon calls it monstrorum melancolyiam, monstrous melancholy; or venenatam melancolyiam, poisoned melancholy. A company of Cyclops or giants, that war with the gods, as the poets feigned, antipodes to Christians, that scoff at all religion, at God himself, deny him and all his attributes, his wisdom, power, providence, his mercy and judgment.

That there is either heaven or hell, resurrection of the dead, pain, happiness, or world to come, credited Judeus Apella; for their parts they esteem them as so many poet's tales, bugbears, Lucian's Alexander; Moses, Mahomet, and Christ are all as one in their creed. When those bloody wars in France for matters of religion (saith Richard Dinoth) were so violently pursued between Huguenots and Papists, there was a company of good fellows laughed them all to scorn, for being such superstitious fools, to lose their wives and fortunes, accounting faith, religion, immortality of the soul, mere fopperies and illusions. Such lose theistical spirits are too predominant in all kingdoms. Let them contend, pray, tremble, trouble themselves that will, for their parts, they fear neither God nor the devil; but with that Cyclops in Euripides.

"Hand ulls numina exparescant ceilium,  
Sed victimas uni deorum maximo,  
Ventiis oeterunt, deos ignorant ceteros."

"Their god is their belly," as Paul saith, Sancta mater saturiitas;—quibus in solo vivendo causa palato est. The idol, which they worship and adore, is their mistress; with him in Plautus, mallem hoc mulier me amet quam diu, they had rather have her favour than the gods'. Satan is their guide, the flesh is their instructor, hypocrisy their counsellor, vanity their fellow-soldier, their will their law, ambition their captain, custom their rule; temerity, boldness, impudence their art, toys their trading, damnation their end. All their endeavours are to satisfy their lust and appetite, how to please their genius, and to be merry for the present, Ede, lude, bite, post mortem nulla voluptas. The same condition is of men and of beasts; as the one dieth, so dieth the other," Ecles. iii. 19. The world goes round.

"Truditur dies diec,  
Noveque pergant interi re Lune:"

"They did eat and drink of old, marry, bury, bought, sold, planted, built, and will do still. Our life is short and tedious, and in the death of a man there is no recovery, neither was any man known that hath returned from the grave; for we are born at all adventure, and we shall be hereafter as though we had never been; for the breath is as smoke in our nostrils, &c., and the spirit vanisheth as the soft air. Come let us enjoy the pleasures that are present, let us cheerfully use the creatures as in youth, let us fill ourselves with costly wine and ointments, let not the flower of our life pass by us, let us crown ourselves with rose-buds before they are withered, &c. Vivamus mea Lesbia et omemus, &c. Come let us take our fill of love, and pleasure in daintiness, for this is our portion, this is our lot. Tempora laburant, tacitisque senescimus.

b De anima, c. de humonis.
1 Juvenal. "That there are many ghosts and subterranean realms, and a boat-sole, and black frogs in the Stygian guln, and that so many thousands pass over in one boat, not even toys believe, unless those not as yet washed for money." 2 Li. 5. Gal. hist. quampluresi repertunt qui tot pericula subeuntres irredeem; et gene de fide, religiones, &c. dicebant, lubidio habeant, nihil ternam admittentes de futura vita. 150,000 atheists at this day in Paris, Mercenarius thinks. m "Eat, drink, be merry; there is no more pleasure after death." 3 Hor. 1. 2. od. 18. "One day succeeds another, and new moons hasten to their wane." 4 Luke xvii. 5 Pisd. ii. 2. 6 Vers. 6, 7, 8. 7 Catulus, Prov. vii. 19.
annis. ¹ For the rest of heaven and hell, let children and superstitious believe it: for their parts, they are so far from trembling at the dreadfull of judgment that they wish with Nero, Me rivo flat, let it come in their ti so secure, so desperate, so immoderate in lust and pleasure, so prone to rev that, as Paternus said of some caitiffs in his time in Rome, Quod neg ausi, fortiler executi: it shall not be so wickedly attempted, but as desper performed, whatever they take in hand. Were it not for God's restrai grace, fear and shame, temporal punishment, and their own infamy, they w Lycaon-like exenterate, as so many cannibals eat up, or Cadmus' soldiers sume one another. These are most impious, and commonly professed athe that never use the name of God but to swear by; that express ought but epicurism in their carriage or hypocrisy; with Pentheus they neglect contain these rites and religious ceremonies of the gods; they will be, themselves, or at least socii deorum. Divisum imperium cum Jove Caesar h. "Caesar divides the empire with Jove." Aprogis, an Ægyptian tyrant, g saith ² Herodotus, to that height of pride, insolvency of impiety, to that conte of gods and men, that he held his kingdom so sure, ut a nemine deorum hominum sibi eripi posset, neither God nor men could take it from him. certain blasphemous king of Spain (as ³ Lansius reports) made an edict, no subject of his, for ten years' space, should believe in, call on, or worship god. And as ⁴ Jovius relates of Mahomet the Second, that sacked Con tinople, he so behaved himself, that he believed neither Christ nor Maho and thence it came to pass, that he kept his word and promise no farther for his advantage, neither did he care to commit any offence to satisfy his ¹ I could say the like of many princes, many private men (our stories are fit them) in times past, this present age, that love, fear, obey, and peroff civil duties as they shall find them expedient or behaveful to their own ⁵ Securi adversus Deos, secui adversus homines, cotis non est opus, w ⁶ Tacitus reports of some Germans, they need not pray, fear, hope, for they secure, to their thinking, both from gods and men. Bulco Opilius, some Duke of ⁷ Silesia, was such a one to a hair; he lived (saith ⁸ Æneas Sylv at ⁹ Uraslavia, "and was so mad to satisfy his lust, that he believed ne heaven nor hell, or that the soul was immortal, but married wives, and tu them up as he thought fit, did murder and mischief, and what he list him: This duke hath too many followers in our days: say what you can, del exbort, persuade to the contrary, they are no more moved,—quam si ⁴ silex aut stet Marpessia cautes, than so many stocks and stones; tell them offes and hell, 'tis to no purpose, laterem lavas, they answer as Ataliba that In prince did friar Vincent, "when he brought him a book, and told him al mysteries of salvation, heaven and hell were contained in it: he looked it, and said he saw no such matter, asking withal, how he knew it:" will but scoff at it, or wholly reject it. Petronius in Tacitus, when he now, by Nero's command, bleeding to death, audiebat amicos nihil refer de immortallitate animae, aut sapientiam placitis, sed lavia curmuna et fa versus; instead of good counsel and divine meditations, he made his fri sing him hawdy verses and scurrilous songs. Let them take heaven, para and that future happiness that will, bonum est esse hic, it is good being ¹ there is no talking to such, no hope of their conversion, they are in a repro sense, mere carnalists, fleshly-minded men, which howsoever they ma

¹ "Time glides away, and we grow old by years insensibly accumulating." ² Lib. 1. ³ M. M. lib. 1. cap. 4. ⁴ Grat. Cont. Hispam. ne proxime decemio deum adoraret. &c. ⁵ Falem se extendit nec in Christum, nec Mahometem crederet, unde effectum ut premies nisi quatenus in saum comm eredent minime servaret, ut illo scelere peccatum statueret, ut suis desiderii satisfaceret. ⁶ L. mor. Germ. ². ² breuiss. ⁷ Usque adae insannis, ut nec infanes, nec superos esse dixit, anim cum corporibus interius credidit, &c. ⁸ Europe decer. cap. ². ⁹ Fratres à Bu Amer. par 6. lib. Vincentio monacho datum adject, nihil se videre ibi hujusmodi idicend rotanque unde hic secret, de caelo et Tartaro continent ibi direct.
applauded in this life by some few parasites, and held for worldly wise men, "They seem to me (saith Melanchton) to be as mad as Hercules was when he raved and killed his wife and children." A milder sort of these atheistical spirits there are that profess religion, but timide et haesianter, tempted thereunto out of that horrible consideration of diversity of religions, which are and have been in the world (which argument, Campanella, Atheismi Triumphati, cap. 9. both urgeth and answers), besides the covetousness, imposture, and knavery of priests, quo faciant (as Postellus observes) ut rebus sacris minus faciant fidei; and those religions some of them so fantastical, exorbitant, so violently maintained with equal constancy and assurance; whence they infer, that if there be so many religious sects, and denied by the rest, why may they not be all false? or why should this or that be preferred before the rest? The sceptics urge this, and amongst others it is the conclusion of Sextus Empiricus, lib. 8. adversus Mathematicos: after many philosophical arguments, and reasons pro and con that there are gods, and again that there are no gods, he so concludes, cum tot inter se pugnent, &c. Una tantum potest esse vera, as Tully likewise disputes: Christians say, they alone worship the true God, pity all other sects, lament their case; and yet those old Greeks and Romans that worshipped the devil, as the Chinese now do, aut deos topicos their own gods; as Julian the apostate, h Cecilius in Minutius, Celsus and Porphyrius the philosopher object: and as Machiavel contends, were much more noble, generous, victorious, had a more flourishing commonwealth, better cities, better soldiers, better scholars, better wits. Their gods often overcame our gods, did as many miracles, &c. Saint Cyril, Arnobius, Minutius, with many other ancients of late, Lascius, Mornenus, Grotius de Verit. Relig. Christianae, Savanarola de Verit. Fidei Christianae, well defend; but Zanchius, 1 Campanella, Marinus Marcennus, Bozius, and Gentillettus answer all these atheistical arguments at large. But this again troubles many as of old, wicked men generally thrive, professed atheists thrive,

"Nullo esse deos, inane colum, Afirmat Selias: probabilis, quod se Factum, omn negat hae, videt bestiam."  "There are no gods, heavens are toys, Selios in public justifies; Because that whilst he thus denies Their duties, he better thrives."

This is a prime argument: and most part your most sincere, upright, honest, and k good men are depressed, "The race is not to the swift, nor the battle to the strong (Eccles. ix. 11.), nor yet bread to the wise, favour nor riches to men of understanding, but time and chance comes to all." There was a great plague in Athens (as Thucydides, lib. 2. relates), in which at last every man, with great licentiousness, did what he list, not caring at all for God's or man's laws. "Neither the fear of God nor laws of men (saith he) awed any man, because the plague swept all away alike, good and bad; they thence concluded it was alike to worship or not worship the gods, since they perished all alike." Some cavil and make doubts of scripture itself: it cannot stand with God's mercy, that so many should be damned, so many bad, so few good, such have and hold about religions, all stiff on their side, factious alike, thrive alike, and yet bitterly persecuting and damning each other; "It cannot stand with God's goodness, protection, and providence (as Saint Chrysostom in the Dialect of such discontented persons) to see and suffer one man to be lame, another mad, a third poor and miserable all the days of his life, a fourth

f Non minus hi furum quam Hercules, qui coniugem et liberos interfecerat; habet hae etas plura hujusmodi tentorosa monstra. 8 De orbe con. lib. 1. cap. 7. h Nome Romani sine Deo vestro regeant et fruantur orbis totus, et vos et Deos vestros captives tenent, &c. Minutius Octaviani. 1 Comment. in Genesis copiosis in hoc subjacte. k Ecces pura vestra et major et melior alget, famelaborat, et desit patitur, dissimulant, non vult, non potest optimari nisi, et in vacuisque vel iniquis est. Ceclius in Minut. Dum rapunt maius fata bonos, ignoscite fasso, Solicitor nullis esse putare deos. Ovod. Vidi ego dias fretos, multos dedipl. Plautus, Casina act. 2. scen. 9. 1 Martian 1. 4. epig. 21. 2 Ser. 30. in 5. cap. ad Ephes. hic macis est pelibas, alter furit, alias ad extremam sonceram progressus omnem vitam pantepert urget, ille froribv graveissimis: sunt hic PROVIDENTIAE OPERA hic surdus, ille mutus, &c.
grievously tormented with sickness and aches, to his last hour. Are signs and works of God's providence, to let one man be deaf, another dumb poor honest fellow lives in disgrace, woe and want, wretched he is; as a wicked caiffit abounds in superfluity of wealth, keeps whores, pariahs, and what he will himself." Audis, Jupiter, hec? Talia multa connect longum reprehensionis sermonem erga Dei providentiam contexunt. Thus mutter and object (see the rest of their arguments in Marcellus in Gen and in Campanella, amply confuted), with many such vain cavils, well known not to the recapitulation or answering: whatsoever they pretend, are interim of little or no religion.

Cousin-germans to these men are many of our great philosophers and doctors, though they be more temperate in this life, give many good precepts, honest, upright, and sober in their conversation, yet in effect are the same (accounting no man a good scholar that is not an atheist), namely sapient, too much learning makes them mad. Whilst they attribute to natural causes, "contingence of all things, as Melancthon calls them, tinox hominum genus, a peevish generation of men, that misled by philosophy and the devil's suggestion, their own innate blindness, deny God as much the rest, hold all religion a fiction, opposite to reason and philosophy, the for fear of magistrates, saith P. Vaninus, they durst not publicly profess. Ask one of them of what religion he is, he scoffingly replies, a philoso-ter, a Galenist, an Averroist, and with Rabelais a physician, a peripatetic epicure. In spiritual things God must demonstrate all to sense, leave a pith with them, or else seek some other creditor. They will acknowledge Na and Fortune, yet not God: though in effect they grant both: for as Scal defines, Nature signifies God's ordinary power; or, as Calvin writes, Nature and Providence, and so things extraordinary may be called unnatural: Fortune unrevealed will; and so we call things changeable that are beside reason expectation. To this purpose Minutius in Octavia, and Seneca well course with them, lib. 4. de beneficis, cap. 5, 6, 7. "They do not understand what they say; what is Nature but God? call him what thou wilt, Nat Jupiter, he hath as many names as offices: it comes all to one pass, God is fountain of all, the first Giver and Preserver, from whom all things depend, et quod, et per quum omnia, Nam quoque videas Deus est, quodque magnum "God is all in all, God is everywhere, in every place." And yet this Seneca that could confute and blame them, is all out as much to be blamed and confuted himself, as mad himself; for he holds fata Stoicam, that inverts Necessity in the other extreme, as those Chaldean astrologers of old, against whom the prophet Jeremiah so often thundered, and those heat mathematicians, Nigidius Figulus, magicians, and Priscillianists, whom Austin so eagerly confutes, those Arabian questionaries, Novem Judices, Almayer, Dorotheus, &c., and our countryman Estuidus, that take upon themselves to define out of those great conjunctions of stars, with Ptolomaeus, the peri-tons, of Kingdoms, or religions, of all future accidents, wars, plagues, schis-heresies, and what not? all from stars, and such things, saith Maginus, et intelliget e quum hoc dicis, negare tesselam non satis causam est nullius Natura quam Deus? &c. tot habet appellationum quot numerarum. &c. Austin. &c.}|
writers, Cardan excepted, a true disciple of his master Pomponatus; according to the doctrine of peripatetics, he refers all apparitions, prodigies, miracles, oracles, accidents, alterations of religions, kingdoms, &c. (for which he is soundly lashed by Marinus Mercennius, as well he deserves), to natural causes (for spirits he will not acknowledge), to that light, motion, influences of heavens and stars, and to the intelligences that move the orbs. *Intelligentia qua movet orbem mediantce colo, &c.* Intelligences do all: and after a long discourse of miracles done of old, *si hec demones possint, cur non et intelligentiae colorum motrices?* And as these great conjunctions, aspects of planets, begin or end, vary, are vertical and predominant, so have religions, rites, ceremonies, and kingdoms their beginning, progress, periods, *in urbis, regionis, religi- onibus, ac in particularibus hominibus,* hec vera ac manifesta sunt, ut Aristoteles innuere videtur, et quotidiana doct experientia, ut historias perlegens videbit; quid olim in Gentili lege Jove sanctius et illustrius? quid nume vile magis et excrcvandum? *Ita celestia corpora pro mortalium beneficio religiones adjuvant, et cum cessat influxus, cessat lex,* &c. And because, according to their tenets, the world is eternal, intelligences eternal, influences of stars eternal, kingdoms, religions, alterations shall be likewise eternal, and run round after many ages; *Atque iterum ad Troiam magnus mittetur Achilles; renascetur religiones, et ceremoniae, res humane in idem incident, nihil nume est quod non olim fuit, et post seculorum revolutiones alius, etr.* &c. *idem specie, saith Vaninus, non individuo quod Plato significavit.* These (saith mine author), these are the decrees of peripatetics, which though I recite, in *obsequium Christiana fidei detester,* as I am a Christian I detest and hate. Thus peripatetics and astrologers held in former times, and to this effect of old in Rome, saith Dionysius Halicarnassus, *lib. 7,* when those meteors and prodigies appeared in the air, after the banishment of Coriolanus, *"Men were diversely affected: some said they were God's just judgments for the execution of that good man, some referred all to natural causes, some to stars, some thought they came by chance, some by necessity," decreed ab initio, and could not be altered. The two last opinions of necessity and chance were, it seems, of greater note than the rest.

*"B sunt qui in Fortune jam casibus omnia ponunt, Et mundum credunt nullo rectore moveri, Natura volvente vices," &c.*

For the first of chance, as *"Sallust likewise informeth us, those old Romans generally received; "They supposed fortune alone gave kingdoms and empires, wealth, honours, offices; and that for two causes; first, because every wicked base unworthy wretch was preferred, rich, potent, &c.; secondly, because of their uncertainty, though never so good, scarce any one enjoyed them long: but after, they began upon better advice to think otherwise, that every man made his own fortune." The last of Necessity was Seneca's tenet, that God was *alligatus causis secundis,* so tied to second causes, to that inexorable Necessity, that he could alter nothing of that which was once decreed; *sic erat in fatis, it cannot be altered, semel jussit, semper pariet Deus, nulla vis rampit, nulla preces, nec ipsum fulmen, God hath once said it, and it must for ever stand good, no prayers, no threats, nor power, nor thunder itself can alter it.* Zeno,

*"V in cities, kings, religions, and in individual men, these things are true and obvious, as Aristotle appears to imply, and daily experience teaches to the reader of history: for what was more sacred and illustrious, by Gentile law, than Jupiter? what not more vile and execrable? In this way celestial objects suggest religions for worldly motives, and when the influx ceases, so does the law," &c.* *"V and again a great Achilles shall be sent against Troy: religions and their ceremonies shall be born again; however affairs escape into the same tract, there is nothing now that was not formerly and will not be again," &c.* *"Vaninus dial. 39. de oraculis.*

*"Varie homines affecti, alii del judicium ad tam pli exilium, alii ad nautiam referant, nec ab indigatione deli, sed humanas causas, &c. 12. Natural. quest. 33. 39.*

*"There are those who ascribe everything to chance, and believe that the world is made without a director, nature influencing the velicities," &c.*

*"Epist. ad C. Cesar. Roman olii putabant fortunam regna et imperia dave: Credebat ante mortales fortunam solam opes et honores largiss, &c. Ex quo datus de causis primo quod indignus quisque dives, honoratus, potens; alterum, vix quisquam perpetuo honis lis frui visut.*

*Postea prudentiores dictiure fortunam suam quemque fingere.*
Chrysippus, and these other Stoics, as you may read in Tully, 2. de divinat
Gellius, lib. 6. cap. 2. &c., maintained as much. In all ages, there have
such, that either deny God in all, or in part; some deride him, they could
made a better world, and ruled it more orderly themselves, blaspheme
derogue at their pleasure from him. Twas so in 4 Plato's time, "Some
there be no gods, others that they care not for men, a middle sort grant be
si non sit deus, unde bona? si sit deus, unde mala? So Cotta argue
Tully, why made he not all good, or at least tenders not the welfare of
as are good? As the woman told Alexander, if he be not at leisure to
causes, and redress them, why doth he reign? 6 Sextus Empi
ericus hath n such arguments. Thus perverse men cavil. So it will ever be, some o
sorts, good, bad, indifferent, true, false, zealous, ambidexters, neutral
lukewarm, libertines, atheists, &c. They will see these religious sects
agree amongst themselves, be reconciled all, before they will participate v
or believe any; they think in the meantime (which 5 Celsius objects, and w
Origen confutes), 4 We Christians adore a person put to 5 death with no
reason than the barbarous Getes worshipped Zamolxis, the Cilicians Moj
the Thebans Amphiarans, and the Lebadians Trophonius; one religion
true as another, new fangled devices, all for human respects;" great-wi
Aristotle's works are as much authentic to them as Scriptures, subtle Sen
Epistles as canonical as St. Paul's, Pindarus' Odes as good as the Pro
David's Psalms, Epictetus' Enchiridion equivalent to wise Solomon's Prov
They do openly and boldly speak this and more, some of them, in all pl
and companies. 4 Claudius the emperor was angry with Heaven, heca
thundered, and challenged Jupiter into the field; with what madness! 4 Seneca; he thought Jupiter could not hurt him, but he could hurt Jupi
Diogoras, Demonax, Epicurus, Pliny, Lucian, Lucretius,—Contempt
Deum Mecenetus, "professed atheists all" in their times: though not s
atheists neither, as Cicogna proves, lib. 1. cap. 1. they scoffed only at t
Pagan gods, their plurality, base and fictitious offices. Gilbertus Cogn
labours much, and so doth Erasmus, to vindicate Lucian from scandal,
there be those that apologize for Epicurus, but all in vain; Lucian scoffs a
Epicurus he denies all, and Lucretius his scholar defends him in it:

"1. Humana ante oculos ferit cum vita iacere,
In terris oppressa, gravi cum reliquitone,
Que caput a cœli regemibus ostendebat,
Horribili super aspectu mortalibus iactans," &c.

| "When human kind was drowned in sincerest
With ghastly looks aloft, which frightened
men," &c. |

He alone, like another Hercules, did vindicate the world from that mon
Unde 4 Pliny, lib. 2. cap. 7. nat. hist. and lib. 7. cap. 55, in express w
denies the immortality of the soul. 1 Seneca doth little less, lib. 7. epist
ad Lucilium, et lib. de consol. ad Martiam, or rather more. Some G
Commentators would put as much upon Job, that he should deny resurrec
&c., whom Pineda copiously confutes in cap 7. Job, vers. 9. Aristotle is he
censured of some, both divines and philosophers. St. Justin in Panen
ad Gentes, Greg. Nazianzen. in disput. adversus Eun., Theodoret, lib.5. de c
graec. alph. Origen. lib. de principiis. Pomponatus justifies in his Trac
styled at least) De immortalitate Animae, Scaliger (who would forswear hit
at any time, saith Patritius, in defence of his great master Aristotle),
Dandinus, lib. 3. de animâ, acknowledge as much. Averroes oppugn
spirits and supreme powers; of late Brunus (infelix Brunus, 4 Kepler
him), Machiavel, Cesar Vaninus lately burned at Toulouse in France, and

10 de legib. Alit negat esse deos, aliis deos non curare res humanas, aliis ira praeceident, c
ad matrem. 4 Origen. contra Celsum. 1. 3 hos inmerito nobiscum conferri fas declarat. 5 Crue
deam ignominios Lucianus vita peregrin. Christiun vocat. 4 De ira, 16, 34. Iraus exel qui obstar
ad pagam vocans Jovem, quanta demens? putavit sit noce non poste, et se necere tam poste.
1 Lib. 1. 1.
4 Idem status post mortem, ac fuit antequam nascernam, et Seneca
erit post me quo ante me fuit.
1 Lucere condiem condtio quem extinguitur, ac fuit antequam
decet; ha et hominis. 4 Dissert. cum num. sider.
Aristine, have publicly maintained such atheistical paradoxes, with that Italian Bocaccio with his fable of three rings, &c., ex quo infecto haud posse internoscit, qua sit verior judaica, Mahometana, an Christiana, quoniam eadem signa, &c., "from which he infers, that it cannot be distinguished which is the true religion, Judaism, Mahometanism, or Christianity," &c. Marinus Mercenarius suspects Cardan for his subtleties, Campanella, and Charron's Book of Wisdom, with some other Tracts to savour of atheism: but amongst the rest that pestilent book de tribus mundi impostoribus, quem sine horrore (inquit) non legas, et mundi Symbolum dialogis quatuor contentum, anno 1538, autore Peroisio, Parisiis excusum. And as there have been in all ages such blasphemous spirits, so there have not been wanting their patrons, protectors, disciples and adherents. Never so many atheists in Italy and Germany, saith Coleris, as in this age: the like complaint Mercenarius makes in France, 50,000 in that one city of Paris. Frederic the Emperor, as "Matthew Paris records, licet non sit recitabile (I use his own words), is reported to have said, Trespræstigatores, Moses, Christus, et Mahometum, ut inaudito dominaventur, totum populum sibi contemporaneum seduxisse. (Henry, the Landgrave of Hesse, heard him speak it,) Si principes imperii institutioni meae adhererent, ego multo melioremodum credendi et vivendi ordinarem."

To these professed atheists we may well add that impious and carnal crew of worldly-minded men, impenitent sinners, that go to hell in a lethargy, or in a dream; who though they be professed Christians, yet they will nullá patres cere culpâ, make a conscience of nothing they do, they have canterized consciences, and are indeed in a reprobate sense, "past all feeling, have given themselves over to wantonness, to work all manner of uncleanness even with greediness," Ephes. iv. 19. They do know there is a God, a day of judgment to come, and yet for all that, as Hugo saith, ita comedant ac dormiunt, ac si diem judicij evasissent; ita ludunt ac rident, ac si in ecelis cum Deo regnarent: they are as merry for all the sorrow, as if they had escaped all dangers, and were in heaven already:

---

\[4 t]Metus omnes, et inexorable fatum
Subiect pedi, us, streptomque Acherontis averti."---

Those rude idiots and ignorant persons, that neglect and contemn the means of their salvation, may march on with these; but above all others, those Herodian temporizing statesmen, political Machiavelians and hypocrites, that make a show of religion, but in their hearts laugh at it. Simulata sanctitas duplex insaníquæ; they are in a double fault, "that fashion themselves to this world," which Paul forbids, and like Mercury, the planet, are good with good, bad with bad. When they are at Rome, they do there as they see done, puritans with puritans, papists with papists; omnium hororum homines, formalists, ambitionaries, lukewarm Leodiceans. *All their study is to please, and their god is their commodity, their labour to satisfy their lusts, and their endeavours to their own ends. Whateover they pretend, or in public seem to do, "Ye With the fool in their hearts they say there is no God." Heus tu—de Jove quid sentis? "Hulca! what is your opinion about a Jupiter?" Their words are as soft as oil, but bitterness is in their hearts; like Alexander VI. so cunning dissemblers, that what they think, they never speak. Many of them are so close, you can hardly discern it, or take any just exceptions at them; they are not factions, oppressors as most are, no bribers, nosimonical contractors, no such ambitious, lascivious persons as some others are, no drunkards, sobrii solem vident orientem, sobrii vident occidentem, they rise sober, and go sober to bed, plain deal-

---

\[9] Comment. in Gen. cap. 7. So that a man may meet an atheï as soon in his study as in the street.
\[l]vmonis religio incerto autore Coccovico edit, 1586, conclusio libri est, Ede latine, bibic, libic, &c., Jam Deus ignoscit est. Lib. de immortal. anima.
\[n] t Virg. "They place fear, fate, and the sound of crying Acheron under their feet.
\[p] Psal. xiii. 1.
\[q] Guitiardiini.
ing, upright, honest men, they do wrong to no man, and are so reputed in
world's esteem at least, very zealous in religion, very charitable, meek, kind,
peace-makers, keep all duties, very devout, honest, well spoken of, below
all men; but he that knows better how to judge, he that examines the
said they are hypocrites, Cor dolo plenum; sonant vitium percussa man
they are not sound within. As it is with writers a oftentimes, Plus sancti
in libello, quâm libelli auctore, more holiness is in the book than in the act
of it: so 'tis with them: many come to church with great Bibles, whom
Pai-t. so Latetplerumque ^ Senec.

Amongst heresy, Jupiter
their

their

their

days; omissions

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

sense,

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.

consol.
Rome, who hath written a large volume of late to confute atheists: of the immortality of the soul, Hierom. Montanus de immortalitate Animae: Leilius Vincentius of the same subject: Thomas Giaminus, and Franciscus Collius de Paganorum animabus post mortem, a famous doctor of the Ambrosian College in Milan. Bishop Fotherby in his Attheomastix, Doctor Dove, Doctor Jackson, Abernethy, Corderoy, have written well of this subject in our mother tongue: in Latin, Colerus, Zanchius, Paleareus, Illyricus, dPhilippus, Faber Faverinus, &c. But instar omnium, the most copious confuter of atheists is Marinus Mercennus in his Commentaries on Genesis: "with Campanella's Atheismus Triumphatus. He sets down at large the causes of this bruitish passion (seventeen in number I take it), answers all their arguments and sophisms, which he reduceth to twenty-six heads, proving withal his own assertion; "There is a God, such a God, the true and sole God," by thirty-five reasons. His Colophon is how to resist and repress atheism and to that purpose he adds four special means or ways, which whose will may profitably peruse.

Subsect. II.—Despair. Despairs, Equivocations, Definitions, Parties and Parts affected.

There be many kinds of desperation, whereof some be holy, some unholy, as one distinguisheth; that unholy he defines out of Tully to be Λgritudinem animi sine ulla rerum expectatione meliore, a sickness of the soul without any hope or expectation of amendment: which commonly succeeds fear; for whilst evil is expected, we fear: but when it is certain, we despair. According to Thomas, 2. 2ae. distinct. 40. art. 4. it is Recessus à re desiderata, propter impossibilitatem existimatam, a restraint from the thing desired, for some impossibility supposed. Because they cannot obtain what they would, they become desperate, and many times either yield to the passion by death itself, or else attempt impossibilities, not to be performed by men. In some cases, this desperate humour is not much to be discommended, as in wars it is a cause many times of extraordinary valour; as Joseph., lib. 1. de bello Jud. cap. 14. 1. Danæns in Aphoris. polit. pag. 226. and many politicians hold. It makes them improve their worth beyond itself, and of a forlorn impotent company become conquerors in a moment. Una salus victis nullam sperare salutem, “the only hope for the conquered is despair.” In such courses when they see no remedy, but that they must either kill or be killed, they take courage, and oftentimes, præter spem, beyond all hope vindicate themselves. Fifteen thousand Locrenses fought against a hundred thousand Crotonienses, and seeing now no way but one, they must all die, thought they would not depart unrevenged, and thereupon desperately giving an assault, conquered their enemies. Nec alia causa victorie (saith Justin mine author) quàm quid desperaverant. William the Conqueror, when he first landed in England, sent back his ships, that his soldiers might have no hope of retiring back. Bodine excuseth his countrymen’s overthrow at that famous battle at Agincourt, in Henry the Fifth his time (cui simile, saith Froissard, tota historia producere non possit, which no history can parallel almost, wherein one handful of Englishmen overthrew a royal army of Frenchmen), with this refuge of despair, pauci desperati, a few desperate fellows being compassed in by their enemies, past all hope of life, fought like so many devils; and gives a caution, that no soldiers hereafter set upon desperate persons, which after Frontinus and Vigetius, Guicciardini likewise admonisheth, Hypomnes, part. 2. pag. 25. not to stop an enemy that is going his way. Many such kinds there are of desperation, when

4Duprat. 4. Philosophie adver. Atheos. Venetiis 1627, quarto. 6Edit. Romae, fol. 1631. 7cerneth, c. 34. of his Physic of the Soul. 8Omnia sua victoria in destinam mortem conspicient, tantumque ardor singulis cepit, ut victores se putarent si non inulti merereatur. Justin. 1. 20. 9Mediol. hist. cap. 6. 10Hosti abire volent facili audirem intercedens, &c.
Religious Melancholy.

men are past hope of obtaining any suit, or in despair of better fortune; Desperatio facit monachum, as the saying is, and desperation causeth death itself; how many thousands in such distress have made away themselves, and many others! For he that cares not for his own, is master of another man's life. A Tuscan soothsayer, as Paterculus tells the story, perceiving himself and Fulvius Flaccus his dear friend, both to be condemned to prison by Opimius, and in despair of pardon, seeing the young man weep, quin tu potius hoc, inquit, facts, do as I do; and with that knocked out his brains against the door- cheek, as he was entering into prison, protinusque illis capite in carceris jamnum effuso cerebro expiravit, and so desperately died. But these are equivocal, improper. "When I speak of despair," saith Zanchius, "I speak not of every kind, but of that alone which concerns God. It is opposite to hope, and a most pernicious sin, wherewith the devil seeks to entrap men." Musculus makes four kinds of desperation, of God, ourselves, our neighbour, or any thing to be done; but this division of his may be reduced easily to the former: all kinds are opposite to hope, that sweet moderator of passions, as Simonides calls it; I do not mean that vain hope which fantastical fellows feign to themselves, which, according to Aristotle is insomnium vigilantium, a waking dream; but this divine hope which proceeds from confidence, and is an anchor to a floating soul; spes alit agricolas, even in our temporal affairs, hope revives us, but in spiritual it farther animateth; and were it not for hope, "we of all others were the most miserable," as Paul saith, in this life; were it not for hope, the heart would break; "for though they be punished in the sight of men," (Wisdom iii. 4.) yet is "their hope full of immortality:" yet doth it not so rea, as despair doth deject; this violent and sour passion of despair, is of all perturbations most grievous, as Patritius holds. Some divide it into final and temporal; final is incurable, which befalleth reprobates; temporal is a rejection of hope and comfort for a time, which may befall the best of God's children, and it commonly proceeds "from weakness of faith," as in David when he was oppressed he cried out, "O Lord, thon hast forsaken me," but this for a time. This ebbs and flows with hope and fear; it is a grievous sin howsoever: although some kind of despair be not amiss, when, saith Zanchius, we despair of our own means, and rely wholly upon God: but that species is not here meant. This pernicious kind of desperation is the subject of our discourse, homicida animae, the murderer of the soul, as Austin terms it, a fearful passion, wherein the party oppressed thinks he can get no ease but by death, and is fully resolved to offer violence unto himself; so sensible of his burden, and impatient of his cross, that he hopes by death alone to be freed of his calamity (though it prove otherwise), and chooseth with Job vi. 8. 9. vii. 15. "Rather to be strangled and die, than to be in his bonds." The part affected is the whole soul, and all the faculties of it; there is a privation of joy, hope, trust, confidence, of present and future good, and in their place succeed fear, sorrow, &c., as in the symptoms shall be shown. The heart is grieved, the conscience wounded, the mind eclipsed with black fumes arising from those perpetual terrors.

Subsect. III.—Causes of Despair, the Devil, Melancholy, Meditation, Dist内饰, Weakness of Faith, Rigid Ministers, Misunderstanding Scriptures, Guilty Consciences, &c.

The principal agent and procurer of this mischief is the devil; those whom God forsakes, the devil by his permission lays hold on. Sometimes he perse-
cutes them with that worm of conscience, as he did Judas, Saul, and others. The poets call it Nemesis, but it is indeed God's just judgment, sero sed serio, he strikes home at last, and setteth upon them "as a thief in the night," 1 Thes. ii. 9 This temporary passion made David cry out, "Lord, rebuke me not in thine anger, neither chasten me in thine heavy displeasure; for thine arrows have light upon me, &c. there is nothing sound in my flesh, because of thine anger." Again, I roar for the very grief of my heart: and Psalm xxii. My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me, and art so far from my health, and the words of my crying? I am like to water poured out, my bones are out of joint, mine heart is like wax, that is molten in the mids. of my bowels. So Psalm lxxxviii. 15 and 16 vers. and Psalm cii. "I am in misery at the point of death, from my youth I suffer thy terrors, doubting for my life; thine indignations have gone over me, and thy fear hath cut me off." Job doth often complain in this kind; and those God doth not assist, the devil is ready to try and torment, "still seeking whom he may devour." If he find them merry, saith Gregory, "he tempts them forthwith to some dissolute act; if pensive and sad, to a desperate end." Aut suadendo blanditur, aut minando terret, sometimes by fair means, sometimes again by foul, as he perceives men severally inclined. His ordinary engine by which he produces this effect, is the melancholy humour itself, which is batheum diaboli, the devil's bath; and as in Saul, those evil spirits get in "as it were, and take possession of us. Black choler is a shoeing-horn, a bait to allure them, insomuch that many writers make melancholy an ordinary cause, and a symptom of despair, for that such men are most apt, by reason of their ill-disposed temper, to distrust, fear, grieve, mistake, and amplify whatsoever they preposterously conceive, or falsely apprehend. *Conscientia scrupulosa nascetur ex vitio naturali, complexione melancholia (saith Navarrus, cap. 27. num. 282. tom. 2. cas. conscient.) The body works upon the mind, by obfuscating the spirits and corrupted instruments, which *Perkins illustrates by simile of an artificer, that hath a bad tool, his skill is good, ability correspondent, by reason of ill tools his work must needs be lame and imperfect. But melancholy and despair, though often, do not always concur; there is much difference: melancholy fears without a cause, this upon great occasion; melancholy is caused by fear and grief, but this torment procures them and all extremity of bitterness; much melancholy is without affliction of conscience, as *Bright and Perkins illustrate by four reasons; and yet melancholy alone again may be sometimes a sufficient cause of this terror of conscience. *Felix Plater so found it in his observations, & melancholici aliis damnatos se putant, Deo cura non sunt, nec predestinationi, &c. "They think they are not predestinate, God hath forsaken them;" and yet otherwise very zealous and religious; and 'tis common to be seen, "melancholy for fear of God's judgment and hell fire, drives men to desperation; fear and sorrow, if they be immoderate, end often with it." Intolerable pain and anguish, long sickness. captivity, misery, loss of goods, loss of friends, and those lesser griefs, do sometimes effect it, or such dismal accidents. Si non statim relevantur. *Mercemnus, dubitant an sit Deus, if they be not eased forthwith, they doubt whether there be any God, they rave, curse, "and are desperately mad because good men are oppressed, wicked men flourish, they have not as they think to their desert," and through impatience of calamities are so misaffected. Democritus put out his eyes, ne malorum civium prosperos vidaret successus, because he could not abide to see wicked men prosper, and was there-

*Psal. xxxviii. vers. 9. 14. 9Immemiscat se mali geniti. Lemb. Lib. 1. cap. 16. 6 Cases of conscience, 1. 1. 16. 6Tract. Melan. cap. 33 et 34. 6C. 3. de ineris alien. Deo minus se eum ad esse, nec ad a latum predestinat esse. Ad desperationem suae ductur hoc melanchoia, et est frequentissima ob suppliendum mutum aternumque judicium; maeror et mutus in desperationem plerumque deictur. 2Comment. 1. cap. gen. art. 3. quia impius florent, boni opprimuntur, &c. alius ex consideratione hujus serio desesperantius.
fore ready to make away himself, as Agellius writes of him. Felix Plater hath a memorable example in this kind, of a painter's wife in Basil, that was melancholy for her son's death, and for melancholy became desperate; she thought God would not pardon her sins, and for four months still raved, that she was in hell-fire, already damned." When the humour is stirred up, every small object aggravates and incenseth it, as the parties are addicted.

"The same author hath an example of a merchant man, that for the loss of a little wheat, which he had over long kept, was troubled in conscience, for that he had not sold it sooner, or given it to the poor, yet a good scholar and a great divine; no persuasion or the contrary but that for this fact he was damned; in other matters very judicious and discreet. Solitariness, much fasting, divine meditation, and contemplations of God's judgments, most part accompany this melancholy, and are main causes, as Navarrus holds; to converse with such kind of persons so troubled, is sufficient occasion of trouble to some men. Nonnulli ob longas inediias, studio et meditationes coelestes, de rebus sacris et religione semper agitant, &c. Many (saith P. Forestus) through long fasting, serious meditations of heavenly things, fall into such fits; and as Lemnius adds, lib. 4. cap. 21. "If they be solitary given, superstitious, precise, or very devout: seldom shall you find a merchant, a soldier, an inn-keeper, a bawd, a host, a usurer so troubled in mind, they have cheveril consciences that will stretch; they are seldom moved in this kind or molested: young men and middle age are more wild and less apprehensive; but old folks, most part, such are timorous and religiously give." Pet. Forestus, observat. lib. 10. cap. 12. de morbis cerebri, hath a fearful example of a minister, that through precise fasting in Lent, and overmuch meditation, contracted this mischief, and in the end became desperate, thought he saw devils in his chamber, and that he could not be saved; he smelled nothing, as he said, but fire and brimstone, was already in hell, and would ask them, still, if they did not smell as much. I told him he was melancholy, but he laughed me to scorn, and replied that he saw devils, talked with them in good earnest, would spit in my face, and ask me if I did not smell brimstone, but at last he was by him cured. Such another story I find in Plater, observat. lib. 1. A poor fellow had done some foul offence, and for fourteen days would eat no meat, in the end became desperate, the divines about him could not ease him, but so he died. Continual meditation of God's judgments troubles many, Multi ob timorem futuri judicii, saith Guatinerius, cap. 5. tract. 15. et suspicionem, desperabundi sunt. David himself complains that God's judgments terrified his soul, Psalm cxix. part 16. vers. 8. "My flesh trembleth for fear of thee, and I am afraid of thy judgments." Quoties diem illum cogito (saith Hierome) toto corpore contremisco, I tremble as often as I think of it. The terrible meditation of hell fire, and eternal punishment much torments a sinful silly soul. What's a thousand years to eternity? Ubi maeror, ubi fletus, ubi dolor septernus. Mors sine morte, finis sine fine; a finger burnt by chance we may not endure, the pain is so grievous, we may not abide an hour, a night is intolerable; and what shall this unspeakable fire then be that burns for ever, innumerable infinite millions of years, in onne avum, in aternum. O eternity!

"Eternalis est illa vox, Vox illa fulminatrix, Tomitis mirabilior, Fragaribusque celci, Eternitatis est illa vox, —meta eures et orn, &c. Tormenta nulla territans, Quae finituri annis, Versat coquitque pectus. Angelus hic ponas indicis, Centuplicitate flammas, &c.

3 Lib. 20. c. 17. 4 Damnatum se putavit, et per quatuor menses G extensive power. 5 1566. ob tritium dictum servatsum conscientiam stimuliigatur, &c. 6 Tom. 2. c. 27 num. 282, conversatio cum scriplulis, vigilia, jujumia. 7 Solitarios et superstitiosos plenamum exiguat conscientia, non mercatores, leones, caupenes, generatores, &c. largiores hi nati sunt conscientia. Jurana plenamum conscientiam negligunt, senes autem, &c. 8 Annos antos sulphur, inquit? 9 Deserabundus miotei perit. 10 In 17. Johannis. Non pauci se cruciant, et exareinam in tantum, ut non parum absint ab insanit; neque tamen alius haec mentis anxiatice efficit, quam ut diabolo pereatam peliant ipsos per desparationem ad inferos producunt. 11 Drexelius Nicet. lib. 2. cap. 11. 12 Eternity, that word, that
This meditation terrifies these poor distressed souls, especially if their bodies be predisposed by melancholy, they religiously given, and have tender consciences, every small object affrights them, the very inconsiderate reading of Scripture itself, and misinterpretation of some places of it; as, “Many are called, few are chosen. Not every one that saith Lord. Fear not little flock. He that stands, let him take heed lest he fall. Work out your salvation with fear and trembling. That night two shall be in a bed, one received, the other left. Strait is the way that leads to heaven, and few there are that enter therein.” The parable of the seed and of the sower, “some fell on barren ground, some was choked. Whom he hath predestinated he hath chosen. He will have mercy on whom he will have mercy.” Non est volentis nec currentis, sed miserentis Dei. These and the like places terrify the souls of many; election, predestination, reprobation, preposterously conceived, offend divers, with a deal of foolish presumption, curiosity, needless speculation, contemplation, solicitude, wherein they trouble and puzzle themselves about those questions of grace, free will, perseverance, God’s secrets; they will know more than is revealed of God in his word, human capacity, or ignorance can apprehend, and too important inquiry after that which is revealed; mysteries, ceremonies, observation of Sabbaths, laws, duties, &c., with many such which the casuists discuss, and schoolmen broach, which divers mistake, misconstrue, misapply to themselves, to their own undoing, and so fall into this gulf. “They doubt of their election, how they shall know it, by what signs. And so far forth,” saith Luther, “with such nice points, torture and crucify themselves, that they are almost mad, and all they get by it is this, they lay open a gap to the devil by desperation to carry them to hell;” but the greatest harm of all proceeds from those thundering ministers, a most frequent cause they are of this malady: “and do more harm in the church (saith Erasmus) than they that flatten; great danger on both sides, the one hurls them asleep in carnal security, the other drives them to despair.” Whereas, St. Bernard well adviseth, “We should not meddle with the one without the other, nor speak of judgment without mercy; the one alone brings desperation, the other security.” But these men are wholly for judgment; of a rigid disposition themselves, there is no mercy with them, no salvation, no balsam for their diseased souls, they can speak of nothing but reprobation, hell fire, and damnation; as they did, Luke xi. 46. lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, which they themselves touch not with a finger. “Tis familiar with our papists to terrify men’s souls with purgatory, tales, visions, apparitions, to damn even the most generous spirits, “to require charity,” as Brentius observes, “of others, bounty, meekness, love, patience, when they themselves breathe nought but lust, envy, covetousness.” They teach others to fast, give alms, do penance, and crucify their mind with superstitious observations, bread and water, hair clothes, whips, and the like, when they themselves have all theainties the world can afford, lie on a down-bed with a courtezan in their arms: Hen quadrennium patimur pro Christo, as he said, what a cruel tyranny is this, so to insult over and terrify men’s souls! Our indiscreet pastors many of them come not far behind, whilst in their ordinary sermons they speak so much of election, predestination, reprobation, abatere, subtraction of grace, preterition, voluntary permission, &c., by what signs and tokens they shall discern and try themselves, tremendously word, more threatening than thunders and the artillery of heaven—Eternity, that word, without end or origin. No torments affright us which are limited to years: Eternity, eternity, occupies and infames the heart—this it is that daily augments our sufferings, and multiplies our heart-burnings a hundred-fold.” b Ecclesiast. 1. 1. Hand seco an majus discrimen ab his qui blandiumus, an ab his qui territient; ingenius utique periculum; sit ad securitatem decant, sit aedificationem magnitudine mentem absentem, et in desperationem trahant. 1 Bern. super. 16. cant. 1. alterum sine altero proferre non expedit; recordatio solius judicii in desperationem praebet, et misericordiam fallax ostentatio possumin generat securitatem. c In Luc. hom. 103. exiguit ab allis charitatem, beneficentiam, eun lpsi ali spectent, preter bibliodem, invidiam, avaritiam. d Leo decimas.
whether they be God's true children elect, an sint reprobii, predestinati, &c. with such scrupulous points, they still aggravate sin, thunder out God's judgments without respect, intempestively fall at and pronounce them damned in all auditories, forgiving so much to sports and honest recreations, making every small fault and thing indifferent an irremissible offence, they so rent, tear and wound men's consciences, that they are almost mad, and at their wits' end.

"These bitter potions (saith Erasmus) are still in their mouths, nothing but gall and horror, and a mad noise, they make all their auditors desperate; many are wounded by this means, and they commonly that are most devout and precise, have been formerly presumptuous, and certain of their salvation; they that have tender consciences, that follow sermons, frequent lectures, that have indeed least cause, they are most apt to mistake, and fall into these miseries. I have heard some complain of Parson's Resolution, and other books of like nature (good otherwise), they are too tragical, too much dejecting men, aggravating offences: great care and choice, much discretion is required in this kind.

The last and greatest cause of this malady, is our own conscience, sense of our sins, and God's anger justly deserved, a guilty conscience for some foul offence formerly committed,—"O misere Oreste, quid morbi te perdit? Or: Conscentia, Sum enim mihi conscius de malis perpetratis." "A good conscience is a continual feast," but a galled conscience is as great a torment as can possibly happen, a still dancing and singing oven (so Pierius in his Hieroglyph. compares it), another hell. Our conscience, which is a great ledger book, wherein are written all our offences, a register to lay them up, (which those Egyptians in their hieroglyphics expressed by a mill, as well for the continuance, as for the torture of it,) grinds our souls with the remembrance of some precedent sins, makes us reflect upon, accuse and condemn our own selves. "Sin lies at door," &c. I know there be many other causes assigned by Zanchius, Musculus, and the rest; as incredulity, infidelity, presumption, ignorance, blindness, ingratitude, discontent, those five grand miseries in Aristotle, igno-
mity, need, sickness, enmity, death, &c.; but this of conscience is the greatest, Instar ulceris corpus jugiter percellens: The scrupulous conscience (as Peter Forestus calls it) which tortures so many, that either out of a deep apprehension of their unworthiness, and consideration of their own dissolve life, "accuse themselves and aggravate every small offence, when there is no such cause, misdoubting in the meantime God's mercies, they fall into these inconveniences." The poet calls them furies dire, but it is the conscience alone which is a thousand witnesses to accuse us, Nocte dieque suum gestant in pectore testem. A continual testor to give in evidence, to empanel a jury to examine us, to cry guilty, a persecutor with hue and cry to follow, an apparitor to summon us, a bailiff to carry us, a serjeant to arrest, an attorney to plead against us, a gaoler to torment, a judge to condemn, still accusing, denouncing, torturing and molesting. And as the statue of Jumo in that holy city near Ephrastes in Assyria will look still towards you, sit where you will in her temple, she stares full upon you, if you go by, she follows with her eye, in all sites, places, conventicles, actions, our conscience will be still ready to accuse us. After many pleasant days, and fortunate adventures, merry tides, this conscience at last doth arrest us. Well he may escape temporal punishment, bribe a co-

Despair his Causes.

rupt judge, and avoid the censure of law, and flourish for a time; " for who ever saw (saith Chrysostom) a covetous man troubled in mind when he is telling of his money, an adulterer mourn with his mistress in his arms? we are then drunk with pleasure, and perceive nothing;" yet as the prodigal son had dainty fare, sweet music at first, merry company, jovial entertainment, but a cruel reckoning in the end, as bitter as wormwood, a fearful visitation commonly follows. And the devil that then told thee that it was a light sin, or no sin at all, now aggravates on the other side, and tellth thee, that it is a most irremissible offence, as he did by Cain and Judas, to bring them to despair; every small circumstance before neglected and contemned, will now amplify itself, rise up in judgment, and accuse the dust of their shoes, dumb creatures, as to Lucian's tyrant, lectus et candela, the bed and candle did bear witness, to torment their souls for their sins past. Tragical examples in this kind are too familiar and common: Adrian, Galba, Nero, Otho, Vitellius, Caracalla, were in such horror of conscience for their offences committed, murders, rapes, extortions, injuries, that they were weary of their lives, and could get nobody to kill them. b Kennetius, King of Scotland, when he had murdered his nephew Malcom, King Duffe's son, Prince of Cumberland, and with counterfeit tears and protestations dissembled the matter a long time, "at last his conscience accused him, his unquiet soul could not rest day or night, he was terrified with fearful dreams, visions, and so miserably tormented all his life." It is strange to read what a Comines hath written of Louis XI. that French king; of Charles VIII.; of Alphonsus, King of Naples; in the fury of his passion how he came into Sicily, and what pranks he played. Guicciardini, a man most unapt to believe lies, relates how that Ferdinand his father's ghost who before had died for grief, came and told him, that he could not resist the French King, he thought every man cried France, France; the reason of it (saith Comines was because he was a vile tyrant, a murderer, an oppressor of his subjects, he bought up all commodities, and sold them at his own price, sold abbey to Jews and Falconers; both Ferdinand his father, and he himself never made conscience of any committed sin; and to conclude, saith he, it was impossible to do worse than they did. Why was Pausanias the Spartan tyrant, Nero, Otho, Galba, so persecuted with spirits in every house they came, but for their murders which they had committed? Why doth the devil haunt many men's houses after their deaths, appear to them living, and take possession of their habitations, as it were, of their palaces, but because of their several villainies? Why had Richard the Third such fearful dreams, saith Polydore, but for his frequent murders? Why was Herod so tortured in his mind? because he had made away Marianne his wife. Why was Theodoric, the King of the Goths, so suspicious, and so affrighted with a fish head alone, but that he had murdered Symmachus, and Boethius, his son-in-law, those worthy Romans? Cælius, lib. 27. cap. 22. See more in Plutarch, in his tract De his qui saevo à Námine puniuntur, and in his book De tranquillitate animi, &c. Yea, and sometimes GOD himself hath a hand in it, to show his power, humiliate, exercise, and to try their faith, (divine temptation, Perkins calls it, Cas. cons. lib. 1. cap. 8. sect. 1.) to punish them for their sins. God the avenger, as f David terms him, ultrà a tergo Deus, his wrath is apprehended of a guilty soul, as by Saul and Judas, which the poets expressed by Adrastia, or Nemesis:

a Asequitur Nemesisque vicús vestígia servat, Ne male quíd facias."——8

---

a Quis unquam vidit aramum ringi dum lucrum adest, adulterum dum politur vote, lugère in perpetrando sclere? voluptate sumus ebrí, profínde non semtimus, &c. b Buchanan. lib. 6. Hist. Scot. c Animus conscientia scleris iniquius, nihil admissum guiltum, sed semper vexatus noctu et interdum per somnum visis horreís piétus pertreméfactus, &c. d De bello Neapol. e Thureus de locis infestis, part. 1. cap. 2. Nero's mother was still in his eyes. f Psal. xlv. 1. g "And Nemesis pursues and notices the steps of men, lest you commit any evil."

8
And she is, as Ammianus, lib. 14. describes her, "the queen of causes, and moderator of things, now she pulls down the proud, now she rears and encourage those that are good;" he gives instance in his Eusebius; Nicephorus, lib. 10. cap. 35. eccl. hist. in Maximinus and Julian. Fearful examples of God's just judgment, wrath and vengeance, are to be found in all histories, of some that have been eaten to death with rats and mice, as Pompeius, the second King of Poland, ann. 830, his wife and children; the like story is of Hatto, Archbishop of Mentz, ann. 969, so devoured by these vermin, which howsoever Serrarius the Jesuit, Mogunt. rerum lib. 4. cap. 5. impugn by twenty-two arguments, Tritemius, Munster, Magdebursenses, and many others relate for a truth. Such another example I find in Geraldus Cambrensis, Itin. Cam. lib. 2. cap. 2. and where not? And yet for all these terrors of conscience, affrighting punishments which are so frequent, or whatsoever else may cause or aggravate this fearful malady in other religions, I see no reason at all why a papist at any time should despair, or be troubled for his sins; for let him be never so disolute a caitiff, so notorious a villain, so monstrous a sinner, out of that treasure of indulgences and merits of which the pope is dispensator, he may have free pardon and plenary remission of all his sins. There be so many general pardons for ages to come, forty thousand years to come, so many jubilees, so frequent gaud deliveries out of purgatory for all souls, now living, or after dissolution of the body, so many particular masses daily said in several churches, so many altars consecrated to this purpose, that if a man have either money or friends, or will take any pains to come to such an altar, hear a mass, say so many paternosters, undergo such and such penance, he cannot do amiss, it is impossible his mind should be troubled, or he have any scruple to molest him. Besides that Tazza Camere Apostolico, which was first published to get money in the days of Leo Decimus, that shocking pope, and since divulged to the same ends, sets down such easy rates and dispensations for all offences, for perjury, murder, incest, adultery, etc., for so many grosses or dollars (able to invite any man to sin, and provoke him to offend, methinks, that otherwise would not) such comfortable remission, so gentle and parable a pardon, so ready at hand, with so small cost and suit obtained, that I cannot see how he that hath any friends amongst them (as I say) or money in his purse, or will at least to ease himself, can any way miscarry or be misaffected, how he should be desperate, in danger of damnation, or troubled in mind. Their ghostly fathers can so readily apply remedies, so cunningly string and unstring, wind and unwind their devotions, play upon their consciences with plausible speeches and terrible threats, for their best advantage settle and remove, erect with such facility and deject, let in and out, that I cannot perceive how any man amongst them should much or often labour of this disease, or finally miscarry. The causes above named must more frequently therefore take hold in others.

SUBSECTION IV.—SYMPTOMS OF DESPAIR, FEAR, SORROW, SUSPICION, ANXIETY, HORROR OF CONSCIENCE, FEARFUL DREAMS AND VISIONS.

As shoemakers do when they bring home shoes, still cry leather is dearer and dearer, may I justly say of those melancholy symptoms: these of despair are most violent, tragical, and grievous, far beyond the rest, not to be expressed but negatively, as it is privation of all happiness, not to be endured; "for a wounded spirit who can bear it?" Prov. xviii. 19. What, therefore, Timanthes did in his picture of Iphigenia, now ready to be sacrificed, when he had painted Chalcus mourning, Ulysses sad, but most sorrowful Menelaus; and

Regina caesarum et arbites rerum, nunc erectae services opprimitur, &c.  
1 Alex. Gagulmus. catal. reg. Pol.  
2 Cosmog. Munster. et Magde.  
3 Plinius, cap. 10. 1. 35. Consumptis aequenti, Agamenones caput velavit, ut omnes quem possent, maximum vatum virgini patrie cogitarent.
showed all his art in expressing a variety of affectious, he covered the maid's father Agamemnon's head with a veil, and left it to every spectator to conceive what he would himself; for that true passion and sorrow in summo gradu, such as his was, could not by any art be deciphered. What he did in his picture, I will do in describing the symptoms of despair; imagine what thou canst, fear, sorrow, furies, grief, pain, terror, anger, dismal, ghastly, tedious, irksome, &c. it is not sufficient, it comes far short, no tongue can tell, no heart conceive it. 'Tis an epitome of hell, an extract, a quintessence, a compound, a mixture of all fatal maladies, tyrannical tortures, plagues, and perplexities. There is no sickness almost but physic provideth a remedy for it; to every sore chirurgery will provide a salve; friendship helps poverty; hope of liberty caseth imprisonment; suit and favour revoke banishment; authority and time wear away reproach; but what physic, what chirurgery, what wealth, favour, authority can relieve, bear out, assuage, or expel a troubled conscience? A quiet mind cureth all them, but all they cannot comfort a distressed soul: who can put to silence the voice of desperation? All that is single in other melancholy, Horrible, dirum, pestilens, atroc, ferum, concurs in this, it is more than melancholy in the highest degree; a burning fever of the soul; so mad, saith Jacchinus, by this misery; fear, sorrow, and despair, he puts for ordinary symptoms of melancholy. They are in great pain and horror of mind, distraction of soul, restless, full of continual fears, cares, torments, anxieties, they can neither eat, drink, nor sleep for them, take no rest,

"Perpetua impietas, nec mensa tempore cessat, Exagitat vesana quies, somnique furentes."  "Neither at bed nor yet at board, Will any rest despair afford."  

Fear takes away their content, and dries the blood, wasteth the marrow, alters their countenance, "even in their greatest delights, singing, dancing, dalliance, they are still (saith Lemnius) tortured in their souls." It consumes them to nought, "I am like a pelican in the wilderness (saith David of himself, temporarily afflicted), an owl, because of thine indignation," Psalm ciii. 6, 10, and Psalm lv. 4. "My heart trembleth within me, and the terrors of death have come upon me; fear and trembling are come upon me, &c. at death's door," Psalm cviii. 18. "Their soul abhors all manner of meats." Their sleep is (if it be any) unquiet, subject to fearful dreams and terrors. Peter in his bonds slept secure, for he knew God protected him; and Tully makes it an argument of Roscius Amerinus' innocency, that he killed not his father, because he so securely slept. Those martyrs in the primitive church were most cheerful and merry in the midst of their persecutions; but it is far otherwise with these men, tossed in a sea, and that continually without rest or intermission, they can think of nought that is pleasant, "their conscience will not let them be quiet," in perpetual fear, anxiety, if they be not yet apprehended, they are in doubt still they shall be ready to betray themselves, as Cain did, he thinks every man will kill him; "and roar for the grief of heart," Psalm xxxviii. 8, as David did; as Job did, xx. 3, 21, 22, &c., "Wherefore is light given to him that is in misery, and life to them that have heavy hearts? which long for death, and if it come not, search it more than treasures, and rejoice when they can find the grave." They are generally weary of their lives, a trembling heart they have, a sorrowful mind, and little or no rest. Terror ubique tremor, timor undique et undique terror. "Fears, terrors, and affrights in all places, at all times and seasons." Cibum et potum pertinaciter acservantr multii, nodum in scirpo quaeritantes, et culpam imaginantes ubi nulla est, as Wierus writes de Lamiis, lib. 3. c. 7. "they refuse many of them meat and drink,

<sup>1</sup> Cap. 15. in 9. Rha. 2 Fuv. Sat. 13. 3 Mentem cridpt timor hic; vultum, totumque corpor<i>s</i> habitum immutat, etiam in dolcis, in tripilis, in symposiis, in amplexu conjugi carnificinam exspectat, lib. 4. cap. 21. 4 Non sinit conscientia tales homines recta verba proferre, sed recte quaeque oculis adpice, ab omn<sup>i</sup> hominum cuncta essent externula, et dormientes pertorcellent, Philost. lib. 1. de vita Apollonii. 5 Raschius, Nicephorus, eccles. hist. lib. 4. c. 17. 6 Seneca, lib. 18. epist. 166. Conscientia alii agere non putatur, perturbatam vitam agunt, nunquam vacant, &c.
cannot rest, aggravating still and supposing grievous offences where there are none." God's heavy wrath is kindled in their souls, and notwithstanding their continual prayers and supplications to Christ Jesus, they have no release or ease at all, but a most intolerable torment, and insufferable anguish of conscience, and that makes them, through impatience, to murmur against God many times, to rave, to blaspheme, turn atheists, and seek to offer violence to themselves. Deut. xxviii. 68, 69. "In the morning they wish for evening, and for morning in the evening, for the sight of their eyes which they see, and fear of hearts." ¹Marinus Mercennus, in his comment on Genesis, makes mention of a desperate friend of his, whom, amongst others, he came to visit, and exhort to patience, that broke out into most blasphemous atheistical speeches, too fearful to relate, when they wished him to trust in God, Quis est ille Deus (inquit) ut serviam illi, quid proderit si oraverim; si praesens est, cur non succurras? cur non me carere, inedia, squalore conceptum liberat? quid ego feci? &c. absit a me hujusmodi Deus. Another of his acquaintance broke out into like atheistical blasphemies, upon his wife's death raved, cursed, and said and did he cared not what. And so for the most part it is with them all, many of them, in their extremity, think they hear and see visions, outeries, confer with devils, that they are tormented, possessed, and in hell-fire, already damned, quite forsaken of God, they have no sense or feeling of mercy, or grace, hope of salvation, their sentence of condemnation is already past, and not to be revoked, the devil will certainly have them. Never was any living creature in such torment before, in such a miserable estate, in such distress of mind, no hope, no faith; past cure, reprobate, continually tempted to make away themselves. Something talks with them, they spit fire and brimstone, they cannot but blaspheme, they cannot repent, believe or think a good thought, so far carried; ut cogentur ad impia cogitationum etiam contra voluntatem, said "Felix Plater, ad blasphemiam erga Deum, ad multa horrida perpetranda, ad manus violentas sibi inferendas, &c., and in their distracted fits and desperate humours, to offer violence to others, their familiar and dear friends sometimes, or to mere strangers, upon very small or no occasion; for he that cares not for his own, is master of another man's life. They think evil against their wills; that which they abhor themselves, they must needs think, do, and speak. He gives instance in a patient of his, that when he would pray, had such evil thoughts still suggested to him, and wicked meditations. Another instance he hath of a woman that was often tempted to curse God, to blaspheme and kill herself. Sometimes the devil (as they say) stands without and talks with them, sometimes he is within them, as they think, and there speaks and talks as to such as are possessed: so Apollodorus, in Plutarch, thought his heart spake within him. There is a most memorable example of "Francis Spira, an advocate of Padua, Ann. 1545, that being desperate, by no counsel of learned men could be comforted: he felt (as he said) the pains of hell in his soul; in all other things he discoursed aright, but in this most mad. Frimelica, Bullovat, and some other excellent physicians, could neither make him eat, drink, or sleep, no persuasion could ease him. Never pleaded any man so well for himself, as this man did against himself, and so he desperately died. Springer, a lawyer, hath written his life. Cardinal Crescentio died so likewise desperate at Verona, still he thought a black dog followed him to his death-bed, no man could drive the dog away, Sleiden. com. 23. cap. 3. Whilst I was writing this treatise, saith Montaltus, cap. 2. de mel. "A nun came to me for help, well for all other matters, but troubled in conscience for five years last

¹ Artic. 3. ca. 1. fol. 239. quod borreandum dicit, desperabundus quidam me presente cum ad patientiam hortaretur. &c. k Lib. 1. obser. cap. 3. 1 Ad maleficendum Deo. &c. Goulart. b Dam hie scribo, impleor operam meam monas-ha, in religiis sanis, et judicio recta, per 5. annos melancholica; damnatum as dicit, conscientiae stimuli oppressa, &c.
past; she is almost mad, and not able to resist, thinks she hath offended God, and is certainly damned." Felix Plater hath store of instances of such as thought themselves damned, "forsaken of God, &c. One amongst the rest, that durst not go to church, or come near the Rhine, for fear to make away himself, because then he was most especially tempted. These and such like symptoms are intended and remitted, as the malady itself is more or less; some will hear good counsel, some will not; some desire help, some reject all, and will not be eased.

SUBSECT. V.—Prognostics of Despair, Atheism, Blasphemy, violent death, &c.

Most part these kind of persons make away themselves, some are mad, blaspheme, curse, deny God, but most offer violence to their own persons, and sometimes to others. "A wounded spirit who can bear?" Prov. xviii. 14. As Cain, Saul, Achitophel, Judas, blasphemed and died. Bede saith, Pilate died desperate eight years after Christ. "Felix Plater hath collected many examples. "A merchant's wife that was long troubled with such temptations, in the night rose from her bed, and out of the window broke her neck into the street: another drowned himself desperate as he was in the Rhine: some cut their throats, many hang themselves. But this needs no illustration. It is controverted by some, whether a man so offering violence to himself, dying desperate, may be saved, ay or no? If they die so obstinately and suddenly, that they cannot so much as wish for mercy, the worst is to be suspected, because they die impenitent. "If their death had been a little more lingering, wherein they might have some leisure in their hearts to cry for mercy, charity may judge the best; divers have been recovered out of the very act of hanging and drowning themselves, and so brought ad sanam mentem, they have been very penitent, much abhorred their former act, confessed that they have repented in an instant, and cried for mercy in their hearts. If a man put desperate hands upon himself, by occasion of madness or melancholy, if he have given testimony before of his regeneration, in regard he doth this not so much out of his will, as ex vi morbi, we must make the best construction of it, as 'Turks do, that think all fools and madmen go directly to heaven.

SUBSECT. VI.—Cure of Despair by Physic, Good Counsel, Comforts, &c.

Experience teacheth us, that though many die obstinate and wilful in this malady, yet multitudes again are able to resist and overcome, seek for help and find comfort, are taken à faucebus Erebi, from the chops of hell, and out of the devil's paws, though they have by "obligation given themselves to him. Some out of their own strength and God's assistance, "Though He kill me, (saith Job) yet will I trust in Him," out of good counsel, advice, and physic. Bellovaucus cured a monk by altering his habit, and course of life: Plater many by physic alone. But for the most part they must concur; and they take a wrong course that think to overcome this feral passion by sole physic; and they are as much out, that think to work this effect by good advice alone, though both be forcible in themselves, yet vis unita fortior, "they must go hand in hand to this disease:"—alterius sic altera poscit open. For physic the like course is to be taken with this as in other melancholy: diet, air, exercise, all those passions and perturbations of the mind, &c., are to be rectified by the same means. They must not be left solitary, or to themselves, never idle, never out of company. Counsel, good comfort is to be applied, as

---

* Alios conquerentes aut divisi esse ex damnatorum numero. Deo non esse curae, aliquaque infinita que proferre non adeatur, vel abhorrent.  
* Musculus, Parrhies: ad vim sibi intercedam cogit homines.  
* 3 De mentis alienat. observ. lib. 1.  
* 4 Musculus: ad vim sibi intercedam cogit homines.  
* Abracis.  
* Bussequins.  
* 5 John Major de patrum: quidam negavit Christum, per Chirographium post restitutionum.  
* Trinacrebellus, lib. 3.
they shall see the parties inclined, or to the causes, whether it be loss, fear, be grief, discontent, or some such feral accident, a guilty conscience, or otherwise by frequent meditation, too grievous an apprehension, and consideration of his former life; by hearing, reading of Scriptures, good divines, good advice and conference, applying God's word to their distressed souls, it must be corrected and counterpoised. Many excellent exhortations, paraenetical discourses, are extant to this purpose, for such as are any way troubled in mind: Perkins, Greenham, Hayward, Bright, Abernethy, Bolton, Culmannus, Helmingius, Calius Secundus, Nicholas Laurentian, are copious on this subject: Azorius, Navarrus, Sayrus, &c., and such as have written cases of conscience amongst our pontifical writers. But because these men's works are not to all parties at hand, so parable at all times, I will for the benefit and ease of such as are afflicted, at the request of some friends, re-collect out of their voluminous treatises, some few such comfortable speeches, exhortations, arguments, advice, tending to this subject, and out of God's word, knowing, as Culmannus saith, upon the like occasion, "how unavailable and vain men's counsels are to comfort an afflicted conscience, except God's word concur and be annexed, from which comes life, ease, repentance," &c. Pre-supposing first that which Beza, Greenham, Perkins, Bolton, give in charge, the parties to whom counsel is given be sufficiently prepared, humbled for their sins, fit for comfort, confessed, tried how they are more or less afflicted, how they stand affected, or capable of good advice, before any remedies be applied; to such therefore as are so thoroughly searched and examined, I address this following discourse.

Two main antidotes, "Hemmingius observes, opposite to despair, good hope out of God's word, to be embraced; perverse security and presumption from the devil's treachery, to be rejected; Illa salus animae habe pestis; one saves, the other kills, occidit animam, saith Austin, and doth as much harm as despair itself. 3 Navarrus the casuist reckons up ten special cures out of Anton. 1. part. Tit. 3. cap. 10. 1. God. 2. Physic. 3. Avoiding such objects as have caused it. 4. Submission of himself to other men's judgments. 5. Answer of all objections, &c. All which Cajetan, Gerson, lib. de vit. spirit. Sayrus, lib. 1. cas. cons. cap. 14. repeat and approve out of Emmanuel Loderinges, cap. 51 et 52. Greenham prescribes six special rules, Culmannus seven. First, to acknowledge all help come from God. 2. That the cause of their present misery is sin. 3. To repent and be heartily sorry for their sins. 4. To pray earnestly to God they may be eased. 5. To expect and implore the prayers of the church, and good men's advice. 6. Physic. 7. To commend themselves to God, and rely upon His mercy; others, otherwise, but all to this effect. But forasmuch as most men in this malady are spiritually sick, void of reason almost, overborne by their miseries, and too deep an apprehension of their sins, they cannot apply themselves to good counsel, pray, believe, repent, we must, as much as in us lies, occur and help their peculiar infirmities, according to their several causes or symptoms, as we shall find them distressed and complain.

The main matter which terrifies and torments most that are troubled in mind, is the enormity of their offences, the intolerable burden of their sins, God's heavy wrath and displeasure so deeply apprehended, that they account themselves reprobates, quite forsaken of God, already damned, past all hope of grace, incapable of mercy, diaboli mancipia, slaves of sin, and their offences so great they cannot be forgiven. But these men must know there is no sin so
heinous which is not pardonable in itself, no crime so great but by God's mercy it may be forgiven, "Where sin aboundeth, grace aboundeth much more," Rom. v. 20. And what the Lord said unto Paul in his extremity, 2 Cor. xi. 9. "My grace is sufficient for thee, for my power is made perfect through weakness," concerns every man in like case. His promises are made indefinite to all believers, generally spoken to all touching remission of sins that are truly penitent, grieved for their offences, and desired to be reconciled, Matt. ix. 12, 13, "I came not to call the righteous but sinners to repentance," that is, such as are truly touched in conscience for their sins. Again, Matt. xi. 28, "Come unto me all ye that are heavy laden, and I will ease you." Ezek. xviii. 27, "at what time soever a sinner shall repent him of his sins from the bottom of his heart, I will blot out all his wickedness out of my remembrance saith the Lord." Isaiah xliii. 25, "I even I am He that put away thine iniquity for mine own sake, and will not remember thy sins." "As a father (saith David, Psal. ciii. 13) hath compassion on his children, so hath the Lord compassion on them that fear him." And will receive them again as the prodigal son was entertained, Luke xv., if they shall so come with tears in their eyes, and a penitent heart. Pecator aquoscat, Deus ignoscit, "The Lord is full of compassion and mercy, slow to anger, of great kindness," Psal. cii. 8. "He will not always chide, neither keep His anger for ever," 9. "As high as the heaven is above the earth, so great is His mercy toward them that fear Him," 11. "As far as the East is from the West, so far hath He removed our sins from us," 12. Though Cain cry out in the anguish of his soul, my punishment is greater than I can bear, 'tis not so; thou liest, Cain (saith Austin), "God's mercy is greater than thy sins. His mercy is above all His works," Psal. cxlv. 9, able to satisfy for all men's sins, antidoton, 1 Tim. ii. 6. His mercy is a panacea, a balsam for an afflicted soul, a sovereign medicine, an alexipharmacum for all sin, a charm for the devil; His mercy was great to Solomon, to Manasseh, to Peter, great to all offenders, and whosoever thou art, it may be so to thee. For why should God bid us pray (as Austin infers) "Deliver us from all evil," nisi ipsae miseriores perseveraret, if He did not intend to help us? He therefore that doubts of the remission of his sins, denies God's mercy, and doth Him injury, saith Austin. Yea, but thou repliest, I am a notorious sinner, mine offences are not so great as infinite. Hear Fulgentius, "God's invincible goodness cannot be overcome by sin, His infinite mercy cannot be terminated by any: the multitude of His mercy is equivalent to His magnitude." Hear Chrysostom, "Thy malice may be measured, but God's mercy cannot be defined; thy malice is circumscribed, His mercies infinite. As a drop of water is to the sea, so are thy misdeeds to His mercy: nay, there is no such proportion to be given; for the sea, though great, yet may be measured, but God's mercy cannot be circumscribed." Whatever thy sins be then in quantity or quality, multitude or magnitude, fear them not, distrust not. I speak not this, saith Chrysostom, "to make thee secure and negligent, but to cheer thee up." Yea, but, thou urgest again, I have little comfort of this which is said, it concerns me not: Inanis poniellitia quam sequens culpa coinquinat, 'tis to no purpose for me to repent, and to do worse than ever I did before, to persevere in sin, and to return to my lusts as a dog to his vomit, or a swine to the mire: to what end is it to ask forgiveness of my sins, and yet daily to sin again and again, to do evil out of a habit? I daily and hourly offend in thought, word, and deed, in a relapse by mine own weakness and

---

<sup>a</sup> Magnam injuriam Deo facit qui difinit de ejus misericordia.  
<sup>b</sup> Bonitas invicti non vincitur: Infiniti misericordia non finitur.  
<sup>c</sup> Hom. 3. De poniellitia: Tus sullum malam mensaram habet. Dei autem misericordia mensaram non habet. Tus malitiosa circumscripta est, &c. Pelagus est magnum, mensaram habet; Dei autem, &c.  
<sup>d</sup> Non ut desiderios vos iactam, sed ut alae etiam reddam.  
<sup>e</sup> Pro pecunias vendam poscere, et mala de novo iactare.
Religious Melancholy.

willfulness: my bonus genius, my good protecting angel is gone, I am fallen from that I was or would be, worse and worse. "my latter end is worse than my beginning:" Si quotidie peccas, quotidie, saith Chrysostom, penitentiam age, if thou daily offend, daily repent: "If twice, thrice, a hundred, a hundred thousand times, twice, thrice, a hundred thousand times repent." As they do by an old house that is out of repair, still mend some part or other; so do by thy soul, still reform some vice, repair it by repentance, call to Him for grace, and thou shalt have it; "For we are freely justified by His grace," Rom. iii. 24. If thine enemy repent, as our Saviour enjoined Peter, forgive him seventy-seven times; and why shouldst thou think God will not forgive thee? Why should the enormity of thy sins trouble thee? God can do it, he will do it. "My conscience (saith *Anselm) dictatit me to that I deserve damnation, my repentance will not suffice for satisfaction: but thy mercy, O Lord, quite overcometh all my transgressions." The gods once (as the poets feign) with a gold chain would pull Jupiter out of heaven, but all they together could not stir him, and yet he could draw and turn them as he would himself; maugre all the force and fury of these infernal fiends, and crying sins, "His grace is sufficient." Confer the debt and the payment; Christ and Adam; sin, and the cure of it; the disease and the medicine; confer the sick man to his physician, and thou shalt soon perceive that his power is infinitely beyond it. God is better able, as 1 Bernard informeth us, "to help, than sin to do us hurt; Christ is better able to save, than the devil to destroy." "If he be a skilful Physician, as Fulgentius adds, "he can cure all diseases; if merciful, he will." Non est perfecta bonitas à quâ non omnis malitia vincitur, His goodness is not absolute and perfect, if it be not able to overcome all malice. Submit thyself unto Him, as St. Austin adviseth, "He knoweth best what he doth; and be not so much pleased when he sustains thee, as patient when he corrects thee; he is omnipotent, and can cure all diseases when he sees his own time." He looks down from heaven upon earth, that he may hear the "mourning of prisoners, and deliver the children of death," Psal. cit. 19, 20. "And though our sins be as red as scarlet, He can make them as white as snow," Isai. i. 18. Doubt not of this, or ask how it shall be done: He is all-sufficient that promiseth; qui fecit mundum de immundo, saith Chrysostom, he that made a fair world of nought, can do this and much more for his part: do thou only believe, trust in him, rely on him, be penitent and heartily sorrow for thy sins. Repentance is a sovereign remedy for all sins, a spiritual wing to rear us, a charm for our miseries, a protecting amulet to expel sin's venom, an attractive loadstone to draw God's mercy and graces unto us. *Pecatum vul- nus, penitentia medicinam: sin made the breach, repentance must help it; however thine offence came, by error, sloth, obstinacy, ignorance, exitur per penitentiam, this is the sole means to be relieved. ²Hence comes our hope of safety, by this alone sinners are saved, God is provoked to mercy. "This unlooseth all that is bound, enlighteneth darkness, mends that is broken, puts life to that which was desperately dying:" makes no respect of offences, or of persons. "This doth not repel a fornicator, reject a drunkard, resist a proud fellow, turn away an idolater, but entertains all, communicates itself to all." Who persecuted the church more than Paul, offended more than Peter? and

¹St bis, al ter, al centes, al centus millies, toties penitentiam age. ²Conscientia mea meruit damna- tionem, penitentia non sufficit ad satisfactionem: sed tua misericordia superat omnes offenditio- nem. ³Altao ecclesiarum Christi mors in bonum, quam peccata nostra in malum. Christus potestor ad salvandum, quem demon ad perdendum. ⁴Pertinuit medicus petest omnes infirmitates sanare; si misericors, vani. ⁵Omnipotenti medico nullus languor insanabilis occurrit: tu tantum doceri te sine, malum ejus ne repellere: novit quid agat; non tantum delectaris eum foret, sed toleras quem scat. ⁶Orys. hom. 3. de penit. ⁷Spe non minus per quas peccatores salvatur, Deus ad misericordiam provetur. Idolor, omnia ligata tu solvis, contritas sanas, confusa lucidas, desperat animas. ⁸Orys. hom. 5. non fornicatorem absuit, non ebrietatem avertit, non superbam repellit, non aversatur Idololatram, non adulterum, sed omnes suscept, omnia communitat.
yet by repentance (saith Chrysologus) they got both Magisterium et ministerium sanctitatis, the Magistry of holiness. The prodigal son went far, but by repentance he came home at last. "This alone will turn a wolf into a sheep, make a publican a preacher, turn a thorn into an olive, make a debauched fellow religious," a blasphemer sing halleluja, make Alexander the coppersmith truly devout, make a devil a saint. "And him that polluted his mouth with calumnies, lying, swearing, and filthy tunes and tones, to purge his throat with divine psalms." Repentance will effect prodigious cures, make a stupend metamorphosis. "A hawk came into the ark, and went out again a hawk; a lion came in, went out a lion; a bear, a bear; a wolf, a wolf; but if a hawk came into this sacred temple of repentance, he will go forth a dove (saith Chrysostom), a wolf go out a sheep, a lion a lamb. "This gives sight to the blind, legs to the lame, cures all diseases, confers grace, expels vice, inserts virtue, comforts and fortifies the soul." Shall I say, let thy sin be what it will, do but repent, it is sufficient. *Quem pevavit pessisse pene est innocens. Tis true indeed and all-sufficient this, they do confess, if they could repent; but if they are obdurate, they have cauterised consciences, they are in a reprobate sense, they cannot think a good thought, they cannot hope for grace, pray, believe, repent, or be sorry for their sins, they find no grief for sin in themselves, but rather a delight, no groaning of spirit, but are carried headlong to their own destruction, "heaping wrath to themselves against the day of wrath," Rom. ii. 5. "Tis a grievous case this I do yield, and yet not to be despaired; God of his bounty and mercy calls all to repentance, Rom. ii. 4, thou mayest be called at length, restored, taken to His grace, as the thief upon the cross, at the last hour, as Mary Magdalen and many other sinners have been, that were buried in sin. "God (saith Fulgentius) is delighted in the conversion of a sinner, he sets no time; prolixitas temporis Deo non prejudicat, aut gravitas peccati, deferring of time or grievousness of sin, do not prejudicate his grace, things past and to come are all one to Him, as present:" tis never too late to repent. "This heaven of repentance is still open for all distressed souls; and howsoever as yet no signs appear, thou mayest repent in good time. Hear a comfortable speech of St. Austin, "Whatsoever thou shalt do, how great a sinner soever, thou art yet living; if God would not help thee, he would surely take thee away; but in sparing thy life, he gives thee leisure, and invites thee to repentance. "Howsoever as yet, I say, thou perceivest no fruit, no feeling, findest no likelihood of it in thyself, patiently abide the Lord's good leisure, despair not, or think thou art a profligate, He came to call sinners to repentance, Luke v. 32, of which number thou art one; He came to call thee, and in his time will surely call thee. And although as yet thou hast no inclination to pray, to repent, thy faith be cold and dead, and thou wholly averse from all Divine functions, yet it may revive, as trees are dead in winter, but flourish in the spring! these virtues may lie hid in thee for the present, yet hereafter show themselves, and peradventure already bud, howsoever thou dost not perceive. "Tis Satan's policy to plead against, suppress and aggravate, to conceal those sparks of faith in thee. Thou dost not believe, thou sayest, yet thou wouldst believe if thou couldst, 'tis thy desire to believe; then pray, "Lord help mine unbelief;" and hereafter thou shalt certainly believe: *Dabitur sibi cent, it shall be given to him that thirsteth. Thou canst not yet repent,.

1 Chrys. hom. 5. 2 Qui tarnites canliculis aliquando lequipavit es, divinae hymnias animum purgavit.
3 Hom. 5. Introfit hic quis accipiter, columna exit; introfit lupus, ovis egressitur, &c.
4 Omnes langsores sanat, eceis visum, claudo gressus, gratiam confert, &c.
5 Seneca. "He who repents of his sins is well nigh innocent." 6 Delectator Deus conversione peccatoris; omne tempus vitae conversionis.
7 Matt. xxvi. 6. te omnino si sanare te mollit Deus, anfreret; parce modum ut redess, &c.
8 Rev. xxii. 6.
hereafter thou shalt; a black cloud of sin as yet obnubilates thy soul, terrifies thy conscience, but this cloud may conceive a rainbow at the last, and be quite dissipated by repentance. Be of good cheer; a child is rational in power, not in act; and so art thou penitent in affection, though not yet in action. 'Tis thy desire to please God, to be heartily sorry; comfort thyself, no time is overpast, 'tis never too late. A desire to repent is repentance itself, though not in nature, yet in God's acceptance; a willing mind is sufficient. "Blessed are they that hunger and thirst after righteousness," Matt. v. 6. He that is destitute of God's grace, and wisheth for it, shall have it. "The Lord (saith David, Psal. x. 17) will hear the desire of the poor," that is, such as are in distress of body and mind. 'Tis true thou canst not as yet grieve for thy sin, thou hast no feeling of faith, I yield; yet canst thou grieve thou dost not grieve? It troubles thee, I am sure, thine heart should be so impenitent and hard, thou wouldst have it otherwise; 'tis thy desire to grieve, to repent, and to believe. Thou lovest God's children and saints in the meantime, hastest them not, persecutest them not, but rather wishest thyself a true professor, to be as they are, as thou thyself hast been heretofore; which is an evident token thou art in no such desperate case. 'Tis a good sign of thy conversion, thy sins are pardonable, thou art, or shalt surely be reconciled, "The Lord is near them that are of a contrite heart," Luke iv. 18. d A true desire of mercy in the want of mercy, is mercy itself; a desire of grace in the want of grace, is grace itself; a constant and earnest desire to believe, repent, and to be reconciled to God, if it be in a touched heart, is an acceptance of God, a reconciliation, faith and repentance itself. For it is not thy faith and repentance, as "Chrysostom truly teacheth, that is available, but God's mercy that is annexed to it, He accepts the will for the deed: so that I conclude, to feel in ourselves the want of grace, and to be grieved for it, is grace itself. I am troubled with fear my sins are not forgiven. Careless objects: but Bradford answers they are; "For God hath given thee a penitent and believing heart, that is, a heart which desireth to repent and believe; for such an one is taken of him (He accepting the will for the deed) for a truly penitent and believing heart.

All this is true, thou repliest, but yet it concerns not thee, 'tis verified in ordinary offenders, in common sins, but thine are of a higher strain; even against the Holy Ghost himself, irremissible sins, sins of the first magnitude, written with a pen of iron, engraven with a point of a diamond. Thou art worse than a pagan, infidel, Jew, or Turk, for thou art an apostate and more, thou hast voluntarily blasphemed, renounced God and all religion, thou art worse than Judas himself, or they that crucified Christ: for they did offend out of ignorance, but thou hast thought in thine heart there is no God. Thou hast given thy soul to the devil, as witches and conjurers do, explicite and implicité, by compact, band and obligation (a desperate, a fearful case), to satisfy thy lust, or to be revenged of thine enemies, thou didst never pray, come to church, hear, read, or do any divine duties with any devotion, but for formality and fashion'sake, with a kind of reluctance, 'twas troublesome and painful to thee to perform any such thing, prater voluntatem, against thy will. Thou never mad'st any conscience of lying, swearing, bearing false witness, murder, adultery, bribery, oppression, theft, drunkenness, idolatry, but hast ever done all duties for fear of punishment, as they were most advantageous, and to thine own ends, and committed all such notorious sins with an extraordinary delight, hating that thou shouldest love, and loving that thou shouldest hate. Instead of faith, fear and love of God, repentance, &c., blasphemous thoughts have been ever harboured in his mind, even against God himself, the blessed Trinity;

---

d Aubernethy, Perkins.  e Non est penitentia, sed Dei misericordia annexa.
the Scripture false, rude, harsh, immethodical: heaven, hell, resurrection, mere toys and fables, incredible, impossible, absurd, vain, ill contrived; religion, policy, and human invention, to keep men in obedience, or for profit, invented by priests and law-givers to that purpose. If there be any such supreme power, he takes no notice of our doings, hears not our prayers, regardeth them not, will not, cannot help, or else he is partial, an exceptor of persons, author of sin, a cruel, a destructive God, to create our souls, and destinate them to eternal damnation, to make us worse than our dogs and horses, why doth he not govern things better, protect good men, root out wicked lives? why do they prosper and flourish? as she raved in the b tragedy——pellsic catum tenent, there they shine, Swasque Perseus aureas stellas habeat, where is his providence? how appears it?

"Marmoreo Licinio tumulo iacet, at Cato parvo,
Pomponius nullo, quis putet esse docet."'

Why doth he suffer Turks to overcome Christians, the enemy to triumph over his church, paganism to domineer in all places as it doth, heresies to multiply, such enormities to be committed, and so many such bloody wars, murders, massacres, plagues, feral diseases? why doth he not make us all good, able, sound? why makes he venomous creatures, rocks, sands, deserts, this earth itself the muck-hill of the world, a prison, a house of correction; 1 Mentimur regnare Jovem, &c., with many such horrible and execrable conceits, not fit to be uttered; Terribilis de fide, horribilis de Divinitate. They cannot some of them but think evil, they are compelled volentes nolentes, to blaspheme, especially when they are read, pray, and, &c., such foul and prodigious suggestions come into their hearts.

These are abominable, unspeakable offences, and most opposite to God, tentiones fide et impie, yet in this case, he or they that shall be tempted and so affected, must know, that no man living is free from such thoughts in part, or at some times, the most divine spirits have been so tempted in some sort, evil custom, omission of holy exercises, ill company, idleness, solitariness, melancholy, or depraved nature, and the devil is still ready to corrupt, trouble, and divert our souls, to suggest such blasphemous thoughts into our fantasies, ungody, profane, monstrous and wicked conceits: If they come from Satan, they are more speedy, fearful and violent, the parties cannot avoid them: they are more frequent, I say, and monstrous when they come; for the devil he is a spirit, and hath means and opportunities to mingle himself with our spirits, and sometimes more silly, sometimes more abruptly and openly, to suggest such devilish thoughts into our hearts; he insuits and domineers in melancholy dis-tempered fantasies and persons especially; melancholy is balneum diaboli, as Serapio holds, the devil’s bath, and invites him to come to it. As a sick man frets, raves in his fits, speaks and doth he knows not what, the devil violently compels such crazed souls to think such damned thoughts against their wills, they cannot but do it; sometimes more continue, or by fits, he takes his advantage, as the subject is less able to resist, he aggravates, extenuates, affirms, denies, demands, confounds the spirits, troubles heart, brain, humours, organs, senses, and wholly domineers in their imaginations. If they proceed from themselves, such thoughts, they are remiss and moderate, not so violent and monstrous, not so frequent. The devil commonly suggests things opposite to nature, opposite to God and his word, impious, absurd, such as a man would never of himself, or could not conceive, they strike terror and horror into the

1 *Caelinii Minutio: Omnia ista figurata male sumus religiosi, et incepta solutia a poenis inventa, vet ab allis
2 *These temptations and objections are well answered in ob commodum, superstitionis mithra, &c.
3 John Downham’s Christian Warfare.  h Seneca.
4 * Licinius lies in a marble tomb, but Cato in a mean
5 Vid. Campanella, cap. 6.
6 one; Pomponius has none, who can think therefore that there are gods?*
7 Athen. triumph. et c. 2, ad argumentum 12 ubi plura. Si Deus bonus, unde malus, &c.
8 Lucan.
9 "It can’t be true that Just Jove reigns."
parties' own hearts. For if he or they be asked whether they do approve of such like thoughts or no, they answer (and their own souls truly dictate as much) they abhor them as hell and the devil himself; they would fain think otherwise if they could; he hath thought otherwise, and with all his soul desires so to think again; he doth resist, and hath some good motions intermixed now and then: so that such blasphemous, impious, unclean thoughts, are not his own, but the devil's; they proceed not from him, but from a crazed phantasy, distempered humours, black fumes which offend his brain: they are thy crosses, the devil's sins, and he shall answer for them, he doth enforce thee to do that which thou dost abhor, and didst never give consent to: and although he hath sometimes so slily set upon thee, and so far prevailed, as to make thee in some sort to assent to such wicked thoughts, to delight in, yet they have not proceeded from a confirmed will in thee, but are of that nature which thou dost afterwards reject and abhor. Therefore be not overmuch troubled and dismayed with such kind of suggestions, at least if they please thee not, because they are not thy personal sins, for which thou shalt incur the wrath of God, or his displeasure: contemn, neglect them, let them go as they come, strive not too violently, or trouble thyself too much, but as our Saviour said to Satan in like case, say thou, avoid Satan, I detest thee and them; Satanæ est mala ingerere (saith Austin) nostrum non consentire: as Satan labours to suggest, so must we strive not to give consent, and it will be sufficient: the more anxious and solicitous thou art, the more perplexed, the more thou shalt otherwise be troubled, and entangled. Besides, they must know this, all so molested, and distempered, that although these be most execrable and grievous sins, they are pardonable yet, through God's mercy and goodness, they may be forgiven, if they be penitent and sorry for them. Paul himself confesseth, Rom. vii. 19. "He did not the good he would do, but the evil which he would not do; 'tis not I, but sin that dwelleth in me." 'Tis not thou, but Satan's suggestions, his craft and subtlety, his malice: comfort thyself then if thou be penitent and grieved, or desirous to be so, these heinous sins shall not be laid to thy charge; God's mercy is above all sins, which if thou do not finally contemn, without doubt thou shalt be saved. "No man sins against the Holy Ghost, but he that wilfully and finally renounceth Christ, and contemneth him and his word to the last, without which there is no salvation, from which grievous sin, God of his infinite mercy deliver us." Take hold of this to be thy comfort, and meditate withal on God's word, labour to pray, to repent, to be renewed in mind, "keep thine heart with all diligence," Prov. iv. 23. resist the devil, and he will fly from thee, pour out thy soul unto the Lord with sorrowful Hannah, "pray continually," as Paul enjoins, and as David did, Psalm i. "meditate on his law day and night."

Yea, but this meditation is that mars all, and mistaken makes many men far worse, misconceiving all they read or hear, to their own overthrow; the more they search and read Scriptures, or divine treatises, the more they puzzle themselves, as a bird in a net, the more they are entangled and precipitated into this preposterous gulf: "Many are called, but few are chosen," Matt. xx. 16. and xviii. 14. with such like places of Scripture misinterpreted strike them with horror, they doubt presently whether they be of this number or no: God's eternal decree of predestination, absolute repubcation, and such fatal tables, they form to their own ruin, and impinge upon this rock of despair. How shall they be assured of their salvation, by what signs? "If the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly and sinners appear?" 1 Pet. iv. 18.

m Perkins. n Hemmingius. Nemo peceat in Spiritum Sanctum nisi qui finaliter et voluntarie renuenci Christum, eumque et ejus verbum extreime contingit, sine quaque salus; a quo peccato liberet nos Dominus Jesus Christus. Amen.
Cure of Despair.

Who knows, saith Solomon, whether he be elect? This grinds their souls, how shall they discern they are not reprobates? But I say again, how shall they discern they are? From the devil can be no certainty, for he is a liar from the beginning; if he suggests any such thing, as too frequently he doth, reject him as a deceiver, an enemy of human kind, dispute not with him, give no credit to him, obstinately refuse him, as St. Anthony did in the wilderness, whom the devil set upon in several shapes, or as the collier did, so do thou by him. For when the devil tempted him with the weakness of his faith, and told him he could not be saved, as being ignorant in the principles of religion, and urged him moreover to know what he believed, what he thought of such and such points and mysteries; the collier told him, he believed as the church did; but what (said the devil again) doth the church believe? as I do (said the collier); and what's that thou believest; as the church doth, &c., when the devil could get no other answer he left him. If Satan summon thee to answer, send him to Christ; he is thy liberty, thy protector against cruel death, raging sin, that roaring lion; he is thy righteousness, thy Saviour, and thy life. Though he say, thou art not of the number of the elect, a reprobate, forsaken of God, hold thine own still, hic murus aheneus esto, "let this be as a bulwark, a brazen wall to defend thee," stay thyself in that certainty of faith; let that be thy comfort, Christ will protect thee, vindicate thee, thou art one of his flock, he will triumph over the law, vanquish death, overcome the devil, and destroy hell. If he say thou art none of the elect, no believer, reject him, dofy him, thou hast thought otherwise, and mayest so be resolved again; comfort thyself; this persuasion cannot come from the devil, and much less can it be grounded from thyself? men are liars, and why shouldst thou distrust? A denying Peter, a persecuting Paul, an adulterous cruel David, have been received; an apostate Solomon may be converted; no sin at all but impenitency, can give testimony of final reprobation. Why shouldst thou then distrust, misdoubt thyself, upon what ground, what suspicion? This opinion alone of particularity? Against that, and for the certainty of election and salvation on the other side, see God's good will toward men, hear how generally his grace is proposed, to him, and him, and them, each man in particular, and to all. 1 Tim. ii. 4. "God will that all men be saved, and come to the knowledge of the truth." This a universal promise, "God sent not his son into the world to condemn the world, but that through him the world might be saved." John iii. 17. "He that acknowledgeth himself a man in the world, must likewise acknowledge he is of that number that is to be saved." Ezek. xxxiii. 11. "I will not the death of a sinner, but that he repent and live;" But thou art a sinner; therefore he will not thy death. "This is the will of him that sent me, that every man that believeth in the Son, should have everlasting life." John vi. 40. "He would have no man perish, but all come to repentance," 2 Pet. iii. 9. Besides, remission of sins is to be preached, not to a few, but universally to all men, "Go therefore and tell all nations, baptising them," &c. Matt. xxviii. 19. "Go into all the world, and preach the Gospel to every creature," Mark xvi. 15. Now there cannot be contradictory wills in God, he will have all saved, and not all, how can this stand together? be secure then, believe, trust in him, hope well and be saved. Yea, that's the main matter, how shall I believe or discern my security from carnal presumption? my faith is weak and faint, I want those signs and fruits of sanctification, p. sorrow for sin, thirsting for grace, groanings of the spirit, love of Christians as Christians, avoiding occasion of sin, endeavour of new obedience, charity, love of God, perseverance. Though these signs be languishing in thee, and not seated in thine heart, thou must not therefore be dejected or terrified;
the effects of the faith and spirit are not yet so fully felt in thee; conclude not therefore thou art a reprobate, or doubt of thine election, because the elect themselves are without them, before their conversion. Thou mayest in the Lord's good time be converted; some are called at the eleventh hour. Use, I say, the means of thy conversion, expect the Lord's leisure, if not yet called, pray thou mayest be, or at least wish and desire thou mayest be.

Notwithstanding all this which might be said to this effect, to ease their afflicted minds, what comfort our best divines can afford in this case, Zanchius, Beza, &c. This furious curiosity, needless speculation, fruitless meditация about election, reprobation, free will, grace, such places of Scripture preposterously conceived, torment still, and crucify the souls of too many, and set all the word together by the ears. To avoid which inconveniences, and to settle their distressed minds, to mitigate those divine aphorisms (though in another extreme some), our late Arminians have revived that plausible doctrine of universal grace, which many fathers, our late Lutheran and modern papists do still maintain, that we have free will of ourselves, and that grace is common to all that will believe. Some again, though less orthodoxal, will have a far greater part saved than shall be damned, (as Cælius Secundus stillly maintains in his book, De amplitudine regni celestis, or some impostor under his name,) beatorum numerus multo major quam damnatorum. He calls that other tenet of special "election and reprobation, a prejudicate, envious and malicious opinion, apt to draw all men to desperation. Many are called, few chosen," &c. He opposeth some opposite parts of Scripture to it, "Christ came into the world to save sinners," etc. And four especial arguments he produceth, one from God's power. If more be damned than saved, he erroneously concludes, the devil hath the greater sovereignty! for what is power but to protect and majesty consists in multitude. "If the devil have the greater part, where is his mercy, where is his power? how is he Deus Optimus Maximus, misericors? &c., where is his greatness, where his goodness?" He proceeds, "We account him a murderer that is accessory only, or doth not help when he can; which may not be supposed of God without great offence, because he may do what he will, and is otherwise accessory, and the author of sin. The nature of good is to be communicated, God is good, and will not then be contracted in his goodness: for how is he the father of mercy and comfort, if his good concern but a few, O envious and unthankful men to think otherwise! Why should we pray to God that are Gentiles, and thank him for his mercies and benefits, that has damned us all innocuous for Adam's offence, one man's offence, one small offence, eating of an apple? why should we acknowledge him for our governor that hath wholly neglected the salvation of our souls, contemned us, and sent no prophets or instructors to teach us, as he hath done to the Hebrews?" So Julian the apostate objects. Why should these Christians (Cælius urgeth) reject us and appropriate God unto themselves, Deum illum solum unicum, &c. But to return to our forged Cælius. At last he comes to that, he will have those saved that never heard of, or believed in Christ, ex puris naturalibus, with the Pelagians, and proves it out of Origen and others. "They (saith Origen) that never heard God's word, are to be excused for their ignorance; we may not think God will be so hard, angry, cruel or unjust as to condemn any man indíctá causá. They alone (he holds) are in the state

---

9 See whole books of these arguments. 10 Vid. 3. fol. 129. Praejudicata opinio, invidia, maligna, et apta ad impellendos animos in desperacionem. 11 See the Antioch in Chantier's tom. 3. lib. 7. Downam's Christian Warfare, &c. 12 Potentior est Deus diabolus et mundi princeps, et in mulitudine hominum sita majestas. 13 Homilida qui non subvenit quos potest; hoc de Deo sine scelere negari non potest, utpote quam quod vult bicet. Boni natura communicavi. Bonus Deus, quomodo misericordia pater, &c. 14 Vide Cyrilium lib. 4. adversus Julianam : qui poterimus illi gratias agere qui nosis non misit Meseh et prophetas, et contemptus bona animarum nostrarum. 15 Venis danda est ilis qui non audiant, ob ignora- tiam. Non est tam iniquus Judex Deus, ut quenquam indiciata causa damnum velit. Ilium damnantur, qui oblatam Christi gratiam reiecunt.
of damnation that refuse Christ's mercy and grace, when it is offered. Many worthy Greeks and Romans, good moral honest men, that kept the law of nature, did to others as they would be done to themselves, as certainly saved, he concludes, as they were that lived uprightly before the law of Moses. They were acceptable in God's sight, as Job was, the Magi, the queen of Sheba, Darius of Persia, Socrates, Aristides, Cato, Curius, Tully, Seneca, and many other philosophers, upright lives, no matter of what religion, as Cornelius, out of any nation, so that he live honestly, call on God, trust in him, fear him, he shall be saved. This opinion was formerly maintained by the Valentinian and Basiledian heretics, revived of late in a Turkey, of what sect Rustan Bassa was patron, defended by a Galæatius b Erasmus, by Zuinglius in exposit. fidei ad Regem Galliae, whose tenet Bullinger vindicates, and Gualter approves in a just apology with many arguments. There be many Jesuits that follow these Calvinists in this behalf, Franciscus Buchsius Moguntinus, Andradius, Consil. Trident. many schoolmen that out of the Romans i. 18, 19, are verily persuaded that those good works of the Gentiles did so far please God, that they might vitam aeternam promereri, and be saved in the end. Sesellius, and Benedictus Justinianus in his comment on the first of the Romans, Mathias Ditmarsh the politician, with many others, hold a mediocrity, they may be salute non indigni but they will not absolutely decree it. Hofmannus, a Lutheran professor of Helmstad, and many of his followers, with most of our church, and papists are stiff against it. Franciscus Collius hath fully censured all opinions in his Five Books, de Paganorum animabus post mortem, and amply dilated this question, which whose will may persuade. But to return to my author, his conclusion is, that not only wicked lives, blasphemers, reproues, and such as reject God's grace, " but that the devils themselves shall be saved at last," as c Origen himself long since delivered in his works, and our late d Socinians defend, Ostorodias, cap. 41. institut. Smaltius, &c. Those terms of all and for ever in Scripture, are not eternal, but only denote a longer time, which by many examples they prove. The world shall end like a comedy, and we shall meet at last in heaven, and live in bliss altogether, or else in conclusion, in nihil evanescere. For how can he be merciful that shall condemn any creature to eternal unspeakable punishment, for one small temporary fault, all posterity, so many myriads for one and another man's offence, quid meruitis oves? But these absurd paradoxes are exploded by our church, we teach otherwise. That this vocation, predestination, election, reprobation, non ex corruptâ massa, pravisa fide, as our Armenians, or ex pravis operibus, as our Papists, non ex prateritione, but God's absolute decree ante mundum creatum (as many of our church hold), was from the beginning, before the foundation of the world was laid, or homo conditus, (or from Adam's fall, as others will, homo lapsus objectum est reproversions) with perseverantia sanctorum, we must be certain of our salvation, we may fall but not finally, which our Armenians will not admit. According to his immutable, eternal just decree and counsel of saving men and angels, God calls all, and would have all to be saved according to the efficacy of vocation: all are invited, but only the elect apprehended: the rest that are unbelieving, impenitent, whom God in his just judgment leaves to be punished for their sins, are in a reprobate sense; yet we must not determine who are such, condemn ourselves or others, because we have a universal invitation; all are commanded to believe, and we know not how soon or how late our end may be received. I might have said more of this subject; but forasmuch as it is a forbidden question, and in the preface or declaration to the articles of the church, printed 1633, to avoid factions and altercations, we that

are university divines especially, are prohibited "all curious search, to print or
preach, or draw the article aside by our own sense and comments upon pain of
ecclesiastical censure." I will sur cease, and conclude with "Erasmus of such
controversies: Pugnet qui volet, ego censeo leges magorum reverenter suspicien-
das, et religiosè observandas, velut à Deo projectas; nec esse tutum, nec esse
pium, de potestate publici sinistrum concipiæ aut serere suspicionem. Et
siquid est tyrannidil; quod tamen non cogat ad impietatem, satius est ferre,
quam seditione relucrari.

But to my former task. The last main torture and trouble of a distressed
mind, is not so much this doubt of election, and that the promises of grace are
smothered and extinct in them, nay quite blotted out, as they suppose, but
withal God's heavy wrath, a most intolerable pain and grief of heart seizeth on
them: to their thinking they are already damned, they suffer the pains of hell,
and more than possibly can be expressed, they smell brimstone, talk familiarly
with devils, hear and see chimeras, prodigious, uncouth shapes, bears, owls,
antiques, black dogs, fiends, hideous outeries, fearful noises, shrieks, lamentable
complaints, they are possessed, and through impatience they roar and howl,
curse, blaspheme, deny God, call his power in question, abjure religion, and are
still ready to offer violence unto themselves, by hanging, drowning, &c. Never
any miserable wretch from the beginning of the world was in such a woeful
case. To such persons I oppose God's mercy and his justice; Judicia Dei
oculta, non injusta: his secret counsel and just judgment, by which he spares
some, and sore afflicts others again in this life; his judgment is to be adored,
trembled at, not to be searched or inquired after by mortal men: he hath
reasons reserved to himself, which our frailty cannot apprehend. He may
punish all if he will, and that justly for sin; in that he doth it in some, is
to make a way for his mercy that they repent and be saved, to heal them, to try
them, exercise their patience, and make them call upon him, to confess their
sins and pray unto him, as David did, Psalm cxix. 137. "Righteous art thou,
O Lord, and just are thy judgments." As the poor publican, Luke xviii. 13.
"Lord have mercy upon me a miserable sinner." To put confidence and have
an assured hope in him, as Job had, xiii. 15. Though he kill me I will trust
in him: "Ure, seea, occide, O Domine (saith Austin), modo serves animam,
killed in pieces, burn my body (O Lord) to save my soul. A small
sickness; one lash of affliction, a little misery, many times will more humili-
ate a man, sooner convert, bring him home to know himself, than all
those panegyrical discourses, the whole theory of philosophy, law, physic, and
divinity, or a world of instances and examples. So that this, which they take
to be such an insupportable plague, is an evident sign of God's mercy and
justice, of His love and goodness: periissent nisi periissent, had they not thus
been undone, they had finally been undone. Many a carnal man is lulled
asleep in perverse security, foolish presumption, is stupefied in his sins, and
hath no feeling at all of them: "I have sinned (he saith) and what evil shall
come unto me," Eccles. v. 4, and "Tush, how shall God know it?" and so in
a reprobate sense goes down to hell. But here, Cynthiaus aurem vallit, God
pulls them by the ear, by affliction, he will bring them to heaven and happiness;
"Blessed are they that mourn, for they shall be comforted," Matt. v. 4, a
blessed and a happy state if considered aright, it is, to be so troubled. "It
is good for me that I have been afflicted," Psal. cxix. "before I was afflicted

* Epist. Erasmi de utilitate colloquior. ad lectorem.—Let whoever wishes dispute. I think the laws of our
forefathers should be received with reverence, and religiously observed, as coming from God; neither is it
safe or planis to conceive, or contrive, an injurious suspicion of the public authority: and should any
tyranny, likely to drive men into the commission of wickedness, exist, it is better to endure it than to resist
it by petition. *Vastitia conscientia sequitur sensus irae divinæ. (Hemingius) jrenitus cordis, ingens
anime cruciatu, &c.
I went astray, but now I keep Thy word.” “Tribulation works patience, patience hope,” Rom. v. 4, and by such like crosses and calamities we are driven from the stake of security. So that affliction is a school or academy, wherein the best scholars are prepared to the commencements of the Deity. And though it be most troublesome and grievous for the time, yet know this, it comes by God's permission and providence; He is a spectator of thy groans and tears, still present with thee, the very hairs of thy head are numbered, not one of them can fall to the ground without the express will of God: he will not suffer thee to be tempted above measure, he corrects us all, “numero, pondera, et mensurā, the Lord will not quench the smoking flax, or break the bruised reed, Trutat (saith Austin), non ut obruat, sed ut coronet, he suffers thee to be tempted for thy good. And as a mother doth handle her child sick and weak, not reject it, but with all tenderness observe and keep it, so doth God by us, not forsake us in our miseries, or relinquish us for our imperfections, but with all piety and compassion support and receive us; whom he loves, he loves to the end. Rom. viii. “Whom He hath elected, those He hath called, justified, sanctified and glorified.” Think not then thou hast lost the Spirit, that thou art forsaken of God, be not overcome with heaviness of heart, but as David said, “I will not fear though I walk in the shadows of death.” We must all go, non à deliciis ad delicias, b but from the cross to the crown, by hell to heaven, as the old Romans put Virtue’s temple in the way to that of Honour: we must endure sorrow and misery in this life. Tis no new thing this, God’s best servants and dearest children have been so visited and tried. Christ in the garden cried out, “My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?” His Son by nature, as thou art by adoption and grace. Job, in his anguish, said, “The arrows of the Almighty God were in him,” Job vi. 4. “His terrors fought against him, the venom drank up his spirit,” cap. xiii. 26. He saith, “God was his enemy, writ bitter things against him (xvi. 9) hated him.” His heavy wrath had so seized on his soul. David complains, “his eyes were eaten up, sunk into his head.” Ps. vi. 7, “his moisture became as the drought in summer, his flesh was consumed, his bones vaxed;” yet neither Job nor David did finally despair. Job would not leave his hold, but still trust in Him, acknowledging Him to be his good God. The Lord gives, the Lord takes, blessed be the name of the Lord,” Job i. 21. “Behold I am vile, I abhor myself, repent in dust and ashes,” Job xxxix. 37. David humbled himself, Psal. xxxi. and upon his confession received mercy. Faith, hope, repentance, are the sovereign cures and remedies, the sole comforts in this case; confess, humble thyself, repent, it is sufficient. Quod purpura non potest, saccus potest, saith Chrysostom; the king of Nineveh’s sackcloth and ashes did that which his purple robes and crown could not effect; Quod diadema non potuit, cinis perfect. Turn to Him, he will turn to thee; the Lord is near those that are of a contrite heart, and will save such as be afflicted in spirit, Psal. xxxiv. 18. “He came to the lost sheep of Israel,” Matt. xv. 14. Si cadentem intuetur, clementia manum pretendent, He is at all times ready to assist. Nuncquam spernit Deus P emulatoros, si sincerè et simpliciter offeratur, He never rejects a penitent sinner, though he have come to the full height of iniquity, wallowed and delighted in sin; yet if he will forsake his former ways, libenter amplectatur, He will receive him. Parvam haec hominí, saith 1 Austin (ex persona Dei), quia sihi ipsi non pepercit; ignoscam quia peccatum agnovit. I will spare him because he hath not spared himself; I will pardon him because he doth acknowledge his offence: let it be never so enormous a sin, “His grace is sufficient,” 2 Cor. xii. 9. Despair not then, faint not at all, he not dejected, but rely on

*austin.  
b “Not from pleasures to pleasures.”  
1 Super Psal. iii. Convertar ad liberandum cum quia conversus est ad peccatum suum paniculum.
God, call on him in thy trouble, and he will hear thee, he will assist, help, and deliver thee: "Draw near to Him, he will draw near to thee," James iv. 8. Lazarus was poor and full of boils, and yet still he relied upon God, Abraham did hope beyond hope.

Thou exceptest, these were chief men, divine spirits, Deo cari, beloved of God, especially respected; but I am a contemptible and forlorn wretch, forsaken of God, and left to the merciless fury of evil spirits. I cannot hope, pray, repent, &c. How often shall I say it? thou mayest perform all these duties, Christian offices, and be restored in good time. A sick man loseth his appetite, strength and ability, his disease prevaleth so far, that all his faculties are spent, hand and foot perform not their duties, his eyes are dim, hearing dull, tongue distastes things of pleasant relish, yet nature lies hid, recovereth again, and expelleth all those fenulent matters by vomit, sweat, or some such like evacuations. Thou art spiritually sick, thine heart is heavy, thy mind distressed, thou mayest happily recover again, expel those dismal passions of fear and grief; God did not suffer thee to be tempted above measure: whom he loves (I say) he loves to the end; hope the best. David in his misery prayed to the Lord, remembering how he had formerly dealt with him; and with that meditation of God's mercy confirmed his faith, and pacified his own tumultuous heart in his greatest agony. "O my soul, why art thou so disquieted within me," &c. Thy soul is eclipsed for a time, I yield, as the sun is shadowed by a cloud; no doubt but those gracious beams of God's mercy will shine upon thee again, as they have formerly done: those embers of faith, hope, and repentance, now buried in ashes, will flame out afresh, and be fully revived. Want of faith, no feeling of grace for the present, are not fit directions; we must live by faith, not by feeling; 'tis the beginning of grace to wish for grace: we must expect and tarry. David, a man after God's own heart, was so troubled himself: "Awake, why sleepest thou? O Lord, arise, cast me not off; wherefore hidest thou thy face, andforgettest mine affliction and oppression? My soul is bowed down to the dust. Arise, redeem us," &c., Ps. lxxiv. 23. He prayed long before he was heard, expectans expectavit; endured much before he was relieved. Psal. lixix. 3, he complains, "I am weary of crying, and my throat is dry, mine eyes fail, whilst I wait on the Lord;" and yet he perseveres. Be not dismayed, thou shalt be respected at last. God often works by contrarieties, he first kills and then makes alive, he woundeth first and then healeth, he makes man sow in tears that he may reap in joy; 'tis God's method: he that is so visited, must with patience endure and rest satisfied for the present. The paschal lamb was eaten with sour herbs; we shall feel no sweetness of His blood, till we first feel the smart of our sins. Thy pains are great, intolerable for the time; thou art destitute of grace and comfort, stay the Lord's leisure, he will not (I say) suffer thee to be tempted above that thou art able to bear, 1 Cor. x. 13. but will give an issue to temptation. He works all for the best to them that love God, Rom. viii. 28. Doubt not of thine election, it is an immutable decree; a mark never to be defaced: you have been otherwise, you may and shall be. And for your present affliction, hope the best, it will shortly end. "He is present with his servants in their affliction," Ps. xci. 15. "Great are the troubles of the righteous, but the Lord delivereth them out of all," Ps. xxxiv. 19. "Our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh in us an eternal weight of glory," 2 Cor. iv. 17. "Not answerable to that glory which is to come; though now in heaviness," saith 1 Pet. i. 6, "you shall rejoice." Now last of all to those external impediments, terrible objects, which they hear and see many times, devils, bugbears, and mormeluches, noisome smells, &c. These may come, as I have formerly declared in my precedent discourse of the Symptoms of Melancholy, from inward causes; as a concave glass
reflects solid bodies, a troubled brain for want of sleep, untrimment, and by reason of that agitation of spirits to which Hercules de Saxonii attributes all symptoms almost, may reflect and show prodigious shapes, as our vain fear and crazed phantasy shall suggest and feign, as many silly weak women and children in the dark, sick folks, and frantic for want of repast and sleep, suppose they see that they see not: many times such terrlications may proceed from natural causes, and all other senses may be deluded. Besides, as I have said, this humour is Balneum diaboli, the devil's bath, by reason of the distemper of humours, and infirm organs in us: he may so possess us inwardly to molest us, as he did Saul and others, by God's permission: he is prince of the air, and can transform himself into several shapes, delude all our senses for a time, but his power is determined, he may terrify us, but not hurt; God hath given "His angels charge over us, He is a wall round about his people," Psal. xci. 11, 12. There be those that prescribe physic in such cases, 'tis God's instrument and not unfit. The devil works by mediation of humours, and mixed diseases must have mixed remedies. Levinus Lemnius, cap. 57 and 58, exhort. ad vit. ep. instit. is very copious on this subject, besides that chief remedy of confidence in God, prayer, hearty repentance, &c., of which for your comfort and instruction, read Lavater de spectris, part. 3. cap. 5 and 6. Wierus de praestigiis daemonum, lib. 5. to Philip Melancthon, and others, and that Christian armour which Paul prescribes; he sets down certain amulets, herbs, and precious stones, which have marvellous virtues all, profligandis daemonibus, to drive away devils and their illusions. Sapphires, chrysolites, carbuncles, &c. Quae mira virtute pollut ad lenaures, styryges, incubus, genios aerios arcendos, si veterum monumentis habenda fides. Of herbs, he reckons us pennyroyal, rue, mint, angelica, penny: Rich. Argentine de praestigiis daemonum, cap. 20. adds, hypericon or St. John'swort, perforata herba, which by a divine virtue drives away devils, and is therefore figura daemonum: all which rightly used by their suffitius, Daemonum vexationibus obstinent, afflictas mentes à daemonibus relevant, et venenatis funis, expel devils themselves, and all devilish illusions. Anthony Musa, the Emperor Augustus, his physician, cap. 6. de Betonid, approves of betony to this purpose; the ancients used therefore to plant it in churchyards, because it was held to be an holy herb and good against fearful visions, did secure such places as it grew in, and sanctified those persons that carried it about them. *Idem* fere Mathiolius in Dioscoridem. Others commend accurate music, so Saul was helped by David's harp. Fires to be made in such rooms where spirits haunt, good store of lights to be set up, odours, perfumes, and suffumigations, as the angel taught Tobias, of brimstone and bitumen, thus, myrrha, briony root, with many such simples which Wecker hath collected, lib. 15. de secretis, cap. 15. *4 sulphuris drachmam unam, recoquatur in vitis albae aqua, ut diutius sit sulphur; detur aegro: nam daemones sunt morbi* (saith Rich. Argentine, lib. de praestigiis daemonum, cap. ult.) Vigeus hath a far larger receipt to this purpose, which the said Wecker cites out of Wierus. *4 sulphuris, vini, bituminis, opoponacis, galbani, castorei, &c.* Why sweet perfumes, fires and so many lights should be used in such places, Ernestus Burgra- vius, Lucerna vitae et mortis, and Fortunius Lyceius assigns this cause, *quod his boni genii provocentur, mali arceantur*; "because good spirits are well pleased with, but evil abhor them!" And therefore those old Gentiles, present Mahometans, and Papists have continual lamps burning in their churches all day and all night, lights at funerals and in their graves; *lucerna ardentes ex auro liquefacto* for many ages to endure (saith Lazzius), *ne daemones corpus leuant; lights ever burning as those vestal virgins, Pythomisse maintained*

\[\text{\textsuperscript{k}}\text{Antiqui soliti sunt hanc herbam ponere in cemeteriis idem quod, &c.}\]
Religious Melancholy.

[Part. 3. Sec. 4.

heretofore, with many such, of which read Tostatus in 2 Reg. cap. 6, quest. 43. Thyræus, cap. 57, 58, 62, &c. de locis infestis, Pictorius, Isagog. de daemonibus, &c., see more in them. Cardan would have the party affected

wink altogether in such a case, if he see aught that offends him, or cut the air with a sword in such places they walk and abide; gladiis enim et lanceis terrentur, shoot a pistol at them, for being aerial bodies (as Cælius Rhodiginus, lib. 1. cap. 29, Tertullian, Origen, Psellas, and many hold, if stroke, they feel pain. Papists commonly enjoin and apply crosses, holy water, sanctified beads, amulets, music, ringing of bells, for to that end are they consecrated, and by them baptized, characters, counterfeit relics, so many masses, peregrinations, oblations, adjurations, and what not? Alexander Albertinus à Rocha, Petrus Thyræus, and Hieronymus Mengus, with many other pontifical writers, prescribe and set down several forms of exorcisms, as well to houses possessed with devils, as to demoniacal persons; but I am of Lemnius’s mind, ‘tis but dannosa adjuration, aut potius ludificatio, a mere mockery, a counterfeit charm, to no purpose, they are fopperies and fictions, as that absurd story is amongst the rest, of a penitent woman seduced by a magician in France, at St. Bawne, exorcised by Domphius, Michaelis, and a company of circumventing friars. If any man (saith Lemnius) will attempt such a thing, without all those juggling circumstances, astrological elections of time, place, prodigious habits, fistian, big, sesquipedal words, spells, crosses, characters, which exorcists ordinarily use, let him follow the example of Peter and John, that without any ambitious swelling terms, cured a lame man. Acts iii. “In the name of Christ Jesus rise and walk.” His name alone is the best and only charm against all such diabolical illusions, so doth Origen advise: and so Chrysostom, Hæc erit tibi baculus, hæc turris inexpugnabilis, hæc armatura. Nos quid ad hac dicemus, plures fortasse expectabant, saith St. Austin, Many men will desire my counsel and opinion what is to be done in this behalf; I can say no more, quam ut verè jide, quæ per dictionem operatur, ad Deum unum fugiamus, let them fly to God alone for help. Athanasius in his book, De variis quest. prescribes as a present charm against devils, the beginning of the lxvii. Psalm: Ecce agat Deus, dissipentur inimici, &c. But the best remedy is to fly to God, to call on him, hope, pray, trust, rely on him, to commit ourselves wholly to him. What the practice of the primitive church was in this behalf, Et quis daemonia ejiciendi modus, read Wierus at large, lib. 5. de Cura. Lam. neles. cap. 38. et deceps.

Last of all: if the party affected shall certainly know this malady to have proceeded from too much fasting, meditation, precise life, contemplation of God’s judgments (for the devil deceives many by such means), in that other extreme he circumvents melancholy itself, reading some books, treatises, hearing rigid preachers, &c. If he shall perceive that it hath begun first from some great loss, grievous accident, disaster, seeing others in like case, or any such terrible object, let him speedily remove the cause, which to the cure of this disease Navarrus so much commends, avertat cogitationem à re scrupulo sa, by all apposite means, art, and industry, let him laxare animum, by all honest recreations, “refresh and recreate his distressed soul,” let him direct his thoughts, by himself and other of his friends. Let him read no more such tracts or subjects, hear no more such fearful tones, avoid such companies, and by all means open himself, submit himself to the advice of good physicians and divines, which is contraventio scrupulum, as he calls it, hear them speak to whom the Lord hath given the tongue of the learned, to be able to

1 Non desunt nostra etate sacrificii, qui tate quid attentant, sed a caucidamene irriso pudere suffert sunt, et re infecta aherunt.

2 Done intro English by W. R., 1613.

3 Tom. 2. cap. 27. num. 282. “Let him avert his thoughts from the painful object.”

4 Navarrus.
Cure of Despair.

minister a word to him that is weary, whose words are as flagons of wine. Let him not be obstinate, headstrong, peevish, wilful, self-conceited (as in this malady they are), but give ear to good advice, be ruled and persuaded; and no doubt but such good counsel may prove as prosperous to his soul, as the angel was to Peter, that opened the iron gates, loosed his bands, brought him out of prison, and delivered him from bodily thraldom; they may ease his afflicted mind, relieve his wounded soul, and take him out of the jaws of hell itself. I can say no more, or give better advice to such as are any way distressed in this kind, than what I have given and said. Only take this for a corollary and conclusion, as thou tenderest thine own welfare in this, and all other melancholy, thy good health of body and mind, observe this short precept, give not way to solitariness and idleness. "Be not solitary, be not idle."

Sperate, Miseri—Unhappy, Hope. Cavete, Felices—Happy, Be Cautious.

Vis à dubio liberari? vis quod incertum est evadere? Age penitentiam dum sanus es; sic agens, dico tibi quod securus es, quod penitentiam egisti eo tempore quo peccare potuisti. Austin. "Do you wish to be freed from doubts? do you desire to escape uncertainty? Be penitent whilst rational: by so doing I assert that you are safe, because you have devoted that time to penitence in which you might have been guilty of sin."

Pis. 1. 4.
### INDEX.

#### A.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Topic</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Absence a cure of love melancholy</td>
<td>590</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Absence over long, cause of jealousy</td>
<td>633</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Absinence commented</td>
<td>306</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acadaemicorum Errata</td>
<td>209, 210</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adversity why better than prosperity</td>
<td>404</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Equivocation, hatred, faction, desire of revenge, causes of melancholy</td>
<td>176; their care, 412</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Equivocations of melancholy</td>
<td>10, 11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Equivocations of jealousy</td>
<td>626</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Airial devils, 116</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Affectioin in melancholy, what</td>
<td>109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Against absuses, repulse, injuries, contumely, disgraces, scoffs</td>
<td>414</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Against envy, livor, hatred, malice</td>
<td>412</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Against sorrow, vain fears, death of friends, 406</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Air, how it causeth melancholy, 155; how rectified it cureth melancholy, 330—336; air in love, 511</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Altermes good against melancholy</td>
<td>455</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>All are melancholy, 110</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>All beautiful parts attractive in love</td>
<td>516</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aloes, his virtues, 441</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alternatives in physic, to what use, 431; against melancholy</td>
<td>451—459</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ambition defined, described, cause of melancholy, 176, 165; of heresy, 674; hinders and spoils many matches, 616</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amiableness loves object, 471</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amorons objects causes of love melancholy, 531, 543</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amulets controverted, approved, 456</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amusements, 344</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anger's description, effects, how it causeth melancholy</td>
<td>177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Antimony a purger of melancholy</td>
<td>440</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anthony inveigled by Cleopatra, 527</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Apology of love melancholy</td>
<td>466</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Appetite, 102</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Apples, good or bad, how, 144</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Apparel and clothes, a cause of love melancholy</td>
<td>525</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aquedact of old, 306</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arminian's tenets, 732</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arteries, what, 95</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Artificial air against melancholy</td>
<td>332</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Artificial allurements of love</td>
<td>521</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Art of memory, 353</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### B.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Topic</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Astrological aphorisms, how available, signs or causes of melancholy</td>
<td>502</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Astrological signs of love</td>
<td>133</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Athiests described</td>
<td>705</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Averters of melancholy</td>
<td>450</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aurum potabile censured, approved</td>
<td>435</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bait of lovers, 545</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bald lascivious, 636</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Balm good against melancholy</td>
<td>432</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banishment's effects, 422</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>its cure and antidote</td>
<td>405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barrenness, what grievances it causeth, 243</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barrenness cause of jealousy</td>
<td>635</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barren grounds have best air</td>
<td>332</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bashfulness a symptom of melancholy, 252</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>of love-melancholy, 263; cured, 458</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baseness of birth no dispensance</td>
<td>509</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baths rectified, 300</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bawds a cause of love-melancholy</td>
<td>546</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beasts and birds in love</td>
<td>493</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beauty's definition, 472</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cure of melancholy, 519; described, 516; in parts, 516; censure, 507; attractive power, prerogatives, excellency, how it causeth melancholy, 510, 520; makes grievous wounds, irresistible, 515; more beholding to art than nature, 550, 551; brittle and uncertain, 597; censured, 599; a cause of jealousy, 634; beauty of God, 662</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beef a melancholy meat</td>
<td>141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beer censured, 145</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Best site of a house</td>
<td>352</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bezoar's stone good against melancholy, 454</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Black eyes best, 519</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Black spots in the nails signs of melancholy, 435</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Black man a pearl in a woman's eye, 517, 518</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blasphemy, how pardonable, 729</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blindness of lovers, 563</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blood-letting, when and how cure of melancholy, 446</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blood-letting and purging, how causes of melancholy, 445</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blow on the head cause of melancholy, 247</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Body melancholy, its causes, 249</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bodily symptoms of melancholy, 250; of love-melancholy, 550</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bodily exercises, 337; body it works on the mind, 104, 244, 260</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Books of all sorts, 351</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Correctors of accidents in melancholy, 456
Correctors to expel windiness and costive-
ness helped, 462
Cordials against melancholy, 451
Costiveness to some a cause of melancholy, 153
Costiveness helped, 463
Covetousness defined, described, how it
causeth melancholy, 186
Counsel against melancholy, 383, 504; cure
of jealousy, 650; of despair, 723
Country recreations, 342
Crocodiles jealous, 629
Cuckolds common in all ages, 647
Cupping-glasses, canteries, how and when
used to melancholy, 490
Cure of melancholy unlawful rejected, 293;
from God, 293; of head-melancholy, 446;
over all the body, 432; of hypoehon-
drical melancholy, 490; of love-melanch-
oly, 554; of jealousy, 646; of despair,
723
Cure of melancholy in himself, 352; or friends,
363
Curiosity described, his effects, 239
Custom of diet, delight of appetite, how to
be kept and yielded to, 150

D.

Dancing, masking, mumming, censured,
approved, 414, 512; their effects, how they
cause love-melancholy, 541; how
symptoms of lovers, 577
Death foretold by spirits, 125, 126
Death of friends cause of melancholy, 234;
other effects, 334; how cured, 406; death
advantageous, 411
Deformity of body no misery, 379
Delay, 87
Despair, equivocations, 713; causes, 714;
symptoms, 720; prognostics, 723; cure, 723
Devils, how they cause melancholy, 611;
their beginning, nature, conditions, 611;
feel pain, swift in motion, mortal, 119; their
orders, 120; power, 127; how they cause
religious melancholy, 669; how despair, 714;
devils are often in love, 494; shall be saved,
as some hold, 733
Diet what, and how causeth melancholy,
140; quantity, 140; diet of divers nations,
148
Diet how rectified to cure, 304; in quantity,
307
Diet a cause of love-melancholy, 505; a
cure, 586
Digression against all manner of discounts,
443; digression of air, 313; of anatomy, 92;
of devils and spirits, 115
Discommodities of unequal matches, 654
Disgrace a cause of melancholy, 173–241;
qualified by counsel, 421
Dissimilar parts of the body, 95
Distemper of particular parts, causes of me-
lancholy, and how, 246
Discontents, cares, miseries, causes of melan-
chooly, 178; how repelled and cured by
good counsel, 903–974
Discuss why indicted upon us, 82; their
number, definition, division, 80; diseases
of the head, 87; diseases of the mind, 87;
more grievous than those of the body, 285
Divers accidents causing melancholy, 284
Divine sentences, 423

Borage and Bugloss, sovereign herbs against
melancholy, 451; their wines and juice
most excellent, 458
Brain distempered, how cause of melancholy,
182; his parts anatomized, 97
Bread and beer, how causes of melancholy, 145
Brow and forehead, which are most pleasing,
517
Brute beasts jealous, 629
Business the best cure of love-melancholy, 584

C.

Cardan’s father conjured up seven devils at
once, 113; had a spirit bound to him, 123
Cards and dice censured, approved, 845
Care's effects, 179
Carp fish’s nature, 142
Cataplasms and cures for melancholy, 438
Cause of diseases, 82
Causes immediate of melancholy symptoms,
275
Causes of honest love, 450; of heroic love,
502; of jealousy, 653
Caution against jealousy, 657
Centaur good against melancholy, 434
Charles the Great enforced to love basely by
a philter, 549
Change of countenance, sign of love-melan-
chooly, 553
Charity described, 454; defects of it, 456
Character of a covetous man, 186
Charles the Sixth, king of France, mad for
anger, 178
Chess-play censured, 345, 346
Chromatistical signs of melancholy, 135
Chirurgical remedies of melancholy, 445
Cholethic melancholy signs, 283
Chorus sancti Vitii, a disease, 90
Chymical physic censured, 44
Circumstances increasing jealousy, 635
Cities' recreations, 343
Civil lawyers' miseries, 205
 Crimes and particular places, how causes of
love-melancholy, 504
Clothes a mere cause of good respect, 229
Clothes causes of love-melancholy, 345
Clysters good for melancholy, 451
Coffee a Turkey cordial drink, 453
Cold air cause of melancholy, 150
Combats, 150
Comets above the moon, 523
Compound alteratives censured, approved,
496; compound purgers of melancholy, 444;
compound wines for melancholy, 451
Community of wives a cure of jealousy, 652
Compliment and good carriage causes of
love-melancholy, 238
Confections and conserves against melan-
chooly, 548
Confession of his grief to a friend a princi-
pal cure of melancholy, 361
Confidence in his physician half a cure, 302
Conjugal love best, 498
Conscience what it is, 106
Conscience troubled a cause of despair, 718
Continual cogitation of his mistress a symp-
tom of love-melancholy, 558
Contention, brawling, law-suits, effects, 527,
528
Continent or inward causes of melancholy, 244
Content above all, 392; whence to be had, 392
Contention's cure, 424
Cuckoys taxed, 146
Divines' miseries, 305; with the causes of their miseries, 306
Dotage what, 87
Dotage of lovers, 552
Dowry and money main causes of love-melancholy, 529
Dreams and their kinds, 102
Dreams troublesome, how to be amended, 357
Drunkards' children often melancholy, 105
Drunkenness taxed, 118–373

E.

Earth's motion examined, 824; compass, centre, 827; an sit caudinata, 325
Eccecturies and epicycles exploded, 525
Education a cause of melancholy, 218
Effects of love, 378–380
 Election misconceived, cause of despair, 730–733
 Element of fire exploded, 323
 Envy and malice causes of melancholy, 174; their antidote, 412
 Epicurus vindicated, 358
 Epicurus's medicine for melancholy, 371
 Epicures, atheists, hypocrites, how mad and melancholy, 703
 Epithalamium, 625
 Enunuchs why kept, and where, 642
 Evacuations, how they cause melancholy, 152
 Exercise, if immoderate, cause of melancholy, 168; before meals wholesome, 168; exercise rectified, 356; several kinds, when fit, 946; exercises of the mind, 948–9
 Exotic and strange simples censured, 496
 Extasies, 437, 438
 Eyes main instruments of love, 506; love's darts, 518; seats, orators, arrows, torches, 518; how they pierce, 522

F.

Face's prerogative, a most attractive part, 518
Fairies, 124
Fasting cause of melancholy, 149; a cure of love-melancholy, 585; abused. the devil's instrument, 677; effects of it, 678
Fear cause of melancholy, its effects, 171; fear of death, destinies foretold, 247; a symptom of melancholy, 252; sign of love-melancholy, 555; antidote to fear, 412
Fenny bowels, melancholy, 142
Fiery devils, 122
Fire's rage, 84
Fish, what melancholy, 142
Fish good, 307
Fishes in love, 430
Fishing and fowling, how and when good exercise, 309
Flaxed hair a great motive of love, 517
Fools often begot wise men, 139; by love become wise, 575
Force of imagination, 169
Friends a cure of melancholy, 362
Fruits causing melancholy, 144; allowed, 307
Fumitory purget melancholy, 458

G.

Gaming a cause of melancholy, his effects, 191
Gardens of simples, where to, what end, 431
Gardens for pleasure, 349
General toleration of religion, by whom permitted, and why, 702; games, 344
Gentle, when it came first, 386; base without means, 386; vices accompanying it, 386; true gentility, whence, 385; gentility commended, 386
Geography commended, 349
Geometry, arithmetic, algebra, commended, 352
Gesture cause of love-melancholy, 523
Gifts and promises of great force amongst lovers, 549
God's just judgment cause of melancholy, 82; sole cause sometimes, 114
Gold good against melancholy, 435; a most beautiful object, 476
Good counsel a charm to melancholy, 368; good counsel for love-sick persons, 601; against melancholy itself, 429; for such as are jealous, 646
Great men most part dishonest, 636
Grizzle what, 94
Guts described, 96

II.

Hand and paps how forcible in love-melancholy, 517
Hard usage a cause of jealousy, 632
Hatred cause of melancholy, 177
Hawking and hunting why good, 339
Head melancholy's causes, 247; symptoms, 248; its cure, 349
Hearing, what, 101
Heat immoderate cause of melancholy, 155
Health a piteous thing, 242
Heavens penetrable, 324; infinitely swift, 325
Hell where, 518
Hellbore, white and black, purgers of melancholy, 445; black, its virtues and history, 448
Help from friends against melancholy, 363
Hemorrhage cause of melancholy, 152
Hemorrhoids stopped cause of melancholy, 152
Herbs causing melancholy, 143; curing melancholy, 306; proper to most diseases, 307
Hereditary diseases, 157
Heretics their conditions, 695; their symptoms, 695
Heroical love's pedigree, power, extent, 490; definition, part affected, 490; tyranny, 496, 497
Hippocrates' jealousy, 633
Honest objects of love, 450
Hope a cure of misery, 409
Hope and fear, the Devil's main engines to enslave the world, 677
Hops good against melancholy, 450
Horse-leeches how and when used in melancholy, 447, 459
Hot countries apt and prone to jealousy, 369
How oft 'tis fit to eat in a day, 307
How to resist passions, 359
How men fall in love, 520
Humours what they are, 93
Hydropia described, 39
Hydrophobia described, 89
Hypochondriacal melancholy, 112; its causes inward, outward, 248; symptom, 204; cure of it, 490
Hypochondriques misaffected, causes, 246
Hypocrites described, 712
INDEX.

I.

INLKENESS a main cause of melancholy, 158; of love-melancholy, 466; of jealousy, 632
Jealousy a symptom of melancholy, 256; defined, described, 627; of princes, 628; of brute beasts, 629; causes of it, 630—632; symptoms of it, 640; prognostics, 644; cure of it, 646—652
Jests how and when to be used, 224
Jews' religious symptoms, 635, 636
Ignore the mother of devotion, 678
Ignorance commended, 425, 426
Ignorant persons still circumvented, 678
Imagination what, 102; its force and effects, 106

Immaterial melancholy, 110
Immortality of the soul proved, 105; impugned by whom, 710
Impediments of lovers, 620
Importunity and opportunity cause of love-melancholy, 530; of jealousy, 637, 638
Imprisonment cause of melancholy, 225
Impostures, of devils, 576; of politicians, 673; of priests, 674
Impotency a cause of jealousy, 632
Impulsive cause of man's misery, 82
Incubi and succubi, 494
Inconstancy of lovers, 601
Inconstancy a sign of melancholy, 256
Infirmities of body and mind, what grievances they cause, 214
Injuries and abuses rectified, 417
Instrumental causes of diseases, 83
Instrumental cause of man's misery, 83
Interpreters of dreams, 102
Inundations fury, 84
Inward causes of melancholy, 244
Inward senses described, 101
Joy in excess cause of melancholy, 198
Issues when used in melancholy, 445

K.

Kings and princes' discontents, 183
Kissing a main cause of love-melancholy, 535; a symptom of love-melancholy, 533

L.

Labour, business, care of love-melancholy, 684; Laps Armenus, its virtues against melancholy, 441
Lascivious meats to be avoided, 586
Laurel a purge for melancholy, 439
 Laws against adultery, 643
Leo Decimus the pope's scoffing tricks, 233
Lewellyn, prince of Wales, his submission, 418
Leucata petra the cure of love-sick persons, 638
Liberty of princes and great men, how abused, 639
Libraries commended, 352
Liber, its site, 90; cause of melancholy distressers, if hot or cold, 246
Loss of liberty, servitude, imprisonment, cause of melancholy, 225
Loss in general how they offend, 236; cause of despair, 406, 714; how eased, 411
Love of gaming and pleasures immediate cause of melancholy, 191
Love of learning, overmuch study, cause of melancholy, 198
Love's beginning, object, definition, division, 471; love made the world, 475; love's power, 491; in vegetables, 492; in sensible creatures, 493; love's power in devils and psyches, 494; in men, 496; love a disease, 555; a fire, 560, 561; love's passions, 561; phrases of lovers, 566; their vain wishes and attempts, 571, 572; lovers impudent, 573; courageous, 574; wise, valiant, free, 575; neat in apparel, 575, 576; poets, musicians, dancers, 576; love's effects, 579; love lost revived by sight, 679; love cannot be compelled, 616
Love and hate symptoms of religious melancholy, 684
Lycanthropia described, 88

M.

Madness described, 88; the extent of love-melancholy, 382; a symptom and effect of love-melancholy, 578
Made diseases cause melancholy, 147
Magicians how they cause melancholy, 130; how they cure it, 294
Mahometans, their symptoms, 698
Maid's, nun's, widows' melancholy, 271
Man's excellency, misery, 51
Man the greatest enemy to man, 84
Many means to divert lovers, 588; to cure them, 594
Marriage if unfortunate, cause of melancholy, 249; best cure of love-melancholy, 609; marriage helps, 655; miseries, 601; benefits and commendation, 629
Mathematical studies commended, 350
Medicines select for melancholy, 426; against wind and costiveness, 463; for love-melancholy, 587
Melancholy in disposition, melancholy equivocations, 90; definition, name, difference, 108; part and parties affected in melancholy, its affection, 109; matter, 110; species or kinds of melancholy, 112; melancholy an hereditary disease, 130; meats causing it, 140, &c.; antecedent causes, 244; particular parts, 246; symptoms of it, 250; they are passionate above measure, 260; humorous, 251; melancholy adjustable symptoms, 262; mixed symptoms of melancholy with other diseases, 264, melancholy, a cause of jealousy, 692; of despair, 714; melancholy men why witty, 277; why so apt to laugh, weep, sweat, blush, 277; why they see visions, hear strange noises, speak untaught languages, prophesy, &c., 277
Memory his seat, 102
Memorius concubitus causa melanc., 138
Men seduced by spirits in the night, 124
Mental synopses, 414; in men, 496
Metals, minerals for melancholy, 433
Meteor strange, how caused, 592
Metocoposcopy foreshowing melancholy, 135
Milk a melancholy meat, 142
Mind how it works on the body, 162
Minerals good against melancholy, 435
Ministers how they cause despair, 717
Mirach, metencery, matrix, meseraic veins, causes of melancholy, 246
Mirabolanes purgers of melancholy, 441
Mirth and merry company excellent against melancholy, 369; their abuses, 373
Miseries of man, 82; how they cause melancholy, 189; common miseries 178:
miseries of both sorts, 375; no man free, miseries' effects in us, sent for our good, 377; miseries of students and scholars, 198

Migrations of melancholy, 423
Money's prerogatives, 176
Moon inhabited, 322; moon in love, 491, 492
Mother how cause of melancholy, 137
Moving faculty described, 103
Music a present remedy for melancholy, 367; its effects, 367; a symptom of lovers, 576, 577; causes of love-melancholy, 541

N.

NAKEDNESS of parts a cause of love-melancholy, 524; cure of love-melancholy, 596
Narrow streets where in use, 333
Natural melancholy signs, 269
Natural signs of love-melancholy, 550
Necessity to what it enforceth, 151—231
Neglect and contempt, best cures of jealousy, 648
Nemesis or punishment comes after, 419
Nerves what, 34
News most welcome, 344
Nobility censured, 381
Non-necessary causes of melancholy, 210
Nuns' melancholy, 271
Nurse, how cause of melancholy, 216

O.

OBJECTS causing melancholy to be removed, 588
Obstacles and hindrances of lovers, 609
Occasions to be avoided in love-melancholy, 588
Odoraments to smell to for melancholy, 455
Ointments for melancholy 147
Ointments riotously used, 527
Old folks apt to be jealous, 632
Old folks' incontinency taxed, 654
Old age a cause of melancholy, 138; old men's sons often melancholy, 138
One love drives out another, 593
Opinions of or concerning the soul, 163
Oppression's effects, 241
Opportunity and importunity causes of love-melancholy, 530
Organical parts, 96
Overmuch joy, pride, praise, how causes of melancholy, 193

P.

PALACES, 342, 343
Paleness and leanness, symptoms of love-melancholy 550
Papists' religious symptoms, 606, 607
Paracelsus' defence of minerals, 435
Parents, how they wrong their children, 616; how they cause melancholy by propagation, 136; how by remissness and indolence, 219
Paraphernal discourse to such as are troubled in mind, 724
Particular parts destempered, how they cause melancholy, 346
Parties affected in religious melancholy, 605
Passions and perturbations causes of melancholy, 134; how they work on the body, 162; their divisions, 169; how rectified and eased, 358
Passions of lovers, 555, 556
Patience a cure of misery, 417
Patient, his conditions that would be cured, 301; patience, confidence, liberality, not to despair on himself, 392; what he must do himself, 339; reveal his grief to a friend, 362
Pennycroyal good against melancholy, 441
Perjury of lovers, 645
Persuasion a means to cure love-melancholy, 367; other melancholy, 365
Phantasy, what, 101
Philipus Bonus, how he used a country fellow, 347
Philosophers censured, 191; their errors, 194
Philters cause of love-melancholy, 546; how they cure melancholy, 607
Phlebotomy cause of melancholy, 445; how to be used, when, in melancholy, 446; in head melancholy, 430
Phlegmatic melancholy signs, 261
Phrenzy's description, 28
Physician's miseries, 265; his qualities if he be good, 299
Physic censured, 426, 449; commended, 428; when to be used, 429
Physiognomical signs of melancholy, 135
Pictures good against melancholy, 548; cause love-melancholy, 534
Plague's effects, 83
Planets inhabited, 326
Plays more famous, 345
Pleasant palaces, 340
Pleasant objects of love, 478
Pleasing tone and voice a cause of love-melancholy, 533
Poetical curses of love-melancholy, 608
Poets why poor, 203
Poetry a symptom of lovers, 580
Politician's pranks, 674
Poor men's miseries, 239; their happiness, 402; they are dear to God, 391
Pope Leo Decimus, his scoffing, 223
Pork a melancholy meat, 141
Possession of devils, 90
Poverty and want causes of melancholy, their effects, 227; no such misery to be poor, 389
Power of spirits, 127
Predestination misconstrued, a cause of despair, 730
Preparatives and purgers for melancholy, 447
Prediscretion, what stifrs it causeth, 175
Precious stones, metals, altering melancholy, 433
Preventions to the cure of jealousy, 652
Pride and praise causes of melancholy, 193
Priests how they cause religious melancholy, 674, 675
Prince's discontent, 183
Profitable objects of love, 476
Progress of love-melancholy exemplified, 387
Prognostics or events of love-melancholy, 581; of despair, 644; of jealousy, 644; of melancholy, 281
Prospect good against melancholy, 395
Prosperity a cause of misery, 403
Protestations and deceitful promises of lovers, 245
Pseudo-prophets, their pranks, 699; their symptoms, 695
Pulse, peas, beans, cause of melancholy, 144
Pulse of melancholy, how it is affected, 251
Pulse a sign of love-melancholy, 551, 552
Purgers and preparatives to head melancholy, 447
Purgings simples upward, 459; downward, 441
Purgings, how cause of melancholy, 155

Q.

Quanty of diet cause, 146; cure of melancholy, 307

R.

Rational soul, 103
Reading Scriptures good against melancholy, 383
Recreations good against melancholy, 397, 398
Redness of the face helped, 453
Regions of the belly, 96, 97
Relation or hearing a cause of love-melancholy, 506
Religious melancholy, a distinct species, 660; its object, 661; causes of it, 669; symptoms, 683; prognostics, 700; cure, 702; religious policy, by whom, 674
Repentance, its effects, 727
Retention and evacuation causes of melancholy 152; rectified to the cure, 510
Rich men's discontentments and miseries, 148, 396; their prerogatives, 227
Riot in apparel, excess of it, a great cause of love-melancholy, 527—533
Rivals and corrivals, 629
Roots censured, 144
Rose cross-men's or Rosicrucian's promises, 354

S.

Saints' aid rejected in melancholy, 297
Salads censured, 145
Sanguine melancholy signs, 262
Scholars' miseries, 209
Scilla or sea-onion, a purger of melancholy, 439
Scipio's continency, 550
Scoffs, calumnies, bitter jests, how they cause melancholy, 422; their antidote, 423
Scorzonera good against melancholy, 432
Scripture misconstrued, cause of religious melancholy, 700; cure of melancholy, 933
Sea-sick, good physic for melancholy, 433
Self-love cause of melancholy, his effects, 123
Sensible soul and its parts, 100
Senses, why and how deluded in melancholy, 278, 279
Sentences selected out of humane authors, 423
Servitude cause of melancholy, 223; and imprisonment case, 104
Several men's delights and recreations, 335
Severe tutors and guardians causes of melancholy, 218
Shame and disgrace how causes of melancholy, their effects, 173
Sickness for our good, 442
Signs and teard symptoms of love-melancholy, 551
Sight a principal cause of love-melancholy, 307
Signs of honest love, 410

Similar parts of the body, 94
Simples censured proper to melancholy, 429; fit to be known, 431; purging melancholy upward, 439; downward, purging simples, 441
Singing a symptom of lovers, 576; cause of love-melancholy, 533
Sin the impulsive cause of man's misery, 375
Single life and virginity commended, 605; their prerogatives, 606
Slavery of lovers, 567
Sleep and waking causes of melancholy, 163; by what means procured, helped, 457
Small bodies have greatest wits, 890
Smelling what, 101
Smiling a cause of love-melancholy, 523
Sodom, 497
Soldiers most part lascivious, 636
Solitariness cause of melancholy, 100, 161; coaeft, voluntary, how good, 161; sign of melancholy, 259
Sorrow its effect, 170; a cause of melancholy, 171; a symptom of melancholy, 254; eased by counsel, 407
Soul defined, its faculties, 96; ez traduce as some hold, 103
Spices how causes of melancholy, 144
Spirits in the body, what, Spirits and devils, their orders, kinds, power, &c., 120
Spirit, its site, 95; how misaffected cause of melancholy, 246
Sports, 344
Spots in the sun, 328
Spruceness a symptom of lovers, 575
Stars, how causes or signs of melancholy, 133; of love-melancholy, 500; of jealousy, 632
Step-mother, her mischiefs, 241
Stews, why allowed, 653
Stomach distempered cause of melancholy, 246
Stones like birds, beasts, fishes, &c., 316
Strange nurses, when best, 217
Streets, narrow, 523
Study over-much cause of melancholy, 198; why and how, 198, 217; study good against melancholy, 148
Subterranean devils, 126
Supernatural causes of melancholy, 114
Superstitions effects, symptoms, 687; how it dominers, 667, 697
Surfeiting and drunkenness taxed, 148
Suspicion and jealous symptoms of melancholy, 256; how caused, 270
Swallows, cuckoos, &c., where are they in winter, 316
Sweet tunes and singing causes of love-melancholy, 534
Symptoms or signs of melancholy in the body, 259; mind, 259; from stars, members, 290; from education, custom, continuance of time, mixed with other diseases, 294; symptoms of head melancholy, 263; of hypochondriacal melancholy, 269; of the whole body, 271; symptoms of nuns', maid's, widows' melancholy, 271; intermediate cases of melancholy symptoms, 275; symptoms of love-melancholy, 550; cause of these symptoms, 555; symptoms of a lover pleased, 557; deserted, 557; symptoms of jealousy, 640; of religious melancholy, 684; of despair, 720.
Syntresis, 106
Syrops, 457
INDEX.

T.

Tale of a prebend, 416
Tartanula's stinging effects, 243
Taste, what, 101
Temperament a cause of love-melancholy, 502
Tempestuous air, dark and fuliginous, how cause of melancholy, 157
Terror and affrights cause melancholy, 219
Theologasters censured, 329
The best cure of love-melancholy is to let them have their desire, 609
Tobacco censured, 441
Toleration, religious, 702
Torments of love, 536
Transmigration of souls, 104
Travelling commended, good against melancholy, 335; for love-melancholy especially, 590
Tutors cause melancholy, 213

V.

Vain glory described, a cause of melancholy, 193
Valour and courage caused by love, 573
Variation of the compass, where, 314
Variety of meats and dishes cause melancholy, 508
Variety of mistresses and objects a cure of melancholy, 593
Variety of weather, air, manners, countries, whence, &c., 320
Variety of places, change of air, good against melancholy, 335
Vegetal soul and its faculties, 98
Vegetal creatures in love, 492
Vegetal soul and its parts, 98
Venus described, 95
Venus rectified, 312
Venery a cause of melancholy, 153
Venison a melancholy meat, 142
Vices of women, 600, 601
Violent misery continues not, 376
Violent death prognostic of melancholy, 92; event of love-melancholy, 483; of despair, 733; by some defended, 285; how to be censured, 288
Virginity, by what signs to be known, 643
Virginity commended, 696
Virtue and vice principal habits of the will, 108
Vitex or agnus castus good against love-melancholy, 586

U.

Uncharitable men described, 487
Understanding defined, divided, 105
Unfortunate marriages, effects, 184, 240

Unkind friends cause melancholy, 241
Unlawful cures of melancholy rejected, 293
Upstarts censured, their symptoms, 383, 593
Urine of melancholy persons, 531
Uxoril, 693

W.

Walking, cause of melancholy, 161—163; a symptom, 250; cured, 556
Walking, shooting, swimming, &c., good against melancholy, 340, 353, 386
Want of sleep a symptom of love-melancholy, 551
Wanton carriage and gesture cause of love-melancholy, 324
Water devils, 124
Water, if foul, causeth melancholy, 145
Waters censured, their effects, 145
Waters, which good, 303
Waters in love, 511
Weariness of life a symptom of melancholy, 561
What physic fit in love-melancholy, 525
Who are most apt to be jealous, 651
Whores' properties and conditions, 504
Why good men are often rejected, 415
Why fools beget wise children, wise men fools, 139, 149
Widows' melancholy, 271
Will defined, divided, its actions, why overruled, 106
Wine causeth melancholy, 145; a good cordial against melancholy, 433; forbid in love-melancholy, 585, 586
Winds in love, 511
Witty devices against melancholy, 366, 501
Wit proved by love, 575
Withstand the beginnings, a principal cure of love-melancholy, 588
Witches' power, how they cause melancholy, 130; their transformations how caused, 131; they can cure melancholy, 294; not to be sought to for help, 295; nor saints, 297
Wives censured, 623; commended, 623
Women, how cause of melancholy, 192; their vanity in apparel taxed, 620; how they cozen men, 620; by what art, 626; their counterfeit tears, 545; their vices, 600; commended, 624
Woodbine, ammi, rue, lettuce, how good in love-melancholy, 586
World taxed, 182
Wormwood good against melancholy, 431
Writers of the cure of melancholy, 263
Writers of imagination, 166; de consolationibus, 371; of melancholy, 454; of love-melancholy, 579; against idolatry, 692; against despair, 723

Y.

Young men in love with a picture, 554
Youth a cause of love-melancholy, 498